

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`



LELAND·STANFORD·JVNIOR·VNIVERSITY

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE

ATLANTIC MONTHLY

A MAGAZINE OF

Literature, Science, Art, and Politics

VOLUME CXXVIII

JULY—DECEMBER, 1921



[illegible] LIBRARY

BOSTON AND NEW YORK

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY COMPANY

The Rumford Press, Concord

Digitized by Google

Copyright, 1921
BY THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY COMPANY

291214

STANFORD LIBRARY

Printed by The Rumford Press, Concord, N.H., U.S.A.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

Index by Titles

Prose

PAGE

Adriatic Negotiations at Paris, The, *David Hunter Miller* 267
African Folk, *Hans Coudenhove* . . . 159, 463
America, Mountaineering in, *Vernon Kellogg* 473
At Thirty, *Emma Lawrence* 364
Attas, The — A Jungle Labor Union, *William Beebe* 51
Attas at Home, The, *William Beebe* 627

Back-Yard Archæology, *Warren K. Moorehead* 324
Barn Elves, *Cary Gamble Lowndes* 394
Berlin, An Ex-Enemy in, To-day, *Maxwell H. H. Macartney* 560
Boys, What Do They Know? *Alfred G. Rolfe* 59

Carmilla's Teacher, *Leonora Pease* 209
Chinese Character, Some Traits in the, *Bertrand Russell* 771
Christening of the Bell, The, *Belle Skinner* 62
Coal, A Suggestion on, *Walter L. Ballou* . 851
Coal, What Shall We Do about? *Arthur E. Suffern* 417
Consolation, *Albion Fellows Bacon* 732
Contributors' Column, The, 140, 285, 428, ... 573, 717, 861
Courtship after Marriage, *Anonymous* . . 649
Cunjur and 'Suasion, *Eleanor C. Gibbs* . . 761

Disarmament, Economic Aspects of, *Frank I. Cobb* 145
Disarmament, England's Navy and, *Sir Arthur Hungerford Pollen* 818
Disarmament, Notes on Economy and, *Samuel W. McCall* 545
Disarmament, What Delays? *Walter B. Pitkin* 668
Disarmament and the State of Europe, *Charles à Court Repington* 656
Domestic Superstitions, *Ralph Barton Perry* 218

Economy and Disarmament, Notes on, *Samuel W. McCall* 545
Educated Person, The, *Edward Yeomans* . 486
Education for Authority, *Dallas Lore Sharp* 13
England and the Washington Conference, *Herbert Sidebotham* 699

PAGE

England's Navy and Disarmament, *Sir Arthur Hungerford Pollen* 818
Equality, The New Road to, *Grover Clark* . 74
Erant Enim Piscatores, *Harrison Collins* . 814
Ex-Enemy in Berlin To-day, An, *Maxwell H. H. Macartney* 560
Exile and Steamer, *Jean Kenyon Mackenzie* 31

Faneuhi, In the Shadow of, *Charles Bernard Nordhoff* 204
Far Eastern Problem, The, *J. O. P. Bland* . 680
Farmers' Problems, Some Aspects of the, *Bernard M. Baruch* 111
Faroe Attic, Five Years in a, *Elizabeth Taylor* 441
Feeling of Irritation, The, *Frances Lester Warner* 96
For Instance — Paul Zonbor, *Harry Hubert Field* 66
France, Her Politicians, and the Washington Conference, *Sisley Huddleston* . . . 830
Friendly Neighbors, *Annie W. Noel* . . . 501

Great Britain, The Labor Situation in, *A. Shadwell* 406
Guild of Students, The, *Wilbur C. Abbott* . 618

Hawaii, The Japanese in, *William Harding Carter* 255

Interpreter, The, *L. Adams Beck* . . . 37, 233
Iron Man, The, *Arthur Pound* 433
Iron Man, The, in International Politics, *Arthur Pound* 611
Iron Man, The, and Wages, *Arthur Pound* . 787
Israel, The Assimilation of, *Paul Scott Mowrer* 101
Its Two Little Horns, *Frances Theresa Russell* 195

James, William, and His Letters, *L. P. Jacks* 197
Japan, Are We Giving Her a Square Deal? *E. Alexander Powell* 536, 688
Japanese and American Naval Power, *Hector C. Bywater* 704
Japanese in Hawaii, The, *William Harding Carter* 255
Jury, The, *Emma Lawrence* 458

Digitized by Google

Knights and Turcopoliers, *William McFee* 170

Labor Situation in Great Britain, The, *A. Shadwell* 406
Letters in Shakespeare's Plays, The, *Ellen Terry* 778
London, My Old Lady, *A. Edward Newton* 311
London, Preaching in, *Joseph Fort Newton* 149, 376, 503

Mastering the Arts of Life, *Theodore M. Knappen* 87
Meditations of a Bachelor, *E. C. Venable* . 646
Mountaineering in America, *Vernon Kellogg* 473
Movies, *Katharine Fullerton Gerould* . . . 22
My Old Lady, London, *A. Edward Newton* 311
Mystic's Experience of God, The, *Rufus M. Jones* 637

Name of the Lord, The, *Milton O. Nelson* . 189
Naval Disarmament, A Project of, *Herbert Sidebotham* 120
Naval Power, Japanese and American, *Hector C. Bywater* 704

On Being a Sport, *Katharine Fullerton Gerould* 452

Parliament, The Twilight of, *A. G. Gardiner* 248
Petrograd, The Dissolution of, *Jean Sokoloff* 843
Philanthropic Doubts, *Cornelia J. Cannon* 289
Pioneers, *Mrs. A. Devereux* 330
Pooled Self-Esteem, *A. Clutton-Brock* . . 721
Prayer, Is there Anything in? *J. Edgar Park* 532
Preaching in London, *Joseph Fort Newton* 149
Prison Facts, Some, *Frank Tannenbaum* . . 577
Proud Choice of Influences, A, *Margaret Wilson Lees* 795
Puritan Home, The, *George Herbert Palmer* 589
Puritan, What is a? *Stuart P. Sherman* . . 342

Rebecca, *Arthur Sherburne Hardy* 525
Religious Contrasts, Letters of a Pantheist and a Churchman 517
Root, Hog, or Die, *Philip Cabot* 258
Round-Faced Beauty, The, *L. Adams Beck* 750

Secret Door, The, *Sir Paul Dukes* 1
Sequels, *William Beebe* 807
Shakespeare's Plays, The Letters in, *Ellen Terry* 778
Shell-Shocked — and After, *An American Soldier* 738
South Sea Moonshine, *Charles Bernard Nordhoff* 492
Strayed Sympathies, *Agnes Repplier* . . . 798
Sudden Greatness, *Kenneth Chafee McIntosh* 389
Sunset, *Vicente Blasco Ibáñez* 599

Taking from the Few for the Many, *Russell Robb* 421
Things Seen and Heard, *Edgar J. Goodspeed* 357
Twenty-Five Hours a Day, *A. Edward Newton* 225

Vatican Politics and Policies, *L. J. S. Wood* 398
Voice from the Jury, A, *Anne C. E. Allinson* 759

Walpole Beauty, The, *E. Barrington* . . . 300
Washington Conference, England and the, *Herbert Sidebotham* 699
Washington Conference, France, Her Politicians, and the, *Sisley Huddleston* . . . 830
Why is he a General? *Nicholai Velimirovic* . 80
World-Equilibrium, *S. C. Vestal* 550
World from Corsica, The, *Anne O'Hare McCormick* 127
World without End, *Gertrude Henderson* . 82

Yellow Roses, *Emma Lawrence* 634

Poetry

At Night, *Laura Spencer Portor* 36

Crisis, *Margaret Widdemer* 758

Fourteenth of September, 1321–1921, The, *Charles H. Grandgent* 341

Hippolytus, *Anne Winslow* 655

Lyrics, *Jean Kenyon Mackenzie* 484

Only a Matter of Time, *Christopher Morley* 79

Prime, *Amy Lowell* 375

Soliloquy for a Third Act, *Christopher Morley* 805
'Sometimes we hardly wanted you,' *Fannie Stearns Gifford* 188

Wood Nuptial, *Joseph Auslander* 232
Words, *Joseph Auslander* 516

Yoke of Steers, A, *DuBose Heyward* . . . 626

Digitized by Google

INDEX BY AUTHORS

Abbott, Wilbur C., The Guild of Students . 618
Allinson, Anne C. E., A Voice from the Jury 759
Anonymous
Courtship after Marriage 649
Shell-Shocked — and After 738
Auslander, Joseph
Wood Nuptial 232
Words 516

Bacon, Albion Fellows, Consolation 732
Ballou, Walter L., A Suggestion on Coal . . 851
Barrington, E., The Walpole Beauty . . . 300
Baruch, Bernard M., Some Aspects of the Farmers' Problems 111
Beck, L. Adams
The Interpreter 37, 233
The Round-Faced Beauty 750
Beebe, William
The Attas — A Jungle Labor Union . . 51
The Attas at Home 627
Sequels 807
Bland, J. O. P., The Far Eastern Problem 680
Bywater, Hector C., Japanese and American Naval Power 704

Cabot, Philip, Root, Hog, or Die 258
Cannon, Cornelia J., Philanthropic Doubts 289
Carter, William Harding, The Japanese in Hawaii 255
Clark, Grover, The New Road to Equality . 74
Clutton-Brock, A., Pooled Self-Esteem . . 721
Cobb, Frank I., Economic Aspects of Disarmament 145
Collins, Harrison, Erant Enim Piscatores . 814
Coudenhove, Hans, African Folk 159, 463

Devereux, Mrs. A., Pioneers 330
Dukes, Sir Paul, The Secret Door 1

Field, Harry Hubert, For Instance — Paul Zonbor 66

Gardiner, A. G., The Twilight of Parliament 248
Gerould, Katharine Fullerton
Movies 22
On Being a Sport 452
Gibbs, Eleanor C., Cunjur and 'Suasion . . 761
Gifford, Fannie Stearns, 'Sometimes we hardly wanted you' 188
Goodspeed, Edgar G., Things Seen and Heard 357
Grandgent, Charles H., The Fourteenth of September, 1321–1921 341

Hardy, Arthur Sherburne, Rebecca 525
Henderson, Gertrude, World without End . 82
Heyward, DuBose, A Yoke of Steers 626
Huddleston, Sisley, France, Her Politicians, and the Washington Conference 830

Ibáñez, Vicente Blasco, Sunset 599

Jacks, L. P., William James and His Letters 197
Jones, Rufus M., The Mystic's Experience of God 637

Kellogg, Vernon, Mountaineering in America 473
Knappen, Theodore M., Mastering the Arts of Life 87

Lawrence, Emma
At Thirty 364
The Jury 458
Yellow Roses 634
Lees, Margaret Wilson, A Proud Choice of Influences 795
Lowell, Amy, Prime 375
Lowndes, Cary Gamble, Barn Elves 394

Macartney, Maxwell H. H., An Ex-Enemy in Berlin To-day 560
Mackenzie, Jean Kenyon
Exile and Steamer 31
Lyrics 484
McCall, Samuel W., Notes on Economy and Disarmament 454
McCormick, Anne O'Hare, The World from Corsica 127
McFee, William, Knights and Turcopoliers 170
McIntosh, Kenneth Chafee, Sudden Greatness 389
Miller, David Hunter, The Adriatic Negotiations at Paris 267
Moorehead, Warren K., Back-Yard Archæology 324
Morley, Christopher
Only a Matter of Time 79
Soliloquy for a Third Act 805
Mowrer, Paul Scott, The Assimilation of Israel 101

Nelson, Milton O., The Name of the Lord . 189
Newton, A. Edward
Twenty-five Hours a Day 225
My Old Lady, London 311
Newton, Joseph Fort, Preaching in London 149, 376, 503
Noel, Annie W., Friendly Neighbors . . . 501
Nordhoff, Charles Bernard
In the Shadow of Faneuhi 204
South Sea Moonshine 492

Palmer, George Herbert, The Puritan Home 589
Park, J. Edgar, Is there Anything in Prayer? 532

Digitized by Google

Pease, Leonora, Carmilla's Teacher 209
Perry, Ralph Barton, Domestic Superstitions 218
Pitkin, Walter B., What Delays Disarmament? 668
Pollen, Sir Arthur Hungerford, England's Navy and Disarmament 818
Porter, Laura Spencer, At Night 36
Pound, Arthur
The Iron Man 433
The Iron Man in International Politics . 611
The Iron Man and Wages 787
Powell, E. Alexander, Are We Giving Japan a Square Deal? 536, 688

Repington, Charles à Court, Disarmament and the State of Europe 656
Repplier, Agnes, Strayed Sympathies . . 798
Robb, Russell, Taking from the Few for the Many 421
Rolfe, Alfred G., What Do Boys Know? . . 59
Russell, Bertrand, Some Traits in the Chinese Character 771
Russell, Frances Theresa, Its Two Little Horns 195

Shadwell, A., The Labor Situation in Great Britain 406
Sharp, Dallas Lore, Education for Authority 13
Sherman, Stuart P., What Is a Puritan? 342
Sidebotham, Herbert
A Project of Naval Disarmament 120
England and the Washington Conference 699
Skinner, Belle, The Christening of the Bell 62
Sokoloff, Jean, The Dissolution of Petrograd 843
Suffern, Arthur E., What Shall We Do about Coal? 417

Tannenbaum, Frank, Some Prison Facts . . 577
Taylor, Elizabeth, Five Years in a Faroe Attic 441
Terry, Ellen, The Letters in Shakespeare's Plays 778

Velimirovic, Nicholai, Why Is he a General? 80
Venable, E. C., Meditations of a Bachelor . 646
Vestal, S. C., World-Equilibrium 550

Warner, Frances Lester, The Feeling of Irritation 96
Widdemer, Margaret, Crisis 758
Winslow, Anne, Hippolytus 655
Wood, L. J. S., Vatican Politics and Policies 398

Yeomans, Edward, The Educated Person . 48

THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

Astronomy 138

Christmas Spirit, The 858
Conversations 570

Family Prayers 856

High Cost of Talking, The 132

John 138
Joy 572

Millinery Madness 424
My Wife's Address-Book 854

New Lights on Broadway 135

On a Horse-and-Carriage 713
On Our Street 425
On Typewriters 282

Period Furniture 278
Pies—An Essay 715

Queer Thing, A 138

Shell-Shock in a Shoeshop 131
Simple Spellers, The 568

Teresina 280
To a Picture of Benjamin Franklin on a Box of Sugar 426

Vigil 284

Wigs and Teachers 714
Winter Morning 860

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY

JULY, 1921

THE SECRET DOOR

BY SIR PAUL DUKES

LATE at night I stood outside the Tauride Palace in Petrograd, which had become the centre of the revolution. No one was admitted through the great gates without a pass. I sought a place about midway between the gates, and, when no one was looking, scrambled up, dropped over the railings, and ran through the bushes straight to the main porch. Here I soon met folk I knew — comrades of student days, revolutionists. What a spectacle within the palace, lately so still and dignified! Tired soldiers lay sleeping in heaps in every hall and corridor. The vaulted lobby, whence the Duma members had flitted silently, was packed almost to the roof with all manner of truck, baggage, arms, and ammunition. All night long, and the next, I labored with the revolutionists to turn the Tauride Palace into a revolutionary arsenal.

Thus began the revolution. And after? Everyone knows now how the hopes of freedom were blighted. Truly had Russia's foe, Germany, who dispatched the 'proletarian' dictator Lenin and his satellites to Russia, discovered the Achilles' heel of the Russian revolution. Everyone now knows how the flowers of the revolution withered under the blast of the class war, and how Russia was replunged into starvation and serfdom. I will not dwell on these things. My story relates to the time when they were already cruel realities.

I

My reminiscences of the first year of Bolshevist administration are jumbled into a kaleidoscopic panorama of impressions gained while journeying from city to city, sometimes crouched in the corner of crowded box-cars, sometimes traveling in comfort, sometimes riding on the steps, and sometimes on the roofs or buffers. I was nominally in the service of the British Foreign Office; but the Anglo-Russian Commission (of which I was a member) having quit Russia, I attached myself to the American Y.M.C.A., doing relief work. A year after the revolution I found myself in the Eastern city of Samara, training a detachment of Boy Scouts. As the snows of winter melted, and the spring sunshine shed joy and cheerfulness around, I held my parades, and together with my American colleagues organized outings and sports.

Then one day, when in Moscow, I was handed an unexpected telegram — 'urgent' — from the British Foreign Office. 'You are wanted at once in London,' it ran. I set out for Archangel without delay. Thence by steamer and destroyer and tug to the Norwegian

Digitized by Google

frontier; and so, round the North Cape to Bergen, with, finally, a zig-zag course across the North Sea, dodging submarines, to Scotland.

At Aberdeen the Control Officer had received orders to pass me through by the first train to London. At King's Cross a car was waiting; and knowing neither my destination nor the cause of my recall, I was driven to a building in a side street in the vicinity of Trafalgar Square. 'This way,' said the chauffeur, leaving the car. The chauffeur had a face like a mask. We entered the building, and the elevator whisked us to the top floor, above which additional superstructures had been built for war emergency offices.

I had always associated rabbit-warrens with subterranean abodes; but here in this building I discovered a maze of rabbit-burrow-like passages, corridors, nooks, and alcoves, piled higgledy-piggledy on the roof. Leaving the elevator, my guide led me up one flight of steps so narrow that a corpulent man would have stuck tight, then down a similar flight on the other side, under wooden archways so low that we had to stoop, round unexpected corners, and again up a flight of steps which brought us out on the roof. Crossing a short iron bridge, we entered another maze, until, just as I was beginning to feel dizzy, I was shown into a tiny room about ten feet square, where sat an officer in the uniform of a British colonel. The impassive chauffeur announced me and withdrew.

'Good-afternoon, Mr. Dukes,' said the colonel, rising and greeting me with a warm hand-shake. 'I am glad to see you. You doubtless wonder that no explanation has been given you as to why you should return to England. Well, I have to inform you, confidentially, that it has been proposed to offer you a somewhat responsible post in the Secret Intelligence Service.'

I gasped. 'But,' I stammered, 'I have never — May I ask what it implies?'

'Certainly,' he replied. 'We have reason to believe that Russia will not long continue to be open to foreigners. We wish someone to remain there, to keep us informed of the march of events.'

'But,' I put in, 'my present work? It is important, and if I drop it — '

'We foresaw that objection,' replied the colonel, 'and I must tell you that under war regulations we have the right to requisition your services if need be. You have been attached to the Foreign Office. This office also works in conjunction with the Foreign Office, which has been consulted on this question. Of course,' he added, bitingly, 'if the risk or danger alarms you — '

I forget what I said, but he did not continue.

'Very well,' he proceeded, 'consider the matter and return at four-thirty tomorrow. If you have no valid reasons for not accepting this post, we will consider you as in our service and I will tell you further details.'

He rang a bell. A young lady appeared and escorted me out, threading her way with what seemed to me marvelous dexterity through the maze of passages.

Burning with curiosity, and fascinated already by the mystery of this elevated labyrinth, I ventured a query to my young female guide. 'What sort of establishment is this?' I said.

I detected a twinkle in her eye. She shrugged her shoulders and, without replying, pressed the button for the elevator. 'Good-afternoon,' was all she said as I passed in.

Next day I found the colonel in a fair-sized apartment, with easy chairs, and walls hidden by bookcases. He seemed to take it for granted that I had nothing to say.

'I will tell you briefly what we desire,' he said. 'Then you may make any

Digitized by Google

comments you wish, and I will take you up to interview — a — the Chief. Briefly, we want you to return to Soviet Russia and to send reports on the situation there. We wish to be accurately informed as to the attitude of every section of the community, the degree of support enjoyed by the Bolshevist government, the development and modification of its policy, what possibility there may be for an alteration of régime or for a counter-revolution, and what part Germany is playing. As to the means whereby you gain access to the country, under what cover you will live there, and how you will send out reports, we shall leave it to you, being best informed as to conditions, to make suggestions.'

He expounded his views on Russia, asking for my corroboration or correction, and also mentioned the names of a few English people I might come into contact with there. 'I will see if — a — the Chief is ready,' he said, finally, rising. 'I will be back in a moment.'

The apartment appeared to be an office, but there were no papers on the desk. I rose and stared at the books on the bookshelves. My attention was arrested by an edition of Thackeray's works in a decorative binding of what looked like green morocco. I used at one time to dabble in bookbinding, and am always interested in an artistically bound book. I took down *Henry Esmond* from the shelf. To my bewilderment the cover did not open, until, passing my finger accidentally along what I thought was the edge of the pages, the front cover suddenly flew open of itself, disclosing a box. In my astonishment I almost dropped the volume, and a sheet of paper slipped out and fell to the floor. I picked it up hastily and glanced at it. It was headed *Kriegsministerium, Berlin*, had the German Imperial arms imprinted on it, and was covered with minute handwriting in German. I had barely slipped it back into the box and replaced the volume on the shelf, when the colonel returned.

'A — the — a — Chief is not in,' he said, 'but you may see him to-morrow. You are interested in books?' he added, seeing me looking at the shelves. 'I collect them. That is an interesting old volume on Cardinal Richelieu, if you care to look at it. I picked it up in Charing Cross Road for a shilling.'

The volume mentioned was immediately above *Henry Esmond*. I took it down warily, expecting something uncommon to occur; but it was only a musty old volume in French, with torn leaves and soiled pages. I pretended to be interested.

'There is not much else there worth looking at, I think,' said the colonel casually. 'Well, good-bye. Come in to-morrow.'

I returned again next day, after thinking overnight how I should get back to Russia — and deciding on nothing. My mind seemed to be a complete blank on the subject in hand, and I was entirely absorbed in the mysteries of the roof-labyrinth.

Again I was shown into the colonel's sitting-room. My eyes fell instinctively on the bookshelf. The colonel was in a genial mood. 'I see you like my collection,' he said. 'That, by the way, is a fine edition of Thackeray.' I felt my heart leap. 'It is the most luxurious binding I have ever yet found. Would you not like to look at it?'

I looked at the colonel very hard, but his face was a mask. My immediate conclusion was that he wished to initiate me into the secrets of the Department. I rose quickly and took down *Henry Esmond*, which was in exactly the same place as it had been the day before. To my utter confusion it opened quite naturally, and I found in my hands nothing more than an *edition de luxe*, printed on India paper and pro-

Digitized by Google

fusely illustrated! I stared, bewildered, at the shelf. There was no other *Henry Esmond*. Immediately over the vacant space stood the life of Cardinal Richelieu as it had stood yesterday. I replaced the volume, and, trying not to look disconcerted, turned to the colonel. His expression was quite impassive, even bored.

'It is a beautiful edition,' he repeated as if wearily. 'Now, if you are ready, we will go and see — a — the Chief.'

Feeling very foolish, I stuttered assent and followed. As we proceeded through the maze of stairways and unexpected passages, which seemed to me like a miniature House of Usher, I caught glimpses of tree-tops, of the Embankment Gardens, the Thames, the Tower Bridge, and Westminster. From the suddenness with which the angle of view changed, I concluded that in reality we were simply gyrating in one very limited space; and when suddenly we entered a spacious study, — the sanctum of '— a — the Chief,' — I had an irresistible feeling that we had moved only a few yards, and that this study was immediately above the colonel's office.

It was a low, dark chamber at the extreme top of the building. The colonel knocked, entered, and stood at attention. Nervous and confused, I followed, painfully conscious that at that moment I could not have expressed a sane opinion on any subject under the sun. From the threshold the room seemed bathed in semi-obscurity. The writing-desk was so placed, with the window behind it, that on entering everything appeared only in silhouette. It was some seconds before I could clearly distinguish things. A row of half a dozen extending telephones stood at the left of a big desk littered with papers. On a side table were numerous maps and designs, with models of aeroplanes, submarines, and mechanical devices, while a row of bottles of various colors and a distilling outfit with a rack of test-tubes bore witness to chemical experiments and operations. These evidences of scientific investigation served only to intensify an already overpowering atmosphere of strangeness and mystery.

But it was not these things that engaged my attention as I stood nervously waiting. It was not the bottles or the machinery that attracted my gaze. My eyes fixed themselves on the figure at the writing-table. In the capacious swing desk-chair, his shoulders hunched, with his head supported on one hand, busily writing, there sat in his shirt-sleeves —

Alas, no! Pardon me, reader, I was forgetting! There are still things I may not divulge. There are things that must still remain shrouded in secrecy. And one of them is — who was the figure in the swing desk-chair in the darkened room at the top of the roof-labyrinth near Trafalgar Square on this August day in 1918. I may not describe him, or mention even one of his twenty-odd names. Suffice it to say that, awe-inspired as I was at this first encounter, I soon learned to regard 'the Chief' with feelings of the deepest personal regard and admiration. He was a British officer and an English gentleman of the finest stamp, absolutely fearless and gifted with unlimited resources of subtle ingenuity, and I count it one of the greatest privileges of my life to have been brought within the circle of his acquaintanceship.

In silhouette I saw myself motioned to a chair. The Chief wrote for a moment, then suddenly turned, with the unexpected remark, 'So I understand you want to go back to Soviet Russia, do you?' — as if it had been my own suggestion.

The conversation was brief and precise. The words Archangel, Stockholm, Riga, Helsingfors, recurred frequently,

Digitized by Google

and the names were mentioned of English people in those places and in Petrograd. It was finally decided that I alone should determine how and by what route I should regain access to Russia and how I should dispatch reports.

'Don't go and get killed,' said the Chief in conclusion, smiling. 'You will put him through the ciphers,' he added to the colonel, 'and take him to the laboratory to learn the inks and all that.'

We left the Chief and arrived by a single flight of steps at the door of the colonel's room. The colonel laughed. 'You will find your way about in course of time,' he said; 'let us go to the laboratory at once.'

And here I draw a veil over the roof-labyrinth. Three weeks later I set out for Russia, into the unknown.

II

I resolved to make my first attempt at entry from the north, and traveled up to Archangel on a troopship of American soldiers, most of whom hailed from Detroit. But I found the difficulties at Archangel to be much greater than I had anticipated. It was 600 miles to Petrograd, and most of this distance would have to be done on foot through unknown moorland and forest. The roads were closely watched, and before my plans were ready, autumn storms broke and made the moors and marshes impassable. But at Archangel, realizing that to return to Russia as an Englishman was impossible, I let my beard grow and assumed an appearance entirely Russian.

Failing in Archangel, I traveled down to Helsingfors, to try my luck from the direction of Finland. Helsingfors, the capital of Finland, is a busy little city bristling with life and intrigue. At the time of which I am writing it was a sort of dumping-ground for every variety of conceivable and inconceivable rumor, slander, and scandal, repudiated elsewhere, but swallowed by the gullible scandal-mongers — especially German and *ancien-régime* Russian — who found in this city a haven of rest. Helsingfors was one of the unhealthiest spots in Europe. Whenever mischance brought me there, I lay low, avoided society, and made it a rule to tell everybody the direct contrary of my real intentions, even in trivial matters.

In Helsingfors I was introduced, at the British consulate, to an agent of the American Secret Service who had recently escaped from Russia. This gentleman gave me a letter to a Russian officer in Viborg, by name Melnikoff. The little town of Viborg, being the nearest place of importance to the Russian frontier, was a hornet's nest of Russian refugees, counter-revolutionary conspirators, German agents, and Bolshevist spies — worse, if anything, than Helsingfors.

Disguised now as a middle-class commercial traveler, I journeyed on to Viborg, took a room at the same hotel at which I had been told that Melnikoff stayed, looked him up, and presented my note of introduction. I found Melnikoff to be a Russian naval officer of the finest stamp, and intuitively conceived an immediate liking for him. His real name, I discovered, was not Melnikoff, but in those parts many people had a variety of names to suit different occasions. My meeting with him was providential, for it appeared that he had worked with Captain Crombie, late British Naval Attaché at Petrograd. In September, 1918, Captain Crombie was murdered by the Bolsheviki at the British Embassy, and it was the threads of his shattered organization that I hoped to pick up upon arrival in Petrograd.

Melnikoff was slim, dark, short, and muscular, with stubbly hair and blue eyes. He was deeply religious, and was

Digitized by Google

imbued with an intense hatred of the Bolsheviki — not without reason, since both his father and his mother had been brutally shot by them, and he himself had escaped only by a miracle. 'The searchers came at night,' so he told the story to me. 'I had some papers referring to the insurrection at Yaroslavl, which my mother kept for me. The searchers demanded access to my mother's room. My father barred the way, saying she was dressing. A sailor tried to push past, and my father angrily struck him aside. Suddenly a shot rang out, and my father fell dead on the threshold of my mother's bedroom. I was in the kitchen when the Reds came, and through the kitchen door I fired and killed two of them. A volley of shots was directed at me. I was wounded in the hand, and only just escaped by the back stairway. Two weeks later my mother was executed on account of the discovery of my papers.'

Melnikoff had but one sole object left in life — to avenge his parents' blood. This was all he lived for. So far as Russia was concerned, he was frankly a monarchist; so I avoided talking politics with him. But we were friends from the moment we met, and I had the peculiar feeling that somewhere, long, long ago, we had met before, although I knew this was not so.

Melnikoff was overjoyed to learn of my desire to return to Soviet Russia. He undertook not only to make the arrangements with the Finnish frontier patrols for me to be put across the frontier at night, secretly, but also to precede me to Petrograd and make arrangements there for me to find shelter. Melnikoff gave me two addresses in Petrograd where I might find him — one of a hospital where he had formerly lived, and the other of a small café that still existed in a private flat unknown to the Bolshevist authorities.

Perhaps it was a pardonable sin in Melnikoff that he was a toper. We spent three days together in Viborg making plans for Petrograd, while Melnikoff drank up all my whiskey except a small medicine-bottle full, which I hid away. When he had satisfied himself that my stock was really exhausted, he announced himself ready to start. It was a Friday, and we arranged that I should follow two days later, on Sunday night, the twenty-fourth of November. Melnikoff wrote out a password on a slip of paper. 'Give that to the Finnish patrols,' he said, 'at the third house, the wooden one with the white porch, on the left of the frontier bridge.'

At six o'clock he went into his room, returning in a few minutes so transformed that I hardly recognized him. He wore a sort of seaman's cap that came right down over his eyes. He had dirtied his face, and this, added to the three-days-old hirsute stubble on his chin, gave him a truly demoniacal appearance. He wore a shabby coat and trousers of a dark color, and a muffler was tied closely round his neck. He looked a perfect *apache* as he stowed away a big Colt revolver inside his trousers.

'Good-bye,' he said simply, extending his hand; then stopped and added, 'let us observe the good old Russian custom and sit down for a minute together.'

According to a beautiful custom that used to be observed in Russia in the olden days, friends sit down at the moment of parting, and maintain complete silence for a few instants, while each wishes the others a safe journey and prosperity. Melnikoff and I sat down opposite each other. With what fervor I wished him success on the dangerous journey he was undertaking for me!

We rose. 'Good-bye,' said Melnikoff again. He turned, crossed himself, and passed out of the room. On the thresh-

Digitized by Google

old he looked back. 'Sunday evening,' he added, 'without fail.'

I saw Melnikoff only once more after that, for a brief moment in Petrograd, under dramatic circumstances. But that comes later in my story.

III

I rose early next day, but there was not much for me to do. As it was Saturday, the Jewish booths in the usually busy little market-place were shut, and only the Finnish ones were open. Most articles of the costume I had decided on were already procured; but I made one or two slight additions on this day, and on Sunday morning, when the Jewish booths opened. My outfit consisted of a Russian shirt, black-leather breeches, black knee-boots, a shabby tunic, and an old leather cap with a fur brim and a little tassel on top, of the style worn by the Finns in the district north of Petrograd. With my shaggy black beard, which by now was quite profuse, and long unkempt hair dangling over my ears, I was a sight, indeed, and in England or America should doubtless have been regarded as a thoroughly undesirable alien.

On Sunday an officer friend of Melnikoff's came to make sure that I was ready. I knew him by the Christian name and patronymic of Ivan Sergeievitch. He was a pleasant fellow, kind and considerate. Like many other refugees from Russia, he had no financial resources, and was trying to make a living for himself, his wife, and his children by smuggling Finnish money and butter into Petrograd, where both were sold at a high premium. Thus he was on good terms with the Finnish patrols, who also practised this trade and whose friendship he cultivated.

'Have you any passport yet, Pavel Pavlovitch?' Ivan Sergeievitch asked me.

'No,' I replied; 'Melnikoff said the patrols would furnish me with one.'

'Yes, that is best,' he said; 'they have the Bolshevist stamps. But we also collect the passports of all refugees from Petrograd, for they often come in handy. And if anything happens, remember you are a "speculator."'

All are stigmatized by the Bolsheviki as speculators who indulge in the private sale or purchase of foodstuffs or clothing. They suffer severely, but it is better to be a speculator than a spy.

When darkness fell, Ivan Sergeievitch accompanied me to the station and part of the way in the train, though we sat separately, so that it should not be seen that I was traveling with one who was known to be a Russian officer.

'And remember, Pavel Pavlovitch,' said Ivan Sergeievitch, 'to go to my flat whenever you are in need. There is an old housekeeper there, who will admit you if you say I sent you. But do not let the house porter see you, — he is a Bolshevik, — and be careful the house committee do not know, for they will ask who is visiting the house.'

I was grateful for this offer, which turned out to be very valuable.

We boarded the train at Viborg and sat at opposite ends of the compartment, pretending not to know each other. When Ivan Sergeievitch got out at his destination, he cast one glance at me, but we made no sign of recognition. I sat huddled up gloomily in my corner, obsessed with the inevitable feeling that everybody was watching me. The very walls and seats seemed possessed of eyes. That man over there, did he not look at me — twice? And that woman, spying constantly (I thought) out of the corner of her eye! They would let me get as far as the frontier; then they would send word over to the Reds that I was coming. I shivered, and was ready to curse myself for my fool adventure. But there was no turning

Digitized by Google

back! '*Forsan et hæc olim meminisse juvabit*,' wrote Virgil. (I used to write that on my Latin books at school — I hated Latin.) 'Perhaps some day it will amuse you to remember these things.' Cold comfort, though, in a scrape, and with your neck in a noose. Yet these escapades *are* amusing — afterward.

At last the train stopped at Rajajoki, the last station on the Finnish side of the frontier. It was a pitch-dark night, with no moon. It was still half a mile to the frontier. I made my way along the rails in the direction of Russia, and down to the wooden bridge over the little frontier river Sestro. Great hostility still existed between Finland and Soviet Russia. Skirmishes frequently occurred, and the frontier was guarded jealously by both sides. I looked curiously across at the gloomy buildings and the dull twinkling lights on the other bank. That was my Promised Land over there, but it was flowing, not with milk and honey, but with blood. The Finnish sentry stood at his post at the bar of the frontier bridge; and twenty paces away, on the other side, was the Red sentry. I left the bridge on my right, and turned to look for the house of the Finnish patrols to whom I had been directed.

Finding the little wooden villa with the white porch, I knocked timidly. The door opened, and I handed in the slip of paper on which Melnikoff had written the password. The Finn who opened the door examined the paper by the light of a greasy oil lamp, then held the lamp to my face, peered closely at me, and finally signaled to me to enter.

'Come in,' he said. 'We were expecting you. How are you feeling?'

I did not tell him how I was really feeling, but replied cheerily that I was feeling splendid.

'That's right,' he said. 'You are lucky in having a dark night for it. A week ago one of our fellows was shot as we put him over the river. His body fell into the water and we have not yet fished it out.'

This, I suppose, was the Finnish way of cheering me up.

'Has anyone been over since?' I queried, affecting a tone of indifference.

'Only Melnikoff.'

'Safely?'

The Finn shrugged his shoulders.

'We put him across all right — *a dalshe ne znayu* [what happened to him after that, I don't know].'

The Finn was a lean, cadaverous-looking fellow. He led me into a tiny eating-room, where three more Finns sat round a smoky oil lamp. The window was closely curtained and the room was intolerably stuffy. The table was covered with a filthy cloth, on which a few broken lumps of black bread, some fish, and a samovar were placed. All four men were shabbily dressed and very rough in appearance. They spoke Russian well, but conversed in Finnish among themselves. One of them said something to the cadaverous man and appeared to be remonstrating with him for telling me of the accident that had happened to their colleague a week before. The cadaverous Finn answered him with some heat.

'Melnikoff is a chuckle-headed scatterbrain,' persisted the cadaverous man, who appeared to be the leader of the party. 'We told him not to be such a fool as to go into Petrograd again. The Redskins are searching for him everywhere in Petrograd, and every detail of his appearance is known. But he *would* go. I suppose he loves to have his neck in a noose. With you, I suppose, it is different. Melnikoff says you are somebody important — but that's none of our business. But the Redskins don't like the English. If I were you, I would n't go for anything. But it's your affair, of course.'

We sat down to the loaves and fishes.

Digitized by Google

The samovar was boiling, and while we swilled copious supplies of weak tea out of dirty glasses, the Finns retailed the latest news from Petrograd. The cost of bread, they said, had risen to about eight hundred or a thousand times its former price. People hacked dead horses to pieces in the streets. All the warm clothing had been taken and given to the Red Army. The *Tchrezvichaika* (the Extraordinary Commission) was arresting and shooting workmen as well as the educated people. Zinovieff threatened to exterminate all the bourgeoisie if any further attempt were made to molest the Soviet government. When the Jewish Commissar Uritzky was murdered, Zinoviev shot over five hundred of the bourgeoisie at a stroke, — nobles, professors, officers, journalists, teachers, men and women, — and a list was published of another five hundred who would be shot at the next attempt on a commissar's life.

I listened patiently, regarding the bulk of these stories as the product of Finnish imagination. 'You will be held up frequently to be examined,' the cadaverous man warned me; 'and do not carry parcels — they will be taken from you in the street.'

After supper, we sat down to discuss the plans of crossing. The cadaverous Finn took a pencil and paper and drew a rough sketch of the frontier.

'We will put you over in a boat at the same place as Melnikoff,' he said. 'Here is the river, with woods on either bank. Here, about a mile up, is an open meadow on the Russian side. It is now eleven o'clock. About three we will go out quietly and follow the road that skirts the river on this side, till we get opposite the meadow. That is where you will cross.'

'Why at the open spot?' I queried, surprised. 'Shall I not be seen there most easily of all? Why not put me across into the woods?'

'Because the woods are patrolled, and the outposts change their place every night. We cannot follow their movements. Several people have tried to cross into the woods. A few succeeded, but most were either caught or had to fight their way back. But this meadow is a most unlikely place for anyone to cross, so the Redskins don't watch it. Besides, being open, we can see if there is anyone on the other side. We will put you across just here,' he said, indicating a narrow place in the stream at the middle of the meadow. 'At these narrows the water runs faster, making a noise, so we are less likely to be heard. When you get over, run up the slope slightly to the left. There is a path that leads up to the road. Be careful of this cottage, though,' he added, making a cross on the paper at the extreme northern end of the meadow. 'The Red patrol lives in that cottage, but at three o'clock they will probably be asleep.'

There remained only the preparation of 'documents of identification,' which should serve as passport in Soviet Russia. Melnikoff had told me I might safely leave this matter to the Finns, who kept themselves well informed of the kind of papers it was best to carry, to allay the suspicions of Red Guards and Bolshevist police officials. We rose and passed into another of the three tiny rooms that the villa contained. It was a sort of office, with paper, ink, pens, and a typewriter on the table.

'What name do you want to have?' asked the cadaverous man.

'Oh, any,' I replied. 'Better, perhaps, let it have a slightly non-Russian smack. My accent — '

The cadaverous man thought for a moment. 'Afirenko, Joseph Ilitch,' he suggested; 'that smacks of Ukrainia.'

I agreed. One of the men sat down to the typewriter and, carefully choosing a certain sort of paper, began to write.

Digitized by Google

The cadaverous man went to a small cupboard, unlocked it, and took out a boxful of rubber stamps of various sizes and shapes, with black handles.

'Soviet seals,' he said, laughing at my amazement. 'We keep ourselves up to date, you see. Some of them were stolen, some we made ourselves, and this one — ' he pressed it on a sheet of paper, leaving the imprint 'Commissar of the Frontier Station Bielo'ostrof' — 'we bought from over the river for a bottle of vodka.' Bielo'ostrof was the Russian frontier village just across the stream.

I had had ample experience earlier in the year of the magical effect upon the rudimentary intelligence of Bolshevist authorities of official 'documents,' with prominent seals or stamps. Multitudinous stamped papers of any description were a great asset in traveling, but a big colored seal was a talisman that leveled all obstacles. The wording of the document, even the language in which it was written, was of secondary importance. A friend of mine once traveled from Petrograd to Moscow with no other passport than a receipted English tailor's bill. This 'document of identification' had a big printed heading with the name of the tailor, some English postage-stamps attached, and a flourishing signature in red ink. He flaunted the document in the face of the officials, assuring them it was a diplomatic passport issued by the British Embassy!

This, however, was in the early days of Bolshevism. The Bolsheviki gradually removed illiterates from service, and in the course of time restrictions became very severe. But seals were as essential as ever.

When the Finn had finished writing, he pulled the paper out of the typewriter and handed it to me for perusal. In the top left-hand corner it had this heading: —

Extraordinary Commission of the Central Executive Committee of the Petrograd Soviet of Workers' and Red Armymen's Deputies.

Then followed the text: —

CERTIFICATE

This is to certify that Joseph Ilitch Afirenko is in the service of the Extraordinary Commission of the Central Executive Committee of the Petrograd Soviet of Workers' and Red Armymen's Deputies, in the capacity of office clerk, as the accompanying signatures and seal attest.

'In the service of the Extraordinary Commission?' I gasped, taken aback by the amazing audacity of the thing.

'Why not?' said the cadaverous man coolly; 'what could be safer?'

I burst into laughter as I realized the grim humor of pretending to belong to the institution that employed all the paid hirelings of the Tsar's secret police to suppress the last vestiges of the liberty of the revolution!

'Now for the signatures and seal,' said the Finn. 'Tihonov and Friedmann used to sign these papers, though it doesn't matter much; it's only the seal that counts.'

From some Soviet papers on the table he selected one with two signatures from which to copy. Choosing a suitable pen, he scrawled beneath the text of my passport, in an almost illegible slanting hand, 'Tihonov.' This was the signature of a proxy of the Extraordinary Commission. The paper must also be signed by a secretary, or his proxy. 'Sign for your own secretary,' said the Finn, laughing and pushing the paper to me. 'Write upright this time, like this. Here is the original. Friedmann is the name.'

Glancing at the original, I made an irregular scrawl, resembling in some way the signature of the Bolshevist official.

'Have you a photograph?' asked the cadaverous man.

I gave him a photograph I had had taken at Viborg. Cutting it down small,

Digitized by Google

he stuck it at the side of the paper. Then, taking a round rubber seal, he made two imprints over the photograph. The seal was a red one, with the same inscription inside the periphery that was printed at the head of the paper. The inner space of the seal consisted of the five-pointed Bolshevist star, with a mallet and a plough in the centre.

'That is your certificate of service,' said the Finn; 'we will give you a second one of personal identification.'

Another paper was quickly printed off with the words, 'The holder of this is the Soviet employee Joseph Ilitch Afirenko, aged 36 years.' This paper was unnecessary in itself, but two 'documents' were always better than one.

It was now after midnight, and the leader of the Finnish patrol ordered us to lie down for a short rest. He threw himself on a couch in the eating-room. There were only two beds for the remaining four of us, and I lay down on one of them with one of the Finns. I tried to sleep, but could n't. I thought of all sorts of things — of Russia in the past, of the life of adventure I had elected to lead for the present, of the morrow, of friends still in Petrograd who must not know of my return — if I got there. I was nervous, but the dejection that had overcome me in the train was gone. I saw the essential humor of my situation. The whole adventure was really one big exclamation mark. *Forsan et hæc olim* —

IV

The two hours of repose seemed interminable. I was afraid of three o'clock, and yet I wanted it to come quicker, to get it over. At last a shuffling noise approached from the neighboring room, and the cadaverous Finn prodded each of us with the butt end of his rifle. 'Wake up,' he whispered; 'we'll leave in a quarter of an hour. No noise. The people in the next cottage must n't hear us.'

We were ready in a few minutes. My entire baggage was a small parcel that went into my pocket, containing a pair of socks, one or two handkerchiefs, and some dry biscuit. In my other pocket I had the medicine bottle of whiskey I had hidden from Melnikoff, and some bread.

One of the four Finns remained behind. The other three were to accompany me to the river. It was a raw and frosty November night, and pitch-dark. Nature was still as death. We issued silently from the house, the cadaverous man leading. One of the men followed behind, and all carried their rifles ready for use.

We walked stealthily along the road the Finn had pointed out to me on paper overnight, bending low where no trees sheltered us from the Russian bank. A few yards below, on the right, I heard the trickling of the river. We soon arrived at a ramshackle villa, standing on the river-bank, surrounded by trees and thickets. Here we stood stock-still for a moment, to listen for any unexpected sounds. The silence was absolute. But for the trickling of the river, there was not a rustle.

We descended to the water under cover of the tumble-down villa and the bushes. The stream was about twenty paces wide at this point. Along both banks there was an edging of ice. I looked across at the opposite side. It was open meadow, but the trees loomed darkly a hundred paces away on either hand and in the background. On the left I could just see the cottage of the Red patrol, against which the Finns had warned me.

The cadaverous man took up his station at a slight break in the thickets. A moment later he returned and announced that all was well. 'Remember,' he enjoined me once again, in an under-

Digitized by Google

tone, 'run slightly to the left, but — keep an eye on that cottage.'

He made a sign to the other two, and from the bushes they dragged out a boat. Working noiselessly, they attached a long rope to the stern and laid a pole in it. Then they slid it down the bank into the water.

'Get into the boat,' whispered the leader, 'and push yourself across with the pole. And good luck!'

I shook hands with my companions, pulled at my little bottle of whiskey, and got into the boat. I started pushing, but with the rope trailing behind, it was no easy task to punt the little bark straight across the running stream. I was sure I should be heard, and had in midstream the sort of feeling I should imagine a man has as he walks his last walk to the gallows. At length I was at the farther side, but it was quite impossible to hold the boat steady while I landed. In jumping ashore, I crashed through the thin layer of ice. I scrambled out and up the bank, and the boat was hastily pulled back to Finland behind me.

'Run hard!' I heard a low call from over the water behind me. D—— it, the noise of my splash had reached the Red patrol! I was already running hard when I saw a light emerge from the cottage on the left. I forgot the injunctions as to direction, and simply bolted away from that lantern. Halfway across the sloping meadow I dropped and lay still. The light moved rapidly along the river bank. There was shouting, and then suddenly two shots; but there was no reply from the Finnish side. Then the light began to move slowly back toward the cottage of the Red patrol, and finally all was silent again.

I lay motionless for some time, then rose and proceeded cautiously. Having missed the right direction, I found that I had to negotiate another small stream that ran obliquely down the slope of the meadow. Being already wet, I did not suffer by wading through it. Then I reached some garden fences, over which I climbed, and found myself in the road.

Convincing myself that the road was deserted, I crossed it and came out on to the moors, where I found a half-built house. Here I sat down to await the dawn — blessing the man who invented whiskey, for I was very cold. It began to snow, and, half-frozen, I got up to walk about and study the locality as well as I could in the dark. At the cross-roads near the station I discovered some soldiers sitting round a bivouac fire, so I retreated quickly to my half-built house and waited till it was light. Then I approached the station, with other passengers. At the gate a soldier was examining passports. I was not a little nervous when showing mine for the first time; but the examination was a very cursory one. The soldier seemed only to be assuring himself that the paper had a proper seal. He passed me through and I went to the ticket-office and demanded a ticket.

'One first class to Petrograd,' I said boldly.

'There is no first class by this train, only second and third.'

'No first? Then give me a second.' I had asked the Finns what class I ought to travel, expecting them to say third. But they replied, first, of course, for it would be strange to see an employee of the Extraordinary Commission traveling other than first class. Third class was for workers and peasants.

The journey to Petrograd was about twenty-five miles, and, stopping at every station, the train took nearly two hours. As we approached the city, the coaches filled up, until people were standing in the aisles and on the platforms. There was a crush in the Finland station at which we arrived. The

Digitized by Google

examination of papers was again merely cursory. I pushed out with the throng, and looking around me on the dirty rubbish-strewn station, I felt a curious mixture of relief and apprehension.

My life, I suddenly realized, *had* had an aim — it was to stand here on the threshold of the city that was my home, homeless, helpless, and friendless, one of the common crowd. That was it — *one of the common crowd.* I wanted, not the theories of theorists, or the doctrines of doctrinaires, but to see what the greatest social experiment the world has ever seen did for the common crowd. And, strangely buoyant, I stepped lightly out of the station into the familiar streets.

EDUCATION FOR AUTHORITY

BY DALLAS LORE SHARP

I

THE people were astonished, for he taught them as one having authority, and not as those who had gone to college (unauthorized translation). They were astonished that every reference to their sacred books was to contradict them; that over against their hitherto unquestioned authority he should set himself in authority; that these obvious things he said should be so true, so astonishingly new and true: homely, familiar things, not out of books, but out of life and nature.

Except for a faint echo of Isaiah and the Psalmist, and some half dozen references to Old Testament law (which he cited to refute), all the matter in the Sermon on the Mount is from common life and the out-of-doors: the house on the rock; the good tree and the evil fruit; the false prophet; the straight gate; the son who asks a fish; the pearls before the swine; the lilies of the field — familiar matter, and commonplace, but suddenly new with meaning, and startling with authority.

Isaiah had dealt earlier with these things; and one rises from that prophet wondering what more can be said, how better said. Yet Isaiah never spake like the man of this Sermon. This man had the books of Isaiah, but he went behind the books with his observations, as substance goes behind shadow, appealing from the books direct to life and nature.

Life and nature are still the source of originality, the sole seat of authority. Books make a full man. It is life and nature that give him authority. But life and nature are little reckoned with in formal education; small credit is given them in the classroom; yet authority, — authorship, — poet and prophet, are the glory of education. Or is it the end of education to produce the scribe?

Neither scribe nor author is the end of our *school* education; but that average intelligence upon which democracy rests. Not scribe but citizen, not author but voter, is the business of the school, the true end of its course of study. The schools are the public's, con-

Digitized by Google

cerned with the public, with the education of living together. There are several educations, however: one, in the public school, for democracy; another, in and out of school, for individuality; and another distinct and essential education, in life and nature, for authority — as great a national need as democracy. We need peace and prosperity, and liberty, and the pursuit of happiness; but quite as much does this nation need vision — to walk in truth and beauty. Where there is no vision, the people perish.

Can we educate for vision? teach men authority — to preach a Sermon on the Mount? to land on Plymouth Rock? to write a Walden Pond? to be an Abraham Lincoln? to dare a league of nations? These are visions, daring, dangerous visions, not out of books, but new, out of life and nature. We must educate for vision — for dreams and deeds that are without precedent.

But not in school. Thoreau and Cyrus Dallin went to school, yet they went to nature more. Jesus went little to school. He knew a few great books profoundly; but he was not bound out to books for an education. It is hardly strange that the schools should make nothing of this. It is passing strange, however, that we parents, dreaming dreams for our children, should send them to school for their whole education, getting no hint from an opposite course that was found fit for Jesus.

There were schools and books aplenty, and young Saul of Tarsus had them, and had Gamaliel for his teacher. The boy in Nazareth had a few great books of poetry and prophecy; He had his school, too, but it was the carpenter's shop, the village street, the wild, lonely hills reaching off behind the town. This was his education; and there is none better — none other perhaps — for authority.

Supreme utterance is always poetic utterance, deeply human, deeply religious, and as fresh and daring as the dawn. Such utterance may come untaught. But if the conscious power for such utterance is the possession of the few, the instinct for it and the joy in it is a quality of all human minds. Deeper within us than our conscious mind, deeper than our subconscious mind, this instinct for utterance is the essence of the unconscious, the inmost, mind, whose substance is the flux of all originals. We can all utter, create, make; and we should have in our education the raw materials out of which new things are made.

There were other boys in Nazareth, who had the books, the work-bench, the village street and the lonely hills, without acquiring authority. This single boy was different. So is every boy — Yet no matter how different this particular boy, the significant thing is that He had for teachers the humble people, work with tools, the solemn, silent hills, and a few beautiful, intensely spiritual books, and that out of this teaching He learned to speak with authority.

So it was with Lincoln: the very same books, work with his hands, elemental people, the lonely backwoods. Lincoln and Edward Everett were different; not so different in genius, however, as in education. 'Lincoln,' says a biographer, 'was a self-made man, in whom genius triumphed over circumstance.' I should rather say that of Everett, the accomplished scholar, Greek professor, President of Harvard College, Governor of Massachusetts, editor, senator, foreign minister, who, in spite of all this circumstance, was something of an orator. But standing beside Lincoln at Gettysburg, he spoke for an hour with this vast book-education, like the Scribes, leaving Lincoln, with his natural education, to speak for five minutes with authority. No, genius and circumstance in Lincoln were by chance

Digitized by Google

joined together; conventional education happily did not put them asunder.

It is not often so with genius. Chance cannot get the consent of circumstance; nor to-day is there any match for convention. The trouble is too much school education and too little natural education. We limit education to the school, as if the school were a whole education! Neither Lincoln nor Everett had a whole education. It is idle to speculate on what Lincoln might have been, had his ancestors stayed in Hingham, where they landed, and had he gone to Derby Academy and to Harvard. What actually happened on the Big South Fork of Nolin Creek is more significant. For here he was born, the son of a carpenter, and he had for teachers his father's tools, the prairie, the westering pioneers, the great river, the *Life of Washington*, *Pilgrim's Progress*, Æsop, Shakespeare, and the Bible — the large electives that well cover the course of natural education.

This is the education for authority. A child cannot be educated for authority on lesser books, with sophisticated people, with pointless play instead of work, with ordered lessons in school in place of the dear disorder of nature, and her companionship, and his own soul's. The simple needs of authorship have not changed.

II

But what child nowadays has such teaching? Who looks after his natural education — his religion? As a factor in education, religion has almost ceased to operate, notwithstanding the church schools. The sensitive spirit cannot seek after God in school. It should have a universe — and have it all alone. As truly as ever do we live, and move, and have our being in God; but at this present moment we have so much more of being in business, and move so much faster by motor, that it seems that our existence in God must have been prenatal, or might become possibly a post-mortem affair.

Religion in education is strictly the part of someone — the parental part of education, and no business of any school. Is it because I fail that I seem to see all parents failing in religion? My children have not had what I had in religion — not my Quaker grandfather certainly, who was lame and walked slowly, and so, I used to think, and still think, more surely walked with God. My first memory of that grandfather is of his lifting an adder out of the winding woodpath with his cane, saying, 'Thee must never hurt one of God's creatures' — an intensely religious act, which to this day covers for me the glittering folds of the snake with the care, and not the curse, of God.

Years later I was at work in the Marine Biological Laboratory at Woods Hole. Dr. C. O. Whitman was lecturing. He had traced the development of the cod's egg back to a single cell of jellied protoplasm, when he paused.

'Gentlemen,' he said, with dramatic restraint, 'I can go no further. There is that in this cell we call life. But the microscope does not reveal it. We all know what it does. But who knows what it is? Is it a form of motion? The theologian calls it God. I am not a theologian. I do not know what life is.'

He need not have been a theologian — only a very little child once, with his lame grandfather to tell him the snake is God's; and in those after years, coming to the end of his great lecture on the embryology of the cod's egg, and to the greater mystery in that cell of living protoplasm, he would have spoken with authority.

It is not every child whose sleep is as light as little Samuel's, whose dreams are stirred by strange voices as were Joan of Arc's; but there are many more.

Digitized by Google

such children than there are parents like Hannah, or priests like Eli, to tell them that it is the voice of God.

The crimson was fading into cold October gray as I came upon him — twelve years old, and just an ordinary boy, his garden fork under the hill of potatoes he had started to dig, his face upturned, his eyes following far off the flight of a wild duck across the sky.

'He who from zone to zone,'

I began, more to myself than to him.

'Guides through the boundless sky thy certain flight,'

he went on, as much to himself as to me.

'Father,' he added reflectively, as the bird disappeared down the dusky slope of the sky, 'I'm glad I know that piece.'

'Why?' I asked.

'I see so much more when the wild ducks fly over.'

'How much more do you see?'

'I see the wild ducks and God flying over together.'

And is he a poet who sees less? Beauty and truth that do not reach religion do not reach the human heart. An education that lacks religion must lack authority, because it cannot know who made the flat-headed adder, who flies with the wild duck, who works in the cod's egg, to will and to do. Religion is the consciousness of the universe — that it is infinite, eternal, and that it is all God's!

III

The realm of art, the Kingdom of Heaven, and the life of this dear earth admit only little children. Great utterance is universal utterance, simple and unique.

Henry Adams, in the course of his 'Education,' had come from the South Seas to Paris with John La Farge. 'At the galleries and exhibitions he was shocked,' so he says, 'by the effort of art to be original; and when, one day, after much reflection, La Farge asked whether there might not still be room for something simple in art, Adams shook his head. As he saw the world, it was no longer simple and could not express itself simply. It should express what it was, and this was something that neither Adams nor La Farge understood.'

But it was precisely this sophisticated world that Adams did understand, and not simple men and women. Adams was not born a babe into life, but an Adams into Boston, with (to quote him) 'the First Church, the Boston State House, Beacon Hill, John Hancock and John Adams, Mount Vernon Street, and Quincy all crowding on [his] ten pounds of babyhood.' And the trouble with Henry Adams was that he never got from under.

Jesus was more fortunate. He was born in a stable. Lincoln had the luck of a log cabin on the Big South Fork of Nolin Creek, as had Cyrus Dallin, the sculptor, only his cabin stood within a stockade in wild, unsettled Utah. Boston has found room for Dallin's Appeal to the Great Spirit, as the world has found ample room for the Gettysburg Address — simple, elemental things of art that shall never want for room.

The world is not simple; or the cell of the cod's egg, either. The forces of cleavage are in that cell, the whole fearful fish is there, and future oceans of fish besides, all in that pellucid drop of protoplasm. Society never was, never can be, simple. It cannot be educated for authority, but only to know and accept authority.

God speaks to the man, not to the multitude — to Moses on the Mount, not to the people huddled in the plain. Society commissions, but the individual finds the truth, reveals the beauty. 'Art,' says Whistler, 'is limited to the infinite, and beginning there, cannot progress. The painter has but the same

Digitized by Google

pencil, — the sculptor the chisel of centuries, — and painter and sculptor consequently work alone.'

We forget that scribes get together in schools, but that creators work 'each in his separate star,' as lonely as God; and that the education of the creator is strictly in the hands of those responsible for him. The responsibility of professional teachers is for children. They must think children, in terms of men and women; and must educate them for society. We parents must think the child, must educate the child, not for society, but for himself — for authority. The teachers, looking upon their pupils, see the people, equal before the law, sharing alike the privileges, shouldering alike the responsibilities — one another's keepers, upon whose intelligence and right spirit the nation rests. Thus, as teachers, they see their children and their educational duty.

As a parent, I must see my child as foreordained from the foundation of the world; and looking upon him, I must cry, 'Unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, and the government shall be upon his shoulders; and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor — or poet, or prophet, for he shall have authority.' So, as a parent, I must think of my child and of my educational duty.

God's work is not done; and mine may be the son called from the beginning, to complete in line, or color, or word, or deed, the divine thing God started but could not finish. For God is not complete until he is made flesh, and dwells among us.

There is no school that can provide for this Only Son. School education is social — it is for all; for life together; how to even and average life's extremes. The private school for the brilliant mind is pure sophistry, and Simon-pure snobbery. Averaging, of course, is a process down, as well as up, to a common level — a social level. Democracy is that common social level. Education in a democracy must average — teach the high to come down, the humble to rise, and all of us to walk together. Not trying to do more than this for any, or daring to do less than this for all, it must hinder no mind either by merging individuality, or by setting up a material well-being for the better values of the spirit.

The level of education has risen lately in the public schools; university standards meanwhile have distinctly deteriorated — have sought the average. 'College education is now aimed to qualify the student, not to give him quality.' The college has become a business institution; even the college of liberal arts is now a pre-pedagogical, pre-medical, pre-legal, or some other pre-practical vocational school.

Students still come to college to serve, come seeing visions too, being young — but visions of business. In the multitude of twenty college classes passing through my lecture-room I know of but one student to finish his course, bent as he was born, to poetry. He is now spinning a Ph.D. cocoon for himself, the poet about to emerge a college professor!

This is not the fault of youth. Trailing clouds of glory do they come from God who was their home. But they land in America for business. And in such numbers!

I believe in numbers, in business. I freely trust the work of the state with this safe, sane average — but it was none of them who wrote the Declaration of Independence, the Proclamation of Emancipation, or the Covenant of the League of Nations.

The poet cannot be the direct product of the schools. His education is more out of things than books, more out of solitude than society, more out of nature than schools. The author is single, original, free; he uses raw mate-

Digitized by Google

rials, elements, earths that are without form and void. In him is the pattern of all new worlds. His life is to shape them, and give them suns and stars. But in place of raw materials, the unattempted yet in prose or rhyme, we give him only the graded systems of the schools, which make for many essential things, but which may be more deadly to his creative faculty than anything the headlong angels fell on in Hell. For they had, at least,

The dark, unfathomed, infinite abyss,

through whose obscure one of them must find his uncouth way; whereas our unfallen children are run into the school machine at five, and earlier, as oranges into a sorter, the little ones dropping out through their proper hole into shop or office, the bigger ones rolling on until they tumble into college.

Human nature is unique, and not to be handled by machine. It is active, a doing nature, fit for unfinished earth, not heaven, the earth-partner, and co-creator in God's slowly shaping world. Send human nature to school? But if school can make them, why are we without 'a great poet, a great philosopher, a great religious leader'? Why is it that 'the great voices of the spirit are stilled just now'? It is because education is too far removed from the simple, the original — from life and nature.

IV

A poet is still-born in Boston every day — killed by toys in place of the tools that make them; by books in place of the life they tell of; by schools, museums, theatres, and stores, where things are pieced and ordered, filmed, collected, canned, and labeled, in place of a whole world of whole things, until the little poet asks me, as one did the other day, 'What does cream come from?' a sterilized concoction in a bottle, brought by the grocer, his nearest approach to a cow and a milking-stool! Yet he was to have written of

Wrinkled skin on scalded milk!

The educating process is started wrong, and started too early. It should start with work. Watch a child at mud-pies or building a dam. Such intense application, such concentrated effort, such complete abandon! Play? The sweat on that little face, the tongue tight between the teeth, the utter unconsciousness of burning sun and cooling dinner, are the very signs of divine creative work.

Every son of God needs, if not a world to create, an earth to *subdue*. But instead of allowing him to work, we teach him to be amused, as if his proper frame were passive, his natural action irresponsible; as if he must be kept busy at winding things up and watching them run down.

We have not the courage of our convictions — if indeed we have educational convictions! No father, asked for bread, would give a stone; but when asked for truth and beauty and reality, how few of us have the courage to give a son what Jesus had, or Lincoln had, or the two years before the mast that young Richard Henry Dana had!

Quitting his cultured home, his sophisticated college, his conventional city, Dana escaped by way of the old, uncultured sea, with men as uncultured. He had plum-duff on Sundays. *Two Years Before the Mast* tells the story of that escape from scribbling into living, from a state of mind like Boston, out and down around the Horn.

To save the poet and prophet now standardized to scribes, shall we do away with schools? I have known too many freak poets, too many fool prophets, to say that. Genius is unique; it is also erratic, and needs to toe the mark in school. The training for expression

Digitized by Google

is more than wandering lonely as a cloud. There is much for the poet in trigonometry, and in English grammar. He must go to school to meet his fellows, too, and his teachers — but not until he is able both to listen to the doctors and to ask them questions.

Education for authority must both precede and continue with conventional education; equal place made for chores, great books, simple people, and the out-of-doors; with that which is made for texts, and recitations, and schoolroom drill; parents sharing equally with professional teachers in the whole process, unless we utterly nationalize our children.

Two of my children are in a Boston high school, having five hours of Latin, five of German, five of French, three of English, three of mathematics, three of history, two of military drill — twenty-six hours in all. And they call it educational! That is not education. That is getting ready for college — which is not to be confused with education. It fits for college, not for authority; it is almost certain death to originality and the creative faculty.

There must be a course of study in school and college, and it must be shaped to some end. Is it, however, the right end of four years in high school, to get to college? or the right end of four years in college, to get into a job? There is a certain Spartan virtue in this high-school study, something that makes for push and power, but nothing of preparation for great utterance in sermon or song.

The children do not know that the poet in them is being killed. I know — but I only half believe the poet to be in them!

The sin of the fathers — this fear of the divine fire! Mine are ordinary children. I should have adopted them, foundlings of unknown elfin parentage. Then I had believed, and had given them to Merlin, as Arthur was given, or to the Lord, as Hannah gave little Samuel.

I did have them born and brought up in the hills of Hingham, forced out of the city when the second one came. I gave them the farm, the woods, the great books, the simple people, and religion, but timidly — allowing them at this day to take fifteen hours of study in foreign languages to three meagre hours in their glorious native tongue. And these are to be poets and prophets!

Then they must needs speak in German, French, and Latin. English is a foreign tongue in the Boston high schools. John Gower did his *Confessio Amantis* in three languages, but Geoffrey Chaucer found it a life's task to conquer his native English, sighing, —

> The lyf so short, the craft so long to lerne.

Poets have scarcely time to learn their own language. If any of them are going through American high schools, they will learn a few French irregular verbs, know that *Weib* is neuter, and how *Amo* is conjugated, but they will not know the parts of the verbs 'lay' and 'lie,' and their vocabulary of adjectives will be limited to 'some' and 'dandy' or to 'some-dandy.'

'We don't need to study English, we inherit it,' one of my college men said to me.

'How much did you inherit?' I asked; and as a test turned to Whittier's *Snow-Bound*, which lay on my lecture-room desk, and read to him, —

> Meanwhile we did our nightly chores
> Brought in the wood from out of doors —

and the ten lines that follow, finding eight words — 'littered,' 'mows,' 'walnut bows,' 'herds-grass,' 'stanchion,' 'chores,' 'querulous,' and 'birch' — that were foreign to the majority of the class — without meaning, and so without image and poetry. It chanced that

Digitized by Google

I was wearing a brown Windsor tie, and I saw one student nudge another and whisper, 'The cows had "walnut bows" on like the professor's.'

Rubbing it in a little, I declared that I could open any English book, and on any page find a word that none of them had ever used, and that most of them would not even understand. On my desk lay a small wrapped book from some publisher. I cut the string; found it a supplementary reader for the eighth grade, and opening it in the middle, took the middle paragraph on the page, and began to read, —

'The ragged copses on the horizon showed the effect of the severe shelling' — a war-story, reprinted from the *Youth's Companion!*

'Copses,' I said to the young man who had inherited the English language, 'what does "ragged copses" mean?'

He took one profound look into his heritage, — in the region of his diaphragm, — then cast his eyes slowly around the horizon of the room, and answered, that he did n't know what the ragged *policemen* were doing there in No Man's Land!

I turned to a young woman student. 'What does "ragged copses" mean?' I asked.

She raised her hands to her face, shivered cruelly, and replied that she just hated such horrid words — she just hated to think of that battlefield all strewn with ghastly tattered *corpses!*

And what shall be said of another college man, reporter on the Boston *Globe*, whose chief told me of sending him to get a story about a little bay colt that was prancing gayly up Newspaper Row. Turning at the office door, the reporter asked doubtfully, 'You said a *bay* colt — Is that some kind of sea-horse?'

'Who said sea-horse?' snorted the editor. 'I said a bay colt out on the street.'

'Is that a new breed of horse?'

'Breed?' roared the editor. 'Breed? I said a bay colt — a color, not a breed!'

'Oh, come now,' said the undone reporter, 'don't jolly me. There is n't any such color in the rainbow.'

'Nor among neckties either,' added the editor; 'but there is among horses, as any farm-boy knows.'

What any farm-boy knows is the beginning of the knowledge and the foundation of the vocabulary of authority. The farm-boy's elemental, but amazingly varied, word-horde is the very form of universal speech. Poets and prophets have always used his simple words; and poets and prophets must ever live as he lives, and learn what he has learned of language and things.

> And Nature, the old nurse, took
> The child upon her knee,
> Saying, 'Here is a story book,
> Thy father has written for thee.'

That was the first story-book. It still remains the greatest of source-books. Here the human story begins; against this background the plot unfolds; and here ends. Here is written that older tale of *Limulus polyphemus*, the horse-shoe crab, and that ancienter story of the stars. Into the Book of Nature are bound all the 'Manuscripts of God' — the originals of all authors, whether they create in words, or notes, or colors, or curves; the originals of the past, of the present, and that longer, richer future.

> 'Come wander with me,' she said,
> 'Into regions yet untrod;
> And read what is still unread
> In the manuscripts of God!'

Mother of us all, Nature should be the teacher of all, lest she be denied that chosen one to whom she would give authority. It is she who shall show him how, 'in the citron wing of the pale butterfly with its dainty spots of orange,' he shall see 'the stately halls of fair gold, with their slender saffron pillars';

Digitized by Google

and 'how the delicate drawing high upon the walls shall be traced in tender tones of orpiment, and repeated by the base in notes of graver hue.'

But these things are written in books, and hung in galleries, and can be taught more quickly there? They cannot be taught at all there. Nature keeps no school. She teaches her pupils singly, revealing to each what is for him alone. He can learn many things in school, but not authority — not how to paint Whistler's Mother, or how to write Wordsworth's 'Stepping Westward,' or how to cut a single marble of the Parthenon.

'By what authority doest thou these things?'

The poet answers: 'Nature is my authority,

'And that auxiliar light
Which on the setting sun bestows new splendor.'

Yet the schools overflow, as if authority were there! Students come to paint and to play, before they learn to see and hear; they come to write, before experience has given them anything to say. They must come to school, the prophet from the wilderness, the poet from the fields and hills, when twice ten summers have stamped their minds forever with

The faces of the moving year.

The first Monday of September, labor is on parade. The Tuesday after, and the school-children of America are on the march — a greater host than labor's, as its work is greater. This is the vastest thing we Americans do, this mighty making of the democratic mind — the average mind. But it is not a poetic-prophetic mind we are making — not educated for authority.

Too, too few of all this marching multitude are coming to their little books well read in the Book of Nature; and to their little teachers from earlier, elemental lessons with the thoughtful hills, with the winds, and the watchful stars.

Earth and the common face of nature

have not spoken to them

. . . rememberable things.

This is not for the schools to do; this is *beyond* the schools to do; and besides, it is then too late; for Derwent, or some other winding stream, should murmur to the poet-babe while still in arms, and give him

Amid the fretful dwellings of mankind,
A foretaste, a dim earnest of the calm
That Nature breathes among the hills and groves.

We Americans do not give beauty and joy to our children. We are not a happy-hearted, imaginative people. It is the foreign children who steal the flowers from our parks; who dance to the hurdy-gurdy; who haunt our picture galleries — little lovers of warmth, and tone, and color!

Every worker bee in the hive might have been a queen, had not the pitiless economy of the colony cramped her growing body into a worker cell, till, pinched and perverted, she takes her place in the fearful communism of the tribe, an unsexed thing, the normal mother in her starved into an abnormal worker, her very ovipositor turned from its natural use into a poison-tipped sting.

Theoretically, we are not communistic, but in industry and education we have put the worker-cell theory into operation, cramping the growing child into practically a uniform vocational system, intellectually overfeeding, and spiritually underfeeding the creator in him into a worker — a money-maker.

Some fathers of us, more mothers, perhaps, might ask prophets and poets of the Lord; but who of us would have the courage to educate such children for poetry and prophecy?

Digitized by Google

MOVIES

BY KATHARINE FULLERTON GEROULD

I

LET me begin by saying that I am not a movie fan. Therefore there is a lot about movies that I do not know. Most of my friends honestly dislike them. But now and then I find one, equally intelligent, equally educated, who attends regularly. I go very seldom, myself; but I should undoubtedly, during the last year, have seen more movies, if good ones had been accessible. I have not great experience, but I have at least overcome certain initial prejudices.

It is certain that the movies have come to stay — for a time. What form the theatrical art of the twenty-first century will take, we do not know. It may be that movies will be superseded by something that even Mr. Wells cannot guess at. At present, we are confronted with something universally popular. Our best legitimate actors have condescended to the screen, and Mary Pickford and Charlie Chaplin are known to yellow folk in kimonos, brown folk in sarongs, and Paraguayans of the plain.

The movies have had to bear a great deal of criticism of late, as corrupters of the public morals. I have never seen one of the 'unclean' movies they talk about. I do not doubt they exist. But I should say that the danger of the film-play is due rather to its wide dispersion than to its actual badness. That is: if one bad picture is released, a million people will see it; whereas a dozen bad plays reach only a very few spectators in comparison. According to all that I can learn, motion-picture producers are much more scrupulous than theatrical managers. Moreover, I believe that you actually could go further in a moving picture, without legitimate shock, than you could on the stage. There is something very shadowy and unreal still in the film presentment of life. I never saw *Zaza* — except played by a German stock company, when Zaza, in her most vivid scene, was swathed to the neck in a red flannel dressing-gown. But I had *Zaza* described to me in its day, and I have never seen anything like that on the screen. Say what you will, people who are looking for the 'suggestive' will get much more of what they want for their money by looking at half-dressed flesh and blood than they will by looking at one-quarter-dressed photographs. The movies are a two-dimensional world, and crimes are committed in three dimensions. Personally, I have seen only decent movies. I incline, in any case, to believe that the movie peril lies elsewhere.

The peril of the movies, in other words, is vulgarity. By which I do not mean physical indecency, or even situations by implication *risqués*. I mean general cheapness of ideals, and sentimentalism, far more than salaciousness. I doubt if the adverse critics have put their fingers on the real reason for this vulgarity, or found the real analogy.

There is not much sense, for example, in comparing the moral effect of the movies with the moral effect of the

Digitized by Google

legitimate stage. In most places, taking the country through, the admission fee is very small. The mass of the people who go to them constantly, year in and year out, are the people who never went, and never would go, year in and year out, to ordinary plays. The movie public is not — taking the country through, as I say — the theatre-going public. The movies are certainly a new substitute for something; but what they are a substitute for is not the legitimate stage. They are a substitute, rather, for cheap vaudeville (and they are much better for the public morals than cheap vaudeville) and for cheap literature. The girls who throng the movie theatres are the girls who used to read Laura Jean Libby and Mrs. Georgie Sheldon. The boys who throng them are the ones who used to read *Nick Carter* and *Deadwood Dick*. Chewing-gum was always included with both. The people who can afford Broadway plays, or who have Broadway theatres within their reach, are not the ones who create the dependable movie audience. It is the people who never could afford the first-class theatres, or who do not live where they could get at them, even if they had the money, who swell the film-corporations' dividends. When those people saw plays at all, they usually saw a "ten-twent'-thirt'" show: *Bertha the Sewing-Machine Girl*, or *the Queen of the High-Binders*. They did not go to the theatre much, anyway; they read cheap literature in pink and green covers, for which they paid the traditional dime. They do not read so much of it now. Less of it — far less — is produced. The demand has fallen off. The people who used to call for it now go to the movies. And if any of you were ever wicked enough, in childhood, to stalk the *New York Fireside Companion* (or whatever it was) to the kitchen coalhod (against orders) and read *A Little Wild Rose and the Blight that Fell upon It or Was She His Lawful Wife?* then you know that the movies are better for that public than the literature they have displaced. Even the not very clean movie is better than the works of Albert Ross. Any movie I have ever seen or heard described is not only good morals but great art, in comparison. You must chalk it up to the credit of the movies that they have actually displaced those books. They have closed up that literary red-light district.

Let me repeat, and then have done with this argument: the people who go to moving pictures would not, had there been no moving pictures, have been going to see *Hamlet*. They would have been going to see *The Queen of the Opium Ring;* they would have been reading *Ten Buckets of Blood or The Apple-woman's Revenge*, or they would have been walking the streets with an eye out for personal adventure. The corruptible ones, I mean. The hard-worked mothers of families — who are a large part of movie audiences in small towns — would have been sitting at home inventing, for sheer emptiness and weariness of mind, bitter little scandals about their neighbors. The men would have been — we have all been told — in the wicked, wicked corner saloon. We must get it firmly fixed in our minds that the movies represent a step up, not a step down, in popular amusement. Of course, you may be fancying that all these people, if deprived of movies, would be attending university extension lectures. But, if so, I think you are quite wrong.

The question of the very young, I admit, remains. There is no doubt that too many children go to the movies too frequently. In well-run theatres they are not admitted unless accompanied by an older person; but the necessary escort is usually forthcoming. Babes in arms, I know, are frequent spectators

Digitized by Google

at the theatre I occasionally go to. I suppose it will not particularly hurt the babes in arms: the theatre is better ventilated, probably, than their own homes. The boys and girls from eight to sixteen are the real problem. Even so, I should want to be very sure how their parents would otherwise provide for their leisure, before I condemned this particular way. I do think that, for those of us who are trying to bring up our children sanely and wisely, the movies are an obstacle, especially in a small town where the posters are flamboyant and unavoidable. The children beg to go. You can deal with the circus and the Hippodrome — things that have to be succumbed to only once a year. But with three different matinées a week, all the twelve months, it is harder. Every now and then there is a picture that they may as well see: something spectacular in the right sense, travel-and-animal things, *Alice in Wonderland* or *Treasure Island*. When once they have been, they want to go again. But that is up to the careful parent.

I admit, too, that boys and girls, young people in general, who never did read the literature I have referred to, are now movie fans. The picture palace is not the haunt of the proletariat simply. By no means. The taste of the young is likely to be to some extent corrupted. But again, what would they be doing if they did not go? We must not be foolish enough to think that the movies are the only difference between our generation and theirs, or that the well-brought-up young thing, if movies were out of the way, would be cultivating his taste in the fashion his grandparents would have approved. The film-play may be a step down for some, where it is a step up for others; but I am cynical enough to believe that, if a generation feels like stepping down, it will do so. The undergraduates of Princeton, for example (so I have been told), all go to the movies every evening at seven o'clock. I think that is a little exaggerated, perhaps, but there is no doubt that they go very regularly. Perhaps it is unfortunate. Perhaps the undergraduates of fifteen years ago were better off. But before I admitted that, I should like to be sure that the undergraduates of fifteen years ago read Shakespeare or discussed metaphysics at seven o'clock in the evening. I am very much from Missouri in this matter.

II

All this sounds like defense of the movies, which I have admitted to be vulgar. Let us look at this special vulgarity a little. When a good novel, say, is dramatized, it is practically always vulgarized. You cannot put a work of art into a different medium without, to a large extent, spoiling it. Especially a work of art which has been wrought out of words cannot be put into a wordless medium without losing a great deal. The great faults of the picture play, I seem to make out, are two: sensationalism and sentimentalism. I read, the other day, in a motion-picture magazine (two weeks' allowance for that, alas!) the following statement, made by a big producer: 'We would not have dared, five years ago, to use one hundred and fifty feet of film with only mental movement in it.' I take it that they are stressing 'mental movement' increasingly. Even so, you cannot photograph mere psychology indefinitely.

When I hear that Joseph Conrad is going to devote himself to writing for the movies, I wonder greatly. *Lord Jim* in the pictures would not be precisely *Lord Jim*, would it? But I have gathered also from the magazine for which son's allowance was spent, that the cry is more and more for original plays, not for dramatizations. On the whole, that may be a good thing. Now and then

Digitized by Google

a particular novel lends itself specially to the filming process: as you read the novel itself, you can see its manifest destiny. But, generally speaking, a good novel loses immensely. A large part of the work of the novelist consists of creating human beings. What they say and what they think are as important as what they physically do. And there is a limit to the mental movement that can be conveniently or even wisely registered. But to say that novels are usually vulgarized in screen-versions is not necessarily to damn screen-plays. The dramatized novel does not, for that matter, usually make a good play on the real stage. The technique is other; the same points must be differently made and differently led up to. There are exceptions, of course; but certainly the best plays are those that were written as plays. And I fancy the best movies will be those that were written as movie-scenarios. Certainly, if Mr. Conrad is to devote himself to film-making, I hope it will be by writing new scenarios, not by helping them to adapt *Victory* or *The Rescue*.

This vulgarization of books in the process of making films of them is, I dare say, pretty nearly inevitable. In any novel that tempts the producers there are sure to be one or two big scenes that are admirably adapted to pictorial presentment. (The rare novel of the picaresque type — alas, that we have so few! — really cries out for the screen.) But most of the preparation for those scenes, most of the preliminary stuff that gives them their significance, is not transferable to celluloid. Something has to be substituted for the unpictorial bulk of the book. The natural way is to stress minor episodes, make striking scenes out of quiet ones, exaggerate mental movement into physical movement. Often *sauce piquante* has to be added out of hand. At times a delicate situation has to be made crude.

Henry James is an extreme instance; but imagining *The Awkward Age* on the screen will give you an idea of the difficulties of filming any book whatsoever that depends to any extent on slow and subtle delineation of character. For the sake of the argument, suppose *The Awkward Age* to be taken over by a producer: Mrs. Brook and Vanderbank would have to be sacrificed at once; you would have to give them at least one scene which showed them to be lovers. Mrs. Brook's wail, 'To think that it's all been just *talk!*' could hardly be got across to a movie audience. The scene at Tishy Grendon's, where Mrs. Brook 'pulls the walls of the house down' — what could you do but show little Aggie as a definitely abandoned creature? The close-up of a French novel would not turn the trick. How on earth could you explain Vanderbank — in a movie — without sacrificing Nanda? *The Awkward Age* is perhaps the extremest possible case, but any producer who dramatizes a serious novel is confronted with some of these problems. Even the concession of 'a hundred feet of mental movement' will not atone for the necessary violence done to psychology. There are books where psychology bears, at almost every turn, visible fruit; so that, going from scene to scene, the spectator can make out for himself the underlying shifts of mood. But these books should be sifted from those that pursue a different method.

On the other hand, some great novels would lend themselves better to the screen than to the stage. *Vanity Fair*, for example — or so I imagine. Exceeding violence was done to *Vanity Fair* when it was turned into the play *Becky Sharp*. It was not Becky, it was not Thackeray, it was not *Vanity Fair*, it was not anything. But I can imagine a film version of the book that would be something — if the producer were willing to spend enough money on

Digitized by Google

it. The fault of the play was that it had to confine itself to a few scenes, and the epic quality of Becky's life was lost. What the screen can give us, if it chooses, is the epic quality. But that is for the future. It means, too, very careful selection of subject.

The vulgarization of the novel, in screen versions, is almost inevitable, — save for a chosen few, — as I have tried to indicate. But vulgarity is there, even in the original plays. Again, I fancy that is not so much a matter of necessity as of the easiest way. People have been so pampered by 'stunts' on the screen that they expect, they demand, thrills. The drama of real life is not apt to be expressed in quick getaways over roofs, leaps from cliff to cliff, or even the achievement of freedom by means of a racing car. But those make a convenient way to thrills. Contrasts, too, — just because the moving picture is such an excellent medium for them, — are overdone. Too much is pushed off on them; they are made too crude, too violent. The chance for vivifying contrasts — whether of past scenes with present, or of character with character, or of one person's background and situation with another's — is one of the moving picture's greatest assets, artistically speaking. As is also lapse of time, that most difficult thing in the world for the novelist to manage gracefully and plausibly. Juxtapositions and antitheses ('antithesis is the root of all style'), which call for the greatest technical skill of an author who is restricted to words and the architectonics of the novel, are easily achieved for him in the pictures.

My own notion is, you see, that there is a perfectly legitimate field in art for the picture-play; and that only by taking it as a different genre, and exploiting its own vast possibilities, can the best results be got. If the tendency to vulgarity is there, even in the original plays, I fancy that is because the makers of them are still feeling for the right convention. It is too new an art for its laws to have been completely tabulated. I think people must get away from the idea that the movie scenario is at all the same thing as a play; or that any good book can be made into a good film. I do not mean by this that the material of screen plays is restricted. I do not think it is, any more than that of any other genre. But I believe that there is still a great deal to learn about the proper exploitation of this new medium, and that a great deal of the vulgarity of films comes from too narrow a view of what can be done and too great ignorance, as yet, of how to do it. The danger is that the easiest way will prevail, and that the moving-picture art will degenerate before it has had a chance to grow up. The plea that the movie audience can understand nothing that is not emotionally cheap and easy is ridiculous. A large number of our immigrants have been used to better stuff, dramatically, than Broadway gives them. Shakespeare knew perfectly, you may be sure, how successfully *Hamlet* would hit the groundlings. He was just as consciously writing great melodrama as he was consciously writing great poetry. The movie audience that surrounds me when I go is not, for the most part, a cultivated or an educated audience. But it prefers the better movies to the worse ones. And I think — excellent indication — that it shows signs of revolting against the jokes from the *Literary Digest*.

III

One of the great foes to improvement in moving-picture art would seem to be the close-up. The close-up, I take it, is still the approved field of such 'mental movement' as appears in a play. Now, I have not seen all the great

Digitized by Google

movie stars. But I have seen half a dozen of the best-known movie actresses, and the simple fact is that, when they register emotions in a close-up, they all look precisely alike. They grimace identically. Either — it seems to me — they have not learned how to use the close-up properly for dramatic purposes, or there is something the matter with the close-up itself, and it should be gingerly dealt in. I incline to believe that it is a matter of imperfect technique. These women move differently, act differently, 'suggest' differently, in the body of the play. It is only when you stare into their tearful or triumphant faces, made colossal, that they all become alike. It may be that make-up has something to do with it. But the fault is there. The men are nearly as bad, but not quite. I suppose all heroes do not have to have cupid's-bow mouths, for one thing. People do not have such fixed standards for male charm. Both men and women need more subtlety in this matter of close-ups. I believe there are too many close-ups, anyhow; but I am sure that the close-up has possibilities which many of our stars have not mastered. I know, because I have several times seen Sessue Hayakawa.

I am so little an authority on movie stars that I do not wish to name names in this essay. Though I have seen a good many of the most famous, I have not seen them all. Those I have seen, I have not seen enough times. But I have seen ——, and ——, and ——, and —— (more than once, some of them), who are at the very top of popularity and fame. (I am omitting entirely, for the present, the slap-stick stuff, and speaking only of serious plays.) And if I had not seen Sessue Hayakawa, I should think, perhaps, the subtle, the really helpful close-up was well-nigh impossible. Hayakawa has proved to me that it is not; that great acting, of the quiet sort, can be done on the screen. I have seen his immobile profile describe a mental conflict as I have never seen it done on the real stage except by Mrs. Fiske in *Rosmersholm*. I have always thought that Mrs. Fiske's silent profile, conveying to an audience the fact that incest had been unwittingly committed, was one of the greatest pieces of acting I have ever seen. I did not suppose it could be easily matched on the real stage, and I should never have dreamed it could be done at all on the screen. But I believe that, if necessary, Hayakawa could do it. Each play that I have seen 'the Jap' in was worse than the last, and I have begun to be afraid that he is going to be forced — why, I do not know — into the contortionism, the violence, the eventual absurdity, that must, I suppose, always be waiting to engulf the emotional screen actor. But I shall never forget the first simple little play I saw him in, where the setting amounted to nothing, the characters were few and humble, and the acting was supremely quiet and very great. *It can be done.* And as this is a discussion of movie possibilities simply, not of movie achievements up to date, that is all we need to know. I am not saying that others have not done it. I can only say, out of my small experience, that he is the one who has proved to me most conclusively that it is just as possible to have great acting on the screen as on the stage.

The sentimentalism to which we have referred is simply, I think, a prevalent vice of our own day, and not to be credited to movies any more than to any other form of popular art. Certainly our books are as rotten with it as our picture-plays. But books have had a long history, and novel, play, poem, and essay are established genres. They will pull up. It is because the moving-picture genre is young and as yet unsure, because it is still without traditions,

Digitized by Google

that it stands in peril of succumbing to any bad fashion that is going.

There are various attempts being made and planned, I believe, to make the movie, not only pure, but high-brow. I have never seen the results. But I wonder if the authors of these attempts are using the right methods. Are they utilizing the great, the special assets of the screen? The prime thrill in a movie is the thrill of the spectacular. Great spaces, with horsemen riding, men lying in ambush; the specks in the distance growing; flight and pursuit, wherever and whoever; the crowd, the passionate group; the contrast (as I have said) of past and present, rich and poor, happy and unhappy, hero and villain, can all be made vivid to an extent that must leave mere words (unless used by a master) lagging far behind. What one may call the processional value of the movies can hardly be exaggerated. Whereas the play must gather up its action into a few set scenes, the movie can show life in flux — people going naturally about their appointed ways, as, in the world, people do. I used to think, when I was new to film plays, that the unnatural movement of the actors was due to some law of the camera. But again, it is not so. A few weeks ago I saw a well-known male star in a not particularly interesting adaptation of a once popular novel, and the star bore himself like a human gentleman. He moved as slowly and as gracefully as he pleased. There was none of that jerky rhythm, which is so prevalent that one is sometimes tempted to think it the inevitable gait of the screen. Whether he paced the floor, or took up a book, or lighted a cigarette, or got into a motor-car, or clasped the heroine in his arms, he did it all with perfect naturalness, with the usual rhythm of well-controlled muscles. So it, too, can be done.

I believe that both the sensationalism and the sentimentalism which constitute movie-vulgarity can be largely checked and controlled. The genre should be exploited for its artistic possibilities, which are great, and the actors should develop variety rather than one conventional mode. There is no doubt that, at present, the most attractive films are those which use vast landscapes and numbers of people in motion. But you cannot restrict the movie-art to plays of this type. It has been proved by certain actors and actresses that 'mental movement' and natural bodily action are not impossible to 'get across.' The cheapening, the over-simplification and over-stressing of emotion, are not inevitable concomitants of filming a story. You can get your thrill quietly, subtly. The words that are reft from the actor must be made up for, by him, with more than usual significance of bodily and facial expression. But again, it can be done. And to help along, there is that immense potentiality of temporal, social, personal, emotional contrast which no other genre really possesses. Antithesis, so far, has not, I imagine, been either generally enough or subtly enough used. From the hovel to the palace is one way, to be sure; but that is cheap and easy. It does not begin to tap the possibilities. A proper contrast, properly shown, will make up for chapters of verbiage; but the contrast must be carefully made in every detail. Mere 'velvet and rags, so the world wags' will not do.

I am told that America is really responsible for the moving-picture genre: that we are the chief sponsors, if not the positive authors, of the movie. It is we who must make or mar it as an art. I know nothing about foreign films; I have never seen any outside of the United States. I do not know whence these movies come which are doing, according to unquestionable authority, such harm among the brown and yellow races. But I quite see that we have

Digitized by Google

a great responsibility on our hands. I have heard it said and corroborated, in unimpeachable quarters, that to the movies is due a large part of the unrest in India. For a decade, the East Indian has been gazing upon the white man's movie; and it is inevitable that he should ask why the people who behave that way at home should consider that they have a divine mission to civilize and govern other races. Whatever one thinks of the movie, I believe we should all agree that it does not illustrate, particularly well, the social superiority of the white race. The Anglo-Indian official and his wife may be supremely scrupulous and tactful; but the native is, of course, going to consider that the movie gives them away.

I have no doubt that the worst films, not the best, are shipped to the remoter continents. Japan is overrun with foreign movies, as well as India. I do not know about China, but certainly the Dutch East Indies, Indo-China, the Straits Settlements are invaded. Read the guide-books. Mr. J. O. P. Bland, who has been observing alien races in their own habitat, for many years, with patient precision, avers that the American (and perhaps European) movie is doing incalculable harm to the mixed populaces of the South American republics. To take only one instance: we can perfectly see that to the Hindu and the Mohammedan, the Japanese, and the South American of Hispano-Moorish social tradition, the spectacle of the movie-heroine who is not only unchaperoned but scantily dressed, who more or less innocently 'vamps' every man within striking radius, who drives her own car through the slums at midnight, who places herself constantly in perilous or unworthy contacts, yet who is on the whole considered a praiseworthy and eminently marriageable young woman, is not calculated to enhance the reputation of Europe or the United States. She violates every law of decency, save one, that is known to the Hindu, the Japanese, or the mestizo of South America. It is scarcely conceivable to them that anyone but a prostitute should behave like that. Yet they have it on good authority — the film — that she is the daughter of the American millionaire or the British peer, who considers himself immeasurably the poor Hindu's, the poor Jap's, the poor peon's superior.

Nor do I believe that Charlie Chaplin is destined to spread the doctrine of the White Man's Burden very successfully. We deal, in these other continents, with peoples to whom unnecessary bodily activity is not a dignified thing. You cannot possibly explain Charlie Chaplin to them correctly. You just cannot. They simply think that official Anglo-Saxons are minuetting in the parlor for diplomatic reasons, and that Charlie Chaplin is the Anglo-Saxon 'out in the pantry.' Paris is as keen, I understand, on 'Charlot' as England and the United States. But compared with Asia, Africa, and South America, France and England and we are, as it were, one flesh.

This particular problem is none of my affair. But it might be well, all the same, not to present ourselves as totally lacking in social dignity at the very moment when we are being so haughty about the Monroe Doctrine and Japanese exclusion and the White Man's Burden in general. The people who are told that we are too good to mess up with them in a league of nations must wonder a little when they look at Charlie Chaplin, having previously been told that he is the idol of the American public. I have taken Charlie Chaplin merely because of his positively world-wide popularity. The love of slap-stick is not confined to the Anglo-Saxon tribe, though I believe no other tribe likes it one half so much. Personally, I am bored to tears by Charlie.

Digitized by Google

But as a public, there is no doubt that we adore him. We understand perfectly that our peculiar sense of humor in no wise prevents us from carrying on an enlightened form of government with a good deal of success. Slap-stick has always been in the Anglo-Saxon's blood. But I can see that the Brahmin or the Samurai, who gazes on Charlie and the custard pie, might legitimately wonder whether, after all, Charlie was intended by the Deity to govern the whole planet; cannot you?

That was, in a sense, a digression. For what I really had set myself to do was to indicate what, it seemed to me, were some of the possibilities of the moving picture — the moving picture as an artistic genre, that is. I have no means of knowing what technically may be achieved in another decade or two: what marvels of color, of scene-shifting, and the like. But all that is stage-managing, not the play itself. I fancy, being largely Anglo-Saxon still in our make-up, we shall go on with slap-stick to the end of the chapter. Probably the alien among us will be more quickly educated to slap-stick than to any other of our ideals. It will be the first step in Americanization. I do not see how you can develop slap-stick except along the line of least resistance. It can only go a little further all the time, and become a little more so.

But the movie drama has a more serious and varied future than that. It is important. It must chuck — it ought to chuck — the Aristotelian unities overboard. The three unities have long since ceased to be sacred, yet the memory of them has overshadowed the whole of European play-writing. Our serious drama has violated them, but it has never positively contradicted them — flung them out of court. Unity of action has at least been kept, in most cases. Even unity of time has often been stuck to; and in rare cases of late, unity of place. There has been no virtue in discarding the three unities, except the virtue that is made of necessity. But the screen-play must discard them, in order to find itself. Unity of time and unity of place alike would kill the movie. Even unity of action is by no means necessary to it. At least, so it seems to me; but then I am very strong for the picaresque, the epic movie. Certainly, unity of action in the strictest dramatic sense is not a virtue in the screen-play. It is precisely the movie's chance to give the larger, looser texture of life itself. It does not, at its best, have to artificialize and recast life as does the well-made play. Its motto not only is, but ought to be, 'Good-bye, Aristotle!' This may seem a superfluous saying, since we have been bidding that gentleman farewell so vociferously for so long. Yet the drama has, up to our own time, been on speaking terms with him. The drama, I fancy, will have to continue to be on speaking terms with him; and I am not sure that the one-act play, which has so much vogue at present, has not actually invited him to come back and have a cup of tea.

The movie is another matter. It has its own quite different future; and producer, director, actor, and author will all have to pull together to make that future artistically as well as commercially brilliant. More power to their elbows!

Digitized by Google

EXILE AND STEAMER

BY JEAN KENYON MACKENZIE

THERE is moonlight and sunlight, there are the stars and the sea. Some days are gray and ribbed with the white trouble of the surf. Some are white days, full of a sparkle of sunlight like a spray above the water. On some days mountains that have been long lost rise out of the sea; at noon they are faint and far away; but with evening they draw in and cast anchor before the little cabin where you live. They are blue. Thus beauty, in her various fashion, smites with her rod the rock of your monotony, and water does indeed gush forth; you drink and are assuaged. But still you look to the sea; you have a glass at hand, — it is a ship's glass, — and it is not for beauty that you hunt with your glass: it is for excitement. You are hunting for the very heart and flaming core of excitement, and that is a steamer. Living in lonely places like this, you are a prey to obsessions; you are obsessed by certain sleepless thoughts; they stir in your heart while you sleep, and they speak without ceasing of steamers. It is they that drive you in the morning to your glass, and to be looking all day out to sea, and at night to be searching the dark for a little cluster of stars that are low upon the horizon, like the Pleiades in March; but oh, they are not the Pleiades—they shine with a difference: they are the lights of a steamer!

How shall I be telling of steamers to the dwellers in great harbor towns, where the loveliest ladies of the sea come and go without applause? Or to inlanders who never see a mast at all, unless it is the superstructure of an oil-well? You whose house is on the Hudson, where a steamer is at anchor before your very door — it is eight bells; the hour was struck, and did you hear the bell? The signal stands in the engine-room at 'Full Steam Ahead,' and did you hear that drumming? A week she lay in the river; this morning she is gone, and are you therefore lonely in the world?

In the lost places of the earth a steamer is the great Presence — she furnishes the empty seas. However far out and dim, with her little plume of smoke, she leaves her wake in the heart. There are shores where from every white man's cabin her passing is followed with a sigh; speculation broods upon her all day long. Her ports, her flags, her cargo, her crew, seem a little while to live in the mind after she has gone down the slope of the world. She may be a poor, mean, unkempt cargo-boat, dingy upon a bright sea, but she is the symbol of migration, and a winged flutter in the heart.

As for The Steamer, that is another matter — a matter of Elijah and the ravens. Be sure that Elijah, once he got the ravens' schedule, was not caught napping. He was up and had his glass out before the ravens were overdue. And be sure that there is no steamer so mean, so obscure in her listed sailings, but is The Steamer to prisoners somewhere, behind a barring of cocoanut palms or a grating of ice. Be sure that she will put on airs once she has dropped behind her betters, and will go swelling

Digitized by Google

into little empty harbors where there is only one calendar, and she the only saint written there. Before the anchor falls, white men are off to her between the breaches in the surf. The chain is hardly taut when the little canoes and the surf boats are alongside, and white men are running up the ladder. And suddenly, with the letting go of the anchor, in that great room of the sea and sky, or in that narrow river-room with its forest wall, there are the agitations of traffic and of commerce. The winches fore and aft thrum and clamor; voices of white men and of black men rise from the water level and from the deck; cargo is slung off and on, dripping with the gilt of palm-oil and the dust of rice-bags, or reeking of salt fish.

A day is all too short for what must be done with the barber and the steward and the purser and the chief and the captain of The Steamer. All the white men find a day too short. Night comes too soon; the steamer hangs upon the dark like a bouquet of fireworks, arrested. The last load of cargo has gone over the side; the ship's launch has ceased to sob and sleeps in her berth on deck; the second officer has made his last bitter comments and has gone below to wash himself, and the time has come for the white men to go ashore. They hang over the railing calling to their little crews that are asleep; they negotiate the difficult descent into their boats, — for the trade swell is about the ship now, — and they go off into the rain.

There is this about The Steamer — she comes and she goes. You keep your best white ducks for her; you keep all your dates for her; you set your watch by her chronometer and your life by her schedule. Your letters home are full of her worship. But she has such sweethearts in every port; the rush and enthusiasm of her advent is matched by the rush and enthusiasm of her exit; she carries her garland of lights away into the darkness, or her feather of smoke into the noon; she grows smaller and dimmer; her drums grow fainter, and once again in a silence and a void you are 'ten leagues beyond man's life,' you 'can have no note unless the sun were post.'

You see how, with The Steamer, it is a kiss and a blow. Between the kiss of her coming and the blow of her going is the span of your little day — all the honey of news and of gossip, all the wine of excitement, must be savored now. I think of the many little settlements by the sea waiting to hear of the war from The Steamer, on a day of her days. I think of the first camouflaged steamer staggering up a river on her accustomed schedule, like a fistful of lightning in the hand of Jove. No supernatural visitation could have more astonished her worshipers, all unprepared. I think of her captain shaping her course all through the war, in the dark, unarmed, without convoy — the very idol and providence of the outposts of the earth. And of the captains young and old, whose names you do not know; and some of them, for their service of The Steamer, wear medals, and some of them lie in the waste of the sea. For all you do not know their names, their names are known; living and dead, they are remembered. Exiles remember and bless them — steamer, and captain, and the engineers in the vitals of the ship, and the little cabin-boys who did their little duties when the steamer was under fire.

In my heart I see her now, and she is under fire. She is unarmed; she zigzags before her smoke-screen, trembling with her speed. You lean on the iron wall of the engine-house, under that bright sky where it is morning, and you watch the great fountains play upon the level of the sea where the shells strike the water. You think of the engineers,

Digitized by Google

who will never come on deck if the ship goes down; and you see on the bridge the legs of the little cabin-boy, whose head, inside the pilot-house door, waits on an order. All the life of the ship, under the cover of the smoke-screen and the sob of haste and the scream of the exhaust, waits on an order. That young captain biting on his pipe, his megaphone in his hand, is a symbol of man's will to order. He is enshrined there on the bridge above the trouble of the ship, — an image of ultimate resistance so intense, on so many solitary seas, that his astral — if ever at all there is an astral — must still patrol the course of the steamer he saved, or of the steamer that was lost.

There is nothing stranger than a map — with its understood relation to a place, and the way they do not resemble. You would never guess, to look at a place on a map, what its aspect really is. Often I go to the map-room in the public library, where I ask for the Southern Cameroun. I look and look at that symbol of the African forest, until my secret knowledge unfolds in my heart, and I see again those little mountains under their green cloak; I cross those rivers in canoes, or by the old, old bridges of the fallen trees; those many little ravines are blue again and full of the trouble of drums. Then I laugh at the map, with its colors and its names; and it is as if, in a group of strangers, you have met the eyes of your friend. And so it is with the listed sailings of steamers — so many and so broadcast: their names and their published ports trouble your mind as little as the birds that migrate in the autumn. But oh, let them be but due where you are, and they touch you where you live. And of these there is one that drops her anchor in your very heart — you call her My Steamer. You name her so, and all your fellow exiles call her yours; your ardor does so subjugate your little world.

For My Steamer you wait and wait, and you weary waiting. You cease to breathe, lest contrary winds blow upon her. But your ardor has spoked the wheel of time; it slackens. The moons wax and wane with a strange and cruel deliberation. Well I remember my first affair with a steamer, and that the seasons dragged, and then the days. Long after, I came upon a calendar with those days crossed off; and when I saw that record of faint hours, I felt again the sickening arrest and backward swing of time.

An affair with a steamer is not always mutual. There she is at Kribi to the north of you, and you with a glass under the eaves since the dawn asking her by wireless, — the wireless of the heart, — is she yours. And boys running north by the beach to ask the captain, is she yours. And boys running south by the beach to say that she will be down by two o'clock or not at all. And you, packed and ready, on the indigo shade upon the sand at two o'clock, and still on the sand at three o'clock, but driven back by the tide at four o'clock; and by misgivings at five o'clock driven up a path you know too well, to a thatch which you had thought you need not seek again.

And now boys run up the beach to say, 'Steamer live for come'; and she anchors well in. The red of evening grows behind her, her lights blossom on the dark, but no boat comes ashore. You are going to bed, when you are summoned by a lantern — 'Boat live for come'; and you race back to the water's edge, all your zests renewed.

But it is a false alarm. There on the sand you find a black man streaming with sea-water; he has swum ashore from the ship in search of the launch, and under the illusion that this is Powell's trading-post and that you are Powell. With his wet hand he urges upon you a bill of lading, incredibly dry.

Digitized by Google

You dismiss him coldly, waving him south, and hoping that you are never to see him again. You do not know how often and often he is to accost you again in memory, his wet body gilded by the light of the lantern and his bill of lading incredibly dry.

In the morning that steamer is gone! And before the shocking emptiness of the sea your friends say, 'Oh, do let's sit down!' And they tell sad stories of the defections of steamers: of how Mr. Menkel, in a canoe, with bag and baggage, tried to hold up a steamer with a gesture, like a traffic policeman — and failed; of how the Gaults waited weeks and weeks for a steamer that did not come, because she had blown up in the Congo River, as you may see for yourself between Boma and Matadi; of how many a steamer has passed by on pretext of quarantine; of how, off Quillu, when the surf is high, the steamer will not so much as call. Until, what with tales of the coldness of steamers and their misadventures, you cannot think how you are to get home at all.

Yes, you wonder that. Many a man has wondered that. Betrayed by some steamer, he has thought of his little cabin, with its million roaches — that he must live there forever; and that he is never to escape the sound of the reiterant surf and its endless pacings. Long after, he will sigh when he thinks of that season, rainy or dry; he will remember dark thoughts that came upon him then, and his sleepless nights. A trader who cut the vein in his wrist with the scissors off his counter told the mission doctor that he knew he was never to go home. He would never live to get home, he said. And he could no longer endure that shanty of his, with its store of cotton print and salt fish and matches and tobacco. So he cut his wrist. And then he sent, as you see, for the doctor. And the doctor, a long time wise in the things of exile, sent him off in a canoe, with a lantern and a little crew who were to travel with their 'big Massa' until they met the steamer from the south. For it is a great thing, said the doctor, to feel water under the keel.

That is a wonderful feeling. And it is wonderful, when you have lived so long by the light of a lantern, to find a star in your ceiling. For there it is in the ceiling of your cabin — a star. And there, beneath the light of that star, is an apple. Because you look as he had hoped you would look when you see the star shining like this upon the apple, the steward tells you that, yes, he likes to have an apple aboard his steamer. He lets you know at once that he is proud of his steamer, and ashamed where there is cause. He will speak to you often of these things.

I see myself stretched at ease on the deck of My Steamer, sunk in an excess of languor and of calm. It is a night as bright as silver and as clear as glass. We are moored to a great tree beside a bank of the Congo River; a million little voices speak to me from the sedges on the margin, and the steward speaks to me. He has brought me my coffee, and he tells me of the shame he feels. He is ashamed of his knives and forks, of his linen and the bugs in his beds; he is ashamed of his captain, who is tipsy, and he groans there in the moonlight: 'This is no place for you, miss, no place at all!'

But oh, what does he, all ashamed there on his execrable boat, know of the ineffable calm that is the atmosphere of My Steamer, where I am as safe from his knives and forks and the weevils in his oatmeal as a silly silver lamb at the heart of a glass ball! Not the clamor of the winches, or the thunder of the great mahogany logs as they come aboard, or the clangor of iron rails as they go over the side, can break that insulation. Only the rattle of the anchor-

Digitized by Google

chain and the signal to the engine-room can do this; and if we lie off every settlement on the West Coast and go up every stream in the delta of the Niger, for every time the anchor is weighed I will tremble, and will tremble in my heart whenever the ship trembles with that shudder of getting under weigh, which is the initial throe of the ecstasy of going home.

When last I went to Africa, it was in war-time, and I took five steamers. Five steamers I took, and for these five steamers I waited in five several ports, for five æons of time; until at last I said that, if ever in opening a book I came upon a traveler waiting on a dock, open sea-beach, or river-bank, for a galley, caracul, frigate, clipper, or steamer, I would then close the book. I would never read, I said, of Jason and the Argo, or of Hero and Leander, or even of Europa and the Bull. All adventures taking account of transportation by water would be for me forever anathema. And I would forever forget my voyage of the five steamers. But often and often, in a kind of little flock, the odd assorted lot of them comes back to mind; I see them in my heart and I love them.

There is the Montevideo, and she is a lady. There is the Delphin, so little, so rolling, and so dirty, carrying her cargo of flies from the clean, pale alleys of Cadiz to the sea-based mountains of the Canaries. There is the Cataluna, — not so very neutral, — with her marred romantic beauty, and her bright lacquers in her cabins, and her noble deck, where it is always one o'clock of the afternoon, and we are drawing away from the Canaries. The afternoon clouds are gathering on the Pillars of Hercules; gray gulls are flying; a young priest hangs his little golden bird on the port side, under the awning, and at once and forever that little bird casts a tendril of song out to sea. There is the Burutu; and still I see her come into the harbor of Dakar at dusk, her lights fore and aft the color of primroses, and her signals flat in the wind from Timbuctoo. Still I see her pick her way in the dark down the West Coast, or, in the safety of a river, paint the forest walls with her light. In my heart I save her forever from that betrayal in the English Channel, where she was lost, and her crew. And still I remember that last little steamer of all, whose name I have forgotten, who had no cabins, but suffered her passengers on her bridge, where they idly slept while she hurried all night under the stars upon the errands of exiles. For them she turned the furrow and cast her anchor in their service wherever there was a lamp at night, or a zinc roof to shine in the sun. She was for them, in those irregular war-times, a kind of miracle — a sweet chariot swinging low and coming for to carry them home. She was Their Steamer.

Digitized by Google

AT NIGHT

BY LAURA SPENCER PORTOR

Is my heart ordered, clean, and sweet,
For my loved Master's hasting feet?

Is my heart warm, that, when He stands
Chilled, He may stoop and warm his hands?

And quiet that He may be blest —
Tired from all turmoil — and have rest?

And lighted, that He may forget
The rough road, and the storm and wet?

Garnished with fragrant flowers, that might
Recall dear joys across black night?

And is there bread? and wine? lest He
Should thirst — or should be hungry?

Hark! Who is there? Oh, enter in!
Enters a man bowed down with sin.

Behind him, bent, is one who stands,
A broken heart within her hands;

And back of them (oh, shut the wild
Night out!) a shrinking starvèd child.

. . . . . .

A step! O Master do not wake
Thy friends who sleep here for thy sake!

Disturb them not, O Mighty Guest!
They sleep! They have such need of rest!

The Master smiles, then He and I
Go softly; speak but whisperingly.

Digitized by Google

THE INTERPRETER. I

A ROMANCE OF THE EAST

BY L. ADAMS BECK

I

THERE are strange things in this story, but, so far as I understand them, I tell the truth. If you measure the East with a Western foot-rule, you will say, 'Impossible.' I should have said it myself.

Of myself I will say as little as I can, for this story is of Vanna Loring. I am an incident only, though I did not know that at first.

My name is Stephen Clifden, and I was eight-and-thirty; plenty of money, sound in wind and limb. I had been by way of being a writer before the war, the hobby of a rich man; but if I picked up anything in the welter in France, it was that real work is the only salvation this mad world has to offer; so I meant to begin at the beginning, and learn my trade like a journeyman laborer.

I had come to the right place. A very wonderful city is Peshawar — the Key of India, and a city of Romance, which stands at every corner, and cries aloud in the market-place. But there was society here, and I was swept into it — there was chatter, and it galled me.

I was beginning to feel that I had missed my mark, and must go farther afield, perhaps up into Central Asia, when I met Vanna Loring. If I say that her hair was soft and dark; that she had the deepest hazel eyes I have ever seen, and a sensitive, tender mouth; that she moved with a flowing grace like 'a wave of the sea' — it sounds like the portrait of a beauty, and she was never that. Also, incidentally, it gives none of her charm. I never heard anyone get any further than that she was 'oddly attractive' — let us leave it at that. She was certainly attractive to me.

She was the governess of little Winifred Meryon, whose father held the august position of General Commanding the Frontier Forces, and her mother the more commanding position of the reigning beauty of Northern India, generally speaking.

But Vanna — I gleaned her story by bits when I came across her with the child in the gardens. I was beginning to piece it together now.

Her love of the strange and beautiful she had inherited from a young Italian mother, daughter of a political refugee; her childhood had been spent in a remote little village in the West of England; half reluctantly she told me how she had brought herself up after her mother's death and her father's second marriage. Little was said of that, but I gathered that it had been a grief to her, a factor in her flight to the East.

'So when I came to three-and-twenty,' she said slowly, 'I felt I must break away from our narrow life. I had a call to India stronger than anything on earth. You would not under-

Digitized by Google

stand, but that was so, and I had spent every spare moment in teaching myself India — its history, legends, religions, everything! And I was not wanted at home, and I had grown afraid.'

'What were you afraid of?'

'Of growing old and missing what was waiting for me out here. But I could not get away like other people. No money, you see. So I thought I would come out and teach here. Dare I? Would they let me? I knew I was fighting life and chances and risks if I did it; but it was death if I stayed there. And then — Do you really care to hear?'

'Of course. Tell me how you broke your chain.'

'I spare you the family quarrels. I can never go back. But I was spurred — spurred to take some wild leap; and I took it. So six years ago I came out. First I went to a doctor and his wife at Cawnpore. They had a wonderful knowledge of the Indian peoples, and there I learned Hindustani and much else. Then he died. But an aunt had left me two hundred pounds, and I could wait a little and choose; and so I came here.'

It interested me. The courage that pale elastic type of woman has!

'Have you ever regretted it? Would they take you back if you failed?'

'Never, to both questions,' she said, smiling. 'Life is glorious. I've drunk of a cup I never thought to taste; and if I died to-morrow I should know I had done right. I rejoice in every moment I live — even when Winifred and I are wrestling with arithmetic.'

'I should n't have thought life was very easy with Lady Meryon.'

'Oh, she is kind enough in an indifferent sort of way. I am not the persecuted Jane Eyre sort of governess at all. But that is all on the surface and does not matter. It is India I care for — the people, the [redacted] the infinite beauty. It was coming home. You would laugh if I told you I knew Peshawar long before I came here. Knew it — walked here, lived. Before there were English in India at all.' She broke off. 'You won't understand.'

'Oh, I have had that feeling, too,' I said patronizingly. 'If one has read very much about a place —'

'That was not quite what I meant. Never mind. The people, the place — that is the real thing to me. All this is the dream.'

The sweep of her hand took in not only Winifred and myself, but the general's stately residence, which to blaspheme in Peshawar is rank infidelity.

'By George, I would give thousands to feel that! I can't get out of Europe here. I want to write, Miss Loring,' I found myself saying. 'I'd done a bit, and then the war came and blew my life to pieces. Now I want to get inside the skin of the East, and I can't do it. I see it from outside, with a pane of glass between. No life in it. If you feel as you say, for God's sake be my interpreter!'

'Interpret?' she said, looking at me with clear hazel eyes; 'how could I? You were in the native city yesterday. What did you miss?'

'Everything! I saw masses of color, light, movement. Brilliantly picturesque people. Children like Asiatic angels. Magnificently scowling ruffians in sheepskin coats. In fact, a movie staged for my benefit. I was afraid they would ring down the curtain before I had had enough. It had no meaning. When I got back to my diggings I tried to put down what I had just seen, and I swear there's more inspiration in the guide-book.'

'Did you go alone?'

'Yes, I certainly would not go sightseeing with the Meryon crowd. Tell me what you felt when you saw it first.'

'I went with Sir John's uncle. He

Digitized by Google

was a great traveler. The color struck me dumb. It flames — it sings. Think of the gray pinched life in the West! I saw a grave dark potter turning his wheel, while his little girl stood by, glad at our pleasure, her head veiled like a miniature woman, tiny baggy trousers, and a silver nose-stud, like a star, in one delicate nostril. In her thin arms she held a heavy baby in a gilt cap, like a monkey. And the wheel turned and whirled until it seemed to be spinning dreams, thick as motes in the sun. The clay rose in smooth spirals under his hand, and the wheel sang, "Shall the vessel reprove him who made one to honor and one to dishonor?" And I saw the potter thumping his wet clay, and the clay, plastic as dream-stuff, shaped swift as light, and the three Fates stood at his shoulder. Dreams, dreams, and all in the spinning of the wheel, and the rich shadows of the old broken courtyard where he sat. And the wheel stopped and the thread broke, and the little new shapes he had made stood all about him, and he was only a potter in Peshawar.'

Her voice was like a song. She had utterly forgotten my existence. I did not dislike it at the moment, for I wanted to hear more, and the impersonal is the rarest gift a woman can give a man.

'Did you buy anything?'

'He gave me a gift — a flawed jar of turquoise blue, faint turquoise green round the lip. He saw I understood. And then I bought a little gold cap and a wooden box of jade-green Kabul grapes. About a rupee, all told. But it was Eastern merchandise, and I was trading from Balsora and Baghdad, and Eleazar's camels were swaying down from Damascus along the Khyber Pass, and coming in at the great Darwazah, and friends' eyes met me everywhere. I am *profoundly* happy here.'

The sinking sun lit an almost ecstatic face.

'It may be very beautiful on the surface,' I said morosely; 'but there's a lot of misery below — hateful, they tell me.'

'Of course, I shall get to work one day. But look at the sunset. It opens like a mysterious flower. I must take Winifred home now.'

'One moment,' I pleaded; 'I can only see it through your eyes. I feel it while you speak, and then the good minute goes.'

She laughed.

'And so must I. Come, Winifred. Look, there's an owl; not like the owls in the summer dark in England —

'Lovely are the curves of the white owl sweeping,
Wavy in the dark, lit by one low star.'

Suddenly she turned again and looked at me half wistfully.

'It is good to talk to you. You want to know. You are so near it all. I wish I could help you; I am so exquisitely happy myself.'

My writing was at a standstill. It seemed the groping of a blind man in a radiant world. Once perhaps I had felt that life was good in itself — when the guns came thundering toward the Vimy Ridge in a mad gallop of horses, and men shouting and swearing and frantically urging them on. Then, riding for more than life, I had tasted life for an instant. Not before or since. But this woman had the secret.

Lady Meryon, with her escort of girls and subalterns, came daintily past the hotel compound, and startled me from my brooding with her pretty silvery voice.

'Dreaming, Mr. Clifden? It is n't at all wholesome to dream in the East. Come and dine with us to-morrow. A tiny dance afterwards, you know; or bridge for those who like it.'

I had not the faintest notion whether governesses dined with the family or came in afterward with the coffee; but it was a sporting chance, and I took

Digitized by Google

Then Sir John came up and joined us.

'You can't well dance to-morrow, Kitty,' he said to his wife. 'There's been an outpost affair in the Swat Hills, and young Fitzgerald has been shot. Come to dinner of course, Clifden. Glad to see you. But no dancing, I think.'

II

Next evening I went into Lady Meryon's flower-scented drawing-room.

Governesses dine, it appeared, only to fill an unexpected place, or make a decorous entry afterward, to play accompaniments. Fortunately Kitty Meryon sang, in a pinched little soprano, not nearly so pretty as her silver ripple of talk.

It was when the party had settled down to bridge and I was standing out, that I ventured to go up to her as she sat knitting by a window — not unwatched by the quick blue flash of Lady Meryon's eyes as I did it.

'I think you hypnotize me, Miss Loring. When I hear anything, I straightway want to know what you will say. Have you heard of Fitzgerald's death?'

'That is why we are not dancing to-night. To-morrow the cable will reach his home in England. He was an only child, and they are the great people of the village where we are little people. I knew his mother as one knows a great lady who is kind to all the village folk. It may kill her. It is traveling to-night like a bullet to her heart, and she does not know.'

'His father?'

'A brave man — a soldier himself. He will know it was a good death and that Harry would not fail. He did not at Ypres. He would not here. But all joy and hope will be dead in that house to-morrow.'

'And what do *you* think?'

'I am not sorry for Harry, if you mean that. He knew — we all know — that he was on guard here holding the outposts against blood and treachery and terrible things — playing the Great Game. One never loses at that game if one plays it straight, and I am sure that at the last it was joy he felt and not fear. He has not lost. Did you notice in the church a niche before every soldier's seat to hold his loaded gun? And the tablets on the walls: "Killed at Kabu River, aged 22." — "Killed on outpost duty." — "Murdered by an Afghan fanatic." This will be one memory more. Why be sorry?'

Presently: —

'I am going up to the hills to-morrow, to the Malakhand Fort, with Mrs. Delany, Lady Meryon's aunt, and we shall see the wonderful Tahkt-i-Bahi Monastery on the way. You should do that run before you go. The fort is the last but one on the way to Chitral, and beyond that the road is so beset that only soldiers may go farther, and indeed the regiments escort each other up and down. But it is an early start, for we must be back in Peshawar at six for fear of raiding natives.'

'I know; they hauled me up in the dusk the other day, and told me I should be swept off to the hills if I fooled about after dusk. But I say — is it safe for you to go? You ought to have a man. Could I go, too?'

I thought she did not look enthusiastic at the proposal.

'Ask. You know I settle nothing. I go where I am sent.'

She left the room; and when the bridge was over, I made my request. Lady Meryon shrugged her shoulders and declared it would be a terribly dull run — the scenery nothing, 'and only' (she whispered) 'Aunt Selina and poor Miss Loring.'

Of course I saw at once that she did not like it; but Sir John was all for my going, and that saved the situation.

Digitized by Google

I certainly could have dispensed with Aunt Selina when the automobile drew up in the golden river of the sunrise at the hotel. There were only the driver, a personal servant, and the two ladies: Mrs. Delany, comely, pleasant, talkative, and Vanna —

We glided along the straight military road from Peshawar to Nowshera, the gold-bright sun dazzling in its whiteness — a strange drive through the flat, burned country, with the ominous Kabul River flowing through it. Military preparations everywhere, and the hills looking watchfully down — alive, as it were, with keen, hostile eyes. War was as present about us as behind the lines in France; and when we crossed the Kabul River on a bridge of boats, and I saw its haunted waters, I began to feel the atmosphere of the place closing down upon me. It had a sinister beauty; it breathed suspense; and I wished, as I was sure Vanna did, for silence that was not at our command.

For Mrs. Delany felt nothing of it. A bright shallow ripple of talk was her contribution to the joys of the day; though it was, fortunately, enough for her happiness if we listened and agreed. I knew Vanna listened only in show. Her intent eyes were fixed on the Tahkt-i-Bahi hills after we had swept out of Nowshera; and when the car drew up at the rough track, she had a strange look of suspense and pallor. I remember I wondered at the time if she were nervous in the wild open country.

'Now pray don't be shocked,' said Mrs. Delany comfortably; 'but you two young people may go up to the monastery, and I shall stay here. I am dreadfully ashamed of myself, but the sight of that hill is enough for me. Don't hurry. I may have a little doze, and be all the better company when you get back. No, don't try to persuade me, Mr. Clifden. It is n't the part of a friend.'

I cannot say I was sorry, though I had a moment of panic when Vanna offered to stay with her — very much, too, as if she really meant it. So we set out perforce, Vanna leading steadily, as if she knew the way. She never looked up, and her wish for silence was so evident, that I followed, lending my hand mutely when the difficulties obliged it, she accepting absently, and as if her thoughts were far away.

Suddenly she quickened her pace. We had climbed about nine hundred feet, and now the narrow track twisted through the rocks — a track that looked as age-worn as no doubt it was. We threaded it, and struggled over the ridge, and looked down victorious on the other side.

There she stopped. A very wonderful sight, of which I had never seen the like, lay below us. Rock and waste and towering crags, and the mighty ruin of the monastery set in the fangs of the mountain like a robber baron's castle, looking far away to the blue mountains of the Debatable Land — the land of mystery and danger. It stood there — the great ruin of a vast habitation of men. Building after building, mysterious and broken, corridors, halls, refectories, cells; the dwelling of a faith so alien that I could not reconstruct the life that gave it being. And all sinking gently into ruin that in a century more would confound it with the roots of the mountains. Gray and wonderful, it clung to the heights and looked with eyeless windows at the past. Somehow I found it infinitely pathetic: the very faith it expressed is dead in India, and none left so poor to do it reverence.

But Vanna knew her way. Unerringly she led me from point to point, and she was visibly at home in the intricacies. Such knowledge in a young woman bewildered me. Could she have studied the plans in the Museum? How else should she know where the abbot

Digitized by Google

lived, or where the refractory brothers were punished?

Once I missed her, while I stooped to examine some scroll-work, and following, found her before one of the few images of the Buddha that the rapacious Museum had spared — a singularly beautiful bas-relief, the hand raised to enforce the truth the calm lips were speaking, the drapery falling in stately folds to the bare feet. As I came up, she had an air as if she had just ceased from movement, and I had a distinct feeling that she had knelt before it — I saw the look of worship! The thing troubled me like a dream, haunting, impossible, but real.

'How beautiful!' I said in spite of myself, as she pointed to the image. 'In this utter solitude it seems the very spirit of the place.'

'He was. He is,' said Vanna.

'Explain to me. I don't understand. I know so little of him. What is the subject?'

She hesitated; then chose her words as if for a beginner: —

'It is the Blessed One preaching to the Tree-Spirits. See how eagerly they lean from the boughs to listen. This other relief represents him in the state of mystic vision. Here he is drowned in peace. See how it overflows from the closed eyes; the closed lips. The air is filled with his quiet.'

'What is he dreaming?'

'Not dreaming — seeing. Peace. He sits at the point where time and infinity meet. To attain that vision was the aim of the monks who lived here.'

'Did they attain?' I found myself speaking as if she could certainly answer.

'A few. There was one, Vasettha, the Brahmin, a young man who had renounced all his possessions and riches, and seated here before this image of the Blessed One, he fell often into the mystic state. He had a strange vision at one time of the future of India, which will surely be fulfilled. He did not forget it in his rebirths. He remembers —'

She broke off suddenly and said with forced indifference, —

'He would sit here often looking out over the mountains; the monks sat at his feet to hear. He became abbot while still young. But his story is a sad one.'

'I entreat you to tell me.'

She looked away over the mountains.

'While he was abbot here, — still a young man, — a famous Chinese pilgrim came down through Kashmir to visit the Holy Places in India. The abbot went forward with him to Peshawar, that he might make him welcome. And there came a dancer to Peshawar, named Lilavanti, most beautiful! I dare not tell you her beauty. I tremble now to think —'

Again she paused, and again the faint creeping sense of mystery invaded me. She resumed: —

'The abbot saw her and he loved her. He was young still, you remember. She was a woman of the Hindu faith and hated Buddhism. It swept him down into the lower worlds of storm and desire. He fled with Lilavanti and never returned here. So in his rebirth he fell —'

She stopped dead; her face pale as death.

'How do you know? Where have you read it? If I could only find what you find and know what you know! The East is like an open book to you. Tell me the rest.'

'How should I know any more?' she said hurriedly. 'We must be going back. You should study the plans of this place at Peshawar. They were very learned monks who lived here. It is famous for learning.'

The life had gone out of her words — out of the ruins. There was no more to be said.

We clambered down the hill in the

Digitized by Google

hot sunshine, speaking only of the view, the strange shrubs and flowers, and, once, the swift gliding of a snake, and found Mrs. Delany blissfully asleep in the most padded corner of the car. The spirit of the East vanished in her comfortable presence, and luncheon seemed the only matter of moment.

'I wonder, my dears,' she said, 'if you would be very disappointed and think me very dense if I proposed our giving up the Malakhand Fort? Mr. Clifden can lunch with the officers at Nowshera and come any day. I know I am an atrocity.'

That night I resolutely began my packing, and wrote a note of farewell to Lady Meryon. The next morning I furiously undid it, and destroyed the note. And that afternoon I took the shortest way to the Sunset Road to lounge about and wait for Vanna and Winifred. She never came, and I was as unreasonably angry as if I had deserved the blessing of her presence. Next day I could see that she tried, gently but clearly, to discourage our meeting; and for three days I never saw her at all. Yet I knew that in her solitary life our talks counted for a pleasure.

III

On the day when things became clear to me, I was walking toward the Meryons' gates when I met her coming alone along the Sunset Road, in the late gold of the afternoon. She looked pale and a little wearied, and I remember that I wished I did not know every change of her face as I did.

'So you have been up the Khyber Pass,' she said as I fell into step at her side. 'Tell me — was it as wonderful as you expected?'

'No, no — you tell me. It will give me what I missed. Begin at the beginning. Tell me what I saw.'

I could not miss the delight of her words, and she laughed, knowing my whim.

'Oh, that pass! But did you go on Tuesday or Friday?'

For these are the only two days in the week when the Khyber can be safely entered. The British then turn out the Khyber Rifles and man every crag, and the loaded caravans move like a tide, and go up and down the narrow road on their occasions.

'Tuesday. But make a picture for me.'

'You went up to Jumrood Fort at the entrance. Did they tell you it is an old Sikh fort and has been on duty in that turbulent place for five hundred years? And did you see the machine-guns in the court? And everyone armed — even the boys, with belts of cartridges? Then you went up the narrow winding track between the mountains, and you said to yourself, "This is the road of pure romance. It goes up to silken Samarcand, and I can ride to Bokhara of the beautiful women, and to all the dreams. Am I alive and is it real?" You felt that?'

'All, every bit. Go on!'

She smiled with pleasure.

'And you saw the little forts on the crags and the men on guard all along — rifles ready! You could hear the guns rattle as they saluted. Do you know that up there men plough with rifles loaded beside them? They have to be men, indeed.'

'Do you mean to imply that we are not men?'

'Different men, at least. This is life in a Border ballad. Such a life as you knew in France, but beautiful in a wild-hawk sort of way. Don't the Khyber Rifles bewilder you? They are drawn from these very Hill tribes, and will shoot their own fathers and brothers in the way of duty as comfortably as if they were jackals. Once there was a

Digitized by Google

scrap here and one of the tribesmen sniped our men unbearably. What do you suppose happened? A Khyber Rifle came to the colonel and said, "Let me put an end to him, Colonel Sahib. I know exactly where he sits. He is my grandfather." And he did it.'

'The bond of bread and salt?'

'Yes, and discipline. I'm sometimes half frightened of discipline. It moulds a man like wax. Even God does n't do that. Well — then you saw the traders: wild shaggy men in sheepskin, and women in massive jewelry of silver and turquoise — great earrings, heavy bracelets loading their arms, wild, fierce, handsome. And the camels, — thousands of them, — some going up, some coming down, — a mass of human and animal life. Above you, moving figures against the keen blue sky, or deep below you in the ravines. The camels were swaying along with huge bales of goods, and with dark beautiful women in wicker cages perched on them. Silks and carpets from Bokhara, and blue-eyed Persian cats, and bluer Persian turquoises. Wonderful! And the dust — gilded by the sunshine — makes a vaporous golden atmosphere for it all.'

'What was the most wonderful thing you saw there?' I asked her.

'The most beautiful of all, I think, was a man — a splendid dark ruffian, lounging along. He wanted to show off, and his swagger was perfect. Long black onyx eyes, and a tumble of black curls, and teeth like almonds. But what do you think he carried on his wrist? A hawk with fierce yellow eyes, ringed and chained. Hawking is a favorite sport in the hills. Oh, why does n't some great painter come and paint it all before they take to trains and cars? I long to see it all again, but I never shall.'

'Surely Sir John can get you up there any day.'

'I am leaving.'

'Leaving?' My heart gave a leap. 'Why? Where?'

'I had rather not tell you.'

'I shall ask Lady Meryon.'

'I forbid you.'

And then the unexpected happened, and an unbearable impulse swept me into folly — or was it wisdom?

'Listen to me. I would not have said it yet, but this settles it. I want you to marry me. I want it *atrociously!*'

It was a strange word. What I felt for her at that moment was difficult to describe.

She looked at me in transparent astonishment.

'Mr. Clifden, are you dreaming? You can't mean what you say.'

'Why can't I? I do. I want you. You have the key of all I care for.'

'Surely you have all the world can give? What do you want more?'

'The power to enjoy it — to understand it. I want you always with me to interpret, like a guide to a blind fellow. I am no better.'

'Say like a dog, at once!' she interrupted. 'At least, you are frank enough to put it on that ground. You have not said that you love me. You could not say it.'

'I don't know whether I do or not. I know nothing about love. I want you. Indescribably. Perhaps that is love — is it? I never wanted anyone before. I have tried to get away and I can't.'

'Why have you tried?'

'Because every man likes freedom. But I like you better.'

'I can tell you the reason,' she said, in her gentle, unwavering voice. 'I am Lady Meryon's governess, and an undesirable. You have felt that?'

'Don't make me out such a snob. No — yes. You force me into honesty. I did feel it at first. But I could kick myself when I think of that now. It is utterly forgotten. Take me and make

Digitized by Google

me what you will, and forgive me. Only tell me your secret of joy. How is it you understand everything alive or dead? I want to live — to see, to know.'

It was a rhapsody like a boy's. Yet at the moment I was not even ashamed of it, so sharp was my need.

'I think,' she said, slowly, looking straight before her, 'that I had better be quite frank. I don't love you. I don't know what love means in the Western sense. It has a very different meaning for me. Your voice comes to me from an immense distance when you speak in that way. You want me — but never with a thought of what *I* might want. Is that love? I like you very deeply as a friend, but we are of different races. There is a gulf.'

'A gulf? You are English.'

'By birth, yes. In mind, no. And there are things that go deeper, that you could not understand. So I refuse quite definitely, and our ways part here, for in a few days I go. I shall not see you again, but I wished to say good-bye.'

I felt as if my all were deserting me — a sickening feeling of loneliness.

'I entreat you to tell me why, and where.'

'Since you have made me this offer, I will tell you why. Lady Meryon objected to my friendship with you, and objected in a way which —'

She stopped, flushing palely. I caught her hand.

'That settles it, that she should have dared! I'll go up this minute and tell her we are engaged. Vanna — Vanna!'

For she disengaged her hand.

'On no account. How can I make it more plain to you? I should have gone soon in any case. My place is in the native city — that is the life I want. I have work there; I knew it before I came out. My sympathies are all with them. They know what life is — why, even the beggars, poorer than poor, are perfectly happy, basking in the great generous sun. Oh, the splendor and riot of life and color! That's my life — I sicken of this.'

'But I will give it to you. Marry me, and we will travel till you're tired of it.'

'And look on as at a play. No, I'm going to work there.'

'For God's sake, how? Let me come too.'

'You can't. You're not in it. I am going to attach myself to the medical mission at Lahore and learn nursing, and then I shall go to my own people.'

'Missionaries?'

'They teach what I want. Mr. Clifden, I shall not come this way again. If I remember — I'll write to you, and tell you what the real world is like.'

She smiled, the absorbed little smile I knew and feared.

'Vanna, before you go, give me your gift of sight. Interpret for me. Stay with me a little and make me see.'

'What do you mean, exactly?' she asked in her gentlest voice, half turning to me.

'Make one journey with me, as my sister, if you will do no more. Though I warn you that all the time I shall be trying to win my wife. But come with me once, and after that — if you will go, you must. Say yes.'

She hesitated — a hesitation full of hope — and looked at me with intent eyes.

'I will tell you frankly,' she said at last, 'that I know my knowledge of the East and kinship with it goes far beyond mere words. In my case the doors were not shut. I believe — I *know* that long ago this was my life. If I spoke forever, I could not make you understand how much I know, and why. So I shall quite certainly go back to it. Nothing — you, least of all — can hold me. But you are my friend — that is a

Digitized by Google

true bond. And if you would wish me to give you two months before I go, I might do that if it would in any way help you. As your friend only — you clearly understand. You would not reproach me afterward when I left you, as I should most certainly do?'

'I swear I would not. I swear I would protect you even from myself. I want you forever; but if you will only give me two months — Come! But have you thought that people will talk? I'm not worth that, God knows.'

She spoke very quietly.

'That does not trouble me. It would only trouble me if you asked what I have not to give. For two months I would travel with you as a friend, if, like a friend, I paid my own expenses. — No, I must do as I say; I would go on no other terms. It would be hard if, because we are man and woman, I might not do one act of friendship for you before we part. For though I refuse your offer utterly, I appreciate it, and I would make what little return I can. It would be a sharp pain to me to distress you.'

Her gentleness and calm, the magnitude of the offer she was making, stunned me so that I could scarcely speak. She gave me such opportunities as the most ardent lover might in his wildest dream desire, and with the remoteness in her eyes and her still voice she deprived them of all hope.

'Vanna, is it a promise? You mean it?'

'If you wish it, yes. But I warn you that I think it will not make it easier for you when the time is over.'

'Why two months?'

'Partly because I can afford no more. No! I know what you would say. Partly because I can spare no more time. I think it unwise for you. I would protect you if I could — indeed I would!'

It was my turn to hesitate now. Would it not be better to let her go before she had become a part of my daily experience? I began to fear I was courting my own shipwreck. She read my thoughts clearly.

'Indeed you would be wise to decide against it. Release me from my promise. It was a mad scheme.'

The superiority — or so I felt it — of her gentleness maddened me. It might have been I who needed protection, who was running the risk of misjudgment — not she, a lonely woman. I felt utterly exiled from the real purpose of her life.

'I will never release you. I claim your promise. I hold to it.'

She extended her hand, cool as a snowflake, and was gone, walking swiftly up the road. Ah, let a man beware when his wishes fulfilled rain down upon him!

To what had I committed myself?

Strange she is and secret,
Strange her eyes; her cheeks are cold and as cold sea-shells.

Yet I would risk it.

Next day this reached me: —

DEAR MR. CLIFDEN, —

I am going to some Indian friends for a time. On the 15th of June I shall be at Srinagar in Kashmir. A friend has allowed me to take her little houseboat, the Kedarnath. If you like this plan, we will share the cost for two months. I warn you it is not luxurious, but I think you will like it. I shall do this whether you come or no, for I want a quiet time before I take up my nursing in Lahore. In thinking of all this, will you remember that I am not a girl but a woman? I shall be twenty-nine my next birthday.

Sincerely yours,
VANNA LORING.

P.S. But I still think you would be wiser not to come. I hope to hear you will not.

I replied only this: —

Digitized by Google

DEAR MISS LORING, —

I think I understand the position fully. I will be there. I thank you with all my heart.

Gratefully yours,
STEPHEN CLIFDEN.

IV

On the 15th of June, I found myself riding into Srinagar in Kashmir, through the pure, tremulous green of the mighty poplars that hedge the road into the city. The beauty of the country had half stunned me when I entered the mountain barrier of Baramula and saw the snowy peaks that guard the Happy Valley, with the Jhelum flowing through its tranquil loveliness. The flush of the almond-blossom was over, but the iris, like a sea of peace, had overflowed the world, and the blue meadows smiled at the radiant sky. Such blossom! the blue shading into clear violet, like a shoaling sea. The earth, like a cup held in the hand of a god, brimmed with the draught of youth and summer and — love? But no. For me the very word was sinister. Vanna's face, immutably calm, confronted it.

The night I had slept in a boat at Sopor had been my first in Kashmir; and I remember that, waking at midnight, I looked out and saw a mountain with a gloriole of hazy silver about it, misty and faint as a cobweb threaded with dew. The river, there spreading into a lake, was dark under it, flowing in a deep, smooth blackness of shadow, and everything waited — for what? Even while I looked, the moon floated serenely above the peak, and all was bathed in pure light, the water rippling in broken silver and pearl. So had Vanna floated into my life, sweet, remote, luminous.

I rode past the lovely wooden bridges, where the balconied houses totter to each other across the canals in a dim splendor of carving and age; where the many-colored native life crowds down to the river-steps and cleanses its flower-bright robes, its gold-bright brass vessels, in the shining stream; and my heart said only, 'Vanna, Vanna!'

My servant dismounted and led his horse, asking from everyone where the Kedarnath could be found; and two little bronze images detached themselves from the crowd of boys and ran, fleet as fauns, before us.

Above the last bridge the Jhelum broadens out into a stately river, controlled at one side by the banked walk known as the Bund, with the Club House upon it and the line of house-boats beneath. She would not be here; my heart told me that; and sure enough the boys were leading across the bridge, and by a quiet shady way to one of the many backwaters that the great river makes in the enchanting city. There is one waterway stretching on and afar to the Dal Lake. It looks like a river — it is the very haunt of peace. Under those mighty chenar or plane trees, that are the glory of Kashmir, clouding the water with deep green shadows, the sun can scarcely pierce, save in a dipping sparkle here and there, to intensify the green gloom. The murmur of the city, the chatter of the club, are hundreds of miles away.

We rode downward under the towering trees, and dismounting, saw a little houseboat tethered to the bank. It was not of the richer sort that haunts the Bund, where the native servants follow in a separate boat, and even the electric light is turned on as part of the luxury. This was a long, low craft, very broad, thatched like a country cottage afloat. In the afterpart the native owner and his family lived — our crew, our cooks and servants; for they played many parts in our service. And in the forepart, room for a life, a dream, the joy or curse of my days to be.

Digitized by Google

But then, I saw only one thing — Vanna sat under the trees, reading, or looking at the cool, dim, watery vista, with a single boat, loaded to the river's edge with melons and scarlet tomatoes, punting lazily down to Srinagar in the sleepy afternoon.

For the first time I knew she was beautiful. Beauty shone in her like the flame in an alabaster lamp, serene, diffused in the very air about her, so that to me she moved in a mild radiance. She rose to meet me with both hands outstretched — the kindest, most cordial welcome. Not an eyelash flickered, not a trace of self-consciousness.

I tried, with a hopeless pretence, to follow her example and hide what I felt, where she had nothing to hide.

'What a place you have found! Why, it's like the deep heart of a wood.'

I threw myself on the grass beside her with a feeling of perfect rest.

The very spirit of Quiet seemed to be drowsing in those branches towering up into the blue, dipping their green fingers into the crystal of the water. What a heaven!

I shut my eyes and see still that first meal of my new life. The little table that Pir Baksh, breathing full East in his jade-green turban, set before her, with its cloth worked in a pattern of the chenar leaves that are the symbol of Kashmir; the brown cakes made by Ahmed Khan in a miraculous kitchen of his own invention — a few holes burrowed in the river-bank, a smouldering fire beneath them, and a width of canvas for a roof. But it served, and no more need be asked of luxury. And Vanna, making it mysteriously the first home I ever had known, the central joy of it all. Oh, wonderful days of life that breathe the spirit of immortality and pass so quickly — surely they must be treasured somewhere in Eternity, that we may look upon their beloved light once more!

'Now you must see the boat. The Kedarnath is not a Dreadnought, but she is broad and very comfortable. And we have many chaperons. They all live in the stern, and exist simply to protect the Sahib-log from all discomfort; and very well they do it. That is Ahmed Khan by the kitchen. He cooks for us. Salama owns the boat, and steers her and engages the men to tow us when we move. And when I arrived, he aired a little English and said piously, "The Lord help me to give you no trouble, and the Lord help you!" That is his wife sitting on the bank. She speaks little but Kashmiri, but I know a little of that. Look at the hundred rat-tail plaits of her hair, lengthened with wool; and see her silver and turquoise jewelry! She wears much of the family fortune and is quite a walking bank. Salama, Ahmed Khan, and I talk by the hour. Ahmed comes from Fyzabad. Look at Salama's boy — I call him the Orange Imp. Did you ever see anything so beautiful?'

I looked in sheer delight, and grasped my camera. Sitting near us was a lovely little Kashmiri boy of about eight, in a faded orange coat, and a turban exactly like his father's. His curled black eyelashes were so long that they made a soft gloom over the upper part of the little golden face. The perfect bow of the scarlet lips, the long eyes, the shy smile, suggested an Indian Eros. He sat dipping his feet in the water, with little pigeon-like cries of content.

'He paddles at the bow of our little shikara boat, with a paddle exactly like a water-lily leaf. Do you like our friends? I love them already, and know all their affairs. — And now for the boat.'

'One moment. If we are friends on a great adventure, I must call you Vanna, and you me Stephen.'

'Yes, I suppose that is part of it,' she said, smiling. 'Come, Stephen.'

It was like music, but a cold music

Digitized by Google

that chilled me. She should have hesitated, should have flushed — it was I who trembled.

So I followed her across the broad plank into our new home.

'This is our sitting-room. Look, how charming!'

It was better than charming: it was home, indeed. Windows at each side opening down almost to the water; a little table for meals, with a gray pot of irises in the middle; another table for writing, photographing, and all the little pursuits of travel; a bookshelf, with some well-worn friends; two low, cushioned chairs, two others for meals, and a Bokhara rug, soft and pleasant for the feet. The interior was plain unpainted wood, but set so that the grain showed like satin in the rippling lights from the water.

'It is perfect,' was all I said, as she waved her hand proudly to show it; 'it is home.'

We dined on the bank that evening, the lamp burning steadily in the still air and throwing broken reflections in the water, while the moon looked in upon us among the leaves. I felt extraordinarily young and happy.

The quiet of her voice was as soft as the little lap of water against the bank; and Kahdra, the Orange Imp, was singing a little wordless song to himself as he washed the plates beside us.

'The wealth of the world could not buy this,' I said; and was silent.

V

And so began a life of sheer enchantment. Looking back, I know in what a wonder-world I was privileged to live. Vanna could talk with all our shipmates. She did not move apart, a condescending or indifferent foreigner. Little Kahdra would come to her knee and chatter to her of the great snake that lived up on Mahadeo, to devour erring boys who omitted to say their prayers at proper Moslem intervals. She would sit with the baby in her lap, while the mother busied herself in the sunny boat with the mysterious dishes that smelt so good to a hungry man.

'I am graduating as a nurse,' she would say laughing, as she bent over the lean arm of some weirdly wrinkled old lady, bandaging and soothing at the same time. Her reward would be some bit of folk-lore, some quaintness of gratitude, which I noted down in the little book I kept for remembrance — and do not need, for every word is in my heart.

We pulled down through the city next day, Salama rowing, and Kahdra lazily paddling at the bow. A wonderful city, with its narrow ways begrimed with the dirt of ages, and its balconied houses looking as if disease and sin had soaked into them and given them a vicious, tottering beauty, horrible, yet lovely too. We saw the swarming life of the bazaar; the white turbans coming and going, diversified by the rose and yellow Hindu turbans; the fine aquiline faces and the caste-marks, orange and red, on the dark brows. I saw two women — girls — painted and tired like Jezebel, looking out of one window carved and old, and the gray burnished doves flying about it. They leaned indolently, like all the old, old wickedness of the East that yet is ever young — 'Flowers of Delight,' with smooth black hair braided with gold and blossoms, and covered with pale-rose veils, and gold-embossed disks swinging like lamps beside the olive cheeks, the great eyes artificially lengthened and darkened with *soorma*, and the curves of the full lips emphasized with vermilion. They looked down on us with apathy, a dull weariness that held all the old evil of the wicked, humming city. It had taken shape in those indolent bodies

Digitized by Google

and heavy eyes, which could flash into life as a snake wakes into fierce darting energy when the time comes to spring — direct inheritrixes from Lilith, in the fittest setting in the world — the almost exhausted vice of an Oriental city as old as time.

'Look — below here,' said Vanna, pointing to one of the great ghats — long rugged steps running down to the river. 'When I came yesterday, a great broken crowd was collected, almost shouldering each other into the water, where a boat lay rocking. In it was the body of a man, brutally murdered for the sake of a few rupees and flung into the river. I could see the poor brown body stark in the boat, with a friend weeping beside it. On the lovely deodar bridge people leaned over, watching with grim, open-mouthed curiosity, and business went on gayly where the jewelers make the silver bangles for slender wrists, and the rows of silver coins that make the necks like "the Tower of Damascus builded for an armory." It was all very wild and cruel. I went down to them —'

'Vanna — you went down? Horrible!'

'No; you see I heard them say the wife was almost a child and needed help. So I went. Once, long ago, at Peshawar, I saw the same thing happen, and they came and took the child for the service of the gods, for she was most lovely, and she clung to the feet of a man in terror, and the priest stabbed her to the heart. She died in my arms.'

'Good God!' I said, shuddering; 'what a sight for you! Did they never hang him?'

'He was not punished. I told you it was a very long time ago.'

She said no more. But in her words and the terrible crowding of its life, Srinagar seemed to me more of a nightmare than anything I had seen, excepting only Benares; for the holy Benares is a memory of horror, with a sense of blood hidden under its frantic, crazy devotion, and not far hidden, either.

Our own green shade, when we pulled back to it in the evening cool, was a refuge of unspeakable quiet. She read aloud to me that evening, by the small light of our lamp beneath the trees; and, singularly, she read of joy.

'I have drunk of the Cup of the Ineffable,
I have found the Key of the Mystery;
Traveling by no track, I have come to the Sorrowless Land; very easily has the mercy of the great Lord come upon me.
Wonder is that Land of rest to which no merit can win.
There have I seen joy filled to the brim, perfection of joy.
He dances in rapture and waves of form arise from his dance.
He holds all within his bliss.'

'What is that?' I asked, when the music ceased for a moment.

'It is from the songs of the great Indian mystic — Kabir. Let me read you more. It is like the singing of a lark, lost in the infinite of light and heaven.'

So in the soft darkness I heard for the first time those immortal words; and hearing, a faint glimmer of understanding broke upon me as to the source of the peace that surrounded her. I had accepted it as an emanation of her own heart, when it was the pulsing of the tide of the Divine. She read, choosing a verse here and there, and I listened with absorption. Suppose I had been wrong in believing that sorrow is the key-note of life; that pain is the road of ascent, if road there be; that an implacable Nature presides over all our pitiful struggles and writes a black 'Finis' to the holograph of our existence? What then? Was she teaching me that joy is the only truth, — the only reality, — and all else illusion? Was she the Interpreter of a Beauty eternal in the heavens and reflected in broken prisms in the beauty that walked visible beside me? I listened as a man to

Digitized by Google

an unknown tongue; but I listened, though I ventured my protest.

'In India, in this strange country where men have time and will for speculation, such thoughts may be natural. Can they be found in the West?'

'This is from the West — might not Kabir himself have said it? Certainly he would have felt it. "Happy is he who seeks not to understand the Mystery of God, but who, merging his spirit into thine, sings to thy Face, O Lord, like a harp, understanding how difficult it is to know — how easy to love Thee." We debate and argue, and the Vision passes us by. We try to prove it, and kill it in the laboratory of our minds, when on the altar of our souls it will dwell forever.'

Silence — and I pondered. Finally she laid the book aside and repeated from memory and in a tone of perfect music: 'Kabir says, "I shall go to the House of my Lord with my Love at my side; then shall I sound the trumpet of triumph."'

When she left me alone, the old doubts came back — the fear that I saw only through her eyes; and I began to believe in joy, only because I loved her. I remember that I wrote in the little book that I kept for my stray thoughts these words, which are not mine but reflect my vision of her.

'Thine is the skill of the Fairy Woman, and the virtue of St. Bride, and the faith of Mary the Mild, and the gracious way of the Greek woman, and the beauty of lovely Emer, and the tenderness of heart-sweet Deirdré, and the courage of Maev the great Queen, and the charm of Mouth-of-Music.'

Yes, all that and more; but I feared lest I should see the heaven of joy through her eyes only, and find it mirage, as I had found so much else.

(To be concluded)

THE ATTAS—A JUNGLE LABOR-UNION

BY WILLIAM BEEBE

I

Pterodactyl Pups led me to the wonderful Attas — the most astounding of the jungle labor-unions. We were all sitting on the Mazaruni bank, the night before the full moon, immediately in front of my British Guiana laboratory. All the jungle was silent in the white light, and only a big fish broke now and then. On the end of the bench was the monosyllabic Scot, who ceased the exquisite painting of mora butterfly tresses and jungle shadows only for the equal fascination of searching bats for parasites. Then the great physician, who had come six thousand miles to peer into the eyes of birds and lizards in my dark-room, working with a gentle hypnotic manner that made the little beings seem to enjoy the experience. On my right sat an army captain, who had given more thought to the possible secrets of French chaffinches than to

Digitized by Google

the approaching barrage. There was also the artist, who could draw a lizard's head like a Japanese print, but preferred to depict impressionistic Laocoön roots.

These and others sat with me on the long bench and watched the moon-path. The conversation had begun with possible former life on the moon, then shifted to Conan Doyle's *Lost World*, based on the great Roraima plateau, a hundred and fifty miles west of where we were sitting. Then we spoke of the amusing world-wide rumor, which had started no one knows how, that I had recently discovered a pterodactyl. One delightful result of this had been a letter from a little English girl, which would have made a worthy chapter-subject for *Dream Days*. For years she and her little sister had peopled a wood near her home with pterodactyls, but had somehow never quite seen one; and would I tell her a little about them — whether they had scales, or made nests; so that those in the wood might be a little easier to recognize.

When strange things are discussed for a long time, in the light of a tropical moon, at the edge of a dark, whispering jungle, the mind becomes singularly imaginative and receptive; and, as I looked through powerful binoculars at the great suspended globe, the dead craters and precipices became very vivid and near. Suddenly, without warning, there flapped into my field, a huge shapeless creature. It was no bird, and there was nothing of the bat in its flight — the wings moved with steady rhythmical beats, and drove it straight onward. The wings were skinny, the body large and of a pale ashy hue. For a moment I was shaken. One of the others had seen it, and he, too, did not speak, but concentrated every sense into the end of the little tubes. By the time I had begun to find words, I realized that a giant fruit bat had flown from utter darkness across my line of sight; and by close watching we soon saw others. But for a very few seconds these Pterodactyl Pups, as I nicknamed them, gave me all the thrill of a sudden glimpse into the life of past ages. The last time I had seen fruit bats was in the gardens of Perideniya, Ceylon. I had forgotten that they occurred in Guiana, and was wholly unprepared for the sight of bats a yard across, with a heron's flight, passing high over the Mazaruni in the moonlight.

The talk ended on the misfortune of the configuration of human anatomy, which makes sky-searching so uncomfortable a habit. This outlook was probably developed to a greater extent during the war than ever before; and I can remember many evenings in Paris and London when a sinister half-moon kept the faces of millions turned searchingly upward. But whether in city or jungle, sky-scanning is a neck-aching affair.

The following day my experience with the Pterodactyl Pups was not forgotten, and as a direct result of looking out for soaring vultures and eagles, with hopes of again seeing a white-plumaged King and the regal Harpy, I caught sight of a tiny mote high up in mid-sky. I thought at first it was a martin or swift; but it descended, slowly spiraling, and became too small for any bird. With a final, long, descending curve, it alighted in the compound of our bungalow laboratory and rested quietly — a great queen of the leaf-cutting Attas returning from her marriage flight. After a few minutes she stirred, walked a few steps, cleaned her antennæ, and searched nervously about on the sand. A foot away was a tiny sprig of indigo, the offspring of some seed planted two or three centuries ago by a thrifty Dutchman. In the shade of its three leaves the insect paused, and

Digitized by Google

at once began scraping at the sand with her jaws. She loosened grain after grain, and as they came free they were moistened, agglutinated, and pressed back against her fore-legs. When at last a good-sized ball was formed, she picked it up, turned around and, after some fussy indecision, deposited it on the sand behind her. Then she returned to the very shallow, round depression, and began to gather a second ball.

I thought of the first handful of sand thrown out for the base of Cheops, of the first brick placed in position for the Great Wall, of a fresh-cut trunk, rough-hewn and squared for a log-cabin on Manhattan; of the first shovelful of earth flung out of the line of the Panama Canal. Yet none seemed worthy of comparison with even what little I knew of the significance of this ant's labor, for this was earnest of what would make trivial the engineering skill of Egyptians, of Chinese patience, of municipal pride and continental schism.

Imagine sawing off a barn-door at the top of a giant sequoia, growing at the bottom of the Grand Cañon, and then, with five or six children clinging to it, descending the tree, and carrying it up the cañon walls against a subway rush of rude people, who elbowed and pushed blindly against you. This is what hundreds of leaf-cutting ants accomplish daily, when cutting leaves from a tall bush, at the foot of the bank near the laboratory.

There are three dominant labor-unions in the jungle, all social insects, two of them ants, never interfering with each other's field of action, and all supremely illustrative of conditions resulting from absolute equality, free-and-equalness, communalism, socialism carried to the (forgive me!) *anth* power. The Army Ants are carnivorous, predatory, militant nomads; the Termites are vegetarian scavengers, sedentary, negative and provincial; the Attas, or leaf-cutting ants, are vegetarians, active and dominant, and in many ways the most interesting of all.

The casual observer becomes aware of them through their raids upon gardens; and indeed the Attas are a very serious menace to agriculture in many parts of the tropics, where their nests, although underground, may be as large as a house and contain millions of individuals. While their choice among wild plants is exceedingly varied, it seems that there are certain things they will not touch; but when any human-reared flower, vegetable, shrub, vine, or tree is planted, the Attas rejoice, and straightway desert the native vegetation to fall upon the newcomers. Their whims and irregular feeding habits make it difficult to guard against them. They will work all round a garden for weeks, perhaps pass through it *en route* to some tree that they are defoliating, and then suddenly, one night, every Atta in the world seems possessed with a desire to work havoc, and at daylight the next morning, the garden looks like winter stubble — a vast expanse of stems and twigs, without a single remaining leaf. Volumes have been written, and a whole chemist's shop of deadly concoctions devised, for combating these ants, and still they go steadily on, gathering leaves which, as we shall see, they do not even use for food.

Although essentially a tropical family, Attas have pushed as far north as New Jersey, where they make a tiny nest, a few inches across, and bring to it bits of pine needles.

In a jungle Baedeker, we should double-star these insects, and paragraph them as 'Atta, named by Fabricius in 1804; two Kartabo species, *sexdens* and *cephalotes;* Leaf-cutting or Cushie or Parasol Ants; very abundant. *Atta*, a subgenus of *Atta*, which is a genus of *Attii*, which is a tribe of *Myrmicinæ*, which is a subfamily of *Formicidæ*,' etc.

Digitized by Google

With a feeling of slightly greater intimacy, of mental possession, we set out, armed with a name of one hundred and seventeen years' standing, and find a big Atta worker carving away at a bit of leaf, exactly as his ancestors had done for probably one hundred and seventeen thousand years.

We gently lift him from his labor, and a drop of chloroform banishes from his ganglia all memory of the hundred thousand years of pruning. Under the lens his strange personality becomes manifest, and we wonder whether the old Danish zoölogist had in mind the slender toe-tips which support him, or in a chuckling mood made him a namesake of C. Quintius Atta. A close-up shows a very comic little being, encased in a prickly, chestnut-colored armor, which should make him fearless in a den of a hundred anteaters. The front view of his head is a bit mephistophelian, for it is drawn upward into two horny spines; but the side view recalls a little girl with her hair brushed very tightly up and back from her face.

The connection between Atta and the world about him is furnished by this same head: two huge, flail-shaped antennæ arching up like aerial, detached eyebrows — vehicles, through their golden pile, of senses which foil our most delicate tests. Outside of these are two little shoe-button eyes; and we are not certain whether they reflect to the head ganglion two or three hundred bits of leaf, or one large mosaic leaf. Below all is swung the pair of great scythes, so edged and hung that they can function as jaws, rip-saws, scissors, forceps, and clamps. The thorax, like the head of a *titanothere*, bears three pairs of horns — a great irregular expanse of tumbled, rock-like skin and thorn, a foundation for three pairs of long legs, and sheltering somewhere in its heart a thread of ant-life; finally, two little pedicels lead to a rounded abdomen, smaller than the head. This Third-of-an-inch is a worker Atta to the physical eye; and if we catch another, or ten, or ten million, we find that some are small, others much larger, but that all are cast in the same mould, all indistinguishable except, perhaps, to the shoe-button eyes.

II

When a worker has traveled along the Atta trails, and has followed the temporary mob-instinct and climbed bush or tree, the same irresistible force drives him out upon a leaf. Here, apparently, instinct slightly loosens its hold, and he seems to become individual for a moment, to look about, and to decide upon a suitable edge or corner of green leaf. But even in this he probably has no choice. At any rate, he secures a good hold and sinks his jaws into the tissue. Standing firmly on the leaf, he measures his distance by cutting across a segment of a circle, with one of his hind feet as a centre. This gives a very true curve, and provides a leaf-load of suitable size. He does not scissor his way across, but bit by bit sinks the tip of one jaw, hook-like, into the surface, and brings the other up to it, slicing through the tissue with surprising ease. He stands upon the leaf, and I always expect to see him cut himself and his load free, Irishman-wise. But one or two of his feet have invariably secured a grip on the plant, sufficient to hold him safely. Even if one or two of his fellows are at work farther down the leaf, he has power enough in his slight grip to suspend all until they have finished and clambered up over him with their loads.

Holding his bit of leaf edge-wise, he bends his head down as far as possible, and secures a strong purchase along the very rim. Then, as he raises his head, the leaf rises with it, suspended high over his back, out of the way. Down

Digitized by Google

the stem or tree-trunk he trudges, head first, fighting with gravitation, until he reaches the ground. After a few feet, or, measured by his stature, several hundred yards, his infallible instinct guides him around pebble boulders, mossy orchards, and grass jungles to a specially prepared path.

Thus in words, in sentences, we may describe the cutting of a single leaf; but only in the imagination can we visualize the cell-like or crystal-like duplication of this throughout all the great forests of Guiana and of South America. As I write, a million jaws snip through their stint; as you read, ten million Attas begin on new bits of leaf. And all in silence and in dim light, legions passing along the little jungle roads, unending lines of trembling banners, a political parade of ultra socialism, a procession of chlorophyll floats illustrating unreasoning unmorality, a fairy replica of 'Birnam forest come to Dunsinane.'

In their leaf-cutting, Attas have mastered mass, but not form. I have never seen one cut off a piece too heavy to carry, but many a hard-sliced bit has had to be deserted because of the configuration of the upper edge. On almost any trail, an ant can be found with a two-inch stem of grass, attempting to pass under a twig an inch overhead. After five or ten minutes of pushing, backing, and pushing, he may accidentally march off to one side, or reach up and climb over; but usually he drops his burden. His little works have been wound up, and set at the mark 'home'; and though he has now dropped the prize for which he walked a dozen ant-miles, yet any idea of cutting another stem, or of picking up a slice of leaf from those lying along the trail, never occurs to him. He sets off homeward, and if any emotion of sorrow, regret, disappointment, or secret relief troubles his ganglia, no trace of it appears in antennæ, carriage, or speed. I can very readily conceive of his trudging sturdily all the way back to the nest, entering it, and going to the place where he would have dumped his load, having fulfilled his duty in the spirit at least. Then, if there comes a click in his internal time-clock, he may set out upon another quest — more cabined, cribbed, and confined than any member of a Cook's tourist party.

I once watched an ant with a piece of leaf which had a regular shepherd's crook at the top, and if his adventures of fifty feet could have been caught on a moving-picture film, Charlie Chaplin would have had an arthropod rival. It hooked on stems and pulled its bearer off his feet, it careened and ensnared the leaves of other ants, at one place mixing up with half a dozen. A big thistledown became tangled in it, and well-nigh blew away with leaf and all; hardly a foot of his path was smooth-going. But he persisted, and I watched him reach the nest, after two hours of tugging and falling and interference with traffic.

Occasionally an ant will slip in crossing a twiggy crevasse, and his leaf become tightly wedged. After sprawling on his back and vainly clawing at the air for a while, he gets up, brushes off his antennæ, and sets to work. For fifteen minutes I have watched an Atta in this predicament, stodgily endeavoring to lift his leaf while standing on it at the same time. The equation of push equaling pull is fourth dimensional to the Attas.

With all this terrible expenditure of energy, the activities of these ants are functional within very narrow limits. The blazing sun causes them to drop their burdens and flee for home; a heavy wind frustrates them, for they cannot reef. When a gale arises and sweeps an exposed portion of the trail, their only resource is to cut away all sail and heave it overboard. A sudden

Digitized by Google

downpour reduces a thousand banners and waving, bright-colored petals to débris, to be trodden under foot. Sometimes, after a ten-minute storm, the trails will be carpeted with thousands of bits of green mosaic, which the outgoing hordes will trample in their search for more leaves. On a dark night little seems to be done; but at dawn and dusk, and in the moonlight or clear starlight, the greatest activity is manifest.

Attas are such unpalatable creatures that they are singularly free from dangers. There is a tacit armistice between them and the other labor-unions. The Army Ants occasionally make use of their trails when they are deserted; but when the two great races of ants meet, each antennæs the aura of the other, and turns respectfully aside. When Termites wish to traverse an Atta trail, they burrow beneath it, or build a covered causeway across, through which they pass and repass at will, and over which the Attas trudge, uncaring and unconscious of its significance.

Only creatures with the toughest of digestions would dare to include these prickly, strong-jawed, meatless insects in a bill of fare. Now and then I have found an ani, or black cuckoo, with a few in its stomach: but an ani can swallow a stinging-haired caterpillar and enjoy it. The most consistent feeder upon Attas is the giant marine toad. Two hundred Attas in a night is not an uncommon meal, the exact number being verifiable by a count of the undigested remains of heads and abdomens. *Bufo marinus* is the gardener's best friend in this tropic land, and besides, he is a gentleman and a philosopher, if ever an amphibian was one.

While the cutting of living foliage is the chief aim in life of these ants, yet they take advantage of the flotsam and jetsam along the shore, and each low tide finds a column from some nearby nest salvaging flowerets, leaves, and even tiny berries. A sudden wash of tide lifts a hundred ants with their burdens and then sets them down again, when they start off as if nothing had happened.

The paths or trails of the Attas represent very remarkable feats of engineering, and wind about through jungle and glade for surprising distances. I once traced a very old and wide trail for well over two hundred yards. Taking little Third-of-an-inch for a type (although he would rank as a rather large Atta), and comparing him with a six-foot man, we reckon this trail, ant-ratio, as a full twenty-five miles. Belt records a leaf-cutter's trail half a mile long, which would mean that every ant that went out, cut his tiny bit of leaf, and returned, would traverse a distance of a hundred and sixteen miles. This was an extreme; but our Atta may take it for granted, speaking antly, that once on the home trail, he has, at the least, four or five miles ahead of him.

The Atta roads are clean swept, as straight as possible, and very conspicuous in the jungle. The chief high-roads leading from very large nests are a good foot across, and the white sand of their beds is visible a long distance away. I once knew a family of opossums living in a stump in the centre of a dense thicket. When they left at evening, they always climbed along as far as an Atta trail, dropped down to it, and followed it for twenty or thirty yards. During the rains I have occasionally found tracks of agoutis and deer in these roads. So it would be very possible for the Attas to lay the foundation for an animal trail, and this, *à la* calf-path, for the street of a future city.

The part that scent plays in the trails is evidenced if we scatter an inch or two of fresh sand across the road. A mass of ants banks against the strange obstruction on both sides, on the one hand a

Digitized by Google

solid phalanx of waving green banners, and on the other a mob of empty-jawed workers with wildly waving antennæ. Scouts from both sides slowly wander forward, and finally reach one another and pass across. But not for ten minutes does anything like regular traffic begin again.

When carrying a large piece of leaf, and traveling at a fair rate of speed, the ants average about a foot in ten seconds, although many go the same distance in five. I tested the speed of an Atta, and then I saw that its leaf seemed to have a peculiar-shaped bug upon it, and picked it up with its bearer. Finding the blemish to be only a bit of fungus, I replaced it. Half an hour later I was seated by a trail far away, when suddenly my ant with the blemished spot appeared. It was unmistakable, for I had noticed that the spot was exactly that of the Egyptian symbol of life. I paced the trail, and found that seventy yards away it joined the spot where I had first seen my friend. So, with occasional spurts, he had done two hundred and ten feet in thirty minutes, and this in spite of the fact that he had picked up a supercargo.

Two parts of hydrogen and one of oxygen, under the proper stimulus, invariably result in water; two and two, considered calmly and without passion, combine into four; the workings of instinct, especially in social insects, is so mechanical that its results can almost be demonstrated in formula; and yet here was my Atta leaf-carrier burdened with a minim. The worker Attas vary greatly in size, as a glance at a populous trail will show. They have been christened *macrergates*, *desmergates* and *micrergates;* or we may call the largest maxims, the average middle class mediums, and the tiny chaps minims, and all have more or less separate functions in the ecology of the colony. The minims are replicas in miniature of the big chaps, except that their armor is pale cinnamon rather than chestnut. Although they can bite ferociously, they are too small to cut through leaves, and they have very definite duties in the nest; yet they are found with every leaf-cutting gang, hastening along with their larger brethren, but never doing anything, that I could detect, at their journey's end. I have a suspicion that the little minims, who are very numerous, function as light cavalry; for in case of danger they are as eager at attack as the great soldiers, and the leaf-cutters, absorbed in their arduous labor, would benefit greatly from the immunity ensured by a flying corps of their little bulldog comrades.

I can readily imagine that these nestling minims become weary and foot-sore (like bank-clerks guarding a reservoir), and if instinct allows such abominable individuality, they must often wish themselves back at the nest, for every mile of a medium is three miles to them.

Here is where our mechanical formula breaks down; for, often, as many as one in every five leaves that pass bears aloft a minim or two, clinging desperately to the waving leaf and getting a free ride at the expense of the already overburdened medium. Ten is the extreme number seen, but six to eight minims collected on a single leaf is not uncommon. Several times I have seen one of these little banner-riders shift deftly from leaf to leaf, when a swifter carrier passed by, as a circus bareback rider changes steeds at full gallop.

Once I saw enacted above ground, and in the light of day, something which may have had its roots in an *Anlage* of divine discontent. If I were describing the episode half a century ago, I should entitle it, 'The Battle of the Giants, or Emotion Enthroned.' A quadruple line of leaf-carriers was disappearing down a hole in front of

Digitized by Google

the laboratory, bumped and pushed by an out-pouring, empty-jawed mass of workers. As I watched them, I became aware of an area of great excitement beyond the hole. Getting down as nearly as possible to ant height, I witnessed a terrible struggle. Two giants — of the largest soldier maxim caste — were locked in each other's jaws, and to my horror, I saw that each had lost his abdomen. The antennæ and the abdomen petiole are the only vulnerable portions of an Atta, and long after he has lost these apparently dispensable portions of his anatomy, he is able to walk, fight, and continue an active but erratic life. These mighty-jawed fellows seem never to come to the surface unless danger threatens; and my mind went down into the black, musty depths, where it is the duty of these soldiers to walk about and wait for trouble. What could have raised the ire of such stolid neuters against one another? Was it sheer lack of something to do? or was there a cell or two of the winged caste lying fallow within their bodies, which, stirring at last, inspired a will to battle, a passing echo of romance, of the activities of the male Atta?

Their unnatural combat had stirred scores of smaller workers to the highest pitch of excitement. Now and then, out of the mêlée, a medium would emerge, with a tiny minim in his jaws. One of these carried his still living burden many feet away, along an unused trail, and dropped it. I examined the small ant, and found that it had lost an antenna, and its body was crushed. When the ball of fighters cleared, twelve small ants were seen clinging to the legs and heads of the mutilated giants, and now and then these would loosen their hold on each other, turn, and crush one of their small tormenters. Several times I saw a medium rush up and tear a small ant away, apparently quite insane with excitement.

Occasionally the least exhausted giant would stagger to his four and a half remaining legs, hoist his assailant, together with a mass of the midgets, high in air, and stagger for a few steps, before falling beneath the onrush of new attackers. It made me wish to help the great insect, who, for aught I knew, was doomed because he was different — because he had dared to be an individual.

I left them struggling there, and half an hour later, when I returned, the episode was just coming to a climax. My Atta hero was exerting his last strength, flinging off the pile that assaulted him, fighting all the easier because of the loss of his heavy body. He lurched forward, dragging the second giant, now dead, not toward the deserted trail or the world of jungle around him, but headlong into the lines of stupid leaf-carriers, scattering green leaves and flower-petals in all directions. Only when dozens of ants threw themselves upon him, many of them biting each other in their wild confusion, did he rear up for the last time, and, with the whole mob, rolled down into the yawning mouth of the Atta nesting-hole, disappearing from view, and carrying with him all those hurrying up the steep sides. It was a great battle. I was breathing fast with sympathy, and whatever his cause, I was on his side.

The next day both giants were lying on the old, disused trail; the revolt against absolute democracy was over; ten thousand ants passed to and fro without a dissenting thought, or any thought, and the Spirit of the Attas was content.

Digitized by Google

WHAT DO BOYS KNOW?

BY ALFRED G. ROLFE

'ALL men are liars,' said the Psalmist, in his haste. It was a rash statement, which, doubtless, he had cause later to regret. Were he living now, and a teacher of youth, he might well be tempted to say in his wrath, 'All young people are fools'; and again he would be wrong, at least so far as boys are concerned. Girls I must leave to those who know them better than I. They look intelligent; but appearances are deceitful, and their conversation, while picturesque, is not always reassuring.

Once there was a girl who, through all the courses of a long dinner, entertained her neighbor with sprightly talk. At the time he thought that he had never enjoyed a conversation more; but when he meditated upon it, in the cold night watches, he realized that he had done all the talking, her share being confined to two words, 'rippin'' and 'rath-*er*.' The rest was 'charm.' That is, however, another story.

I have a theory that girls know better than boys how to make a little information, as well as a limited vocabulary, go a long way. It is a theory the truth of which it is difficult for me to establish, and I shall not attempt to do so. Boys, on the other hand, seem at times to glory in their ignorance. They wear it as a garment; they flaunt it in one's face. 'The world is still deceived with ornament,' but not by them. Knowledge is theirs, but 'knowledge never learned of schools,' hidden below the surface. This makes them a fascinating, if baffling, subject of study, and gives point to the query, 'What do boys know?'

For some years it has been part of my job as master in a large preparatory school for boys, to make out each year two 'information tests,' and to superintend the correction of the papers. Each test contains one hundred questions, and presupposes on the part of the pupil a bowing acquaintance with the masterpieces of English literature, including the Bible, some knowledge of the political doings of the day at home and abroad, and a smattering of what is politely, but vaguely, styled 'general information,' which comes from the habit of keeping open the eyes and ears.

The boys who take the tests range from twelve to nineteen years of age and are, for the most part, sons of wealthy parents. They have enjoyed all the advantages that money can buy. Many have traveled widely. Not a few have been exposed to the society of refined and cultured persons.

The tests are anticipated with an interest that amounts almost to enthusiasm. There are book prizes for the winners, and the successful ones receive from their fellows plaudits not usually given in this day and generation to those whose wits are nimbler than their heels.

After reading some hundreds of these 'general information' papers, I am forced to conclude that the average boy's ignorance of literature, especially of the Bible, is profound, not to say abysmal. The unplumbed depth of the abyss may, perhaps, be assigned to the youth who gave as his version of the third commandment, 'Thou shalt not

Digitized by Google

commit Deuteronomy!' but he will not lack company. The question, 'Who led the children of Israel into the Promised Land?' brought out an amazing array of candidates for that high honor, beginning with Noah, embracing all the prophets, major and minor, and ending with 'Moses, the Baptist.' Answers to the question, 'What book of the Old Testament has no mention of God?' ranged impartially from Genesis to Malachi, with a strong bias toward the former, in spite of its opening words, 'In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.'

It is only too evident that in many modern households family worship is unknown. No longer does 'the priestlike father read the sacred page,' while 'the children round the ingle form a circle wide.' As a matter of fact, one would have to look far to find an ingle in a modern apartment; the father, quite unpriestlike in garb and conversation, is on the links, or snuggling with pipe and paper in his easy chair; the children are swinging wide in quite another sort of circle, and the family Bible, if there be one, is lying, neglected, on the table, hidden from sight by *The New Republic*, *Vanity Fair* (not Thackeray's), and the *Golfer's Companion*.

How, then, is the boy to become acquainted with 'the only book,' as Walter Scott would have it? In Church and Sunday School? Many a boy never has attended either of them. In the public school? The Bible was banished from it long ago.

There remains the private school, in whose curriculum may be found a brief course in 'Bible,' which, in the boy's mind, takes its place with his other lessons, to be learned, recited, and joyfully forgotten as soon as possible. Why should he know who pulled down the temple of Dagon, or who slew a thousand men with the jawbone of an ass? These tragic happenings mean no more to him than the death o the exploits of Asurbanipal, other 'old unhappy far-off th battles long ago.'

Clearly, then, the fault lies the boy. Teacher and par share the blame, and it would one who views the matter standpoint of the teacher on which is the more culpable.

Unfortunately, the boy's ign the great English masterpie limited to the Bible. Profane receives but little better trea his hands. Every boy has a f ite authors, whom he holds re for all that has been written i verse since Shakespeare's da fellow heads the list, with and Kipling following clos many are the crimes that are c in their names. There is son for attributing *The Vision of fal* to Lord Tennyson, for h knights and their visions; should he be made to father *before the Mast*, *Westward Ho Ancient Mariner?* Evidentl minds of many boys, 'the sea he made it.' There are, how poems which every boy hails as his very own. These are and *The Raven*. Few boys them, and fewer could quote them, but the majority iden out difficulty quotations fro How the boy knows them, I c nor can he. It is one of the cu literature.

'The proper study of m man,' but it is evident that bo not greatly concerned itself study of boy: for we learn tha tre of the nervous system is spleen, lungs, pancreas, and the bones of the forearm are biceps, forceps, and habeas c normal temperature of the hu varies from fifty to two hun

Digitized by Google

twelve degrees, Fahrenheit; and one element in the atmosphere essential to the support of human life is gasoline, the other being, presumably, 'Mobiloil.'

The female of the species, if not more deadly than the male, is, in the boy's mind, more pervasive, for the feminine of ram is doe, dam, yew, roe, nanny-goat, and she-ram; while the feminine of farmer — hardly a fair question, that — is milkmaid, old maid, *farmeuse*, husband-woman, and Mrs. Farmer.

It has long been maintained that no English word rhymes with window, but one test brought to light several such rhymes, among them widow, Hindu, akimbo, shadow, billow, and potato!

When the history and geography of the United States are in question, the answers are equally astounding. The largest city of Ohio is Detroit, St. Louis, 'Sinsinnatah,' and 'Omerhaw.' (The average boy refuses to be a slave to orthography.) Washington, Lincoln, Garfield, McKinley, and Roosevelt were all *impeached*, Farragut was admiral in the Spanish war, and Mr. Taft was the *third* President of the United States. In the youthful mind 'a hundred years are as a day,' and it matters little whether Lee surrendered at Appomattox or at Yorktown.

There is, however, a brighter side of the picture. Mother-wit often comes to the aid of ignorance, and the task of the examiner is lightened by many a gleam of humor. What, for instance, could be better than the answer which one boy gave to the question, 'Who discovered the Pacific Ocean?' His natural answer would have been, 'You can search me'; but flippancy is not encouraged; so he replied, 'The natives who lived along the shore.' Another defined *conjunctivitis* as 'the knack of getting along with people'; and a third would have a *barracuda* 'a feast where oxen are roasted whole.'

'How many legs has a Kaffir?' was a staggerer. Conjecture ranged from two to twelve, the majority favoring three, without making it clear what the unfortunate creature could do with the odd leg.

What is the conclusion of the whole matter? May we say in our haste that all boys are fools? Prithee, not too fast. These are out-of-doors boys, living in a world of motor-cars, air-planes, and wireless. Many a boy who could not for his life name a member of Mr. Harding's Cabinet, can, by the sound of the engine, 'spot' every motor-car made in this country, improvise an aerial from the springs of his bed, or draw a model of a gasoline engine that would do credit to a mechanical engineer. Children of Martha, 'they are concerned with matters hidden — under the earth-line their altars lie.'

Perhaps they have chosen the better part. Who can say? At any rate, they are content to leave letters to those who love them; to let their secretaries do their spelling, and politicians manage the government, 'while they finger death at their gloves' end.'

I, who can distinguish but two makes of automobiles without giving a furtive glance at the hub-caps, am thankful that it is mine to ask the questions, not to answer them. I know full well that many boys who cannot say whether Keats is a poet or a breakfast food could make out a test that would put their masters to shame.

Times have changed, and those who aspire to ride the whirlwind have neither time nor inclination to trudge along the dusty paths of learning that their fathers trod.

> Talents differ; all is well and wisely put;
> If I cannot carry forests on my back,
> Neither can you crack a nut, —

and he who judges a quarrel between the mountain and the squirrel has no easy task.

Digitized by Google

THE CHRISTENING OF THE BELL

BY BELLE SKINNER

On the thirteenth of September, 1920, the bell was christened.

It was a perfect day — not a cloud in the blue sky, not a breath of wind, not too warm, not too cool, brilliant sunshine — a perfect day.

The little village on the hill, the gray ruins of the Gothic church, the bell-tower, the classic lines of the old market, the red-tiled roofs of the few rebuilt cottages — all these, with the French and American flags and garlands of laurel leaves, made an incomparable setting for the ceremony.

The idea came about through a conversation with my host, the curé of Hattonchâtel, in which he told me of the ancient glories of the village, of its long ecclesiastical history dating back to the tenth century. In those early days Hattonchâtel was famous as a place of retreat for the bishops of Verdun, Metz, and Toul, from one of whom, Bishop Hatton, it took its name, *châtel*, of course, being the old form of château; and for several succeeding centuries it belonged to the Church — a fortress village enclosed by high, thick walls.

It was during its ecclesiastical existence that Hattonchâtel acquired most of its glory. The present church was built then, pure Gothic in style, as were the cloisters connecting the church with the bishop's palace at the end of the street; for bishops in those days did not walk exposed to the elements. Houses for the priests who came in the bishop's train were built then, also, and the famous old Market, now one of the *Monuments Historiques* of France. But though Hattonchâtel was, first of all, an ecclesiastical village, it was not unknown to the Court; its forest was one of the hunting preserves of Louis XIV; and during the season for chasing the wild boar, Hattonchâtel heard more than the mass.

Time passed.

Wars were fought around the village; for Hattonchâtel has always been the heart's desire of conquerors. Lying as it does on the crest of a high hill, which juts out like a promontory into the valley of the Meuse six hundred feet below, it dominates the countryside, and in the days of milder warfare was practically unassailable.

The Swedish bombardment, however, of the fourteenth century did its work well. The walls of the fortress were broken down, the strong gates demolished, and its entrance being no longer barred, peasant-life appeared in Hattonchâtel.

Out of the stones of the almost wholly destroyed church property the newcomers built their homes; and as the centuries passed, the fame of Hattonchâtel was no longer in the splendor of the Roman Church or in the brilliance of the French Court; rather, its glory lay in the courage of those spirits whose descendants, undaunted, are to-day resurrecting their devastated provinces — the peasants of France.

Monsieur le curé sadly called my attention to the empty bell-tower, and told me what the church bell means to a rural community in France: how the

Digitized by Google

[illegible] and listen for it and sing [illegible] about it and how they speak of it affectionately as of a person, for bells have names in France. It is the bell that wakes them in the early morning and sends them to the fields at noon, that calls them home again, and again by day's work done. It sounds the hours, blessing the fruitful years. It announces all the feasts, it rings for the marriages, the births, the deaths.

Then the curé went on to tell me how, during the German occupation of the village, their church bell had been taken away and melted for military purposes, and they had heard no bell in Hattonchâtel for five long years.

The story was so simple, so appealing, that I could only say, 'Oh, monsieur le curé, we must replace the stolen bell.'

He replied, 'Ah, mademoiselle, Germany has to pay for the wanton destruction she wrought in our villages, but, of course, we do not know when we can collect the money, and in the meantime — years — '

So the bell was ordered, of bronze, a metre in height.

It is beautifully embossed with the figure of the Roman Church, to which was added, according to custom, its name.

I fell in with the curé's suggestion that the bell should have my name; but my name is Belle, and the curé with a rueful shake of his head objected that no saint had ever been named Belle, and church bells must bear the names of saints. I admitted that I had been christened Isabel. Smiling approval, and with a splendid disregard of the English spelling, the curé wrote out, 'Isabelle.'

But that was not all. A bell, it seems, must have two Christian names.

The curé looked at me inquiringly. I suggested Ruth, my other name. With a deprecating gesture he replied [illegible] "No, no, we cannot have Ruth. As I am in other name to offer. One [illegible] inscription as the Roman [illegible] [illegible] on the bell and sun. "Then choose a name."

Almost with fear and trembling I gave my mother's name, "Sarah."

"Ah, Sarah has been sainted," he replied softly, and wrote in full, "Sarah Isabelle."

It turned my discussion to inquire — Isabelle a saint in perfectly good standing Rome without the Pope. Why, I wondered? But I did not ask the curé. I rarely bother him with questions. When I am a part of his household I feel that I am living Balzac, and I would not venture to show an indiscreet curiosity that might break the charm.

In that war-torn house the spell of the eighteenth century is everywhere — in the irregular flagstones of the corridors, in the bits of faded wall-paper still hanging here and there, even in the cheap oak centre table about which we sat for our many conferences — a strange company: the curé alert, resourceful, always the dominant figure; the mayor shy, silent, determined; the notary looking like a sketch by Thackeray, and talking grandiloquently — these three children of Hattonchâtel breathing forth the atmosphere of old France, and I of another age and world, yet feeling through them the antiquity, the splendor, and the genius of their country, their ideal of patriotism; seeing through their eyes the changeless character and fearless courage of the men and women of Northern France, who, in the face of seemingly insuperable difficulties and hardships, are already beginning life anew amid the ruins.

Hattonchâtel on the Côtes-de-Meuse, in all its quaint beauty, has been quite unknown to tourists. Before the war the only way of visiting the village was

Digitized by Google

on foot. Now there is a good motor-road to the top of the hill; but the village itself remains the France of two hundred years ago, unchanged. Generation after generation of French peasants have lived as their fathers lived, and died as their fathers died, within the village walls, knowing nothing and desiring nothing but Hattonchâtel.

This village, then, gave the setting for the mediæval ceremony of the christening of the bell. We had chosen the date — September the thirteenth, the second anniversary of the liberation of the village by French and American troops, the two armies having come together at the foot of the hill. The exact point of meeting is marked by a stone shaft erected about a year ago, by the Salvation Army, to the memory of the First Division, the first of our troops to engage with the French in the battle for Hattonchâtel.

Perhaps because the hill was of such military importance during the Great War, perhaps because it was wrested from the Germans by the help of America, perhaps, too, a little because the new church bell would so soon and for always speak of America's love for France — perhaps for these reasons the authorities decided to add to the christening ceremony exercises by the State in celebration of the partial reconstruction of the village, especially the installation of the water-system. General Berthélot, Governor-General of Metz, was chosen to represent the Army, and the Sous-Préfet of the Meuse, to represent the Department.

When I looked out of my window in the curé's house, at eight o'clock on the morning of the great day, the hill was already black with people coming to the fête. Some of them had walked half the night, so eager were they to be present. Up the hill they came, in families, in pairs, in groups of eight or ten, old and young, weak and strong, many of them wearing the costumes of Alsace and Lorraine, all in holiday attire, their worn faces aglow with pleasure and excitement — coming to the Christening.

The exercises began with mass at ten o'clock, at which a tablet dedicated to the memory of the soldier dead of Hattonchâtel was unveiled. This ceremony, conducted by Monseigneur Génisty, the Bishop of Verdun, took place in the ruins of the church. There was no cover over our heads. Not a vestige of roof remains. During the five years that the interior of the church has been exposed to the weather, shrubs four or five feet high have grown up in the nave; and it was against this lovely background of green that we built a temporary altar. On one side of the altar was improvised a throne for the bishop; on the other the peasant choir was grouped about a little portable organ.

The scene amid the ruins: the bishop in his purple robes, the acolytes in crimson slowly swinging the golden censers, the low chanting of the attendant priests and the youthful voices of the choir in response — this, with the sun's rays glinting on fragments of precious old glass still hanging in the battered window-frames, making them flash like jewels, and every available nook and corner packed with peasants, their heads bowed in reverence, made an unforgettable picture. As the services proceeded and the prayers were read, a fanfare of trumpets, from the *chasseurs-à-pied* stationed in the cloister, thrilled us with the thought of what the French army had meant to civilization, as it saddened us with the remembrance of France's terrible losses in the war, the while the smoke of the burning incense rising through the roofless church to heaven made us feel that every prayer for the soldier dead was mounting straight to the Throne of God.

Digitized by Google

The mass ended, we went outside for the principal event of the day — the Christening of the Bell.

This ceremony of mediæval origin, performed with all the pomp and dignity of the Roman Church, was full of picturesque details. Above us was the cloudless blue, around us were the wrecks of war — heaps and heaps of stones piled high, the tottering walls of the church, its bell-tower strangely upright; beyond, on all sides, the peasants, the black Alsatian bows and the white caps of Lorraine mingling with the dull gray garments of every day, all eagerly crowding in. Against these sombre colors the brilliant uniforms of the general and his staff stood out in vivid contrast; while stretching up the village street and fading away into the sky were masses of horizon blue, the uniform of the poilu of France.

The bell was placed on a low platform near the entrance to the cloisters. It was hung in a wooden frame entwined with green garlands and pink roses, and surmounted by a golden cross. At the right of the platform stood the godfather and godmother of the bell. On the other side were the priests and the choir. Opposite, and facing the bell, we built a tribune for the speakers and invited guests, and decorated it with the flags of France and America.

But the bell did not hang in the frame in its naked bronze: it was draped in a white lace robe, veiled from curious eyes as is a bride, and at a given point in the ceremony, the veil was laid back just as a bride is unveiled at the altar, and the bishop, amid the low chanting of the priests and the burning of the incense, touched it with holy water and pronounced its name.

'Je m'appelle Sarah Isabelle. J'ai pour parrain Monsieur Jules Haldrech, Maire. J'ai pour marraine Miss Skinner. J'ai été baptisée par Monseigneur Génisty, l'Évêque de Verdun, le 13 Septembre, 1920, l'Abbé Thierry étant curé à Hattonchâtel.'

The tongue was then placed in the bell, for as yet, remember, no one had heard its voice; a long blue ribbon was attached to it, which the bishop pulled three times, announcing in loud tones to Hattonchâtel and the whole countryside the advent, let us hope, of happier days for those stricken villages. His Grace then passed the ribbon to me, and I too sent the rich tone ringing out across the valley; in turn, the mayor and the curé followed.

Then to the music of the *Marche Lorraine* we crossed over to the tribune, where the civil exercises were opened by General Berthélot. The general paid a graceful tribute to America's help in the St. Mihiel Salient, with particular reference to Hattonchâtel; after which Monsieur le Sous-Préfet spoke eloquently of the work of reconstruction in the Department of the Meuse, and of what had already been accomplished there. He was followed by Major Cotchett, representing the American Embassy at Paris.

The speeches ended, the *marraine* of the bell, as a part of the christening ceremony and in keeping with its mediæval character, stepped out from the tribune and, amid acclaims and huzzas, quite in the manner of a feudal lord giving largesse, scattered *dragées* to the crowds.

So ended the christening.

Immediately afterward luncheon was served. It was like the feeding of the five thousand, with the miracle left out. The peasants of the village were served in their own homes; the principal guests were seated at a long table in the open square; the crowds found places for themselves among the ruins; but all were served. While we were engaged in eating, the newly christened bell was hoisted into the belfry, and a little later,

Digitized by Google

very dramatically, just as the champagne was being served, it pealed forth. The silence of five years of suffering was broken. Instinctively the musicians struck up the *Sambre et Meuse*, the whole company rose to its feet and, with tears in eyes and voice, saluted 'Sarah Isabelle.'

Toward evening we went down the hill, — on foot, like pilgrims going to a shrine, — and in the deep shadow we placed upon the monument to the First Division a laurel wreath. Carried as it was by two common soldiers, a doughboy of America and a poilu of France, to us it symbolized the close union of the two great Republics — together in war, together in peace.

FOR INSTANCE — PAUL ZONBOR

BY HARRY HUBERT FIELD

Unless we take seriously to heart the education of . . . the foreign-born, we shall sooner or later suffer the consequences.

— General John J. Pershing.

I

Paul Zonbor, son of a Hungarian laborer, was born in a small village near the town of Temesvar, where German is the common tongue.

In his childhood, Paul went to the village school, where, as he saw it in after years, the chief subject of enlightenment was, in general, the greatness and glory of the reigning families of the Austro-Hungarian kingdoms, and, in particular, the names of each and every prince, duke, and baron of the Hapsburg Empire, their titles, their great services to the country, their still greater service to the world at large. Supermen, these all, as Paul and his mates were taught: gods on earth, to be feared and venerated.

At the age of twelve, Paul, taken from school, was sent into the fields, where, with other laborers, he worked for a wage that barely bought food enough to maintain life, leaving the acquisition of clothing to kindly hazard.

As to the fields themselves, they belonged to a wealthy baron. His name the laborers knew, but not his face. What, indeed, should such a fine gentleman do, in a place so barbarous, so outlandish as this his estate on the Temes?

Still, it appeared he had need of whatever they could possibly make for him. So they went to work at sunrise. And when the sun stood over their heads, they stopped to eat their midday meal. And when the sun sank low, they stumbled home, dog-tired, to their rest, only to rise with the morrow's sun for another day like the last. The sky was their only clock, its moods their only variety.

Thus the years passed, until the time drew near when Paul must follow his brothers and his friends into the army, to serve his two years of compulsory training.

Now, the chief conscious grievance among the peasant inhabitants of the Temes district was that their sons were

Digitized by Google

forced to give two years out of their young lives for this same military training; forced to give two precious years to learn to defend with their own blood the lands of their princes and dukes; to learn to fight for their task-master's sake, whenever their task-master's lands or privileges might be endangered.

Further, the men conscripted from the Temes district must join a regiment officered by Austrians, who neither understood their men nor were in the least concerned about their lives or comforts. 'Hungarian dogs,' their expression ran, 'what are they fit for but cannon-fodder in case of need! Everything to its use.'

Then, when the young men came back to the village, the two years done, invariably they brought tales of brutal floggings undergone, of long sentences served in unspeakable prisons, of prodigious cruelties wantonly inflicted for offenses that, in the eyes of humane officers, would have passed unrecognized as offenses at all. Many wore disfiguring scars — the marks of willful blows from Austrian officers. And so, as the time came near when Paul must stand his turn, his ever-present under-horror became a constant obsession, and his nightly dreams were of conscription, of Austrian officers striking him with swords, of hideous black dungeons in which he fought for his food, fought for his life, fought for his reason, against battalions of rats.

Then came a Sunday afternoon when an uncle visited the Zonbors' mean little cottage, bringing a letter from his son, Paul's cousin, who had dared the unknown and crossed the sea. The letter spoke of a new land of promise — of a country of the free, where men earned more than a mere existing wage; a country where men *were* men, not mere slaves to the earth.

Thus it was that Paul Zonbor first heard of the United States of America. And from that very Sunday he determined to leave to the Austrian officers one man less to maltreat — to follow his bold cousin and to try his luck in the Country of the Free.

II

It was in the spring of the year 1906, to be exact, that a ship crowded with emigrants from Southeastern Europe, entering New York Harbor, brought as an atom among the horde this son of a Hungarian laborer, from the little village near Temesvar.

Once ashore, the atom shared a common lot — he was caught by one of the swarm of mercenary employment agents, who are always alert and eager to clutch any ignorant victim, to suck out his all.

These labor agencies are often owned and staffed by men born in Central Europe — men who, when first they set foot in America, were themselves helpless atoms in a helpless mass, and who themselves fell easy prey to the sharks. But, their own sufferings outlived, they draw from their scars no lesson of compassion — nothing but a sinister shrewdness in doing as they were done by. Posing as friends of the stranger in the land, they exploit the ignorance of their own countrymen, and make a cannibal livelihood by skinning them alive.

But Paul Zonbor knew nothing of these things. And now, whether for good or for evil, he had arrived in the Promised Land. To-day, years later, — a point which should be borne well in mind throughout this account, — to-day, years later, Paul Zonbor, looking back on these his first experiences, entirely forgets the nationality of those who skinned him, remembering only that it was in America, the Land of the Free, the Promised Land, that he was so skinned.

Digitized by Google

The job that he got from the cannibals took him into a night bakery, in the colossal city. Here again his mother-tongue, German, greeted him — was the only language either spoken or understood; and during the period that followed, he not only worked, but lived, moved, had his entire being among a German-speaking, German-thinking population. Never did it occur to him — never was it suggested to him — to try to learn something about the strange country that he had so newly made his home. His work left him stupefied. He seemed to have neither will nor energy nor imagination, when it was done, to reach out beyond into the true meaning, whatever that might be, of the Promised Land. He did not even suspect that it had another aspect than that in which he slaved. To all intents, he was living in Hungary, under Austrian influences still.

But even to-day he does not realize this. He still thinks that America, the Promised Land, of her own deliberate greed and inhumanity shoved him into that hole.

Yet, through the haze in his dull brain, one longing did arise and grow — a great and greater longing for open air. After the big skies of Central Europe, the long nights in an underground bakery, so suddenly assumed, were soon intolerable; and, after he had taken his necessary amount of sleep, the rag of daylight that remained was not enough. So, after a few months of stifling, the emigrant, bestirring himself, made shift for breath, and changed his vocation to that of laborer for a contracting company. You can see the like of him, any hour of any day, in any big city, handling a pick or shovel in the excavation for a new sky-scraper. And so, with no wider change, his life wound on.

But one morning came an incident: the man at the control carelessly pushed the wrong lever. Bang! Crash! A cry — a moan — silence. The crane had dropped its load. And two men who, a moment before, had been active bread-winners, lay motionless, crushed to death. The boss came along to gather the story, while the dead men lay at his feet.

'Oh, well — they 're only Hunkies!' he exclaimed, prefacing his orders with that one phrase of relief.

Paul Zonbor caught the words, and, by a perverse chance, he understood them every one. Through the fogs in his brain they took on life and glowed dully, with an evil fire. And they made his first clear picture of the concept that he was finally to call America.

America, he perceived, was a place where 'Hunkies' did not matter, alive or dead. American bosses, then, were merely Austrian officers in another guise. 'Only Hunkies' and 'cannon-fodder' were synonyms.

The laborers had no right under the crane?

The incident was an exceptional one?

Not more than one boss in a thousand is like the man that Paul heard speak?

True, true, true; and that thousandth boss was probably born anywhere on earth except under the Eagle of Liberty.

All true. Yet Paul Zonbor, living in the Promised Land, to this day thinks of that early boss of his as a typical American, and believes the typical American boss to be a cold-blooded slave-driver.

To be sure, he himself has since had bosses who have treated him in a humane and friendly way; but these, he is certain, must be the exceptions that prove the rule, as the only ones that he hears of aside from his own experience are described as slave-drivers and brutes.

Next, while Paul was working with the spade, came an opportunity to go to Pittsburgh, at better wages. He went.

Digitized by Google

Once arrived in the great iron centre, again he found whole communities living the only life he knew, speaking the only tongue he understood, and being the only things he imagined men to be. Here again, it was as if a piece of the Hapsburg Empire had been transplanted into the heart of the United States. Here, to such a community he naturally gravitated, and was at once submerged. Here, too, he met the woman he made his wife — a woman differing in no degree or habit from the one he would have married had he never left his native land.

By and by bad times came to Pittsburgh — strikes and riots, want and misery. Men were tossed about, pawns in a game they did not understand. Thus we find Paul Zonbor, with a handful of his countrymen, again casting loose and moving with all their possessions — this time to Buffalo.

Here Paul locates in a section of the city where he is able to buy all the necessities of life from stores owned by his countrymen; where the Austrians, the Southern Europeans, the Germans, have their own saloons, their own banks and clubs; where they never come into contact with English-speaking Americans outside their laboring hours.

And again Paul is swallowed up in a little Central Europe, under the spray of Niagara Falls!

III

Nevertheless, what with the passing of years, what with the evolution of natural character, Paul, for all the tightness of the shell in which he has lived, has grown. He has a certain quality now — and a heightened value. He can command steady work. In fact, he actually spent eight years under the same roof, in the great Buffalo plant that employed him. He has climbed upward in the respect of his community; has become a leader, well-liked and trusted; is the elected chairman of the club.

Moreover, he has learned, or so he believes, about America. If now you were to ask Paul any sort of questions about present-day politics, you would find that he possesses an amazing familiarity with things about which he knows nothing whatever. His knowledge to-day includes a great deal more than the history of the Hapsburg dynasty. He is ready and glib in discussing Bolshevism, Atheism, Darwinism, Marxism, Prohibition, John Brown, or the Mayflower. The names of labor leaders the world over are common to his memory, and he can dilate on the particular creed and preaching of each one.

Where did he gain all this knowledge? In America?

Yes, surely, since the laborer of the Temes knew nothing of it.

From Americans?

Most emphatically, no! America has not concerned herself with the mental processes of Paul Zonbor. Using his hands as vital tools, teaching him at most a little English in order to direct these tools, she has taken no cognizance of his mental processes beyond those used in shop practice.

It appears, however, that some sort of power exists, has existed, that does see a use for Paul's mentality. This power manifests itself in several shapes. For example, it supplies Paul Zonbor with weekly newspapers printed in the language he best understands — German. It supplies him also with whatever books he may desire to read, all written in that same language. That those books heavily tend to certain main lines, are chosen with purpose, and that his desires are guided toward them; that his judgment is distorted by them, is not apparent to Paul. His horizon affords so restricted a vision, that variety of conditions and compari-

Digitized by Google

son of values can play little part there as disputants of any systematic invader. And the actual invader is systematic indeed!

As has already been stated, Paul presides over a club. This club has a very considerable number of members, for Paul's class is large in the manufacturing city by the Falls. But the whole organization has not one real American member, and it would be strange to hear an English word spoken within its walls. It is, however, an exceedingly live and active centre. It has endless inner societies for all sorts of ends. But beyond that, it has an amazing lot of debates, meetings, lectures, concerts, where the proceedings, it seems, are stimulated by, and infused with a steady and consistent current from without.

Nothing that is done here in any way relates to America's America. Whether it be in songs, discussions, or teaching, the underlying trend is very strong and is always the same.

All the lecturers are 'sent' from some mysterious elsewhere. All lecture in German, and the majority of them state either that they are Russians or that they have been in Russia quite recently. Russia and Labor in that and other distant parts are, almost exclusively, the subjects of their talk. And never do they miss a chance to quicken their hearers' hatred against the employing classes of any country in the world.

Always they affirm that the laborers of other countries are ready to rise and salute Bolshevism, if only they can be sure that in the United States a majority will follow them. They tell how prosperous the Russians are, under their present rulers; how every man has to work for a living, — labor for a living, — explaining that thus none has to work for more than six hours a day. They tell how, in Russia, all profits are shared, and thus all alike are wealthy; and how more schools have been built by the régime of the last order than were built in a generation of Tsardom. And above all, always they beseech, nay, order, their audiences not to believe one word that is printed in the American press.

'All that it says is lies, damned, deliberate lies,' the speaker repeats, with a fire and an eloquence that drives his words deep. 'America the land of the free? Bah! Russia is the only free country on the face of the earth to-day. It is the only country that has rid itself of the High Capitalist — the gorging, wine-bibbing High Capitalist. *He* is your true enemy, with his wines and his women — as bad, and a hundred times worse than the officers that you thought abused you in the old days at home. Why, look at the hugeness of the thing: the men you see around you — the plant managers, the foremen and whatnots — are scarcely better off, in principle, than you are yourselves. They are only the tools of the High Capitalist. They are only slave-gang bosses, who *have* to drive you in order to keep their jobs. Pity them. The High Capitalists are nothing else than blood-sucking vampires, forever bleeding every man under their control, from the first down, in order to make a few more dollars to keep their palaces of wickedness.

'*But our day is coming*, mind you. Our plans are laid, our hour is close at hand. When the moment arrives, we shall strike in every country at the same time. Russia has already set us our example. Germany is on our side. Italy, Canada, France, and England will rise as one man when our leaders give the signal. Here in the United States we are well organized; but remember that each one of you has to spread our doctrine each hour of every day. So our victory is assured.'

What response does this teaching, preached day by day, year by year,

Digitized by Google

awaken in Paul Zonbor and the like of him? Keep sight of the fact that Paul Zonbor, — now confessedly a Bolshevik, — like nearly all Bolsheviki and I.W.W.'s, was born in an environment of hate. In his earliest childhood he saw his parents and all their world hating, bitterly hating, the rulers, the rich men, the officials of his native land. And he, in his turn and on his own account, grew up to hate them as bitterly.

Then, being perhaps something more virile than the rest, he left his native land to escape the exploiter of 'cannon-fodder,' taking refuge in the Land of the Free. He had expected much of this Promised Land. He had been taught, and had taught himself, to regard it most truly as heaven on a new earth, where men were paid fabulous sums for half the work that on the Temes barely bought food enough to maintain life. Were not the dollars huge weekly, nay, daily, fortunes when translated into his native currency?

Yet once in the Promised Land, what had he found? Was it not the term 'cannon-fodder' giving place, when the crane drops its load, to 'only a Hunkie,' while the mill grinds on over the dead?

Then other things happened — things that, in the dim light of the world in which he groped, nobody interpreted to him — nobody, until 'they' hunted him out with the doctrine that gives fresh direction to the old, fierce faculty of hate. So that, as the New World increasingly disappointed him, as the beauties of the Old World gradually blotted out, in his memory, the grievances that drove him across the sea, he transferred his hatred, strengthened with the strength of his full maturity, to objects chosen by the only teachers that came his way.

'Who are the High Capitalists?' you ask him now. 'Is the head of this plant one?'

'He? No. *He* works himself. You can see that. He is only a slave, driven like the rest of us.'

'Is the president of the corporation one?'

Paul hesitates. 'I don't know. I should have to see how much stock he owns. *But I can find out.* In two days' time. Do you want to know?'

And so you find that the 'High Capitalist' actually has no other name, no definite identity in Paul's mind, but is, in fact, merely an imaginary figure conjured behind mists by paid revolutionary agitators.

IV

What is the cure for this prodigious ignorance that is so genuinely misleading a great part of the foreign-born labor in America to-day?

As for those who make their livelihood by preaching a foul and destructive doctrine, — those who defile the world for greed and defilement's sake, — they are best left alone, with rope enough to hang themselves, since hang they will, if given time and space.

But as for those who are honestly deceived and misguided, like Paul Zonbor, they, surely, have a just claim on men of better understanding to be shown the truth, the way to right thinking and right living by the code of the Golden Rule.

If a right-thinking man sees a forest on fire, he will immediately take steps to quench that fire, no matter to whom the forest may belong. Yet many men who do themselves see outbreakings of the flame started in Russia and smouldering the world over, instead of jumping to help smother it, turn their heads away, either because they believe it to be none of their business, or because they are too self-occupied to care for the world at large.

That is to say, they will wai

Digitized by Google

their neighbors have been destroyed and the flames have reached their own doors, before they will stir in their common duty.

When the Reds of Buffalo were arrested, at the beginning of last year, Paul Zonbor was overlooked. Paul had been pro-German in his sympathies all through the war, although not at that time an actively dangerous man. Since the Armistice, however, the multiplied weight of Bolshevist propaganda directed upon him as a key man, influencing the thought of his fellows, had had its cumulative effect. He was now in the condition where any spark might incite him to translate his theories into bloody facts. Yet Paul was overlooked, in the arrests of the Reds, although many of his friends and followers went to jail; whence, after two weeks in the cells, they were released, to spread with increased vigor their horrible creed, with all the rage of martyrs to a cause.

The authorities of the plant in which Paul had worked for eight years, having got wind of his tendencies, determined, however, to act for themselves. He was an undesirable — a spreader of discontent among his fellow workmen. They would quietly dismiss him without any words as to the cause. They did not want to fan red coals.

Accordingly, one morning, the foreman of the department informed No. 1896, Paul Zonbor, that another man would take over his job.

'Why? Don't I give satisfaction?' asked Paul.

Paul, by the way, was one of the most valuable men in his line. He carried a string of numbers in his mind running into the thousands, was accurate, trustworthy, and in times of special pressure had scarcely an equal, in his own way, among the plant's personnel.

'Satisfaction? Oh, yes,' replied the foreman; 'but we have decided that the job is only worth seventy cents an hour, and you are getting seventy-fi can go into the cleaning-room. a man short there.'

Now the cleaning-room worst place in the whole plan the job that Paul held was by n a bad one. In fact, he ran a sort department of his own, with t under him.

'That 's not the real reason canning me,' said Paul. 'Tell truth straight out. What 's the with me?'

'I tell you that's all there repeated the foreman.

'Then I want to see the man

So Paul saw the manager, hear the same statement, unela

Therefore, hot with rage, b himself the victim of a great i he went his way, and actuall better-paying job on the f Monday in a neighboring but concern.

There, to-day, with an incre lowing, he carries on his cru revolution with increased vigor

To-day Paul Zonbor is indee gerous man. He is personally He has no weakening vices. not drink to excess. He loves and children and is good to the like the mass of his fellows, h now foul-mouthed, whatever once have been. He is thrifty, likeable, square. And he uses hi to the best of the only light t ever been given him. It com Russia and it is Red. It may burst into an awful flame.

This is no attempt to answ questions with a general panac just the story — the literally tr — of one man — an obscure b happens, a no longer quite negli insignificant man.

Perhaps it would have profi corporation if, instead of allo

Digitized by Google

mind to remain polluted with damnable lies, they had expended time, trouble, and money to show him how, step by step, he has been deceived and then deceived again, until nothing but blackness shows in front of him, and a Red light beyond — a Red light whose gospel he now preaches to his hungrily listening, deeply trusting fellow workers, as the Gospel of Salvation.

Many labor agencies in New York have changed since 1906, although some of them are still of the type that exploited Paul. He could now be shown in that field great and sincere efforts at improvement. He could be shown Ellis Island's schools, concerts, Americanization lectures, and the like. He could be shown the true value of the Workmen's Compensation laws, which he now distrusts. He could be taught the meaning and sincerity of the many legislative measures passed for the prevention of accidents. If done in the right spirit, a course in economics could be so presented that even the one-time laborer on an Austrian baron's estate, who has since learned to think, could be persuaded that capital is as necessary as labor. Wholesome changes could certainly be wrought in that perverted mind; and because Paul Zonbor is honest at heart, is true, lovable, square, and decent-minded, the truth would strike root in his brain.

But, difficult as it might be to attain, there is one conceivable short cut that would be a thousand times more rapid and effective than all this. If the corporation, instead of handling No. 1896, Paul Zonbor, as it did, — kicking him out, furious, ready for any revenge, — had spent $2000 in sending him to Russia, it would have been repaid many times over. There let him see the actual want, misery, slavery, brutality to-day rampant in that unhappy country. There let him realize that in America he has suffered, not from Americanism, but merely from the carrying out, in America, by Europeans, of European abuses, to-day in Russia pushed to their utmost worst. And then bring him straight back to the plant again, where, after such an experience, he would be the greatest curative force, the greatest force of true Americanism that the corporation could possibly secure for a lessened labor turn-over and industrial peace.

Employers complain that the cost of production is greatly increased by the yearly labor turn-over, often 120 per cent. And nobody can dispute the fact. But it is equally indisputable that, in spite of any improved labor conditions, in spite of the most liberal welfare work, more will have to be done by the majority of employers, as well as by the government, — more and deeper thought given, more intelligent and further-reaching measures taken, more present profits devoted to the effective enlightenment of their human material, — if the labor turn-over is to be perceptibly reduced, and if the Red activities more and more permeating the personnel are to be overcome.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW ROAD TO EQUALITY

BY GROVER CLARK

'EQUALITY before the law' has been, and still is, one of the favorite battle-cries of the democracy. 'Class legislation' and 'special privilege' have been equally popular as objects of attack. But there has not been a corresponding unity of interpretation of these phrases — of understanding as to what they are to mean in terms of specific legislation and social organization.

We condemn class legislation and special privilege as severely as did our predecessors. Modern industrial and social development, however, has forced us to a new conception of what belongs under these categories. We insist as strongly as they that men should be equal, before the law, in opportunity, and in all their relations with their fellows. But we are finding that a new technique, a new kind of legislation, and a new attitude on the part of the government are necessary, if that equality is to be real and not merely theoretical.

I

In the care-free days of rampant individualism and the *laissez-faire* theory in industry, the government was supposed to keep its hands off the organization and conduct of industry. Labor laws, factory laws, anti-trust laws — all such were held to be violations of the fundamental right of individuals to pursue life, liberty, and happiness in equality before the law. If some were more successful than others in securing financial or other rewards for their efforts, they were to be congratulated. And certainly it was no part of t of the government to handicap the race for success. Yet to-d have such laws in profusion: la put a special handicap on som viduals, or give special advant others. And our Supreme Co found it possible to approve, as tutional, such measures.

If by 'class legislation' we legislation that favors or restric special group in the communit many of our more important laws must plead guilty to this Tariff laws are designed to bene ticular groups — the manufa Labor laws benefit the workers trust laws put a handicap on the izers of business. Income and taxes are collected from a very portion of the whole people. E woman's suffrage amendment w legislation, since it benefited only of the community. Yet we great difficulty in approving such ures, because we feel that, whi may apply in practice to special they benefit the community as a And we avoid a technical infrin of the principle of equality by the special privileges, or the prohibitions, in terms of ways o rather than of persons, even tho are well aware that in practice specific persons, or groups of p will be directly affected.

It is little more than soothin delusion to say that in this there is any essential differen tween the stipulation in the C

Digitized by Google

Anti-Trust Act of 1914, which exempted labor organizations from the prohibitions of the Sherman Act, and the provisions of the old English law, by which the nobility could plead exemption from certain penalties of the law for the common people. Nor is there, from this point of view, any essential difference between a tariff to 'protect' an 'infant industry' and the feudal law that gave the king administration of the estates of minor heirs. In each case special groups are given special advantages.

The difference, of course, is in the social results. We approve the modern regulations in each case, — if we do approve them, — and condemn the ancient, because, as I have suggested, we think the community as a whole is benefited, or injured, as the case may be. But we need to keep clearly in mind, in discussing these matters of special privilege and equality before the law, that most of the 'progressive' measures on which we are inclined to pride ourselves are in reality class legislation; and while we may not approve much of the Socialist programme, we need to be careful about throwing stones while we have so much glass in the walls of our own house.

We condemn, for example, the seizure of socially usable property by the government of the Bolsheviki on the ground that it is class legislation. Yet we approve an excess-profits tax, — at least, the majority of us do, as represented by our lawmakers and our Supreme Court, — which is a seizure, in essentially the same way, of socially usable property. We deny the claim of a monarch that his kingdom is his private property, to do with as he may choose. Of late, like the Bolsheviki, we have begun to deny the similar claim of a manufacturer as to his factory. But we grant the claim to private control of private property in most other cases. Yet there is no essential difference between these claims. The difference — as in the cases cited above — is not one of kind, but of degree. The question is not whether a person or a group shall be given special privileges or be favored or handicapped by class legislation; rather it is, how far the principle of favoring one group is to be carried, and of the relative size of the group favored.

In other words, we are learning that it is impossible to obtain real equality between men on an individualistic, *laissez-faire* basis. And in actual practice we are seeking that equality by various sorts of special legislation, which favor one group as against another. But our interpretation of the doctrine of equality has lagged behind our practice.

II

This inconsistency between the older conception of equality and much of our recent legislation has not escaped the notice of able students of politics. Nor have some of them failed to point out the growth of a tendency to stratification of the American people into classes delimited, if not actually created, by legislation which definitely grants, or does not positively deny, special privileges to special groups. This, for example, is the point of Mr. George W. Alger's article on 'The Menace of New Privilege,' in a recent issue of the *Atlantic Monthly*.

Many see in this tendency a grave danger to American social organization as we know it, and a fundamental challenge to democracy, just because it runs counter to the older, and even now more generally accepted, interpretation of the doctrine of equality. Mr. Alger expresses this point of view most effectively in his concluding paragraph:—

'In the final analysis, the question resolves itself into whether we desire the development in America of class-war by recognizing class-distinctions,

Digitized by Google

class-rights, and class-privileges, which make, not for peace, but for inevitable conflict. The time has arrived when this great question must receive a far more thorough and consistent study by the American people, not as classes, but as citizens; not as petitioners for special privileges, which the nobles of feudalism surrendered, but as the willing participators in a system of law whose basis is equality, a system which can have no other basis than equality, if democracy is not to perish from the earth.'

But in this 'thorough and consistent study' it will appear, I think, that, crude and in many ways undesirable as this recent class legislation is, it is, after all, the product of a real though somewhat blind striving to reëstablish that real equality before the law, and in the relations between men, which modern industrial development has destroyed. One does not need to be a 'Red' to realize that in actual practice there is little more than a theoretical equality before the law in America today. The accumulation of wealth in the hands of certain individuals and certain small groups has given them a power that has made almost a mockery any talk of equality between all men in any significant sphere of life. The tale of the special advantages that wealth has brought its possessors has been told too often to need repetition here. But it is exactly this disturbance of the even balance of equality by the power of accumulated capital that has led to the whole movement for social legislation of all kinds.

Labor laws, factory laws, the exemption of labor-unions from the operation of the anti-trust laws, minimum-wage legislation — all these and the multitude of other attempts to better the conditions of living of the 'have-nots' are fundamentally attempts to restore the balance of equality by putting the weight of legislation into th against the power of capital. A measures are class legislation, f give special advantages to one the whole group as opposed t other part. But men have felt was necessary to give such adva in order to save the large m from complete domination by minority — that is, in order to p equality.

III

There can be no serious deni the attempt to reëstablish equa these means has had many unfo results, or that certain groups h sisted on special privileges for selves at the expense of the peo whole. But the labor organizati farmers, the cotton-growers, a rest, are by no means the on guilty on this score. And neit the claim be seriously advanc the developments in the cap organization of industry, which large measure the cause of this a have been an entirely unmixed b These developments, producing cessity for large accumulations tal to carry on industry, and the accumulation of capital to m need, together with our concep the rights of private property given a disproportionate share o to a relatively small group in th munity, and so have eliminat equality, whether before the law opportunity, or in any vital sen

But the fight for equality wil And, whether we like it or not, as the social organization and t permit certain men — or certai groups — to secure and hold mo their share of actual power and tunity, so long will the effort tinued to right the balance by zation into groups and by leg favoring the non-privileged gro

Digitized by Google

Whether this attempt by the larger groups, made up of the individually less powerful, to secure equality by insisting upon 'class-rights and class-privileges' will mean 'class-war' and 'inevitable conflict' will depend principally on the vigor of the resistance made to the attempt by those who are favored by the present inequality. Unquestionably, the problem must be faced by 'the American people, not as classes, but as citizens.' But there is real danger in the present situation, not primarily because the large majority of the American people are 'petitioners for special privileges,' but because a small minority, who possess special privileges, are reluctant to give them up.

At present the attack on the citadel of privilege is being made more or less independently by separate groups; and each group, of defenders as well as of attackers, is, naturally enough, more keenly awake to its own immediate interest — that of securing for its members full equality with the most favored individuals, or of protecting what privileges they possess — than to the interests of other groups. Hence the tendency to stratification into classes. But the fundamental cause of this stratification is not a lack of desire for equality on the part of those who are seeking advantages, but a failure to unite into a single army the different bands fighting in this cause. Men, however, are realizing that this lack of unity delays the final victory — or weakens the defense; for there is a similar lack of unity among the privileged groups. Consequently, we are hearing more and more about the necessity for presenting a united front on both sides, and are witnessing, not only in the United States, but throughout the whole world, the steady growth of the tendency toward a merging of separate classes into the two great groups of the 'haves' and the 'have-nots.'

IV

The fight for equality is not new; but the recent attempts to secure equality have been along a somewhat new line. Instead of taking the negative course of denying special privileges, as our predecessors did, we more and more are positively asserting the rights of special groups.

When men first tried actually to build a society on the principle of equality, the most pressing problem was to clear away the special privileges of certain classes. Magna Carta, for example, represented an attempt on the part of the nobles, not primarily to secure powers for themselves, but rather to take powers away from the king. Similarly, the long history of the development of democratic control, until quite recently, is a record of progressively successful efforts on the part of the representatives of the people to wrest power from the king or the aristocracy. When the rights of the people were positively asserted, it was not so much from lust for power as such, — as the rights of the kings and the aristocracy had been asserted against the people, — as from a desire to secure protection from the abuse of power in the hands of the aristocracy. Equality was to be achieved, as it were, by taking away the jewels and rich clothing from the favored few rather than by giving jewels and rich clothing to the many.

Utilitarian individualism and the *laissez-faire* doctrine were the natural results of this conception of how the equality of men was to be realized. To carry on the figure: business practice and social legislation generally, for a large part of the nineteenth century, were based on the assumption that everyone started out with a full suit of clothes, while, if anyone was clever enough to get another man's coat away from him, or to find jewels to wear, that

Digitized by Google

was none of society's business. But toward the end of the century, it became obvious that a few people had virtually cornered the supply of clothes and jewels, so that in reality there no longer was even a suit for everyone, except at the pleasure of these few.

To drop the figure: with the accumulation of capital in the hands of a few, the emphasis in democratic legislation shifted. Such legislation sought less and less to take privileges from a small group and more and more to assert them for larger groups. The difference between the Sherman and the Clayton Anti-Trust acts is a case in point. The first specifically denies the right to form certain kinds of combinations — which affected, as was intended, a group numerically small but financially powerful. The latter specifically asserts the right of other groups — the laborers, the farmers, and so forth — to form combinations of a sort which, in certain respects, would otherwise be in violation of the Sherman Act.

As I have suggested, from the older point of view the exemptions in the Clayton Act are clearly contrary to the doctrine of equality before the law. Yet, as will be generally admitted, the Clayton Act gives special advantages to labor organizations for the definite purpose of helping the workers to secure real equality in their relations with their employers — an equality that had been destroyed by the power which the employers possessed through their control of capital. In reality, therefore, this act is the product of an attempt to make actual this theoretical equality, rather than to destroy a real equality.

This newer tendency, through legislation, to give special advantages in order to maintain a balance of equality has had some unfortunate results. But the solution of the problem of class-conflict will not come through returning to the older attitude, even if that were possible. A continuation of the *laissez-faire* individualism of the nineteenth century would have resulted in the creation of a new aristocracy based on wealth rather than on birth, — in the beginning, at least, — which, if unrestrained, would have developed all the objectionable features of feudalism. A return to this older attitude, the reincorporation into our legal and political practice of the older interpretation of equality before the law, would mean, not the saving of democracy, but its destruction.

Democracy will be saved, real equality, not only before the law, but in all men's relations, will be secured, by making sure, through legislation or otherwise, that a balance is maintained, in spite of the weight on one side that comes through the possession of capital. Clearly, the balance is not even now. Equally clearly, we should not overweight it on the other side. But neither should we forget that we must take active steps to achieve a balance. Negative effort toward taking away advantages from the few will no longer suffice. Such efforts cleared the ground for the growth of the present inequalities; and men will always find means to circumvent merely negative prohibitions. Our task therefore is, with due consideration for the interests and rights of all, to go forward along the positive line of giving advantages to the many, so that they may achieve a real equality with those who have secured special advantages for themselves.

Digitized by Google

ONLY A MATTER OF TIME

BY CHRISTOPHER MORLEY

DOWN-SLIPPING Time, sweet, swift, and shallow stream,
Here, like a boulder, lies this afternoon
Across your eager flow. So you shall stay,
Deepened and dammed, to let me breathe and be.
Your troubled fluency, your running gleam
Shall pause, and circle idly, still and clear:
The while I lie and search your glassy pool
Where, gently coiling in their lazy round,
Unseparable minutes drift and swim,
Eddy and rise and brim. And I will see
How many crystal bubbles of slack Time
The mind can hold and cherish in one *Now!*

Now, for one conscious vacancy of sense,
The stream is gathered in a deepening pond,
Not a mere moving mirror. Through the sharp
Correct reflection of the standing scene
The mind can dip, and cleanse itself with rest,
And see, slow spinning in the lucid gold,
Your liquid motes, imperishable Time.

It cannot be. The runnel slips away:
The clear smooth downward sluice begins again,
More brightly slanting for that trembling pause,
Leaving the sense its conscious vague unease
As when a sonnet flashes on the mind,
Trembles and burns an instant, and is gone.

Digitized by Google

WHY IS HE A GENERAL?

BY NICHOLAI VELIMIROVIC

The circumstances under which this brief parable was written deserve to be told. When Bishop Nicholai, of Serbia, was in this country, pleading for funds for Serbian children, a friend presented him with a copy of Elbert Hubbard's 'Message to Garcia,' the point of which, as readers will commonly remember, was the absolute importance of giving genuine service for wages or for contract. A few days later the Bishop wrote his friend: 'After I read your "Message to Garcia" I remembered a happening (which occurred during the tragic retreat of the Serbians), which I have tried to describe in this brief paper. The moral of it is similar to that of the "Message."' — THE EDITOR.

NIGHT and rain. Three of us were riding in a coach, ten miles away from our destination. One of the horses collapsed and fell down. Stop. No star in the sky, no counselor to comfort. What to do?

A man appeared, as a nightmare — as if he came out of the rocks on which we were leaning.

'My name is Marko,' he said. 'Don't worry. In a few minutes everything will be all right.'

And he disappeared. But soon after, we found that our second horse had disappeared, too.

He had stolen it; all of us thought so, smiling ironically at the unfair game of fate.

Yet, in a few minutes, Marko returned, riding on the horse, and leading another horse by the string.

We asked questions: Who was he? where did he find a horse? and so forth. He murmured something, and kept busy about the horses and the coach.

'Ready!' he said. 'Good-night to you.' And the darkness of night swallowed him up.

'Thank God, there are still Christian men in this world, we thought,' and started.

I visited Mrs. Haverfield's orphanage at Uzice. She said, —

'The peasants of the surrounding villages are most helpful to me, especially Marko. He is beyond description.'

'But who is Marko?' I asked, remembering a dreadful emergency in my life.

'Don't you know Marko? He is a man of perfect service to everybody. You will see him to-morrow.'

We were sitting at the open fire and listening to Marko. He is nothing more than an ordinary Serbian peasant.

'Everybody must have learned a lesson in the war. Mine is a strange one, and yet the most valuable for the rest of my days.'

Then he became reluctant. But we insisted and he continued: —

'My sin against our General M—— was the cause of the lesson. We were ten privates under the same tent. Our duty was to attend the general and his staff. We did our duty half-heartedly, and the officers often complained. One day the general called all of us and said, —

'"Brothers, you are called to do service to me and to my officers. Do it perfectly and joyfully!"

Digitized by Google

'We corrected ourselves a little. But war continued endlessly. Day and night we were filled with the dreams of our homes, and we walked ceaselessly in the camp like shadows, and did our service very badly. Water for the officers was not brought always in time; boots were not dried at fire and cleaned, as they ought to be. And again and again officers remonstrated. They must have complained to the general. One night the general opened our tent, looked in, and asked, —

'"Brothers, are you all right?"

'He went off. And I —'

There Marko stopped, and his eyes were shining with tears.

'And I said loudly: "Why is he a general? He does nothing. We are doing everything. It is easy for him."

'The night was a very long one, but our sleep fast and our dreams of home very vivid.

'"What is that?" we all asked, as with one voice, looking at a marvel. And the marvel was this: all the boots, both of the officers and our own, were perfectly cleaned and arranged at our feet. We went to the officers' rooms. There, again, all the uniforms nicely hung up and cleaned, water-jars filled, and a big fire made in the hall, and the hall swept and put in order properly.

'"Who did it?"

'No one of us knew. Of course, all day we were talking of that.

'The next morning the same thing happened. We were quite startled and confused. "Is God perhaps sending an angel to do this service for us?" This we asked each other, and retold all the fairy tales we remembered from our childhood.

'But now, behold.

'We decided to watch. And our sentinel saw, soon after midnight, our general creeping into our tent. Oh, shame! the mystery was now revealed and the lesson learned.

'That day the general asked for me. I was trembling with all my body and soul. It was clear for me that he must have heard my remark about him two nights before.

'But, O Lord, he was all smiles.

'"Brother Marko, did you ever read the Gospel?"

'My lips were trembling, and I answered nothing.

'"Well," he continued, "take it once more to-day and read the story how the Captain of men, who is called by us the Lord of Lords and the King of Kings, was the perfect servant of men."

'I cried like a child found in a theft.'

And Marko began to cry once again in telling his story, and we all were very much moved.

Then he took courage again, and continued: —

'Then the general said: "My brother, two nights ago you asked a question which I have to answer now. Listen: I am your general because I am supposed to be able to do my own 'invisible' and 'lordly' duty, but also because I am supposed to be fit to do in a most excellent way the service you, the privates, are called to do."

'The general stopped and closed his eyes. I never shall forget that moment. I wished I were killed instantly by a bullet, so overwhelming was the presence of the general. I stood there all misery and fear.

'Finally the general lifted up his head and said, —

'"You must try your hardest to do your service to men perfectly and joyfully, now and always, not because of the severe order and discipline, but because of joy hidden in every perfect service."

'The general walked two or three steps toward the window and turned to me and said, —

'"Now, brother Marko, I tell you honestly, I enjoyed greatly cleaning

Digitized by Google

your boots, for I am greatly repaid by doing so. Don't forget, every perfect service hides a perfect payment in itself, because — because, brother, it hides God in itself."

'Of course, after that, the service in the general's camp was all right, and the officers never since had to complain.'

Thus finished Marko his story. The soft words of his good general were softened still more, and all the time, with Marko's warm tears.

Later on, I was told by many people that Marko, who before the war was not at all considered a very kind man, and much less a man of stern principles, has become, through his perfect service to everybody within a time of existence of eighteen months, the most beloved human being in his mountains. At the last election the people unanimously asked him to go to represent them in the Parliament; but he declined. He said, —

'That post is for the generals, and I am merely a private still.'

This is Private Marko's lesson from the war, through which he has become involuntarily a captain of men.

For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you. Verily, verily, I say unto you, the servant is not greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them. — ST. JOHN 13, 15–17.

WORLD WITHOUT END

BY GERTRUDE HENDERSON

THE body of Mrs. Sarah Pennefather lay on the bed, and her spirit lingered, considering it. 'Curious fashion!' mused the spirit. 'I wonder I could have worn it all these years!'

The spirit was only this moment disencumbered. It floated above its late habiliments, wavered, and loitered still.

'I remember being proud of it when it was new — comparatively new. The colors I thought were pretty. They haven't worn well. And how it has wrinkled! It looks incredibly clumsy. One sees these things so much more clearly, getting a little away. It's been extremely uncomfortable lately — very ill-fitting. I wonder I put up with it so long. You patch and mend and freshen one way and another, and try to make it do for another season — put off as long as you can throwing it aside and getting something new — '

The spirit drifted, eddied, not quite yielding yet to the breeze between the worlds that impelled it away.

'I suppose there's really nothing I can do for them — nothing more. They'll all sleep until morning, and it's really much better they should. I'm glad to be going this way, without any fuss. Dear children! I hope they won't be unhappy. Miss me, but not be unhappy. They have their lives — and I must go on with mine.'

Digitized by Google

The visit [illegible] between the [illegible] ... [illegible] ... [illegible] ...

upon the other's hesitation. 'It just is n't done. Whatever way they take of calling you, you've just got to go, ouija or anything else, if they can get across with it. But I'd like to get hold of that ouija line myself and scamper round the board a little for Mrs. Pennefather's family. I know some things I'd say!'

The gentle presence reminiscent of Cranford tried it again.

'There are other ways so much more delicate,' she said. 'One does n't find any fault with the silent outreachings of the heart, not employing instruments; though, of course, even those are engrossing, and one questions if they are quite — quite — kind, if I may say so. Still, they are sensitive, and refined, and — and very natural. One can't wonder that the lonely feelings cry out to us and keep calling us back. But the ouija is *quite* unlike that. It seems so — so indelicate. I don't know how to say what I can't help feeling about it. It has a bold way that offends one's — is it only one's taste, I wonder? As if it were not — perhaps — altogether — respectful. It — it insists so! Perhaps it is only because we were not brought up to it. I can't help feeling that it is a little humiliating, like playing tricks on a lady and putting her in an undignified position; and I wonder if dear Mrs. Pennefather does n't feel the same way.'

The door of the ouija booth opened and Mrs. Pennefather came back. Her expression was troubled, and she did not resume her place among her friends.

'It's Harriet's daughter,' she said. 'She does n't know whether to run off with Jack or not. Her mother does n't like him, and she's quite right. Sara won't herself after a while. But the child is so young! There's a sort of jolly, reckless, all-for-a-good-time flow of spirits about him that she can't resist. And he's after her so hard! He's begging her to go to-night, and she wants to and does n't want to. She's a good child and can't bear to distress her father and mother, but she does n't know what to do. She's in a whirl. I'll just have to go and talk it over with her and calm her down. She's reasonable, if you can get her quiet. She always did care what her grandmother thinks. Just now she can't listen to her mother because she thinks her mother is prejudiced, and she won't talk to her father. Poor little girl! She's having a hard fight. She does n't know anyone to turn to excepting her old grandmother, to help her make up her mind.'

'What will it matter, after a while?' said a quiet voice that had not been lifted in the ouija discussion.

'Yes, of course,' said Mrs. Pennefather. 'I suppose we all see that here. But this is n't after a while to Harriet's little girl. It's now. I'll have to go help her.'

Again the well-mannered attendant was at their side.

'The ouija, Mrs. Pennefather,' he said.

One of the lesser executives was talking to somebody else, but I think not to the greatest.

'Mrs. Pennefather really is n't doing the least good here, you know.'

'What's the matter? Is n't she happy? "Blessed damosel leaned out" — is it that kind of case?'

'No. Oh, no! Oh, she would be, if they'd let her alone. She has imagination enough to see what there is in it. It went like great music through her when she first caught a glimpse of it — the possibilities. She longs to be up and about it. It's those in the World Before bothering around all the time, dragging her back. They call it loving her! *You* know. I don't need to tell you.'

'Mediums? Do they go as far down as that?'

Digitized by Google

'Oh, yes, and worse. All the ways. They've even a ouija lately. It's one of the aggravated cases.'

'Well?'

'It is n't her fault at all, you know. She really is n't here. They won't let her be. They keep pulling her back and back, and making her stay with them. She is having to spend her whole time in the World Before — that's what it amounts to. She has n't had a chance, the way they keep interrupting her. She knows it's like being in a swarm of gnats, but she has n't the heart to brush them away — all her family's calls and calls to her. She loved them, you know, and her heart is so tender.'

'And yet we don't want to keep this life from shining through. One hesitates to thicken the barriers.'

'Of course, that is true. But how to keep them from abusing it on the other side? Now, here's this case of Mrs. Pennefather. It's one of any number. You could duplicate it all over this life and the other, I'd hate to say how many times. Her little grandson has a temper. Many boys have; it's not uncommon. Well, one day, out it flies, and another small boy gets knocked down and goes home crying. What does his mother do? "Ambrose," she says, very gently, "don't you remember how Grandmother hated to see you give way to your temper? You don't like to do what pained Grandmother so, do you?"

'Now, that's all very well; sweet and loyal and loving, and appeals to what's fine in the boy — all very well, if she'd stop there. But does she? Not she! She goes on. Just listen to what she says to the youngster — and, as I said, it's not just Mrs. Pennefather's daughter-in-law. It's happening every day, all over Christendom.

'"Grandmother has n't gone away from us," she says. "We don't see her any more, but she's always near us — nearer than she ever was before! When you feel your bad temper coming up you just stop and think of Grandmother, and she'll help you get the best of it."

'Well! There it is! So Mrs. Pennefather has to drop all the big things she might be doing and go back and stay around and help Ambrose take care of his temper, which his mother ought to be perfectly equal to doing herself. Mrs. Pennefather did it for Ambrose's father, and a big job it was and took years of patience; but she did it, and now it's Ambrose's mother's turn to do it for Ambrose.

'And even that is n't so bad. One could forgive that. There's something fine in it too, of course. But the ones who're just lonesome! No other excuse in the world, but just lonesome! What are they thinking about? Do they think these Dead have n't anything else to do than to keep hanging about their poor little lives forever and ever? Don't they know they have their own great place in the marvelous universe and can't be playing at midges' work any longer? What do they think they died for?

'Excuse me. It does make one immoderate. But the foolishness of it! The lack of imagination! The belittling the whole scheme!'

There are thoughts that demand expression before the ultimate authority. It is not quite honest to say them to anyone else, or to leave them unspoken.

Mrs. Pennefather went to find the very oldest residents. They might know. Their aspect was stately and somewhat awesome, because they were from the most remote antiquity, but their eyes were kind and wise.

'Can anyone see Him?' she asked.

'The Maker of Plans?'

'The Thinker of Everything,' she said.

Digitized by Google

'You might try,' they answered. 'We don't know whether you could; only whether we could.'

There was a great, quiet space, and in it a veil like a misty cloud hanging, stirring — like a breath on waters.

Mrs. Pennefather began to say what she had to say. She thought it was the one she had come to speak to, listening. It could n't be anyone else. She had no hesitation, and said what was in her mind.

'God, O God, it is n't in the least what I expected. I did n't think it of you, God! Can't you ever let us off from living? Frittering away death — like this! They don't understand, back there, but why can't you make them let us alone? I was your faithful servant there, O God — you know I was! I did the very best I knew how. I did n't shirk or complain — much. I tried hard! And I was so tired! I thought I could go away and rest. And ever since I came, every minute, they keep calling me to help them do things. Just the way it always was — only worse: for then they used to try to spare me and not let me overdo, and now they think they're being kind to me. Kind! They really think that! I don't mean to blame them, God. It's just because they don't know any better; but really they do. The more they call me, the more they think they're being kind and loving to me. O God, I'm so disappointed in dying! Is n't there something else? Something bigger? Because if there is n't, if it 's just going on living the same things over and over, with a kind of a veil between, then I can
what's the good of dying, you
Because they're all such *little* t
One does n't see that at the time.
think they matter, and so you're w
to pour your soul into them. But
how little they are and how little
matter, and just when you've dra
long breath, then to feel them reac
reaching, clinging to you, holdin
back — when you *see* it does n't ma
O God, how can you let them inte
great beautiful Death like that?'

Again the wind that blows bet
the worlds lifted the spirit of
Pennefather and swirled it away
away — high into ecstasies — deep
unconsciousness — far and far thr
the unthinkable realms that lie bet
the worlds. After the æons, em
from the spaces, she lifted eyelids
tired eyes and looked at the light
windows of her familiar bedroom
her daughter's face bending over

'Am I dead?' said the living
Pennefather, slowly moving the li
her body.

'No, dear — oh, no!' said her da
ter. 'You've been sleeping a long
It's quite late.'

'I knew it could n't be like
said Mrs. Pennefather after long
onds; 'God would n't fool anybod

She turned her head, and her ey
closed sleepily.

'Now,' she murmured, the wo
light breath scarcely moving her
'now lettest thou thy servant depe
peace.'

Digitized by Google

MASTERING THE ARTS OF LIFE

AS EXEMPLIFIED IN A NEW SCHOOL

BY THEODORE M. KNAPPEN

I

In a greenhouse at Dayton, Ohio, where a master of scientific research once experimented with plant-life, there is being conducted an interesting experiment in juvenile life, conceived by the man of research and a group of friends and associates. There was no significance in the choice of the greenhouse for the human experiment. It happened to be the most available shelter for the new-old school that the group had in mind. Yet a building so little suited for school purposes did complement an idea behind the school — that now, as in Garfield's time, a log with a Mark Hopkins on one end and the student on the other is enough material equipment to ensure the success of a school.

This 'Moraine Park School' began as a preparatory school, but the scheme has now been projected down to the tenderest school-years; so that it is possible for 220 of the more fortunate of the Dayton boys and girls to pass all their years, from kindergarten to college entrance, in the pleasant paths of education that have been sketched for them by the founders. The paths are many. Some are well-defined; some are merely blazed and left to the development of the boys and girls as they move forward through the years; but all lead up toward the general goal of mastery of the arts of life, which is education according to the Moraine Park conception.

The definition is important, because it shapes the scheme of this novel school. Manifestly the arts of life cannot be mastered by excising the boy from life. He cannot be prepared for life by staying out of life for twelve or sixteen years. From the standpoint of this definition, education and life cannot be kept in separate compartments for a quarter, or a third, of a lifetime. Education, regarded as something wholly preliminary to, or dissociated from, practical life, could thus be segregated, and has been these last fifty years in America — or ever since our educational system spread out to enclose the youth of the land in its meshes for nine months or more in all the formative years. The arts of life, like any technical art, are mastered by doing, not by looking on.

But what are these arts of life, whose mastery constitutes education according to the Moraine Park way of thinking? They do not consist of technical expertness in any particular formal study, or in any craft. They are not based on the attainment of a rating of 70 per cent in algebra, or on such and such a rating in making tools and machines. On the contrary, 'the arts of life' are described as occupations, ten in number. And these occupations do

Digitized by Google

not respond to the ordinary definition of the word, as a means of gaining a living; rather are they the departments of human activity which, taken together, make up the whole life. In the 'pedagese' of the school publications these 'occupations' are set down as (1) Body-building; (2) Spirit-building; (3) Society-serving; (4) Man-conserving; (5) Opinion-forming; (6) Truth-discovering; (7) Thought-expressing; (8) Wealth-producing; (9) Comrade- or mate-seeking; (10) Life-refreshing.

The ordinary studies of the schools are relegated to places in these 'occupations.' In the monthly report cards that go to the parents, the latter have to look closely to find out how their boy is doing in history. They find it listed as No. 3 under opinion-forming, such unheard-of qualities in scholastic reports as fairness of mind and judgment being listed above it in this 'occupation' or art of life. This grouping illustrates the theory of the school. It does not look upon history as something to be taught for itself, but as something to be studied as a means of developing the ability to form sound opinions. The boy may be very lame in history as a study, and yet stand up well in his rating in opinion-forming.

Should the parent wish to know how his son is doing in chemistry, or zoölogy or physics, or botany, he will consult the score-card in vain. In the space set aside for appraisal of progress in truth-discovering, he will, however, get a hint of how well the boy is doing in science as a whole, as one of the seven factors that contribute to the mastery of truth-discovering — but that is all. Manifestly the boy might have only an 'unsatisfactory' in science as a study, and being excellent and satisfactory in the six other elements of truth-discovering, make a most excellent showing as a discoverer of truth. The other elements of the mastery of truth-discovering are set down as ale
thoroughness, skill in observing
in experimenting, soundness in
preting, and geography.

Following the obscured trail
traditional studies through the M
Park curriculum, we find French,
Spanish, and mathematics set
as contributors to thought-e
ing, with truthfulness and ac
listed ahead of them. Unless we
manual training, listed under w
producing, this completes the
mention of 'studies' in the or
acceptation. Grouped with m
training under wealth-producin
'project work,' diligence, perseve
honesty, initiative, thriftiness.
the other 'occupations,' body-bu
includes eating carefully, genera
of health, regular exercise. Spirit-
ing is made up of loyalty to high
efforts to do the best, trustworth
power to will to do the right. Un
ciety-serving come obedience, r
for law, faithfulness in office, in
in the community, punctuality.
conserving is made up of gene
spirit of helpfulness, home-m
Contributing to comrade- or mate
ing ability are the elements of
eration, courtesy, agreeableness,
ness. Elements of the mastery
art of life-refreshing are play in
sportsmanlike spirit, courage, sel
trol, resourcefulness.

The report card really tells the
of the Moraine Park School. Th
ent examines it to learn whethe
how the child is progressing in hi
tery of the art of living and its c
nent arts; the child views it as a p
of his progress in the adventure
Neither worries about the progr
studies, school-exercises, or me
for both conceive of them as bu
material and means of educatio
fact, the so-called studies, which
be carried on for drill purposes, a

Digitized by Google

keep up the articulation of the school with the colleges and universities, and also to keep the student from coming short of the mastery of living because of lack of understanding of the formal education of the past and present, are only a part of the instruments of education at Moraine Park. Training in business and in citizenship are granted as much importance and as much time as the formal studies; and beneath all three is the ever-considered basic occupation of being physically well and strong.

II

The method of the school varies in detail from day to day, from year to year, from class to class and pupil to pupil, but, in general, it seeks always to blend studies and life, mental and moral drill, with business and citizenship. So far as practicable, all things are learned or acquired by doing. Citizenship is mastered by making the school democratically self-governing, even to the conducting of the classes, wherein one of the class presides and does the 'paper work,' leaving the teacher free to be 'one of the bunch.' The studies are absorbed by utilizing them. This utilization may be through the 'projects' or through the working out of real-life problems. The book learning comes in as a tool in handling the problem. Instead of leading a boy up to a textbook on arithmetic, for example, and giving him so many rules to learn and so many examples to do, the textbook is arrived at by indirection. If a boy is going through all the phases of a duplication of earning money, saving it, and building a home on the installment plan, he finds himself up against many real-life problems in mathematics and naturally wants to know how to meet them. At this stage he is eager for the study of mathematics. He takes up arithmetic now because he has a compelling interest in it.

Running the school and the classes on a democratic plan inevitably leads to a desire to study civics and politics. In these ways the student comes to get, as a means to an end, what in the ordinary school is the end of his work. He follows his interests. He acquires with feverish enthusiasm the things that he might otherwise rebel against. The idea is, not to lay a course of education before a boy and tell him to swallow it, *nolens volens*, but to lead him along to a point where he demands it. He works out his own education. The teacher stays in the background as friend and adviser. He does not do all the swimming himself, but gets the boy to come into the pool with him. Education flows from the irresistible impulsion of his own activities — until it becomes his life.

So wide are the boundaries within which the girls and boys may follow the needle of their own inclinations that if, as sometimes happens, a class votes to pursue a study in the conventional manner of study, recitations, and examinations, it has its way; for the old way is held to be as good as any for those who like it. This does not often occur. Usually the indirect route is the one followed.

Take English, for example. Spelling and grammar are merely incidental. The pupils read pretty much what they want to read, fix a minimum of achievement, and choose their own themes. Eager to write or to understand, they perceive the necessity of knowing what is correct in composition and rhetoric. Spelling, grammar, and composition are now appealed to. Themes written in the pursuance of any study or occupation serve for the themes of the English class. A boy who was all for agriculture in his interests was utterly indifferent to literature. But to acquire

Digitized by Google

the facts that appealed to him, he had to read various agricultural papers and bulletins. Then he noticed that some of these publications were easy to read and had an appealing style, while others were obscure and dull. This observation opened the door of English and literature to him. He desired to learn how to write lucidly and interestingly himself.

The learners of the arts of life can go as slowly or as rapidly as their abilities and energies determine. They receive credits, not on the basis of so many hours a week or on mere memory examinations and formal recitations, but rather on what they have mastered as shown by inquiry, ability-testing examinations, and observation. As the child progresses, he is informally appraised from time to time, and fundamentally surveyed and checked up at long intervals. Many children are notoriously slow in grasping particular drill studies, as, for example, mathematics. For them there are no despairing moments of agonizing tests and torturing examinations at Moraine. The mastery of mathematics being but one seventh of the mastery of 'thought-expressing,' the child to whom numbers come but slowly has abundant opportunity to compensate his pride and defend himself from mortification. Left to his own evolution in ample time, he generally finds himself sufficiently informed, even in the most backward studies, to master minimum requirements before the day comes for him to be graduated.

The so-called projects are related to all the ten occupations. They are real-life enterprises, in the development of which the child finds understanding of the arts of life. One group of boys has a project for building an air-plane — a natural enterprise in an aeronautical centre like Dayton. This project has its mechanical, scientific, and business aspects. First, of all, it must be financed; and the financing must be ea
the boys rent a plot of land a
popcorn, which they tend, har
sell. This involves many bus
tivities and much business i
Incidentally they learn some
agriculture, something of the
business, something of bankin
thing of commercial correspond
each stage of the progress of th
they have to do something tha
in everyday life — and their
prompting is to find out how t
the best way. They are turned
position, to arithmetic, to typ
to bookkeeping. The mechan
scientific by-paths are many a
ous. The air-ship boys were
nate enough to purchase an en
was not satisfactory. In tryin
load it, they fell into a co
temptation. They bethought th
to offer it to the school bank,
the project of another group,
eral for a loan, leave the loan
and let the bank take possessi
worthless engine. At this po
learned something of busine
and morals.

The bank project, besides b
means of the mastery of the a
for its shareholders and office
portant in the financing of t
projects, as well as a convenien
students in general, and an ope
banking practice. It has abou
dred accounts and its deposits
to one thousand dollars. It ma
at current interest rates, and
supported by collateral or good
ments.

The projects number more
hundred. Usually they are of a
earning or money-absorbing
but they are sometimes purely
or educational, and may be w
school's purview or outside it.
them are a school drug-store;
ing-shop; a newspaper; mana

Digitized by Google

school library; toy-manufacturing; a lunch-room; a law firm to look after the legal contacts and court trials that arise under the self-established government and from the conflicts of projects; a brokerage company; a second-hand store on pawnshop lines; a towel-supply service; a lost-and-found office; getting out the school catalogue (which is almost entirely performed by the students); camera shop; serving as secretaries to the director and instructors; advertising production for school announcements and business projects; an insurance company, which protects against various losses, including broken panes in the greenhouse that still shelters the larger part of the school; an advertising company; a bookstore; a transfer company; a construction company; and so on.

What with the handling of the many and diverse projects, and the work of the 'details' that perform the school chores, — such as janitoring, — the internal business administration of the school, and some of its external relations, are largely carried on by the pupils. There are, of course, various clubs, and sports and play are as much a part of the daily programme as classes and 'projects.'

III

The very fact that the school began in a disused greenhouse and without much physical equipment opened the way for many projects and leaves it still open. There were, and are, many alterations to be made. The boys plan changes in their environment, and carry them out with saw and hammer, plane and paint-brush. Subject to the advice and counsel of the instructors, they make their way through school much as they will have to make it when the designated school years are over. They educate themselves. Within spacious bounds they follow the paths of their own interests and inclinations through the studies and activities that give the mastery of the arts of life. They are driven on by the impulsions born of what they do. In a large sense they 'run' themselves and the school. Thus they come to the final goal of the twelfth grade, — though grades are but shadowy things in this school, which flows steadily rather than advances by steps, — only partly by virtue of the book-learning that is revealed by set examinations, but as men progress in daily life; and they show their progress by their deeds rather than by accounts of what they have memorized.

The pupils are divided into four groups, with a normal allocation of four years to the first or primary group, two years to the second, three years to the third, and three years to the fourth. To each group are assigned certain standards, the attainment of which indicates eligibility for the next higher group. The standards are not arbitrary, but are used as goals, and are subject to change. Just now, for example, the child is ready to emerge from the first group when (1) he has made definite progress in physical development toward the norm for his age, according to standard tables; (2) when he has attained satisfactory standing in at least seven of the personal traits of self-control, thrift, perseverance, trustworthiness, obedience, truthfulness, helpfulness, generosity, courage, initiative, self-reliance; (3) when he shows by mental tests that his intelligence is within two years of the normal for his actual age; and (4) when he has reached a full fourth-grade standard in the 'drill subjects,' namely, reading, spelling, numbers, and writing.

To complete the work of the second group, the requisite normal physical progress must be in evidence; there must have been satisfactory advancement in the personal traits; there must be a well-

Digitized by Google

established purpose 'to support the right and oppose the wrong'; there must be an intelligence within two years of that indicated as normal for the child's actual age, and the attainment of a full sixth-grade proficiency in the drill subjects.

To pass through the third group the pupil must keep his physique up to the age-standard, pass mental tests indicating an intelligence within two years of that for his age, and have a standing of 'good' in at least seven of the nine 'occupations' that are based on the primal occupation of body-building or health-preserving; and must have completed, with a grade of 'good,' at least ten of the twelve units of the drill-subject work of this group — a unit being a year's work.

To complete the fourth group (end of twelve years of work), the physical standard must be satisfied, the intelligence test must be passed, all the nine 'occupations' must be mastered to the extent of 'good,' and, finally, credit gained for twelve units of conventional studies of this group, and a total sixteen units, including those of the last year of the third group. These units are chosen so that they 'equip for entrance to college or for a life occupation.'

In reviewing these progress-requirements, it will be observed that in each group there are three fields of appraisal in addition to the conventional ones. Roughly, it might be said that at Moraine the work of the typical school counts only as one fourth of the pupil's advancement; and that statement presents briefly the difference between this school and the familiar ones. Were it not for the fact that Moraine must adapt itself to the general educational scheme, in order to equip its graduates for college entrance examinations and to enable them to produce the accepted symbols of education, it would doubtless give still less weight to the conventional. It is the hope of the f and director to persuade colle universities to accept Moraine ates on the school's recommer full confidence being felt that t more than make good. Already gan, Ohio State, and some other sities and colleges have agreed t Moraine boys for the full valua school accords to them. A nu boys, by their college records, h tified the school's confidence i and in itself.

Moraine is as adaptable and able in its own entrance-requi as it would have the colleges i By means of an application which is an elaborate question gets a survey of the applican character, disposition, attainme formance, inclinations, and The parent, not the child, fills signs this blank. The last tw tions remind him sharply of th tional creed he subscribes to in his child to Moraine. They ar

'Do you believe that self-di is the kind for children to rather than that they be trai force of the will of adults?'

'Do you believe that books, materials, are of secondary imp to fundamental attitudes and in education?'

IV

The pressure of Dayton b girls to get into this school, lure glowing accounts of its fascina ventures in the book of life, soo ped the original scheme of a school for a dozen or so sons creators. The latter are all den Americans, and they abhor ex ness. They had no intention o lishing a school that should seek age, but were merely trying t better way of educating their — not to set them apart fro

Digitized by Google

children. Within limits, a larger number of pupils would contribute to the realization of their ideas, as it would create a community, and establish opportunity for contacts and the practice of the 'occupations' that would be impossible in a small group. Moreover, a larger school would afford a desirable demonstration of the applicability of the conception to the public schools. By a weighted scale of tuition, whereby wealthy parents pay more than those less fortunate, it has become possible to keep the school from becoming a mere congregation of rich men's sons. As the school is a self-governing democracy, the 'citizens' have a voice in the matter of admissions. Newcomers are accepted on probation while the community gets a chance to give them the 'once over.' No snobs or mere sons of their fathers can get by that searching scrutiny, although hasty judgments are often revised after taking counsel with the instructors.

The democratic spirit of the school is further promoted by the comradeship of instructors and pupils. The former have no pride of position. They are of, for, and by the boys. They stand on no dignity of authority. The boys address them as familiarly as they do each other, and they maintain their leadership solely by virtue of their engaging personalities and their success in helping the boys to explore zestfully the realm of education. The teacher who requires the support of authority cannot remain at Moraine Park.

The expansion of the school, now but three years old, has compelled an enlargement of its housing. A beautiful home — not a schoolhouse — has been erected in Dayton proper for the accommodation of the little tots, a cottage for the older girls has been erected at the Park, and soon the boys will have a new building there; but the greenhouse will not be forsaken. Moraine Park is out in the country, though but a few miles from Dayton, so that the older children have the advantage of passing all their school-work and play-hours in the midst of fields and forests, though their homes are in the city. So far, Moraine is entirely a school for Dayton, there being no accomodations for children who do not live with their families. The long waiting-list makes it doubtful whether Moraine will ever grow away from Dayton. Its spirit will doubtless go to other cities in like schools to be.

The admirers of the conventional school will decry Moraine Park as one more of many pedagogical fads and educational experiments, and 'practical' men will brand it as a doomed child of theory. Yet it is entirely the creation of practical men — self-made men — who desired a thoroughly practical school for their boys. When, some ten years ago, Colonel E. A. Deeds and Mr. C. F. Kettering, men whose names are of much import in the American automotive industries, and others, were developing one of the products of their genius, two boys, imitating their fathers, developed a waste-paper basket, and manufactured and marketed it with such success, that, though they were but seven or eight years old, they made a thousand dollars. This venture being wound up, one of the boys took up poultry-raising and made a corresponding success of it. The fathers, perceiving that the boys had developed strong commercial, engineering, and industrial tendencies, and were educating themselves in the 'getting-on' side of life, so indispensable to happiness in this age, bethought themselves whether it was possible to send the boys on through school and college, and give them the rest of the equipment of a well-balanced man of culture, without checking or perverting their spontaneous tendencies to learn for themselves.

Digitized by Google

In other words, they desired their sons to get college educations without losing their innate practicality and their oneness with life. They sought a preparatory school that would make the boys resistant to the diversion of college life and equip them to make the most of its potentialities.

Thinking along similar lines, individually for his own son, and generally for better educational methods, was Mr. Arthur E. Morgan, an eminent engineer, who had come to Dayton to direct the $35,000,000 task of preventing such floods in the Miami Valley as the one that cost that part of Ohio several hundred lives and a property loss of more than $100,000,000 in 1913. So it came about that these men, and others who soon became interested, decided to start a school of their own, which would embody their ideas of what education should be. Realizing that the first essential was the finding of a teacher with sympathetic conceptions of education, possessing at the same time the character, energy, and personality to be an inspiring comrade and leader for normal boys, the searchers for something new in schooling set out in a characteristic way to find him. Being engineers and producers, they drew up, through Mr. Morgan, what they facetiously called plans and specifications for the type of man they desired. They proceeded deliberately. Just as they had taken five years to plan their huge work of flood-prevention before they put a shovel in the ground, so they took two years to find the man who would fit their plans and specifications. The whole of the United States was combed over, and more than two thousand men offered themselves for consideration in response to the circular setting forth the requirements and the conceptions of what the proposed school should be.

Lest it be inferred that these busy men of large affairs were seeking merely to establish a sort of exceptio
ness or technical school and we
ing not at all of cultural value
sentences from this remarkable
must be quoted, with regret
whole of it cannot be reprinte

Among the acquirements whic
the embarrassments and ineffici
everyday material life are an exp
knowledge of commercial habits,
methods; of the art of being solve
praising accurately one's possessi
of making correct measurements
ment of material values. . . . The
of common-school subjects can
woven with all these interests.
such methods proficiency in eleme
high-school subjects, as well as
training, to some extent, may be
coincidentally with a knowledge of
contacts of everyday life, whethe
industrial, domestic, scientific, or
. . . Any education is vitally at fa
does not develop a habit of enjo
the finer resources of life. The co
ship of the teacher should result i
eyes and minds to the phenomena
science — to life-processes and
plants and animals; to the data of
of physics and of astronomy; an
appeal of good literature, poetry,
and the various forms of art. . .
tion is not complete if its aim is so t
the attention of men and women,
industrial, professional, or social
they will not have time to ask th
the question, 'What is it all abo
have asked this question and to ha
ed a satisfactory attitude, which i
of harmony with present-day kn
is necessary to a teacher who is wis
rect the minds of boys. And unless
clusion he has reached results in h
and imparting an enthusiastic fai
worth-whileness of a full develo
the physical, mental, and moral
and in his being committed to con
tellectual and spiritual freedom,
be out of place with us. As a co
this attitude, we would expect that
trolling necessity of life would be
tual and moral integrity, with co
sive unity of purpose. . . .

Digitized by Google

Bearing in mind always the need for maintaining progress approximately equal to that of our graded schools, the aims should be, not first of all to impart knowledge, but to open the boys' eyes and minds; to arouse interest, aspiration, and determination; to develop accuracy of observation and of judgment. We should aim at vital orderliness, not dead conformity; at self-reliance, self-discipline, self-control; providing enough routine to develop patience, power of adjustment, and habits of social team-work.

The circular lays stress on the teaching of manners born of 'considerateness and good-will'; on the encouragement of independence, 'so that a boy will stand on his own resources'; on the conservation of 'the spirit of daring and adventure so nearly universal in youth, commonly thwarted at every turn in a boy's life'; and adds: 'A man whose personality and temperament do not answer to this spirit in the boy would be out of place with us.'

While the Dayton seekers after an ideal education were advertising, corresponding, and traveling in search of their Moses, a group of educators in Colorado, meeting in 'shop' conference every six weeks, had progressed far in thinking out, from the standpoint of the professional teacher, a programme of education that the Dayton men were groping for from the standpoint of the layman familiar with the shortcomings of educational systems as measured in terms of actual life. They, too, had evolved the idea of the 'occupations' of life, the mastery of which would constitute education. One of them was Frank D. Slutz, then superintendent of the public schools of Pueblo. When the Colorado teachers heard of the Dayton quest for a new school and a teacher, they recommended Mr. Slutz and freely gave him the right to use their joint-thought product. He was elected, and, with the help of other teachers and the pupils, 'the particular adaptation of this general theory to the actual practice of the schoolroom' has been evolved.

After three years of such practice, Mr. Slutz and the Dayton citizens who support the school are more enamored than ever of their venture. They regard it as a return in conscious form to the unconscious schooling of an earlier American day, when the farm-boy 'had but three months of schooling in the year, which left nine months for him to get an education.' Now that the three months of schooling have grown to nine, they seek to make them, as well as the other three, months in which to get an education.

'One way of looking at our school,' says Mr. Slutz, 'is to consider it as a return to Americanism. We had abundant education in this country of a very good quality, if of narrow field, when the average boy got two or three months of usually distasteful "book larnin'," and put in the rest of the year getting his education in the barn, the shed, and the field. With the taking on of an elaborate system of public schools that largely copied their methods from the Germans or the classic English public school, and with the extension of the scholastic year to include three fourths of the calendar year, we crowded out the American sort of education, which, as Mr. Morgan says, is as old as life. American schools should make Americans. To make Americans, you must inculcate and strengthen American traits. That, our schools are not doing. Initiative is a prime American trait, but our schools teach conformity. We are an ambitious people, but our schools put a premium on average performance. We are a sports-loving, athletic people, but our schools tend to delegate athletics to specialists. The American is many-sided, but our educational system aggrandizes only one side of the mastery of living. Business shrewdness is another distinctive American trait, but

Digitized by Google

our education does not give us business power. We believe in democracy and self-government, and our schools are autocracies. We are a religious people, and our schools are unreligious, repressing the spiritual element in education through fear of offending sectarian prejudices. At Moraine Park trying to teach Americanism b oping the American type — English, French, German, o other type. You can't develop ing dog by giving it the trainin to a poodle.'

THE FEELING OF IRRITATION

BY FRANCES LESTER WARNER

THE feeling of irritation in its earliest form once overtook a little girl whose mother had enforced a wholesome bit of discipline. In a great state of wrath, the little girl went to her room, got out a large sheet of paper, and ruled it heavily down the middle. Then she headed one column 'People I Like,' and crowded that half of the sheet with the names of all her acquaintance far and near. The other half of the page she headed 'People I Don't Like,' and in that column listed one word only — 'Mamma.' This done, she locked the grim document in her safe-deposit box, and hid the key.

That glowering deed was the very ritual of irritation. The feeling of irritation is not merely one of heat: it is a tall wave of towering dislike that goes mounting up our blood. When we have it, it feels permanent. Our friend is not what we thought he was — our family is not what it should be — our job is a failure — we have placed our affections in the wrong quarter. When young politicians give way to this feeling, they bolt the ticket; when young employees have it, they resign. The first time that young married people have it, they think that love is dead. If th too much wealth and leisure, apart and eventually get a decr in households where the budg not cover alimony, they co stay together and see for the how the wave of wrath goes The material inconveniences nations, abscondings, law-suits, like, have been a great safeg many a career. Nothing in plays is more subtle than the moment when the young coupl to postpone separation until t dry comes home.

It is not necessary to be a 't mental' person, or a fire-eater sort, in order to know how it fe irritated — and irritating. The folk are capable of both sen Anyone who has seen a lovely liberately stir up strife in the b a genial story-teller, by correc facts for him and exposing his will remember the tones of re choler with which the merry t gressed. Who has not remark kind relative, 'Well, if you k much about it, why don't yo yourself?'

Digitized by Google

or proportion at all
f irritation and the
d. In our moments
the faculty of dis-
rdly ever refer our
trivial detail that
el that the detail is
of the great gen-
ole situation. We
ck, not only with
use the words of
h everything that
otentate.
pose that we are
a fellow member
ommittee. He op-
t we endorse. We
o his class: he is a
single-track mind,
ugwump and Boss
nts the backward-
e ourselves, mean-
Martin Luther and
ith tongs from the

s irritated with a
ing staff, after the
y. Irrelevant mat-
all the morning in
an itinerant jan-
an inkwell turning
shed to flood-suf-
n, with tall step-
ons, to repair the
rill in examination
revolutions of the
e too many patri-
g the care of pub-
candy-box.
us academic friend
ommittee meeting
lts of intelligence-
mood for intelli-
ject. He persists.
He still calls the
rears the wave of
not at the details
us to our crusty
of ink and elec-

tricity and patriotism and intelligence, — but dislike of our friend and of the Art of Teaching that he represents. The trouble with our friend, we decide, is his academic environment. He is over-educated, attenuated, a Brahmin. Nobody in touch with Real Life could be so thoroughly a mule and an opinionist. Better get out of this ultra-civilized atmosphere before our own beautiful catholicity of thought is crippled, cramped, like his. At these moments we do not stop to remember that people are also opinionated on the island of Yap.

Most frequently of all, we apply our dudgeon to the kind of community in which we live. We are nettled at a bit of criticism that has reached our ears. Instantly we say cutting things about the narrow ways of a small community, with page-references to *Main Street* and the Five Towns. We forget that our friends in great cities might be quite as chatty. Margot Asquith lives and thrives in crowds.

We refer our irritation, also, to types. Any skirmish in a women's organization is referred to women and their catty ways. Any Church or Red Cross breeze is an example of the captious temper of the godly. All friction between soldiers of different nations is a sign of Race Antagonism; the French are not what we had inferred from Lafayette.

In short, the whole history and literature of dissension show that people have always tried to make their irritations prove something about certain types, or situations, or races, or communities. Whereas the one thing that has been eternally proved is the fact that human beings are irritable.

If we accept that fact as a normal thing, we find ourselves ready for one more great truth. Violent irritation produced on small means is a deeply human thing, a delicately unbalanced

Digitized by Google

thing, something to reckon with, and something from which we eventually recover on certain ancient and well-recognized lines. When our fury is at its height, we are ready to smash anything, throw away anything, burn all bridges. Nothing is too valuable to cast into the tall flame of our everlasting bonfire. This sounds exaggerated. 'Emotion recollected in tranquillity' is a pallid thing. But it is hot enough at the time. The whole round of sensation and emotion may be traveled in an hour, at a pace incredible — a sort of round-trip survey of the soul.

The father of a large family sat in church at one end of a long pew. His wife sat at the other end of the pew, with a row of sons, daughters, and guests ranged in the space between. Near the close of the sermon one morning, the father glanced down the line, gazed for a horrified moment at his eldest daughter Kate, got out his pencil, wrote a few words on a scrap of paper, put the paper into his hat, and passed the hat down the line. As the hat went from hand to hand, each member of the family peered in, read the message, glanced at Kate, and began to shake as inconspicuously as is ever possible in an open pew. Kate, absorbed in the sermon, was startled by a nudge from her brother, who offered her the hat, with note enclosed. She looked in and read, 'Tell Kate that her mouth is partly open.'

Kate remembered that it must have been. The whole pew was quivering with seven concentrated efforts at self-control.

Now, one would think that a moment like this would be jolly even for the cause of laughter in others. But it was not. Kate knew that they had been laughing before the note reached her, and she was hurt. If they loved her as she loved them, they would not want to laugh. She set her jaw like iron and gazed straight ahead. This s
them all off again. With the insti
a well-trained elder sister, she
that, if she wanted any peace, she
to turn and smile and nod cordia
down the row, as at a reception.
was too late for that. She had
the proud line, and she would fol
to the end.

As her expression grew more au
the boys grew more convulsed.
now, cut off from her kin entirel
sat seething. Floods of scarlet
drowned the sermon's end. The c
hymn was given out, but she de
the offered half of her brother's
nal. 'Tell Kate she can open it
telegraphed one of the boys as th
gregation began to sing. Here w
chance to join the group and no
smile again, but she was too far
She received the message with
eyebrows, and stood with cold
profile averted until after the be
tion. Then she turned away and w
off in a towering passion. Her
was not at her father, whose note c
the stir. She had no resentment t
him at all. If one's mouth is ope
would wish to be advised of the
Her feeling was the mighty wrath
person who has been laughed at
being told the joke.

When she reached home, the
family gathered around her in a g
'I think,' said one of the boys, 't
the cause of friendship we owe Ka
apology.'

The grand manner of formal ap
from one's relatives is the most di
ing thing in the world. Friendly
versation flowed back into the n
at once. But it was years before i
quite safe for Kate to rest her ch
her hand in church.

Very often our most genuine i
tions appear unreasonable to
friends. For instance, why should
ple object to being called by

Digitized by Google

n suffer from people tend to them by each usly. We may y, and yet not ith him. Even careless. The family had a bsentmindedly f all the child- hit upon the , the smallest to the names e, and Amos. pened to him orning he ap- a large square is bosom; and e letters was y.' Rather go round his neck more.

vith the adage e a quarrel. If age, the other acifist and still make the hot- eights of mad- whom we are way to himself se is the person ia after we are e of such peo- llege girl who er room-mate, upon the in- , rushed out of tairs, to relieve the front door. door with vio- le, and flung it ght. But there e kind of door -valve, and it uilly, like vel- door. People hum softly to e are like that

Knowing that human beings are irritable, that they can recover from their irritation, and that we also can recover from ours, why is it that we ever hold resentment long? Some people, like soapstones, hold their heat longer than others; but the mildest of us, even after we have quite cooled off, sometimes find ourselves warming up intermittently at the mere memory of the fray. We are like the old lady who said that she could forgive and forget, but she could n't help thinking about it. We love our friend as much as ever, but one or two things that he said to us stay in mind. This is because words spoken in the height of irritation are easily memorized. They have an epigrammatic swing, a vivacity, and a racy Anglo-Saxon flavor. Unless we are ready to discount them entirely, they come into our minds in our pleasantest moods, checking our impulses of affection, and stiffening our cordial ways.

On this account, the very proud and the very young sometimes let a passing rancor estrange a friend. When we are young, and fresh from much novel-reading, we are likely to think of love as a frail and perishable treasure — something like a rare vase, delicate and perfect as it stands. One crash destroys it forever. But love that involves the years is not a frail and finished crystal. It is a growing thing. It is not even a simple growing thing, like a tree. A really durable friendship is a varied, homelike country full of growing things. We cannot destroy it and throw it away. We can even have a crackling bonfire there without burning up the world. Fire is dangerous, but it is not final.

Of course, it is in our power to let a single conflagration spoil all our love, if we burn the field all over and sow it with salt, and refuse to go near it ever again. But after the fires have gone down on the waste tract, then the stars

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

wheel over and the quiet moon comes out — and forever afterward we have to skirt hastily around that territory in our thought. It is still there, the place that once was home.

Perhaps it is trifling and perverse to be harking back to nature and to childhood for parables. But sometimes there is reassurance in the simplest things. The real war-god in one family was a small boy named Gordon. Whenever his younger sister wanted a little peace, she used to take her dolls to the attic, saying to her mother as she went, 'K. G.' This meant, 'Keep Gordon.' But one time the sister was very ill. Gordon was afraid that she was going to die, and showered her with attentions of every kind. He even gathered flowers for her every day. The trained nurse was much impressed. One afternoon, when the crisis was past, the nurse told Gordon that she thought that he was very sweet indeed to his little sick sister. Gordon was squatting on the arm of the sofa, watching his sister with speculative eye. He considered this new light upon his character for a moment, and then remarked, 'Well, you just wait till she gets her strength.'

We live in cantankerous days. Anybody who has energy enough to try to do anything particular in the more or less difficulty in g with people. Unless he choos his dolls to the attic, he is in sional criticism, laughter, inte and even the experience of be by names that are not his world sends flowers to the not to people when they strength. It is the very rare p goes through a busy life wit to ruffle him at all.

In moments of irritation a we are tempted to rule off into two columns, and in th to compile two lists of peop who agree with us and peop not; 'People I Like,' and Don't Like.' This, as we hav fore, is the simple ritual of Unconsciously we make the file them away. If we could on the ghostly files of twenty scan the blacklists through, find that we had, not a cat permanent and bitter hatred, of Friendship Calendar. Pe should not find our mother cently among the blackballe chances are that, if our rela friends could see the lists, th read with no small amazeme of the fine old names that written there.

Digitized by Google

ASSIMILATION OF ISRAEL

BY PAUL SCOTT MOWRER

o King Ahasuerus, scattered abroad and e in all the provinces laws are diverse from ey the king's law.—

nti-Semitism in e of the war, and ion even in the enomena that can The Jews, we are rganization, with nd, whose aim is orld-domination. nds, they plan, on ermine society by ons with revolu- ious propaganda, ush it from above f the great bank- tem on which the sent-day civiliza- oses. Taking ad- mic and political ve years of war, t is asserted, en- s ambitious pro- deed, they have for a century or of this alarming ut that there are he leading finan- ; that there are ing international finally, that all to solidarity. ious fantasy will Jewish agitation o the Jewish cap-

italist as to the Gentile; the Jewish employer is no less a burden of authority upon Jewish workmen than upon Christians; and from a vague feeling of solidarity to the contrivance of a vast and definite conspiracy is a far cry. Moreover, it is just at the two extremes of wealth and poverty that the racial apostasy of the emancipated Jew is most common.

But the fact that his theories fall to pieces under scrutiny is of no consequence to the true anti-Semite.

In Germany, the anti-Jewish agitation is so vigorous that the Inter-Allied High Commission in the Rhineland recently felt obliged to order the troops of occupation to seize all copies discovered of a book called *From the Reign of the Hohenzollerns to the Reign of the Jews.*

In England, a writer in the sober *Blackwood's* protests that, if the Jews were to be given no part, either open or surreptitious, in the imperial government, the danger of revolution would be greatly diminished. Saint-Loe Strachey, writing in the *Spectator*, accuses the English Jews of being Jews first and English afterward. 'Of all the governments which have accepted the power in Great Britain,' declared Sir Lionel Rothschild, in a recent speech, 'none has shown so much sympathy for the projects and ideals of the Jews as the present government.' And the declaration is taken by Lloyd George's enemies to mean that Lloyd George is 'pro-Jewish.' Has he not appointed Sir Herbert Samuel to rule over Pales-

Digitized by Google

tine? Did he not send Sir Stuart Samuel to 'investigate' the alleged pogroms in Poland? Is not Sir Eric Drummond, General Secretary of the League of Nations, Hebraic by origin? Are not Lord Reading and Lord Montagu, respectively Viceroy of India and Secretary of State for India, both of Jewish descent? And when it comes to that, was it not Mayer Amschel, under the better known name of Rothschild, who 'founded the dynasty of the secret emperors of Israel'? The Poles, it appears, are so afraid of the power of the English Jews, that they have actually appointed a Polish Jew, Professor Szimon Askenazy, as Ambassador to the Court of St. James's. And in their effort to prove that even the British labor movement is under Jewish control, the British anti-Semites, nothing daunted, assert that Smillie is merely a tool of the Jew, Emanuel Shinwell, who promoted the strikes in the Clyde shipyards during the war; that Thomas is a catspaw of the Jew, Abraham; that Williams is actually married to a Jewess, and that all three are closely associated with the 'Lansbury-Fels-Zangwill group.'

In France, the old anti-Dreyfusards of the *Action Française* have lately redoubled their 'exposures' of the 'Jewish peril.' 'Throughout Europe,' writes Charles Maurras, 'the Jew is the traveling-man of the revolution.' Yiddish is 'the Esperanto of revolutionists.' All Jews, we are assured, are anti-French and pro-German; they are Freemasons, and enemies of Roman Catholicism. Are not ninety-five per cent of the Soviet chieftains Jews? Is not Viennese Socialism Jewish and pro-German? Are not the Jews in Upper Silesia working exclusively for Germany? It was a telegram from the Jewish financiers of America, dated May 29, 1919, and signed by that 'high priest of Israel,' Jacob Schiff (born at Frankfort), which steeled Wilson to force concessions from France on five vital points, — the Saar Basin, Upper Silesia, Dantzig, Fiume, and reparations, — or, at least, so Maurras writes. This same Schiff, points out Roger Lambelin, founded the New York Jewish Theological Seminary, and the Semitic Museum at Harvard; and while he, in the interests of Kuhn, Loeb & Co., fostered pro-German sentiment during the war, his partner Otto Kahn (born at Mannheim) fostered pro-Ally sentiment; thus an iron was kept hot in both fires. As for 'the pro-Jew, Woodrow Wilson,' pursues Lambelin, instead of flaying the massacres instigated by Bela Kun, the threatened Russian invasion of Poland, and the eviction of innocent Moslems in Palestine, he contented himself, at the time of the Peace Conference, with writing a letter of sympathy for the Eastern European Jews to Rabbi Stephen Wise.

In Eastern Europe, the sentiment of anti-Semitism is not, as in Western Europe, confined chiefly to conservatives and chauvinists, but impregnates even the masses. The Magyar peasants are bitter against the town-dwelling 'communist' Jews; and in spite of all the Budapest police can do, bands of infuriated Magyars make a grim pastime of beating an occasional son of Israel whom they catch in the street after nightfall. In Poland, the Ukraine, and, to a less extent, in Roumania, the mediæval legend of the ritual murder, for which the Jews are supposed to take the blood of a Christian babe at each Passover, has been revived; and all Eastern European Jews are suspected, by their Christian neighbors, of Communism. The Ukrainian Nationalist bands have apparently been guilty of serious and repeated pogroms. The Poles are unanimous in their ardent and patriotic hostility to the four or five million Jews included within their frontiers. All Jews, they firmly believe, are

Digitized by Google

the Polish army,
-Bolshevist atro-
as shown a photo-
by the Poles, of a
r of which lay the
l bodies of some
ıd been executed,
Red troops, after
been perpetrated,
s, 'by a fanatical
es'!

of fantasy, stray
ı to indicate that
ıdeed, once more
ment of opinion,
mbing at the scoff
king converts al-
ınds from the stu-
nena that careful
can discover both
e.

. There is really a
it is as old as the
s. Anti-Semitism
e dispersion. It is
es. Wherever the
ng other peoples,
heir own will, and
ter the Christian
. One may there-
th that sincere and
Bernard Lazare,
ch enduring prev-
he result of fancy
caprice,' but that
ound and serious
beginning and its
th is that the anti-
nd Paris is of one
mitism of Antioch
angry alarm of
ds strangely with
Hetman Chmiel-
ard form assumed
t against the Jews
accordance with

differences of time and place, in its one essential cause it remains ever the same.

This cause is neither religious, as is often averred, nor economic, as many believe; it is political. It is based on the observation that the Jews, through innumerable transmutations of time and place, not only have kept their identity as a people, but have opposed a vigorous, if passive, resistance to most attempts at assimilation. The Jew, in short, is regarded as a foreigner, whose 'laws are diverse from all people'; and as such, he is considered to be an enemy to the state.

The underlying reason for Jewish exclusiveness is, perhaps, the law of Moses. The sole object of life, according to the teachings of the rabbis, is the knowledge and the practice of the law, for 'without the law, without Israel to practise it, the world would not be. God would resolve it into chaos. And the world will know happiness only when it submits to the universal empire of the law, that is to say, to the empire of the Jews. In consequence, the Jewish people is the people chosen by God as the depository of his will and his desires.' This strong and narrow spirit, instead of diminishing with the lapse of time, seemed only to increase; until, with the victory of the rabbis over the more liberal Jewish schismatists, in the fourteenth century, the doctors of the synagogue, says Bernard Lazare, 'had reached their end. They had cut off Israel from the community of peoples; they had made of it a being fierce and solitary, rebellious to all law, hostile to all fraternity, closed to all beautiful, noble or generous ideas; they had made of it a nation small and miserable, soured by isolation, stupefied by a narrow education, demoralized and corrupted by an unjustifiable pride.'

It is well to remember that, although the Jews of Western Europe and America have at present pretty well freed

Digitized by Google

themselves from these heavy intellectual and spiritual shackles, the Jews of Eastern Europe still live, for the most part, in strict accordance with the letter of the Thorah and the Talmud.

The law of Moses being not only theological and moral, but agrarian, civil, and hygienic as well, no sooner did the Jews begin to live abroad than it became necessary for them, if they would avoid contamination, to draw together in intimate communities, and to beg from the authorities, in the name of their religion, certain exceptions and privileges, just as they are demanding them to-day, under the rubric of 'minority rights,' in Poland and Roumania. Thus, in Rome they could not be haled into court on a Saturday; in Alexandria they were not subject to the common municipal regulations, but had their own senate, courts, and mayors.

Antiquity was tolerant; but not so the Middle Ages. There came a time when, with the slow dissolution of feudalism, the various peoples of Europe, under the influence of the Roman Catholic Church, began to cohere into nationalities. All over Europe the question of nationality was identified with the question of religion, as it still is in Eastern Europe and the Balkans. If you did not belong to the Church, you were necessarily an enemy of the State. Observing among them a people who dressed, spoke, and behaved differently from themselves, who claimed privileges and exemptions, and desired to live apart, the followers of the Church vindictively decreed that the Jews henceforth should be *obliged* to dress differently and to live apart; and instead of having privileges granted to them, they were placed under a régime of special restrictions. The Ghetto, which the Jews had formed of their own free will, was now imposed on them by force. From the eleventh to the sixteenth century, the Jews, like all heretical sects, were persecuted, tortured, bu
ed, expelled; and in their bitt
drawing together more closely
they gradually forged that
sense of solidarity which is stil
their greatest source of stren

The Protestants of the Ref
after trying vainly to convert
turned angrily against them,
are brutes,' cried Luther, in
'Their synagogues are pig-st
must be burned, for Moses w
if he came back to the wor
drag the divine word in the
live by rapine and evil, they a
beasts who ought to be drive
mad dogs.'

But the religious wars had
begun, and in the heat of th
between Catholic and Prote
Jews, greatly to their good,
nigh forgotten. For them,
was over. In the seventeenth
though a number of onerous re
were put back into effect by th
the return of the Jews within
tian faith, so long desired,
dently, though vainly, expect

The eighteenth century,
quity, was tolerant. In Ho
England, no less than in Tur
the Jews were happy and pr
In 1791, the French Consti
sembly voted full rights of c
to the Jews. It was the first
emancipation, which was now
rapidly in Central as well as in
Europe. Napoleon, at the he
armies, freed the Jews of
Germany. The Jewish cult wa
into the French budget in 1
emancipation was completed
tria, Germany, Sweden, Denm
Greece by the Revolution of
was completed in England in
in Hungary in 1867. The last
European Ghetto was abolishe
with the fall of the Pope's
power.

Digitized by Google

I

Western European
re or less assimila-
undred years, there
who, though eman-
xternal restrictions
not desired, or have
ke off the clannish-
entality, inbred by
enturies of almost
they may not go
en to the reformed
would be repelled
ng outside the race,
special and seem-
enderness for their
no matter what so-
t geographical sub-
ner emancipation,
rom the history and
still to be effected.
rue assimilation so
free intermarriage;
idence of a rapid-
lation, the Jewish
ttendant fervor of
ontinue to occupy

n must be drawn at
ween this question
n Western Europe
es, where the Jews
cipated, and as it
tern Europe, where
ediævally to them-
here is a tendency
prevailing govern-
m in various ways.
newhat blurred by
of Eastern Euro-
pouring annually
; nevertheless, gen-
distinction can be
arguments which
the Jews in the
aborate those ad-
will simplify mat-
onsidered first.

Of the serious arguments of Western anti-Semitism, two are political, and one — the least important, but perhaps the commonest — is economic. Briefly stated, the economic argument is that the Jew is congenitally a non-producer, a parasite, living only in the cities, trading and lending money, swelling the army of profit-devouring middlemen. Historically, this contention cannot be sustained. The tribesmen of Israel were, originally, not traders, but farmers and shepherds. As speculators and traders, they were far surpassed in antiquity, first by the Phœnicians and Carthaginians, and later by the Greeks and Romans. It was only after the dispersion that their mercantile propensities began to develop. The sudden cessation of all their former activities as husbandmen was due in the beginning to their religion, which, on the one hand, forced them to gather in communities so as to be able to escape the contamination of foreign ways and peoples, and, on the other, taught them that they must keep themselves pure for the eventual return to Jerusalem, and that in ploughing any soil save that of Palestine, a Jew would defile himself. All exiled Jews were thus constrained to become city-dwellers, and city-dwellers or town-dwellers they have since remained, until they have indeed, at last, become almost total strangers to the life of the fields.

As city-dwellers, they were naturally forced into commerce, in order to live. At a time when other peoples were less well organized, the Jewish communities established in every considerable town of the Mediterranean countries, and in constant communication and sympathy, provided an unparalleled system of commercial agencies to the Jewish traders, who, in consequence, soon began to prosper greatly. It was only in the Middle Ages that the Jews began to specialize in money-lending and the gold

Digitized by Google

traffic.[1] This, again, was forced upon them rather than of their own seeking; but as in periods of recurrent wars, bad crops, and famine the need for loans and credit was very great, it was generally agreed that the necessary banking business should be turned over to the Jews. Not infrequently, the Jewish money-lender was merely the agent of some Christian merchant or noble, who did not dare lend money in person, for fear of excommunication. At the same time, the growing power of the guilds, each with its patron saint, began, on religious grounds, to force the exclusion of the Jews from most of the principal branches of trade and commerce. The second-hand trade and the banking business were about all that remained. The latter, moreover, was congenial to the Jews; for in that day of persecution and expulsion they were very glad to be able to keep their wealth in a compact, easily hidden, and easily transportable form.

If, therefore, in modern times, the Jews appear to be a people of town-dwellers, practising, at the bottom of the social scale, peddling, petty-retailing, pawnbrokerage, the poorer trades, and, at the top of the scale, banking and corporate commerce, the cause, evidently, is less innate than historic. Even the remarkable success of individual Jews in modern finance can perhaps be attributed less to any special racial fitness than to a business tradition, to a freedom from local prejudice, and to the spirit of coöperation clearly visible between scattered Jewish individuals and communities — a coöperation which other peoples have not as yet been able to attain in anything like the same degree. I myself am inclined to subordinate economic anti-Semitism to political anti-Semitism; for, if the la unsustained, the former, I f would soon cease to exist.

The political argument ag Jews is that they are an 'inte nation,' more attached to th cause, in whatever part of th than to the ideals and interes country in which they live, a which they claim the privilege tection without according i their political allegiance. To th frequently added, as a corolla the Jew is a 'born revolution are here, as I have already indi the very heart of the Jewish q for there is no state, there is n so good-natured and so confid own strength, that it will unpr ly tolerate in its midst a bod tently and willfully foreign, e when this body at the same pires to take a leading part in tional economic or political li the Jews, after their dispersi originally such a tenaciously body, in every community wh settled, is beyond dispute. T remained so, partly of their c partly under compulsion, up time of the emancipation, fi hundred years ago, is equall testable. The point that rem be determined is, to what exte the emancipation, a true assi of the Jews has been effecte United States and in the vario tries of Western Europe. To t I shall have occasion to return ly. Meanwhile, the corollary, Jew is a 'born revolutionist,' is of careful consideration.

Abstractly, there is certainl thing in this assertion — someth found, which reaches to the ver of the ancient Hebraic religious tion. The sturdy monotheism teaching that man shall obey alone, carries by implication

[1] Their first real specialty was that of slave-dealers, in which they were greatly encouraged both by Charlemagne and by the Caliphs. — THE AUTHOR.

Digitized by Google

n authority is un-
e negligible. This
science and reason
d further in Juda-
r religion, for it is
g even on Jehovah
d relates how, in a
ois over a point of
of Jehovah inter-
but no sooner was
ard to pronounce
liezir, than Rabbi
ng: 'It is not mys-
he majority of the
henceforth decide
ie. Reason is no
n heaven, the Law
; it has been given
for human reason
xplain it.'
t in Judaism, is a
erent from the res-
ity and of Moham-
oy and satisfaction
ight of every man
hould be forthcom-
ure existence, but
n after they have
ion completely, a
remarked among
the idea, not only
itled to be happy
that all men are
d that none can be
e to his own mind
oor man, imbued
looking about him
ld, is inevitably ex-
ion of becoming a
an agitator. More
, than this vague
ion for revolution-
act that the Jewish
an twenty centu-
opolitan, bound to
no lasting patriot-
el. It is no more
the emancipation
ge number of them

internationalists, in the literal sense of the word. If it were not for this cosmopolitan character of the people as a whole, the revolutionary proclivities of a few individuals would perhaps have passed almost unnoticed. Once more, we are brought face to face with the conclusion that the Jewish problem is, above all, a problem of assimilation.

The belief that the Jews are involved in a definite conspiracy for world-revolution arose at the time of the French Revolution, simultaneously with the emancipation of the French Jews by the Constituent Assembly. An intimate relation between the Kabbala and Freemasonry had long been suspected; and now the Catholic Royalists were able to remark that not a few Jews seemed to be active members of the various lodges — Masons, Illuminists, Rosicrucians, Martinists — in whose secret conclaves the revolution was supposed to have been planned. The influence of Jewish agitators was again remarked in the uprisings of 1830 and 1848.

But the great reproach that European conservatives hold against the sons of Israel is that Karl Marx and Ferdinand Lassalle, the founders of modern Socialism, were both of Jewish origin. 'This descendant of a line of rabbis and doctors,' writes Lazare, of Marx, 'inherited all the force of logic of his ancestors; he was a clear-headed and lucid Talmudist . . . a Talmudist who went in for sociology, and who applied his native qualities of exegesis to a critique of political economy. He was animated by the old Hebraic materialism, which dreamed perpetually of an earthly paradise . . . he was also a rebel, an agitator, a bitter polemist, and he got his gift of sarcasm and invective from the same Jewish sources as Heine.'

The famous Manifesto of 1847 was drawn up jointly by Marx and Engels. The meeting of 1864, which founded the Internationale, was inspired by Marx;

Digitized by Google

and in the general council, Karl Marx was secretary for Germany and Russia, and James Cohen was secretary for Denmark.

The work of Jewish agitators in the Paris Commune was the subject of much comment. Among the leaders of modern Socialism were not only Marx and Lassalle in Germany, but the Jews Adler and Libermann in Austria, and Dobrojanu Gherea in Roumania; while the rôle of the Russian Jews in the recent Russian Revolution is known to everyone. All these facts have tended to keep alive the old yarn of a Jewish 'world-conspiracy.'

IV

Exact statistics are, of course, unavailable; but there are supposed to be in the world, at the present time, from twelve to fourteen million Jews, of whom about a fourth are in the United States, a fourth scattered in various countries, east, west, north, and south, while the remaining half are concentrated in Eastern Europe, or, more specifically, in Poland, Bessarabia, and the Ukraine. Poland alone is believed to have four or five million Jews, and thus becomes by far the greatest Jewish state of the day. It is precisely in Eastern Europe, moreover, that the Jewish nationality is to be observed in its purest form, for here there is scarcely so much as the beginning of even a political assimilation; though indigenous for centuries, the children of Israel still form a large and entirely distinct foreign minority. The fact that, in Eastern Europe, religion and nationality — as in mediæval times throughout the whole of Europe — are still regarded as practically inseparable, is not a sufficient explanation of this phenomenon. The restrictive measures of the prevailing governments have merely served to accentuate a distinction ardently desired by the Jews themsel devotion to both the civil an aspects of the Jewish Law fervent as it is complete. The is that the typical Polish Je Lithuanian, Bessarabian, an ian Jew, is a being absolutely his Christian neighbors. T should peruse, in this conne remarkably intimate and sy studies of Jewish life recently in Paris by Jean and Jérôme which will unveil to his occi sion a world undreamed of. these vivid distinctions are economic and racial differen have already been described ing the more or less assimila ern European Jews, it is diffic a single remaining trait wh Eastern Jews may be said to the Christian Pole, Lithuan sian, or Roûmanian. Those not seen this community cle themselves can scarcely ima thorough it is, or what profo pathy it instinctively engend

V

So much having been said, explanation of the present anti-Semitism is almost super Russia the majority of Jews, ous reasons, have rallied to t government, thus exciting aga selves the always latent hat anti-Bolshevist parties. The Poland and Roumania, being not altogether without reaso eigners inclining to sympat the enemy (Soviet Russia), jected to all the consequenc similar situation provoked in during the war, between Amer Germans. As for the half-a Jews of Hungary, they earned ing enmity of the peasants administrative caste by flock

Digitized by Google

s to the disas-
a Kun, in the
oslovakia, the
e hatred of the
zechs, because
eing pro-Ger-
i-Slav.
ore prosperous
similated Jews
America, one
feeling against
growth of the
le the feeling
a part of the
against profit-
h cases being
e popular na-
the Jews are
ation.
end, brought
e surmise from
ely, that the
e all, political,
ed to this one
ot, possible to
t is, time, and
ice; if it is not,
continue to be
presence with-
stible foreign
y no solution.
ve gone so far
s being essen-
ilation is nei-
le. From this
. In the first
essentially a
has long since
no such thing
aside the per-
her or not the
selves racially
m the time of
about the six-
s were exceed-
ing, and made
e and the Near
nt white Jews
Cochin-China,

and yellow Jews in China proper, to say nothing of the two great disparate branches of the European Jewish family, — the Sephardic and the Ashkenazic, — the one speaking Spanish, the other Yiddish; the one black-haired, the other predominantly sandy; the one said to be dolichocephalic, the other brachycephalic. And if, on the one hand, the modern Jew is indubitably of conglomerate origin, on the other, he has sown his blood profoundly through other races, notably in Spain, where the conversions of Jews to Christianity were so numerous, that there is now said to be scarcely a family free from the Jewish strain. The assimilation of the Jews by intermarriage has made noticeable progress also in France, England, Germany, America, and even Hungary.

Obviously, therefore the possibility of assimilating at least some of the Jews is beyond challenge. Indeed, there is no reason to suppose that a mixture of the so-called Aryan and Semitic races gives a result which is other than excellent in any respect. If the Jews have not heretofore been absorbed more rapidly, the causes are rather religious, social, and political than racial.

How can it reasonably be said, moreover, that this mixture is not desirable? The Jews are one of the most remarkably gifted peoples of all time. They have, it is true, the defects of their qualities, but in this they are by no means unique. The Jews are, in fact, generally speaking, sober, adaptable, industrious, and intelligent. For centuries cut off from most forms of handicraft and manual labor, they have been exercising their minds in study and trade. Their achievements in art, letters, and particularly in science and philosophy, if not preëminent, are at least notable. Why any nation should scorn to absorb an element so endowed is difficult to understand.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

There is a class of Western Jews, however, who, while approving the theory of assimilation in the abstract, give to the word a meaning quite different from that generally accepted. In the minds of these Jews, it would be a calamity if Israel, by intermarrying with other nationalities, should lose its distinctive character. They assert, therefore, that it is entirely possible for the Jews to remain Jews in every sense of the word, and at the same time become good Germans or Britons, or Frenchmen, or Americans, as the case may be. Roman Catholics, they argue, are forbidden to intermarry with Protestants; why must the Jews be expected to intermarry with peoples of other religions?

But there is in this otherwise fair-seeming comparison a slight misconception. If Israel were merely a religion, then, when a Jew ceased to observe the forms of this religion, he would cease to be a Jew. But Israel is not merely a religion, but a nationality as well. The problem of assimilation is not a religious but a political problem; and to shift it arbitrarily to the religious ground is to distort it from its true relations. If the reply be made that the orthodox Jews are absolutely forbidden to marry outside of Israel, I would rejoin merely that this fails to explain why so many unorthodox Jews also hold in horror the idea of marrying Gentiles.

In the present day of intense nationalism, when the forces of interior cohesion are engaged in a silent and bitter struggle with the forces of international dissolution, the Jews, who by their history have become a cosmopolitan race in everything except their devotion to Israel, must make a choice. They cannot give political allegi
banners, even though this
giance be defended in the
ligion. The official anti-S
some Eastern European
course makes assimilation
but in Western states, whe
enjoy the same privileges
one else, they must expect
return the same undivided

This is particularly true
who is now being asked
her hospitality to thousand
sands of Israelites, whose
from Eastern Europe is be
aged by every possible me
burdened already with Ger
icans whose hearts are in
with Irish-Americans whos
in Ireland, and with num
varieties of half-digested fo
would like to be able to co
on the full allegiance of her
zens, whose record in the
cellent, and to feel that, ho
they may be drawn by a
ment with distant coreligi
hearts, nevertheless, have
nitely surrendered to the l
election, even to the point
imperious religious reasons
of accepting the idea of ma
non-Jewish fellow citizens.

I myself have great faith
alty of the vast majority
Jews. To those few who sin
ple to give to America, or t
Gentile state, their single a
more generous welcome w
less be extended in the por
tine, under the flag of Israel
in the gateways of the war-
ern world.

Digitized by Google

TS OF THE FARMERS' PROBLEMS

BY BERNARD M. BARUCH

I

is in a ferment
n unparalleled
determined, if
l an ominous
l conferences,
litical move-
Such a tur-
our attention.
careful study
not likely that
gedly indepen-
together and
active unions,
and so forth,

ubject conclu-
there is much
nces and mis-
he farmers are
wrongs long
holding that
their ills with
e community.
industry that
material form
f the national
n and is the
out forty-nine
n, it is obvious
of grave con-
farmers make
, but the well-
depends upon

ations, a wise
im at a large
ufficiency and
fell when the

food-supply was too far removed from the belly. Like her, we shall destroy our own agriculture and extend our sources of food distantly and precariously, if we do not see to it that our farmers are well and fairly paid for their services. The farm gives the nation men as well as food. Cities derive their vitality and are forever renewed from the country, but an impoverished countryside exports intelligence and retains unintelligence. Only the lower grades of mentality and character will remain on, or seek, the farm unless agriculture is capable of being pursued with contentment and adequate compensation. Hence, to embitter and impoverish the farmer is to dry up and contaminate the vital sources of the nation.

The war showed convincingly how dependent the nation is on the full productivity of the farms. Despite herculean efforts, agricultural production kept only a few weeks or months ahead of consumption, and that only by increasing the acreage of certain staple crops at the cost of reducing that of others. We ought not to forget that lesson when we ponder on the farmer's problems. They are truly common problems, and there should be no attempt to deal with them as if they were purely the selfish demands of a clear-cut group, antagonistic to the rest of the community. Rather should we consider agriculture in the light of broad national policy, just as we con-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

sider oil, coal, steel, dye-stuffs, and so forth, as sinews of national strength. Our growing population and a higher standard of living demand increasing food-supplies, and more wool, cotton, hides, and the rest. With the disappearance of free or cheap fertile land, additional acreage and increased yields can come only from costly effort. This we need not expect from an impoverished or unhappy rural population.

It will not do to take a narrow view of the rural discontent, or to appraise it from the standpoint of yesterday. This is peculiarly an age of flux and change and new deals. Because a thing always has been so no longer means that it is righteous, or always shall be so. More, perhaps, than ever before, there is a widespread feeling that all human relations can be improved by taking thought, and that it is not becoming for the reasoning animal to leave his destiny largely to chance and natural incidence.

Prudent and orderly adjustment of production and distribution in accordance with consumption is recognized as wise management in every business but that of farming. Yet, I venture to say, there is no other industry in which it is so important to the public — to the city-dweller — that production should be sure, steady, and increasing, and that distribution should be in proportion to the need. The unorganized farmers naturally act blindly and impulsively and, in consequence, surfeit and dearth, accompanied by disconcerting price-variations, harass the consumer. One year potatoes rot in the fields because of excess production, and there is a scarcity of the things that have been displaced to make way for the expansion of the potato acreage; next year the punished farmers mass their fields on some other crop, and potatoes enter the class of luxuries; and so on.

Agriculture is the greates mentally the most impor American industries. The c the branches of the tree of r the roots of which go deep land. We all flourish or c the farmer. So, when we c read of the present unive of the farmers, of a slump lion dollars in the farm-va crops in a single year, of ity to meet mortgages or rent bills, and how, seeking their ills, they are planni pools, inaugurate farmers' demand legislation abolishi changes, private cattle mark like, we ought not hastil them as economic heretics waymen, and hurl at them of being seekers of specia Rather, we should ask if t is not ours, and see what c to improve the situation. self-interest, if for no higher should help them. All of us back permanently to 'norm it reasonable to hope for th unless our greatest and industry can be put on a solid permanent foundation ers are not entitled to sp leges; but are they not right ing that they be placed c footing with the buyers of th and with other industries?

II

Let us, then, consider s farmer's grievances, and s they are real. In doing so remember that, while there and still are, instances of abuse, the subject should proached with any general to existing distributive age liberately intentional opp rather with the conceptio

Digitized by Google

roducts has not

a persistent one,
f farm products,
what the farmers
is resold as of a
ort of chicanery
mportant scale in
integrity would
le, but there is
does so persist.
newspapers an-
of several firms
roduce Exchange
many as No. 2
ad of grossly in-
h oats, chaff, and

at of inaccurate
ucts, which, it is
a matter of dis-
ometimes of pro-
part of the local
he may 'weigh
eighs in.'
is that at present
ttle or no control
litions of market-
the result that
for his products
ed for marketing
ce between what
nd what the con-
eds all possibility
e a single illustra-
ding to figures at-
and the growers,
aisers received on
for a melon, the
ts for carrying it
e consumer paid
9.8 cents for the
and its risks, as
or growing and
d annals of farm-
ch commentaries
resent practices.
that the farmer's
ed within two or

three months of the year, while financial and storage limitations generally compel him to sell them at the same time. As a rule, other industries are in a continuous process of finishing goods for the markets; they distribute as they produce, and they can curtail production without too great injury to themselves or the community; but if the farmer restricts his output, it is with disastrous consequences, both to himself and to the community.

The average farmer is busy with production for the major part of the year, and has nothing to sell. The bulk of his output comes on at the market at once. Because of lack of storage facilities and of financial support, the farmer cannot carry his goods through the year and dispose of them as they are currently needed. In the great majority of cases, farmers have to entrust storage — in warehouses and elevators—and the financial carrying of their products to others.

Farm products are generally marketed at a time when there is a congestion of both transportation and finance — when cars and money are scarce. The outcome, in many instances, is that the farmers not only sell under pressure, and therefore at a disadvantage, but are compelled to take further reductions in net returns, in order to meet the charges for the services of storing, transporting, financing, and ultimate marketing — which charges, they claim, are often excessive, bear heavily on both consumer and producer, and are under the control of those performing the services. It is true that they are relieved of the risks of a changing market by selling at once; but they are quite willing to take the unfavorable chance, if the favorable one also is theirs and they can retain for themselves a part of the service charges that are uniform, in good years and bad, with high prices and low.

While, in the main, the farmer must

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

sell, regardless of market conditions, at the time of the maturity of crops, he cannot suspend production *in toto*. He must go on producing if he is to go on living, and if the world is to exist. The most he can do is to curtail production a little, or alter its form, and that — because he is in the dark as to the probable demand for his goods — may be only to jump from the frying-pan into the fire, taking the consumer with him.

Even the dairy farmers, whose output is not seasonal, complain that they find themselves at a disadvantage in the marketing of their productions, especially raw milk, because of the high costs of distribution, which they must ultimately bear.

III

Now that the farmers are stirring, thinking, and uniting as never before to eradicate these inequalities, they are subjected to stern economic lectures, and are met with the accusation that they are demanding, and are the recipients of, special privileges. Let us see what privileges the government has conferred on the farmers. Much has been made of Section 6 of the Clayton Anti-Trust Act, which purported to permit them to combine with immunity, under certain conditions. Admitting that, nominally, this exemption was in the nature of a special privilege, — though I think it was so in appearance rather than in fact, — we find that the courts have nullified it by judicial interpretation. Why should not the farmers be permitted to accomplish by coöperative methods what other businesses are already doing by coöperation in the form of incorporation? If it be proper for men to form, by fusion of existing corporations or otherwise, a corporation that controls the entire production of a commodity, or a large part of it, why is it not proper for a group of farmers to unite for the m
their common products, eith
in several selling agencies? V
it be right for a hundred th
porate shareholders to dire
or 40 per cent of an ind
wrong for a hundred thousa
tive farmers to control a no
portion of the wheat crop, o
any other product?

The Department of Ag
often spoken of as a special
to the farmers, but in its
results, it is of as much be
buyers and consumers of
products as to the produce
more. I do not suppose t
opposes the benefits that the
rive from the educational a
work of the Department, or t
it gives them in working ou
cultural methods and practic
oping better-yielding variet
breeding and selection, in
new varieties from remote
world and adapting them to
and economic condition, and
practical measures for the
or control of dangerous and
animal and plant diseases, i
and the like. All these things
tend to stimulate and enla
tion, and their general bene
are obvious.

It is complained that, v
law restricts Federal Reser
three months' time for
paper, the farmer is allowed
on his notes. This is not a s
ilege, but merely such a re
business conditions as make
for country banks to do bu
country people. The crop-
only one turn-over a year
merchant and manufacturer
Incidentally, I note that t
Reserve Board has just aut
Federal Reserve banks to c
port paper for a period of

Digitized by Google

of the business. are pointed to al government hey not rather fforts to equal- nditions? And t does there is strative organ- credit at the rmers will pro- carry all the t is true that x-exempt; but ipal light and housing is to tion, in New

e farmer reads using projects s, of hundreds nt on the mer- at the railways ncreased rates f earnings by e result to him ll that he sells hears of many nmental con- ries and inter- ays from insol- the benefit of ut what can be an encourage- n of the prin- nd their even lucers to satis-

ed that special e necessary in must all agree hy agriculture listribution of accorded the are provided ecially as the of such oppor- be even more ral good than dustries. The

spirit of American democracy is unalterably opposed, alike to enacted special privilege and to the *special privilege of unequal opportunity that arises automatically from the failure to correct glaring economic inequalities.* I am opposed to the injection of government into business, but I do believe that it is an essential function of democratic government to equalize opportunity so far as it is within its power to do so, whether by the repeal of archaic statutes or the enactment of modern ones. If the antitrust laws keep the farmers from endeavoring scientifically to integrate their industry, while other industries find a way to meet modern conditions without violating such statutes, then it would seem reasonable to find a way for the farmers to meet them under the same conditions. The law should operate equally in fact. Repairing the economic structure on one side is no injustice to the other side, which is in good repair.

We have traveled a long way from the old conception of government as merely a defensive and policing agency; and regulative, corrective, or equalizing legislation, which apparently is of a special nature, is often of the most general beneficial consequences. Even the First Congress passed a tariff act that was avowedly for the protection of manufactures; but a protective tariff always has been defended as a means of promoting the general good through a particular approach; and the statute books are filled with acts for the benefit of shipping, commerce, and labor.

IV

Now, what is the farmer asking? Without trying to catalogue the remedial measures that have been suggested in his behalf, the principal proposals that bear directly on the improvement of his distributing and marketing relations may be summarized as follows: —

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

First: storage warehouses for cotton, wool, and tobacco, and elevators for grain, of sufficient capacity to meet the maximum demand on them at the peak of the marketing period. The farmer thinks that either private capital must furnish these facilities, or the state must erect and own the elevators and warehouses.

Second: weighing and grading of agricultural products, and certification thereof, to be done by impartial and disinterested public inspectors (this is already accomplished to some extent by the federal licensing of weighers and graders), to eliminate underpaying, overcharging, and unfair grading, and to facilitate the utilization of the stored products as the basis of credit.

Third: a certainty of credit sufficient to enable the marketing of products in an orderly manner.

Fourth: the Department of Agriculture should collect, tabulate, summarize, and regularly and frequently publish and distribute to the farmers, full information from all the markets of the world, so that they shall be as well informed of their selling position as buyers now are of their buying position.

Fifth: freedom to integrate the business of agriculture by means of consolidated selling agencies, coördinating and coöperating in such way as to put the farmer on an equal footing with the large buyers of his products and with commercial relations in other industries.

When a business requires specialized talent, it has to buy it. So will the farmers; and perhaps the best way for them to get it would be to utilize some of the present machinery of the largest established agencies dealing in farm products. Of course, if he wishes, the farmer may go further and engage in flour-milling and other manufactures of food products. In my opinion, however, he would be wise to stop short of that. Public interest may be opposed to all great integrations; but, in justice, should they be forbidden to the farmer and permitted to others? The corporate form of association cannot now be wholly adapted to his objects and conditions. The looser coöperative form seems more generally suitable. Therefore, he wishes to be free, if he finds it desirable and feasible, to resort to cooperation with his fellows and neighbors, without running afoul of the law. To urge that the farmers should have the same liberty to consolidate and coordinate their peculiar economic functions, which other industries in their fields enjoy, is not, however, to concede that any business integration should have legislative sanction to exercise monopolistic power. The American people are as firmly opposed to industrial as to political autocracy, whether attempted by rural or by urban industry.

For lack of united effort the farmers, as a whole, are still marketing their crops by antiquated methods, or by no methods at all; but they are surrounded by a business world that has been modernized to the last minute and is tirelessly striving for efficiency. This efficiency is due in large measure to big business, to united business, to integrated business. The farmers now seek the benefits of such largeness, union, and integration.

The American farmer is a modern of the moderns in the use of labor-saving machinery, and he has made vast strides in recent years in scientific tillage and efficient farm management; but as a business in contact with other businesses, agriculture is a 'one-horse shay' in competition with high-power automobiles. The American farmer is the greatest and most intractable of individualists. While industrial production and all phases of the huge commercial mechanism and its myriad accessories have articulated and coördinated themselves, all the way from natural raw

Digitized by Google

the business of
n in much the
backwoods of
teenth century,
f-sufficient and
or care very
orld was doing.
ricultural group
lisadvantage in
omic groups as
ny pages in the
onfidence men,
Central Park
ll! The leaders
nly understand
lligently striv-
lustry so that it
ing with other

tegration, take
hich the model
el Corporation,
coal mines, its
tion, its ocean
coke ovens, its
en hearth and
olling mills, its
manufacturing
d to the highest
uction compati-
it has built up.
ceded to be to
onsumer. Nor
ion inconsider-
on the market.
acts that it is
influence, as is
er large organi-
its distribution
tion. If prices
e products are
n is reduced or
npelled to send
rket at one time
get under such
e selling policy,
tment. Neither
ties of steel de-
e of the buyer;

nor does the latter hold the scales. In this single integration of the Steel Corporation is represented about 40 per cent of the steel production of America. The rest is mostly in the hands of a few large companies. In ordinary times the Steel Corporation, by example, stabilizes all steel prices. If this is permissible (it is even desirable, because stable and fair prices are essential to solid and continued prosperity), why would it be wrong for the farmers to utilize central agencies that would have similar effects on agricultural products? Something like that is what they are aiming at.

Some farmers, favored by regional compactness and contiguity, such as the citrus-fruit-raisers of California, already have found a way legally to merge and sell their products integrally and in accordance with seasonal and local demand, thus improving their position and rendering the consumer a reliable service of ensured quality, certain supply, and reasonable and relatively steady prices. They have not found it necessary to resort to any special privilege, or to claim any exemption under the anti-trust legislation of the state or nation. Without removing local control, they have built up a very efficient marketing agency. The grain, cotton, and tobacco farmers, and the producers of hides and wool, because of their numbers and the vastness of their regions, and for other reasons, have found integration a more difficult task; though there are now some thousands of farmer's coöperative elevators, warehouses, creameries, and other enterprises of one sort and another, with a turn-over of a billion dollars a year. They are giving the farmers business experience and training, and, so far as they go, they meet the need of honest weighing and fair grading; but they do not meet the requirements of rationally adjusted marketing in any large and fundamental way.

Digitized by Google

The next step, which will be a pattern for other groups, is now being prepared by the grain-raisers through the establishment of sales media which shall handle grain separately or collectively, as the individual farmer may elect. It is this step — the plan of the Committee of Seventeen — which has created so much opposition and is thought by some to be in conflict with the anti-trust laws. Though there is now before Congress a measure designed to clear up doubt on this point, the grain-producers are not relying on any immunity from anti-trust legislation. They desire, and they are entitled, to coördinate their efforts just as effectively as the large business interests of the country have done. In connection with the selling organizations, the United States Grain Growers Incorporated is drafting a scheme of financing instrumentalities and auxiliary agencies which are indispensable to the successful utilization of modern business methods.

It is essential that the farmers should proceed gradually with these plans, and aim to avoid the error of scrapping the existing marketing machinery, which has been so laboriously built up by long experience, before they have a tried and proved substitute or supplementary mechanism. They must be careful not to become enmeshed in their own reforms and lose the perspective of their place in the national system. They must guard against fanatical devotion to new doctrines, and should seek articulation with the general economic system rather than its reckless destruction as it relates to them.

V

To take a tolerant and sympathetic view of the farmers' strivings for better things is not to give a blanket indorsement to any specific plan, and still less to applaud the vagaries of some of their leaders and gr
should we, on the other
froth of bitter agitatio
ics, and mistaken radic
the facts of the farmers
and the practicability
them by well-considere
may be that the farme
the business sagacity a
wise leadership to carry
plans; but that possibili
tify the obstruction of t
forts. We, as city peo
and speculatively man
spoilage, waste, scarcit
defective distribution o
Should it not occur to u
common interest with t
attempts to attain a deg
in distribution corresp
efficiency in productio
recent fluctuations in t
option, apparently unre
interaction of supply an
a timely proof of the ne
stabilizing agency as th
have in contemplation?

It is contended that, i
organizations be perfe
ated, the farmers will
hands an instrument t
pable of dangerous abu
that it will be possible
arbitrary and oppress
from its legitimate use
stabilizing the flow of fa
the market, to the mu
producer and consumer
prehensions on this poi

In the first place, a
tion, such as any union
be at best, cannot be so
promptly controlled as
tion. The one is a lumbe
and the other an agile
the second place, with al
of organization, the farm
ceed to any great extent
siderable length of time,

Digitized by Google

nd demand
ing ways, to
l plans that
third place,
rmers noth-
ır time and
its possessor
ıused. It is
no signs in
sposition to
on the con-
neficial pur-
ıat will give
low of farm
and ensure
returns to

importance
f a prosper-
ural popula-
to go a long
rs to get an
th they pro-
ation of re-
continuous
m products.
a fair share
tal and the
the average
is remuner-
ccupational
xception of
Though we
eral distress
onal and is
e economic
he war, it
t, although
ne industrial
population
communities
to a quarter
gain. Not-
prosperity
ng the war,
ndard of liv-
mers of the
ursuit in the

In conclusion, it seems to me that the farmers are chiefly striving for a generally beneficial integration of their business, of the same kind and character that other business enjoys. If it should be found, on examination, that the attainment of this end requires methods different from those which other activities have followed for the same purpose, should we not sympathetically consider the plea for the right to coöperate, if only from our own enlightened self-interest, in obtaining an abundant and steady flow of farm products?

In examining the agricultural situation with a view to its improvement, we shall be most helpful if we maintain a detached and judicial viewpoint, remembering that existing wrongs may be chiefly an accident of unsymmetrical economic growth, instead of a creation of malevolent design and conspiracy. We Americans are prone, as Professor David Friday well says in his admirable book, *Profits, Wages and Prices*, to seek a 'criminal intent behind every difficult and undesirable economic situation.' I can positively assert, from my contact with men of large affairs, including bankers, that, as a whole, they are endeavoring to fulfill, as they see them, the obligations that go with their power. Preoccupied with the grave problems and heavy tasks of their own immediate affairs, they have not turned their thoughtful personal attention or their constructive abilities to the deficiencies of agricultural business organization. Agriculture, it may be said, suffers from their preoccupation and neglect rather than from any purposeful exploitation by them. They ought now to begin to respond to the farmers' difficulties, which they must realize are their own.

On the other hand, my contacts with the farmers have filled me with respect for them — for their sanity, their patience, their balance. Within the last

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

year — and particularly at a meeting called by the Kansas State Board of Agriculture and at another called by the Committee of Seventeen — I have met many of the leaders of the new farm movement, and I testify, in all sincerity, that they are endeavoring to deal with their problems, not as promoters of a narrow class-interest, ploiters of the hapless consu merciless monopolists, but men bent on the improver common weal.

We can and must meet su such a cause half-way. Th is our business — the natio

A PROJECT OF NAVAL DISARMAMENT

BY HERBERT SIDEBOTHAM

I

It is more than eighteen months since the writer described in these pages naval competition between the United States and Great Britain as the greatest danger that threatened civilization. We were then in the first enthusiasm of our relief from war, and hope ran high that the United States, within or without the League of Nations, would help the Old World to nurse the ideal of peace through freedom for which the war had been fought; and the danger of naval rivalry between us was then only just visible. But in the disappointments of the past year it has gathered form and body, and it is now no longer a vague apprehension but a rapidly maturing problem, with well-marked political lineaments. Unfortunately, there is reason to fear that our two governments (as is the way with all governments, if they are left alone), instead of going to meet it, may wait until it is on their backs. We are told that we must not hurry or unduly press projects of appeasement; but if precipitate action is to be feared, what other insurance can we have against timely discussion?

Our discussion must be practical, for this problem is be solved along the lines o agitation. There are forces in America than in Great that are working for the est of the two countries; but in is an immense preponderan will capable of removing m only some convenient fulcr activity can be devised. Wh back is not the want of a sentiment, but the fact that, tions toward each other a service to the general good, held in snares from which th freed before we can accompl doubted will of the vast m both countries.

One of these snares is the prehension that the United on the side of Japan. The ca differences between them n discussed here; Englishmen appreciate them, from the

Digitized by Google

side. As the the United post-Jutland inst Japan's merical pre- than Great at the begin- reas England aphical posi- huge break- n ports and tegic advan- strategic ad- with Japan ited States. o sea-fronts embarrass- sympathize; ld Dual Alli- sia was sup- e writers on ys worrying defeat, with Channel and , should its trating their It is not to the event of he American f victorious, ommerce off danger, too, Philippines, would leave a naval base apan, by at- e the United use Chinese

nt of war in ld American ages of fight- y from home easured. No thought to war between apan would rity of eight- an extrava-

gant margin; and one can readily understand those who are responsible for American defense at sea insisting that this margin is the minimum.

Unfortunately, this increase of American shipbuilding has an automatic effect on the British programme. Great Britain ceased building capital ships in 1917, and has only one ship, the Hood, which can be said to embody the lessons of Jutland — whatever these may be. In this year's programme four such ships are sanctioned; but they will not be begun till next year, and not finished, in all probability, till 1924. It follows that, in order to attain an equality with Japan in these new ships in 1925, Great Britain will have to lay down six ships next year; and equality with the United States will demand an even greater effort next year than ever was made in one year during the competition with Germany.

Thus, with the best good-will in the world and many protestations of mutual regard, we are drifting helplessly into a meaningless rivalry, which could not be worse in its effects on the welfare of the people if our two countries were enemies. And worse even than its effects on material prosperity would be the by-products of this rivalry in political discord, and even, it might be, in active enmity. The government, in introducing its naval estimates, had to face a great deal of criticism because its shipbuilding estimate was so small; and this came, not from political mischief-makers, but from many moderate men. Take the following passage from the speech on this year's estimates of Mr. Prettyman, a former Secretary of the Admiralty, and a man who speaks with care and exactness: —

'Everyone will agree that agreement and international arrangement are far better than building one against another. The practical question that we have to consider on this estimate

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

[illegible] the United States and [illegible] the United States and [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

high seas. That being so, would it not be possible to internationalize the high seas outside territorial waters, which for this purpose might be extended from the three-mile limit to one of ten, or even twenty miles, except in straits that are too narrow to admit of this extension? And might not all the Great Powers agree to police the international sea-common thus created, in accordance with a code of law mutually agreed upon?

If such a plan had been practicable, it is obvious that the immediate result would have been a great reduction of naval armaments and the removal of three fourths of the earth's surface from the clash of national rivalries and jealousies. But there were two great difficulties in the way of such a scheme. In the first place, the majority of expert opinion, both in Great Britain and in America, still believes in the capital ship. And, secondly, the United States is not a member of the League of Nations, under whose authority and flag the new international naval police would have to administer the laws of the sea-common. Clearly, in existing conditions, it is necessary to approach the problem from a different angle.

Both in Great Britain and in America official spokesmen have indicated their willingness to enter an international conference on disarmament; and if the project has got no further, it is because of the frightful difficulty of arranging a basis for general discussion. *Quot gentes, tot sententiæ.* All similar attempts in the past have failed, and before making another attempt, the nation that makes a move wants to be assured of a better prospect of success, and in the absence of such assurance the habitual procrastination of all governments gets its way. The theory of reduction has, in the past, usually been that of simple division. You start on the assumption that the relative power must not be altered, and you begin the search for a common divisor. Supposing that the ratios of naval power possessed by the leaders are as 18 to 12 and 6 — you can divide by 2 or by 3 or by 6 and still leave the relative power unchanged. It all sounds so simple. But in fact, the common denominator has always eluded definition; for it is not only the number of capital and other ships that constitutes naval power, but a host of naval *imponderabilia*, which defy expression in numbers that can be divided.

A still more important reason for past failures is that the causes of the unstable equilibrium that make for naval rivalry are political, and cannot be discussed in any general conference with the remotest chance of coming to an agreement within a reasonable time. This has been the unvarying history of all previous attempts to legislate for a reduction of armaments by a general international agreement. The indispensable conditions of success, which have never yet been fulfilled, are these. First, two powers should hold a preliminary conference and submit their agreement to a general conference; they should be two powers whose views are sufficiently close to promise agreement, and who together exercise a preponderant influence in the world's councils on the subject under discussion. Secondly, these two powers should not confine their discussion to the purely technical aspects of disarmament, but should be authorized to take into consideration the political questions that may be relevant.

The only two powers that could possibly satisfy these conditions are the United States and Great Britain; and it is therefore suggested, as the preliminary which alone promises any chance of success, that there should first be a conference between representatives of Britain and America,

Digitized by Google

empowered to discuss all the questions bearing on disarmament, to make a report to their governments, and, if it is approved, to submit that, as a draft basis for discussion, to any further conference for which invitations might be issued to other powers. If Britain and America cannot agree, neither can any larger conference; if, on the other hand, we can and do agree, we can play a tune to which all the rest of the world will dance.

It may be that the Anglo-American conference, when it meets, might think it desirable to limit its discussions to what is called the problem of the Pacific; and that the general conference, which should be summoned later to discuss its draft proposals and probably to ratify them, should be restricted to the powers that border on the Pacific — the United States, England, Canada, and Australia, Japan, China, and Siam, Russia, France, and the Pacific States of South America. If so restricted, the problem would be more manageable and the ratification of any agreement that Great Britain and America might reach would be much easier. This, at any rate, one is convinced, should be the first step to disarmament.

The question then arises, what the programme of this preliminary Anglo-American conference should be. Neither of these powers would wish to be advised how to defend its own coasts against invasion, and therefore the principal subject that suggests itself for discussion is, how they should protect their communications overseas. Now, on this question there is a long history of controversy between Great Britain and the United States. Whereas the former has always stood out for the exercise of extreme belligerent rights on the high seas, the United States, in theory if not in practice, has always argued for the milder practice of respecting the rights of neutrals and the private trading of th nations with neutrals. ' versy goes back to the very of the American Republ jamin Franklin was one champions of the exemptio property at sea from the war; and it will not have b that one of the arguments Bernstorff was fondest of, bled months before Ameri the war, was that she and once concluded a treaty em principle against what h 'navalism' (a word formed ogy of 'militarism') of G

The suggestion of the v this old controversy shoul in a sense favorable to t view, and that the confer as its first business, draft declaring that in the even non-contraband commerce and of belligerents, and, private property on the should be exempt from destruction. That would only a submarine war or but also a cruiser *guerre à* the high seas. It would de erents of the excuse that are necessary for the protec sea-borne commerce and c ping in war-time.

Those who know the of the controversy betwe and America on this subjec ciate how great the sentim cance of a concession by this question would be. Its be that American comm continue free from molesta the event of war — a treme from the anxieties of th Admiralty. The losses of submarine campaign have way toward convincing G that a reform in the law which she has always re

Digitized by Google

e operation of the
rate in the first
war in the Pacific,
he change of the
n. For a country
ted by the width
ne attacks of ene-
from the position
h her thin silver
ing her from the
, such a reform
ea of the greater

lisposed to go fur-
ld be the great
ating in our pre-
men of politics
nicians. If Great
agreed to such a
lso agree that, in
ty being disputed
make common
rce it, and in any
f Pacific powers
d a majority of
be strong enough
v that they meant
ay malignant. It
atter of course, al-
ar in which this
ed, and in which
ned to maintain
ne part of a good
of that would be
ve America of all
communications
ea-board, and so
trate her navy in
(apart from any
e could make to
o in the late war)
ve naval strength

always raised to
have in mind. In
ch declaration as

this being reached at the preliminary conference between Great Britain and America, — that every neutral ship and belligerent merchantman engaged in lawful commerce shall have the free use of the high seas without molestation, — who is to decide what is lawful commerce and what is not? In other words, what is contraband? That question we should leave to be determined either by the legal council of the League of Nations or by some analogue of the League drawn from the border states of the Pacific.

A second and more awkward question is, what would become of blockade. It is difficult to imagine how two powers separated by the whole width of the Pacific could institute anything approaching an effective blockade of each other; but, that difficulty surmounted, one would reply unhesitatingly that commercial blockade should be prohibited under our proposed rules, and only military blockade — that is, blockade of naval bases and *places d'armes* — recognized, if it could be made effective.

A final difficulty arises as to the transport of troops across the Pacific; but this, one imagines, would in any case be subject to the full force of the operations of war.

It is probable that this naval agreement would have to be supplemented by one of a political character. For example, it might be necessary for Great Britain and the United States, after discussing all the aspects of the Pacific problem, to agree to guarantee the political *status quo* of the border states of the Pacific, and to make common cause against anyone who attacked it. But this is no more than the Anglo-Japanese alliance does, so far as China is concerned; and it is understood that whatever was decided at the preliminary conference between Great Britain and the United States would be submitted for ratification at

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

a general conference later. There would be no exclusive alliance, but a declaration of agreed principles, to which other powers, including Japan, would be invited to subscribe. But if they did not, it would be a warning to the rest of us to prepare, and we should do so.

The whole matter may be put still more simply. Two things have kept the American continent, so far, clean from the curse of militarism, which has brought Europe to its present plight. One is the Monroe Doctrine. In effect, what is now proposed is an extension of the Monroe Doctrine so as to include the eastern as well as the western shore of the Pacific. In Canning's and Monroe's days, the danger threatened from Europe; now the danger threatens from Japan; but the Doctrine in its enlarged form would still apply, at any rate so far as America's commitments in the islands of the Pacific or even on the mainland of Eastern Asia were concerned. As surely as she went to war with Germany to prevent France from being overwhelmed, or England from being reduced to the position of a satellite of Germany (as she would have been had France been defeated), so surely must she go to war with Japan to prevent China from becoming a Japanese province. That may seem a crude way of putting it, with the din of the European war still in our ears; but if we had spoken with the same plainness to Germany before the war, perhaps there would have been no war at all. And so with Japan in the hemisphere of the Pacific.

The other thing that has kept the American continent free of militarism is the neutralization of the Great Lakes. What in effect is proposed by the suggested changes in the naval law of war is the neutralization of the Pacific. Backed by the combined will of Great Britain and the United States, this can be achieved, but in no other way policy that is now proposed is fore no innovation, but only an tation to the times of the old M Doctrine and of the neutraliza the Great Lakes, which have don enormous services to the liberty New World in the past.

Moreover, vague as the Pres indications of his policy have b to the present, what he has said tainly not inconsistent with the that is here suggested. In hi Presidential Message he declare he was willing 'to recommend to approximate disarmament,' a 'to join in writing the laws of in tional relationship.' His opposi confined to proposals that would over any part of American sover to an international council, or way hamper the free determi of American policy by the Am people.

This objection does not hold a the free association of conc wills that is proposed in this It is one thing to ask the Am people to commit themselves hand to resolutions of uncertain and unlimited responsibility tha be passed by a body in which th may be in a small minority. totally different thing to ask A (as is done here) to join in a based on ancient traditions of Am policy, and embodying what is th manent will of the people.

Nor, again, is the suggestion made open to the opposite repro Imperialism, for the intention is, set up an exclusive alliance, but to lay down ideas to which all wh may accede. Does it not rather h nize with the President's policy o ing a way to disarmament by w in conference the laws of interna relationship? 'Suppose,' an E writer commented on the Presi

Digitized by Google

hese laws were
faction, would
enforcement?
t this project
a scheme of
ld that influ-
e suggestions
is submitted,

t the proposal
bout disarma-
it removes the
d naval, that
tition. It cre-
not on selfish
ent principles
nt of the gusts
it enlists in
ch reserves of
ould dare to
tally, without
y of either, it
ed States and

Great Britain an association which may under favorable conditions develop into the keenest-tempered instrument of service to humanity that the world has ever known.

'We two nations,' said an English writer recently, in regard to these hopes of closer association, 'have a common idiom on all these mixed questions of law and politics. On the law of the sea we have behind us a long controversy, which can now safely be resolved. Each has something to give the other and something to receive, and both together could set an example that others could not but follow. Both of us want to keep the weapon of sea-power bright for service in the cause of liberty; both would wish to keep it in its scabbard in any less holy and compelling cause; and both try to interpret our duty to our peoples in obedience to the same ideals.'

WORLD FROM CORSICA

Y ANNE O'HARE McCORMICK

ent Harding's
deck of a little
a, two Britons,
merican were
ent and the old,
de, in general,
al politics.
the American
French crowd
toire in Nice,
boards, which
ndon Repara-
lecided to let
f the sanctions

for the enforcement of the peace treaty. There had been tension in that crowd. It was evident that the thoughts of the solemn Frenchmen, who were so gravely reading the synopsis of the ultimatum to the German delegation, were being jerked back into the old war-channels. The constant French contention that the struggle was not over made them ready for the news. Their universal determination that Germany should pay up made them satisfied. But they were worried. The threat of marching armies stirred up too many familiar

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

apprehensions and unburied memories.

The tension touched even the four travelers escaping from the troubled European mainland to a half-forgotten French outpost in the Mediterranean. On that dark little platform on the tranquil and careless sea were reiterated the same arguments, complaints, national irritations and dissatisfactions that the American had heard over and over again in France and England. The Frenchman and the Englishman might have been echoes of the querulous voices of their countries. The Englishwoman was more than that. A hint of the public manner made evident before she admitted it that she was a leader in what she called the constitutional wing of the woman's movement, and she therefore expressed a point of view more international than the men.

The talk, like all talk of American politics abroad, was more concerned with the old President than the new. Mr. Wilson is as cordially hated by many Europeans as any of their own statesmen — which is saying a good deal! He is more extravagantly admired by many others than any world-figure except Marshal Foch. But damned or canonized, the ex-President even now is to Europeans by far the most interesting American. Everybody who talks about America at all talks about Wilson. He is a sign of contradiction and of controversy — a prophet or a quack, an autocrat or a dupe, according to the point of view; but it is as impossible to escape him as the text of political debate in Europe as it was to avoid making him the issue of the presidential campaign at home.

The Britishers, representing the Wilsonian school of thought, discussed the retiring President more sympathetically than would any but his most devoted adherents in America. They were not much interested in Mr. Harding, who is still a nebulous figure in Europe, making no appeal to the popular i
tion and confusing the politic
his attitude toward European
The Frenchman did not agre
what he called 'Wilson's im
phantasm of an impossible wor
he dismissed Mr. Harding with
of his shoulders, as one 'who
from his speeches not to kn
world, possible or impossible
only point on which the three
was in blaming all their trouble
American. That is Europe's
method just now of fixing respon
for her political and economic w
America were only with them,
constant cry, they could have
Germany would know she was
and every malcontent would n
an American text for his ag
Above all, — and that is the re
and front of all our offending,
could stabilize the exchange!

'America has been Germany
ally since the end of the war,'
bitter complaint of the English
ship-builder from the Tyne. 'I
talking so much about the enc
ment she has given to all the fo
disintegration and discontent by
to back the peace. My chief gri
is that she has abandoned Eu
the European politicians.'

'Wilson was the one hope w
added the Englishwoman. 'He
the air for us all. He was able to
what the English people, what
confused and suffering people
here, were really fighting for.
was not what our government,
other government, was fightin
And then, when we thought we'
America repudiated Wilson and
promises, and left us to the m
the old bargainers.'

'Consider how he misled us,' s
Frenchman. 'We let him rebuk
his doctrinaire fashion for try
look out for ourselves. We let h

Digitized by Google

erialist. And now
ıtry! It is of an

you know,' inter-
man. The Amer-
ted listener to the
ıtry, was amused
hifting. 'To-day
any observer as
mperialist. Why
have at this mo-
productive labor
lse, a million un-
nen, not counting
y training? Any
France is full of
ilding going on is
nilitary barracks,
being vastly en-
ovated.'
mitted the truth
nd justified the
o know who else
ı enemy already
l suggested pleas-
nt of another at-
ther be prepared
two years before
o help her. 'As
't think it is for
us with that!'
ted that, too. It
ank international

vident that the
us,' said the Eng-
ay be the fulsome
e governments at
eason I left the
s really made un-
hostile attitude,
e French toward
't disguise it even
alue in revenue.

use we all have a
less to the war
o much more out
answered.

'But what else did you expect?' asked the Englishwoman. 'Did you ever know England to put her hand in any fire without pulling out most of the chestnuts? And since the war, the British conscience is quite dead. We have n't a spark of feeling left, not even for Ireland. We are perfectly represented by Mr. Lloyd George, able to out-argue and out-manœuvre everybody, and without a principle in the world.'

When the American ventured to suggest that the British premier's ability to hold his party and the people in line under the fearful assaults of a disillusionment that had unseated every other Allied leader must be a sign of great popular confidence, as well as an amazing feat of statesmanship, the Englishwoman retorted that that proved her point.

'One of his party is an intimate friend of ours, a well-known Coalition member from the North. He told us just the other day that Lloyd George holds the curious position of being personally the best-liked and politically the least respected and trusted British premier in history. I tell you he proves that the British conscience is dead!'

That dialogue, reported here as typical of all one hears in Europe, was interesting as a Corsican overture, because it carried to the very shore of the island the atmosphere of distrust, recrimination, suspicion, and bitterness which is the miasmic air that every European breathes to-day. It sharpened the contrast between that pursuing clamor of opinion and the silence of the dawn in which the little ship slid softly into an empty port. The first sight of Corsica makes you feel that you are somewhere near the starry end of the telescope; and the longer you stay there, the more you get the islander's sense that the mainlands of the earth are agitated by a good many unnecessary troubles.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Corsica is not troubled by any discontent, industrial, political, or economic. It is quite as indifferent to European, as the rest of Europe is to American, affairs. Yet twice in Corsica I heard shrewd native judgments of the ex-President of the United States. Once was when I had lost my way in the hills behind Ajaccio, and asked a direction of two pedestrians, in a stony lane far from any house or landmark. They wore capes and slouch hats, were armed with guns, and might have served as the brigands of the story if it had only occurred to them to act the part they looked. Instead, they turned from their rabbit hunt to walk part of the way down the hill, to be sure that I was headed toward the town.

'You come from the country of President Wilson,' one of them guessed. 'A good man, but simple. When my son here talks about going to Paris, I always tell him that even a man of intelligence like your President cannot go to a place like that without having his head turned or his neck twisted.'

The other time was at Calvi, a town out of a mediæval canvas for color and picturesqueness, its squalor guarded by a fortress as formidable as Verdun. Under the fort, in the newer town, near the harbor where Casabianca made his famous stand against the naval power of Britain, I noticed that the main street was named Boulevard President Wilson. It is a sequestered little thoroughfare, with the sea at each end; as out of the world as a street in a picture-book, or Corsica itself.

I was looking up at the name with some thought of the curious power of personified ideas to penetrate the ends of the earth, when I was joined by a townsman, to whom I made my American acknowledgment of the honor done by Calvi to an American.

'In Corsica,' he assured me with a flourishing bow, 'we understand America better than they do in Fra
admire Wilson. We like Don C
You know we have a claim to
pher Columbus. Go up the
they will show you the ruin
house where we think he was
course, Genoa disputes it. B
ever he came from, he was o
and he discovered America.
feels an interest in America.'

He said it with an air, that survivor in a fading village o gotten strand, the air of a gra toward one of his colonies, rat gering even to a traveler accus getting strange views of her through foreign eyes.

'As to Mr. Wilson,' he wen think he made some discoverie rope, too. He did n't accompl much, when all is said; but th he could n't do — well, they good many people over there, gesture toward the mainland, ' think. He did not come for but he should have come to Co is a very good place to study hi see what happens to heroes, learn that everything takes tim

To enter Corsica, on the very of President Harding's adminis to the accompaniment of an French discussion of President and to leave it, a week later, to of a Corsican contribution to t discussion, is an experience n out amusement and significance was a world between the two p view; but I am not sure that tleman of leisure who did the of the Boulevard President W the town of Calvi, in an island less, strikeless, newsless, mo and generally idyllic, as Cors not occupy a better post for tion than those commentators amid the confusion of events conflict of reports.

Digitized by Google

A SHOESHOP

on of a social phe-
to the sorority of
erely in the hope
ed as correct, and
ther extravagance
per.
what they seem.
t to what I sup-
own sale of boots
nstead that I was
n; or perhaps it
t to call the social
nd myself a leap-
a shoestore, it is
p year.
ere crowding and
st inside the en-
ding some partic-
of the coveted
the steady stream
ith flattering in-
ned by the Babel
ch various phrases
ny consciousness.
son? I must have
ne only man that
nt.'
e? Say, Edna, do
ing hold of that
king to the fleshy
my special friend.
ne get shoes that

here I am! You
e sure and always

r. Benson. How
Popular as ever,
how me the very
slippers. I think
son,' the speaker

then announced to all whom it might concern. And the mountain of flesh from whom this flattering declaration emanated forced her way toward her coveted idol, Mahomet being utterly unable to go to the mountain.

I looked around me in despair. Each clerk was either surrounded by a group of ladies, or having a confidential chat with one alone on some cushioned sofa. Broken bits of conversation continued to assail my ears; sometimes the subject-matter was such as would be tossed to and fro between any two people meeting at an afternoon tea; sometimes there was an interchange of personal gossip concerning the large world of society in which the majority of the shoe-purchasing and shoe-selling world seemed to move side by side. The feminine confidences to which I found myself listening were the more astounding in their intimacy from the fact that often they were evidently being poured into the ear of a total stranger. A young girl in fur coat and pearl necklace bent confidentially toward a swain in whose blacking-stained palm her silk-stocinged foot was temporarily reposing, and exchanged ballroom badinage. Stout matrons repeated the latest *mots* of their grandchildren, or deplored the manners of the new generation, sure of a sympathetic listener at their feet. Somehow the intimacy implied by an appeal for sympathy always seems of the closest possible brand.

Among the confusion of faces, I suddenly detected the puzzled one of a rather deaf contemporary of my own. I made my way to her side, and indicating a confidential confessional that was in progress at a little distance, I shouted,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

'Don't you admire shoe-men's sympathy?'

She looked alarmed for my reason. 'Schumann's Symphony?' she murmured vaguely. 'Why, yes, I think it's beautiful, if you mean the one in D minor.'

This would never do. 'It's no use trying to talk in a shoeshop,' I yelled, backing away.

'Did you say you had shell-shock?' my deaf friend inquired again.

I nodded violently and withdrew to continue my observations.

'Is this the new democracy?' I asked myself in a daze. But no. I had been to other mark-down sales. I have traveled from automatic attics to bargain basements, and everywhere the old order prevailed to the extent of the purchaser and the dispenser of wares being separated by that imaginary equator which divides the seller and the sold. Perhaps the absence of that symbol of separation, the counter, explains the greater freedom of intercourse in the shoestore. But as I had come to buy boots and not to moralize, I decided to be very up-to-date and 'cut in' on some confidential couple. Accordingly I boldly placed myself beside a seal-skinned siren who was discussing with her chosen partner a movie she had seen the night before, and said firmly, 'I have come to buy some boots. Will you please wait on me when you are quite through talking to this lady?'

My sarcasm passed unheeded. Without glancing my way, the clerk merely pointed to a distant corner and replied, 'I am busy. Perhaps one of those other gentlemen can attend to you.'

It was in that corner, neglected and alone, that I evolved the theory that the shoeman is as yet in a state of transition. He is an unclassified animal, a sort of social Soko, or missing link. Perhaps eventually he will arise from his 'probably arboreal' crouch, and will stand upright on two legs and p himself either a man or a gen Perhaps he will have a consulti lor, in which ladies may lay ba souls (I repudiate the obvious p publicly than at present. But moment the shoe-specialist is c in an anomalous position, into w has been pushed by the incred timacy of his rich and commo patronesses. Perhaps there is so chological reason why, in remov shoe, one removes also a shell of (perhaps shell-shocked sensibilit caused it to disintegrate) while sole-protector is being tested.

It always establishes a ple cordial relation to find one's se and glove with a courteous clerk other side of the counter; but most startling to find one's self f boot — so to speak — with an sioned salesman kneeling at one

THE HIGH COST OF TAL

Speech lightens toil, and soothes the ard
With pleasant converse all along the wa
Some talk all day; and others take deli
To keep on talking in their sleep all nig

It is a difficult problem, but cost of labor continues to incr point will be reached at which ployer must seriously consid much irrelevant conversation b employees, or between an emplo friends or acquaintances who sh society but not his toil, he can a pay for; and, having so deci must find a way to make his operative. Already, for exampl with an indescribable emotion t smaller employers of labor — need the carpenter, the plumb man-who-takes-care-of-the-lawn scrub-lady, or other members newest new rich — listen to the sation of our nominal hirelings, ure in our troubled minds how

Digitized by Google

inute. We are not
ate — and the fact
w and again insidi-
ersation with these
nakes us more so.
e deaf and dumb
en if we employed
top work and talk
– and the habit of
ot but recognize in
n others, is older in
dely practised, and
r the victim to get
er.

ears ago this was a
orld that we may
y trying to imagine
ed in trees. Judged
lards, it must have
it had its pleasures,
rimeval man (so I
History of the Uni-
frolicked with his
e rhythmic beatings
rms, and some ap-
it would have been
s, and what you or
t have thought we
bout, even the *Sci-*
Universe does not
us, I judge, would
nferior to the aver-
out this is perhaps
r whereas the baby
nvironment already
ers, a vocabulary,
sation, this worthy
ad to start with a
own making, and
ning whatever until
ame for it.

imagination, but so
rompings and frol-
glad games of tag
ap-frog in the sun-
historic forests now
ne the first words.
happened that one
as we now say, too
'gay' with another; a friendly tussle became too strenuous, and a protesting squeak meaning 'Don't bite my ear' came by repetition to be generally recognized as definite speech, meaning, as the Dictionary now says, 'the apparatus of audition,' not intended for biting. And having thus named his *e-e-e-e-e-e-yah!* primeval man went bravely on and tried to name everything else — a tremendous task not yet completed.

Nor, for that matter, have his descendants done much to perfect the instrument of communication which he thus sketchily invented, and which still remains sadly limited. 'Many words,' said Stevenson, 'are often necessary to convey a very simple statement; for in this sort of exercise we never hit the gold; the most we can hope for is by many arrows, more or less off on different sides, to indicate, in the course of time, for what target we are aiming, and after an hour's talk, back and forward, to convey the purport of a single principle or a single thought.'

Yet it is something if the arrows thus indicate the target; for so dependent is speech upon the receptivity and state of mind of the hearer, that many an honest sentence fails to describe its meaning, and many an honest thought gets distorted in the hearing beyond the subsequent recognition of the mind that thought it. Here, indeed, is a cumulative tragedy, the incalculable total of countless human misunderstandings, for which our ancestor prepared the way when he named his ear. And whether or not it would have been better if his ear had remained nameless is a question for individuals to answer according to their faith in the ultimate intention of evolution.

However it started, and to whatever humanly incomprehensible purpose, the practice of speech and the pursuit of labor have long been inseparable: one may even argue that, with the develop-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

ment of self-consciousness and conventions, speech has taken the place of romping and frolicking whenever two or more human beings get together. The literary-minded reader will recall the poet Thompson's fine pastoral: —

Soon as the Morning trembles o'er the sky,
And, unperceived, unfolds the spreading day;
Before the ripened fields the Reapers stand,
In fair array, each by the lass he loves,
To bear the rougher part, and mitigate,
By countless gentle offices, her toil.
At once they stoop and swell the lusty sheaves;
While through their cheerful band the rural talk,
The rural scandal and the rural jest,
Fly harmless, to deceive the tedious time,
And steal unfelt the sultry hours away.

And although the poet was thinking of agriculture in a coeducational phase that is no longer common, the most casual observation must realize that urban and suburban scandal equally well deceive the tedious time, that reaping is here symbolic of many another occupation, and that neither sex is reduced to noticeable taciturnity by the absence of the other. I have seen, and heard, ten or a dozen men, nominally busy at mending a highway outside my window; and, although neither the so-called gentler sex nor the social beverage was present, the affair sounded, and was in effect, very much like a tea-party — except that now and again one of the guests stopped talking, and scattered a shovelful of gravel, with a free, graceful, and generous gesture, over the roadbed. This they did in rotation, so that usually one guest was scattering gravel, and the function was progressive. It came leisurely into view far down the road to the east; it went leisurely out of sight far down the road to the west, leaving a pleasant impression of human companionship, though less romantic than the reapers made on Thompson.

It may yet happen, as things are going, that such toil as this will become coeducational also, that towns will recruit their street departments impartially from the new electorate, and these sturdy highwaymen, each lass he loves, will bear the rougher and mitigate her toil. There were, sure, contingencies that did not to the superficially observant poe member of the cheerful band have set himself to mitigate the a lass whom some other member and then, as Mr. Thompson (more ably) have put it, —

Across the ripened field the Reaper leaps,
With bloodshot eyes, and tears the lass h
From him who would her labor mitigate;
And e'er that other can defend himself,
With jealous sickle reaps his hated life.

This, however, would be an ex case, and fruitless efforts to kill pointed look would be more likel

Under conditions that are still wistful optimism referred to as 'no no essayist with a heart could wished to change an industrial co tion by which conversation has accepted (and paid for) as the cor ion of toil. It has been take granted that carpenters on a r plumbers in a cellar would decei tedious time, that the man-who- care-of-the-lawn would hold inf receptions for all passing friend acquaintances, and so on through ous employments, male, female mixed. The tongue of man and t of dog, it has been tacitly agreed, this in common — each wags wh owner is happy; and well it woul the tongue, like the tail, ceased wa under other temperamental condi Talk and toil, it has been held, gether, separate yet inseparable the Siamese twins; nor is it rema that this phenomenon should hav taken as a matter of course; for ea man repeats in his or her own pe experience the history of human born speechless, discovers with su and wonder the pleasure of con tion, and never wearies of practis

Digitized by Google

Words, moreover, are the only currency in which the poorest can afford to be extravagant: each has a Fortunatus's purse, and, however he plays the spendthrift, the purse is as full as ever.

Yet it must be admitted that a widower who does not dance, though he may with equanimity once a year purchase a ticket for himself and wife to the Policeman's Ball, would be disturbed if policemen, summoned at night to capture a burglar in the second story, stopped on the way for an informal dance in the dining-room. The case is not so radically different from that of carpenters who pause in their carpentering for a pleasant chat, or of the man-who-takes-care-of-the-lawn who uses his rake to lean on while he discusses the political situation with the ashman. In all justice it becomes more and more evident that only the industrial occupation of his premises should be paid for by an employer, and that the social occupation should be paid for by the employee. In the case of the highwaymen's party that I have mentioned, a distinction should be made between gossiping and graveling. But unfortunately this sound truth is not likely to be recognized by the conversationalists in soviet.

NEW LIGHTS ON BROADWAY

It is queer how you can meet old familiar wayside acquaintances day after day, for weeks at a time, and then, suddenly, some little incident will pop out of the unexpected and reveal to you their whole personalities, setting, and responsibility to the universe.

I went down to mail a letter and get a paper, and walked back through the woods. I turned off the lane at a place that is n't usual, going over the wall instead of through the legitimate gap and walking through wet wild asters and poison ivy, and by way of various outcroppings of rock, on which I sat down experimentally from time to time, to open my paper, combat the mosquitoes briefly, and withdraw. This departure from the path may have been the reason for the general change in the face of things, although I came back before long to the usual open spot, and found the usual two horses grazing there, went up the little hill past them and through the usual sagged place in their wire-fence. On the edge of the sunny open space on top of the hill, in the fringy edge of the sumach and the shade of a tree, with goldenrod adorning the prospect, I recognized the destined ledge of rock on which to read my paper; so I sat down to consider Cox and Harding in parallel columns.

Other voices not political began to get my attention, but I did n't listen much. They were well away on the other side of the trees, and it was n't my business. After a while the two horses came plunging out of the thicket and across the lower edge of the grassy space and into the thicket on the other side, shouts pursuing; and then a man in a whitish shirt and no-colored trousers, with a long stick in his hand, came after. He'd been 'chasing those horses all morning, lady,' he explained as he went by. 'It's hard to catch horses. You think you have them cornered and they get away from you.'

I wished him success this time, and thought he had it; but he had n't. Then another man appeared — a long, lean man who left an impression of blue gingham shirt in the general color-effect of the landscape as he went across it. Had the horses gone up by here? he wanted to know. No, not *up* by here; they had gone *down* by here, I told him, with the other man after them, but they had n't passed again. So he went off to beat the woods.

From that time my reading-room was the scene of crossings and recrossings, of pursuit, escape, bewilderment,

Digitized by Google

of explosions of baffled wrath from the White Shirt and mild perplexity from the Blue Gingham. They ran across it, shouting; they walked across it, puzzled. They collapsed on it, to pant and rest. They called across it from opposite thickets to each other, to ask what luck. They stood in the middle of it and scratched their heads. And once in a long while, the horses crossed it — now a brown streak moving above the green leafage where the bushes were low, now cantering into the open, flicking their tails and having a very happy time.

They were n't his horses, said the Blue Gingham. They were the other man's. He just thought he'd give him a hand. The White Shirt had a great deal more to say. Not that he loitered to say it — in fact, he was generally running all the way across. But he somehow managed in passing to convey a great deal. He'd been after those horses since eight o'clock this morning, lady. He was tired out, running. He did n't know when he'd been so tired. He was winded. He'd like to know where the devil those horses went. He was to bring them in this morning, and here it was eleven o'clock, and his folks were moving to-day and he had to go home. He did n't know what he was going to do. Those horses were foxy. They were the coach-horses, and they'd always been here and knew every lane.

It had never occurred to me before to think of those horses as belonging to anyone. I had just thought of them as independent personalities roaming the woods at will — within the limitation of certain fences, perhaps; we all have our barriers somewhere. And here they were flooded with a whole new light, creatures of duties, subject to a foreman, a boss — to who knows what hierarchy of authority? — maybe to Her in the end. Here they were shown as unreliable, sly, selfish, lazy — no consideration for anybody's con
reasonableness — no gratitud
strike at present, for shorter
more time to eat, and who
becomes of the established
tem! How little you really
people you meet every day!

Well, White Shirt was winc
said, he'd been at it since eig
this morning, and he was tire
all the time. He dropped
under a tree. He mopped hi
his wide-open neck and chest.
nothing to do but run and ea
'On *our* place you just hold
ple and the horses'll come rig
We don't ever tie the cows. I
to. Milk them right out in
field, and they'll stand. Con
you when you call them, and
their milk. They know when
ing-time. If they were *my* ho
White Shirt vindictively, 'I'
to the plough. I'd work so
fat off 'em. Work 'em eigh
day. Then I guess they wou
Keep 'em at it about two we

Once, for a long time, there
and I supposed the wicked we
But they were n't. White S
peared with a paper-bag und
and a hunk of bread and an a
hand. I supposed it was lure,
really lunch.

'It's hard to have to eat
run,' he said. 'Have those h
by?'

No, they had n't been by.

'I'm going down that way
'If they come along, will yo
me know, please?'

I would, willingly. But
White Shirt did loiter. Witl
on my rock just above where
out of the grass, he hung, p
we exchanged the stories of
All the while he fancied hi
down that way, hotfoot after
— mopped his brow at inte

Digitized by Google

he was n't run-
offered me his ap-
here was only one.
lity, but not the
s very noble of
oked like a good

hat the farm was
to be milked, and
o hold out an ap-
uld come. That
.
he city,' he said;
was seven years
brother and my
us in New York
d mother aban-
r heard anything
ow what became
I used to think
o at night. Up to
ied — up to the
s old — I used to
wondering if I'd
nd wishing I knew
hat they was like
hem. My brother
hundred dollars.
ars ago. I never
I often wished I
and my mother.
t us here in this

to let him know,
passed this way,
himself gone. He
ning after those
eeding the grass
his finger. 'See!'
o his story would
t fifty-seven, but
ve when he held
nger to show me
s it.
of wiregrass. It
but the place all
lots of weeds and
ly been on the

He keeps acquainted with his sister. She never done him out of anything, I judge. She has a big farm in Illinois. It is the next farm to the one they grew up on, where the cows stand and the horses are friendly and acquainted. I suppose she had married the farm, but did n't learn that, because he got interested in telling me about the butter.

He knows how to make butter without any buttermilk. There's a little whey, but not any buttermilk at all. He made fifteen dollars once. Some people said he could n't do it, and he said he'd show them, and they put up fifteen dollars, and he did do it. It's his receipt. Usually you take a pound of cream and you don't get a pound of butter out of it; but his way you get more than a pound. He knows all about raising vegetables — beans and tomatoes and corn and all the vegetables. You put in so much seed, and you get so many bushels back, and so many tomatoes to the plant; and so much money it's worth and so much to the acre. Of course, he was n't indefinite like that. He talked in figures; but I'm not an intelligent farmer as he is, so I don't remember. But he does n't forget it — not any of it. Twenty years ago, and he goes over it in his mind now — it's like going to school again. He does n't forget a thing about it.

He can make maple syrup, too. That's another of his receipts. You put it on your cakes, and you'd say it was Vermont maple syrup. He'd give any man five dollars who could tell the difference. Nothing in it that would hurt you. It's one kind of bark — he does n't know whether it grows in these woods or not, but it's a tree that grows back there. I took it that meant Illinois. You boil it in water and put in a chemical, and pebbles — that is, you strain it through pebbles and charcoal, and put in so much sugar to so much liquor, and when you get it the same

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

color as the maple syrup — well — he'd give any man five dollars.

As I was going home, I met him down where the path goes over the wall. He called to me as soon as I came in sight, to know whether they'd been up there in my direction; but they had n't. He'd mended the fence down here, and he did n't believe they could have got over — he wondered if they could. I did n't believe they could, either, for the low place in the wall was so built up that I did n't recognize it, and there are new barbed wires across, besides.

And all this in New York City, just off Broadway, and three blocks from the subway station!

ASTRONOMY

After the sun has gone to bed,
The stars come out. All overhead
I've seen them twinkling. It was late,
For sometimes I stay up till eight.

If I stayed up till half-past ten,
I could n't count them, even then.
But when the moon is shining bright,
Most of the stars keep out of sight.

And one night, when the moon was gone,
I *thought* I saw them on the lawn,
As if from out my window I
Was looking right down at the sky.

But that was *ignorant* of me:
They were not stars at all, you see,
But little flies that fly at night,
Each carrying a tiny light.

A QUEER THING

I've got a shadow — and I think
It looks like when I spilled the ink,
And made a spot upon the floor
That won't come off forevermore.

The first time that I noticed it,
I *was* astonished, I admit.
I wondered what that thing c
That went along in front of m

They tell me that because the
Can't shine through me, or an
I *make* this shadow on the lan
But how, I do not understand

So when the sun is shining cle
My shadow's always somewh
And every little thing I do
My shadow goes and does it t

And if my shadow's not in sig
In front of me, or left, or right
I quickly turn about and find
My shadow tagging on behin

And sometimes it is thin and t
Along the grass or on the wall
And sometimes it is short and
And always it is very flat.

It never makes the slightest s
To let me know that it is roun
And cloudy days I look in vai
For it. I guess it fears the rai

JOHN

On January 13, 1820, Keats
his sister-in-law, in America,
should have a boy, do not chr
John, and persuade George n
his partiality for me come acr
a bad name, and goes against a
my name had been Edmund,
have been more fortunate.'

Whether or not this was tr
John Keats, the principle is tr
many other names foisted u
fenseless children, who grow u
tered by a real malediction, a n
liked. We can learn to endure
features and our other limitat
a name cannot be lived down
ways being spoken or written.
say what an incentive there mi
Edmund? Who knows what

Digitized by Google

ed to make cer-
ssibly the sound
rather than his
r many a writer.
hat a woman's
hee. Is it, per-
we measure the
aucer, Edmund
espeare, Walter
Francis Bacon,
Walton, William
Shelley, Robert
ter, and many
oman named in

aves the stars.

to be Edmund?
special tradition
nong Edmunds.
course, was the
his first inspi-
, and Edmund
o a profounder
n tragedy. It
ain a preference
to be an axiom
iam will succeed
the name for a
ges, as Bayard
rse. In a rapid
f English litera-
enty-seven Wil-
sting fame.
poetry that has
us.' With this
us consider the
nglish literature.
great pedantic
he controversial
kelton was tutor
Lyly launched
; John Milton
John Bunyan,
llegory (match-
ryden wrote two
apid odes in lit-
language, he was
e lyre;

John Locke pried into the Human Understanding.

It is easy to see why Keats did not care to be listed with the Johns.

His friends called him, affectionately, 'Junkets'; and in this year of the centenary of his death, critics, interpreters, and readers have made amends for his John, for they have 'call'd him soft names in many a musèd rhyme.'

There are, however, cases of real hardship in names. I fear for the future of a beautiful child named Jabez. Whatever he does, he deserves forgiveness. Harsh unmelodious names ought to be taboo. No human being should be compelled to wear, not only inherited features and tendencies, but also inherited names. Here in New England many a disposition is wrecked by the possession of some such Biblical ancestral name.

And then there are the classical names. Why torment a boy by calling him Achilles, or a girl by naming her Calliope? There are tragedies and comedies of names Proper, or otherwise. Think of being called, aloud, 'Poe,' and think of surmounting this affliction by writing beautiful poems! Names have some occult influence over destiny.

Why did Cowley ruminate in the pastoral strain, in many of his writings? Was it not because he was Phineas, that Fletcher wrote his *Piscatory Dialogues?* What made Gay and Swift the fast friends of the Wicked Wasp of Twickenham? Is there a reasonable doubt of the suitability of the publication of Swinburne's poems by Chatto and Windus? Why was 'Fiona Macleod' preferred by the man who wielded a critical Sharp pen?

The moral is clear. Even if a last name is unchangeable, a first name may be bestowed wisely. Give a boy a name that has no predetermined character, no conspicuousness; let him make it have individuality — call him John.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

THE CONTRIBUTORS' COLUMN

When the **World War** broke out, **Paul Dukes** was living in Petrograd. Unable to pass the physical examination required by the army, he took advantage of his accurate knowledge of the Russian language and people, and volunteered for the British Secret Service. He was assigned to the place of a valuable agent recently murdered by the Bolsheviki, and for the better part of a year lived a life such as any master of detective fiction might profit by. Dukes served in a munition factory, and subsequently was drafted into the Red army itself. He organized an extensive courier service and sent out information of great value. Subsequently he was knighted for his services. This *Atlantic* article describes in detail the opening chapter of his extraordinary adventures. Dallas Lore **Sharp** is Professor of English at Boston University. **Katharine Fullerton** Gerould is, fortunately, a frequent contributor to these pages. **Jean Kenyon Mackenzie** is the well-loved author of *Black Sheep*, and the more recent *Fortunate Youth*, which we never cease from recommending to every *Atlantic* reader.

* * *

Laura **Spencer Portor** (Mrs. Francis Pope) is connected with a leading women's journal of New York. **L. Adams Beck** is an English scholar and traveler, now living in the Canadian West. **William Beebe** has returned from one of his most profitable sojourns at the Jungle Laboratory in Kartabo: The *Atlantic* is glad to announce that the second of the four gorgeous volumes of his monograph on the pheasant is now off the press. We call them 'gorgeous' advisedly, for there is, perhaps, no more intense beauty in nature than a pheasant's plumage; and in both text and pictures that beauty is caught and held to an extent which, to us, at any rate, seems quite incredible. **Alfred G. Rolfe** is senior master at the Hill School, Pottstown, Pennsylvania.

* * *

Belle Skinner, who has 'adopted' the village of Hattonchâtel, is an American who has done much generous and self
work in France. **Harry Hubert**
young Englishman, who went fro
lic school into service in 1914,
with distinction and continuous
demobilization in April, 1919.
appearance of the American d
France, he happened to be assig
server' to one after another of
sive detachments of raw troops.
Captain Field writes to the edit

His mental attitude toward A
1914 till April, 1917, was the attitu
thin red line could scarcely escape
it was the acquaintance thus made
icans in the flesh — coupled with t
and sober thoughts that four and th
years of war so extraordinarily devel
remnant of England's best that yet
brought home to him personally th
ficance of the Anglo-American relat
sooner was he demobilized than, with
of action that showed the fundamen
of the thought, he got straight to t
saw it: pushed aside any idea of a p
came directly to America, and with a
the understratum of our structure n
one to learn first, went to work as a d
one of the big factories in Buffalo. D
piece-work among the common ru
Hungarians, negroes, and what not –
out for seven months: learned, by
conditions under which the men lived
visited their homes as one of them —
cepted by them as a comrade. All th
the point of view of an 'uplifter,'
raker,' or a Socialist, but from that o
gentleman, anxious to learn our do
ditions and difficulties in order tha
sympathetically interpret, in some l
need, America to England. Person
that I have rarely heard of any m
and high-minded bit of service, or
difficult. . . . The name [Paul Zo
only bit of fiction in the narrative.

* * *

Grover Clark was born in Japa
ican parents. He was educated i
and is a graduate of Oberlin an
universities. For the last three y
been in Japan and China, engage
ing and research work along socio
political lines. He now holds
Government at the University

Digitized by Google

happy 'columnist' *g Post*. **Nicholai** aljevo, Serbia, the He was educated ne College of Bel- in Switzerland, y, and Russia. He ology at Belgrade, t; in 1919 he was k, and in Novem- rida. In the re- oing on in Serbia, le is President of re Association of eration with the rrying out a most ve programme of welfare. In 1915 l States, to recall ne defense of their made addresses in tates and Canada, found impression. ent making a sec- he interest of his

ends her first con- from New York ppen is connected reau of the New **Lester Warner**, glish at Wellesley he *Atlantic's* per- t **Mowrer** is the of the Chicago

est roused by the r's paper on the y American farm- vite **Mr. Bernard** rticle representing w. Though not a ch's broad experi- pathy and public irable spokesman s in the United s, of course, of his ne War Industries perhaps, has not very useful report the request of the

Kansas State Board of Agriculture for his opinion on coöperative buying. **Herbert Sidebotham**, for many years an important member of the staff of the Manchester *Guardian*, became a 'student of war' in the service of that paper. The keenness and comprehension of his articles brought him wide reputation, and in 1918 he joined the *Times*, in direct succession to its military correspondent, the famous Colonel Repington. At present he is a 'student of politics' on the *Times* staff. **Anne O'Hare McCormick**, of Dayton, Ohio, sends this informing little contribution from abroad.

* * *

It is the *Atlantic's* oft-expressed opinion that many of the 'roads to Americanization' lead to something both different and undesirable. Contrast, please, these two descriptions.

This from Springfield, Massachusetts: —

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Every fair-minded person will admit that the United States government has provided laws which, consistent with the safety of the nation, aid the alien to become a full-fledged citizen, with the rights, duties, and responsibilities — save only eligibility to the office of president — of the native born. . . .

It is unfortunate, therefore, when the execution of these laws is entrusted . . . to judges who, by their treatment . . . breed in the heart and mind of a petitioner, not affection for this country, but fear and distrust.

For instance, thirty alien men and I went to the Court to take out our Declaration of Intention to become citizens. We had been led to take this step through daily contact with men and women who had typified to us the fine qualities of true, loyal Americans. We were conducted immediately to the office, where the fee was collected. This was only a trivial matter, but I know that it impressed me with the idea that 'pay as you enter' could apply to more than street-cars. However, after this introduction, we were ushered into the presence of the judge before whom we were to be sworn in, and from whom we were to receive our certificates.

Surely, this ceremony would be impressive, I thought. But, no, we were only foreigners to the judge, who evidently thought that since the majority knew little English, they required but little courtesy. We stood before the bar, for there were no seats on our side of it, for over an hour, while the judge, with his feet on his desk, smoked, and talked casually to other men in the office. No explanation was vouchsafed to us for the delay. We simply stood, and waited his pleasure. After an hour had elapsed, I asked a nearby clerk if he could tell me the cause of the delay. This was his answer: 'Oh, you'll have to wait till the judge gets ready.'

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

The judge finally decided that he was too busy to attend to us and turned the affair over to his deputy. This was the impressive ceremony I heard: the deputy read my name, — which fortunately for me was the first on the list, — said, 'Hold up your right hand,' read the Oath of Allegiance, which he mispronounced and mumbled so that I had difficulty in recognizing it, handed me my 'First Paper,' and said, 'Next.'

The undue haste in administering the oath, the discourtesy shown to us because we were foreign-born, imbued me, not with respect for the court, but with relief that the transaction was over, and indignation that one man had misrepresented to thirty-one potential citizens the ideals and traditions of true Americanism.

DORA M. BRIGGS.

And this other from Nashville, Tennessee.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

You may be interested in an account of the welcome given sixteen new citizens last week in Nashville, Tennessee.

The social took place in the assembly hall of Watkins's Free Night School, where there was an audience of over 500, mostly foreign-born.

Addresses were made by the judge, who had granted citizenship papers, the mayor of the city, an immigrant of many years standing, and one of the new Americans.

After the four addresses the band played the National airs of all the countries represented, while the audience visited the booths along the side of the wall, where French, Austrians, Roumanians, Russians, Italians, Swiss, Syrians, and Hungarians, dressed in the national costumes, served their native dishes and greeted us in their mother tongues.

This unique gathering was the work of the local Chapter of Colonial Dames, the Council of Jewish Women, and the Bertha Fensterwald Settlement.

Yours very truly.

* * *

With even-handed justice, we print the following: —

SOUTH HADLEY, MASS.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Since you have gone into the advertising business with such happy results for the spinster who wished a ready-made, self-supporting family, do you think you can conscientiously refuse other applications of a soul-stirring description?

As expressing, perhaps, the suppressed desires of a majority of your readers, I would like to suggest the following advertisements which might result in untold happiness for so many.

I. I am an earnest student, who has completed all the work which can be done in my line in this country. I have always wanted to travel, and as no institution seems eager to give me a fellowship for foreign research, I am anxious to find someone who will supply the financial backing and permit me to go to Europe for an *indefinite* time. A *regular* income during my absence would be necessary.

II. I am a young woman, thirty years of age, who has grown tired of wearing h
and years and years, and mendi
her clothes. I am very good-look
a suitable setting for my beauty
vided before it fades away. Wil
touch with a woman whose jewel
no longer a shrine for beauty.

III. I am a poet whose poem
cepted by the leading magazines
masse are repellent to my sensiti
fear the effect on my genius. The
one who, if my plight were know
give, that my poems might be p
de luxe.

IV. Well-educated college pro
usual salary), devoted reader of th
special pleasure in an uninterr
browsing. Lacking the subscrip
favorite periodical, a walk to the
is now necessary, in order to pro
stimulation at the price of breaki
ning. Will some kind person supply

Very truly yours,

CATHARINE

* * *

We are glad to give space t
communication from one of
low citizens who happens to
the statements of a contribut
litteratim from this 'America

CHICAGO, ILL.

THE EDITOR, ATLANTIC MONTHL

Inclosed you'll find a page f
slovak Review exposing your lyin
your magazine.

Liers are the greatest danger t
of the world and you are one of t

I hope you'll die like a dirty do

Yours truly

a Ame
of Czechoslov

* * *

Regarding the prejudice ag
sensibly discussed by Mr. Bo
Atlantic, many Americans o
origin may listen with profit
the Captains of Israel, called
teresting letter from E. J. Do
M. R. C., United States Arm

. . . It seems our narrow-mi
ists have forgotten the Jewish sai
of the Christian religion. They
heard of Sir William Herschel, F
and W. Meyerbeer, the astrono
Cohn and Victor Meyer, the che
Ricardo and Ferdinand Lassalle,
of Geiger and Sir Francis Cohn P
torians; of Ezekiel, Israels, and Ep
tors; of Madame Rachel, Edmu
field, and Sarah Bernhardt, the d
George Jessel and Asser, the ju

Digitized by Google

liam and Henry, only Frank and Jesse James themselves ever hung upon their own sentences. (As a matter of fact, Jesse was killed by a Ford — Bob, not Henry.)

In other words: —

THE REASON WHY

The reason why it would not pay
To print the sentences imposed
On Frank and Jesse James that day
Is very readily disclosed.

Uncounted thousands hang upon
The sentences of William James,
And Henry is another son
A host adoring still acclaims.

The sentences of Frank and Jesse
Were those on which they both were hung,
And since they ceased to be 'in esse,'
Their sentences are best unsung.

S. E. M.

* * *

This comment on the 'new schools,' by a conservative, voices the natural doubts of many teachers and parents.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

The articles in the *Atlantic* have interested me. I have a desire to ask questions. We hear much about fitting the boys and girls for life. That means, or should mean, fitting them to become good citizens of a great country. Will these progressive schools do that? What are some of the fundamental lessons children should learn? What does a schoolroom need for effective work?

The most important lesson is that of obedience. If not learned in childhood, like some diseases of children it comes hard later in life. American children of the present day are not famed for their respect for authority. Will these methods develop that quality? If so, welcome freedom in the classroom, socialized recitation, student government, and all the rest.

A second lesson is perseverance — the doing of a task whether we feel like doing it or not. We cannot go far in life without coming right up against that necessity. Here is something to be done. The child dislikes to do it. Devices to arouse interest fail, as they sometimes will. What then? Does this continual appeal to the interest of the child develop and strengthen the right kind of fibre in his character? Is 'the irksomeness of the steady grind' altogether to be deplored?

The musician knows what the steady grind means early in life. The hours at the piano or violin are a strain upon muscles and nerves. Is it physically more harmful for a child to sit on a chair adjusted to his needs and give courteous attention to class recitations and discussions? The writer of one article speaks of the temperamental child who suffered so much under this strain that he jumped out of the window and went home. Is it not possible that there may be children who will be disturbed by the noise of the carpentry bench

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

in the corner of the room, 'to which the boy may repair when tired of mental work?'

Not only the musician, but the artist, the artisan, the scientist, the athlete, the farmer, and the home-keeper know the weariness of routine. They know, too, that the world's business must be done, and they set themselves to the task. Is that not the attitude of a good citizen?

And now, what about the schoolroom? What is needed there? Air and sunlight, certainly, but why luxury? An artist's studio is not a place of ease and luxury; it is a place suited to his work. The laboratory of a scientist may not be beautiful: it is a workshop. A glance at either of these places shows the nature of the work done there.

A schoolroom is a place where the child learns to do things, where he discovers things by his own thinking and experimenting, and where — after some patient drudgery, it may be — he experiences the joy of accomplishment. Does it need to suggest the luxury of a cultured home, so that some children 'need not step down when they leave their homes for school'? If they do 'step down' from these homes, and touch elbows with others who step up when they enter the school, it seems to me a wholesome preparation for citizenship.

Too conservative? Perhaps so; though projects and motivation are a part of my creed. But has not the educational pendulum swung far enough in this direction? M. T. H.

* * *

English as she is spoke in Boston, we have fully discussed; but of English as Boston writes her, the publication of the following example may be of educational interest to Chicago and way stations.

KALAMAZOO, MICHIGAN.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

The wonderful tales which have been related by your correspondents concerning the super-educated proletariat of Boston are by no means incredible to me. Of course Bostonians are expert linguists — they have to be, in order to get about their city and keep out of jail.

For example, on a visit to your city, my eye lighted on this sign: 'Smoking allowed on this car only when weather permits running cars with windows open, and then only back of cross seats, when at least four windows on each side, including windows back of cross seats, are open.'

I repressed my desire. But suppose some unfortunate, more venturesome than I, had decided to take a chance. Suppose that, after reading this sign carefully, he had taken his place as directed, back of the cross seats, and that the four windows on each side were open, including the windows back of the cross seats. But suppose that, having only a single-track mind, he had failed to note that it was raining outside, and hence, although the windows were open, the weather really would not permit running the cars with windows open. He would of course be violating the regulation by smoking, and the poor devil would be liable to fine or imprisonment. Personally I am inclined to account for the culture of Bostonians by the operation of th ural selection or the survival of the unfit are either in jail — or Heaven.

Very truly yours,

CHARLES L

* * *

'From Missouri' comes this p tribution to a current discussion

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

What *do* teachers know?

One of them who is taking an exte in English asked me not long ago fo mation regarding modern poets. I authority, but I gave her a few nam took notes industriously.

'Grace Fallow Norton,' I said, has a poem in the *Atlantic*.'

She carefully put down, 'Norton –

I would n't have spoiled that for th went on hastily, though somewhat c say that Amy Lowell is perhaps at th school of free verse in this country.

She was very businesslike. 'Amy jotted down, 'school of free verse. looked up, pencil poised, — 'And w school located?' she asked.

Sincerely,

MARY F. H

* * *

And while we are on the subje ing, perhaps it is appropriate t certain attitude toward it on t some parents. We print this n example sent us from a famous sc

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Behold the trials of the secondary s endeavors to teach the youth of to-d English Composition. The paragra the reaction, in part, of a lawyer o City whose son had failed to meet ments. The name of the boy and of th changed, the rest is an exact transcrip

'Just how a boy can fail in the sub lish, even I today with my own expe not see or understand, and without h fear of possible successful contradict that no man lives today who could n as having failed or succeeded in Eng on possibly definitions or lack of something to memory; the subject o too broad to be marked down that w one might be very learned in Englis line and be utterly dumb about anothe could say *failure*, it seems incredible t even, but for fear you may not unde wish to say definitely that I am raisi with you or Kensington. I do not position to do that, but it is such an a element to all growing young men tha of any person might be valuable even ton when submitted by fair impartial am trying to do that, notwithstand involved.'

Digitized by Google

ATLANTIC SHOP-TALK

It is not often that new books by a brother and sister appear on the same publishing list at almost the same moment. This is occurring in the case of *Shackled Youth*, by **Edward Yeomans**, of Chicago, and *The Little Garden*, by his sister, **Mrs. Francis King**, of Alma, Michigan. Mrs. King is already well known as an authority on gardening. For some time she has been an official of the Garden Club of America, and is now president of the Woman's National Farm and Garden Association. She is, besides, the author of two important books on gardens and gardening, one of them published several years ago, the other within two months. But her new book, scheduled at this writing for June publication by the Atlantic Monthly Press, — in these days of upheaval among printers and bookbinders one says 'scheduled' instead of 'to be published,' — is quite different in that it is far more compact, more deliberately practical, and less expensive than either of her previous books. The spirit of it is clearly revealed in two paragraphs from her Preface: —

'The little garden will save the children. In it the children are the first to feel at home; for where is the baby who does not love a flower? And where is the four-year-old who will not plant and watch a seed? If our children grow to manhood and womanhood without the love of beauty, we are a nation lost. I quote the words of a friend, a fine woman farmer: "There never was a time when so much was being done to foster the commercial spirit on the farm in the children. Look at the pig clubs, the baby-beef clubs, the poultry clubs, the canning clubs, which the government is promoting. Beauty, too, should be cultivated in the young. If the children do not grow up with flowers . . . never will fully enjoy them."

'When, throughout this country, the flower-garden on the farm — when the small place, well planned and planted — shall have become the rule, not the exception, we shall possess a pervading loveliness in a land where to-day such loveliness is sadly lacking. In the successful treatment of ground small in dimension, in the beautiful quality of the little garden, lies the true future beauty of America.'

With suggestive pictures, plans, and tables Mrs. King tells, out of her own experience, how the little garden on which so much depends can be made in almost any surroundings. After all, the brother and sister are working in precisely the same direction — one for the unshackling of youth in the schoolroom, the other for the liberation of the human spirit through a loving intimacy with flowers.

* * *

Speaking of shackled youth — an inmate of a state prison in the Middle West has recently shown his interest in the publications of the Atlantic Monthly Press by asking whether he might not secure even an imperfect copy of *The Letters of William James* in exchange for specimens of the artistic handiwork of his fellow prisoners. It was fortunately possible to place a copy of the book in the hands of this correspondent. It is always a pleasant exercise of the imagination to follow a book from the place of its production to that of its reading, and to observe in fancy the impression it produces. *The Letters of William James* have carried delight and liberation to many persons, but there is no copy of the book the reading of which would have been more interesting to watch and to discuss than the copy sent forth in response to our correspondent's inquiry.

* * *

The name of **Miss Edith M. Patch** seems clearly destined to become widely known and highly valued in connection with her books of nature stories for children. About a year ago the Atlantic Monthly Press published the first volume, *Hexapod Stories*, in her *Little Gateways to Science* series. (We live in perpetual terror that *Gateways* will be misprinted *Getaways!*) In May the second volume, *Bird Stories*, made its appearance, and it is meeting with a reception which justifies our confident belief that the work of a real naturalist who knows how to write, supplemented by the illustrations of another real naturalist who knows how to draw, is sure to win the recognition it deserves. What **Mr. Robert J. Sim** has done for her two books by means of his illustrations should carry his name, like Miss Patch's, far outside the scientific circles in which their reputations were first established.

It seems a far cry from *Bird Stories* to 'potato mosaic.' The first term requires no explanation; the second suggests to the uninitiated an amazing blend of Ireland and Byzantium. But it is from *Bird Stories* to 'potato mosaic' that Miss Patch, in her professional capacity of Entomologist of the University of Maine, has turned for the summer. At Aroostook Farm, Presque Isle, Maine, she is now devoting herself, at the request of the Bureau of Plant Industry at Washington and

Digitized by Google

the Department of Plant Pathology at the Maine Agricultural Experiment Station, to a study of the possible connection between rose and other aphids and the plant disease bearing the Irish-Byzantine name. The rescue of the potato-seed industry of Maine is the extremely important object of the work for which she has temporarily abandoned the pleasures of authorship. But her own Gateways to Science are evidently swinging wider and wider open.

* * *

One of the last industries of **Mr. A. Edward Newton** before he sailed for Europe late in May was to inscribe two hundred and sixty-five bookish sentiments and his own autograph on pages to be bound with the limited edition of his new book, *A Magnificent Farce, and Other Diversions of the Book-Collector,* which the Atlantic Monthly Press will publish early in the autumn. Collectors have already got wind of this volume, and the advance orders for the two hundred and fifty copies to be offered for sale are accumulating at a rate that seems sure to place the book among those securities of the 'when, as, and if issued' class which rapidly go above par. Mr. Newton has distinguished between quotations from the writings of others and of himself by the use of quotation-marks in the first instance and not in the second; but in the quotations from others he has rarely indicated the source from which he has drawn. This amounts to the invention of a pretty game for nearly every possessor of the book — to trace the sentiment with which it is inscribed to its lair. From Bacon and Dr. Johnson down to Mr. Newton's own contemporaries, the lovers of books sound their praises in memorable terms. The only pity is that one volume can hold but a single quotation of Mr. Newton's choice, and not the entire collection.

* * *

The Summer Schools of the country will soon be in full swing, and just what this means is but dimly realized by many Americans. There are multitudes who do realize it, for it is in terms of multitudes that the enrollments in those departments of our colleges and universities are numbered. They have indeed become a definite and important element in the national scheme of education. What separates them most sharply from most institutions of learning is that nearly all the students are themselves teachers. The flocking of these busy men and women to Summer Schools, merely for the sake of becoming better teachers, through the study either of educational methods or of their own special subjects, is a phenomenon full of promise for the teaching profession.

Among the bits of knowledge which t pick up to the greatest advantage we can hoping that the learning teachers will lea thing this summer about the newer sort published for educational purposes — particular, the textbooks that proceed f Atlantic Monthly Press. It has been ou desire that these books should embody spirit in education, the spirit that relat ing directly to life. It is not to the pund blue-stocking that they are addressed the person whose mind is open to the re that literature, history, science, and art remote creations, to be studied by Pet but vital portions of life itself, the life are capable of leading. **Mr. Edward Y** has said all this, and a great deal beside *Shackled Youth;* we believe that our sc college texts put the general theory into But what is this? Is our Shop-Talk mer perceptibly into a Summer-School lectu ish the thought!

* * *

The gradual entrance of phrases into speech is one of the interesting phenc language. It was recently illustrated at t sellers' Convention at Atlantic City, wh complished bookseller of Chicago, M Kroch, addressed his fellow-workers on tice of their calling. 'From my early y said, 'I felt the amenities of book-collec this incomparable joy taught me the ps of the book-buyers.' When, later on, casually of 'another Newton,' it was ea where the 'amenities' phrase came from

It was in a few sentences about the p that control his own selling of books Kroch answered many questions that h raised about the decline of bookshops he asked, could he sell books to strang became his friends, and returned for mo 'Because I offered them something I kne thing I loved, and because I transmitte my honest enthusiasm. All this was uno genuine, and not forced. And here you first three points of the successful bo know your books; become enthusiastic ov transmit this enthusiasm to your client

This 'slogan' for booksellers is not so c that motto for purchasers, 'Buy a Book which Mr. Newton himself launched i *lantic.* But if Mr. Kroch's 'points' coul even more widely operative than they a side of the book-counters, and Mr. principle on the other, how happily troubles of publishers, booksellers, and ing public might be resolved!

Digitized by Google

LANTIC MONTHLY

AUGUST, 1921

C ASPECTS OF DISARMAMENT

BY FRANK I. COBB

George, then
quer in the As-
d that the di-
'the countries
at time no less
ear, and were
would double
hen predicted
of the nations
e strain; and it
strain. Within
n the midst of
yet recorded
an race.
Germany has
r this conflict,
s formally ac-
y of Versailles.
rmany was re-
ean that Ger-
onditions that
and that Ger-
issues that in-
s. The record
the main, the
Government in
914, after Lord
rey, the British
oreign Affairs,
a four-power
situation that
sassinations at

Speaking recently in the House of Commons, the British Prime Minister, in referring to the origin of the war, said, —

'The more one reads the memoirs and books written in the different countries upon what happened before August 1, 1914, the more one realizes that no one at the head of affairs quite meant war at that stage. It was something towards which they glided, or rather staggered and stumbled, perhaps through folly.'

President Wilson was savagely censured in 1916 for a speech in which he said that he did not know just what the war was about, and had never been able to find anybody who could tell him. To his exasperated critics there was no mystery whatever about it. Europe was at war because the Germans were a wicked and depraved folk, who had taken diabolical advantage of the unsuspecting innocence of the Russians, the French, and the British. An opinion of that sort does well enough for the temporary purposes of propaganda, but it hardly serves the ends of history; and curiously enough we are still without authentic information as to the final argument that swung the Imperial Government to one of the most reckless and disastrous decisions in all history. All

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

the German war memoirs, biographies, and recollections that have appeared since the war are strangely vague when they arrive at that fateful moment when the sword was thrown into the balance. They do not tell us precisely who was in favor of and who was opposed to war, and what the final argument was that determined the course of the Government.

Yet it is possible to piece together certain scraps of information that are available, and arrive at a fairly satisfactory conclusion. In order to sustain its enlarged military establishment, the German Government had been compelled to impose what was equivalent to a tax on capital. This tax was most burdensome to German commerce and industry under the intensive competition to which they were subjected. Not only were the Social Democrats, the most numerous party in the Empire, preparing to resist the renewal of the military estimates, but German business was increasingly restive under this kind of taxation. To the Junker mind there was no solution of the problem short of war. To [illegible] the military establishment was [illegible]. To make the political [illegible] necessary to arouse the Social Democrats and secure their support for the army programme was [illegible]. The overthrow had become necessary, in the Imperial opinion. Thereupon the machine of the [illegible] the House of Lords [illegible] and the Social Democratic [illegible] — which [illegible] a successful foreign war is the [illegible] a domestic crisis. [illegible] was [illegible] a [illegible] that [illegible] which [illegible] [illegible] was fulfilled.

When the Chancellor of the Exchequer made the speech referred to, the $2,250,000,000 which the nations were spending every year for past and future wars represented $50,000,000,000 of wealth, on a basis of five per cent. In other words, $50,000,000,000 of the world's assets were for all practical purposes segregated and devoted to the task of earning income to be devoted exclusively to supporting military adventures of one kind or another.

After a war that cost approximately $348,000,000,000 in property and production, nobody quite knows the aggregate war budget of the nations. It has been variously estimated at from eight to ten billion dollars a year. If we take the smaller figure and capitalize it at the modest rate of five per cent, the amount is $160,000,000,000 — which means that, after extinguishing $348,000,000,000 of the world's wealth, $160,000,000,000 of what is left is now set aside to pay the reckoning and make ready for new wars.

It is needless to say that labor and industry cannot carry that burden, and when government attempts to sweat them to that extent, it is defeating the very ends of national defense which it professes to serve. War is no longer a conflict between uniformed forces of professional combatants. It is a conflict of all the resources of the belligerents, of whatsoever kind and nature. What ended this war was the overwhelming economic force of the United States. What enabled Germany to fight all Europe to a standstill on two fronts was, not its superior military establishment, but its superior economic system.

The German army was undoubtedly the most perfect military machine ever constructed by the genius of man, but it shocked itself within six weeks after the beginning of the war. All the elaborately contrived plans of the General

Digitized by Google

Staff were frustrated at the battle of the Marne, after von Kluck had outmarched his communications. The remainder of the war was a series of desperate attempts on the part of the German high command to adjust itself to conditions that it had never contemplated; and in the end it was the economic collapse of internal Germany which left Ludendorff's armies a defenseless shell. So much for military preparedness at its best and its worst.

While military experts are acrimoniously discussing the lessons of the war, the most important lesson attracts practically no attention on their part. It is the lesson that was demonstrated in its most dramatic form by the American intervention — that is, that economic resources can be easily and quickly translated into military resources; that a sound economic system is the essential element in any extensive military undertaking. But these resources are not interchangeable. Economic energy can be speedily converted into military energy, but military energy is not reconvertible into economic energy. Like the radiated heat of the sun, it is lost. It can never be reassembled and welded into another sun.

The white man's civilization is an economic civilization. It is sustained by economic supremacy, and by that alone. It is that which has given to the so-called Nordic races their dominion over land and sea. In point of numbers they are inferior to the brown and yellow races. In point of physical courage they are likewise inferior, for the Oriental faces both torture and death with a resignation and a fatalism that the white man either had never attained or has long ago lost. In ability to endure hardship, to exist on a minimum of nourishment, and to survive in the midst of an evil environment, the swarming millions of Asia are superior to the European or the American. As for intellectual power, dismissing the uses to which that power is applied, the Eastern mind has attained a discipline and a subtlety of reasoning that the Western mind has never yet achieved. It is the white man's economic accomplishments which have been the magic carpet that transported him everywhere, and the armor that none could penetrate. While this economic supremacy exists, no other race can challenge the white man's civilization. Whenever that supremacy has been weakened, the white man's civilization has been menaced. It is again in peril.

Three great military empires were extinguished in the war, but three great economic empires were wrecked, as well. Russia has been rightly described as an 'economic vacuum.' Austria-Hungary is practically in ruins; and whether the great German economic machine will ever be permitted to function freely again is still a matter of speculation. We are only beginning to comprehend the terrific impact of the blow that the war dealt to the economic structure of Europe; and from the day the Armistice was signed, conditions have grown steadily worse. It must be apparent to anybody who will examine the situation dispassionately that, unless this economic fabric can be speedily restored, modern civilization may slowly disintegrate, to its utter ruin, as preceding civilizations have disintegrated.

Obviously the place to begin the work of reconstruction, so far as the government is concerned, is with the burden of taxation under which all the great nations are groaning. The one point at which an extensive reduction of taxation can be made, which reduction will have an instantaneous economic effect, is military expenditure.

The United States is spending on future wars alone more than the entire net expenses of the Federal govern-

Digitized by Google

ment five years ago. It is spending as much as the aggregate net earnings of all the railroads of the country in their most prosperous year. Nobody has yet shown wherein there is a shadow of an excuse for this exhausting strain on the nation's economic resources, or what peril or policy of government can warrant such expenditure. To say that it is done for the national defense is silly. The national defense is weakened, not strengthened, by this excessive drain.

Of all the nonsense that is talked about preparedness, no other nonsense quite touches the depths of imbecility which are reached by the prattle about nations that are 'rich but defenseless.' Nations that are rich are not defenseless. They contain in themselves all the elements for defense. They may have been defenseless in times when war was the exclusive business of professional soldiers, but all that has been changed. The elements of national defense are now the sum total of all the economic resources of the country plus all the man power. In time of imminent danger, the mobilization of a thousand chemists might be infinitely more important than the mobilization of a million troops.

The conventional argument that armament is a form of national insurance is one that is not highly impressive in the circumstances. Insurance does not run parallel with competitive armament, and it is with competitive armament that the world is dealing. No property-owner feels compelled to take out new policies because a business rival has increased his insurance. Nor does he ever feel impelled to establish a two-policy or three-policy standard in respect to other property owners, or solemnly to announce as a measure of life or death that, come what may, his insurance must equal that of any of his competitors, whether he occupies a fireproof building or not.

Moreover, if a manufacturer devoted eighty per cent of his tota the United States govern ing, to paying insurance p creditors would soon interv case would also receive th tention of an expert alienis be solvent, and he might neither his solvency nor his be taken for granted. Wha ual could not do withou himself to court proceedin ery government is doing in national defense.

No nation can be asked t of all defense — that is bounds of reason; but th competitive armament has sustain it except the incon statesmanship. Most war by politicians engaged in race-prejudices and interna ries for their own advan that spring from the peopl are few, indeed; and most o that is now spent in prepa other war among the wh doubly wasted. If there is during the lifetime of the tion, on a scale equal to th cent war, it makes no dif triumphs or who is defea and vanquished alike will p ruins of the civilization tha destroyed.

Spending money on com mament at this time, under of providing for national de drawing blood from a pat suffering from pernicious an disease may not be fatal i the remedy is sure to be. W rope can recover from the e inconceivably disastrous w debatable question. No p reasonably familiar with th in which mankind finds itsel ture to predict the general ilization five years hence. still hanging in the balance

Digitized by Google

trine of *Welt-*
s taken on as-
reamed of by
Staff. It has
stern civiliza-
at comes from
opment, or the
sult from eco-
se is inevitable
of the world
d by the com-

petition of armament that has been stimulated beyond the wildest dreams of ante-bellum imperialism. Unless the statesmanship of the world can be brought to a realization of the imperative necessity of economic rehabilitation and of the immediate need of sacrificing everything that stands in the way of that rehabilitation, then indeed was this war the Götterdämmerung — the twilight of the white man's gods.

EACHING IN LONDON

BY JOSEPH FORT NEWTON

iter was Minister of the City Temple, in London, following the His ministry was not intended to be permanent, but was under- ambassadorship of good-will from the churches of America to as an adventure in Anglo-American friendship. It was a great ss-roads of the centuries at such a time, a teacher of Christian he spirit and genius of our country to the motherland. The fol- kept during those years of the great war and the little peace, sions, and reflections, of men, women, and movements, of f affairs, of issues still unsettled, and events that seem to aning, and of beauty-spots in one of the loveliest lands on earth. endship of English-speaking peoples I am still convinced; but manifest as it seemed to be. Once I discussed this matter with man of England over the tea-cups; and to my suggestion that hour for relaxation from the strain and hurry of its life, he re- offered you tea once and you would not take it!' His thought mericans need is 'a smoking-room acquaintance'—something rmality, and enable them to mingle in freedom and fellowship. s cannot meet in a smoking-room, and in this instance their ig- alling. Still, if each one who journeys from one country to the od-will, the sum of our efforts will be felt at last.

ress my deep gratitude for the cordial and fraternal reception England, Scotland, and Wales, and to renew the hope that, fusion of war and reaction have passed away, the two great ay be drawn into an intelligent and enduring friendship.]

don! If I had anywhere, or have known n town,' where

all things turn to the left, as they do in the *Inferno* of Dante. And how quiet! Compared with the din of New York, or the hideous nightmare of the Chicago

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

loop, London is as quiet as a country village. There are no sky-scrapers to be seen, but the picture spread out like a panorama from Primrose Hill is not to be forgotten. Slowly it works its ancient spell, — equally on long sun-drenched afternoons, and on those pensive evenings of not insistent rain, — everywhere the hauntings of history, everywhere the stir and throb of history in the making. From a low, dim sky a gentle rain was falling when I arrived, and a soft wind, burdened with a damp fragrance, came as a delicate promise of the purity at the heart of things. Along the aloof avenues of the rich, and the drab streets of the poor, that little wind wandered, like a breath of God bringing a sudden tenderness and sad beauty to an imaginative soul. At such times the essential spirit of London is revealed, — its mysterious promise of half-hidden things becoming almost palpable, — and I feel strangely at home in its quiet excitement, its vivid stimulations, and its thousand evocative appeals. London has seen war before; it is a very old city, weary with much experience, and willing to forgive much because it understands much.

Yes, it is London; but the question is, Which London is it? For there are many Londons — the London of the Tower and the Abbey, of Soho and the Strand, of Downing Street and Whitechapel, of Piccadilly and Leicester Square. There is the London of Whittington and his Cat, of Goody Two-shoes and the Canterbury Shades, of Shakespeare and Chatterton, of Nell Gwynne and Dick Steele — aye, the London of all that is bizarre in history and strange in romance. They are all here, in this gigantic medley of past and present, of misery and magnificence. Sometimes, for me, it is hard to know which holds closest, the London of fiction or the London of fact, or the London of literature, which is a blending of both. Anyway, as I see it, C carouses with Tom Jones, a Fielding discusses philosophy Vicar of Wakefield; Nicholas makes bold to speak to M Thackeray, and to ask his fa half of a poor artist of the nan ner; and 'Boz,' as he passes Longacre, is tripped up by t Dodger, and falls into the ar Charles Lamb on his way t Lady Beatrix Esmond. No London is in large part a drea is most enchanting.

May 20. — Attended the Weigh House Church to-day famous by Dr. Binney, — a Dr. Orchard preach. He is a dinary preacher, of vital min thentic insight, and of challe sonality. From an advance position he has swung toward Catholicism, and by an elabor symbols is seeking to lead me sacramental approach to the experience. Only a tiny wisp seldom have I heard a preac searching, more aglow with t passion. He does not simply l imagination: he gives one a vi of reality. He has a dangero humor, which often sharpens i but he uses it as a whip of cord sham out of the temple. He preaching in the Anglican C really worse than necessary, was sure that in reordination enough for the bishop to lay on the preacher; the servant the tram-driver ought also to consecration. With his face cried, 'You need Christ, and I Him to you.' Surely that is mate grace of the pulpit. It the oft-repeated record in the of Wesley, in respect to the c to whom he preached: 'I ga Christ.' It was not merely a was a sacrament of communic

Digitized by Google

rit of rever-
glish church
he too free
erican wor-
of quiet, of
lly poignant
atmosphere
ion and in-
a different
ge and moral
nce between
aching, but
The English
nd edify his
of their faith
preacher is
cation of re-
oment. The
ch, as to a
o forget the
refreshed in
backgrounds
ee the prob-
as been said
f the Amer-
English pul-
h has some-
er.
y ever hope
ne than was
n to the City
. Something
ps because I
I was asked
the Temple.
n of Joseph
ke a young
he mistake of
le which he
r, the better
iences. The
ack to the
e top gallery
in the area,
It was ter-
floor in my
the naughty
are wont to
rs — how we

talk through the nose, and the like. My sermon, and almost my wits, began to leave me. There was a vase of flowers on the vestry desk, and in the midst of my agony, as I bent over it to enjoy the fragrance, I saw a dainty envelope tucked down in it. Lifting it out, I saw that it was addressed to me, and, opening it, this is what I read: —

Welcome! God bless you. We have not come to criticize, but to pray for you and pray with you. — THE CITY TEMPLE CHURCH.

At once all my nervousness was forgotten; and if that day was a victory, it was due, not to myself, but to those who knew that I was a stranger in a strange land, and whose good-will made me feel at home in a Temple made mellow by the richness of its experience, like an old violin which remembers all the melodies it has heard.

May 28. — Every day, almost anywhere, one sees a little tragedy of the war. Here is an example. Scene I: a tube train standing at Blackfriars Station. Enter a tired-looking man with a 'cello in its cumbrous case. He sinks heavily into a seat and closes his eyes. People passing stumble against his instrument and are, in about equal numbers, apologetic, annoyed, and indifferent. Enter a tall New Zealander. He sits opposite the tired 'cellist, and looks lovingly at the instrument. Scene II: the same, four stations west. The New Zealander rises to leave the car. The musician looks up, and his eyes meet those of the soldier. The latter smiles faintly, trying to be light-hearted, and pointing to the 'cello-case, says: 'No more of that for me. It was my favorite instrument.' He goes out, and the 'cellist sees that his right sleeve is empty. He flushes slightly and, after a moment, blows his nose defiantly, looking round furtively to see if anyone has had the indecency to notice his emotion. No one has.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

June 4. — Went down to-day to see White Horse Hill, near Uffington, and lay for hours on the June grass near the head of that huge horse carved in the chalk. What a superb panorama of Southern, Western, and Midland shires lay spread out, with the Hampshire and Wiltshire downs to the south, clipped out on the skyline. Just below is the vale of White Horse, which Michael Drayton, no mean judge of such matters, held to be the queen of English vales. The great creating tide of summer is nearing its zenith. Everything is brimming over with sap, scent, and song. Yet one is conscious of the infinitely old all around, of the remote and legendary. The Horse himself, for instance — who cut him out of the turf? When? To what heroic or religious end? There is nothing to tell us. How different Nature is in a land where man has mingled his being with hers for countless generations; where every field is steeped in history and every crag is ivied with legend. Such places give me a strange sense of kinship with the dead, who were not as we are; the 'long, long dead, the men who knew not life in towns, and felt no strangeness in sun and wind and rain.' Uffington Castle, with its huge earth walls and ditches, is near by. Perhaps the men of the Stone Age fortified it. Perhaps King Alfred fought the Danes there. Nobody knows, and a day in June is no time to investigate. But what is that faint, rhythmic throb? The guns in France!

June 9. — Spent yesterday afternoon and evening at the country house of Lord and Lady M——, with an oddly assorted group of journalists, labor leaders, socialists, radicals, conservatives, moderates, and what not. It was a rainbow club, having all colors of opinion, and yet, as Carlyle said of his talk with Sterling, 'except in opinion not disagreeing.' They discussed many matters, formally on the lawn, or informally in groups, with frankness, and thoroughness were not afraid of names They cracked the nut of ever idea and got the kernel. Th course, was a topic, but m the background of other topi light and shadow of which ma were discussed, such as Irelan American relations, industria racy, socialism, religion, and The Government was mercile cized — not merely abused, with intelligently, with co suggestion, and all in good sp to imagine such discussions at table on Fifth Avenue.

It was a revelation to me, that there is more freedom of t England than in America. Li fact, means a different thing in from what it does with us. In it signifies the right to think, act differently from other peo us it is the right to develop acc a standardized attitude of th conduct. If one deviates fr standard, he is scourged into li lash of opinion. We think in lock-step movement. Nor is formity imposed from without herent in our social growth a An average American knows t as many people as the average man, and talks ten times as m are gregarious; we gossip; and everyone knows the affairs one else, we are afraid of one For that reason, even in time public opinion moves with a ed ruthlessness unknown in where the majority has no such tyranny as it has with us.

June 11. — More than once I have heard Dr. Forsyth lectu am as much puzzled by his sp I have long been by his writi time I found myself intereste his thesis than in the curiously

Digitized by Google

is now several
ious article on
a vice, if it is
enemy, if he
er think of ac-
range. I have
yth has writ-
yet I have no
y it. As was
gle sentences
s, — many of
epigrams, —
g, like a Scot-
Mount Cal-
gram of Eras-
his day, that
tlety from the
when one ex-
extricate his
in the mystic
ion. But per-
n he writes on
ature and art,
piring as he is

s a soft, hazy
London; and
was a rain of
plosions were
oled, windows
— and it was
ple soon filled
, excited, but
Quickly ambu-
her and yon.
emple I saw a
joining hands
ered house, as
l — one little
— were being
ture prevailed.
and firm. Ev-
ful, practical.
ng to and fro,
d at all. I find
ch less to ana-
I seemed to be
nt tide of emo-
anger, nor ex-

citement, — in which my will floated like a tiny boat on a sea. There was an unmistakable current of thought, how engendered and how acting I know not; but I was inside it and swept along by it. While my mind was alert, my individuality seemed to abdicate in favor of something greater than itself. I shall never forget the sense of unity and fusion of purpose, a wave of common humanity, which drew us all together in a trustful and direct comradeship.

June 18. — Met H. G. Wells at lunch to-day, his invitation being a response to my sermon on his book, *God, the Invisible King*. He entered with a jigging sort of gait, perspiring profusely, — in fact, doing everything profusely, — all fussed up about the heat, saying that he feared it would exterminate him. In personal appearance he is not distinguished, except his eyes, where one divines the strength of the man. Eager, friendly, companionable, his talk, thinly uttered, is not unlike his writing — vivid, stimulating, at times all-questioning. Just now he is all aglow with his discovery of God, 'the happy God of the heart,' to use his words. He looked surprised when I suggested that he had found what the Bible means by the Holy Spirit, as if he had thought his discovery entirely new. What if this interesting man, — whose genius is like a magic mirror reflecting what is in the minds of men before they are aware of it themselves, — so long a member of the Sect of Seekers, should join the Fellowship of the Finders. Stranger things have happened, but his rushing into print with his discovery fills me with misgiving. The writing man is an odd species, but I recall the saying of the Samoan chief to the missionary: 'We know that at night Some One goes by among the trees, but we never speak of it.' Anyway, we had a nutritious time.

Two ministers have just told me how, at a meeting of ministers some time ago,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

which they attended, a resolution was offered, and nearly passed, to the effect that not one of them would darken the doors of the City Temple during my ministry. My visitors told it with shame, confessing that they, too, had been prejudiced against me as an American. It recalled how, thirty years ago, when Dr. John Hall was called to the Fifth Avenue Presbyterian Church, New York, he received a letter from an American friend saying, 'You will find a prejudice against you in the minds of some of the smaller men here. It is natural that they should feel slighted by a call being given to you, a foreigner, which to some extent will be strengthened by the prejudice against Irishmen in particular.' Evidently human nature is much the same on both sides of the sea; but that was long ago, and our two countries were not then allies in the great war. I do not recall that in recent years any British minister working in America — of whom there are many, but not half enough — has had to face such a feeling.

July 18. — Joined the Bishop of London at luncheon with the Lord Mayor at the Mansion House, and he was much interested in the ministry of my colleague, Miss Maude Royden. The two grave questions in his mind seemed to be, first, does she actually stand in the pulpit where I stand when I preach? second, does she wear a hat? If I had to wear the gaiters of the Bishop of London, I should be concerned, not about Miss Royden's hat, but about what she is doing with the brains under her hat. Like John Wesley, she may remain all her days in the Anglican fold, but she will be there only in her private capacity, and her influence will be centrifugal. The Bishop, moreover, though his foresight is not abnormal, ought to suspect the existence of the forces gathering about the greatest woman preacher of our generation outside his jurisdiction. Had he been wise, instead of le to consort with feminists, int and social revolutionaries ou church, he would have set he of bringing them inside. As little dark woman in the big pit is a note of interrogation ture of the Church of Englan sign of its failure to meet a gr ment; but the Bishop can se but her hat!

Frail of figure, slight uns with a limp in her gait, as Miss Royden is singularly ef her simplicity and directness. no shrillness in her eloquenc pression of strain. In style tional rather than oratorical, with the inevitable ease of long Some of her epigrams are unf in their quick-sighted summ situations; as when she said r the Royal Albert Hall: 'The England is the Conservative prayer.' She is an authority o ters pertaining to woman holding much the same positi land that Miss Jane Addam held in America. Untrained ogy, — which some hold to vantage, — she deals with t sues of faith as an educated, minded woman in sensitiv with life, albeit casting aside fied Christianity' that Wells scribed as the religion of the classes. Not the least import her work is what I call her 'c service as guide, confidant, to hundreds of women, and as to not a few. Here she does man may ever hope to do, do a time when England is a women who are entering up new, strange, and difficult. mains a loyal Anglican, at le giving an example of that unity of which we hear so mu so little.

Digitized by Google

h people can
ıd Americans
re the merits
ective lands.
t in his coun-
he other, and
a that differ-
l be amusing,
One sees so
roops are be-
detachments,
hat contacts
mericans and
ther askance,
have a dim
played and
ot sure that
ds. Both are
ins are thick
, and it takes
spots. Each
ıe right time.
e reticence of
for snobbish-
English are
aughter that
ee the dimin-
locomotives,
if they were
they fall into
arrivals were
an wise, who
failed, it was
trick.' They
ey did harm.
er before the
can keep our
se of humor.
e neither un-
he other, re-
mericans and
h other quick-
oubt because
ke. We shall

cism actually
e other day I
in the morn-
fternoon, and

an Englishman in the evening. It was most interesting, and the differences of accent and emphasis were very striking. The American was topical and oratorical, the Scotchman expository and analytical, the Englishman polished and persuasive. After the evening service a dear old Scotchman confided to me that no Englishman had ever preached a real sermon in his life, and that the sermon to which we had just listened would be resented by a village congregation in Scotland. On my objecting that there are great preachers in England, he insisted that 'an Englishman either reads an essay, or he talks nonsense; and neither of these is preaching.' As a rule, a good English sermon is, if not an essay, at least of the essay type; but the Scotchman exaggerated. When I made bold to ask him what he thought of American preaching, with a twinkle in his eye he quoted the words of Herbert:

> 'Do not grudge
> To pick treasures out of an earthen pot.
> The worst speaks something good: if all want sense,
> God takes a text, and preacheth patience.'

Not wishing to tempt providence, I did not press the matter; but we did agree, diplomatically, that neither type of preaching is what it ought to be. The people are not astonished at the teaching, as of old, nor do the rulers tremble with rage.

July 24. — Had a delightful chat over a chop with Sir Gilbert Parker, and a good 'row' about Henry James. When I called James's renunciation of his American for British citizenship an apostasy, my host was 'wicked' enough to describe it as an apotheosis. It was in vain that I argued that James was not a true cosmopolitan, else he would have been at home anywhere, even in his own country. The talk then turned to the bad manners of the two countries, ours being chiefly diplomatic, theirs literary. Indeed, if one takes the trouble

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

to read what Englishmen have written about America, — from the days long gone when they used to venture across the Atlantic to enlighten us with lectures in words of one syllable, to the days of Dickens, and how Britishers have gone sniffing their way through America, finding everything wrong because un-English, — it is a wonder there has not been war every five years. This attitude of supercilious and thinly veiled contempt has continued until it has hardened into a habit. Nor could we recall any books written in America in ridicule of England. Meanwhile, our diplomatic atrocities have been outrageous. Such antics and attitudes, we agreed, would make friendship impossible between individuals, and they demand an improvement in manners, as well as in morals, on both sides. In the midst of the question whether Watts-Dunton saved Swinburne or extinguished him, there was an air-raid warning — and so we reached no conclusion.

July 27. — Received the following letter from a City Temple boy in the trenches: —

SOMEWHERE IN HELL, *July* 16.

DEAR PREACHER, —

The luck is all on your side; you still believe in things. Good for you. It is topping, if one can do it. But war is such a devil's nursery. I got knocked over, but I am up and at it again. I'm tough. They started toughening me the first day. My bayonet instructor was an ex-pug, just the man to develop one's innate chivalry. They hung out the bunting and gave me a big send-off, when we came out here to scatter the Hun's guts. Forgive me writing so. I know you will forgive me, but who will forgive God? Not I — not I! This war makes me hate God. I don't know whether He is the God of battles and enjoys the show, as He is said to have done long ago. . . . If so, there are smoking holocausts enough to please Him in No Man's Land. But, anyway, He let it happen! Omnipotent! and — He let it happen! Omniscient! Knew it in ad
let it happen! I hate Him. You
to me than God has been. Good

The religious reactions of r
the pressure and horror of wa
terrifying. The general rule —
of course, there are many e
both ways — is that those v
pious, with a kind of traditio
come out hard and indifferent,
times militantly skeptical; w
who were careless emerge de
ous — religious, but hardly
with a primitive pantheism m
fatalism. Many, to be sure,
firmed in a mood such as h
stories of Conrad, in which the
bad alike sink into a 'vast ind
or the mood of Hardy, in wh
mism is mitigated by pity. C
back upon the 'hard, unyie
spair' of Russell, and their he
me with awe. Huxley, I know
the great Force that rules the
a force to be fought, and he
to fight it. It may be magnif
it is not war. The odds are s
the fight so futile. And still of
learned, at last, the meanin
Cross.

(In the interval between the
tries, I went along the war-front,
of the British Government; and a
ing some time speaking to the
turned to America. I discovered
ing America, the like of which
ever seen, or even imagined, befo
where one heard the sound of
marching, marching; and I, wh
seen what they were marching int
it all with an infinite ache in
Hardly less terrifying was the blen
anger, hate, knight-errantry, hyst
ism, cynicism, moralistic fervor
bafflement, which made up the
of America. One felt the altruis
humanity, the sincerity and she
ness lurking under all our law
long sleeked over by prosperity
until we were scarcely aware of

Digitized by Google

Texas to Boston I
ır people what the
ch I returned to

a group of Free
rivate breakfast
nister at No. 10
as the most ex-
I have ever at-
guests as for its
e spoke to us for
d we saw him at
timacy of a self-
ming. What a
by the lifting of
ug of the shoul-
pause, volumes
ll. He feels that
en are estranged,
ain matters and
ddress was very
ggestion of cun-
r, despite a win-
like a man in a
as unable to do
ike to do. As he
enormous diffi-
lace, — the pull
erests, — his in-
the vast issues
eal. No wonder
is hair almost
nes in his face.
-length painting
of the two to-
s country in an
I thought him
pany, — though
e tradition, — a
an of principles,
terious force of
or Peel, but lack-
eternal fascina-
men are usually
atan and half-
e Minister does
te.
ddress there was
the Prime Min-

ister, during which he learned that Nonconformity had been estranged to some extent — and he also learned why. One of the urgent questions before the country is an actual choice between Bread and Beer, and the Government has been unable, apparently, to decide. The food-hogging brewery interests seem to be sovereign, and the Prime Minister is tied — too willingly, perhaps. When asked why, unlike President Wilson, he avoids the use of the word God in his addresses, I thought his reply neat. It is done deliberately, he said, lest he seem to come into competition with the blasphemous mouthings of the German Emperor. His final plea was that, as Britain must bear the brunt of the war until America is ready, — as Russia bore it until Britain was ready, — she must muster all her courage, her patience, and her moral fortitude.

As I left the house, a group of lynx-eyed, sleuth-like press-men — good fellows, all — waylaid and assailed me for some hint of the meaning of such a gathering; but I was dumb. They were disappointed, saying that 'after a minister has had breakfast with the Prime Minister he ought to be a well-primed minister'; but as I declined to be pumped, they let me go. When the supply of truth is not equal to the demand, the temptation is to manufacture, and speculations in the afternoon papers as to the significance of the breakfast were amazing. It was called 'A Parson's Peace,' in which the Prime Minister had called a prayer-meeting to patch up a peace with the enemy — which is about as near as some journals ever arrive at the truth.

November 6. — Under cover of a dense fog — a dirty apron which Mother Nature flung over us to hide us from the air-raiders — I went down last night into Essex, to preach in a village chapel for a brother who is discouraged in his

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

work. I found the chapel hidden away on a back street, telling of a time when these little altars of faith and liberty dared not show themselves on the main street of a town. It was named Bethesda, bringing to mind the words of Disraeli, in *Sybil*, where he speaks of 'little plain buildings of pale brick, with names painted on them of Zion, Bethel, Bethesda; names of a distant land, and the language of a persecuted and ancient race; yet such is the mysterious power of their divine quality, breathing consolation in the nineteenth century to the harassed forms and harrowed souls of a Saxon peasantry.' Nor is that all. They have been the permanent fountains of religious life on this island; and, in any grand reunion of the Church hereafter to be realized, their faith, their patience, their heroic tenacity to principle must be conserved, else something precious will perish. Tribute is paid to the folk of the Mayflower for their daring of adventure in facing an unknown continent for the right to worship; but no less heroic were the men who remained in the homeland, fighting, suffering, and waiting for the freedom of faith and the liberty of prayer.

November 10. — So, at last, it is decided that we are to be rationed as to bread, sugar, and fats of all kinds, and everybody must have a coupon. It is a democratic arrangement, since all will share equally as long as the supply lasts. Unfortunately the Truth has been rationed for a long time, and no coupons are to be had. It is a war fought in the dark by a people fed on lies. One recalls the line in the Iliad, which might have been written this morning: 'We mortals hear only the news, and know nothing at all.' No one wishes to publish information which would be of aid to the enemy; but that obvious precaution is made the convenient cover of every kind of stupidity and inefficiency. Propaganda is the most terribl so far developed by the war. I than poison gas. If the wind right direction, gas may kill a injure others; but the possib manipulating the public mind, holding or discoloring the fact palling. One is so helpless in No one can think intelligently knowing the facts; and if the controlled by interested men, idea of democracy is destroyed comes a farce. This, and the tion of parliamentary govern every democratic land, are dangers of a political kind m dreaded.

November 17. — Dean Ingе Paul's, is one of the greatest this island, and an effective p one forgets the manner and a the matter of his discourse. tocrat by temper, he is a pes philosophy and a Christian faith — what a combination actually a pessimist, he is at lea sandra, and we need one such if no more, in every generat wonder he won the title of 'th Dean.' Without wasting a w style as incisive as his thought, keen-cutting, — he sets forth as he sees it, careless as to whe received or not. There is no u his preaching; no pathos. It i tellect, with never a touch o ness. Nor is he the first gloo of St. Paul's. There was I mighty preacher in his day known now chiefly as a poet, wh ton described as 'enticing oth sacred art and courtship to am lives.' Yet surely the the Donne was terrifying rather ticing. There is very little of th Dean Inge, and none of th theology of Donne, who was equally by the terrors of hell a horrors of physical decay in de

Digitized by Google

British Army is
hat an item of
n its remoteness,
reality. What
r hearts, evoking
ny memories of
nd of the world!
destroyed, that
ds, like the faith
em, because it is
If Rome is the
n is the City of
s may be said to
f man as centres
race, and about
vastest accumu-
f legend: Jerusa-
d London! But

no city can have the same place in the spiritual geography of mankind that Jerusalem has. For four thousand years it has been an altar and a confessional of the race. Religiously, it is the capital of the world, if only because Jesus walked in it and wept over it. O Jerusalem, if we forget thee, Athens fails, Rome fails, London fails! Without the faith and vision that burned in the city on Mount Moriah, our race will lose its way in the dim country of this world. Berlin does not mean much. Jerusalem means everything. If only we could agree that, hereafter, when we have disagreements, we will make our way to the ancient City of God, and arbitrate them!

AFRICAN FOLK

BY HANS COUDENHOVE

I

ŬGER is reported
white man who
as not yet been
d to call the na-
ren'; but he was
and brought up
m, on his tower-
no doubt, only
o one who is in
them, without
er, they will, al-
him of children,
in essence. Na-
e, but much of-
pression of mer-
rtainments; and
r to bring into

their intercourse with the white man who has gained — or thinks he has gained — their confidence the trustfulness of children. But these are about all the points of resemblance between the two.

There are, however, a great many points of resemblance between natives and Europeans, irrespective of age; and these are the more striking by contrast with the many points of difference, But it is in the character of the native himself that the greatest contrasts occur. As regards taste, for instance: one and the same individual will on one occasion show remarkable artistic instinct, and on another he will exhibit

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

the greatest delight in things which, to a white man, appear both inartistic and ugly. In many tribes men and women are fond of decorating their heads with flowers, and in doing so show a just appreciation of the effects of form and color. And yet the very men and women who display exquisite judgment when they adorn themselves with the means which Nature has put at their disposal, forfeit all their artistic sense the moment they come in touch with European wearing apparel, and walk about, objects of abject ridicule, with flayed tropical helmets, in torn coats and trousers either three times too large or three times too small for their size. I once tore off the worn black-cloth cover of my diary. When my cook appeared before me on the following morning, he was wearing it round his neck as an ornament.

Years ago, when I was living in Taveta, in British East Africa, Malikanoi, one of the two paramount chiefs of the Wataveta, wore a shock of unusually long, unkempt hair. He was supposed to be a magician, and his subjects believed that his occult powers, like those of Samson as an athlete, lay in his hair. As he dressed, besides, in nondescript old discolored European garments, his appearance could not be called either prepossessing or dignified. As the time came near when his son — a splendid lad, who, at the age of sixteen, had killed a lion single-handed with his spear — was to come of age, Malikanoi announced that, in honor of the occasion, he would shave off his hair.

I was invited to the festivities as a guest; and, in consequence, on the day appointed, I repaired to the Taveta forest, where the dances took place. There, sitting on an old deck-chair, I found the chief; and my surprise was as great as must have been, in Mr. Locke's novel, that of Ephraim's guests, when Clementina Wing made her appe
hundred-guinea gown and
His head and face were c
and I noticed for the fir
Cæsarean outline of his clea
He was wrapped in the amp
toga, dyed the color of an
he had wound round his bal
gle string of glass beads
color as the toga. He pres
fect picture, and I said to
the mere imagining of such
tion as the toga and the gl
one and the same color in
found artistic feeling. Ye
that man had walked about
a buffoon.

II

Another field where the
tions in a negro's æsthetic
very apparent is that of
Some are very beautiful,
very ugly; yet the performer
do not appear to see any
The Wakinga of the Livings
for instance, have a dance
which might have been, a
— who knows? — was pe
fore the shrine of some Gr
the days of Pericles. No
beautiful, from a choregrap
view, could be imagined. A
same people have another
regret to say it is the more
the two — which, so far as u
baffles description. After a
bade it in my camp, where
were frequently performi
wish was respected, but, a
ment, I suppose, for my wa
the other, the beautiful dan
er again executed in my p
though I repeatedly asked

It is the same with their s
natives, as is well known, ha
voices, mostly baritone and
ly bass. Some of their cho
pleasure to listen to. But

Digitized by Google

gs, no matter
ming singly or
ge, all of a sud-
falsetto, with-
onscious of any
'singing with
rotests are re-

s the inconse-
e native more
cleanliness is
the waterless
re in the habit
ith oil and red
ally, coincides
natives are ex-
. This is espe-
countries tra-
. They do not
d in the least,
dwinter before
like that of the
ight be said to
bathing. They
nes a day, and
cessity to them

e of this admir-
n several occa-
re of attempts
ble of skin dis-
s with diseases
eeping on of an
nsecutive days
at least once a
that they were
ess, of all the
them health or
d not be pre-
while bathing,
been carefully
hbs an hour or
he garments of
ome of whom
e than go, for
heir daily bath
rly when they
garb, teem with
with bugs and,

too often, also, with the dangerous recurrent fever-ticks.

Besides being, to all appearance, quite indifferent to vermin, they lack the most rudimentary notions of hygiene and sanitation, even in countries long inhabited by white men, and do not seem to feel the slightest disgust when they come into contact with those nameless things which fill every European with horror. In this respect they are simply exasperating: to treat people with ulcers, a duty which, now and then, falls to the lot of every traveler in Tropical Africa, is a most thankless task. They will drop the soiled cotton-wool just detached from their sores anywhere near, and put their hands or their feet in it with the greatest unconcern. Once I actually found a man, a Ngoni, washing his soiled bandage in his cooking-pot, with the stream running past not a hundred yards away.

The mention of this incident reminds me of a native peculiarity against which every traveler and every settler in Tropical Africa has been fighting from time immemorial, and will probably go on fighting until the end of time. No matter how near to the camping-place or to the house the stream passes, the servants will never carry the cups, pots, and plates to it, in order to wash them in the running water: they will, instead, carry a bucket with water to the kitchen or to the cooking-place, and here wash everything in the same water.

The single inland tribe of my acquaintance that forms an exception to this general rule of indifference to the cleanliness of their surroundings is the Wasokiri to the north of Lake Nyasa. They might have been to school in Holland.

It is often mentioned, as a proof of the native's tacit admission of the white man's superiority, that he will always,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

when he has the choice, come to the latter for cure of disease, in preference to his own doctors. But his ineradicable objection to hospitals, where such exist, does not support this opinion. It is a curious fact that many natives share with a considerable number of the poor classes among white people the idea that, in hospital, they are being experimented upon; while others are convinced that a stay in the hospital inevitably means the loss of a limb. I have known many cases of natives who, rather than agree to being taken into hospital, would resign themselves to the prospect of endless suffering or death; and many more where the patients, after being told that they would be sent to the hospital, simply vanished.

On closer examination, this apparent preference of the native for European remedies, where their use does not imply a visit to the hospital, reduces itself, like most native questions, to one of pounds, shillings, and pence. Europeans generally charge nothing at all, or only nominally, for their assistance, while native doctors are very expensive, comparatively speaking. The fees vary from three to fifteen shillings and more; or, where coin is not yet in general use, the equivalent in goods. In Nyasaland the fee for curing an ulcer is three shillings; for relieving an impaired digestion, six; for more dangerous diseases, fifteen. This fee is never paid in advance, and — a detail which might be recommended for adoption in civilized communities — only when the cure has been a total success. When natives are asked what would happen if they did not pay up after being cured, they declare that the cured patient would immediately fall ill again, and, if he persisted in his refusal, die.

Many writers on African affairs, and the majority of settlers, are of opinion that the marked changes that appear in the general behavior of male African negroes when they first sta
are of a pathological natu
many years I shared this vi
late I have come to ask mys
these changes are not simpl
of various drugs, to the use
that particular period of thei
natives are much addicted, a
they partake with that abse
eration which characterizes
ever it is a question of gra
senses.

Several of these elixirs a
that country; the one reput
the most effect is made by
inner bark of a tree which i
ous, where it occurs, by the
of its small leaves, in contra
lighter green of the Myomb
general.

I have had occasion to
effects of this drug, almost d
on a young fellow in my ser
who had resolved to marry,
ion, a pretty young widow
somewhat older than he. A
of course, never have told
was drugging himself, but
trayed to me by the man wh
viding him with the stuff.
of the drug on the lad were
indeed. For several days h
to be in a kind of waking
Mrs. Gamp, walking about
extended neck, a fixed stare,
ing a kind of *sotto-voce* recita
state was interrupted fro
time by intermezzos of buoya
After about a week, he com
his memory: when I sent hi
a message, he sat down in f
house; and, when I followed
about half an hour later, he
ered no message, totally u
of the fact that the person to
message was sent sat not five
from him. He had forgotte
it. Shortly afterward we p
pany, by mutual consent.

Digitized by Google

actly the same story about one of the Madagascar tribes and their ticks or bugs, which must have been the identical spirillum ticks.

The expression 'cowardly native' is a household word among Europeans in Africa, and yet, instances of courageous actions of natives, such as, to my knowledge, no white man ever performed, are innumerable. The reason for this entirely unmerited reputation probably lies in the fact that, as a rule, they are not in the least ashamed to admit that they are, or that they have been, afraid, while a white man, unless he is a recognized hero, will die rather than make such an avowal. Another reason, no doubt, lies in their many idiosyncrasies and the superstitious awe with which perfectly harmless things inspire them. Almost all the natives, for instance, from the Indian Ocean to the lakes, fear chameleons much more than they fear snakes.

It is very common to hear travelers complain about the cowardice of native followers, who, when the caravan was charged by a rhino, threw down their loads and fled. I should like to know what else, in the name of common sense, they ought to have done — sat down and awaited developments? Native experience of wild animals and their ways is far more extensive and thorough than ours, and, as a rule, they behave, in an emergency brought about by an encounter with wild animals, in a perfectly rational manner, based on a knowledge of that particular creature's habits. They will run away from a rhino and jump aside, well aware that its impetus will carry it past. But they know better than to run away from elephants. I have seen natives, under a charge of these, lie down and remain motionless on the ground, knowing that the short-sighted giants would mistake them for logs and step over them. I have seen Wataweta killing elephants with bows

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

and arrows. There were a lot of men, it is true; still, their audacity was marvelous; they were like king crows. The same people also hunt elephants by hamstringing them and then finishing them off with spears.

Not many years ago, an English officer in Uganda, who had been seized by a lion, was rescued by his own native servant, who beat the animal off with a whip of hippo hide; and a little later, in German East, a German officer whom I personally knew was saved in the same way by an Askari, who, afraid to shoot, drove the lion away with the butt-end of his rifle.

A missionary told me how, in Kondeland, an unarmed native saved a little girl who had been seized by a lion. The latter was playing with the child as a cat plays with a mouse, carrying her in its mouth for a few yards without hurting her, then putting her down and moving away to some distance, to sit down and watch. The native picked up the child and walked slowly backward, step by step, stopping dead still whenever the lion made a rush, and so at last reached a place of safety. I know of several instances when natives have beaten off adult leopards with cudgels, and in the great, lion-infested plains of East Africa, the killing of lions with spears by natives, as was done by Malikanoi's young son, is by no means uncommon.

When the Masai, bravest and most romantic of natives, walk through the Nyika alone at night, and become aware that lions are near, they sit down and pull their mantles over their heads. They assert that no lion in the open attacks a motionless man whose face he cannot see. The hunting offshoot of the Masai people, the Wandorobbo, who roam through the Nyika in search of game as the Redskins roamed through the American prairie, never sleep in their huts, — temporary shelters meant to last but a few days, — but always in the open, between the huts, and without fires. They pretend that no wild beast has ever carried one of them away at night.

Very few natives fear snakes, that last resource of the adventureless traveler, although, as a rule, they kill them, as they kill lizards or rats. In certain tribes natives exist who have been forbidden by their doctor, after a successful cure, not necessarily from the effects of snake-bite, never again to kill a snake, and they religiously obey the command. The dreaded puff-adder, no doubt on account of its sluggishness, is everywhere treated with contempt. This snake is to some a fetish, and these will not molest it, even if it chooses to take up its temporary residence in one of their huts. I have known one living under these happy circumstances, and growing fat on the ubiquitous rat. The Wanyamwesi and Warukuma, born snake-charmers, handle puff-adders without the slightest fear. Many of these people, it is true, are, or believe themselves to be, immune against snake poison, having undergone, at the hand of their medicine-men, a prolonged and dangerous treatment resulting in Mithradatism.

Where crocodiles abound, natives, in accordance with the saying that familiarity breeds contempt, grow exasperatingly foolhardy, women as well as men, and frequently have to pay the penalty of their imprudence. Relations between the natives and the crocodile, however, are of a complicated and even mysterious nature. Some wear charms against the monsters, in which they implicitly believe; and I must admit that I have never heard of any one of them coming to grief. Also, there undoubtedly are crocodiles that are not man-eaters, although the common assertion that crocodiles that get plenty of fish will not eat man falls flat before the many casualties on the great lakes.

Digitized by Google

A curious phe-
re well-defined
African rivers
perfectly harm-
ow these sanc-
he above-men-
can enter the

I accompanied
he battalion of
es stationed in
the Juba Riv-
d government
besides native
of communica-
steamer had to
re every night;
topped near a
ura — Ali the
There was at
Juba a famous
upon as a sort
the crocodiles
so it was said,
year, repaired
hold a *Baraza.*
our arrival in
ashore, where
hief, whom we
there. He said
nting to a man
dded, 'This is

the young fel-
mune against

pointed to a
lred yards in
ne way inland.
every day,' he
other side.'
near the oppo-
of many croco-
ne water. We
son himself if
truth; and, on
tive, we asked
swim through
his he readily

assented, and we asked Ali Sungura if it was really safe.

Ali Sungura laughed and declared that there was not the slightest danger. So we promised the man his rupee, and he, after fastening tight around his body the white cloth he was wearing, immediately walked into the water, while Lieutenant W—— cocked his rifle and stood ready to shoot.

The wizard's son soon got out of his depth and took to swimming. He swam toward the opposite side, deliberately, without displaying any hurry and right across the school of crocs, some, but not all, of which dived on his approach. He scrambled ashore, and, after a short rest, came back the same way. He took his rupee with obvious pleasure.

The chief, Ali Sungura himself, had the reputation of being a *mchawi*, or wizard, specializing as a werewolf. According to rumor, he was in the habit of walking about, at night, in the shape of a wolf, and of doing, in this disguise, as the wolf does. The old superstition, that certain people have the power to assume the shape of some animal, is as widespread in Tropical Africa, as it is in other parts of the world; and the natives of a village can be very positive and quite convinced when they assure you that such and such a lion, or such and such a leopard, is not really an animal, but a mchawi, who is in the habit of taking its shape.

Not long ago, in Nyasaland, I asked an old Yao, who had just returned from Fort Johnston, if the lions had made themselves very unpleasant there of late. He replied that only one had committed depredations, and even killed people, but that he was known to be a mchawi. He added: 'They have caught the man, they will take him to the Resident.'

'And what will happen to him?' I asked.

'Oh, nothing,' he replied with a sigh,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

'they will do nothing to him; the English always want to see everything,' putting the emphasis on the word 'see.'

I said to myself that it was rather fortunate for that were-lion that the English always want to 'see everything.'

IV

That there exists, principally in the region of the great lakes, a category, or class, or sect, of people who habitually indulge in satisfying a perverse inclination to feed on the flesh of human corpses is an indisputable fact, to which several administrators and explorers have born testimony. I need mention here, chosen from many others, only Sir Harry Johnston, Mr. J. F. Cunningham, and Mr. Dutkevich, in his contribution to Mr. Peter Macqueen's book, *In Wildest Africa*. The best known are the Bachichi, an organized secret society on the Sese Islands in Lake Victoria, who have for many years occupied the authorities. But they are by no means isolated. I am inclined to think that in other parts of Tropical Africa, where these ghouls occur, they, too, form a fraternity among themselves. This is undoubtedly the case in Buanji, at the northern end of the Livingstone Range, where they are known as Niambuddas. These, however, according to native report, differ from their colleagues in other countries by the sinister detail, that they kill, and then season in a pool of water, those whom they have selected as their victims and decoyed with all the artifices of a thug. In Buanji, no man dares, at night, to go however short a distance from the camp or village by himself, while across the boundary, in Ukinga, the same man will walk about alone, at night, with as little fear as if it were day.

The Bachichi and other corpse-eaters dig out the bodies of people who have died a natural death, and then eat them. They may, otherwise, fectly harmless members of t munity. In Nyasaland a corps called a mchawi, although that the Swahili name for wizard. less otherwise explained, the fi pretation is always that of corp As in the case of the were-ca so in this latter case, — but he afraid, with more justification, lic opinion always pretends to rately posted concerning the id the mchawi. Although feared, and treated with a measure of they are not always demonst shunned. I know of one case in whole village transported its half a mile away from the mchawi, after it had burned ground all its own dwellings. currence that gave rise to thi sale desertion was, so I was tol people themselves, that some t the death and burial of one mchawi's two wives, the second away, giving as a reason that, t before, her husband had brou into the hut the lifeless body o ceased. Perhaps a friendly n who did not weigh overmu helped in a stratagem to get r runaway. But the man's little ran away; he said that his fat him walking about all night, an could not stand the fatigue. went back to his old home to knew the whole family, and m often. The mchawi married wife, who, as long as I knew peared to be perfectly cont happy; but then, people say shares her husband's tastes. this as it may, Ndalawisi — su man's name — had undoubt *physique de l'emploi:* bloodsh lantern-jaws, and a large mou protruding yellow fangs and gums.

All the men who have been

Digitized by Google

ters have the
it is quite pos-
cent man owes
to the fortui-

legends have
around these
owever, is cer-
ought in con-
ıtrefaction, do
r that we do.
ng fellow once
f-fact way, if
rpse. To my
smell alone is
away,' he re-
ery pleasant!'
ı I was asked
ng the many
to the country
ot also tinned

to the smell of
ntact with it
ms among the
west coast of
rench govern-
stop, them by
kept exposed
before burial,
f exposure de-
the individual.
ımped a mile
ıe odor, when
, made a con-
Dead chiefs
village to vil-
ch village were
on a wooden
revelries went
ed, and it was
young men, at
ies, to go and
n and rub all
d matter which
and trickled

t death itself,
akalawas with

any terror. Their burial rites are of the merriest, and anybody unacquainted with the customs of that nation would be convinced, on first witnessing the approach of a funeral cortège, with its gay music, its bullock-cart decorated with bunting, shining pieces of metal, and small mirrors, that it was a nuptial party. Again, suicide by one of the many deadly poisons that abound in every thicket of that island, where, as in Ireland, venomous snakes do not exist, is resorted to quite as a matter of course, on the least provocation, even by children when they have been scolded by their parents.

Nearly all natives, including most of the Mohammedan tribes, are, with the exception of the Somali and the warrior castes of the Nilotic tribes, passionately addicted to drink. There is much truth in what has been written: that the whole population of Tropical and Subtropical Africa is drunk after sunset. Many kinds of fermented liquor exist, some of which are very palatable, as, for instance, the honey-beer of the Wataweta, or a kind of champagne that the Wabena produce out of the sap of a bamboo, which, curiously enough, refuses to yield its precious liquid when it is transplanted from its own country. At the time of year when this sap is collected, both men and women drink it to excess, until they fall down senseless near their fires. I have been shown in Ubena many little children who had been badly burned because their mothers had collapsed too close to the fire, and many grown-up persons who, being unable from drunkenness to crawl back into their huts, had been shockingly mutilated by hyenas.

Pombe — beer made either from bananas or from maize and millet — is the curse of the African native. Entirely unable as he is by constitution to resist temptation, he drinks as long as the state of his finances and the existing pro-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

visions permit. It has always seemed to me as if the effects of intoxication on a native were different from what they are on a European. They may be similar when he gets hold of whiskey; but they undoubtedly differ in cases of drunkenness produced by pombe. In a native who has got drunk on pombe, the effect is none the less violent because it is less apparent in the beginning. Its climax is reached some twenty-four to thirty-six hours after the libation has ceased, and manifests itself in a nervous irritability which often leads to disastrous consequences. Some individuals in this state, although sober to all appearances, become a grave danger to their neighbors. It was in this condition, as I have been informed on good authority, that the Police Askaris in a certain East African colony committed all those wanton acts of cruelty which created such a sensation in Europe a few years before the war. One need not go very far, perhaps, to recover the recipe of the famous drink of the Assassins.

It is probable that the shortness of memory, with which most natives are afflicted to quite a remarkable degree as regards things which do not touch them directly, is due in part to this racial vice and in part to the abuse of the elixirs mentioned above. This deficiency of memory is a palpable evil, not, I think, sufficiently recognized as such by those who employ natives, and is the source of many mistakes and accidents that are attributed to culpable neglect or evil intent. The very tone of voice in which a native says, 'Nimesahau' (I have forgotten), implies that, for him at least, to forget is a conclusive excuse, which precludes all possibility of guilt and desert of reproach. Very frequently they do not remember what they have said a few minutes before; they will give you half a dozen different names in succession for the same mountain or river, and look quit
when, glancing at your not
tell them that they have gi
entirely different name a litt
the day. This weak mem
to the difficulty which, lik
Aborigines of the Terra del F
comparatively civilized negr
'understanding the simple
tive,' is the chief obstacle th
encounter to getting correc
tion. And yet, — another a
African negroes are the gr
guists on earth.

It has happened to me, not
but repeatedly, that I have c
a tribe accompanied by me
never heard its idiom; and
month was over, they were,
single exception, able to co
ently with the inhabitants,
even when that particular
differed from their own as m
English from Italian.

But not that only; althou
very indifferent Swahili, —
which it is very easy to lear
badly, and almost impossibl
ropean to learn to speak fau
new servants who entered m
learned to speak it in a few
ply by my talking to them.
learned it from me was qui
from the fact that they acqu
mistakes! This facility in le
languages is, perhaps, conn
the extraordinary mimetic
natives, which Darwin also
with regard to Kaffirs as w
gians and Australians.

Besides their facility in le
languages, negroes also have
able gift for communicating
other by signs. I have ofte
tounded to notice how all t
tants of a village, including th
were able to converse fluen
deaf-mute. A few signs wit
and the fingers were sufficient

Digitized by Google

they could find a measure of justification in the writings of more than one philosopher.

For their lies, they have the funniest excuses. Some time ago I missed one of my men, and when I inquired after him, I got, from a lad named Mohammad, the answer: 'He has gone into the forest to dig for medicine.'

'What is the matter with him?' I asked.

'He has great pains in his head and stomach.'

Sometime later, Wasi — that was the absent man's name — came back, carrying firewood, and when I asked him why he had not told me that he was ill, he was very much surprised. There was absolutely nothing the matter with him. I then soundly rated Mohammad for telling such lies, when my head-boy interfered by saying in a conciliatory tone, 'He did not lie, master. He said it only to make conversation.'

Native logic runs in grooves different from ours, often in an exactly contrary direction. When I listen to their arguments, I am often reminded of Leonard da Vinci's famous reversed drawing of the castle of Amboise. On one occasion, one of my boys told me that another boy had told him something, which, although a matter of small importance, he was not supposed to communicate to others. I taxed this other boy with having betrayed my confidence, but he flatly denied having spoken. I confronted them both, and a friendly dispute ensued, which led to no result. I then said to the boy who, according to the other, had spoken without leave, 'Why are you not angry with Soliman for telling such a lie about you?' To which he smilingly replied, 'No! I am not angry! Why should I be angry? He lied! If he had spoken the truth, *then* I should be angry.'

paper by Mr. Coudenhove will appear later.)

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

KNIGHTS AND TURCOPOLIERS

BY WILLIAM McFEE

I

He came out of the Strada Mezzodi running, shoulders back, gloves and cane held bosom-high in his clenched fists, like an athlete's corks, the whole body of the man pulsing and glowing from the ascent of that precipitous slot. Came out into the Strada Reale, and brought up against me with a squashing thump that left us limp and uncertain of the future.

He took off his cap and mopped his swiftly sloping forehead with the heel of his hand — an original and unforgettable gesture. There he was, unchanged and unchangeable, a knotty sliver of England, exactly the same, save for the Naval Reserve uniform, as when, some nine years before, I had seen him barging his way into the shipping office in North Shields, to sign off articles, for he was going away home to Newcastle, to get married.

There he was, ready-witted as ever, for he demanded with incredible rapidity of utterance what the h—— I thought I was doing, and recognized me even as he asked. He was, for all his doeskin uniform and characteristically shabby lace and gloves, the same scornful, black-browed, hook-nosed truculent personality. Small, yet filling the picture like bigger men by reason of his plunging restlessness, his disconcerting circumlocution of body, he vibrated before me, even now, an incarnate figure of interrogation. He found breath and voice, and shook my hand in a limp, lifeless fashion that conveyed an uncanny impression of his first timorous experimen shaking — another peculiar doxical by-product of his

He turned me round and me back along the Strada said the man I wanted to Base Office was away playin I could see him in the mo asked where my baggage when I told him, he said was the worst hotel in town was a room vacant next to Angleterre. He turned me into the entrance hall of a ture of stone, where in the ness diminished humans s chairs and read the news-t microscopic notice-boards. inscription informed me tha had been the auberge of t of the Tongue of Provence; it was the Union Club. He a row of pigeonholes and too letters.

We sallied forth into the sunlight again, and he h along toward the Piazza de gio. A captain and two co passed, and I saluted, but panion spun round a corne declivity called the Strada and muttered that his salut over and done with. Scand suspecting in my unregene that here lay a tale that mi in the twilight, I made no other turn into the fitly nam

Digitized by Google

engineer lieutenant, and now before my eyes tearing off his coat and vest and pants, and bent double over a long black coffin-like steel chest, whence he drew a suit of undeniable tweeds. But it was only when he had abolished the last remaining trace of naval garniture by substituting a cerise poplin cravat for the black affair worn in memory of the late Lord Nelson, and a pair of brown brogues for the puritanical mess-boots of recent years, that Heatly turned to where I sat on the bed and looked searchingly at me from under his high-arched, semi-circular black eyebrows.

He was extraordinarily unlike a naval officer now. Indeed, he was unlike the accepted Englishman. He had one of those perplexing personalities that are as indigenous to England as the Pennine Range and the Yorkshire Wolds, as authentic as Stonehenge; yet, by virtue of their very perplexity, have a difficulty in getting into literature. There was nothing of the tall, blond, silent Englishman about this man, at all. Yet there was probably no mingling of foreign blood in him since Phœnician times. He was entirely and utterly English. He can be found in no other land, and yet is to be found in all lands, generally with a concession from the government and a turbulent band of assistants. His sloping simian forehead was growing bald, and it gleamed as he came over to where I sat. His jaws, blue from the razor, creased as he drew back his chin and began his inevitable movement of the shoulders that preluded speech. He was English, and was about to prove his racial affinity beyond all cavil.

'But why get yourself demobilized out here?' I demanded, when he had explained. 'Is there a job to be had?'

'Job!' he echoed, eyebrows raised, as he looked over his shoulder with apparent animosity. 'Job! There 's a *fortune* out here! See this.'

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

He dived over the bed to where his uniform lay, and extracted from the breast-pocket a folded sheet of gray paper. Inside was a large roughly penciled tracing of the Eastern Mediterranean. There was practically no nomenclature. An empty Italy kicked at an equally vacuous Sicily. Red blots marked ports. The seas were spattered with figures, as in a chart, marking soundings. And laid out in straggling lines, like radiating constellations, were green and yellow and violet crosses. From Genoa to Marseilles, from Marseilles to Oran, from Port Said and Alexandria to Cape Bon, from Salonika to Taranto, those polychromatic clusters looped and clotted in the sea-lanes, until the eye, roving at last toward the intricate configuration of the Cyclades, caught sight of the Sea of Marmora, where the green symbols formed a closely woven texture.

'Where did you get this?' I asked, amazed; and Heatly smoothed the crackling paper as it lay between us on the bed. His shoulders worked and his chin drew back, as if he were about to spring upon me.

'That's telling,' he grunted. 'The point is, do you want to come in on this? These green ones, y' understand, are soft things, in less 'n ten fathom. The yellows are deeper. The others are too big or too deep for us.'

'Who 's us?' I asked, beginning to feel an interest beyond his own personality.

He began to fold up the chart, which had no doubt come by unfrequented ways from official *dossiers*.

'There's the skipper and the mate and meself,' he informed me; 'but we can do with another engineer. — Come in with us!' he ejaculated; 'it's the chance of a lifetime. You put up five hundred, and it 's share and share alike.'

I had to explain, of course, that what he suggested was quite impossible. I was not demobilized. ship in dock-yard han had no five hundred t

He did not press the to me that he had s temporary vehicle of a of sentiment. We had in the old days. He h friend of mine, it must We had wrangled and other over hot and dirt gone our separate way had rushed from the that day in Shields and good-bye ere he caug Newcastle and matrin now, after nine year offered me a fortune! able passage of time the ephemeral *scoria* and laid bare an une durable esteem. Even he did not press the loath to admit any em gruff solicitude for m grandizement.

While we were bi on these lines, the hig opened, and the bux peared with a tea-tray. went over to the embr where there stood a tab there, in her neat black apron, her dark hair d convolutions about he her eyes declined upo on the tray, she had th sophistication and sai to be found in lady mother superiors whe secular aliens. She wa anomaly in this strong and militant celibates of her individual illusio the introduction that f

'This is Emma,' sai indicating a natural bu ture of the landscape; shipmate o' mine. Let

Digitized by Google

nybody been?'
n a soft, gentle
l rang up. He
usual place.'
,' said Heatly,
trick abhorred
a as something
ur at our table
the Regina for
ind, no games!'
bout her waist.
n-looking deer-
the door, and
g back upon us
lence. Emma
ng her pose of
nd the late en-
ed through the

e no games. I
stepped over to
ere were to be
she was, there
of selecting the
ivial gallantry
niral's nose. I
Emma. I had
those two with
patent to me
me a good deal
n Heatly knew
was that sort
a problem of
n, and a crystal-
ol, disillusioned

Women are not
s, they are un-
y dwell always
latable Truth,
nce is there a
them from their
ultimate need.
in so far as we
the incarnate
l ideal, we in-
tic supposition.
ion on the fea-
g about a man.

Duty and pleasure melt into one suffusing emotion and earth holds for her no holier achievement. And so, as the reader is ready enough to believe, there were no games. Apart from her common urbane humanity, Emma's lot in life, as the deserted wife of a Highland sergeant deficient in emotional stability, had endowed her with the smooth efficiency of a character in a novel. She credited me with a complete inventory of normal virtues and experiences, and proceeded to increase my knowledge of life.

II

The point of her story, as I gathered, was this. My friend Heatly, in the course of the years, had completed the cycle of existence without in any degree losing the interest of women. I knew he was married. Emma informed me that they had seven children. The youngest had been born six months before. Where? Why, in the house in Gateshead, of course. Did I know Gateshead? I did. As I sat in that embrasured window and looked down the thin, deep slit of the Strada Lucia, past green and saffron balconies and jutting shrines, to where the Harbor of Marsamuscetto showed a patch of solid dark blue below the distant perfection of Sheina, I thought of Gateshead, with the piercing East Coast wind ravening along its gray, dirty streets, with its frowsy fringe of coal-staithes standing black and stark above the icy river, and I heard the grind and yammer of the grimy street-cars striving to drown the harsh boom and crash from the great yards of Elswick on the far bank. I saw myself again hurrying along in the rain, a tired young man in overalls, making hurried purchases of gear and tobacco and rough gray blankets, for the ship was to sail on the turn of the tide. And I found it easy to see the small two-story house half-way

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

down one of those incredibly ignoble streets, the rain, driven by the cruel wind, whipping against sidewalk and window, the front garden a mere puddle of mud, and indoors a harassed, dogged woman fighting her way to the day's end, while a horde of robust children romped and gorged and blubbered around her.

'Seven,' I murmured, and the bells of a herd of goats made a musical commotion in the street below.

'Seven,' said Emma, refilling my cup.

'And he's not going home yet, even though he has got out of the navy,' I observed with tactful abstraction.

'That's just it,' said Emma, 'not going home. He's gone into this salvage business, you see. I believe it's a very good thing.'

'Of course his wife gets her half-pay,' I mused.

'She gets all his *pay*,' accented Emma. 'He sends it all. He has other ways — you understand. Resources. But he won't go home. You know, there's somebody here.'

So here we were coming to it. It had been dawning on me, as I stared down at the blue of the Marsamuscetto, that possibly Heatly's interest for Emma had been heightened by the fact that he was a widower. Nothing so crude as that, however. Something much more interesting to the high gods. Between maturity and second childhood, if events are propitious, men come to a period of augmented curiosity fortified by a vague sense of duties accomplished. They acquire a conviction that, beyond the comfortable and humdrum vales of domestic felicity, where they have lived so long, there lie peaks of ecstasy and mountain-ranges of perilous dalliance. I roused suddenly.

'But now he's out of the navy,' I remarked.

'You must n't think that,' said Emma. 'He is n't that I tell you, she's all right.

'Who? The somebody

'No, his wife's all rig money goes. But there's between them. A man c his life without sympathy

'What is she like?' I sure of this.

'Oh, I'm not defendi Emma with her eyes fixed bowl. 'Goodness knows *I* to think well of men, ar alike. Only, he's thro away on a — Well, never see her. Here's your roo have this connecting doo like.'

'Fine,' I said, looking then walking into a sort comfortable crypt. The w thick, were pierced on o as for cannon, and one lo tively for the inscriptions and ribald witticisms by se was the Strada Lucia aga delicious green railing; an another recess, from whc aperture one beheld the yard, with a giant tree sw almost touching the yell looked at the groined roo white-curtained bed, the black wood, the tiled floor worn mats. I looked out o into the street, and was st unexpectedly near view of blue niche by the window, a long sneering nose and a expression as she looked do stony eyes on the Strad looked across the Strada saw dark eyes and disdai at magic casements. And that I would take the apa

'You 'll find Mr. Heatly de la Reine,' she remar 'he's there with Captain

But I wanted to see ne

Digitized by Google

st yet. I said
ner, and took

ut the town,
politan crowd
s, and musing
upon deserted
usbands, and
- I approached
eatly seated at
r men, in the
great columns.
oung Maltese
g-haired goat,
swiftly into a
omer. Heatly,
king milk. He
three of them
gether over the
rble table, so
k no notice at
out them.
e men an aura
In the light of
lit fresh ciga-
owed up harsh
s of men who
r in emotions,
instincts and
urned and saw
olation was out

e tale they told
by the alert
roseate glam-
of memories.
f exalted emo-
eloquence. We
and returned
were the gen-
gns, the heroes
s, and the con-
autiful women.

From the swaying platforms of the Fourth Dimension we caught glimpses of starry destinies. We stood on the shoulders of the lesser gods, to see our enemies confounded. And out of the mist and fume of the evening emerges a shadowy legend of the sea.

By a legerdemain which seemed timely and agreeably inexplicable, the marble table under the arcade of the Libreria became a linen-covered table in an immense and lofty chamber. We were at dinner. The ceiling was a gilded framework of paneled paintings. Looking down upon us from afar were well-fed anchorites and buxom saints. Their faces gleamed from out a dark and polished obscurity, and their ivory arms emerged from the convolutions of ruby and turquoise-velvet draperies. Tall candelabra supported colored globes, which shed a mellow radiance upon the glitter of silver and crystal. There was a sound of music, which rose and fell as some distant door swung to and fro; the air still trembled with the pulsing reverberations of a great gong, and a thin whine, which was the food-elevator ascending in dry grooves from the kitchen, seemed to spur the fleet-footed waiters to a frenzy of service. High cabinets of dark wood stood between tall narrow windows housing collections of sumptuous plates and gilded wares. On side tables heaps of bread and fruit made great masses of solid color, of gamboge, saffron, and tawny orange. Long-necked bottles appeared reclining luxuriously in wicker cradles, like philosophic pagans about to bleed to death.

At a table by the distant door sits the little boy with the freckled nose and beautiful gray eyes. He writes in a large book as the waiters pause on tip-toe, dishes held as if in votive offering to a red Chinese dragon on the mantel above the boy's head. He writes, and looking out down the en-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

trance, suddenly laughs in glee. From the corridor come whoops and a staccato cackle of laughter, followed by a portentous roll of thunder from the great gong. The boy puts his hand over his mouth in his ecstasy, the waiters grin as they hasten, the head waiter moves over from the windows, thinking seriously, and one has a vision of Emma, mildly distraught, at the door. Captain Gosnell, holding up the corner of his serviette, remarks that they are coming, and studies the wine-list.

They rush in, and a monocled major at a near-by table pauses, fork in air over his fried sea-trout, and glares. In the forefront of the bizarre procession comes Heatly, with a Russian guardsman on his back. The other two guardsmen follow, dancing a stately measure, revolving with rhythmic gravity. Behind, waltzing alone, is Mr. Marks, the mate. Instantly, however, the play is over. They break away, the guardsman slips to the floor, and they all assume a demeanor of impenetrable reserve as they walk decorously toward us. They sit, and become merged in the collective mood of the chamber. Yet one has a distinct impression of a sudden glimpse into another world — as if the thin yet durable membrane of existence had split open a little, and one saw, for a single moment, men as they really are.

And while I am preoccupied with this fancy, which is mysteriously collated in the mind with a salmi of quails, Captain Gosnell becomes articulate. He is explaining something to me.

It is time Captain Gosnell should be described. He sits on my left, a portly, powerful man, with a large red nose and great baggy pouches under his stern eyes. It is he who tells the story. I watch him as he dissects his quail. Of his own volition he tells me he has twice swallowed the anchor. And here he is, still on the job. Did Three times, counting — this way.

First of all, an aunt lef money and he quit a se job to start a small pro Failed. Had to go to sea he married. Wife had a so they started again. Pro stores, both doing well. T I am to understand. Ca wines and spirits on one and so forth on the other clientèle. Wonderful head Mrs. Gosnell's. He himself not so dusty. Had a way mers. Could sell pork in as the saying is.

And then Mrs. Gosnell shock to him, of course, the heart out of him. Bu went back to sea. She was later, with what little mo he started an agency for o ing machinery. Found i get on with his captain, y a senior man in a junior very likely am aware, sta makes poor running gear a very decent little business — the war. So he went in Reserve. That's how it all Now, his idea is to go be experience he has gained, store again — merchandisi ion, is the thing of the f a little money, the thing Well!

But it was necessary to capital. Say five thousa we were.

A bad attack of pne gastritis finished him at tor said if he got away climate, it would make a him. So a chat with a mander in London resulte appointed to a mine-lay the Eastern Mediterranea

Digitized by Google

ne Ouzel. Side-
e excursionists.
Devonport and
d. Imagine it!
from one moun-
r, off Finisterre.
over and over,
. Vincent. Fine
t. Heatly here
e was Mate. It
ility.
ched Port Said,
ly loaded with
nt out again to
re laying a com-
ut fifty miles
one day in. It
, being one of a
nt signaling and
But later, when
e in an immense
sky, they began
s took the com-
of discovering,
er's weaknesses,
hem in secret.
her most firmly
sort of sophisti-
men. Not in so
Gosnell assures
granted, they
nd in 'Keeping
was a bachelor,
ad no intention
se. Marks had
to understand.
sits opposite to
und face, clean-
an actor's. His
ck, solid-looking
ly impresses me
ongruity. As I
s up his hand,
up over his fore-
ing a pink scalp,
nce from side to
k to its normal

n anything else,

Captain Gosnell assures me, for nobody is deceived by a wig like that. What is a man to do when he has pretty near the whole top of his head blown off by a gasometer exploding on the Western Front? There's Marks, minus his hair and everything else, pretty well buried in a pit of loose cinders. Lamp-post blown over, lying across him. Marks lay quiet enough, thinking. He was n't dead, he could breathe, and one hand moved easily in the cinders. Began to paddle with that hand. Went on thinking and paddling. Soon he could move the other hand. Head knocking against the lamp-post, he paddled downward. Found he was moving slowly forward. Head clear of the lamp-post. Gritty work, swimming, as it were, in loose ashes. Hands in shocking condition. Scalp painful. Lost his hair, but kept his head. Suddenly his industriously paddling hands swirled into the air, jerking legs drove him upward, and he spewed the abrasive element from his lips. He had come back. And had brought an idea with him. Before he went into the army, Marks was second officer in the Marchioness Line, afflicted with dreams of inventing unsinkable ships and collapsible life-boats. Now he came back to life with a brand-new notion. What was it? Well, we'd be having a run over to the ship bye-and-bye and I would see it. It could do everything except sing a comic song.

'We had been relieved one evening,' Captain Gosnell observes, 'and were about hull down and under, when I ordered dead slow for a few hours. The reason for this was that, at full speed, we would reach Port Said about three in the afternoon, and it was generally advised to arrive after sunset, or even after dark. Besides this, I set a course to pass round to the east'ard of a field we had laid a week or so before, instead of to the west'ard. This is a

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

simple enough matter of running off the correct distances, for the current, if anything, increased the margin of safety. We were making about four knots, with the mine-field on the starboard bow, as I calculated, and we were enjoying a very pleasant supper in my cabin, which had been the passenger saloon in the Ouzel's excursion days — a fine large room on the upper deck, with big windows, like a house ashore. The old bus was chugging along, and from my table you could see the horizon all round, except just astern, which was hid by the funnel. Nothing there, however, but good salt water, and the Holy Land a long way behind. It was like sitting in a conservatory. The sea was as smooth as glass, with a fine haze to the south'ard. This haze, as far as I could judge, was moving north at about the same speed as we were going south, which would make it eight knots, and in an hour we would be in it. I mention this because it explains why the three of us, sitting in a cabin on an upper deck, saw the battleship all together, all at once, and quite near. We all went on the bridge.

'Now you must understand,' went on Captain Gosnell, 'that the subject of conversation between us while we were at supper was money. We were discussing the best way of getting hold of money, and the absolute necessity of capital after the war, if we were to get anywhere. This war, you know, has been a three-ringed circus for the young fellows. But to men like us it has n't been anything of the sort. We have a very strong conviction that some of us are going to feel the draft. We are n't so young as we used to be, and a little money would be a blessing. Well, we were talking about our chances — of salvage, prize-money, bonuses, and so forth. Our principal notion, if I remember, that evening, was to go into business a resources. For one thing, to keep up the association. out of the Lord knows whe great gray warship heading

Captain Gosnell paused ed me with an austere g Marks and Heatly were li looking at us watchfully. Mr. Marks's shoulder I c three officers with their po uniforms gleaming in the radiance of shaded lamps.

'You understand what said Captain Gosnell. 'W the bridge watching that s on us, watching her through and we did not attach an importance to her appeara we saw the Russian ensig did not mean a great deal was as much an anomaly i rible waters as a line-of-ba Nelson's day. That was gered us. An enormous v like that coming out into Suddenly the value of her, she cost, the money she w near and yet so far, came I had an imaginary view understand, for a momen thing I could sell; a sort picture of her possibilities line. Think of the brass alone, in a ship like that! A all simultaneously realized was happening. I had stretched out to the whis when there was a heavy grunt, and she rolled over as if some invisible hand ha a push. She rolled back to a and began pitching a very was due, I believe, to the s astern of her engines, coupl mine throwing her over. P tle, and, for some extraordi her forward twelve-inch rapidly elevated as if some

Digitized by Google

a shot at the
g down. From
r, things were
rret which are
ut. There was
thousand tons
a number of
ke most battle-
ors in her bows,
not out of their
o the sea, while
ne away, as if
nd smoke at us
And then she
n them, so that,
she showed us
nored counter,
ry and a little
f the sun. And
ed anything in
arth, ashore or
up on her, you
glasses so that,
us, we had a
f that gallery.
ed men sitting
ered with gold
ations, smoking
ge wicker chair
. Behind them
were open and
awn back, and
china and very
ings shining on
hite coats walk-
anxiety at all.
eat golden two-
ne in their pecu-
lettering which
Fontanka. And
two men with
easts like large
ting and point-
h other. It was
e cabin behind
und and round,
ng in front of a
gin in a glitter-
can assure you,

their placid demeanor almost paralyzed us. We began to wonder if we had n't dreamed what had gone before, if we were n't still dreaming. But she continued to swing and we continued to come up on her, so that soon we had a view along her decks again, and we knew well enough we were n't dreaming very much.

'Her decks were alive with men. They moved continually, replacing each other like a mass of insects on a beam. It appeared, from where we were, a cable's length or so, like an orderly panic. There must have been five or six hundred of them climbing, running, walking, pushing, pulling, like one of those football matches at the big schools, where everybody plays at once. And then our whistle blew. I give you my word I did it quite unconsciously, in my excitement. If it had been Gabriel's trumpet, it could not have caused greater consternation. I think a good many of them thought it *was* Gabriel's trumpet. It amounted to that almost, for the Fontanka took a sort of slide forward at that moment and sank several feet by the head. All those hundreds of men mounted the rails and put up their hands and shouted. It was the most horrible thing. They stood there with uplifted hands and their boats half-lowered, and shouted. I believe they imagined that I was going alongside to take them off. But I had no such intention. The Ouzel's sponsons would have been smashed, her paddles wrecked, and we would probably have gone to the bottom along with them. We looked at each other and shouted in sheer fury at their folly. We bawled and made motions to lower their boats. I put the helm over and moved off a little, and ordered our own boat down. The fog was coming up and the sun was going down. The only thing that was calm was the sea. It was like a lake.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Suddenly, several of the Fontanka's boats almost dropped into the water, and the men began to slide down the falls like strings of blue and white beads. She took another slide, very slow but very sickening to see.

'I fixed my glasses on the superstructure between the funnels, where a large steel crane curved over a couple of launches with polished brass funnels. And I was simply appalled to find a woman sitting in one of the launches, with her arms round a little boy. She was quite composed, apparently, and was watching three men who were working very hard about the crane. The launch began to rise in the air, and two of the men climbed into her. She rose, and the crane swung outward. We cheered like maniacs when she floated. In a flash the other man was climbing up the curve of the crane, and we saw him slide down the wire into the launch.

'By this time, you must understand, the other boats were full of men, and one of them was cast off while more men were sliding down the falls. They held on with one hand and waved the other at the men above, who proceeded in a very systematic way to slide on top of them, and then the whole bunch would carry away altogether and vanish with a sort of compound splash. And then men began to come out of side-scuttles. They were in a great hurry, these chaps. A head would appear, and then shoulders and arms working violently. The man would be just getting his knees in a purchase on the scuttle frame, when he would shoot out clean head-first into the sea. And another head, the head of the man who had pushed him, would come out.

'But don't forget,' warned Captain Gosnell, 'that all these things were happening at once. Don't forget that the Fontanka was still swarming with men, that the sun was just disappearing, very red, in the west, that th
were about level with the
forget all this,' urged Ca
'and then, when you 'v
firmly fixed in your mi
right over, shows the g
of her for perhaps twenty
sinks.'

Captain Gosnell held
a moment longer to his
the stick on the floor, a
the room, leaving me t
thing he had described.

V

And these three, in the
dled and slow-moving lau
incredible passengers, the
her arms round a little
first to board the Ouzel.
nell had stopped his engi
was thick with swimmin
men. They explained t
who had climbed down t
man of extended experi
regions, — that they we
the Imperial Russian Ar
with the safe-conduct of
her child, and therefore
dence over naval ratings.

That was all very well,
the naval ratings were alre
up the low fenders of the
ing the paddle-boxes and
lent use of the ropes and
them by the Ouzel's crew
ratings were displaying t
tivity on their own accou
mediately manned the la
off to garner the occupan
gratings. Even in her ex
the Ouzel had never had
sengers. Captain Gosnell
have believed, if he had n
five-hundred-odd souls cou
room to breathe on her de
alleyways. All dripping s

Captain Gosnell, leanin

Digitized by Google

l drawing at
the talented
ving an intri-
y,' with many
hat he had to
. The senior
entleman who
and drawers
aving slipped
ridge before
no English.
od English.'
ntly. Having
ttle boy, who
kled nose, in-
, he drew the
ed to him the
securing the
ndered ship;
s found pos-

d transferred
had made my
nformation to
I don't think
mselves what
aking for the
sengers, they
ll, so of course
w my conclu-
ey had been
t, whence his
aris. Now he
ssages to Mar-
n the Marina
s and banks,
had uniforms
tailor in the
t the Marina
so it was easy
Heatly, there,
vith the lady.
nell with per-
o my look of
very slightest
If you ask me,
of — chivalry.
here was ever
ou suggest —

has no conception of the real facts of the case.'

This was surprising. It seemed to put Emma in an equivocal position, and my respect for that woman made me reluctant to doubt her intelligence. But Captain Gosnell was in a better position than Emma to give evidence. Captain Gosnell was conscious that a man can run right through the hazards of existence and come out on the other side with his fundamental virtues unimpaired. They all shared this sentiment, I gathered, for this lovely woman with the bronze hair and gray eyes; but Heatly's imagination had been touched to an extraordinary degree. In their interminable discussions concerning their future movements, discussions highly technical in their nature, because investigating a sunken armored warship is a highly technical affair, Heatly would occasionally interpret a word, emphasizing the importance of giving her a fair deal.

'But she never reached Marseilles. They were two days off Malta when an Austrian submarine torpedoed the French liner and sank her. They did not fire on the boats. And our lady friend found herself being rowed slowly toward a place of which she had no knowledge whatever. Serge told us they were pulling for eighteen hours before they were picked up.'

'And she is here now?' I asked cautiously.

'Here now,' said Captain Gosnell. 'She usually comes down here for an hour in the evening. If she's here, I'll introduce you.'

VI

She was sitting on a plush lounge at the extreme rear of the café, and when I first set eyes on her, I was disappointed. I had imagined something much more magnificent, more alluring, than this. In spite of Captain Gosnell's

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

severely prosaic narrative of concrete facts, he had been unable to keep from me the real inspiration of the whole adventure. I was prepared to murmur, 'Was this the face that launched a thousand ships?' and so on, as much as I could remember of that famous bit of rant. One gets an exalted notion of women who are credited with such powers, who preserve some vestige of the magic that can make men 'immortal with a kiss.' Bionda, in a large fur coat and a broad-brimmed hat of black velvet, had cloaked her divinity, and the first impression was Christian rather than pagan. 'A tired saint,' I thought, as I sat down after the introduction and looked at the pale bronze hair and the intelligent gray eyes.

She had a very subtle and pretty way of expressing her appreciation of the homage rendered by these diverse masculine personalities. Her hands, emerging from the heavy fur sleeves, were white and extremely thin, with several large rings. She had nothing to say to a stranger, which was natural enough, and I sat in silence watching her. She spoke English with musical deliberation, rolling the *r*'s and hesitating at times in a choice of words, so that one waited with pleasure upon her pauses and divined the rhythm of her thoughts. She preserved in all its admirable completeness that mystery concerning their ultimate purpose in the world which is so essential to women in the society of men. And it was therefore with some surprise that I heard her enunciate with intense feeling, 'Oh, never, never, never!' There was an expression of sad finality about it. She was conveying to them her fixed resolve never to board a ship again. Ships had been altogether too much for her. She had been inland all her life, and her recent catastrophes had robbed her of her reserves of fortitude. She would remain here in this island. She sat staring at the marble table as if she saw in imag
finite reaches of the ocea
gray, or black, forever flu
erous, a sinister superf
which the bodies and ac
men disappeared as into s
lower region.

Women have many va
hating the sea; and this w
dimly aware of a certai
it — that alluring masc
which destroys men wit
from women at all. Her
had not suffered shipwr
as foundered.

They were all agreed.
the opinion that, if the
tenth of the bullion which
who had a platinum con
Asiatic Urals, had consign
in Paris, there would b
all. Serge, in short, beca
spirit of the enterprise.
to obtain funds from my
who had quiet offices dow
leys near Copthall Court
Helens, in London. He
and explained where t
stowed, and, presuming
in such and such a positio
heads had to be penetrat
her. He obtained permiss
pany the Ouzel on her fou
and they never had a dull
brought water-colors alo
at immense expense from
tortioners, and made asto
ings of his hosts and th
steamer. He sang songs
a musical snarl — songs i
lects, songs in indecent Fr
booming Russian. He d
Russian dances, and the
heels was like a pneumati
at work on a rush job. His
face, with the long, finely
the sensitive mouth, the
suddenly illuminated by
smile, the innumerable ti

Digitized by Google

and the others had a little of their own; but hers was mostly in an ammunition chamber on B deck in a foundered warship, along with the bullion, bound to the Siberian Bank. She was n't worrying about money at all. She was wishing she was in Marseilles, for her experiences on ships had n't given her a very strong confidence in their safety. And Serge was anxious to get her to Paris, to her relatives, before what money she had ran out.'

Suddenly she gathered up her gloves and trinkets and said she must be going. She had worked hard that day and was tired. We rose and, as if by preconcerted arrangement, divided into two parties. It was the general rule, I gathered, that the gentlemen who had acted as her bodyguard for so long should undertake this nightly escort. We filed out into the deserted square, and the last view we had of them was the small fur-clad figure tripping away up the empty and romantic street, while over her towered the three tall soldiers, looking like benevolent brigands in their dark cloaks.

As we turned toward the Grand Harbor, Captain Gosnell remarked that, if I cared to come, they could show me something I had probably never seen before. We descended the stone stairs leading to the Custom House Quay. To see them diving with long strides down those broad, shallow steps, the solitary lamps, burning before dim shrines high up, lighting their forms as for some religious mystery, they appeared as men plunging in the grip of powerful and diverse emotions. The captain was plain enough to any intelligence. He desired money that he might maintain his position in England — a country where it is almost better to lose one's soul than one's position. Mr. Marks, beneath the genial falsity of a wig, concealed an implacable fidel-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

ity to a mechanical ideal. Heatly, on the other hand, was not so easily analyzed as Emma had suggested. He appeared the inarticulate victim of a remote and magnificent devotion. He gave the impression of a sort of proud disgust that he should have been thus afflicted.

So we came down to the water, and walked along the quay until we hailed a small, broad-beamed steamer, very brightly lighted but solitary, so that Captain Gosnell had to use a silver whistle that he carried, and the shrill blast echoed from the high ramparts of the Castle of Sant' Angelo.

A boat came slowly toward us, and we went aboard. She was a strange blend of expensive untidiness. Great pumps and hoses, costly even when purchased second-hand, lay red and rusty and slathered with dry mud about her decks. We descended a foul ladder through an iron scuttle leading to the one great hold forward. The 'tween-decks were workshops, with lathes, drills, and savage-looking torch-furnaces. Things that looked like lawn-mowers afflicted with elephantiasis revealed themselves on inspection as submersible boring-heads and cutters that went down into inaccessible places, like marine ferrets, and did execution there.

In the centre, however, suspended from a beam, was the masterpiece. It would be vain to describe the indescribable. It resembled in a disturbing way a giant spider with its legs curled semicircularly about its body. A formidable domed thing, with circular glass eyes set in it, and a door as of a safe or the breech-block of a gun. From this protruded a number of odd-looking mechanisms, and below it, flanked by caterpillar belts, on which the contrivance walked with dignity upon the bed of the ocean, were large, sharp-bladed cutters, like steel whorls.

While I gazed at this, endeavoring to

decide how much was re
much merely excited ima
Marks went down and pr
a ladder against the side o
He grasped wheels and le
with vehemence to Heatl
a switchboard and enca
in a kind of listening h
Mr. Marks climbed nimb
aperture and drew the d
click. A light appeared v
through the enormously
and showing a fantastic t
Marks moving about in h
Captain Gosnell indicated
ant perfection of this thin
in constant telephonic co
him. He could direct a b
any direction, and he coul
one or all of the extraord
the machine. Suppose a sl
shale, mud, or gravel.
himself under her, dragg
which could be made fast
each side. He could faster
portion of the hull, drill it
time crawl inside on the c
He had food, hot and col
oxygen for two days. He
read if he liked, or talk to
the ship. And quite saf
how deep. Wonderful!

I dare say it was. It wa
looking thing, anyhow,
Marks, moving like a visi
transparent skull, started
his alarming extremities;
that humanity was in da
scending itself at last. It
to come up on deck again
Angelo in the moonlight l
cloth of an Italian opera.
fort to hear that one of t
ought to have been on dut
Perhaps he had found th
too powerful for his poor
soul and had fled ashore
nightmare of mechanism i
could imagine the men-at

Digitized by Google

nouncement board bore the legend 'Tonight — Faust.'

'You want tea?' said the boy, with a forward dart of his head, like an inquisitive bird.

I nodded.

'Toast?'

I nodded again. 'I thought you were at the hotel,' I remarked.

'Only in the evenings,' he explained, lifting his tray. 'You want cakes, too?'

I nodded again, and he seemed to approve of my catholic taste. A low voice said, 'Karl!' and he hurried down out of sight.

I was sitting there munching a bun and enjoying some really well-made tea (with lemon), and watching a number of cheerful well-dressed people emerging from the theatre, when something caused me to look round, and I saw the face of Bionda just above the floor. She was standing at a turn in the stair, regarding me attentively. I rose, and she came on up.

'I thought,' she said without raising her eyes, 'that I had seen you before. Have you everything you wish?'

'Everything except someone to talk to,' I said.

She raised her eyes with a serious expression in them. 'I will talk if you wish,' she said gravely.

'Do sit down,' I begged.

I wished to sit down myself, for the window was low. She complied.

'I am a friend of Mr. Heatly,' I went on.

Her face lighted up. 'He is a very nice man,' she said, laughing. 'He likes me very much. He told me he was going to look after me for the rest of my life. He makes me laugh very much. You like him?'

'I used to be on the same ship with him,' I said; 'years ago, before he was married.'

'Ah, yes, before he was married. I see. Now you go on a ship again?'

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

'When she arrives from Odessa.'

'From —' She looked hard at me. 'Perhaps there will be news, if she comes from Odessa.'

'Maybe.' (She sighed.) 'You have had no news, then, since the Revolution?'

'Nothing. Not one single word. In there, it is all dark. When your ship comes, there will be passengers, no?'

'Ah, I could n't say,' I replied. 'We must wait. If there are any, I will let you know.'

'Thank you.' Her gaze wandered across the street. 'They have finished the play. What do you call when they sing — before?'

'A rehearsal, you mean.'

'Yes. Well, they have finished. There is Mephistopheles coming out now.' She nodded toward a tall gentleman in tweeds, who was smoking a cigarette and swinging a cane on the upper terrace. 'He waits for Margarita. There she is.'

A robust creature emerged, putting on long gloves, and the two descended to the sidewalk. Bionda laughed.

'Does Margarita usually walk out with Mephisto?' I asked.

'Oh, they are married,' she informed me with a whimsical grimace, 'and very happy.'

'What are you?' I demanded abruptly. 'Not a Slav, I am sure.'

'Me? No, I am a Bohemian,' she said.

'How appropriate! How exquisitely appropriate!' I murmured.

'From Prague,' she added, sighing a little.

'An enemy?' (She nodded.) 'But if you will only consider yourself Czechoslovak — ' I suggested.

She made a gesture of dissent and rose. 'Let me know when your ship comes in,' she said; and I promised.

Three young naval lieutenants in tennis undress came up the stairs and called for tea. The little b to take their order; and I p went out.

Our intimacy increased, the days passed, and I be der whether or not I too v pass under the spell and de to the amelioration of her my ship went back to Ode be the bearer of messages, inquiry seeking news of a sionnaire in the Asiatic Ur extensive promises, chiefly was pretty sure my ship ably go somewhere else — Tunis.

The simple sailor man in ops a species of simple cunn tect himself from being too exploited. But it is practi sible to rid a woman of the she is imposing upon a Emma thought it well to my danger. She heard ru that woman. Where had money to start her tea-sho when all the officers had where would she get custo so on.

These questions did not Bionda herself, however. S but her sadness was the in sult of delightful memorie had been full and animated only natural, since fate h stranded on a pleasant isla should indulge her desire fo before rousing to do herself in the new environment. T ity of regaining the wealth th lost did not seem to interes She never spoke of the ex Captain Gosnell and his fe turers. It seemed doubtf whether she understood any about it. A shrug, and she subject.

And then one day I was two of the Russian officers a

Digitized by Google

nd they told me
r orders at last.
Paris.
for Marseilles,'
spur jingled as
settle it in the
ifficulty he made
t I would give
ce in my power
s were gone. I
rity, since I my-
a thousand miles
ne. And the little
k after him, too.
night before my
in on Monday, I
l Captain Gosnell
the Café de la
eedingly yet dec-
were to sail the
ıd adjourned to a
café, and through
ı amused public
es of the orgy.
tere features had
e; and though he
nt, or even noisy,
had reached an-
And so there may
ce in the grandi-
ı he raised a glass
rmured, —
e all adore, who
return. Our mas-
s luck!'
oked in a puzzled
ss. He gradually
and helped me to
cab. Mr. Marks,
, snored. Heatly
ear night, —

r Kingdom of power.'

As they turned
the high, windy

fashioned her throne;
ne reigneth alone' —

Next morning, after Early Mass, as we walked slowly up the *rampe* and came to a pause on the ramparts of the Lower Barracca, I was curious to discover whether this departure of her champions would make any authentic impression upon her spirits.

'Suppose,' I was saying, 'we had a message from Odessa, that your husband had arrived. And suppose he sent for you? Or that he had reached Paris and wanted you there?'

'Oh, I should go, of course. It would be like life again, after being dead.'

Here was a fine state of affairs! We were all ghosts to her, phantoms inhabiting another shadowy world, cut off from life by an immense, pitiless blue sea. Compared with that distant and possibly defunct concessionnaire in the Asiatic Urals, we were all impalpable spectres! Our benevolence had about as much conscious significance for her as the sunlight upon a plant. I did not speak again until the little steamer, with a croak of her whistle, passed out between the guns of the harbor-mouth and began slowly to recede across the mighty blue floors, a great quantity of foul smoke belching from her funnel and drifting across the rocks. And then I mentioned casually what was happening — that those men were bound upon her affairs, seeking treasure at the bottom of the sea, devoted to an extravagant quest.

She made no reply. The steamer receded yet further. It became a black blob on the blue water, a blob from which smoke issued, as if it were a bomb which might explode suddenly with a tremendous detonation, and leave no trace. But Bionda's eyes were not fixed upon the steamer. She was gazing musingly upon the great cannon frowning down from the further fortress. And after a while she sighed.

'Like life, after being dead!' she murmured again.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

It was as if she had forgotten us. She was like a departed spirit, discontented with the conveniences and society of paradise, who desires to return, but dreads the journey. And it became an acute question, whether at any time she had achieved any real grasp of her position. Had she ever realized how she had inspired these men to unsuspected sentiments and released the streams of heroic energy imprisoned in their hearts? Did she suspect even for a moment how she had engaged their i nopolized their time, estab in defiance of all the rules midst of their alien affecti know or care how they to fered, and perhaps sinned, she ever imagine herself not resting on the inert e clining in comfort on t anxious bodies of men?

Or one may put the q way — Does any woman?

'SOMETIMES WE HARDLY WANTED Y

BY FANNIE STEARNS GIFFORD

SOMETIMES we hardly wanted you,
Our days together were so rare:
Hill-tops, brook-hollows, and the blue
Castles of windless sunny air;
Camp-fires by certain secret springs,
Green trails that only we could trace —
Love made us misers of these things.
And you, still wandering in space,
Little and lone and undiscerned —
We did not know we needed you.

Strange! — For your bright warm self is burne
Into our hearts, till all that blue
Of morning, and pearl-mist of night,
Wind, water, sun, — those secret ways, —
Mean You; our youth and lovely light,
Our laughter and our length of days!

Digitized by Google

HE NAME OF THE LORD

BY MILTON O. NELSON

I

es go back to the
oungest of a fam-
ken row of boys
sin farm a mile
er was a man of
sion; and in that
x farms occupied
bearing his sur-
f the Methodist
their father and
n honor to his
o the land which
ad given them.
part for the size
I was born. The
sed by the addi-
rs, and these in
d the size of the

Pilgrim Father
erican conditions
d covered by his
At the age of
ded his father to
tral farm in the
son out into the
tion was only as
v York, a region
westerly by peo-
son. But seven
ered together the
goods that fell to
ney into the land
ns, staking out a
the big timber
of Milwaukee.
ears before Wis-
o the Union.

Two years later, to his cabin and clearing in the big woods he brought as his bride a Rochester schoolmistress twenty-one years of age, the child of Methodist parents. Nine years later, finding themselves in a community uncongenial and irreligious, they, with their accumulated substance and four little sons, migrated again — this time to the farm where I was born. Their settling here was largely determined by the fact that not far away, and just across the Illinois line, was a Methodist society, which had given the name of 'Christian Hollow' to the section about it.

This church being too far away for our convenient attendance, Methodist preaching service was set up in father's cabin. Here, also, the first public school in our neighborhood was opened, with mother as teacher. When the public schoolhouse was built, a year or two later, it was made larger by a few square feet than the community thought necessary, because of father's offer to give $100 for such an enlargement, on condition that religious meetings be permitted in the building.

Wherever father halted in his pilgrimages, 'there builded he an altar unto the Lord'; and wherever mother spread the table, thither came presently the Methodist circuit-rider. In both of father's Wisconsin homes his house was the first Methodist preaching-place in the community; and on both farms Methodist camp-meetings were held, to

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

which both father and mother devoted unstinted time and provision.

Of the Methodist society in our neighborhood, father was made class leader, which office in those days carried with it the authority and responsibility of vice-pastor. He also was superintendent of the Sunday School. These being the days before Sunday-School helps, the exercises consisted chiefly of committing to memory Scripture and the Methodist catechism. I have but the faintest memory of father's method of officiating; but his way of drilling the Ten Commandments into the mind of a child could hardly be excelled. It ran like this: —

'Thou shalt not take the name, thou shalt not take the name, of the Lord thy God in vain, of the Lord thy God in vain, for the Lord will not hold him guiltless, for the Lord will not hold him guiltless, that taketh his name in vain, that taketh his name in vain.'

The commandment given for the day's advance lesson was repeated by the school in concert, and the drill was made cumulative, the school reviewing each Sunday, in this double-barreled fashion, all the commandments previously committed. This solemn drumming, drumming in the ears of the children added not a little, I suppose, to the weight and authority of the Scriptures: But the children of our family were more impressed, I think, by the morning and evening worship in the home. To us small folk on this large farm, the greatest item in the business of farming was family prayers. At least, this was the only portion of the day's programme that might not be omitted, or at least shifted about to suit circumstances.

This service consisted of a chapter from the Bible read by father, two verses of a hymn, led by mother, followed by a prayer by father. Evening worship consisted of a hymn led by mother and a prayer by mother. We all knelt in prayer. No meal was ever begun without a blessing being asked. So, according to this programme, the whole family came together formally into the presence of the Almighty five times a day. Besides this, there were the individual morning and evening prayers at the bedside.

Morning worship immediately preceded breakfast. The salt pork fried, the gravy made, the potatoes drained, and all set back on the stove to keep warm; the big stack of buckwheat cakes on the hearth covered to prevent their cooling off — these are a well-defined memory of the morning programme. Then father sat down with the big Bible in his lap, and mother with the baby in her lap; the circle of children came to order, and worship wholly occupied the next ten or fifteen minutes. It was never hurried and never perfunctorily done. Though father's prayers were much the same from day to day, they were not seldom varied to cover the spiritual needs of some of us delinquent children, particularly the youngest pair of boys — the 'little boys,' as father designated us.

The chastening rod was an established institution in our home. It was not a vulgar gad, but a sprout of that ancient and honorable rod spoken of in the Scriptures as being so wholesome and necessary to the spiritual upbringing of the children of Israel. It was rarely applied without a preparatory lecture, in which father's eyes would usually fill with tears, or threaten to. But whipping was not so dreaded by us two small offenders as the process of being 'carried to a throne of grace' on the wings of father's petitions. In these pleadings father's voice would often tremble, his throat choke, and pauses in the prayer, painful beyond telling, would occur. It did sometimes seem to me that a big man like father ought not to take advantage like that of a little

Digitized by Google

presence of the
an audience in
pings, however,
private; except
nd myself, com-
sins by two and
m in pairs. But
gs did have their
ffect on our daily
o pretty steadily
trength of such a

ch our farm lay
'oak openings,'
between woods,
ie land—a little
st farming, but
ur section faced
he beautiful roll-
n Illinois; and to
dulated away in
which we called
heavy hardwood
stward from the
nica River — a
sh stream. Much
not yet under
pasturage in the
e settlers' small

ilking, the farm-
s into the fenced
a run in the de-
e aid of dogs or
find their way to
called these un-
the cattle kept
the lead of the
zed and roamed
ometimes joining
e neighbor herds.
dren from each
o find and fetch

ally fell in with
nted in groups,
hat, as the habit-
herds at the time
would thus trail

the cattle through groves and brushland, looking for fresh marks in the cowpaths, stopping to listen for the bells, and determining by their tone which was Crosby's, which La Due's, which Nelson's, which Beedy's, and which Ballinger's. Sometimes the herd would shift their feeding-grounds for the day by the space of a mile or more. Sometimes the cows, well fed, and not being such heavy milkers as to feel an urge toward the milking-yard, would be found in the high brush, standing stock-still, with mute bells. On occasions like these the children would often wander till nightfall, coming home tired and sleepy, to tired, sleepy men-folk, forced to sit up late and add the work of milking to an already overworked day.

Among these little cow-hunters were girls of nine or ten years and boys of four or five. Rarely did children above the age of twelve go after the cows, if there were younger ones to send. A child old enough to wear shoes in summer was considered rather mature to send for the cows.

These herds commonly consisted of not more than a dozen cattle, young and old; and, fortunately for us, each herd separated easily from the flock on the way home, as they passed the cow-yards where they belonged. But should an animal stray, and fail to come up with the herd at night, it was a serious matter. Not seldom it happened that it was never seen again. It was therefore one of our greatest cares to know that the herd we brought home was intact.

Our schoolhouse stood at the junction of two roads, in an acre plot set off from the corner of a cultivated field. Here, a highway running east and west was joined by one running south. A half-mile south on this road father had built, in the spring of 1865, a temporary cow-pen to serve as a milking-yard. Here our cattle were penned at night,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

and from here driven, after the morning milking, to the schoolhouse corner and sent running east. The country to the west was more difficult ground for cow-hunting, and so long as pasture was good to the east, we were careful to keep our cows from 'going west.'

II

It was about three o'clock of a July afternoon, I being then aged 'five, going on six,' that, sitting at my desk in the schoolhouse, I saw through the open door, a red-roan steer come trotting down the east road and into the schoolhouse yard. It was our big three-year-old. My hand shot up.

'Teacher,' I said, 'it 's our steer. He's strayed. Can me and Orill be excused to drive him home?'

At her prompt assent, we seized our straw hats and tin lunch-pails, and ran out. I rushed to block the west road, while Orill ran to the east. It was comparatively easy to head the animal into the lane going south, for he seemed himself to have chosen to travel that way.

Now, impounding in a roadside pen on the prairie a three-year-old steer of the type prevailing in Wisconsin in the year 1865, gone astray from his herd and nervous with nostalgia, was a problem serious enough for a cowboy much beyond five years of age; though at the time I was not aware of the fact. My plan of campaign was based on the presumption that, reaching the yard, the steer would go directly into it. Then I would rush up behind him and put up the bars, and there he would be caught and safely held till we should bring the rest of the herd from the commons in the evening. In the event that the steer ran past the bars, I would duck under the fence, run through the field on the east of the road, and head him off, while Orill, with lifted club and voice, would bar his ret north. Seeing himself thu and fairly trapped, the steer his horns and tail and ent

Now, though I must at t been a fairly well-seasoned a year or more of cow-pun credit, this was the first r tion in cowboy strategy of had immediate comman enough of the functioning brain to know that the cha ing the brute were at least favor. By this time the st ting down the south road, much ado to keep up wi gait.

Hot, excited, and blown the cow-pen, the bars of wi vitingly down. But the s see the yard at all. He ra then slowed his speed a litt into the cornfield to the road, and, by hard running and headed him back. E again past the bars, but Or cries turned him.

Now thoroughly flustere dicament, the steer headed run, while I, dancing, yellin ing my dinner-pail, halted But instead of charging Orill, he wheeled to the wes vaulted the old rail-fence, down with a crash, bour a forty-acre field of green wheat.

As he came down on fence, I, bursting with hot rage, shouted, 'God damn

All I remember further steer is how he looked as antly headed westward, t the slope through the wa spoiling valuable grain.

I was dazed, terrified at done. I had said the ver possible swear-word. I ha name of God in vain. I h

Digitized by Google

or even enter-
one of our fam-
one so wicked a
to wickedness,
presence of Orill
s parents. I re-
ead down on a
ying, and Orill's
ne.
it just once,' he
y it all the time

comforted by
's theology con-
ying clause. It
with the least
believed myself
ers, all unaware
was telling me a

dried my eyes,
ill never to tell
mnly promised.
ed, I went about
a leaden lump
ny little hickory
more of the
ept that I kept

torment. I rode
h the family to
a condemned
offin to the gal-
to myself the
cur in Sunday
peat the Third
ert: 'Thou shalt
u shalt not take
hy God in vain,
vain'—and at
turn to me and
the name of the
and I had fully
elf to answer up
and firmness I

do? Could one
n, before the as-
Yes, sir, I swore

at the steer when he jumped over the fence'? Such a thing was unthinkable. There was but one way of escape from the dilemma, and that was boldly to lie my way out. Nor would this have been the first time I had found a lie a very present help in trouble.

Before the exercises began, as I was sitting in fear and trembling, down the east road came a wagon with the whole Huntley family in it. They were coming to Sunday School. Orill would be with them, of course, and when father would put his awful question, 'Did you ever take the name of the Lord thy God in vain?' and I answered, 'No, sir,' Orill would rise and in a loud voice would say, 'Yes, you did! You swore at the steer when he jumped over the fence!'

For about the space of one mortal, interminable minute, 'the fear of death encompassed me and the pains of hell gat hold upon me.' I had never before, nor have I since, experienced such refinement of terror as I suffered then. Punishment of that quality after death would be sufficient penalty for any mortal sin in the category.

But the wagon passed. It was not the Huntleys' wagon at all. The Huntleys had never attended our Sunday School. Father did not ask us to repeat any of the commandments that day; nor, of course, was the awful question asked. It did not occur to me then that there was not the remotest possibility that father would ask such a question. I went home relieved and reprieved, but not pardoned. I carried my dark secret safely but heavily for what seem to me to have been long years, during which period I entertained for a time the fear that I had committed the 'unpardonable sin.'

It never occurred to me then that my determination to add bold and willful lying to profanity was the only really wicked act of the whole sad affair. But

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

had I known it well, I doubt not that I should have been willing to assume the risk of lying in order to escape the punishment that would probably have been meted out to me, had my fault been discovered. What that punishment might have been I had reason later to guess, from the ill luck that befell brother Willet some two years after.

One evening, when Willet, coming from school, was being badgered beyond endurance by some bullying neighbor boy, he turned on his tormentor and told him to 'go to hell.' The report of this dreadful lapse flew on swift wings to our parents' ears. Then the wheels of industry on our farm stopped stock-still. There was a star-chamber session in the West Room — father and mother in prayer with the little culprit, asking God for mercy and pardon for him; and following this, sentence passed on him by father, without mercy or pardon. One of the items of the sentence was that Willet must read nothing for two weeks but the Bible and the Methodist hymn-book. But the peak of the punishment was reserved for the class-meeting on the following Sunday.

At these class-meetings the lay members were waited on in turn by the class leader and asked to 'testify.' Each rose in his seat and gave his religious experience for the week last past, and usually added his hopes and good resolves for the week to come — all spoken in a more or less formal and solemn way, as if a punishment were being endured in the process. The leader advised, commended, rebuked, or encouraged, as the case might require, then passed on to the next victim.

When father came to his little shamed and penitent boy, he prefaced his call for a testimony by the general information to the house that Willet had been a very wicked boy that week, but he hoped he had asked the Lord to forgive him.

Willet did not respond to the call to testify, but hid his burning face in his arms on the school-desk and kept silence. Willet was nine years old. Mother made no interference. I wonder she did not. But from what I learned later of her tender heart, she must have suffered anguish for her sinful little son during this inquisitional torture; and knowing her, later, so well, I wonder that some good angel had not sent blaspheming me to her on that ill-starred summer day, to weep my sin out in her gentle arms instead of on a fence-rail.

The terrible conscientiousness of a parent, which could stir up such storm and stress of soul in a child's young life, may seem beyond any justification. But looking back now over a half-century of the world as it is, I am convinced that freedom from the habit of irreverence may be cheaply bought, even at that. Indeed, I came to that conclusion before I was a grown youth.

Ten years or so after my adventure in profanity, I was sent on an early morning errand to the house of a neighboring farmer. A group of rough young men were in the kitchen, waiting for breakfast. It was the very hour when father, in our home, was praying in the midst of his children. One of the men had on his knee a prattling child, evidently struggling with his first coherent speech. There was loud laughter and great merriment among the men. A girl of about fourteen years called to her mother in the next room, —

'Maw, O maw! come hear baby! Oh, ain't he cunnin'?'

The baby was practising the same high explosive I had used when the steer jumped over the fence.

Digitized by Google

'S TWO LITTLE HORNS

FRANCES THERESA RUSSELL

be content to
nocent adven-
bate and argu-
gerously beset
assing alterna-
e, when a col-
sight of a fel-
strayed from
n and distress-
ight horn of a
led 'What Do
will not feel
te himself, as a
agility, on the
at Do Teachers
sure, a safe ag-
se two perilous
at Does Any-
s a place of un-
fords no scope

s offered, how-
s of Professor
he intellectual
p of spectators,
latter reaction
f yet other be-
erested.
d the May *At-*
n and read to
s this accepted
how to do it.
tive, the young
at in many re-
bject-lesson on
omptly was the
nced upon, so
responses, from
from lads and
n demanded all

the tact of the Speaker of the House. Perhaps the total effect can best be conveyed in the form of a colloquy by the members of the class, with the author of 'What Do Teachers Know?' as the object of the inquiries. The general impression was somewhat as follows: —

Question. 'The writer says, "The ancients were interested in interpreting facts, not in accumulating them." How could they interpret what they had not accumulated and therefore did not have?'

Answer. Silence.

Question. 'If "intelligence is insensitive to mere facts, and reacts only to ideas," where does it get the ideas to react from? What is an idea but a deduction from two or more facts?'

Answer. Silence.

Question. 'If "artichokes and chameleons and Yale and the date of the battle of Lexington have very little place in the production of understanding and intelligence and critical power," what has?'

Answer. 'A benevolent and humanistic skepticism, and a willingness to weigh and balance, to expound and elucidate, are all that is needed.'

Question. 'But what is there to be skeptical about but facts? What is there to put in the balance and weigh? What to expound and elucidate about?

Answer. Silence.

Question (from a demure maid in the back row). 'Does n't Professor Boas seem to have a good many facts at his command, and use them pretty freely in this very anathema against them?'

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Answer. 'They speak for themselves.'

Question. 'Socrates is eulogized for his "sublime ignorance." Was it honest-to-goodness ignorance or a sublime assumption of it?'

Answer. Silence from the Oracle, broken by a modest voice from over by the window. 'Seems to me I read somewhere that the Socratic method was simply the wise man's pretense of an ignorance that longed for enlightenment, and that "on this baited hook were caught the unwary whose pretense was to a wisdom when they had it not."'

Question. 'In what "mysterious way" does information come when it is needed?'

Answer (from a sad Sophomore). 'Sometimes, in my case anyhow, through chagrin and bitterness, by first having my ignorance exposed.'

Question. 'The Ph.D. is rebuked for writing a treatise on something that nobody had ever thought of before. What would be its value if somebody had thought of it before and done it?'

Answer. Silence.

Question. 'In that connection, if nobody ever did an unthought-of thing, what would become of pioneering and progress? Who would be in the van and blaze the trail?'

Answer. Silence.

Question. 'When did the Ph.D. candidate begin being ignorant of everything else in order to write his dissertation?'

Answer (from an irreverent youth next the radiator). 'Since no credit is given him for the eighteen or twenty years of education from the kindergarten through the Master's degree, he must have risen right up from his cradle to "bore, face downward, into his problem, while the world floated by in clouds, and he as unaware as a lamprey of logarithmic functions." He could have had no more information or culture to start in with than a Hottentot.'

Question. 'Even if a "melancholy," by perm pathetic fallacy and in sp how can it be "evasive"?

Answer (from the en disregarding mere facts.'

Question. 'All these E that are listed as a waste money — does any one st swallow them all? And i have a honing to know a Bible, or Johnson and his tic poetry, or the America should it be forbidden hi not all honorable subjects sumes his beef and bread, salad, an entrée, or a des

Answer (from the tea has a good digestion and tite, he may go right thro menu, with impunity and cocktail to cheese and co the elect there are still c and ginger shall be hot i

Question. 'If to one wh the army "the universit kingdom of shadows teach living men," do t who were in the army see and the students who ne like living men?'

Answer. Silence.

Question (from a Sophon cynical Seniors have foun "nothing in it," why do the word down and stav this stampede toward hall Most failures don't keep and more popular, as the to be doing.'

Answer (from a stran Senior). 'Pure maliciou like to see more silly flies same spider's web.

Question (from the te grand climax of the who ment before us is one o should be able to testify. own experience goes, is it t

Digitized by Google

r, and hungry," sioned, cynical, of expressive ark from an in-) 'When I was l with the big nger was main- t, and I was as st of the bunch of the closing any professor

do of his con- t our own gong ds before, and scals out, com- next dose of cts with which o *ad nauseam.* easure out an- l for my own ght of Strun- observation in his 'The Everlasting Feminine,' that any statement whatever made about Woman is true. So is any generalization about students and professors. Some Freshmen are indeed wonderfully keen and eager; others are an incredible miracle of sodden stupidity and indifference. Some Seniors are flaccid and unstrung; others are just being keyed up to concert pitch. Some teachers are — anything you like; others are everything you do not like. Accordingly, when it comes to students *versus* teachers, or facts *versus* ideas, or information *versus* intelligence, or summer *versus* winter, or food *versus* fresh air, the dialectician may well take a cue from the canny Ruggles girl, confronted with a choice between hard *versus* soft sauce, and take 'a little of both, please.'

For in the logical realm there remaineth classification, interpretation, and discrimination, of parent facts and progeny ideas; and the greatest of these is discrimination.

M JAMES AND HIS LETTERS

BY L. P. JACKS

I

e 'facts' of chief erse were *per-* king from that o have earned there is none ore sincere and is own person- e flew were all philosophy is, ge. This in a sense is true of all philosophers, though they are not always aware of it; but James knew it and accepted it as one of his guides to the meaning of Truth. His 'will to believe' is fundamentally nothing else than the *right* to be yourself, and to express yourself in your own way, without entangling your freedom in alliances with those big classifications or abstractions which reduce man-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

kind to the dead levels of thought, action, and character. Or, to put it from the other side, the Universe that he interprets is just the same kind of high-spirited, restless, inconsistent, adventurous, unaccountable being that each man who has attained to self-knowledge finds within his own breast. Against the idea of the Universe as a Big Institution, 'governed' by a system of inviolable law, — the idea which has become so dear to those who are bewitched by the catchwords of modern science, — James reacted with the strongest aversion; and the reason for the reaction lay in his temperamental inability to live in such a world himself, or to conceive that any free spirit would be at home under its cast-iron conditions. Writing to Theodore Flournoy in 1895, the year before the publication of *The Will to Believe*, he says, 'I do hope [your daughters] are being educated in a thoroughly emancipated way, just like true American girls, with no laws except those imposed by their own sense of fitness.' There are those, perhaps, to whom a statement such as this will appear as heralding a general disrespect for the Ten Commandments. The best answer to their fears is the picture of James revealed in these letters. It is the picture of a very perfect gentleman, of a finely tempered ethical nature, of a large and tender heart, and of personal loyalty raised to the highest power.

Perhaps the greatest service rendered by James to the spiritual life of his age is that he makes philosophy interesting to everybody. Whatever the merits of his doctrine may be, — and that is a question into which the present writer does not propose to enter, — there is not a doubt that philosophy in his hands is always something that 'makes a difference,' a vitally important exercise, which no man who would live a full life can afford to neglect. Its problems are not mere themes for discussion, but critical points in the battl
work, in consequence, has
mense impetus to philoso
over the world. What th
his actual disciples may
course be said, though it
very large; but that he ha
osophic study to a highe
portance, increased the
those who pursue it, and
new zest upon the pursu
question. There are few
the subject who do not
heavy debt for redeeming
dullness and futility into
otherwise falling.

And the secret of his in
mistakable. Long before
appeared, readers of his
conscious of being in co
mind whose insight was th
come of the breadth and
human sympathy. That
now confirmed. Thanks t
able selection that has bee
letters, and to the unob
with which they have be
gether, the reader has no
prehension of the man wh
ity he had dimly felt or im
published works. The eff
as if James's philosophy h
bly acted on the stage. W
separably connected the
doctrine were. The only d
mains is as to which is t
which the commentary.

It is not as 'a disinteres
of the universe' that Jam
himself to the great proble
cern us all. On the contra
of his appeal springs preci
profound and living inte
took in the universe, and
that part of it which consi
low men. He appears befo
a 'spectator' at all, but a
the drama of life; and we
philosophy is merely his

Digitized by Google

f on a higher
s is here re-
which not only
odies it in per-
ing it with a
ich impartial
ned forever to
d be. All doc-
he world have
ay.

ieve they can
uld first read
sk themselves
articular item
vent, while he
h still lives on,
am James. Of
e been trained
ave dabbled in
why 'individu-
se a phrase of
ne must differ-
.' But if any-
self-respecting
itself into, we
r some reason
us, the 'One'
n life has dif-
out two thou-
uls. But why
o less? Would
ugh this busi-
self into indi-
ust as success-
hem had been
there had been
lozen of us all
fficulties be at
two thousand
ccounted for.
to explain why
l to be one of
ght have taken
any difference
heory. But a
ave been made

to the world. The truth is that, until we have explained why individuals are who they are, and not somebody else, we have explained nothing. All that we can say of each is, in the last resort, 'by the grace of God he is what he is.' And we say it with peculiar emphasis and fervor when William James is the name before us.

The philosophy of William James took its rise in the question raised by the last paragraph. He was himself, if one may say so, flagrantly unique, and his uniqueness was manifest in nothing so much as in the power he possessed of discerning the disguised or hidden uniqueness of other people, and, indeed, of every single thing, great and small, which the universe contains. He was intensely alive to the queerness of things, and to those inalienable qualities in men and women which make each one of them an astonishment and a portent. Once, speaking to him of the men who were going into a certain profession, I said, 'They all appear to be *lopsided* men.' His answer was: 'My dear fellow, did you ever meet a man who was not lopsided?' This uniqueness of the man, displaying itself most of all in his recognition of uniqueness in everybody else, is what makes these letters of James an admirable introduction to his philosophy. His problem, so to speak, is incarnate in his own person, and it is suggested by his attitude to his correspondents.

Deeply interesting it is to observe the wide variations in the tone, the style, the matter of the letters, according to the correspondent whom James is addressing. Among collections of letters recently published several could be named off-hand which serve only to reveal the uniformity of the writer's own personality. But these letters reveal also the personalities of those to whom they are addressed. They introduce us effectively, not only to William

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

James, but to his circle of friends. After a little practice you can put your hand over the name at the head of the letter and, reading a few sentences, make a shrewd guess as to the man, or woman, he is addressing. And, of course, in revealing his correspondent, James reveals himself far more clearly than if he wrote from the egocentric position. Unconsciously he acted in his correspondence on the principle, which is the rule of all fine and chivalrous spirits, of 'so helping others to affirm their personalities as to affirm one's own at the same time.'

In this way the letters become an introduction, not only to James's Pragmatism, but to his ethics and to his religion: for in spite of his own hesitations on the point, or perhaps in consequence of them, there can be no doubt, save to those whose minds are obsessed by narrow definitions, that he was a profoundly religious man. To recognize the uniqueness of one's neighbor, and to concede him his rights as a unique individual, is at the same time to proclaim the doctrine of Free Will by putting it into action as the law of our human relationships — the one form in which freedom can never be overthrown.

In this connection, it is not without significance that one of the closest friendships revealed by these letters is that which subsisted between James and the most formidable of his philosophical opponents — Josiah Royce. One has only to look at the photograph in which they are presented together, to realize that these two high-souled antagonists welcomed each other's presence in the universe. In the view of James, the form of philosophy was essentially dramatic — no monologue of a solitary sage, but a partnership of reciprocally interacting minds, each bringing its own contribution in response to some definite need of the human spirit, and deriving meaning from its conte others. Behind them al 'will to believe,' or the lieve, as the case might be his perception of this ofte ponents in their attitude its effect upon his att them was to raise his tol point of positive sympath

'It's a will-to-believe o he wrote to Charles H. S 'I am perfectly willing should disbelieve: why sh be tolerantly interested in of my belief? . . . Mean delight, or *shall* take delig forts you may make to ne human consciousness, for attempts can a satisfact *vendi* be established.' He the severe logician will consistency. Why shoul who desires his own work tend a warm welcome to a er who says the flat oppo sportsman can answer though his answer, when quite unintelligible to the The sportsman desires to is a true sportsman, he rather than sorry when steps into the competin highly trained as his own inconsistent. By no devic genuity can you reconcile win with your preference nent who has a fair chan you. It is a paradox whi covered in philosophy, a thoroughly enjoyed. He master in things appert sportsmanship of the Spi

'He looks more like a sp a professor,' said one of h which we may add that h he was, and that it wo for philosophy if more of looked like him.

Digitized by Google

III

Both from the tone and from the substance of these letters it is abundantly evident that for James the critical things of life were the personal relations. More than once he says so, *totidem verbis*. 'Ideality is only to be found in the personal relations.' 'The best things in life are its friendships.' One can imagine him subscribing without much hesitation to the saying of William Blake: 'The general good is the plea of the scoundrel, the hypocrite and the flatterer. He who would do good, let him do it in minute particulars.' From this saying the distance is not great to the following sentences from a letter to Mrs. Henry Whitman: 'Let us all be as we are, save when we want to reform ourselves. The only unpardonable crime is that of wanting to reform *one another*.' His rejection of the conceptual mode of arriving at truth is here reflected in his distrust of regimentation as a means of arriving at good conduct. For a striking passage, which reveals his inner mind on this subject, take the following from another letter to the last-named correspondent: —

'As for me, my bed is made: I am against bigness and greatness in all their forms, and with the invisible molecular forces that work from individual to individual, stealing in through the crannies of the world like so many soft rootlets, or like the capillary oozing of water, and yet rending the hardest monuments of man's pride if you give them time. The bigger the unit you deal with, the hollower, the more brutal, the more mendacious, is the life displayed. So I am against all the big organizations as such, national ones first and foremost; against all big successes and big results; and in favor of the eternal forces of truth which always work in the individual and immediately unsuccessful way — under-dogs always, till history comes, after they are long dead, and puts them on the top.'

Had James lived ten years longer and witnessed the war, and the hideous confusion sequent upon it to which the blundering blindness of the 'big organizations' has brought the world, he would not have found it necessary to add, as he does, that his words on this subject would probably be 'quite unintelligible to anybody but myself.' The truth they tell is precisely what the war and its after-effects have made intelligible to everybody. We see, on the one hand, the big organizations, 'especially the national ones,' everywhere confronted by problems with which they are wholly incapable of coping; attempting to govern the action of forces which are intrinsically beyond human control both in their vastness and in their infinite complexity; while, on the other hand, the *pretense* of coping with them surrounds the whole operation with an atmosphere of make-believe and mendacity, which not only discredits government as such, but demoralizes the character of the politician and of the citizen who follows him. In the attempt to keep up this fiction, on which the very life of the big organizations depends, the politics of the world, both national and international, become, for the most part, a mere struggle for power among those who are ambitious to sit in the seats of the mighty; and to this struggle the real interests of mankind, which government is supposed to serve, are sacrificed wholesale.

Against the regimental mode of thought which, beginning in the realms of speculative philosophy, ends by staging this fatal force on the boards of history, William James was, by both temperament and conviction, a rebel. For ages past our civilization has been obsessed by the notion that man is a being whose first and outstanding need is the need *to be governed*. But we have

Digitized by Google

only to read over the first essay in *The Will to Believe* to satisfy ourselves that this is precisely the conception of man which James challenges from the outset. The first need of man is the need to be *taught* and not the need to be governed. *Au fond* man is an ungovernable being, who, in the last resort, submits to no law 'save that which is imposed by his own sense of fitness.' There is no such thing as 'keeping him in his place,' for the simple reason that his life consists in the process of moving out of his place and finding a new one, in obedience to a creative impulse which it were a sin to deny and a crime to restrain.

That this is the position to which the doctrine of 'the will to believe' ultimately leads up is, I think, abundantly clear from the passage I have just quoted from the *Letters*. At this point James's 'Humanism' and his 'Americanism' are two names for the same thing. Unlike his brother Henry, his heart was always with the American rather than the European type of civilization, and the root of his preference, so far as it was the result of reflection, lay in the fact that America gives to 'the molecular forces' a wider freedom to play their part.

'My dear Mack,' he writes to his brother-in-law, 'we "intellectuals" in America must all work to keep our precious birthright of individualism, and of freedom from these institutions. Every great institution is perforce a means of corruption — whatever good it may also do.'

And again, to Miss Frances R. Morse, 'God bless the American climate, with its transparent, passionate, impulsive variety and headlong fling. . . . God bless America in general. . . . Talk of corruption! We don't know what the word corruption means at home, with our improvised and shifting agencies of crude pecuniary bribery, compared with the solidly entrenched and per organized corruptive geniuses archy, nobility, church, army, t trate the very bosom of the hig as well as the lower kinds of pe the European States (except land) and sophisticate their away from the impulse to st ward handling of any simple

These words were written n twenty years ago. How far may still deserve the blessin James here invokes upon her the present writer to say. But war and the sequel to the war the 'great institutions' of Eur exposed than ever to capture b forces hardly admits of a doul the League of Nations, design first authors for the express p countering these forces, seem present moment, to be in no li ger of yielding to them. What would James have said ab well-meant effort to cure 'th ganizations' of their inhere by creating a yet bigger on shall include them all? There i in these letters to indicate would have blessed it. That lover of peace is, of course, enough; and if further proof i it can be found in his *Moral E for War*. But in this matter, many others, we should hav him, I imagine, with the molec ces and against the big organi

IV

To the present writer Willia appears as the forerunner of when Education will have bec primary concern of mankind a ernment secondary, when 'ligh esteemed more highly than 'p an order which reverses their positions at the present momen his whole view of the universe

Digitized by Google

ent within it, it
n of developing
he human mind
tance than that
tive systems the
operation. In-
he second prob-
litical activities
e solved only in
to a solution of
men the largest
to develop as
ls, we establish
der which per-
al morality can
s between man
on and nation,
other terms.
doctrines which
o believe' need,
d in the light of
en years. In the
niverse,' against
ed to lift up his
parent and pro-
typed systems,
or of religious
ve seekers after
vain to impose
thereby divert-
needed for the
into a struggle
moves forever
whose principal
ster.
n, James left his
lt that he had
the arch.' The
when a mind
ful to correlate
with the great
history now in
danger that his
ten; the march
o bring them to
orm in which he
l, the spirit that
on and play an

ever-increasing part in moulding the civilization of the future. William James is probably the best contribution America has so far made toward establishing the final community of mankind. But it will not be a community after the type of any of the 'big organizations' now in existence.

I may be reminded that what we are here concerned with is not the teaching, but the man. For answer, I would repeat that the two are essentially one. In revealing that unity, Mr. Henry James has shown us his father as he essentially was, has paid a tribute to his memory than which none could be more fitting, and at the same time has made a contribution of great importance to the literature of his native land. The picture that he has presented reinforces at all points the essential values of the life and work of William James, and leaves upon those who knew him the impression of a living portrait.

In the well-known sermon of Phillips Brooks, named 'The Candle of the Lord,' there are a few sentences that seem to me to sum up the man as he is here presented to us, and perhaps I may be forgiven for quoting them at length.

'There is in a community a man of large character, whose influence runs everywhere. You cannot talk with any man in all the city but you get, shown in that man's own way, the thought, the feeling of that central man who teaches all the community to think, to feel. The very boys catch something of his power, and have something about them that would not be there if he were not living in the town. What better description can you give of all that than to say that that man's life was fire, and that all those men's lives were candles that he lighted, which gave to the rich, warm, live, fertile nature that was in him multiplied points of exhibition, so that he lighted the town through them?'

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

IN THE SHADOW OF FANEUHI

BY CHARLES BERNARD NORDHOFF

TOWARD evening the wind died away to a little breeze from the southeast; barely enough to fill the sails of the schooner and ruffle gently the calm surface of the sea. Banks of cloud, gold-rimmed and flushing in the sunset, were piled above the horizon, and beneath them loomed a purplish blur of land — the skyline of Huahine, first of the Leeward Islands.

I was stretched on the after-deck, listening to the faint lap and gurgle of water under the counter. The sound of subdued laughter came from the forecastle, breaking a murmur of voices speaking softly in the native tongue. The ship's bell sounded twice, seemed to hesitate, and rang twice again. A sailor in dungarees and a ragged straw hat came aft to replace the helmsman, who yawned as he stepped aside from the wheel, stretching huge bare arms in a gesture of relief. I noticed for the first time that he was of a type rarely seen in the islands to-day: a hand's-breadth taller than what we count a tall man; superbly proportioned on a giant scale, and light-skinned as a Sicilian or Catalan.

The white man beside me looked up with a scowl. He was a lean and bilious gentleman, with eyebrows that twitched unpleasantly when he spoke, and the air of perpetual discontent that goes with a dyspeptic mouth. I used to wonder why the directors had selected him for his task — the collection of Polynesian material for the cases of an American museum.

'Have a look at that boy,' he remarked; 'I've collected
many parts of the world,
had to deal with such pe
Kanakas. They're liars
every one of them, and th
rascal Teriiaro is the wor
He took me in for a w
quite warmed up over hi
burial-cave at Opoa.

'I was sent here to get
of weapons and bowls an
— genuine old stuff. No
all stowed away in the
there must be hundreds o
tered through the islands
think it is easy to find one
day! I don't want to carry
— the French government
that; all I want is the ethn
and measurements of a
skulls. Living specimens
much, because the mode
saturated with white b
among the natives the s
burial-caves are closely gu
covered that after I'd
months without getting on
one. By that time ever
beach knew what I was af
I was offering a thousand
man who would show me
ed to see. Then one mor
knocked at my door, shak
eyed at the end of a seve
He speaks a little English.

'His proposition was s
thousand francs down
thousand when the job wa
my satisfaction, he would
burial-cave at Opoa — th

Digitized by Google

Ve were to run
rent boats, and
a, he would go
oast was clear,
e stuff he could
ke me around
his canoe. I
e him away.
ne on the boy.
him for a guide
he interior of
ew the island
Opoa; chiefs
Vell, I took a
roa and finally
e that he had
ad known the
n't find it —
blocked it up.
ken my money
; but I raised
housand francs
to Tahiti, he
— Ah, here's

amas was com-
d blue regarded
at once kindly
ved pipe — so
t it seemed as
is nose — pro-
ain of a white
er of the Atoll
known to re-
then, in order
and fill it; and
remain in his
but at other
place, trailing
and lending to
unced between
by a quarter-
an individual
is a person of
and probably
der in eastern
vs more of the
dered good for
down carefully

beside me, settling his back against the rail, the collector rose to go below. The trader smiled behind his moustache.

'Still croaking about his thousand francs, eh?' he said, when the other was gone. 'Teriiaro paid that long ago — I lent him the money myself. I fancy he's been telling you what a lot of thieves and liars the natives are — a conclusion based on a single experience. No doubt he's right — the native does n't differ very much from the rest of us. But Teriiaro, though he does drink a bit, is not a bad boy; I've known his grandfather for twenty years, and you won't come across a finer old chap. The men of the family were hereditary high priests at Opoa for centuries, and the missionaries still suspect the old man of dabbling in heathenism. The boy was probably lying when he told this collector person he could n't find the cave; he admitted as much to me when he asked me to lend him the money to make good his advance. I'll give you his side of the story as he told it to me that day; you can believe what you like — the native yarn, at any rate, is the more entertaining of the two.

'From the time of his birth, Teriiaro lived at the mouth of the valley of Opoa, — at the foot of Faneuhi, the sacred mountain, — in the house of his grandfather, Matatua. There is not a drop of white blood in the family, which is of the highest aristocracy, as natives go; you 've seen the boy — a much bigger man, and lighter-colored, than the run of them. Before the missionaries came, Opoa, on the island of Raiatea, was the holiest place in the Eastern Pacific: Oro, the war-god, was born there, and human sacrifices were brought from distant islands to be slain before the platform of rock in the grove of ironwood trees. When a high chief died, his body, embalmed by rubbing with cocoanut oil and the juices of

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

herbs, was laid on the *marae* for the ceremonies which would admit his spirit to *Rohutu Noanoa* — the Sweet-Scented Heaven. After that, the corpse was borne, secretly and by night, far into the recesses of the valley, to a cave known only to the few who were its guardians. Nowadays the forest has grown thick about the neglected marae, and the natives fear the place as the haunt of evil spirits, saying that the hunter of a wild pig or gatherer of fire-wood who sets foot on that ground will be afflicted with a palsy, or break out with loathsome sores like those of a leper.

'Matatua, the grandfather of Teriiaro, is a wizard of great repute among the people. They believe that he can foretell the future, invoke the spirits of the dead, and lay spells which cause those who incur his displeasure to sicken and die. He alone on the island can subdue the fury of the fire in the *Umuti*, and by the power of his incantations pass unharmed — with those to whom he gives leave — over the white-hot stones. The missionary at Uturoa, to whom Matatua is a thorn in the flesh, came once to view this fire-walking; but he could make nothing of it and said that it was devil's work — that Matatua was an unholy man, to be avoided like the devil himself. Nevertheless, the people still come from great distances to consult Matatua — though secretly, for fear the missionary might hear of it.

'During the boyhood of Teriiaro, there were times of year when strange visitors came to the old man's house — gray-haired men of stately carriage and slow speech. No one could say whence they came, and the boy — dozing on his mat — could hear them until far into the night, speaking with his grandfather in an old language he could not understand. Sometimes, when the talking was finished, they passed quietly out into the darkness; som boy fell asleep, and awoke a to find them gone and Mat ing heavily in his corner. the moon was in its last q he could see dimly, he ro went out and followed secre saw them disappear in the f the skulls lie by the mara overcame him then, and back. On those nights, fis the barrier reef saw aweso glowing masses of flame, comets, rushing down the mo fitful glares on the tree-tops suddenly fed and as sudd guished; and sometimes, if breeze blew strongly from th heard the faint deep throb

'As Teriiaro grew older, father began to tell him st old days: of forays again islands; of heroes, chiefs, *omore* — short club-like sp ioned by wizards and ha fires kindled at the ever-bu of Miru. The names of th together with legends of th who bore them, have lived f ation to generation in the handed down in traditions of Excalibur, or the magic Roland.

'Once the old man took th him, far up into the valley, herbs. At a place where t *miro* trees grew apart from the forest, Matatua led the base of a cliff. Directing hi to bind dry cocoanut fronds he moved aside a thin slab disclosing a passage into t of the mountain. Presently in a lofty cavern, its ceili shadows that advanced and in the flickering torchligh niches about the rocky wa out the skulls of men long de dry sandy floor, in ordered

Digitized by Google

chiefs, bound
cately plaited
dead warrior
of ironwood.
vay from one
names of men
ad borne, and
e poetic words

came to know
Opoa. On ac-
't the house of
me to Tahiti.
he lived in the
er pretty face
Teriiaro. Her
class of society
some believe
an aboriginal
-skinned than
nts. Matatua
ch — the gulf
as too great.
er a child, and
stole away to
ok passage on

when he came
work. As it
extra hand to
time he and
enough. Then
ld, wandering
drunken com-
erever the rum
used to stop
eyes swollen
I could n't do
her husband

y, and put him
ding through
ork and clean
n of him; but
eete, the story
It was at the
orees that he
d made up his
urial-cave.

'Had such a proposal been made to him when he first arrived in Tahiti, he would have dismissed the idea with horror. But he had been a long time in Papeete and had heard white men, whose wisdom he had no reason to doubt, ridicule the old beliefs — calling them heathen nonsense, fit only to deceive the ignorant. The offer of money in advance was an irresistible temptation; he spent the thousand francs on drink and dresses for Tetua, before his departure for the Leeward Group.

'The collector stopped in Uturoa, as they had agreed, while Teriiaro went on to the house of his grandfather. The old man received him gravely, saying that he had done well to come home, for reports of his bad habits in Tahiti had reached Raiatea. If he suspected the object of Teriiaro's visit, he gave no sign, and the boy began to fancy, with a faint new-born contempt, — even here, in the shadow of Faneuhi, the sacred mountain, — that, after all, white men were right. But he pretended interest when Matatua spoke of a desire to initiate him in the wisdom of the ancients, and suggested that he leave home no more.

'On the third morning the old man launched his canoe, telling his grandson that he was obliged to make a trip to Tevaitoa, on the far side of the island, where he owned land. There was copra to be weighed and sold — he might be gone a week. Teriiaro stood on the beach until the canoe had rounded a distant wooded point. His chance had come.

'It was still early when he started on his journey inland. The grass was still damp with dew; the air was cool, and fragrant with the scent of *pua* blossoms. He was thinking of the things he would buy with the second thousand francs: a new guitar, bright with pearl inlay, which would mark him as a man

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

of substance among his friends; the long-coveted watch with a luminous dial; a pair of shoes for Tetua, the kind with high heels, such as the half-caste girls in Papeete wear. His feet were as nimble as his thoughts; he glanced up, and the three great miro trees, stately and sombre as in the days of his boyhood, stood before him. The rest of the story I can tell you only as he told it to me.

'When he had bound torches of dried cocoanut frond, he walked toward the base of the cliff, where years before his grandfather had shown him the entrance of the cavern. As he drew near the place, he saw a thing that made him pause. There, on a great rock, — glaring at him and seeming to oppose his passage, — was a lizard far larger than any known in the islands to-day. "Ah," thought the boy, in half-terrified bravado, "does my grandfather leave the king of all the lizards to guard his dry bones when he is away?" But when he cast a stone at the lizard, it vanished, and in its place stood an old man with hair as white as coral long bleached in the sun. His eyes were terrible to see; they held the eyes of Teriiaro with a strange power, causing his courage to melt away, and the strength to flow from his limbs. Then the life went out of him, and he knew no more until he became aware of a beating in his brain — a sound which changed to the throbbing of a great drum.

'When his eyes opened he saw what chilled his blood. There was the marae with its row of skulls, lighted from either side by torches which seemed trees aflame. On the platform of rock lay a shapeless thing, like an unhewn log, wound about with fine cinnet and decked with tufts of red feathers. At the foot of the marae was gathered a company of tall old men, dressed in the fashion of the ancient days, and in their midst one knelt by the
the Praying-Stone — int
chant. It seemed to Te
priest was offering up s
lay before him. At time
his chanting, and held
toward the image on the
the drums thundered an
the burning trees seem
with redoubled brightnes
head a little, the boy saw
ing was the dead body o
that moment the priest
eye and held it above h
the drums throbbed loud
than before, and the
which seemed never to
sent flames leaping to t
ironwood trees.

'As full consciousnes
him, Teriiaro realized
pang of terror that his h
were bound, and that t
with axes of dolerite i
stood over him. Was he
where the body of that
now — an offering to the
shapeless god? He near
the thought; and when
seized and lifted by ma
senses left him for the se

'A blinding light awa
the morning sun, shini
familiar doorway, was fu
Filled with wonder a
glanced about. There in
sleeping peacefully on a m
tua, his grandfather. T
to hope that he had on
strangely vivid and terr
but presently he noticed
loop of cinnet, tied in a cu
and as he puzzled over th
ing memory came back t
ing of his grandfather th
days a victim destined
was thus distinguished.

'Stealthily and in hast
his canoe and paddled a

Digitized by Google

uld never dare
heard a story
terror: a fisher-
one alone in his
o man had seen
been lights on
other fishermen,
up the coast, —
an or his canoe
was not sorry
Tahiti came; he
d to glance be-
ded on the Pa-

at me as he fin-
ale. The moon
r light I could

see the wrinkles about his eyes and the gleam of white eyebrows and moustache. His pipe had burned out; I watched him fumble for a moment before he took it from his mouth with an air of sudden resolution. Without a word, he filled it from an enormous rubber pouch and replaced it hastily between his teeth. When the tobacco was burning, he spoke again.

'You know what a row this collector made,' he said; 'the boy was so badly scared that I advanced the money myself to avoid a fuss. Teriiaro is a first-rate hand on a schooner, but he's not keen on making this Raiatea trip — watch him to-morrow, and you'll see that he won't set foot ashore.'

CARMILLA'S TEACHER

BY LEONORA PEASE

I

e school?' asked
the big boy
led up from the
rmilla stood, to
oblongs of win-
ed house of the

sweeping.
gone?' pursued
Iiss Shannon of

l, looking down
. 'The brown

.'
m the windows

opposite, Marian had just flung impatiently behind her, 'Hurry up, mamma, and comb my hair — there's the blue Miss Shannon going.'

At a quarter to eight, five mornings out of the week, the brown Miss Shannon walked west up the square to the Avenue, where the car ran north; at eight o'clock, the blue Miss Shannon walked west up the square to the Avenue and the car going south; and at eight-fifteen, the green Miss Shannon walked east past the end of the square to the schoolhouse.

Carmilla herself lived east, over the other side of the school and the car-tracks, on which the cars went clanging

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

and banging and whizzing under the school's east windows, and from which most of the teachers alighted mornings. From this squatty and grimy locality Carmilla escaped, across the strip of asphalt drive, to the cement walk and the steps down which the green Miss Shannon was awaited, to the brilliant plot of grass and new-blown elms of the square, to the red and yellow tulips set out in their bed to welcome the spring. If some whimsical gardener had set Carmilla, in slim green dress and round red-and-yellow hat, down among them, she would have made a flaunting little human tulip. Instead, in her little faded cotton slip, with mop of dark hair over forehead and neck, black eyes big and sad, Carmilla was an appealing small waif of a child as she waited there by the flower-bed for her teacher.

Theresa Steffanelli, now breathlessly accosting the big boy, 'Is teacher gone by de school?' was in better harmony with the color-scheme. Her bright-blue sweater over a scarlet skirt, plump pink cheeks under an outstanding crop of dark hair tied with a flaring bow of red ribbon, made a brilliant splotch against the gray of the walk. The splotch became a streak as Dominic appeared panting behind Theresa, in his green sweater banded with red; and Jassamine, following, contributed the yellow of her long, overhanging sweater. A little farther along the walk, Angelo, in startling new greeh pants (fastened with some uncertainty by safety-pins to his shirt), bore down upon the common goal, and Mary formed a drab tail in her washed-out print gown. As she perched herself on the green Miss Shannon's lowest step, Mary explained demurely, 'I dot a sweat-uh, but I not dot it on now.' Marian, flying from across the square, in white apron, her bright fluffy curls contrasting with Jassamine's black tresses slicked back from the parting to the two buttons of coiled pigtails, came in time for the flu
in the bevy of childre
nounced the green Miss
scending the steps.

At the moment, in he
fair hair coiled high on
smiling face, the green
might have been mistak
The old-fashioned house
fashioned square were so
that she had no more nee
morning than had the Ita
the neighborhood, or The
and Jassamine. Like a br
she blew the bambinos be
'Now see who can get
first.'

Another bit of bright
with the green Miss Shar
rear and caught step — '
Room 15,' whose house w
corner of the square.
eyes and satiny black hai
her ears, thin beau-catch
in the middle of her fo
powdered nose, modish
taffeta gown above her
French-heeled boots, the
O'Callahan seemed to
'Teachers are not going
any longer.' Miss O'Cal
her second-year salary, b
home, and managed by ch
to keep her clothes pai
squeeze out five dollars
Teachers' Association — m
did. She was an intel
woman, and twice as goo
she looked.

Walking over from th
Avenue, and nearing them
were Miss Fletcher, tall a
mar grade, Miss Marie
and dark, primary, bot
ously and economically
Miss Jarvis, domestic sci
tired. Miss Jarvis was a
on higher salary. Teache
science had originally put

Digitized by Google

'Say, if anything should separate you two from the service,' Miss O'Callahan protested, 'what's to become of me, and Miss Polonski, and the rest of us sweet young things? We think we know the game when we come out of Normal, but we can't stand long before our classes without running to you to ask what's the next move.'

'So I've observed,' Miss Fletcher rejoined, as they went in at the teachers' entrance, and on to the office key-board to take down their keys.

Speeding down the hall with her bright troop, the green Miss Shannon espied the diminutive Salvadore Delmonico, contrary to rules, waiting at the door of Room 16. His small body was agitated by an emotion beyond his present expression in English, as he poured out, 'Teacher — de big boy come — teacher, de big boy he go by de desk — de big boy he swipe all de marbles on you — he runs away — runs down dat way —'

The marbles! That treasured collection, held in trust. For every marble that went thump, thump, thump on the floor in school-time, custody in that safe repository, the right-hand drawer of teacher's desk; but at the end of the term, restoration. Now many pairs of big dark eyes of rightful owners will watch the progress of recapture. And the nine cents, ah, the nine cents of Theresa, entrusted to teacher's care yesterday and forgotten — what of that? And the soul of the big boy — should it not be rescued from such a pitfall?

'Down dat way,' into the boys' basement, in pursuit, hurries teacher; gets wind of one Pasquale Pappa, hales him into Room 16 ere the nine o'clock gong strikes. What of the marbles, Pasquale Pappa? What of the nine cents?

Pasquale looks accusingly upon Salvadore.

'Yes, I was bring de waste-basket

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

last night by de sweepers. I see him,' pointing at Salvadore, 'swipe de marble out de teacher's desk, an' he give me one an' I drop it back. I tell him if he do dat, de teacher'll holler on him.'

'I wants my mudder,' screams Salvadore, 'my mudder, my mudder, my mudder!'

The game is up. But the marbles, who has the marbles? 'Rafael has de marble.' — 'No, teacher, Salvadore give de marble.' — 'Who else has the marbles?'

Here they stand in a row — Michael, Tony, Joseph, Rafael, Dominic, Jaspar. — 'Teacher, Salvadore give de marble.' — 'Where are they now?' — Lost, gamed, given, swiped — scattered. And the money, the nine cents?

'No, teacher, I did n't rob de moneys on youze. It's a sin to rob de moneys on de teacher.' His father Salvadore can deceive, his mother he can hoax, 'de teacher' he cannot. 'Where is the money?' It is at home hidden in 'my mudder's' sweater pocket. 'Go home and get it.' Emanuel, the largest boy in the grade, conducts him.

II

Two new dark little boys come in and present paper slips to teacher. Already she has fifty-three bambinos for the forty-eight seats. A fiction prevails in school-circles (obtained from averages) of forty-eight pupils to a room, and a pleasantry of forty-two to a room. But there are the elastic small chairs.

'What is your name? John Scully? That's an Irish name,' laughs the green Miss Shannon.

'Yes, yes,' says John; for only 'yes, yes' can he say.

'But you're not Irish,' the nice teacher jokes.

'Yes, yes.'

'You're Italian.'

'Yes, yes.'

'How do you spell it? A
reads the green Miss Sha
Brosseau. You're a little
are n't you?"

'No, ma'am — Cathole

Max brings a note: —

'DEAR TEACHER,

All of your children ar
Maxie on the way home.
stopped. I'll tell the pr
they make noses on him.
stopped. Another thing,
take his things, and I want

Your loving
MRS. R

The Italian parents
notes, not so much as excu
ness. The laggards are
must be punished; they m
sorry fate of the sluggar
not sing with the others;
in a row on low chairs back
er till the singing is over.
me,' the culprits complai
They sing at them, 'A
yellow bill,' and point an
forefingers. 'Ain't you '
sleepy head?' They sin
'Tick-tock, tick-tock, clo
ing,' and at 'Then come
— don't — be — late,' 'De
fingers on me,' Anthony sa
more.'

Will he be sitting on this
ing bench to-morrow? No
early, and stand up by his
and point and shake his
woeful mites who will be s
he is sitting. The joy of
be his, and the fun of bein
lieve car of the six make-
in the room, seven cars l
first child is an engine. A
shoulders in front, imitati
fling, left hand for a whistl
rings the bell, off goes the

'Chu, chu, chu, chu, chu,
I am a chu-chu train;

Digitized by Google

back the new dime and make inquiries of the father, and Salvadore shall sit in Room 16 until Peter returns, and shall read his lesson.

Salvadore does not wish to read his lesson. He loves to sing, he loves to draw, he does not love to read. He has lost his book. Phena too has forgotten her book. Dominic has torn his. Jaspar has chewed the corners off his. Concetti's is very dirty. Carmilla's is a maze of loose pages, which she carefully keeps in order and reads like a public speaker turning the pages of his manuscript. Teacher has found another book for Salvadore to read from, and Phena may sit with Marian, whose book, carefully covered with brown cambric, is clean and untorn. Teacher looks with bright eyes on Marian, and speaks glad words of her book. But the rest may not 'make nice their books like teacher says.' They get them 'off my big brudder,' or 'by de principal,' and never were they as Marian's.

'Yiz can buy dem off de candy woman,' volunteers Theresa.

'Yiz! What should you say?' reminds teacher.

With a little toss of her head, 'Youze,' Theresa corrects herself. So continuously does teacher struggle to break the mould of environment.

Rosie finds the picture-lesson page for Salvadore — the picture of many bugs. 'Who sees a new word? Salvadore?' — 'Teacher, I know — bug.' Last year teacher must *not* tell the new word; the new word was sacred to phonics. This year the principal says teacher *must* tell the new word. No, the word is not 'bug.' It is what bees say. 'What are bees?' — 'They are fairies,' says Phena, looking at the picture. They have wings. 'Who has been to the country?' Tony. Everybody points to Tony. 'Tony wuz by de country.' But neither does Tony know bees from fairies.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

So teacher tells and Marian reads. Carmilla listens and reads just as Marian has read. 'Now read the last sentence, Carmilla.' Carmilla must read from the top, swiftly, with a little hum, till she comes to it. 'Do you like to make honey?' she reads glibly, and looks up to find that teacher's eyes have the little jokes in them. Like Salvadore, Carmilla cannot fool teacher. Now Salvadore will read: —

'"Bugs, bugs, little bees. Do you like to fly sunshines? You are busy little bees to make moneys for me. Do you like to make moneys?"' Money means something to Salvadore, honey does not.

Down falls Jimmie's marble, thump, thump, thump, rolling on the floor to teacher. Teacher says, 'Um! Another lovely marble I have for my collection.' Carmilla sees that teacher looks with bright eyes upon the marble. It must be that teacher likes the beautiful marble. Carmilla has no beautiful marble to give to teacher, but she has the glass pendant she found in the alley, which Jaspar offered to trade for two marbles. The glass pendant is a fine thing to have, to make rainbows by — still, she would like to give teacher the beautiful marbles.

Now comes Peter back with the nine cents for Theresa. The father 'says like this' to teacher for Salvadore — 'Teacher shall close him up in a dark room.' The suggested punishment not being in accord with modern methods, teacher is wondering what she shall do with Salvadore and with Salvadore's class. Teacher has asked for kindergarten material for Room 16, to keep busy half the tiny restless folk, while the other tiny restless folk read; but no kindergarten material has come for teacher; for different things has teacher asked in vain. Five rooms use the scissors, and it is not now the turn of Room 16. Salvadore's class go to the board and make 'two hills,' whicl 'three hills,' which is an first-reader class read abou ing of the Sheep.'

'Oh, I know a sheep, claims Joseph. 'We got house.'

'Are you sure you ha Joseph?'

'No, teacher, he got nc got a dog. I seed it, teache

Jassamine's reading of Black Sheep' is a sort of tion into understandable l

'One for de fahder,
One for de mudder,
And one for de little boy da

Teacher can use the rest o minutes' reading period in the minds of the A Class a 'master,' a 'dame,' and a after starting this same clas lesson of the book, beginni

Ply the spade and ply the
Plant the seed and it will

teacher's enthusiasm mus cible. One child had indeed dim, associated notion of what you sprinkles water w Teacher did not write th adopt it as the standard re schools; teacher's business i

As the C Class do not us their reading lesson, of te vising, is more flexible. 'Sta says, and shows the word p card. At the first lesson no and teacher lifts a child Then a few have learned a other children by actions. 'Jump.' So they work at vocabulary until recess.

The substitute in Room ginning First, — an experien grade teacher, is trying to g into ranks in the hall. The Shannon goes to her assista

'They can't understand

Digitized by Google

plains, in comic
lift them out of
them into the
one's hat is lost.
ts my mudder."
, where? "Why
ittle smart thing
en — Well, I'm
to-morrow.'
cher, farther up
say a friendly

r superintendent
she rejoins, and
y. '"All children
f our children are
other districts, it
her."'
better entertain-
comments, 'than
superintendents
I should start

eing merry, the
s on to tell them
has just now im-
n a kid say youze
ize is n't fat.'
ut short by the
ubstitute signals
n Miss Shannon,
nes of wriggling,
mbinos advance
ressible are the
st teacher speak
ing while teacher
The Three Bears.'
ry after teacher,
s.
pin this on you?'
resa, and shows
gue. Theresa for
s not whisper to
e and Angelo and
, —
a,' says teacher.
Theresa complies.
e corner, with the
Yes, before now

has the red tongue been wet with tears.

They dramatize the Three Bears. Marian is Golden Locks, Peter is the big 'fah-der' bear, Becky is the middle-sized 'mudder' bear, Dominic is the 'littlest' baby bear. They draw the Three Bears. There is writing, spelling, dismissal of the B and C classes, calisthenics, games, sight-reading from the dilapidated sets of books furnished by the Board, — books, pages, parts missing, — doubling up in seats, skipping pupils who draw blanks. — Noon.

Teacher sees the lines out, locks the door, and races for the penny-lunch room. The teachers volunteer to help serve the swarms of children, as at this hour the employees paid by the Board are swamped. Carmilla comes for the bowl of soup, the glass of milk, the sandwich — The pennies to pay for them? That is the green Miss Shannon's secret. When Carmilla first came to Room 16, she was thinner than now, and whiter. The green Miss Shannon watched, wondered; then one morning Carmilla fainted. Teacher sent quickly for the school doctor. Carmilla was under-nourished, the school doctor said. Teacher brought a bowl of soup from the penny-lunch room. Yes, soup was all the medicine Carmilla needed. The school nurse went to where Carmilla lived — the father dead, the mother all day away at the laundry; in the evening the nurse went and showed Carmilla's mother how better to prepare the scanty fare. But for the green Miss Shannon and the penny lunch and the flower-bed in the square, little Carmilla —

It was a breathless, spinning noon hour for the green Miss Shannon, stopped short by the gong, watching the lines of children flowing up the stairs and halls and into Room 16 again, closing the door. 'What have you there in your desk, Tony?' — 'Nudding.' — 'Yes, teacher, he have. He swipe some-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

thing off de peddler.' What should a head of cabbage be doing in Tony Appa's desk? 'Where did you get that, Tony?' — 'I buyed it for two cent off de peddler.' — 'No, teacher, he never did. We seed him swipe it off de peddler.' Witnesses go with Tony to restore the cabbage to the peddler, while the room is at work constructing the cardboard house and furniture of the Three Bears.

A bambino comes from the substitute teacher in Room 14, and teacher goes with him, only for a little while. A man, a strange man, opens the door and looks on them with sharp eyes, and goes away. Rosie stands up.

'Teacher,' Rosie bursts out as the green Miss Shannon returns, 'a man comes by us and he looks on us.'

'How did he look?'

'My God, I don't know. You better stay in here.'

Teacher 'looks on Rosie,' but Carmilla does not know what teacher is thinking. She is thinking of the strange things Rosie says, and is remembering about Rosie and the Christmas party. The day of the Christmas party Rosie came to school much too early, and when she saw the green Miss Shannon approaching, ran to her and asked when it would be time for the Christmas party to begin.

'Not yet. After a while.'

Then at recess Rosie asked again.

'Not yet. After a while.'

And at noon, and between times, when would it be time for the Christmas party to begin?

'Not yet. After a while.'

More and more incredulous and suspicious of teacher's assurances Rosie was growing. Time dragged to afternoon recess, lessons going on as usual. It was proper to rebuke and caution teacher as Rosie herself had been rebuked and cautioned; yet with restraint.

'I'm afraid you lie some, teacher; it's an awful sin.'

But how should Rosie reinstate herself after the party, which came off after all, in the kindergarten room, with a trimmed tree, and candy and red apples from teacher, and games and singing.

'O teacher, youze so lovely to us by your party,' said Rosie; 'just like a mudder.'

'Yes, just like a mudder,' agreed Joseph.

'Yes, teacher,' Dominic hesitated; 'but so many childrens and no fah-der?'

III

Again Carmilla does not know. Why is teacher smiling? But she likes to look on teacher when she smiles, and when the little jokes are in her eyes, and upon her green dress. Carmilla is a sort of small moon to teacher's sun. Carmilla goes on with the construction lesson, cutting and pasting the table on which are to stand the three bowls of broth of the Three Bears.

But this is not all of school, what they have been doing to-day. No — no. Sometimes the superintendent comes. Then they all sit up very straight, just as the green Miss Shannon stands. They do not whisper, not even Theresa. She will certainly have the red tongue pinned upon her if she whispers before the big, prim, sad man who is the superintendent. Sometimes the smart young man in the office — he must be smart because he is the principal — comes in swiftly and goes out swiftly. Sometimes the man who does not wear his coat comes in and looks at the fixture on the wall (which is a thermostat) and goes out again. Sometimes the lady in the pretty dress and beads, — a black one on each side and a green one in the middle, like an eye, three of them on a chain, — comes in briskly and smiles at teacher, and sits in the chair, and the bambinos

Digitized by Google

acher, blow out
h, and step up
l choose songs;
hem how nicely
nute to teacher,

ıer takes out all
e done, strings
ɔards, and puts
desk, the lady
s in slowly and
and Carmilla,
Iarian, who is a
ınd Peter pass
ıd the children
e lady with the
at the drawings
slowly.
g lady in the
hom they go to
ng lady in the
s at the piano,
ıarch and skip
ings and rings,
vith teacher for
n with teacher
lay the games.
me sometimes
teacher always
nilla does not
every one, and
the domestic-
e teacher below
shop, and the
ff in the Mann
, are all much
ignified figures
much more im-
laries.
he meetings of
la does not go,
able talk — of
votion and self-
ıbility; and the
is the superin-

tendent says that the only part anyone else has in the system is to help teacher. But the stout dark primary teacher and the tall fair grammar teacher and the green Miss Shannon, who no longer care for words, and the young Miss O'Callahan and Miss Polonski, who never will care for words, reflect that they who would help should ask, not always tell, the doers what to do, and they question why teacher's must always be the lowest place. Carmilla does not know that the green Miss Shannon, and the blessed ones like her, are growing rarer and rarer. She is conscious in her small soul, as are the simple foreign folk about her, that the one who knows her, and who is her light and hope, is her teacher — Carmilla's teacher.

On the way home with teacher, across the strip of asphalt drive, along the cement walk toward the tulip-bed, Carmilla opens her little grimy fist, disclosing the two bright glass marbles traded by Jaspar for the pendant that makes rainbows. Wriggly coils of colors inside the crystal spheres, tiny rainbows imprisoned, the marbles wink up at Carmilla. Almost does the little fist close again on their shimmer.

'Here, teacher. Here's two marbles for you.'

'O Carmilla — for me! Thank you, dear. Um, two such nice marbles.' The little jokes are in teacher's eyes. 'But you know Miss Shannon cannot have any marbles except those that go thump, thump, thump — ' Now the little jokes are in Carmilla's eyes, too. 'You keep them, Carmilla. Mind you hold tight.' She bends down and closes the little fist over the gleaming bits. There is a sweet and tender light in the eyes of Carmilla's teacher.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

DOMESTIC SUPERSTITIONS

BY RALPH BARTON PERRY

I

SUPERSTITIONS are perpetuated mainly in the church and the home, because whatever is said out loud in either place is intended to edify those who hear it. Parents and other adult members of the family belong to the priestly caste. It is their business to preach the doctrine and to be ostentatiously on their good behavior. Like their colleagues of the church, they feel the strain and find it necessary to enjoy stolen hours of unfrocked relaxation, which they spend with others of the profession who are pledged not to betray them. There are so many whom circumstance has placed in this position, but who feel unequal to its duties, that there is a widespread tendency to centralize the work of edification in the boarding-school, where it can be done by paid experts. As yet, however, this relief is too expensive to be generally enjoyed, and it still falls to the common lot of the adult to work, to pay taxes, and to officiate in the home.

Edification breeds superstition simply because fictions having sentimental value have to be preferred to facts. In the home this begins with the myths of Santa Claus and fairyland, and ends with the myth of the Perfect Gentleman and the Perfect Lady. In the home, as in the church, there are ecclesiastical as well as doctrinal superstitions — that is, superstitions having the function of protecting the prestige of the authorities. In the case of the home these superstitions have to do particularly with the pure benev
plary rectitude, and perfe
the parents. This ideali
parent may vary to any
the real parent. His act
stage, the friends with v
ciates there, and even hi
are constructed and rec
rôle of paragon which he
domestic drama.

Despite the weakness
otherwise, the adult m
home enjoys this great ad
he fixes its superstitions
which they finally assum
the experiences, deeds,
comments of the children
own interpretation on th
adult who tells the story
from motives of pride or
other adults of rival dome
ments; sometimes, for pu
cation, to one of the child
case the moral that ador
comes its dominant feat
the adult saga-maker w
moral. He enjoys this ad
peril, however. For he is
fenseless victim of his o
His rivals do not believe
they possess prior domesti
of their own. The chil
tected by their inattentio
worldly wisdom. But he
himself so often, and tal
seriously, that he is like
only thoroughly orthodo
his own teaching. It is i

Digitized by Google

omestic adult,
ist this insidi-
ggestion, that

a widespread
r wife, or resi-
estic adult fe-
ampion of the
o be a natural
difficulty pre-
idle time wan-
, or from hole
. Woman, on
osed to be by
oming animal.
hort, are com-
sultant of the
male and the
emale. This is
ng view of the
izes what cir-
be necessary.
the lot of the
the lot of the
ppose that the
e is the love of
r the love of in-
be prettier to
pelled to earn
chman was by
al.
do not agree
of the matter.
history of a
ay of her Com-
orth she wages
al struggle to
nd, the great-
the hour when
home. Every
ork, he is sus-
t vision, which
tic fiction, or
agination. He
ed by a house-
has anything
wish, save to
They have all
their hearts'

content earlier in the day, and now it is his turn to be indulged. It is understood that he, and *he alone*, is tired. Any attentions or amiability on his part are gratefully appreciated, but they are not demanded, or even expected, of him. After dinner, there is a certain comfortable chair waiting for him in an accustomed spot near a reading-lamp. The contour of the upholstery is his perfect complement. He fits himself to the chair, reaches for the evening paper, and then experiences the purest rapture of domestic bliss. It consists in a sense of being 'let alone,' of snugness, relaxation, and a hovering protection. But, like all ecstasies, it is essentially indescribable.

This is man's sustaining vision. It is only a vision, but, like all visions, it shows where the heart lies.

Now, why is it only a vision? Because it leaves out approximately seventy-five per cent of the facts. All the other members of the household are tired, also, and are as conscious of having acquired merit and earned indulgence as is the male wage-earner. Each, like the adult male, forms his own conception of the end of a perfect day by the simple method of opposition. The children, having spent most of the day in a restrained posture on a school-bench, incline to riot. The woman, having spent the day indoors, desires to go out; and having seen no one during the day except the postman, the milkman, and the iceman, desires to associate more extensively with her kind. She, too, has been sustained during the day by a vision — children tucked in bed, her husband fired with social zeal, best clothes, a taxicab, a meal *prepared by somebody else*, and then a dance or the theatre, friends, gayety, and late to bed! Hence, while for the man the symbol of home is the armchair, for the woman it is the dressing-table. When the inward-bound man and the outward-bound woman

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

meet on the threshold at the end of the day, then indeed is the ligature of matrimony strained!

What might or will be the case under a different social organization it is impossible to predict. The present domestic motivation is doubtless a more or less artificial pressure-effect of circumstance. Men work all day in order to be able to go home; women, in order to be able to leave home. Men are standing outside, looking in; women, inside, looking out. In both cases the force of inclination is equal and opposite to the force of circumstance. Thus the day of the man and the day of the woman and the day of the children culminate discordantly; and at the only hour when the family is united in the flesh it is divided in spirit. Somebody must spend the 'free' evening virtuously and patiently doing something that *he* does not want, or else everybody must spend it in a joint debate that nobody wants. Possibly, in some future time, men and women will both work at home and go out to play; or will both go out to work and spend the evening in adjoining armchairs. Even then one does not see one's way clear about the children.

As it stands, then, man is the lover and champion of the home. To him it is a haven, a place of refuge, and an opportunity of leisure. Woman is the custodian and curator of the home. It is her place of business. 'Woman's place is in the home' is not a description of female human nature, but a theory regarding the division of labor, or a precept, coined and circulated by men who want homes and need women to create them.

This corrected view of the home-sentiments throws a new light on certain habits of life which might be supposed at first to contradict it. There is, for example, man's well-known addiction to clubs. It is popularly supposed that he resorts to these places in order to get away from home. Quit
He goes to his club bec
the nearest approximat
of home that is availal
homelike than home. A
not exist for the prom
life, but for the purpose
It is essentially a place
holstery is deep, where
newspapers and eat, an
safe from intrusion. In
man goes out to his club
of having to go farther

Or, consider the pop
women are more religi
The real point seems to
are more inclined than
church; which is a very
Sunday is related to th
evening to the day. Fo
fore, it is a day at ho
woman, a day out. A
Sunday is to surround
barbed-wire, lock and
doors and windows, disc
phone, put on his slipp
suit, and then devote th
ing the paper and '
woman's idea of Sund
everything cleaned and
including the children;
best clothes; and then h
friends in in the afternoo
other half in the evening
difficult to see which p
mood most easily accor
to public worship. If you
up and socially inclined
more natural and agreea
to church? And if you a
in old clothes, building b
of a packing-box, what
impossible?

According to the or
stition, woman, as inw
religion and the home,
conservative. She is reg
stinctive exponent of est
— of convention, autho

Digitized by Google

irritability — the latter depending on conditions of age, digestion, fatigue, temperamental irascibility, and personal idiosyncrasy.

Why should scolding be peculiar to the home? Not because the home is dedicated to benevolent admonition, but because the family circle provides perpetual, inescapable, intimate, and unseasonable human contacts. Individuals of the same species are brought together in every permutation and combination of conflicting interests and incompatible moods. There is no other grouping of human beings which provides so many stimuli for the combative instinct. When this instinct is aroused among the children, it is called quarrelsomeness, and is greatly deprecated by adults. When it is aroused in the adult himself, it assumes the more or less sublimated form of scolding. It flourishes in the home because it is both aroused and protected there. Scolding provides a reputable method of venting spleen when other outlets are stopped by law and convention. In the home, scolding can be indulged in with impunity so long as it does not arouse the neighbors. Its victims are defenseless; and the corporate pride of the family seals the mouths of its members, so that a decent repute may be preserved before the world. It is this conspiracy of silence and regard for appearances that has created the fiction of the happy fireside choir, where all voices carol in perpetual unison.

There would be no merit in this exposure, did it not serve to bring to light the real disciplinary value of home life, which consists, not in the eloquence and light of admonition, but rather in the aggravation of social experience. An individual who learns how to live cheerfully, or even how to live at all, in a home, finds little difficulty in living with his fellows anywhere else. The scolding of children teaches them not so

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

much the error of their ways, as a practised skill in getting on with irritable adults, many of whom they will meet in real life later on. Perhaps the most superb manifestation of domestic life is the magnanimity of children — their swift forgetfulness of injury and their indulgence even of those human weaknesses of which they are themselves the victims. Both children and adults, consorting with one another in every combination of age and sex, in every condition of health, at every hour of the day, and in a great variety of moods and temperaments, exhaust the whole repertory of human relations and *learn how to live together*. The best name for this is patience. It is the lack of this which distinguishes the bachelor, the maid, the orphan, and in some degree the only child.

In the family, as elsewhere, example is said to be better than precept. The idea is that the child, carefully noting the heroic or saintly qualities of the father, mother, or resident aunt, — those qualities particularly celebrated in domestic song and story, — models his action closely thereon, and so of his own accord grows in wisdom and in favor at the same time that he grows in stature. But the observed results are so unlike this as to justify suspicion that here, too, we have to do with a superstition. And such is, indeed, unhappily the case. While it is doubtless true that the exemplar is better than the preceptor, in the family, at least, there is no ground for believing that example *works* any better than precept. What the child gives particular attention to in the domestic adult is the genial weakness, the human errancy, the comic relief, the discomfiture of dignity. He carefully notes that his father smokes and swears, and puts his feet on the table; and that his mother or resident aunt eats candy, uses slang, and puts her elbows on the table. He thereupon does these things himself, not because he is model, but because, having tion to do them anyway, h vantage of the fact that hi for the moment disarmed.

It is not that the child i to example, but that he fin ples elsewhere. The dome not in his line at all. He w think of imitating him as t adult himself would think the Emperor of Japan or Llama of Thibet. He has h theon and hierarchy of he real world outside. These times adults, more often t his own tribe. In any case t from that odor of sanctity posture of edification whic the domestic adult. It shou that this discontinuity, th prevent emulation, does but rather promotes, a cert critical observation; so t may find himself presently the complementary opposi types of character that hav liarly familiar to him in h environment.

III

Many minor superstition domestic myopia. The in the close propinquity of t drama exaggerates all its positive and negative. genius of childhood is n individual distinction; and limitations for individual Within the family all chil markable; generic traits dis view altogether. The pare laugh heartily at a cartoo the characteristic greedin truancy, disobedience, noi sponsibility, and general ba fictitious boy or girl, will at into apprehensive sobriety w child betrays the least of

Digitized by Google

nesses. Viewing human life as a whole, he observes that children grow and outgrow, and that mischievous children have been known to spend their adult years outside the penitentiary; he may even recollect that he had a fault or two himself in early years; but as regards his own children, every offense is a crime, every evil a calamity, and every incident a crisis. His only salvation lies in frequent, unannounced visits to other families.

IV

We have finally to examine a fundamental superstition relating to the seat of domestic authority. In so far as the feudal principle, or the theocratic principle, or the autocratic principle, or the plutocratic principle, survives here and there, owing to the conservatism of the home, the father does manage to retain some semblance of authority. But patriarchy is on its last legs. There is little to it now but outward form and old court ritual. The father still gives his name to the family, sits at the head of the table, and — oh, yes, pays the bills! But there is more service than authority in the second and third of these prerogatives, since someone has to carve, and it is the making rather than the paying of bills that really counts. Of course, he can still tyrannize over the family by making himself so disagreeable that he has to be bought off; but in a family anybody can do that. It is not a power that attaches to the male parent as such. As father, he is still the titular monarch, and that is about all. If he were formally to abdicate, it would not alter the actual balance of domestic forces in the least.

Meanwhile, it is to be feared that he to some extent exploits the pathos of his fallen greatness, and wrings from the feelings of his wife, children, or sister-in-law various minor concessions affecting his comfort. Nothing can exceed the scrupulousness with which appearances are preserved in public. He still takes the curb when the family uses the sidewalk, and is the last to enter and the first to leave a public or private conveyance. But to one who knows life as it is, the irony and bathos of the modern age are summed up in two spectacles: Kaiser Wilhelm chopping wood at Amerongen, and the paterfamilias washing dishes in the pantry.

If the father has fallen from authority, who has superseded him? The mother? Not at all. The popular impression to that effect has no basis except the fact that the power of the mother has increased *relatively* to that of the father. But this is due to the fall of the father rather than to any notable rise of the mother. No, the new domestic polity is neither the patriarchy nor the matriarchy, but the *pediarchy*.

That the children should encroach upon, and eventually seize, the authority of the parents is not so strange as might at first appear. After all, it is only the domestic manifestation of the most characteristic social and political movement of modern times, the rise, namely, of the proletarian masses. Within the family the children constitute the majority, the unpropertied, the unskilled, and the unprivileged. They are intensely class-conscious, and have come to a clearer and clearer recognition of the conflict of interest that divides them from the owners and managers. Their methods have been similar to those employed in the industrial revolution — the strike, passive resistance, malingering, restriction of output, and, occasionally, direct action.

Within the family, as in the modern democracy, the control is by public opinion. It is government of the children, by the children, and for the children. But this juvenile sovereignty is exercised indirectly rather than directly. The office-holders are adults, whose

Digitized by Google

power is proportional to their juvenile support. The real (though largely unseen and unacknowledged) principle of domestic politics is the struggle for prestige among the adults. Some employ the methods of decadent Rome, the *panem et circenses;* others, the arts of the military hero or of the popular orator. But all acknowledge the need of conciliating the juvenile masses.

The power of juvenile opinion is due, not merely to its mass, and to the boldness and unscrupulousness with which it is asserted, but to its reinforcement from outside. It is more than a domestic movement: it is an interdomestic movement. The opinion of the children is thus less provincial than that of domestic adults. It has, furthermore, a force which it derives from its more intimate contact with the main currents of history. The domestic adult is in a sort of backwash. He is looking toward the past, while the children are thinking the thoughts and speaking the language of to-morrow. They are in closer touch with reality, and cannot fail, however indulgent, to feel that their parents and resident aunt are antiquated. The children's end of the family is its budding, forward-looking end; the adults' end is, at best, its root. There is a profound law of life by which buds and roots grow in opposite directions.

The domestic conflict is in many of its notable features parallel to the industrial conflict; and they may be of common origin. It is natural that similar remedies should be p
Taylor system and other
tems have already broke
cases. Conservatives w
meet the domestic prob
allowances and shorter
with perhaps time and a
time and a bit of profit-
erals will propose boards
with child representatio
link study and chores w
tive' impulses, and expe
vided management. Ra
mestic revolutionists will
half-way measures as u
tual, because they prese
tal system in its essenti
aim to consummate the
soon as possible by viole
to bring a new order into
a dictatorship of a secta

This new order would
exact inversion of the p
Whereas, under the prese
parents are supposed t
home for the benefit of
providing them with the
life, and giving them wo
for their own good, unde
tem, the children woul
home for the benefit of th
other adults, assuming fu
ity for their living, and en
expert services only as mig
However difficult it may
a change into effect, the
adults' point of view, m
for it.

Digitized by Google

NTY-FIVE HOURS A DAY

BY A. EDWARD NEWTON

I

well out in the
era presents se-
n't very well go
own again; and
own at a hotel,
e packed in the
n the result of
ys forget some-
occasion some
l husband, had
ra; and having
it to my hotel,
ind the details
e to dress in the
red, to my hor-
indedly packed
instead of the
e which custom
occasions, and
essentials were
dressed when I
t was already
ever absolutely
s, was not im-
bservation that
he overture. I
kely and said so

ber, my Lord
ved that when
ne should leave
I had gone his
I had left prac-
ne, and I heart-
t home, too. I
ccused of over-
that it is alto-
st married men,

if they could be excused from escorting their wives to the opera, would cheerfully make a substantial contribution to any worthy — or even unworthy — charity.

Thoughts such as these, if thoughts they may be called, surged through my head as I rapidly dressed, and prepared to dash through the streets in search of any 'gents' furnishing-goods' shop that might chance to be open at that hour. I needed such articles of commerce as would enable me to make myself presentable at the opera, and I needed them at once. It was raining, and as I dashed up one street and down another, I discovered that the difference between a raised umbrella and a parachute is negligible; so I closed mine, with the result that I was thoroughly drenched before I had secured what I needed. I have the best of wives, but truth compels me to say that when, upon my return, she greeted me with the remark that what she wanted especially to hear was the overture and that we should certainly be late, I almost — I say I *almost* — lost my temper.

Is it necessary for me to remark that we do not go to the opera frequently? It was my wife's evening, not mine; and as I sat on the side of a bed, eating a sandwich and struggling to insert square shirt pegs in round holes, to the gently sustained *motif* that we should surely miss the overture, I thought of home, of my books, of a fire of logs crackling, of my pipe, and I wondered who it was

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

that said when anything untoward happened, 'All this could have been avoided if I had stayed at home.'

Finally, after doing up my wife's back, 'hooking them in the lace,' I finished my own unsatisfactory toilet, feeling, and doubtless looking, very much as Joe Gargery did when he went to see Miss Havisham. But at last we were ready, and we descended to the lobby of our hotel, having in the confusion quite overlooked the fact that we should require a taxi. It was still raining, and not a taxi or other conveyance was to be had! I was quite nonplussed for the moment, and felt deeply grieved when my wife remarked that it was hardly worth while now to leave the hotel — we were so late that we should miss the overture anyway; to which I replied — but never mind specifically what I said: it was to the effect that we would go to the opera or bust.

But how? Standing at the door of the hotel, I waited my chance, and finally a taxi arrived; but quite unexpectedly a man appeared from nowhere and was about to enter it, saying as he did so, in a fine rolling English voice, 'I wish to go to the opera house.' There was no time to lose; quickly brushing the man aside, I called to my wife and passed her into the taxi; and then,turning to the stranger, I explained to him that we, too, were going to the opera, and that he was to be our guest, pushed the astonished man into the machine, told the driver to go like h—— (to drive rapidly), and, entering myself, pulled the door to and heaved a sigh of relief. We were off.

For a moment nothing was said. We were all more or less surprised to find ourselves together. I think I may say that my newly discovered friend was astonished. Something had to be said, and it was up to me. 'My name is Newton,' I said; and gently waving toward Mrs. Newton a white-kid-gloved hand, which in the darkness loo
small ham, I explained that
ton was very musical and w
larly anxious to hear the ove
opera and I was unavoidal
added that I hoped he wo
my rudeness; then, rememl
I was speaking to an Engl
man, who probably though
I inquired if he was not a
Philadelphia.

'Yes,' he replied, 'I only
the city this evening.'

'And have you friends her

His reply almost discon
'Present company excepted

'Oh, come now,' I said; '
for an Englishman, but no E
could possibly make so grace
on such short notice. You
be Scotch or Irish; whenever
a particularly charming Engl
invariably turns out to be S
Irish.'

'Well, the fact is, I'm S
friend replied; 'my name
Frank Craig; I'm an artist.'

'Don't apologize,' I said
probably not a very great ar
business man, and not a very
iness man either, and as we a
friends you have in the city
have supper with us after
Don't decline; I'm very muc
in our hotel, as perhaps yo
Ask for me at the door of t
room. Don't forget my nam
are at the opera house, in goo
the overture after all.'

And I passed my friend
taxi, and he, assuring me tha
join us at supper, went his w
ours.

During the performance,
miserable, I chuckled gently
and wondered what my Sco
thought of the affair and w
would keep his appointment.
was late, there was the usu

Digitized by Google

as almost mid-
aiter conducted
our table. Then
l a good look at
each other how
iow unexpected
n excellent sup-
pagne, followed
cigars, — for I
hing well, — we
alked of life and
f course, about

Booth Tarking-
d. I had. Did I
Craig had been
lianapolis. Had
Bennett? I had.
ks? I did. He
ith Booth Tar-
s: in fact, Ben-
ling together at

ook for the Har-
United States,'
he, Craig, was
or it.
l Bennett now?'

asleep, I hope.'
doing to-mor-

nching with the
d I'm going to
make sketches
ach on our own,

the city,' I re-
That would be
se, and Dr. Fur-
, and who else?'
f literati at the
e, and I hoped
m.
he had not been

eon, what next?'

we are to go to

the picture-gallery of a Mr. Weednaar, with a friend who has secured cards for us. I'm not invited to the luncheon, but I'm keen to see the pictures.'

'Very well,' I said, 'let me make plans for you. I tell you what we'll do: I'll make it a holiday; I shall get my motor in from the country, and go around with you and show you the sights. You want to see "Georgian" Philadelphia, you say — we call it "Colonial"; I know it well; I'll be your guide, you shall take your photographs and make your sketches, and in the afternoon we, too, will go out and see Mr. Widener's pictures, — his name, by the way, is Widener, not Weednaar, — and if I can find Harry Widener, a scion of that house and a friend of mine, I'll get him to ask us out for lunch, and we will be there to welcome Bennett and his friend with their cards on their arrival. What, by the way, is the name of your friend to whom you owe your introduction to Mr. Widener?'

'A Mr. Hellman of New York; a bookseller, I believe; perhaps you know him too.'

'Perfectly,' I said; 'I probably owe him money at this very minute.'

With this understanding, and much pleased with each other, we parted for the night.

II

The next morning, at half-past nine, we met in the lobby of the hotel and I was presented to Arnold Bennett. I do not remember that at that time I had ever seen a photograph of him, and I was rather disillusioned by seeing a person quite lacking in distinction, dressed in ill-fitting clothes, and with two very prominent upper teeth, which would have been invaluable had he taken to whistling, professionally.

'So you are the man,' he said, 'who has so captivated my friend Craig. He told me all about your escapade last

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

night, over the breakfast-table, and in the excitement of narration he ate my eggs.'

'No matter,' said I; 'you are going to lunch with the literati of the city; you ought not to worry over the loss of your eggs. But what is quite as important, who is giving the luncheon?'

'George Horace Lorimer,' he replied.

'Then,' said I, 'you certainly need not worry over the loss of a pair of eggs. In an hour or two you'll be glad you did not eat them, for Lorimer understands ordering a luncheon, no man better. I'm sorry for Craig, for he's lunching with me; but we shall join you during the afternoon at Mr. Widener's.'

This seemed to upset Bennett completely. 'But we are going to Mr. Weednaar's by appointment — we have cards — '

'I know, from George Hellman,' I interrupted; 'I don't need any cards. If Harry Widener is at home, we will lunch with him; if not, we will join you some time during the afternoon.'

Bennett looked at me with astonishment. He had doubtless been warned of bunco-steerers, card-sharks, and confidence men generally: I appeared to him a very finished specimen, probably all the more dangerous on that account. We left him bewildered; he evidently thought that his friend would be the victim of some very real experiences before he saw him again. As we parted, he looked as if he wanted to say to Craig, 'If you play poker with that man, you are lost'; but he did n't.

III

We Philadelphians do not boast of the climate of our city. During the summer months we usually tie with some town in Texas — Waco, I believe — for the honor of being the hottest place in the country: but in November it is delightful, and we have the finest suburbs in the world. If it were not for its outlying districts, Philadelphia would be intolerable. But the day was fine, we were in high spirits, like boys out for a lark, which indeed we were, and I determined that our sightseeing should begin at the 'Old Swedes,' or, to give it its proper name, 'Gloria Dei,' Church, and work our way north from the southern part of the city, stopping at such old landmarks as would seem to afford material for Craig's pencil.

What a wonderful day it was! Agreeable at the time, and in retrospect delightful, if somewhat tinged with melancholy, for I chanced to read in an English newspaper not long ago of the death of my friend Craig, in some way a victim of the war. But looking back upon that day, everything seemed as joyous as the two quaintly carved and colored angels' heads, a bit of old Swedish decoration, which peered down upon us from the organ-loft of the old church about which Craig went into ecstasies of delight — as well he might, for it is a quaint little church almost lost in the shipping and commerce that surrounds it. Built by the Swedes in 1700, it stands on the bank of the Delaware, on the site of a block-house in which religious services had been held more than half a century before its erection.

Too few Philadelphians know this tiny church or attend its services: it is out of the beaten track of the tourist; but some of us, not entirely forgetful of old Philadelphia, love to visit it occasionally, and if the sermon gets wearisome, as sermons sometimes do, we can creep out stealthily and spend a few minutes prowling around the graveyard, — where interments are still made occasionally, — looking at the tombstones, on which are curiously cut the now almost illegible names of devout men and women who departed this life in faith and fear more than two centuries ago.

Digitized by Google

ast had to say,
no means our
you see St.
des Church to
o recommend
we were soon
est bits of Co-
e in America.
aig, 'we have
n London, and
in New York
it.'
,' I said: 'and
an and had an
urch or within
t have to have
or anything
essories would
way might be
em would not
with ordinary
y the names of
been living, I
ed to mention,
n the fabric of
ht say, the un-
a.
aid Craig, 'do
ople — do you
on. It was not
collateral an-
the Philadel-
st of a bowing
harming wom-
whose family
approaching.
know nothing
it is to be a
's, but of 'St.
very different
ppreciated its
as we strolled
the keenest in-
gement of the
of the church,
it and reading-
n a quite un-

necessary sounding-board surmounting them like a benediction.

'How dignified and exclusive the square pews are!' said Craig. 'They look for all the world like the lord of the manor's, at home.'

'Yes,' said I, 'and not half so exclusive as the people who occupy them. You could have made a very pretty picture of this church crowded with wealth and fashion and beauty a hundred and fifty years ago, if you had been lucky enough to live when there was color in the world; now we all look alike.'

'I know,' said Craig; 'it's too bad.'

I could have told him a good deal of the history of Christ Church, which we next visited. It is only a short distance from St. Peter's; indeed, in the early days, Christ Church and St. Peter's formed one parish. The present structure was built in 1727, of bricks brought over from England. Architecturally, it is the finest church in Philadelphia; and so expensive was it for the congregation of two hundred years ago that, in order to finish its steeple and provide it with its fine chime of bells, recourse was had to a lottery! Indeed, two lotteries were held before the work was completed. Philadelphians all felt that they had a stake in the enterprise, and for a long time the bells were rung on every possible occasion. Queen Anne sent over a solid-silver communion service, which is still in use, and its rector, Dr. William White, after the Revolution, became the first Bishop of the Episcopal Church in the United States of America, having finally been consecrated at Lambeth after years of discussion as to how the episcopacy was to be carried on. So 'Old Christ,' as it is affectionately called, may properly be regarded as the Mother Church in this country. When Philadelphia was the national capital, Washington attended it, as did John Adams, and Benjamin Franklin, occasionally — perhaps not often enough.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

But our time was limited and there was much to see: Carpenter's Hall, and the State House with its beautiful windows, which Craig called Palladian, and its splendid Colonial staircase, from which I was powerless to draw his attention to the far-famed Liberty Bell.

'I know all about that,' said Craig; 'I've been reading it up; but if you can tell me in what single respect an Englishman has n't just as much liberty as an American, I shall be glad to listen.'

Having forgotten to point out the grave of our greatest citizen, Benjamin Franklin, who, we love to tell Bostonians, was born in Philadelphia at seventeen years of age, we retraced our steps — if one can be said to retrace one's steps in a motor — to the Christ Church burying-ground at Fifth and Arch Streets. There, peering through the iron railing, we read the simple inscription carved according to his wish on the flat tomb: 'Benjamin and Deborah Franklin, 1790.' I have always regretted that I had not availed myself of the opportunity once offered me of buying the manuscript in Franklin's hand of the famous epitaph which he composed in a rather flippant moment in 1728 for his tombstone. The original is, I believe, among the Franklin papers in the State Department at Washington, but he made at least one copy, and possibly several. The one I saw reads: —

THE BODY
of
BENJAMIN FRANKLIN
PRINTER
(Like the cover of an old book
Its contents torn out
And stript of its lettering and gilding)
Lies here, food for worms.
But the work shall not be lost
For it will (as he believed) appear once more
In a new and more elegant edition
Revised and corrected
by
THE AUTHOR.

No doubt the plain mar
the simple name and date
needs no epitaph in Phi
more dignified, but I have
ed that his first idea had
out.

As we were only a stone
the Quaker Meeting-Hou
a hasty visit, and I confe
to the question, that, of
passed the austere old bri
had never entered it befor
had always intended to.

At last I looked at my
necessarily, for somethin
was lunch-time. We had
morning; Craig had made
incredible rapidity while I
tographs and picture-po
score. We had not been i
ment, but there was mor
Fairmount — not the Par
no time for that, and all p
or less alike, although ours
tiful; but the old-time '
beautifully situated on
terraced and turreted, w
Greek temples, so faultl
tioned and placed as to fo
Pennell says is one of the l
in America, and which, h
tically adds, we in Philad
appreciate.

But Craig did. It was a
in mid-November, the t
their full autumn regalia
gold, the Schuylkill glisten
in the sun, and in the dista
with a gentle murmur of
ing disturbed, over its d
lower level, where it becor
use if not of beauty. I
seldom do we business me
middle of the day to look a
free from complications
My factory was within
walk; there, penned up a
noise, I spend most of my
discussing ways and mean

Digitized by Google

ce between my-
ecting the beau-
t my very door.
o open my eyes
er put an end
ood is required
ct day; by this
have met —
e city we sped,
ence to Lynne-
esidence of Mr.
m the centre of

were ushered,
ce-hall, beauti-
owers, into the
sed one of the
res in America.
llman were al-
idener, the old
ned the collec-
ors.
was there, too,
of Bennett wel-
tched arms. 'I
ge, but too late
ve been in New
come to lunch?
ice. I left mes-
e.'
y relieved; so I
r all and, won-
had happened

relieved to see
the reason. He
uest was.
e whispered to

distinguished
d.
ing about pic-

loes,' I replied.
ertainly does.'
, who, to the
vas vocal.
hings had been
is almost un-

canny power of observation, had seen and doubtless understood and appreciated everything in the gallery, but had remained mute; an 'Oh' or an 'Ah' had been all that Mr. Widener was able to extract from him. The old gentleman had seemingly been playing to an empty house, and it irked him. Craig had the gift of expression; knew that he was looking at some of the masterpieces of the world, and did not hesitate to say so.

We strolled from one gallery to another, and then it was suggested that perhaps we would care to see — But the afternoon was going; Bennett had to be in New York at a certain hour; it was time to move on.

'Spend another night in Philadelphia,' I said to Craig; 'you must not go without seeing Harry's books. After a while there will be tea and toast and marmalade and Scotch and soda; life will never be any better than it is at this minute.'

Craig did not require much urging. Why should he? We were honored guests in one of the finest houses in the country, in a museum, in fact, filled to overflowing with everything that taste could suggest and money buy; and for host we had the eldest son of the eldest son of the house, a young man distinguished for his knowledge, modesty, and courtesy. We went to Harry's apartment, where his books were kept, where I was most of all at home, and where finally his mother joined us. In the easy give-and-take of conversation time passed rapidly, until finally it was time to go, and we said good-bye. It was my last visit to Lynnewood Hall, as Harry's guest. Five months later, almost to a day, he found his watery grave in the Atlantic, a victim of the sinking of the Titanic.

On our way back to our hotel we agreed that we would go to the theatre

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

and have supper afterward; there was just time to change, once again gnawing a sandwich. By great good fortune there was a real comedy playing at one of the theatres; seats were secured without unusual difficulty, and we were soon quietly awaiting the rise of the curtain. After the performance we had supper, which had been ordered in advance. We were at the end of a perfect day, a red-letter day, a day never to be forgotten, Craig said. We had known each other something like twenty-four hours, yet we seemed like old friends.

'I can't hope to give you such a day as we have had, when you come to London; but you'll look me up, won't you?'

'Yes, of course, and meantime I want you to do something for me.'

'Anything, my dear boy; w

'I want a presentation cop*Alive*, with an inscription Arnold Bennett, and on a want a little pencil sketch b

'Right-o. I'll send it direc New York.'

But I had to wait several c I received a small package which, on opening, I found to tiful little water-color paintin of the picturesque old sto over the Thames at Sonning; other package, the book, *Bu* with a characteristic inscrip author was doubtful of my the very last, for he wrote Newton of Philadelphia, I be best wishes from Arnold Ben

WOOD NUPTIAL

BY JOSEPH AUSLANDER

The woods are still; the scent of old rain stirs
Out of the trampled fronds and over us;
And now the evening air is glamorous
With parley of the bramble gossipers,
And fireflies who trace diameters
Of light along a winking radius,
And rasping saws, and the continuous
Insistence of the thicket carpenters.

The architects of night are scaffolding
Our minster to a pandemonium
Of flute and timbrel, warmth of brass and string,
And thrill of triangle and tympanum;
The Reverend Beetle hems his *fa*'s and *do*'s,
And frogs intone their oratorios.

Digitized by Google

THE INTERPRETER. II

A ROMANCE OF THE EAST

BY L. ADAMS BECK

I

dawn the men
s towed up into
crystal water-
ks, the men on
and straining
bronze muscles
and backs, and
mic phrases to

drous Names of
ed,' said Vanna,
always do that
hāh! The Lord,
l so on. I don't
on about it, but
m as one, two,
tremendous lift.

ightful strange-
ve to that strong

bank, under a
trees, and saw
vilderness set in
h our chairs be-
l reverently up-

water lay, on
Garden, known
Lookh — a para-
yond it again
Nur-Mahal, the
t imperial wom-
er the weak Em-
ose name he set

thus upon his coins: 'By order of King Jehangir, gold has a hundred splendors added to it by receiving the name of Nur-Jahan the Queen.'

Has any woman ever had a more royal homage than this most royal woman — known first as Mihr-u-Nissa, Sun of Women; later, as Nur-Mahal, Light of the Palace; and, latest, Nur-Jahan-Begam, Queen, Light of the World?

Here, in these gardens, she had lived — had seen the snow mountains change from the silver of dawn to the illimitable rose of sunset. The life, the color beat insistently upon my brain. They built a world of magic where every moment was pure gold. Surely — surely to Vanna it must be the same! I believed in my very soul that she who gave and shared such joy could not be utterly apart from me.

Just then, in the sunset, she was sitting on deck, singing under her breath and looking absently away to the Gardens across the Lake. I could hear the words here and there, and knew them.

'Pale hands I loved beside the Shalimar,
Where are you now — who lies beneath your spell?
Whom do you lead on Rapture's roadway far,
Before you agonize them in farewell?'

'Don't!' I said abruptly. 'You did that on purpose!'

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

'What?' she asked in surprise. 'That is the song everyone remembers here. Poor Laurence Hope! How she knew and loved my India! What are you grumbling at?'

Her smile stung me.

'Never mind,' I said morosely. 'You don't understand. You never will.'

And yet I believed sometimes that she would — that time was on my side. When Kahdra and I pulled her across to Nur-Mahal's garden next day, how could I not believe it, her face was so full of joy as she looked at me for sympathy?

We were pulling in among the reeds and the huge carved leaves of the water-plants, and the snake-headed buds lolling upon them with the slippery half-sinister look that water-flowers have, as if their cold secret life belonged to the hidden water-world and not to ours. But now the boat was touching the little wooden steps.

Oh, beautiful, most beautiful — the green lawns, shaded with huge pyramids of the chenar trees; the terraced gardens where the marble steps climbed from one to the other, and the mountain streams flashed singing and shining down the carved marble slopes. Even in the glory of sunshine, the passing of all fair things was present with me as I saw the empty shell that had held the Pearl of Empire, and her roses that still bloom, her waters that still sing for others.

The spray of a hundred fountains was misty diamond-dust in the warm air laden with the scent of myriad flowers.

Kahdra followed us everywhere, singing his little tuneless, happy song. The world brimmed with beauty and joy. And we were together.

Words broke from me:—

'Vanna, let it be forever! Let us live here. I'll give up all the world for this and you.'

'But you see,' she said would be "giving up." right word. It is not yo lovely holiday, no more weary of it. You would life and your own kind.'

I protested with all my went on:—

'No. Indeed, I will sa it would be lowering you lotos-eating life among is a life with which you A Westerner who lives down; he loses his birthri Easterner does who Euro self. He cannot live you his. If you had work h be different. No — six more; then go away and

I turned from her. Th in Paradise. When is he

On one of the terrace beating a tom-tom, and listened, grouped about h colors.

'Is n't that all India?' dull reiterated sound? It half maddens. Once, at D the Llamas' Devil Danc white-faced child with ey enlarged, fleeing among devils — the evil passions. here and there, and ev blocked. The child fell screaming dumbly — you despair in the starting ey drowned in the thunder drums. No mercy — no rible!'

'Even in Europe the d I said. 'Do you reme French Revolution, how the victims' voices in a t drums?'

'I shall always see th child, hunted down to h its knees, and screamin sound, when I hear the d ten — a flute! Now, if

Digitized by Google

herself here by the lake, she was so terrified that she flung herself in and was drowned. They held her back, but she died.'

'How do you know?'

'Because a wandering monk came to the abbey of Tahk-i-Bahi near Peshawar, and told Vasettha the Abbot.'

I had nearly spoiled it all by an exclamation, but I held myself back. I saw she was dreaming awake and was unconscious of what she said.

'The Abbot said, "Do not describe her. What talk is this for holy men? The young monks must not hear. Some of them have never seen a woman. Should a monk speak of such toys?" But the wanderer disobeyed and spoke, and there was a great tumult, and the monks threw him out at the command of the young Abbot, and he wandered down to Peshawar; and it was he later — the evil one! — that brought his sister, Lilavanti the Dancer, to Peshawar, and the Abbot fell into her snare. That was his revenge!'

Her face was fixed and strange; for a moment her cheeks looked hollow, her eyes dim and grief-worn. What was she seeing? what remembering? Was it a story — a memory? What was it?

'Men have said so; but for it he surrendered the Peace. Do not speak of her accursed beauty.'

Her voice died away to a drowsy murmur; her head dropped on my shoulder; and for the mere delight of contact I sat still and scarcely breathed, praying that she might speak again. But the good minute was gone. She drew one or two deep breaths, and sat up with a bewildered look, which quickly passed, and left only a painful knitting of the brows.

'I was quite sleepy for a minute. The climb was so strenuous. Hark — I hear the Flute of Krishna again.'

Again I could hear nothing, but she said it was sounding from the trees at the base of the hill. Later, when we

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

climbed down, I found she was right — that a peasant lad, dark and amazingly beautiful, as these Kashmiris often are, was playing on the Flute to a girl at his feet, looking up at him with rapt eyes. He flung Vanna a flower as we passed. She caught it and put it in her bosom. A singular blossom, three petals of purest white, set against three green leaves of purest green; and lower down the stem the three green leaves were repeated. It was still in her bosom after dinner, and I looked at it more closely.

'That is a curious flower,' I said. 'Three and three and three. Nine. That makes the mystic number. I never saw a purer white. What is it?'

'Of course it is mystic,' she said seriously. 'It is the Ninefold flower. You saw who gave it?'

'That peasant lad.'

She smiled.

'You will see more some day. Some might not even have seen that.'

'Does it grow here?'

'This is the first I have seen. It is said to grow only where the gods walk. Do you know that throughout all India Kashmir is said to be holy ground? It was called long ago the land of the Gods, and of strange, but not evil, sorceries. Great marvels were seen here.'

I felt that the labyrinthine enchantments of that enchanted land were closing about me — a slender web, gray, almost impalpable, finer than fairy silk, was winding itself about my feet. My eyes were opening to things I had not dreamed. She saw my thought.

'But you could not have seen even that much of him in Peshawar. You did not know then.'

'He was not there,' I answered, falling half-unconsciously into her tone.

'He is always there — everywhere; and when he plays, all who hear must follow. He was the Pied Piper in Hamelin; he was Pan in Hellas. You will hear his wild fluting in many strange places when you know how to listen. W one has seen him, the rest comes s And then you will follow.'

'Not away from you, Vanna.'

'From the marriage feast, from Table of the Lord!' she said, sm strangely. 'The man who wrote spoke of another call, but it is the s — Krishna or Christ. When we the music, we follow. And we may or gain heaven.'

It might have been her compe personality, it might have been marvels of beauty about me, b knew well that I had entered at s mystic gate. My talk with Vanna less personal and more introspec I felt the touch of her finger-tips ing me along the ways of Quiet: my brushed a shining dew. Once, in twilight under the chenar trees, I a white gleaming and thought swiftly passing Being; but whe haste I gained the tree, I found t only a Ninefold flower, white as a s in the evening calm. I would not ga it, but told Vanna what I had seen

'You nearly saw,' she said. passed so quickly. It was the Sn One, Umā, the Daughter of the H laya. That mountain is the moun of her lord — Shiva. It is natural should be here. I saw her last n leaning over the height — her chin lowed on her folded arms, with a star in the mists of her hair. Her were like lakes of blue darkness, and wonderful. She is the My Mother of India. You will see s You could not have seen the fl until now.'

'Do you know,' she added, 'tha the mountains there are poppies blue — blue as turquoise? We wi up into the heights and find them.

And next moment she was plan the camping details — the men, ponies — with a practical zest seemed to relegate the occult to the

Digitized by Google

xt day came a

ting and, as it
le glooms bank-
nder. The sky
e earth passive
such lightning
d tore in zigzag
ntains, literally
e of the world's
er roared up in
vith shattering
rain, and the
ise to meet it.
the cabin win-
ly caught my
ht of their own
the tormented
in the tumult,
rms tossed vio-
, and feet flung
ning the waves
sed. I saw the
their unhuman
d she dropped
gone.
ened, and in the
ggedly asunder
ow light poured
an awful light
abyss of fire.
command, two
ng across the
tains for their
er colors chord-
e of Dread that
inst the back-
Twilight of the
Gods marching
nd the thunder
nto the recesses
rrible rainbows
me quietly out,
But I had seen
s the joy of the
Mother; and
, and I doubted
epared the way
e.

III

A few days later we started on what was to be the most exquisite memory of my life. In the cool gray of a divine morning, with little rosy clouds flecking the eastern sky, we set out from Islamabad for Vernag. And this was the order of our going. She and I led the way, attended by a sais (groom), and a coolie carrying the luncheon basket. Half-way we would stop in some green dell, or by some rushing stream, and there rest and eat our little meal, while the rest of the cavalcade passed on to the appointed camping-place; and in the late afternoon we would follow, riding slowly, and find the tents pitched.

It was strange that, later, much of what she said escaped me. Some I noted down at the time, but there were hints, shadows of lovelier things beyond, that eluded all but the fringes of memory when I tried to piece them together and make a coherence of a living wonder. For that reason, the best things cannot be told in this history. It is only the cruder, grosser matters that words will hold. The half-touchings — vanishing looks, breaths — O God, I know them, but cannot tell!

In the smaller villages, the headman came often to greet us and make us welcome, bearing on a flat dish a little offering of cakes and fruit, the produce of the place. One evening a headman so approached, stately in white robes and turban, attended by a little lad who carried the patriarchal gift beside him. Our tents were pitched under a glorious walnut tree, with a running stream at our feet.

Vanna, of course, was the interpreter, and I called her from her tent as the man stood salaaming before me. It was strange that, when she came, dressed in white, he stopped in his salutation, and gazed at her in what, I thought, was silent wonder. She spoke earnestly to

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

him, standing before him with clasped hands — almost, I could think, in the attitude of a suppliant.

The man listened gravely, with only an interjection now and again; and once he turned and looked curiously at me. Then, in his turn, he spoke, evidently making some announcement, which she received with bowed head; and when he turned to go with a grave salute, she performed a very singular ceremony, walking slowly round him three times, keeping him always on the right. He repaid it with the usual salaam and greeting of peace, which he bestowed also on me, and then departed in deep meditation, his eyes fixed on the ground.

I ventured to ask what it all meant, and she looked thoughtfully at me before replying.

'It was a strange thing. I fear you will not altogether understand, but I will tell you what I can. That man, though living here among Mohammedans, is a Brahmin from Benares, and, what is very rare in India, a Buddhist. And when he saw me, he believed he remembered me in a former birth. The ceremony you saw me perform is one of honor in India. It was his due.'

'Did you remember him?' I knew my voice was incredulous.

'Very well. He has changed little, but is further on the upward path. I saw him with dread, for he holds the memory of a great wrong I did. Yet he told me a thing that has filled my heart with joy.'

'Vanna — what is it?'

She had a clear, uplifted look which startled me. There was suddenly a chill air blowing between us.

'I must not tell you yet, but you will know soon. He was a good man. I am glad we have met.'

She buried herself in writing in a small book that I had noticed and longed to look into, and no more was said.

We struck camp next d
on toward Vernag — a
but one of great beaut
shade of forest trees, g
pale roses that climbed
bough and tossed trium
into the uppermost blue
noon thunder was flappi
off in the mountains, a
fell while we were lunchi
tree. I was considering
to shelter Vanna, when a
us to his house — a sce
hospitality that delighte
led us up some breakne
to a large bare room, op
air all around the roof, a
of rough enclosure on th
where the family slept a
he opened our basket, a
anxious care, hung clot
draperies about us, that
be unwatched by one
who had followed us in
interest.

Still further to entert
rarity was brought out a
na's feet, as something w
watch — a curious bird i
brightly barred wings a
cry. She fed it with a fr
tered to her hand. Just
might have welcomed h
when we left, with wor
gratitude, our host made
obeisance of touching
with joined hands as he

To me the whole incid
traordinary beauty, and
host and guest. But we n
ing scale of beauty, so v
pects that I passed from
to another, and knew no

That afternoon the cam
at the foot of a mighty h
waving pyramids of the c
ing their green like the r
dess. Near by was a hal
arches falling into ruin, a

Digitized by Google

'I wish you would try to write a story of him — one on more human lines than has been done yet. No one has accounted for the passionate quest of truth that was the real secret of his life. Strange in an Oriental despot if you think of it! It really can be understood only from the Buddhist belief (which, curiously, seems to have been the only one he neglected) that a mysterious Karma influenced all his thoughts. If I tell you, as a key-note for your story, that in a past life he had been a Buddhist priest, — one who had fallen away, — would that at all account to you for attempts to recover the lost Way? Try to think that out, and to write the story, not as a Western mind sees it, but pure East.'

'That would be a great book to write if one could catch the voices of the past. But how to do that?'

'I will give you one day a little book that may help you. The other story I wish you would write is the story of a dancer of Peshawar. There is a connection between the two — a story of ruin and repentance.'

'Will you tell it to me?'

'A part. In this same book you will find much more, but not all. All cannot be told. You must imagine much; but I think your imagination will be true.'

'Why do you think so?'

'Because in these few days you have learned so much. You have seen the Ninefold flower, and the rain-spirits. You will soon hear the Flute of Krishna, which none can hear who cannot dream true.'

That night I heard it. I waked, suddenly, to music, and standing in the door of my tent, in the dead silence of the night, lit only by a few low stars, I heard the poignant notes of a flute. If it had called my name, it could not have summoned me more clearly, and I followed without a thought of delay,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

forgetting even Vanna in the strange urgency that filled me.

The music was elusive, seeming to come first from one side, then from the other; but finally I tracked it as a bee does a flower, by the scent, to the gate of the royal garden — the pleasure place of the dead Emperors. The gate stood ajar — strange! for I had seen the custodian close it that evening. Now it stood wide, and I went in, walking noiselessly over the dewy grass. I knew, and could not tell how, that I must be noiseless. Passing as if I were guided down the course of the strong young river, I came to the pavilion that spanned it, — the place where we had stood that afternoon, — and there, to my profound amazement, I saw Vanna, leaning against a slight wooden pillar. As if she had expected me, she laid one finger on her lip, and stretching out her hand, took mine and drew me beside her as a mother might a child. And instantly I saw!

On the farther bank a young man in a strange diadem or mitre of jewels, bare-breasted and beautiful, stood among the flowering oleanders, one foot lightly crossed over the other as he stood. He was like an image of pale radiant gold, and I could have sworn that the light came from within rather than fell upon him, for the night was very dark. He held the Flute to his lips, and as I looked, I became aware that the noise of the rushing water tapered off into a murmur scarcely louder than that of a summer bee in the heart of a rose. Therefore, the music rose like a fountain of crystal drops, cold, clear, and of an entrancing sweetness, and the face above it was such that I had no power to turn my eyes away. How shall I say what it was? All that I had ever desired, dreamed, hoped, prayed, looked at me from the remote beauty of the eyes, and with the most persuasive gentleness entreated me, rather than commanded, to follow fearlessly win. But these are words, and w shaped in the rough mould of tho cannot convey the deep desire would have hurled me to his fe Vanna had not held me with a restraining hand.

Looking up in adoring love to dark face was a ring of woodland tures. I thought I could distinguish white clouded robe of a snow leop the soft clumsiness of a young and many more; but these shifted blurred like dream creatures — I c not be sure of them or define their n bers. The eyes of the Player lo down upon their passionate de with careless kindness.

Dim images passed through my m Orpheus — no, this was no Gr Pan — yet again, no. Where were pipes, the goat-hoofs? The young nysos — no; there were strange je instead of his vines. And then Van voice said as if from a great distanc

'Krishna — the Beloved'; and I aloud, 'I see!' And, even as I sai the whole picture blurred together a dream, and I was alone in the pav and the water was foaming past me

Had I walked in my sleep? I w dered, as I made my way back. gained the garden gate, before me, li snowflake, I saw the Ninefold flow

When I told her next day, speakin it as a dream, she said simply, 'T have opened the door to you. You not need me soon.'

'I shall always need you. You h taught me everything. I could see n ing last night until you took my ha

'I was not there,' she said smil 'It was only the thought of me, you can have that when I am very away. I was sleeping in my tent. W you called in me then you can alw call, even if I am — dead.'

'That is a word which is begin to have no meaning for me. You h

Digitized by Google

figure, the clear olive skin, the dark level brows, the long lashes that make a soft gloom about the eyes, — eyes that have the fathomless depth of a deer's, — the proud arch of the lip. I think there is no country where aristocracy is more clearly marked than in India. The Brahmins are the aristocrats of the world. You see, it is a religious aristocracy as well. It has everything that can foster pride and exclusiveness. They spring from the Mouth of Deity. They are his word incarnate. Not many kings are of the Brahmin caste, and the Brahmins look down upon those who are not, from sovereign heights.'

And so, in marches of about ten miles a day, we came to Pahlgam on the banks of the dancing Lidar. There were now only three weeks left of the time she had promised. After a few days at Pahlgam the march would turn and bend its way back to Srinagar, and to — what? I could not believe it was to separation: in her lovely kindness she had grown so close to me that, even for the sake of friendship, I believed our paths must run together to the end; and there were moments when I could still half convince myself that I had grown as necessary to her as she was to me. No — not as necessary, for she was life and soul to me; but perhaps a part of her daily experience that she valued and would not easily part with.

That evening we were sitting outside the tents, near the camp-fire of pine logs and cones. The men, in various attitudes of rest, were lying about, and one had been telling a story, which had just ended in excitement and loud applause.

'These are Mohammedans,' said Vanna, 'and it is only a story of love and fighting, like the Arabian Nights. If they had been Hindus, it might well have been of Krishna or of Rama and Sita. Their faith comes from an earlier time, and they still see visions. The

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Moslem is a hard practical faith for men — men of the world, too. It is not visionary.'

'I wish you would tell me what you think of the visions or apparitions of the Gods that are seen here. Is it all illusion? Tell me your thought.'

'How difficult that is to answer! I suppose that, if love and faith are strong enough, they will always create the vibrations to which the greater vibrations respond, and so create God in their own image at any time or place. But that they call up what is the truest reality, I have never doubted. There is no shadow without a substance. The substance is beyond us, but under certain conditions the shadow is projected and we see it.'

'Have I seen, or has it been dream?'

'I cannot tell. It may have been the impress of my mind on yours, for I see such things always. You say I took your hand?'

'Take it now.'

She obeyed, and instantly, as I felt the firm cool clasp, I heard the rain of music through the pines — the Flute-Player was passing! She dropped it, smiling, and the sweet sound ceased.

'You see! How can I tell what you have seen? You will know better when I am gone. You will stand alone then.'

'You will not go — you cannot! I have seen how you have loved all this wonderful time. I believe it has been as dear to you as to me. And every day I have loved you more. You could not — you who are so gentle — you could not commit the senseless cruelty of leaving me when you have taught me to love you with every beat of my heart. I have been patient — I have held myself in; but I must speak now. Marry me, and teach me. I know nothing. You know all I need to know. For pity's sake, be my wife.'

I had not meant to say it; it broke from me in the firelit moonlight with a power that I could not stay. at me with a discerning gent

'Is this fair? Do you rem at Peshawar I told you I tho a dangerous experiment, a would make things harde But you took the risk like a because you felt there were t gained — knowledge, insigh Have you not gained them?'

'Yes. Absolutely.'

'Then — is it all loss if I

'Not all. But loss I dare

'I will tell you this. I cou if I would. Do you rememb man on the way to Vernag? that I must very soon take tirely new life. I have no choi if I had, I would still do it.'

There was silence, and d arcade, without any touch o I heard the music, recedin quisite modulations to a ver tance; and between the pilla I saw a faint light.

'Do you wish to go?'

'Entirely. But I shall not Stephen. I will tell you For me, since I came to Indi that shuts us out at birth h How shall I explain? Do you Kipling's "Finest Story in th

'Yes: fiction!'

'Not fiction — true, wheth it or no. But for me the doo ed wide. First, I remembe meal, with wide gaps; then nectedly. Then, at the end year, I met one day at Ca ascetic, an old man of great wisdom, and he was able b knowledge to enlighten m wholly — much has come s has come, some of it, in ways not understand now, but m rect sight and hearing. Lon I lived in Peshawar, and my a sorrowful one. I will tell before I go.'

Digitized by Google

course as far as he could. He said he had seen the Dream of the God!

'Do you think he had seen anything?'

'What do I know? Will you eat the seeds? The Night of No Moon will soon be here.'

She held out the seed-vessels, laughing. I write that down; but how record the lovely light of kindliness in her eyes — the almost submissive gentleness that yet was a defense stronger than steel? I never knew — how should I? — whether she was sitting by my side or heavens away from me in her own strange world. But always she was a sweetness that I could not reach, a cup of nectar that I might not drink, unalterably her own and never mine, and yet — my friend.

She showed me the wild track up into the mountains, where the pilgrims go to pay their devotions to the Great God's shrine in the awful heights.

Above where we were sitting, the river fell in a tormented white cascade, crashing and feathering into spray-dust of diamonds. An eagle was flying above it, with a mighty spread of wings that seemed almost double-jointed in the middle, they curved and flapped so wide and free. The fierce head was outstretched with the rake of a plundering galley, as he swept down the wind, seeking his meat from God, and passed majestic from our sight.

Vanna spoke, and as she spoke I saw. What are her words as I record them? Stray dead leaves pressed in a book — the life and grace dead. Yet I record, for she taught me, what I believe the world should learn, that the Buddhist philosophers are right when they teach that all forms of what we call matter are really but aggregates of spiritual units, and that life itself is a curtain hiding reality, as the vast veil of day conceals from our sight the countless orbs of space. So that the purified mind, even while prisoned in the body, may

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

enter into union with the Real and, according to attainment, see it as it is.

She was an interpreter because she believed this truth profoundly. She saw the spiritual essence beneath the lovely illusion of matter, and the air about her was radiant with the motion of strange forces for which the dull world has many names, aiming indeed at the truth, but falling, oh, how far short of her calm perception! She was of a House higher than the Household of Faith. She had received enlightenment. She believed because she had seen.

V

Next day our camp was struck, and we turned our faces again to Srinagar and to the day of parting. I set down but one strange incident of our journey, of which I did not speak even to her.

We were camping at Bijbehara, awaiting our house-boat, and the site was by the Maharaja's lodge above the little town. It was midnight and I was sleepless — the shadow of the near future was upon me. I wandered down to the lovely old wooden bridge across the Jhelum, where the strong young trees grow up from the piles. Beyond it the moon was shining on the ancient Hindu remains close to the new temple; and as I stood on the bridge, I could see the figure of a man in deepest meditation by the ruins. He was no European. I could see the straight, dignified folds of the robes. But it was not surprising that he should be there, and I should have thought no more of it, had I not heard at that instant from the farther side of the river the music of the Flute. I cannot hope to describe that music to any who have not heard it. Suffice it to say that, where it calls, he who hears must follow, whether in the body or the spirit. Nor can I now tell in which I followed. One day it will call me across the River of Death, and I shall ford it or sink in the immeasurable depths, a will be well.

But immediately I was at side of the river, standing by Bull of Shiva where he kneels Symbol, and looking steadfa me a few paces away was a n dress of a Buddhist monk. H yellow robe that leaves one bare; his head was bare, als held in one hand a small bo stemless chalice. I knew I v a very strange and inexplica — one that in Kashmir shou credible, — but I put wonder I knew now that I was mov sphere where the incredible be the actual. His expression most unbroken calm. If I c to the passionless gaze of th I misrepresent, for the Rid Sphinx still awaits solution, face was a noble acquiescen content which, had it vibra have passed into joy.

Words or their equivalent tween us. I felt his voice.

'You have heard the mu Flute?'

'I have heard.'

'What has it given?'

'A consuming longing.'

'It is the music of the Ete creeds and the faiths are the v men have set to that melody ing, it will lead you to Wisd by day you will interpret mor

'I cannot stand alone.'

'You will not need. What h will lead you still. Throu births it has led you. How fail?'

'What should I do?'

'Go forward.'

'What should I shun?'

'Sorrow and fear.'

'What should I seek?'

'Joy.'

'And the end?'

Digitized by Google

She sat by the window — the last time I should see the moonlit banks and her clear face against them. I made and won my fight for the courage of words.

'And now I've finished everything, thank goodness! and we can talk. Vanna — you will write to me?'

'Once. I promise that.'

'Only once? Why? I counted on your words.'

'I want to speak to you of something else now. I want to tell you a memory. But look first at the pale light behind the Takht-i-Suliman.'

So I had seen it with her. So I should not see it again. We watched until a line of silver sparkled on the black water, and then she spoke.

'Stephen, do you remember in the ruined monastery near Peshawar, how I told you of the young Abbot, who came down to Peshawar with a Chinese pilgrim? And he never returned.'

'I remember. There was a dancer.'

'There was a dancer. She was Lilavanti, and was brought there to trap him; but when she saw him she loved him, and that was his ruin and hers. Trickery he would have known and escaped. Love caught him in an unbreakable net, and they fled down the Punjab, and no one knew any more. But I know. For two years they lived together, and she saw the agony in his heart — the anguish of his broken vows, the face of the Blessed One receding into an infinite distance. She knew that every day added a link to the heavy Karma that was bound about the feet she loved, and her soul said, "Set him free," and her heart refused the torture. But her soul was the stronger. She set him free.'

'How?'

'She took poison. He became an ascetic in the hills, and died in peace, but with a long expiation upon him.'

'And she?'

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

'I am she.'

'You!' I heard my voice as if it were another man's. Was it possible that I — a man of the twentieth century — believed this impossible thing? Impossible, and yet — What had I learned if not the unity of Time, the illusion of matter? What is the twentieth century, what the first? Do they not lie before the Supreme as one, and clean from our petty divisions? And I myself had seen what, if I could trust it, asserted the marvels that are no marvels to those who know.

'You loved him?'

'I love him.'

'Then there is nothing at all for me.'

She resumed as if she had heard nothing.

'I have lost him for many lives. He stepped above me at once; for he was clean gold, though he fell; and though I have followed, I have not found. But that Buddhist beyond Islamabad — you shall hear now what he said. It was this. "The shut door opens, and this time he waits." I cannot yet say all it means, but there is no Lahore for me. I shall meet him soon.'

'Vanna, you would not harm yourself again?'

'Never. I should not meet him. But you will see. Now I can talk no more. I will be there to-morrow when you go, and ride with you to the poplar road.'

She passed like a shadow into her little dark cabin, and I was left alone. I will not dwell on that black loneliness of the spirit, for it has passed — it was the darkness of hell, a madness of jealousy, and could have no enduring life in any heart that had known her. But it was death while it lasted. I had moments of horrible belief, of horrible disbelief; but however it might be, I knew that she was out of reach forever. Near me — yes! but only as the silver image of the moon floating in the water by the boat, with the moon herself cold myriads of miles away. I will s
of that last eclipse of wh
wrought in me.

The bright morning cam
if my joys were beginning
ending. Vanna mounted he
led the way from the boat
long look at the little Ked
home of those perfect wee
joy and sorrow as would h
impossible to me in the chr
former existence. Little K
crying bitterly on the bank
folk who had served us we
saddened and quiet.

How dear she looked, hov
gentle her appealing eyes, a
beside her! She knew what
the sight of little Kahdra,
said good-bye, was the last
sore heart. Still she rode
and still I followed. Once

'Stephen, there was a ma
war, kind and true, who love
vanti, who had no heart fo
when she died, it was in hi
sister might cling to a brot
man she loved had left he
that will not be in this life,
think I have been so blind
not know my friend.'

I could not answer — it w
zation of the utmost I coul
it came like healing to my
ter that bond between us, sli
men might think it, than
and closest with a woman
It was the first thrill of a ne
heart — the first, I thank t
of many and steadily growi
hopes that cannot be uttere

I bent to take the hand sh
to me; but even as our han
I saw, passing behind the t
road, the young man I had
garden at Vernag — most h
the strange mitre of his jewe
His Flute was at his lips, an
rang out sudden and crysta

Digitized by Google

'Believe what I have told you. For we shall meet again.'

I repeated, 'We shall meet again.'

In my arms she died.

Later, when all was over, I asked myself if I believed this, and answered with full assurance, Yes.

If the story thus told sounds incredible, it was not incredible to me. I had had a profound experience. What is a miracle? It is simply the vision of the Divine behind nature. It will come in different forms according to the eyes that see, but the soul will know that its perception is authentic.

I could not leave Kashmir, nor was there any need. On the contrary, I saw that there was work for me here among the people she had loved, and my first aim was to fit myself for that and for the writing I now felt was to be my career in life. After much thought, I bought the little Kedarnath and made it my home, very greatly to the satisfaction of little Kahdra and all the friendly people to whom I owed so much.

Vanna's cabin I made my sleeping-room, and it is the simple truth that the first night I slept in the place that was a Temple of Peace in my thoughts I had a dream of wordless bliss, and starting awake for sheer joy, I saw her face in the night, human and dear, looking upon me with that poignant sweetness which would seem to be the utmost revelation of love and pity. And as I stretched my hands, another face dawned solemnly from the shadow beside her, with grave brows bent on mine — one I had known and seen in the ruins at Bijbehara. Outside, and very near, I could hear the silver weaving of the Flute that in India is the symbol of the call of the Divine. A dream; but it taught me to live.

(*The End*)

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

THE TWILIGHT OF PARLIAMENT

BY A. G. GARDINER

I

It is a fact of universal admission that the prestige of the British Parliament has not been at so low an ebb in living memory as it is to-day. We should have, I think, to go back to the time when George III, in his pursuit of personal government, packed the House of Commons with his creatures, to parallel the disrepute into which the present Parliament has fallen. The House of Commons has lost its authority over the public mind and its influence upon events. The press has largely ceased to report its proceedings, and the scrappy descriptive summary has taken the place of the full-dress verbatim reports with which we were familiar a few years ago. This is no doubt largely due to the revolution in the press which has replaced the sober seriousness of the past by a tendency to keep the public amused with sensation and stunts. But the fact does reflect the public sense of the decadence of Parliament.

And there is an odd touch of irony in this — that the depreciation affects the popular House much more than the House of Lords. For generations the latter has been a threatened institution, the last hope of impossible causes and the bugbear of the reformer. Its record of stupid opposition to every movement of enlightened and rational change has been the tradition of a century; but it seemed that, with the great Budget fight of 1910 and the passing of the Parliament Act, its power for mischief had been finally controlled. It was an ogre that had lost its claws, and was hencefo
And behold! Just at the
the representative Hou
based on the broadest
chise, when the suffrage
and women have the vot
fronted with the spectacle
Commons so negligible as
beneath contempt, and
servile that, by comparis
tary Chamber stands out
the guardian of public
free institutions. For lo
erals have been fighting
oughly representative sy
imposing restraint upon
ary tendencies of the
And having accomplishe
they find that they hav
the experience of whatev
enlightened and liberal-m
there remains, from the
mons to the House of Lo
least an occasional wei
heard in protest against th
government. There at
reminiscence of the spirit o
criticism, which has certa
from a House of Comm
ists simply to register th
ministry.

If we seek to discover
the decline of the Parlia
tution, the most general c
be that it is an incident i
sion of the war. There c
be no doubt on this point.

Digitized by Google

ner, or, at least, the exercise of outside. The this movement s an institution ratic its basis, instrument of , and that the nust pass to the sses before La- chieve the aims en the mutually ssessing Parlia- Parliament, La- t its way. The ement, I think, favor of a Par- the intellectual the new school credit that has Parliament has e of direct ac- been disastrous arliament. The more and more d Capital, with Parliament and y disposed to side by the in- ses of industry. ition of the ad- r is aggravated he press to the esent condition tion makes it for newspapers sts of the men; both the press inst them gives nings of direct

n that has help- ust Parliament Parliamentary seventy Labor House of Com- s that they are, fficient body in t is due to two

things. While it is the intellectual who dictates the abstract policy of the party, it is the mass of the party that nominates and elects the members; and it is the practice to send to Westminster trade-union secretaries of third-rate ability and generally without either political training or Parliamentary instinct. Nor is this the only handicap. They are deprived of all independent action, and enter the House committed to a certain collective course on any given issue, regardless of what the debates may reveal. All this has made Labor a singularly negligible influence in the House, and has increased its disposition to distrust an instrument it has failed to use.

III

And there is another cause of the decline of the Parliamentary institution. I do not think it can be doubted that it is not to-day attracting the best intellectual and moral material of the country to the extent to which it attracted it a generation or two ago. The pushful and clever lawyer is still there in abundance; but the great public-spirited citizen, who entered Parliament, not for what he could make out of it, but from a disinterested passion for the commonwealth, — the man of the type of Cobden and Bright, — has disappeared. No first-rate Parliamentary figure, has emerged during the past twenty years, with the exception of Mr. Churchill, a mere swashbuckler of politics.

This, I fear, is not an accidental circumstance. It is due to the changed conditions. In the past the private member of distinction had an opportunity of making his influence felt, which is no longer possible. If he had anything to say, he was able to say it, and he was assured that through the press he would reach the mind of the country. All this is changed. The private member has few chances of being

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

heard and no chance of being reported. Though he speak with the tongue of angels, the popular press, occupied with important matters like the forthcoming prize-fight or the latest society divorce suit, will be deaf to his pleadings. If he is to make any impression, he must be a noisy nuisance, who cannot be suppressed. The effect of this is to make Parliament increasingly unattractive to the men who would give it distinction, but who are not prepared to devote their time and their energies to an unprofitable and not very elevating service.

I remember Lord Morley, when he was at the India Office, deploring the disappearance of the great private member, who consecrated distinguished abilities of mind and character to the service of the State without any desire for office.

'You mean a man of the type of Cobden,' I said.

'No,' he replied, 'I would be satisfied with something less than Cobden. I would be content if the House of Commons produced one private member of the type of Bradlaugh: powerful in speech, courageous in action, with a large understanding of affairs, and no eye upon the front bench. But there is no such man to-day.'

There is no such man, because there is no room for such a man. Burke would be almost as much out of his element in the House of Commons to-day as the Archbishop of Canterbury would be out of his element on the race-course. The change in the character of the House of Commons is, of course, largely due to the enormously increased activities which modern developments have imposed upon it. The tide of business that flows through the House is so impetuous, that the large issues of conduct are lost in the mass of multitudinous detail, and the appeal to the moral standards of public conduct has become almost as irrelevant as a sermon on the stock exchange. T concerned about these more fruitful field for t in the social and intellect side than they could hope House of Commons of to

But in spite of these g cies, which have slowly transformed the spirit an Parliament, it remains tru esteem in which it is h mainly due to the war. August, 1914, the House was put into cold stora that condition of frozen has never emerged. Reca forgettable scene when Grey made the speech th England to the war, one across a gulf that can n spanned. Power so comp from the House of Com executive, that the mere criticism was enough to s to political exile for the re Mr. Ramsay MacDonald murmur when Sir Edw down, and he has not re the consequences to this marked with the indelible ing said what half the Cab ing in private the day bef many of them, includin George, were saying onl before. For four years a iron law of unquestioni was imposed on the Ho mons. It became a registe It was drilled and disci service of the executive. initiative vanished. The the opposition to oppose w The liberties of the Cham ted out, and the House los stinct of free criticism and thought. This paralysis long that it became the h minds. They were uncon chains. It would almost

Digitized by Google

their chains
their patriotic
they clanked
rted their de-
he very tradi-
passed away.
have been re-
war, if power
men who rev-
ry institution.
ad no disposi-
ent the unpre-
which the war
xpense of Par-
ne years of the
tation of them
vernment had
ut name. The
tinued, but he
the press and
ne official ma-
e moment of
the end of the
that enabled
of Commons
urpose.
e of that elec-
ppeals to the
b, is a humili-
continues in a
at is without
of the pocket
Liberal states-
was returned,
modern annals
ber was with-
on. Two small
al and Labor
ut they con-
spicuous men,
tion, the small
e exercised up-

pposition was
ic course of af-
tionalist party
ned a formid-
he House; but
tionalist party

out of existence, and in its place, Nationalist Ireland elected a solid phalanx of Sinn Fein candidates, who, adopting the policy of repudiating the English Parliament, have made no appearance at Westminster. Mr. George was therefore left in possession of Parliament with a completeness unlike anything in history. Not only was there no opposition confronting him, but the unwieldy mob of members sent to support him came, not as free representatives freely elected, but as his personal adherents who, in accepting his 'coupon,' had practically undertaken to disestablish Parliament and endorse his personal dictatorship without challenge.

It is needless to say that a House of Commons elected in these circumstances and under these conditions was of a quality new to the walls of St. Stephen's. It was composed for the most part of men who had done well out of the war and expected to do still better out of the peace. The wiser mind of the nation was wholly absent from it, and the scum thrown up by the war was left in undisputed possession. Owing their seats entirely to the strategy of Mr. George, depending for the retention of these seats entirely upon his maintenance in office, at once ignorant of and indifferent to the traditions of Parliament, they provided a perfect instrument for his purpose. In the previous Parliament, opposition had been silenced by the supposed requirements of the war; but in this Parliament it has been suppressed as a sort of blasphemy against the divine right of dictatorship. No proposal has been too grotesque to be swallowed with servile and uncomplaining obedience. Even Mr. George's fantastic fifty-per-cent tax on German imports — every copper of which came out of English pockets — was accepted almost without discussion, although the whole business community was panic-stricken at so inconceivable a form of

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

commercial suicide. The folly perished by its own silliness within a fortnight, but it has been duly followed by other follies, like the Anti-Dumping bill, which has been received with the same complacent imbecility. Cabinet responsibility has ceased to exist, the safeguards of the constitution have gone one by one; ministers have declined into mere clerks, responsible, not to Parliament, but to their chief; treasury control has vanished from finance, and an orgy of unchecked extravagance runs riot through the departments; the benches of the House are crowded with placemen, for whom new offices have been created in such abundance that Mr. George can vote down the feeble opposition with his salaried supporters alone. We are in the presence of an experiment in personal government which would have been unthinkable a decade ago.

Two issues will show how completely Parliament has abdicated. The story of the events in Ireland during the past year has no parallel in our annals for more than a century. The facts, denied or travestied with impudent effrontery by Sir Hamar Greenwood, are no longer in doubt. Every day adds its dreadful chapter to an indictment such as no civilized government in modern times has been subjected to. In other and better days one incident of the thousand that have occurred would have stung Parliament to an indignant anger that would have swept the government that authorized it from office. One has only to invoke the great name of Gladstone to appreciate the moral death that has fallen upon an institution that sits day by day and month by month in guilty and approving complicity with the chief authors of this indelible crime.

Or take the enormous disaster that has paralyzed industrial England this summer. Whatever share of responsibility the unions have for that catastrophe, it is small in comp
the share of the governm
made vast profits by cont
coal-trade, and used them
the deficiency in their accou
ing was set aside from the
for the purpose of restorin
to normal conditions when
came. It came as the result
Mr. George's surrender to
demands at Spa, which glut
with German coal and bro
the collapse of the English
And with this collapse, a
moment's notice, coal was d
and the miner was left to bea
burden of the government'
providence. The wrong wa
palpable, but the House of
in this as in every other c
abdicated all its functions
and appeasement. It was
sympathy with the idea o
occasion to destroy organi
at whatever cost to the c
Probably the idea will prev
may be left beaten, impove
sullen. But in thus destroyi
element of confidence among
ing-classes in its good fai
ment will have suffered no l
blow.

The future is incalculab
mentary government, of co
will continue to be; but whe
ment can recover from the
years of war and the ignomi
of peace to anything appro
prestige of other days is
doubtful. The rot has gone
are in the presence of disru
which cannot be measured.
ism of Mr. Lloyd George
hand, and the challenge of di
on the other, seem to be cr
institution between the ha
the anvil. Apart from the
happenings of the past seven
social and industrial changes

Digitized by Google

shadowed a re-
e of government.
the air, and the
nent less remote
ensitive and im-
o local needs, is
faith — in men,
ls, in theories —
g product of the
ng, not even the
gly than it has

touched Parliament. It would have suffered less had there been a great moral influence, to which the constitutional idea was as sacred as it was to Hampden, or Burke, or Gladstone, in control of affairs when the tempest came. But the upheaval of the war left it the sport of a nimble genius to whom the soul of Parliament is nothing and the manipulation of mob emotion through the press the only vehicle of statesmanship.

IE JAPANESE IN HAWAII

Y WILLIAM HARDING CARTER

ows that, out of
255,912 in the
,269 are Japan-
apanese popula-
594, or 37.1 per
3,564 or 30.4 per
ng decade.' The
er of Japanese
of other nation-
onstitutes an in-
problem, and a
ory of Japanese
l to any proper
uation.
between Japan
ith a treaty of
1871. Scarcity
Hawaii caused
Bishop, Minister
ake up with the
kyo the subject
obtaining labor-
thing came of it
isited Japan, in
ian Minister of

Immigration, Honorable William Nevins Armstrong, initiated negotiations with the Japanese government on the subject of emigration of laborers from Japan to Hawaii.

In 1883 Colonel C. P. Iaukea was accredited to the Court of Japan as Minister Plenipotentiary, for the special purpose of arranging for Japanese immigration, and was instructed by the Hawaiian Minister of Foreign Affairs, Honorable Walter Murray Gibson, in this remarkable manner: —

'You will please impress upon the mind of the Minister the very exceptional character of these proposals, and the evidence they afford of the high value His Majesty's government places upon the friendly alliance between this country and Japan, and upon the Japanese race *as a repopulating element.*'

Later, under date of July 22, 1885, Mr. Gibson wrote to Count Inouye: —

'I desire in the first place to assure Your Excellency that, owing to the

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

strong desire of Hawaii to settle upon her soil a kindred and kindly people like the Japanese, this government is most anxious to meet the views and requirements of Japan on all points.'

Under date of January 21, 1886, the Hawaiian Consul-General at Tokyo, Mr. R. W. Irwin, wrote to Count Inouye: 'I accept unreservedly the terms and conditions laid down in Your Excellency's communication of yesterday, and I am prepared to sign the immigration convention.'

The Hawaiian Minister of Foreign Affairs, under date of March 5, 1886, wrote to Count Inouye: 'Mr. Irwin unreservedly accepted these stipulations, and I have now the honor to accept his engagement and to confirm on the part of His Majesty's government the several subsidiary agreements referred to, in so far as may be consonant with the constitution of the kingdom and His Majesty's treaty obligations with foreign powers.'

Count Okuma in reply informed Mr. Irwin: 'I accept your assurances in these regards, as well as other particulars specified in your communication, as an authorized statement of the obligations which your government assumes in the premises, and I shall so regard the understanding as binding on our respective governments, subject to the right of revoking same, either in whole or in part, which is specifically reserved to me.'

In 1885 there were less than fifty Japanese in Hawaii; but under the encouragement of the terms of the treaty, the number increased to twenty thousand in ten years, at which time *Japan demanded the exclusion of any more Chinese laborers.*

Foreseeing future complications, the Constitution of 1887 was made to limit the franchise to 'every male resident of the Kingdom of Hawaiian, of American or European birth or descent, who shall have taken an oath to suppo stitution and laws, and shall to read or write either the English, or some European

In the following year, 188 for the franchise for the Ja gan, and continued, as a bone of contention along favored-nation clauses, until Mr. Fujii, Consul-General, egorical demand upon Pres for the granting of the franc Provisional Government — superseded the Monarchy — anese in Hawaii, including fi brought under contract, ove Japanese government retai by withholding 25 per ce wages.

President Dole explained could be no foundation in l or the usages of nations for to demand of another, as a mission for its subjects t their allegiance and acquire in another country. The sovereign and subject, state comprises an obligation b governing authority and t ual; otherwise, an overcrowd could unload its surplus pop on a smaller country, and by tion of the enforced franchise and legally absorb the small This, in the last analysis, w from the democratic theory ernment should follow from of the governed.

Following the establishm Republic of Hawaii, the i convention lapsed, but Jap tinued to arrive as free imm greater numbers than be having arrived in 1896. M reaching a serious condition the heavy immigration. It sary to end a situation whic ed to jeopardize the conti opment of Hawaii along A

Digitized by Google

rms of the general
arly 1500 Japan-
denied entrance.
n population has
about the same
the Japanese has
e early explorers
population of the
h as 250,000; but
ken, and showed
y years later the
led to 71,019, of
gners. Improved
, incident to the
ith the United
, and in 1896 the
09,020, of whom
aiians. The cen-
ly 26,041 Hawai-
us, that of 1920,
er of natives has

Hawaiian race is
it still exercises
matters through
er of half-castes,
s of whites and
as, who now num-
eadily increasing.
one of the popu-
aces, anticipated
re invited to set-
he Japanese men

marry only Japanese women, and their children are habitually registered as Japanese with officials of their own government. A large proportion of them are sent back to Japan for part of their education. The younger children attend both the public schools of Hawaii and private Japanese schools. The number of Japanese women in Hawaii has increased rapidly, — the ratio of women to men having nearly doubled since 1900, — and now is 42.7 per cent. The Japanese have increased in number since the census of 1910 by 29,599, and with Filipinos comprise three fourths of the total increase.

The main elements of population, other than Hawaiians and Japanese, are Chinese, Portugese, Filipinos, Porto Ricans, and Spaniards. Americans, British and Germans have been more powerful in commercial and financial interests than in numbers.

The islands are fertile, their location is of immense and growing importance, and altogether they constitute a vital element in the future problems of the Pacific. The United States arrived at their possession through a process of stumbling, and doubtless the great problems arising from the commercial and strategic position of the islands will be met in the same way.

Digitized by Google

ROOT, HOG, OR DIE

THE NEW ENGLANDER AND HIS RAILROADS

BY PHILIP CABOT

I

CHEAP, efficient transportation is the life-blood of New England. Located at the extreme northeastern corner of the country, it has been, since the death of the China trade, as dependent on its railroads as man upon his food. Without them we die, and yet for twenty years a process of decay has been going on — stealing over us like creeping paralysis, but so gradually that for many years it passed almost unnoticed.

Ten years ago rumblings and cracks in the walls gave us warning, however, of the collapse which has now occurred. To-day the New England railroads not only are bankrupt, but seem bankrupt beyond repair. Faced with this condition at a time when war had raised the pressure on our whole industrial system to a point never before reached, the manufacturer and distributer turned to the motor-truck, as the only possible avenue of escape; with the result that, in a brief five years, our main radial highways have been converted into railroad rights of way, and are now choked with heavy traffic for which they were never designed.

Every abuse carries its penalty. The penalty for this abuse of our roads will be a heavy one, which the tax-payer must pay. The Commonwealth of Massachusetts has spent more than $25,000,000 of the tax-payers' money in road-construction, much of which has already been ground to powder the wheels of the five-ton truck; ar damage must to-day be repair perhaps double the former cost. State tax has mounted in recent by leaps and bounds; the contrib of the truck-owner to the cost of construction is so trivial, that m the burden will fall upon the tax-p on whose now over-loaded back a additional levy is apparently abo fall at the very moment when expecting relief. And make no mi as to who must bear the burden. old notion that a tax could be p upon one class has vanished into air. We now realize that it is no capitalist who pays the tax, or the ufacturer. It is the man in the who pays the tax, in the increase of everything he buys. He pays th for every waste of public money.

At the present time 2,000,000 miles of freight are transported ally by truck; and five years hen the growth continues, the figure w 60,000,000.

Apparently the business comm has come to the conclusion tha motor-truck is to replace the ra for freight traveling 100 miles or and is developing its business these lines. The decision is a vita which must rest, one would suppo some well-matured plan, the pra

Digitized by Google

esults of which
tested and ade-
such is not the
act, the proposi-
ange in our trans-
nly is one which
nt or manufac-
d, if he knew the
not merely wild,
e.

t is proposed to
ill in five years'
sachusetts alone,
main highways
for that purpose,
,000 per mile, or
. Such a sum of
ed and economi-
ef space of time
k must be done;
done promptly,
ll be strangled.
ssible, the result
ransportation so
o be prohibitive.
ile of handling
would be more
bear; and if the
d spent, it would
be shown by fig-
ubject to much
equate for the

5 to 50 cents per
ck operation, de-
iables — the dis-
e so-called load-
or is meant the
imum number of
a truck can trans-
number of ton-
is the habit of
urers and opera-
ctor of 50 or 60
rtainly too high,
to say exactly
ld be. But con-
cks are to replace
hat in New Eng-

land the load-factor on a freight car is certainly less than 5 per cent, the above figures are wholly unreasonable. If a load-factor of 20 per cent were obtained, it would indeed be remarkable. At this load-factor, operating costs per ton-mile, without profit, will vary from 30 to 40 cents, according to conditions.

To this figure the intelligent critic may object, on the ground that, the truck being a relatively new device, great economies in fuel are to be looked for; but in the first place, fuel is a relatively small item, and in the second place, it must be remembered that, as time goes on, the wages cost, which even now is a large item, will tend to increase. Compared with railroad wages to-day, this cost is very low, and it is practically certain that operators cannot be found in large numbers who will work regularly for the wages and under the working conditions now in effect. Looking five years ahead, therefore, and adding to the operating cost the fixed charges and maintenance of way and structures, it seems clear that the average cost per ton-mile of this method of transportation will not fall below 50 cents. The present cost of way and structures is estimated at 33 cents per ton-mile. If in the next five years the traffic doubles annually, which would mean a traffic of 60,000,000 ton-miles, this might come down to ten cents. If the trucks were taxed ten cents per ton-mile, this would produce an income of $6,000,000 per year, which, added to the $3,500,000 in fees now assessed, is hardly enough to meet the necessary expenditures. But at this rate, assuming a 20 per cent load-factor, about 10,000 trucks would be required, and the tax per truck would be $600 per year. Compare the present license fee, and note what the tax-payer is contributing.

We are, then, in this position: in order to provide and maintain the necessary right of way to do the business,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

an annual expenditure of more than $10,000,000 during the next five years will be necessary; and when the job is done, we shall have created a system, the operating cost of which will be prohibitive. Obviously, this is no solution of our problem. Better to pay the money to the present owners of the railroads, whose rights of way have already cost twice the sum which it is now proposed to spend in duplicating them, and are far better adapted for the purpose.

This is not a fact, however, which should cause the legitimate and far-sighted truck-manufacturer any alarm. He is engaged in a great permanent industry, not in raising mushrooms. Sound, steady expansion upon a firm foundation is his watchword and his goal, and any movement which tends to throw upon him a sudden but ephemeral demand will damage him. A great structure, built upon a quicksand, that will topple over and crush him, would be an unmitigated misfortune, which he will be the last to encourage. He is to-day painfully digging himself out of such a crumbling ruin resulting from the war boom, and he will not need a second object-lesson. The burnt child dreads the fire.

We are clearly driven to the conclusion that the only way out of the dilemma (if there be any) is by improving and cheapening our local railroad freight-service. Perhaps this is impossible; perhaps we are in a blind alley from which there is no way out. But have we really tried to escape? Have we put our best brains and energy into a desperate effort to improve our railroad service? Have we employed the best methods that the keenest business imagination can devise to help us? Of course we have done nothing of the kind. Look at the railroads of New England to-day and the conditions under which they operate.

II

The railroad system of N
— into which the investin
already poured the best pa
dollars, to which should be
ally $25,000,000 more to k
date — is the greatest sin
we have. At the head ar
over-driven slaves, beaten
to post by government
labor-union leaders, and u
small army of operating m
mutinous condition, who
aim at the present time se
secure as high wages and
work as possible. Here is
the management of which
degree of skill, coöperatio
inative power must be en
allowed to function in the
manner. But we have eit
show great skill in selectin
tive officers, or have for
work under impossible con

The freight-traffic of N
is peculiar. Unlike that
Western states (or even
the great trunk lines hand
ness of New England is la
than car-load lots. New E
fact, far more like old E
has properly been compar
terminal. In the conduct
ness, we have allowed ou
dominated — one might
hypnotized — by the ideas
and motive power associa
great name of James J. Hil
ers have selected Western
erate our systems, with
politicians of the old N
school for their adjutants

It is a fundamental axio
no great operation can b
without team-work — the
and loyal coöperation betw
bers of the organization,
bottom. The capacity fo

Digitized by Google

perative effort ex-
litant soul) is the
ion, of the rise of
the brute. This is
axiomatic; but to
een achieved in the
No one who will
talk with the rail-
ed long remain in
e of the great rail-
he individual opera-
liscontent, or active
cutive officers. The
working conditions
sist seems primarily
he operation of the
and inefficient as
dustry where the
en the life, of the
ds maximum effi-
m cost, the great
s spend their best
rustrate both. Is it
rvice is unsatisfac-
are high? It would
ere otherwise. One
ng that the business
d from top to bot-
nction properly.
sible. Many of us
time, a generation
e of mind of these
as radically differ-
proud of the com-
loyal to their inter-
th bated breath of
as 'the old man,' a
verence, affection,
remember the fine
tor of the fast train,
guished passengers,
im by name. That
ary for success, but
day by its absence.
a great local enter-
ed, and operated by
the responsibility
en squarely placed,
llowed relative free-

dom of action. They breathed the free air of their native hills, were honored and respected by their fellow citizens, and, feeling the full weight of responsibility with power, met the test.

The conditions which have produced the ruin that we now face belong, perhaps, in the province of the philosopher rather than the statesman, but some comprehension of them is essential; for the men who must to-day get us out of this tangle are like the doctor who must diagnose the disease before he can cure it.

The public mind has been directed during recent years to blunders and scandals of a financial character, which are supposed to be the root cause of the present collapse; and doubtless they have contributed to it. But they are not the main cause. The failure is in management, not in finance. Either this great industry has assumed proportions beyond the power of men to deal with, or through lack of sufficient imagination and grasp of the nature of the problem, the owners and the public have failed to attract, or have driven to distraction, the type of man that was needed. That the industry has become very large, that such men as are needed to run it successfully are rare, no one will deny. But we cannot afford to admit that the job is beyond our power. The word 'impossible' is not popular with our people. Where there 's a will, there 's a way.

On the other hand, that we have failed to get the right managers, or that, having got them, we have not allowed them to do their work, is also clear; and before we discharge them as incompetent, we are bound in fairness to consider the conditions under which we have placed them.

Public regulation of the industry began fifty years ago; but only within twenty-five years did it become general and of decisive importance. During

Digitized by Google

the latter period, however, the railroad systems of New England have been under the strictest supervision of eight independent regulative commissions, each supreme in its own jurisdiction (the limits of which were not always clear), each holding divergent views as to the policy to be pursued, and unanimous only in this, that railroad executives were naughty boys, who needed stern discipline; and the rod has not been spared. As a result, the major portion of these men's time has been spent in attending public hearings, in preparing to attend them, or in endeavoring to act in such a way that they would not have to. Little time or energy has been left them to consider how to run the business so as to meet the rapidly changing conditions; and they have had less than no encouragement to look into the future with the keen constructive insight which was essential to success. They have been forced into the ignoble position of holding responsibility without real power, of being accountable for results which they did not cause, and of being blamed for every failure, whether brought about by them or by others.

Note, also, that men browbeaten as these men have been are not likely to overflow with the milk of human kindness, and may pass on similar treatment to their subordinates. Whatever the native capacity of the railroad executives, therefore, clearly they have labored under insuperable obstacles. The power to regulate, like the power to tax, is the power to destroy, and public regulation in New England has in this respect achieved a notable success.

III

The time has come, however, when the business men of New England must make radical improvements in the whole railroad situation, or we die. Freight rates and servic
lesser degree) passenger b
be cheapened and impro
England industries will p
tem of motor-transport
remedy, nor is governme
and operation. The colla
primarily to financial fa
failure of the human ele
this respect, government c
present conditions, will
more vision, intelligence
than private officials.
thing is that the public
tax-payer) should clearly
that this is a matter of
and determine to meet it
perate energy which alo
success.

The two main issues
grasped are: first, that
industry (like all others)
ducted by a group of me
cally interested in their w
to it and to each other fro
tom; and second, that t
of traffic of New Englan
those of the West and So
like those of Europe, a
studied and dealt with as

It is the industrial life
land that is at stake, and c
rest on New England me
has its own problems to wo
the type of brains and
have made New Englan
great must save us now,
We must rely on Easter
men steeped in and hypn
ideas of train-load and
invented by Jim Hill to sol
problems of the great-plai
observe that the local t
England is much of it in
load lots. Freight cars of
tons' capacity are not wh
requires. The five-ton m
the five-ton railway-van
land, is more suited to ou

Digitized by Google

However, it is not by the increased use of machinery alone that the cost of handling freight can be cut down. Better organization of man-power and a better spirit in the men can result in an increased efficiency which would cut the handling cost in two. No freight-handler need fear the loss of his job. His future is in his own hands; for, if he will use his head as well as his hands, and put will-power behind both, no machine can displace him. But he must now face the music, for the tax-payer, once thoroughly aroused, will insist that he shall handsomely earn his pay or give way to a machine that will.

Just what the cost of handling local freight by rail ought to be, it is perhaps impossible to say; but some approximation to the point where the dividing line between motor-truck transport and rail transport will come can be made in this way. Assuming a price of 15 cents per hundredweight for cost of delivery at the freight-yard and removal therefrom, or about three dollars per ton at each end, we have a fixed charge of six dollars per ton on every ton moved, however far it goes. At a cost of 50 cents per ton-mile for motor transport, six dollars will move a ton twelve miles; so that for this and shorter distances the railroad cannot compete. This distance, amounting to six miles at each end of the operation, fairly represents the area of the larger industrial communities, where streets designed for heavy traffic have already been provided; and within these areas the truck will clearly be supreme. Beyond this point, however, the railroad costs should be less, in view of the fact that the Class II rate, within which class most of the local traffic could with skillful readjustment be made to come, is now only five and a half cents, with all the terminal cost upon its head. Even if the cost for hauling local freight is as high as five cents, plus the cost of hand-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

ling at terminals, it is clear that, above the twelve-mile limit, a saving over the 50 cents per ton-mile for motor costs can be shown.

But there is one feature essential to the success of this or any other scheme. The railroads must be efficiently operated. Loyalty, team-work, and discipline in railroad operations — all are absolutely vital to any improvement whatsoever. Without these no system, no industrial operation, can succeed. Scientific management and the best of methods are futile if the human element fails. The army of 75,000 men who operate the railroads of New England must be loyal to its commander, or the enemy (high taxes and high manufacturing costs) will drive us from the field.

At the present moment the nation is much agitated by the controversy between the railroad executives and the railroad unions, over the question of wages and working conditions — the unions demanding that all such questions shall be settled on a national basis, while the executives plead for the privilege of dealing directly with their own employees. It is beyond the scope of this article to analyze the merits of this controversy; but it may not be amiss to point out that, in the heat of battle, the parties are in danger of losing sight of the real issue — the shadow may be mistaken for the substance. Effective team-work requires loyalty and discipline. Industrial organizations that survive the test of time are organized upon the same principles as an army, in which there must be supreme command and also subdivision into units, to the commanders of which much liberty of action is allowed. The organization of the National Baseball League forms an analogy which is instructive, for the business as a whole is recognized as a close monopoly, controlled absolutely by a small group of men; while at the same
viduality of the clubs is
petition is of the keenest
discipline is preserved.

But whatever be the fo
zation, it is essential to
each individual who com
be interested in his work
job, and loyal to it and t
officer. That it is easy to
condition, it would be idle
it will be impossible witho
and most intimate relat
officers and men, and any
tends to keep them apart
This is, perhaps, the
objection to the scheme
agreements, for which the
railroad unions contend.

The transportation
New England are peculi
wholly different from the
the South or the West,
official living in Clevelan
and is likely to care le
special problems of our
The railroads of New Eng
owned, managed, and ope
whose homes and heart
their heads, are in New E
operating men, from th
the freight-handler, must
that the success and the
operation of the roads is
own lives; that when the
strike their own wives a
that, if costs are high, th
them; and that, if the bus
ure, they and theirs will be

If, in the process of reor
which we must now emb
are required in responsi
they should be sought,
found, among the rank a
present operating force.
team-play, which is esse
created and kept alive on
it clear to every man, fr
to president, that promot

Digitized by Google

England. As they slipped from this basis, they began to fail, and they have now collapsed. To our old rock-foundation we must now painfully return.

It is idle to suppose that the controversies which have destroyed the morale of our railroad organizations are between Labor and Capital, or that one class in the community is more vitally interested in their solution than another. The penalty of failure will not fall most heavily upon the big business man or the banker. These can, and will, escape and win a livelihood in other fields. It is the workingman — the man in the street — who will suffer. New England is his home; its future and his are one. If New England suffers from the failure of its transportation-system, these men and their wives and children must bear the consequences. And if these men fail to realize the true nature of the problem, as they have failed hitherto, and to coöperate in its solution, they, and chiefly they, will suffer.

The present attitude of railroad labor, which seems to be striving for high wages and limited output, is suicidal. These men behave as if efficient and economical operation of the railroads were somebody else's business. In fact, it is their own. If they maintain their present attitude, they will destroy themselves and force their fellow citizens to shatter them and their organizations as a measure of self-preservation. The remedies will have to be drastic, for it is a matter of life and death.

To sum up the situation, then, and put a point upon the spear, we are faced with a vital problem, upon the successful solution of which hangs the future of New England. We are to-day a manufacturing community, to which cheap and rapid local transportation is essential. Owing to the collapse of our railroad system, we have not got it.

Digitized by Google

Transportation by motor-truck, except for short distances, is too expensive. Our goods must be transported by rail, if at all, and we must either provide cheap and rapid railroad transportation, or perish as a manufacturing centre.

This conclusion does not imply that the policy of the Commonwealth regarding the construction of state roads has been unwise. On the contrary, such construction, properly planned and administered on the basis of payment by the automobile of its share of cost and maintenance, through a system of registration fees, is sound and popular. But these roads were designed for relatively light traffic; their foundations and bridges are wholly inadequate to withstand the blows of a five-ton truck, and their use for freight-service of this character is wantonly wasteful. The $25,000,000 investment of the tax-payers' money is being destroyed by a use that was never intended. Your pocket-knife makes a poor claw-hammer, to say nothing of the effect on the knife.

That the task is not beyond our power, there is no question. Brains and energy of the sort that have made New England, if applied to this problem, will solve it. A small commission, composed of the leaders of our industrial life, could, in a very short time, verify the facts of the case and draw up a statement which every citizen in New England could understand, and which should be published and advertised in such a way as to drive it home in every section and in every class. The tax-payers, once aroused, will then insist that the necessary steps be taken at once. Different methods of handling goods and of handling men must be put in operation, but these methods need not of necessity be invented. To a large extent, the labor-saving devices which we need are already in existence and in use in other industrial or construction organizations. The future methods of handling men need not, in fact must not, be new. They must be the methods now in use in other great, efficient, and successful industries.

Whether these changes can be carried out by the men who now operate the roads remains to be seen. With a clear mandate and a fair chance, which they have not had heretofore, they should be given time to show what they can do. If they fail, they must be replaced by men who will not fail. Needs must when the Devil drives. Our need is desperate, and the right men can be found. Management, and not money, is what we need. The motor-trucks for local deliveries, the terminals, the railroads, and a large part of the necessary equipment are at hand. We have the tools — our problem is to use them with the requisite skill.

Digitized by Google

RIATIC NEGOTIATIONS AT PARIS

BY DAVID HUNTER MILLER

I

Paris negotiations
has not yet been
f it cannot be told
ers of Orlando and
ino and President
other figures who,
yed a part in the
an attempt can
ne the picture and
gress of one of the
failure, however,
for the final end-
f Rapallo, of the
aly and the king-
e Croats, and the

ecall to our minds
tic problem was.
at once a united
wer, her situation
both singularly
tisfactory. That
ch looks on the
ot projecting into
has a coast-line
opportunity for
other hand, the
north and north-
eless for defense,
drawn so as to in-

ed only with the
ern waves wash
for five hundred
enice to the Med-
point of view of
e, no sea is more
antage is with the

east: the many islands, often with concealed channels and with an indented shore behind them, protected by an almost impassable mountain range along the coast, not only are beyond all attack, but, with their deep harbors and their hiding-places, make an ideal haven for warships; but the unbroken coast-line on the Italian side, with its shallow waters and almost no ports, affords no naval base. Moreover, the waters of the Italian shores are shallow, while those leading to the Mediterranean by the Straits of Otranto are deep and the currents swift, so that mines in that twenty miles of channel are hardly possible. No wonder that, despite the Allied fleets, Austria controlled the Adriatic throughout the war.

But the Adriatic problem meant more than this. The shores of the Adriatic that were not Italian were largely within the Empire of Austria-Hungary. Before the war, the peninsula of Istria, coming down east of Venice, had to the north the great Austrian port of Trieste and near its southern tip the famous naval base of Pola. Hungary reached the sea just below, at Fiume, the outlet for a hinterland of varied races under different governments. Farther south, Austrian territory extended along the coast, in the narrow strip of Dalmatia, that Adriatic wall along which Serbia was looking for a window. And when one thought of the Adriatic, one could not but think of the provinces of Bosnia and Herzegovina, annexed by Aus-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

tria-Hungary with a cynical contempt for treaties; and one must think also of two other countries on the sea below Dalmatia — Montenegro, that superb anomaly of independence, and Albania, a land that had always lived its own life in the Balkans, but apart from the rest of the world and of Europe till 1913.

With its memories of Italian civilization and culture, where Italian power had long since lost sway; with its medley of races, of religions, and of governments; with the conflicting strategic positions and ambitions of the great powers bordering on its waters; with its cross-currents of commercial rivalries, and with ancient hatreds smouldering under modern injustice, the Adriatic presented a situation which, at any static stage, it might well seem impossible to change without disaster, but which, in the state of flux created by a great war, became a problem whose solution was well worthy of any wisdom.

II

The diplomatic history of the Adriatic in the World War is usually dated from the Pact of London. But I put it farther back. I date it from that night in August, 1914, when the Italian Ambassador at Paris woke the French Minister of Foreign Affairs in his bedroom, and told him that the attacks by Germany on France and on Russia were not a *casus fœderis* within the terms of the Triple Alliance, and that Italy would remain neutral. Then was taken the great decision by Italy, a decision which really put the Adriatic question on the lap of the gods, and which, by permitting the withdrawal of French troops from the Italian frontier, made possible the first victory of the Marne.

Now, the Pact of London has been denounced by almost every recent critic; and, in particular, it nounced by every so-cal term which seems to me one who is very tolera point of view. We have the Pact of London was was a bargain — a ha driven by Italy with the it violated every princip mination and of justice. the critics and despite the charged me at Paris wit being pro-Italian, I thi sider the Pact of Londo nation of its provisions the circumstances surrou tion; and that is how an document should be con

That treaty was signe 1915, between Italy, France, and Russia; a provisions was that Italy the war on the side of th one month thereafter. T repels all criticism on secrecy at the time; for i be expected that public would be made of a futu war.

Of course, no one can treaties in principle, for t secrecy in diplomacy is a the evil was not generally Europe in 1915; we are the great change which h in world-sentiment in thi Covenant of the League o tains a clause for the publ of treaties; any such ide been wholly illusory and ly a few years ago, for th law of almost every co made provision for secre deed, if we go back a cent history, we find the Co United States under Ma secret laws, which for ye off our statute-books.

By the rest of the Pact

Digitized by Google

hould have vari-
ions in the Adri-
l that she should
don of £50,000,-
t sum from the
ar finance. I am
ction of a remark
ge is reported to
o the effect that
itain to give Tur-
,000 in 1914 was
economy known

torial clauses of
ere a bargain be-
llies; but I fail to
harsh bargain.
nt, any question
of the clauses,
eat Britain were
rshly; they were
ing of their own,
f view simply of
ld well afford to
territory of their
were just; it was
s being gored in

l clauses of the
such a direct rela-
negotiations at
ssary to examine
e detail; perhaps
ice has become a
al moment; but
to consider that
or otherwise the
aris negotiations
light.
of an act are to
ate and not from
not only admit,
19 it would have
st, as well as un-
to carry out the
London; but, to
ituation of 1915,
knowledge of sub-
lt as that is to do.

In the spring of 1915, when Italy entered the war, the cause of the Allies was not going well. They were making no progress on the Western Front, and in the East, Russia was about to meet with a severe defeat. No one dreamed of a rout of Germany or of a complete remaking of the map of Europe. A continuance of the former European alignment seemed reasonable to expect, in a modified form, perhaps, but certainly with no overturn of the situation.

Italy had lived her national life of two generations in a continuous and justified state of fear — a sentiment almost unknown to American statesmen, but which has had, and has, a more profound influence on European thought and action than can well be imagined. The door in the Alps was open. Italy visualized a German empire and an Austro-Hungarian empire existing after the war, the former probably, and the latter certainly, deeply hostile to her; and so Italy sought safety, sought to acquire a frontier as impregnable as possible, together with the control of the Adriatic. Most of the questioned territorial gains secured by Italy in the Pact of London in the region we are now considering were of comparatively little material value; their worth was chiefly as a defense against attack.

Furthermore, unless the Empire of Austria-Hungary was to collapse, the future of the Jugo-Slav movement was problematical. In 1915, one might, perhaps, have predicted a greater Serbia, but hardly a union of all the Jugo-Slavs. Certainly, there was no heaven-sent reason why any of those peoples should be governed from Vienna or from Budapest rather than from Rome, if they were not to have their own capital at Belgrade. And while Serbia did not sign the Pact of London, Russia, the self-constituted protector of the Balkan Slavs, was a consenting party.

So, while the terms of the Pact of

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

London were drawn in the spirit of the old and now discredited diplomacy, still Italy, from the standpoint of 1915, was largely justified in signing that treaty, although the same treaty in 1919 would have been unrighteous and unjust.

By the Pact of London, while a part of the coast toward the north of the Adriatic, including specifically Fiume and all the coast of Croatia, was not to be Italian, the whole of the Istrian peninsula was to go to Italy, and in addition an extensive strip of Dalmatia above Spalato, with nearly all the islands off the coast; and when to these was added Valona and its gulf, almost opposite Brindisi and the heel of the Italian boot, the control of the Adriatic was complete; it would have been wholly Italian in all but name.

But by the time the Conference of Paris met, a change had come over the spirit of the political dream of Eastern Europe. The ancient empire, which had been the natural enemy of Italy, had vanished. And here let me say that it is a common criticism, born of common ignorance, to charge the Conference of Paris with the Balkanization of Eastern Europe, that catching phrase. It was no treaty that set up separate governments at Prague, at Budapest and at Vienna, for those separate governments had existed since before the German Armistice. And no Peace Conference could have joined together these fragments of an empire which its peoples had put asunder.

Nor was it any outside influence which brought to a conclusion that national movement which resulted in the union of the three Jugo-Slav peoples — peoples of different religions, indeed, and under different governments, some of whom had been under alien rule for centuries, but who were all of nearly the same blood and of nearly the same speech.

It has recently been m
perhaps some had earli
that not all the Americans
of one mind with their cl
principle of self-determin
appears that there were
pressed and private thou
to the effect that self-det
a rather unsettling doct
not based on sufficiently
precedents; but surely e
is at all familiar with the
Jugo-Slav movement wi
Woodrow Wilson that 'se
tion is not a mere phrase.'

For in place of Serbia w
Greater Serbia, but a new
kingdom of the Serbs, th
the Slovenes; a kingdom i
bia and Montenegro, an
taken in not only Bosni
govina, but also Croatia
and other parts of Austri
kingdom which regarded
Dalmatia and the adjace
perfect, and which had as
only to Istria but even to

And the change that h
not a change in fact and i
but also in law. The Jug
not bound technically or
sense by the Pact of Lon
it as void from their point
claimed that it had been
the so-called 'Pact of Ro
1918, a claim which had i
more of equity than of
curacy. But more impor
cally, was the fact that
States was certainly not b
Pact of London, to which
directly or indirectly asse
the American legal view
Pact of London, so far as
with the Fourteen Point
body at all; for the Fou
had in substance been
Italy as well as by Franc
Britain, even though they

Digitized by Google

ed in the Austro-
e of November 3,
the strictest sense
German Armistice

ondon remained a
the negotiations.
French recognized
of that treaty in
though they were
to deny that an
ey had signed was
o that, with some
, they recognized
ny their support to
on that treaty.
ld knows, the Ital-
the Pact of Lon-
claimed Fiume,
lly and by name
laims by that very

background, such
flicting facts and
he Paris negotia-
Jnited States and
driatic took place.
those two powers
ic negotiations at
. The British and
rely willing to ac-
hing that America
o, and the Jugo-
lly committed to
heir offer of arbi-
dent Wilson. In-
lavs were a new
ples, it was said at
some reason, that
tatives, Mr. Ves-
chitch, a Slovene,
, a Croat, would
cept, as easier to
country, an agree-
them rather than
ned their assent.
ism which alleged

that one branch of the newly formed union had been sacrificed for the benefit of the others would not have been easy to meet. The difficulties of their situation were illustrated by a symbolic remark made by one of their delegates in Paris, that he was negotiating with a dagger at his back, held by his own colleagues.

If I have succeeded in my attempted outline of the geography of the Adriatic, it will be seen that there were four regions there where the Italian and Jugo-Slav views and aspirations clashed: Istria, the islands belonging partly to Istria and partly to Dalmatia, the Dalmatian mainland, and Fiume. Doubtless, if the question were asked of anyone which of these four was the cause of the final difficulty between President Wilson and the Italians, the answer would be Fiume; but that answer would be wrong. It was not Fiume that proved the finally impossible point, but another region, very closely related to that of Fiume, it is true, but still distinct: it was a little strip of territory running along the Gulf of Fiume and then down the Istrian coast, with a hinterland of small importance — a strip which a New York journalist at Paris wittily called the 'Riverside Drive of Istria'; a strip which the Italians valued highly, but only because it would bring Italian territory up to Fiume itself.

During President Wilson's first visit to Europe, little progress was made toward any settlement of the Adriatic question. Signor Orlando, the Italian Prime Minister, had, indeed, during that time, most actively and heartily worked with President Wilson in the drafting of the Covenant of the League of Nations, and the relations between the two chiefs of state were most cordial. But the Adriatic was not directly related to a peace with Germany, with which all the delegations were then more particularly occupied.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

It was not until President Wilson came to Paris for the second time that the whole matter was taken up directly between him and Signor Orlando, in great detail. The Italians naturally wanted settled a question which was of more direct interest to them than the terms of the peace with Germany, even including reparations.

In the negotiations, President Wilson rested almost wholly, I think I may say wholly, on the opinions of his territorial advisers on all details of the various proposals. He was, indeed, willing to accept any agreement freely entered into between Italy and the Jugo-Slavs; but no such agreement was possible, perhaps for the reasons I have indicated, perhaps, partly, because of the very natural hostility then existing between the two countries. The Serbs had, of course, fought valiantly and devotedly on the side of the Allies; but the Croats and the Slovenes had been subjects of Austria-Hungary, and while many of them had in fact supported the Allied cause, still the Italians did not then feel very kindly toward peoples, some of whom had, a few short months before, fought against Italian troops on the Piave.

The American point of view, as I have said, necessarily was that the subject must be considered wholly independently of the Pact of London; and the opinion of Professor Douglas Johnson, the eminent geographer of Columbia University and the American territorial adviser, in this matter supported the Italian claims as to Fiume not at all, practically not at all as to the Dalmatian mainland, to a very limited extent as to the islands, and in Istria up to, but only up to, the line drawn by Professor Johnson, which became known as the Wilson line.

It is difficult to describe verbally the Wilson line, in which, indeed, important changes were made from time to time after it was originally lai left in Jugo-Slav territo siderable part of easte specifically, and more i haps, it was intentionall to leave wholly in Jugo the railroad running nor to Vienna. From the I view, one great objecti bound up with the mat for the Wilson line, in e Fiume physically separ from Italy.

The views of the Amer adviser were that the pos him really involved very sions to Italy: that the W drawn so as to leave se thousand Slavs in Italy only 75,000 Italians on th the frontier; that Dalm exception of Zara, a city ple, was almost wholly S the Dalmatian and Istria likewise mostly Slav; an Fiume, while possibly its population, was the nomic outlet to the sea terland, much of which Jugo-Slavia and the rest gary and other region north.

IV

This leads me to say so tle more in detail of Fium for its size has certainly its share of the headline pages during the last two

Fiume owes its comm ance to its location at break in the mountain- down the eastern coast o Nowhere else along that Fiume can railroads eas sea. While it has not a harbor, its facilities had veloped by Hungary, an ble of further improveme

Digitized by Google

the same terri-
commercial rival
he trade of Hun-
cal and natural
its surrounding
ring hinterland
f the suburb of
rt, is included as
t in law a part of
while the largest
not a majority of

he Italian claim
President Wilson
principle of self-
ne Italian argu-
l basis. So that,
emands included
result of nego-
dent Wilson and
tives was impos-
romise proposals'
one side or the
y. And in fact
een Orlando and
March and April
ccessful, for they
Wilson's public
, which not only
but caused the
l of the Italian

d President Wil-
his position in a
er discussion are
It seems that he
eve erroneously,
t was about to be
delegation. Cer-
ng of the day be-
resident Wilson's
acchi di Cellere,
r at Washington,
, had no idea of
then handed me
the latest Italian
f items; and the
ilson's statement
ld me that Signor

Orlando had not succeeded in his attempt to see President Wilson that day, owing to the latter's other engagements; and that Mr. Lloyd George had sent word to the Italian delegation that three of the four items of the Italian proposal were acceptable, and had asked for information as to the fourth, which concerned Fiume.

But whatever were the reasons for President Wilson's action, certainly some of its effects were unfortunate. It stirred up much feeling about the whole matter, particularly in Italy, and tended to take the question out of the realm of discussion and argument and into the sphere of the emotions, an unsatisfactory background for any international exchanges.

Still, the negotiations were only interrupted; their first chapter was closed, but they were resumed, on the initiative of Colonel House, when Orlando and Sonnino came back to Paris. And I feel free to speak in some detail of those later negotiations of May, 1919, for their story has been largely published in Italy in the *Memoirs* of Count Macchi di Cellere.

Colonel House's aim was to arrive at a solution which would be satisfactory to the Italians, and which, at the same time, would not be an abandonment of the principles laid down by President Wilson. Certainly, this was a consummation devoutly to be wished, but one that seemed almost impossible on its face. However, Colonel House not only tried it, but demonstrated that it was not impossible; and while the desired goal was not reached, the failure was no fault of his.

After talking with Orlando and President Wilson, Colonel House evolved and had accepted this plan for discussions, which, indeed, was itself a proof of his extraordinary influence, both with his chief, President Wilson, and with his friend, Signor Orlando:

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

conversations were to take place between Orlando and myself, with the view of reaching an accord between us, either temporary or final; anything that we agreed on would be supported by Colonel House, and would be carefully considered by President Wilson on Colonel House's recommendation; in other words, whatever Orlando agreed to with me would bind Italy, but not America.

My path in the matter, so far as personal relations were concerned, was made easier by my close friendship with Count Macchi di Cellere, whose death, a few months later, was a real loss to his own country and a sad blow to his many friends here. And while Signor Orlando kept the negotiations strictly in his own hands, the Count di Cellere was frequently, and Baron Sonnino occasionally, present at our talks.

These rather extraordinary conversations with Signor Orlando, which took place at the hotel of the Italian delegates, and which were necessarily carried on in French, were always entirely amicable and cordial; indeed, Signor Orlando's attractive personality, combined with his juristic attitude of mind, precluded any other course of discussion.

I often recall a few words of Signor Orlando which seemed to me to speak in part his thoughts on the meetings of the Council of Four. I was talking one evening with him and Marshal Joffre, who said to Orlando, in French, 'Do you know any English?' To which Orlando replied that he knew very little — 'Nothing,' he added, 'except these words, "eleven o'clock, I don't agree, good-bye."'

Now, there is one sort of solution almost always possible in a diplomatic discussion, and that is a *modus vivendi*, an agreement to postpone final decision and to arrange a status for the intervening time. In view of the divergence of thought betwee
Wilson and the Italians, this
way out of the difficulty, an
cussed in various forms.
were obvious objections t
postponement, and the te
intermediate status, the c
temporary occupation and
rary government, presente
lems without solving old or

The real attitude of the
not one of eagerness for the
of the Pact of London; they
rather as a claim which the
luctantly be forced to pres
said to me that that trea
last line of defense; that, if
were possible, if no delay we
he would be compelled to f
on the Pact of London, — f
have nothing else, — altho
not like it and did not belie
accordance with the princip
dent Wilson.

So the talks with Sign
soon turned toward the pos
definitive agreement, and
a formula, the most import
which was that Fiume shou
dependent city and free por
protection of the League
This suggestion was not wh
but it was the first time, I th
had been definitely made in
in the negotiations. It di
the views of the American
advisers, who would have p
give Fiume to the Jugo-Slav
the same time rejected the
mand, which would have m
Italian, or, at least, have p
Italian protection.

My own belief at Paris
despite the episode of d'A
have never seen any reason
it — that a fair vote by secr
the inhabitants of Fiume w
shown a very large majority
a free city and against eithe

Digitized by Google

people usually
ir own ideas of
Fiume, which is
through traffic
more prosperous
der its own con-
that of Italy or
particularly in
and other traffic,
do not intimate
a fact, is conclu-
entitled to some

t President Wil-
solution as to
esitated. But in
members of the
not at all of one
After all, Fiume
of Italian senti-
eality of Italian
ere not lacking
thought that,
Italy would be
ich might well
real substance.
lded and agreed
he solution as to
moment that per-
d again achieved
le, and that the
to be solved.
Dalmatia, the
and Istria. The
tively little diffi-
much discussion.
only one or two
and Baron Son-
is usually pic-
as not inflexible

ten been painted
reactionary, and
n he that the in-
wn. He said to
If we come to an
add a clause to
Sonnino should
that might help

to get the agreement accepted'; and 'after all,' he added, 'I am an old man, and have been in office as Foreign Minister since the war began.'

Reactionary or no, Baron Sonnino had all the charm of the old school, and his manner made me recall the remark of Lord Rosebery, who said that, while he agreed with the Liberals, he preferred to dine with the Conservatives.

V

All that was left was the location of the Wilson line in Istria; the Italians wanted it moved east at its southern end, over toward Fiume, so as to leave in Italy all of Istria, with a boundary-line touching Fiume itself; but here President Wilson, still resting on the recommendations of his territorial advisers, refused to yield; and the Italians were equally firm, considering that they had already given up too much, or at least enough, of their claims, and that the physical junction with Fiume was indispensable from their standpoint.

Indeed, national aspirations are so bound up with national sentiment and tradition, that it is not a matter of pure fancy to recall that the Italian claim of 1919 had been phrased six centuries before the Conference of Paris, by Dante, in one of the most famous lines of the Inferno, where he spoke of the sea east of Istria as 'the Quarnero, whose waters are the confines of Italy and bathe her farthest frontiers.'

So on this point of Istria, a comparatively minor one, if the situation is looked at as a whole, the negotiations broke down and failed to result.

Whose duty was it to yield? The answer depends on the point of view. The American territorial advisers, rightly considering the Pact of London a nullity as to the United States, considered, not only that Italy had received great concessions, but that she had

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

really yielded nothing at all. Their opinion was that, as Italy had been given the strongest possible frontier in the north, a grant which included as Italian even the southern part of the Austrian Tyrol, and as the remaining land-frontier had been drawn east of the ethnic line, Italy had received all her just claims; and they considered, too, that Italy would be safe as to the Adriatic, an opinion shared by the American naval experts.

The other argument was that, assuming the correctness of the views of the American territorial advisers, the importance of reaching a solution outweighed the importance of the change in the line in Istria; that the difference between the two proposals was not great enough to be a difference in principle, but only in degree; that the advantages of a present solution so nearly correct in theory, a solution in which Italy had yielded her claim to Fiume, — a claim which, whether defensible or not, had aroused passions and feelings of a grave character, — should not be dismissed in favor of the mere possibility of a slightly different solution later on; and that a continuance of such a difference between two neighboring countries involved grave risks of war; or if not the risk of war, that it involved at least the possibility of the application of the provisions of the Pact of London — a treaty which everyone, Italy included, wished to discard.

I am frank to say that the latter was my own view; I thought that President Wilson should have yielded for the sake of the greater good of a final settlement as against the lesser good of the assumed correctness of the Wilson line.

Whether I am right or not, certainly the failure of the settlement brought about a year and a half of uncertainty, and made possible the mimic war of d'Annunzio; and the final result, as we shall see, was more favora
regard to Istria and the W
the solution proposed in
tions that I had with Orl

Whether one agrees or
stand of President Wilso
but admire its courage
gard of political results;
stands for what he thin
when his course is bound
is almost as rare nowaday
auk. Those political re
as surely as the night the
position to President Wils
his stand on the Adriatic
from their flotation of
which that stand had
large dividends in ballots

After President Wilson
Washington, discussions
Paris and by exchanges
various governments. T
portant feature was the
Italy, made in Decemb
Great Britain, France, a
States jointly, in which
son, under the advice of
of the American Geograp
made substantial concess
earlier views. But this pr
accepted, and it was follo
cord of January, 1920, be
Great Britain, and Ital
leadership of Signor Nit
which President Wilson
cept, but which, so far a
Jugo-Slav relations with
substance incorporated i
agreement of the Treaty

I omit any discussion
tion of Fiume by d'An
amazing madness which
months the trade of a co
and brought about incr
among the various partisa
but which convinced no
not convinced before, an
cial attitudes of the go
Italy and of the Jugo-Sla

Digitized by Google

han allude to the
– an important
uestion, but one
at Paris.
ition of Albania,
ctorate, or even
of the port of
ally abandoned.
August 2, 1920,
two headlands
sland of Saseno,
es the indepen-
in the frontiers
to the separate
at an end: she
ntly stable gov-
nd has, indeed,
the League of

ent of the Adri-
Italy and the
lated to the in-
otiations. That
ast autumn, and
the American
2, which obvi-
hand and which
o the Jugo-Slavs
riptures: 'Agree
quickly, whiles
th him.'
ter our election,
November 12, at
ter resort near
en Italy and the
the Croats, and
ettled their dif-
atic, and settled
vernment, not as

the Italian extremists, wanted them settled.

It is interesting to compare the terms of the Treaty of Rapallo with those proposed at Paris. Italy gets four island groups in the Adriatic, of considerable strategic but little other importance; and in Dalmatia a little territory at Zara. Fiume, with a small strip running along the gulf, becomes independent. Thus far, we might be in Paris instead of at Rapallo. But the Wilson line in Istria becomes a thing of dreams. Not only do the Italians get a frontier touching that of Fiume; not only do they get all of Istria; but the line near Laibach goes even east of the line of the Pact of London, making a strategic frontier even more strategic than before.

I called the Adriatic negotiations at Paris a failure. Perhaps I was too harsh: although they did not reach any final result, they demonstrated the obsolescence of the Pact of London, they paved the way for an agreement to be reached between the parties, and they showed the moral fibre of a man who wanted to be right, even while he was President.

I try never to think of what might have been at Paris, for nothing is more vain than to recast a mythical present from an imaginary past. One must be a philosopher and think of Sainte-Beuve's striking phrase in his introduction to the *Memoirs of Saint Simon:* 'On ne refait point l'histoire par hypothèse.' (History cannot be made over by supposing.)

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

PERIOD FURNITURE

In our town, as in others like it, the recent years have proved epochal. First there was the War, and after that the H. C. L., and after that the Coal Boom, and after that the Interior Decorator. On every hand new houses are going up and old ones either coming down or undergoing a transforming process of rejuvenation.

Contractors and builders are bustling busily, and our afternoon bridge clubs flow gently along, — like the tide of Sweet Afton, — to a murmuring stream of period furniture, oriental rugs, glassed-in porches, grass-cloth hangings, refectory tables, and breakfast alcoves.

One morning I received a call from an interior decorator. He was a pleasant little gentleman with a portfolio under his arm, and he greeted me with so obvious an assurance of being expected that I asked him to come in.

'I have called,' said he, 'about the period furniture for the library and dining-room, and I have here' — indicating the portfolio — 'the photographs of the special "pieces" which our Mr. Astrachan has selected for those rooms. The designs are extremely chaste, as you will see, and entirely correct in line and detail. If you are at leisure — '

And then it developed that he was a pleasant little gentleman who had made a mistake.

He had been assigned by Messrs. Astrachan & Kolinsky, Interior Decorators, of Fifth Avenue, to take charge of the furnishings and fittings of an extensively remodeled mansion farther up the street, whose owner bore the same name as my own. The homes in this section of the town are not nun quiries at the hotel had arrival at my door.

Followed explanation ogies, and a bowing exit

Our interview had tak hall, from which, throu doorways, were widely tents of the library, th and the dining-room; a brief colloquy the pleasa man's glance — heavily tortoise-shell — had emb sweeping observation of varied appurtenances o ments.

Incredulity, shocked look akin to horror, foll survey of the dining-roo idly in procession acr countenance; and as he away, it was with the fe tistically condemned th door.

In the hall I stood s about me.

'Period furniture!' S ing-place in all the town w ly period-furnitured a dining-room, now, — th whose time-honored plen ceived that devastating li from Mr. Astrachan's uty, — were not that ma convoluted oak, and th panying chairs, 'Jaco were — great-uncle Jaco ly inherited by my husb mantling of his bachelor fashioned domicile. The china-closet — also inhe from the same source — emblems of an obsolete

Digitized by Google

table and chairs, had once belonged to Great-uncle Jacob. Blatantly this article of vertu hits the eye. Frankly hideous it is, indeed — exteriorly; but within — ah, it is within that one must seek its adequate excuse for being; for behind its glossy red panels are smooth, wide shelves of fragrant cedar, where moth-inviting peltry may be safely stored. A separate compartment is divided into broad dust-proof spaces — spaces fortuitously ideal for shoes, admirable for hats. Beneath are four brass-handled drawers, deep and generous, wherein repose my most cherished linens and where, in un-cramped ease, my treasured centre-pieces lie extended, their broidered surfaces untroubled by a fold.

At one side an unexpected door, fitted with a lock and key, conceals a small receptacle quite perfectly adapted to the particular use to which I am confident it was put by bachelor Great-uncle Jacob. At any rate, as the little door swings back, a faint bouquet, subtle, alluring, salutes my nostrils, and I find myself thinking oddly of — of lemon-peel and Araby the Blest, and tinkling, delicate glasses.

There is, indeed, a legend extant, to the effect that, in the reign of Great-grandfather Archibald I, there existed certain possessions of rare old mahogany. Whispers have reached me of a glass-knobbed 'low-boy,' of Chippendale chairs, of adorable top-tipping card-tables with pie-crust edges; there is even a tradition of a wondrous Sheraton sideboard. But, alas, these gems of antiquity were all reduced to ashes by a destructive fire, which necessitated the immediate erection of a new house furnished throughout in 'modern' style.

Perhaps, after all, it is just as well. As a family we should probably have quarreled violently over the distribution of those gracious relics. For what domestic disintegrations might not that

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Sheraton sideboard have been responsible? — besides occasioning the sin of covetousness in the souls of our friends and acquaintances.

As it is, we accepted our just apportionment of our ancestors' 'delusions of grandeur' in a spirit of resigned calm and the harmony of mutual commiseration.

But what is one to do — such a one as I, that is, to whom has descended, in the fullness of time, a proportionate share of the Lares and Penates of two dismantled homesteads, as well as a sprinkling of bestowals from several on the side-lines?

Sell them? Give them away? Cast them to the flames? Never! Forbid such sacrilege! Besides, — I confess it unashamed, — I *don't want to.* I *like* these things. I am 'attached' to them. The 'Elizabethan' roll-top desk in the library where, in years agone, Aunt Elizabeth kept her circumspect accounts and copied her recipes; the cherry sarcophagus, where Great-uncle Jacob housed his wardrobe and assembled the ingredients of the mellow consolation that warmed his lonely heart, are companions tried and true. Chosen with anxious care and conscientious economy in the placid 'boomless' past, endeared by long usage and hallowed by memory, these 'Period' furnishings are now beloved members of the family; and so I am determined they shall remain, even though my gardener's spade should strike oil in the backyard, or my facetious Airedale unearth a coal-mine under the front steps. Nevertheless, my inherited honesty, chaste in design and correct in line and detail, forces me to admit that, at times, the rummage-sale has been a help.

TERESINA

Teresina has gone to school. I watched her round black hat, snug blue sweater, scarlet dress, white legs and brown feet, twinkling aw
in the frosty morning
corted by an older blac
sweatered edition of scho
patronizing and sweet
friendly protector.

Teresina will come r
noon, full of wisdom: Fre
ly attempted, crayoned
'writings' of incalculabl

And I shall be so glad
— to have her back aga
and wash her and feed h
her complex tales of th
cried and the light-ha
pushed her head off his
leaned harmlessly upon
who whispered and had
sit on the stairs, and the
in the window. Teresin
five years of gladness; f
and crinkly in body and
and sweet, amazingly g
ingly naughty. Truly,
school has been my ad
more than hers, such ad
of the privileges of pare

But to-day, after two
my own private adventu
day, for the first time in
ling demanding years, I
the house — and the clo
ten! For Jennie, the be
of our domestic past, ha
mand another kitchen,
loving another baby just
Blue Children, as she
loved our Teresina.

Even though her de
baking and brewing an
me, and many moment
lost comfortings and cos
all alone in the house!

This morning my ne
danced perilously from
steel wool scratched wit
pans and kettles; the kit
lick and a promise of fu
I sprinkled a basket of

Digitized by Google

d them hard and
I made beds and
l two chairs (no
all the time I was
ılly, breathlessly,
htiest tippy-toes,
ng person with a
wonderful party

e most necessary
, I would have to
two fat morning
contented time
and I sit happily
our heads nod-
nd a strange need
ock strikes nine;
, brisk, notable

ole calls for drinks
rackers, dress-up
, mud-pie spoons;
between tearful
arties,' and deal
ofs. And from the
comic problems;
nts that the pota-
e ice-man did n't
ing to be missed
-day in the first
ny friendly coax-
'I'm almost dead
' tea; and if you'll
chen with me, I'll
mon toast.'
half an hour has
rite this, for sheer
strange and fresh
ght shall I ask
the telephone for
ours? Or shall
ay, that in some
thick black mark
r name and num-
book in town, so
nd foes shall turn
nous approach to
's queer. That's
ll go unscathed.

For if people only knew how wonderful it is to be free, surely they would not need me for just two hours!

It would seem easy to say to the people whom I love much and those whom I love even a little, — those who would understand and those who would not, — 'I am going to keep two hours of five days in the week quite free. I — am — going — to — try — to — write.'

But I can't say it. The fatal word up there printed itself slowly, shyly, as if I said, 'I'm going to get very drunk,' or, 'I'm going to smuggle diamonds,' or, 'I'm going off with Mrs. Smith's husband.'

It is very strange. Ever since my little-girlhood, 'writing' has been my most intimate and easy escape from the persistences of life. And lately, when I have been so happy that often the wings of my joy seem ready to burst some inward fetter and flash out living and shining, 'writing' has been my only way of setting free a thousandth part of that pulsing joy. The public worth of what I write is of no such matter as the doing of it. It is not needful that a private art should make repayment in cash or fame, for its possessor to love it and to require its practice.

But it is strange, as I said, that with all these years of certainty about my desire to 'write,' I have never felt that anybody else, or many other bodies, would truly understand the place it holds in my life. I could say, 'I must clean house,' or 'I must go to a committee meeting'; but to say, save to those very few who know me better than I know myself, 'I must write,' has seemed foolish and vain.

It is as if my assumption of needing time to write would strike my hearers as an ill-judged remark of my older brother's struck us long ago. He, scribbling at some great work destined for a St. Nicholas contest, put us younger roisterers into a mood of derisiveness

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

with his reproof. 'Hush, children! Don't make such a row! I'm writing for the Press!'

Will not my announcement of a literary retreat bring me under the same condemnation? Will people not, even while they applaud my worthy purpose, wonder a little: 'But will she leave all her housework till afternoon? Will her family get enough to eat? Will she give up the committees and things she used to belong to? Can't we ever call her up between ten and twelve?' And, worst of all, stealthily, won't they say, 'I do wonder if the kind of thing she writes is worth all that fuss'?

No, I really think they would not say any of those things. Most of them would understand, if I dared to pursue my course of innocent folly.

But the fact remains that only to the Contributors' Club can I speak with perfect frankness. For I know that there must be hundreds of *Atlantic*-reading women who feel as I do about some pet art or handicraft; who steal time for it, sneakingly, apologetically; who will not love their fathers and husbands and children and neighbors any the less for a restrained practice of it.

They will understand without ever needing to measure up any personal knowledge of me against any possible failure or achievement.

They will know how I feel this October morning, when Teresina has gone dancing to school, and the house sits quiet by its sunny meadow, and the autumn crickets purr in the yellow garden.

They will know why I shall not cut off my telephone or turn the key in my door, and yet, why I must needs run so precipitately to my desk, sweep aside bills and letters, and scratch off all this folly of confession.

It is half-past eleven: three quarters of an hour more before the white legs and brown feet trot up the brick walk, and the curly head rubs against my chin in greeting. Perhaps there is even time to copy some of this on the typewriter.

What do I care whether the *Atlantic* will accept this or not? Have I not had an hour and a half of perfect, undisturbed, secret, old-fashioned scribbling?

And when X reads it to-night, I thank the Lord that he will only chuckle, and will announce in no uncertain voice, —

'I'll attend to that telephone business to-morrow morning, first thing.'

I shall not let him do it, of course. But, just the same, thank the Lord!

ON TYPEWRITERS

Of course, they are merely a sign of the times, but anyone who has sat in an office with eighteen or twenty of them rattling like a brook in full spate within the compass of four too-narrow walls, retains a searing of the mind. One of many captains lays down one of many cigarettes, calls one of many stenographers, and begins: 'Take this.' Then, in a wasting monotone, the soulless voice of a Frankenstein, varied only by an occasional, 'No — scratch that out,' he drones a letter to his tailor, an advice to the General Staff, or a description of the cotton plains of Turkestan. The form of the sentences varies as little as the captain's voice. They are short. They begin with the substantive, followed by a verb, which is in turn followed by an adjective or another noun, and at the end, as a kind of miserable rear-guard, is suspended the phrase — 'there being' such and such a thing, or such and such a condition. It was my fortune to read a great many army reports during a year in the War Department, and I speak from experience when I say that the 'there-being' construction is one passionately admired by the military man. At last the drone dies away in a discussion of the latest regu-

Digitized by Google

orm of signature,
ddors, the stenog-
lace at her ma-
er-puff from her
ses, 'the skin of
— and pats her
s concluded, the
her contribution

siness world, and
writer is of im-
ou not resent its
d of friends and
It is part of the
'thru' and 'yours
it saves so much
ow much loss it
! When I receive
iend, it makes me
that I am on his
s mind. Also it
of their grammar
delightful young
nce, with an Ox-
eal knowledge of
at he was 'much
culty of getting a
to Japan.
u come to the end
there is room to
ssible,' or the *t* of
beggars stick, so
l go as it is, or al-
e off on the next
oes danced away
om her feet in the

literature bears
een composed on
sentences some-
tient, sometimes
a train of mule-
ain. Perhaps one
so criticizes were
fashioned means
aintain that very
he reader can say,
ve, the work of a
wrote each sen-

tence as though it were his last.' Could Sir Thomas Browne have captured the mood which sombres the lovely pages of his *Hydriotaphia* while seated before a clacking machine, or the translators of the Bible have touched the wings of Gabriel? Surely they wrote, as Fra Angelico painted, on their knees. Gone are the days of Grub Street, when the author, his feet curled under his chair, a wad of paper thrust under the hind-legs of the table to keep it steady, and before him scribbled sheets and a china ink-pot, sat with his pen between his lips and eyes fixed on the patch of sky behind the garret window. Unless he has been changing the ribbon of his typewriter, the author of to-day no longer has an inky finger. Before anyone catches me up on this generalization, I hasten to make a few exceptions — notably Henry James. Great man as one has always considered him, one's admiration leaps to amazement on realizing that he dictated his books. *Mon Dieu! quel homme!* Surely he must have had some physical method of keeping track of his rhetorical labyrinths, such as walking down a long room dropping pebbles to record the fall of his relative, subjunctive, and parenthetical clauses, and on the return journey picking them up, — thus sure that not one had escaped, — until all were safely gathered in the rare triumph of a full stop.

I have a little collection of French poems of the nineteenth century, after many of which is a reproduction of the original, with its blots, its erasures, its emendations. It is a pleasure to go over the pages and see the poet's hesitations — an encouragement, indeed, that brings the Olympians nearer earth. Who, I ask you, would treasure the first draft of 'La Maison du Berger,' were typing substituted for the delicate flow of De Vigny's pen; and for the impatient dash over some discarded word,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

— a gesture of dismissal, it seems, to the second-rate, — a row of little *x*'s? Such a sacrilege were comparable to reading Keats to the accompaniment of an insecure set of false teeth.

One more protest, and I have done. It is against those apostles of efficiency who, overvaluing that most common commodity, time, bring their typewriters on the train with them, and make the journey hideous by an incessant flow of soul. A parlor-car, to normal people, is a place where they read novels they would not dare read at home, sit vacantly counting the silos on the various farms they pass, plan campaigns for seizing railroad crossings, or, from the appearance of the houses, decide the fitting names for the families that inhabit them. When my brother and sister and I were small, our mother and governess could always be sure of one peaceful quarter of an hour during the journey which we frequently made between Albany and Buffalo. That time came when we approached Syrause; for having been told that there were a great many negroes there, we always pressed our noses against the window to enumerate rapturously all persons of color whom we saw. I still do it, and achieved, a month ago, the fine total of thirty. On the return journey I found, to my anger, that the counter-interest of watching a one-armed man typing took my mind from the main business of the day, so that my score was only seven.

VIGIL

I had a plan that I would keep
Myself awake: I *would not sleep*,
But listen hard till far away
The silver bells upon his sleigh
I heard, and on the neighbors'
The clatter of those tiny hoofs

Then from my nice warm bed I'
Out of my window I would pee
And see him with the bag of to
He yearly brings good girls and

For from my window I can see
The chimney of our library,
Where all our stockings in a rov
Hang till the fire has burned so
That down the chimney, wa
wide,
Old Santa Claus can get inside.

But if a fire there should be
With roaring flames, it seems t
The chimney'd get so piping h
I guess he 'd think he 'd better

I made my prayer, and went to
And Mother tucked me in, and
'Dear, drowsy head
On pillow white,
Sleep sound all night.'
And then I made believe to fal
Right sound asleep: but in the
I heard our old grandfather-clo
Tick-tock tick-tock tick-tock tic
Tick-tock tick-tock tick-tock tic
Tick-tock . . .
Then, all at once, it struck elev
And *I had gone to bed at seven!*

I listened then with all my mig
And far away across the night
I heard his sleigh-bells' tinkling
And guessed that he was coming
But ever fainter grew the soun
Till silence fell the whole world r
Except for old grandfather-cloc
Tick-tock tick-tock tick-tock tick-
He'd come and gone; and I adm
That I was rather glad of it.

Digitized by Google

at Papeete, in the South Seas. **Leonora Pease,** a teacher in the public schools of Chicago, knows whereof she writes.

* * *

Ralph Barton Perry is Professor of Philosophy at Harvard. **A. Edward Newton,** now diverting himself in English auction-rooms, will return to America in time for the publication of his new volume in September. **L. Adams Beck** is an English scholar and traveler, now living in the Canadian West. **Joseph Auslander** is an American poet at present teaching at Harvard.

* * *

Alfred G. Gardiner, distinguished English journalist and essayist, for many years editor of the London *Daily News*, but now living in alert retirement, keeps his study window wide open on politics. **Major-General William H. Carter,** U.S.A., a West Point graduate of 1873, in the course of his service commanded the Hawaiian Department. Retired in 1915, he was recalled to active service in 1917. His article is in a large degree authoritative. **Philip Cabot** is a Boston banker, who has had long and successful experience in the conduct of public utilities. **David Hunter Miller,** a New York lawyer with a detailed knowledge of political and social conditions in Europe, served during the Peace Conference as technical adviser to the American Commission to Negotiate Peace. His article is, of course, a record at first hand.

* * *

Mr. Stewart's entertaining paper has rallied to the *Atlantic* the support of fox-hunters everywhere. An old hand at the sport writes us from Bloomington, Illinois, this interesting epistle.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Charles D. Stewart's very interesting article in the June *Atlantic*, called 'Belling a Fox,' sets down what he calls three facts. From experience in following the trails of foxes in the snow I can confirm the first two facts, but I am compelled to differ from Mr. Stewart regarding the third, which is, 'you cannot approach within gunshot of a fox.'

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Several years ago, in Funk's Grove, McLean County, Illinois, while I was following the tracks of a fox in the snow, footprints indicated that another man had been following the same tracks. I met him later, on another trip. He was a young farm-hand named La Follette, and his boyhood home had been in Virginia. He carried a shotgun and said he was hunting foxes by following their tracks. I asked to be allowed to go with him. We skirted a piece of dense woods and came upon tracks leading into the woods, which he pronounced to be 'long tracks,' and explained that the fox was starting off on a long hunting-trip and it would be useless to follow. The tracks led straightaway through the woods.

Later, in a draw, or low place, we came upon what he called 'short tracks,' leading from the woods into open country. The tracks were zigzag and advantage was taken of bare pieces of ice and grass. La Follette stated that the fox was approaching a place to lie down, and was seeking to conceal its tracks. Within a few minutes we approached a fall-ploughed field, where the ridges were bare of snow, and there was a low hill.

Asking that I remain behind, La Follette cautiously followed the tracks and stopped frequently to examine the ground with an old-fashioned spy-glass. Two red foxes were approached within gunshot as they were apparently asleep on the top of the hill and were not aware of the hunter's presence. They were not seen until they jumped up to run, and both were crippled in two shots.

We followed the more seriously crippled fox for about two miles, but spent three hours in covering this distance. After examining the tracks, La Follette said the fox would lie down if not pursued too closely; and we sat down for over an hour to let it 'get stiff' before the final careful advance was made which resulted in the fox being killed. We then took up the trail of the second fox, but lost it later when the snow melted.

La Follette told me that the fox killed that day was the eighth killed by him that winter, and made a total of about thirty foxes killed by him in the same manner. He always hunted alone and found the foxes by tracking them in the snow.

Very truly yours,
FRANK W. ALDRICH.

* * *

Horrors as might be pale, as usual, before horrors as is.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

A 'Contributor' to the June issue writes an amusing article which opens with these words: 'If "that blessed word Mesopotamia" were in practical use to-day, it would doubtless suffer the horror of becoming Meso or Ma.'

If it were in practical use to-day! Is it not, perhaps, to many thousands of British soldiers and sailors? At any rate one of them, sending a batch of snapshots, writes as follows: 'so now you know what Mespot looks like!'

This sounds quite 'practical,' and moderately descriptive!

Yours truly,
MARY KELLOGG SHERRILL.

Vernon Kellogg's pape
Death have moved many
through the artificial retic
we hedge ourselves in.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

I find it impossible to refra
few words in an attempt to ex
intense interest and satisfacti
in reading 'The Biologist Spea
June *Atlantic*. While I have
myself to be an 'agnostic' —
ing as I dare call herself any
the death of the person dea
others, I have read here and
and there to things that have
particularly taken in conju
startling and impressive drea
one. But the condition of mi
since meeting with this loss
thousand times more agonizi
these half-doubted, agitating
comfortable theories and test
appeared in articles and b
spiritism; and *now*, after read
pressed, authoritative essay, I
— more at peace, — more nea
terrible yet inevitable problem
and so grateful to the author
felt impelled to try to express
and inadequately, my indebte
part of the article that means
than any other begins, 'Sadly
give you no comfort"' — end
'He does not know.' But every
has been interesting and valu
perplexity and sorrow. Ho
flat, stale, and unprofitable li
I have the comfort of rea
Monthly! And this article I
lightening, convincing, and
all else I've read on the subje
With gratitude unspeakabl
Believe me, sincere

* * *

Was ever self-confession
complete than this, since
himself down an ass?

PHILADELPHIA, *June*

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

That vacuous article entit
tutes an Educated Person T
admitted to your columns for
stated that no man can fairly
who lacks the power to use
correctly, impels me to respon

In the first place I am the fo
degree of A.B., with Honors i
also am a Master of Arts, a
and a Doctor of Philosophy,
grees having been granted b
sity. I have taught at Har
Professorial title from teachin
versity. I am a Fellow of the

Digitized by Google

Science, a member
ific societies, mem-
ion only and is con-
rtain ability to put
ation. I am also a
ng which you prob-
ur elucidation I will
n Science of the Phi
eover I enjoy good
re; am fairly con-
nd am able to dif-
e wheat from the
ssociate Editor of a
nding this humor-
ishments I lack the
guage correctly —
vful, I don't give a
n according to the
tor I am tickled to
d theoretical intel-
ucation that gives
s your Contributor
antic. If I admitted
my journal I would
xt annual meeting.
e matter with you?
own self-assumed
only educated per-
o your own little
fail to find in your
e opinion that you
ve the patina only,
your Leigh Hunts,
ambs, your Emer-
ne half-way up to
sh, in so far as fine

i that I have also
thful career some
tific articles as the
of these have ap-
ournals. They are
but they get the

CATED PERSON.

name for the very
desire to toot my
enes.

t the curtain is

s is often over-
ner is taught.

May 15, 1921.

group of boys who
received the fol-

ngale? *A singer.*
n? *An Irish writer.*

d? *The fellow who*

nd *will*. Shall *is*
others.

5. Where is Tyre? Sidon? *Parts of an automobile.*

After receiving such answers, week in, week out, is it any wonder teachers forget all they ever knew? Is it any wonder teachers lose their sense of humor and their hair? Et clamor meus ad te veniat?

COLIN C. CLEMENTS.

* * *

The following elucidation of an unsolved *Atlantic* mystery of some months' standing comes to us from the professor of Romance Philology in Columbia University.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

The alluring chronicle which, under the title of 'A Little Boy's Utopia,' appeared in your number for May, begins as follows: —

'My little nephew was three and a half when he began to talk about "the Stewart Country," and between five and six when he gave us to understand that the subject was forever closed. The *origin* of the name was a mystery *we never fathomed* [italics mine]. Asked why it was called so, he would say, "That is its *name*," with the patience born of answering many foolish questions. He described it as "that far land where I lived when Mulla was a little gayl, too little to be my Mulla"; and professed to be able to visit it at will.'

With the flair of a professional philologist, — who must needs also be something of a psychologist, — I continued, with mind gently alert, my reading of the article, in the hope of discovering the solution of the puzzle that had piqued for years the curiosity and ingenuity of the child's family circle.

Internal evidence soon furnished the clue. About midway of the brief narrative occurs the preparation of the explanation, in the form of quotations from the child's own entertaining testimony; and somewhat farther on in the story is given the complete though unconscious confirmatory evidence of the aunt who tells the tale.

'"When I lived in the Stewart Country" — I can hear the change of tone that marked the familiar opening: it was a kind of half-sad droning. . . . "I sat on the grass and my *Stewart Country lamb* climbed up into the tree and threw the oynges down to me." . . . "My Stewart Country lamb" was the hero of many of those wonderful tales.'

Now for the aunt's corroborative contribution: —

'One day a relic of some past era of domestic art was unearthed from the store-room — a huge pincushion of white canton flannel in the shape of an animal. But what animal? The question was being discussed in the language of the old primers. "Is-it-a-cat? No-it-is-a-goat." Someone was trying to lift it by an imaginary tail, to see if it was a guinea pig. The little boy sat gazing at the object in a kind of trance.

'All at once his arms opened wide. "My Stewart Country lamb!"'

Is the demonstration sufficiently convincing?

'One day a relic of some past era of domestic

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

art was unearthed *from the store-room*. . . . "My Store-Room Country Lamb!"' (My Stowoom Tountwy lamb.)

Observe that the child could not pronounce the letter *r* (witness 'gayl' and 'oynge') either in 'store-room' or in 'Country' — which is precisely why the chronicler, unconsciously true to a well-recognized principle in the science of palæography, has inserted an imagined *r* in the imaginary word 'Stewart,' on the erroneous supposition that in view of the child's lisp in the word 'tountwy' there ought to be an *r* in 'Stewart.' As for the final *t* in 'Stewart,' it is simply the initial *t* of the child's pronunciation of 'tountwy.' — The study, by the way, of childish mutilations or modifications of speech, and the possibility of their perpetuation in the vocabulary of adults, such as the childish reduplication of Old French *ante* (English *aunt*), *ante-ante*, modern French *tante*, is lately coming into its own.

But to return to the 'Stewart Country.' This mysterious, fascinating *Store-room Country* of Aladdin's lamps and Seven-League boots and all the untold wealth of quaint and curious discarded treasures, was what my own children used to call the *Story-Room*. The one-time children are now, alas, all flown from the parental roof-tree, but in the far-flung ends of the earth to which the *Atlantic* penetrates, they will doubtless all be proud to find themselves here immortalized in its classic columns. HENRY ALFRED TODD.

* * *

Poetry is eternal, and — who knows? — the poet may be, too.

OAKLAND, CALIFORNIA, *May* 14, 1921.

GENTLEMEN, —

I am herewith sending you a poem of mine for your magazine. Should you deem my poem worthy of publication, I should appreciate your sending some remuneration to me, in order that I might buy some more paper and ink for the purpose of sending you some more of my literary efforts. Yours truly,

J—— E——.

* * *

Gradually the *Atlantic* is finding its niche.

HOPEWELL, VIRGINIA, *June* 10, 1921.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

I am Employment Manager for a company that is hiring in fifty girls a week, and I have several times made trips through the State to get a line on girl-power.

I arrived the other night in a town about eleven o'clock at night, and found three hotels absolutely filled up. I had my *Atlantic* under my arm, as I had been reading it on the train. As I stood at the counter, wondering what to do, — as there was no Y. W. in the town, — the clerk asked me to come to one side as he wanted to speak with me. When I went over to him, he said, 'Are you with the "Y"?' I said, 'No.' He said, 'Well, I saw you with that magazine and I know you must be all right, so I wanted to let you know that I have a room here that the Travelers' Aid takes by the month, and she is away for four days, so I'm going to let you have it.'

The same thing happened
town; for drummers seem to
ing business these days and th
When I found I could n't ge
phoned to a dormitory run b
for their employees. It was
a dormitory. When I arrive
at night, the watchman let n
worker of the dormitory poli
told me how to find my quar
to go, she saw I had in my ha
she said, 'We don't usually t
way at this time of the night
your voice over the telephon
lady, and now I see you wit
know you are a person we w
with us.'

And this is Virginia, and n

Hereafter, I shall always ca
der my arm in my travels.

MARY L.
Woman Employ

* * *

Here is a letter which
mirably a recent *Atlantic*

AKRON, OH

GENTLEMEN, —

To your illuminating articl
foreign-born in America, per
ter which to me evidences th
the sender to be identified wit
try. Wladyslaw F. Meszkow
of Uncle Sam, writes: —

'Dear Mr. Captain C. South

Have receiving your tip (
sary) card and glad to retur
thanks now captain I am I g
fine and working hard to kee
most tell you captain when I g
to school for a while and afte
court school which does help
working a little job in mashi
be great successful some day.
gle yet and wont decided to
can eorining something or re
tion. . . . 'Yours

'This is my new address.
ing in working sociation. M
just as same.'

I am sure that many other
the late war could tell of ma
pride our foreign-born ex-sold
of them, have in their certi
discharge. Not that *all* of th
fight, — and after all, who
served, they feel that they are
or 'Hunkies.' Surely all wh
try to see that they are not
us join Walter Frank in the
'great successful some day,' a
let us help some other Walte
new self-respect and pride.

Very truly yo
CONSTA

Digitized by Google

tions of a publisher's
led to live a definite
— to proceed, as the
On a hot day in June,
in cooling comfort in
ks,' with their inevi-
evenings and the first
it is in June — on a
one far more clearly
words for midsummer

A Magnificent Farce
a Book-Collector, by
relation between this
previous volume, *The*
, will suggest itself to
put the final touches
fore leaving Philadel-
n in France and Eng-
Atlantic office are see-
ess, and hope to have
large audience he has
return in September.
nd therefore intensely
ewton's *Amenities* ex-
ss. The same quality
rce, for it is from the
mself has brought to-
ons that have sprung
haps most notably of
collection of illustra-
ossession, that he has
ure for his new book.
record of friendships;
the friend of chosen
at have gone than of
own who stray engag-
rren Hastings, the cen-
icent Farce,' William
d Christopher Morley
Mr. Newton's host of
gle without any more
ious than Addison de-
Westminster Abbey
all those whose dust

ay Chapman's books,
Lloyd Garrison, has
l years. A new edition
early autumn publica-
hly Press. This will be
ginal edition by means
of a new introduction, written in this year of 1921, and relating the significance of Garrison's life and work to the present time. When the book first appeared, it was customary for American writers to speak of 'the war' with only one meaning, which instantly carried the reader's mind more than half a century back into American history. The last few years have changed all that; but they have not changed the meaning of a spirit like Garrison's, and Mr. Chapman's burning portrait of one of the great apostles of human freedom is as timely to-day, when material and spiritual realities have resumed their ancient warfare, as it ever was or ever can be.

In addition to its new introduction, the book will be equipped, in the revised edition, with a full chronology of the circumstances of Garrison's life, with a resulting gain of practical usefulness for purposes of study. The body of the book, with its ardent spiritual message, is unchanged.

* * *

It is our own belief that not only the boys who have read *The Mutineers*, — and there are many of them, — but also a considerable number of fathers and older brothers — for many of these, besides, have been reading this tale of the sea — will rejoice to hear that **Mr. Charles Boardman Hawes** has written another story of the same general character. It is called *The Great Quest*, and has been making its serial appearance, like its predecessor, in *The Open Road*, with which Mr. Hawes himself is associated. Of course, he never went to sea on a Yankee vessel in the first or the fourth decade of the last century; but he has done the next best thing for a man with the story-teller's gift: he has made a hobby of the study of old log-books and maritime narratives of many sorts, so that the nautical atmosphere in which his books move and have their being is authentic to quite a rare degree. One amusing evidence of this is that, when the meticulous proof-reader questions an unfamiliar word in Mr. Hawes's manuscript, he can not only retort with a confident *Stet* in the margin of the proof, but also fortify his position by chapter-and verse reference to the source of his strange term of the sea.

But no amount of authenticity could make a dull yarn readable. Mr. Hawes's new story, *The Great Quest*, which deals with mad adventures on the West Coast of Africa, is anything but a dull yarn. In fact, we believe it marks a distinct advance in Mr. Hawes's capacity as a story-teller.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

How that capacity has impressed an adult reader of his first book may be seen in a letter written by Professor Dallas Lore Sharp, of Boston University, after making the acquaintance of *The Mutineers* several months ago: 'I have read Mr. Hawes's *Mutineers* till the finger of scorn was pointed at me! "A man grown," they cried, "reading a boys' book and keeping it from the children!" But I got started *first*. What could I do? It is real boys' stuff, and a right good story. I am glad such themes have not been lost yet to boys and men!'

Mr. Hawes, by the way, is one of the younger graduates of Bowdoin College. His wife, a true helpmeet in all his work, is a daughter of Mr. George W. Cable.

* * *

The name of **Miss Nancy Byrd Turner**, a Virginian writer who for several years has been editor of the 'Children's Page' in the *Youth's Companion*, has long been familiar to those who care for the better sort of American verse, whether for younger or older readers. Her poems — the word is used advisedly — have appeared in many magazines, but never, up to the present time, in a book of her own. Such a book will be issued in September by the Atlantic Monthly Press, under the title, *Zodiac Town*.

It is a book that children may be counted upon to like, both for its verses and for the prose that binds them together. The children need not be told, but their elders may be interested to know that, when the verses which form a large part of this volume first came to the Atlantic office, they came, with many more, as detached bits of rhyme bearing no obvious relation to one another. Their charm and cleverness led to a suggestion to Miss Turner that, if she could devise some way to weld a portion of them into a coherent whole, a book might be the result. This she achieved through the invention of the story-scheme of *Zodiac Town* and the production of the new verses and the prose which constitute the frame-work of the narrative. It was a piece of literary craftsmanship so deftly wrought that we cannot help believing this knowledge of it will enhance the interest of the book for all who care for feats of literary skill. If we did not believe it to be an uncommonly successful feat, of course we should say nothing about it.

The pictures in *Zodiac Town* must have a word of their own. They are the first American work of a young English artist, Miss Winifred Bromhall, who came to Boston from London less than a year ago, and is now curator of the Children's Art Centre at the South End Music School in Boston. If ever author and illustrator were qualified by experience and sympathy to appeal directly to the young, Miss Turner and Miss Bromhall possess these qualifications.

The Seven Ages of Man, by **Ralph Bergengren**, scheduled for September publication, will be the fourth book by this author to appear on the list of the Atlantic Monthly Press. The list is still young, and no other author is represented upon it by so many titles. His *Jane, Joseph, and John*, an illustrated book of verses for children, and his little volume of essays, *The Comforts of Home*, appeared in 1918. These were followed, in 1919, by a second volume of brief essays, *The Perfect Gentleman*. The new book is a collection of characteristically whimsical papers, akin to *The Comforts of Home* and *The Perfect Gentleman* in manner, but more a unit than either of these volumes in point of substance, and in its presentation of a shrewd and humorous philosophy of life. Mr. Bergengren cultivates this philosophy the year round at Scituate, just far enough from Boston to keep out of the turmoil of a city, yet not too far to cast a philosopher's eye upon the ways of huddled human society when there is any danger of forgetting what it is like.

* * *

All these, and one more, *Inside the House Beautiful*, a companion volume to *What Makes the House Beautiful*, by **Henrietta C. Peabody**, are September books. It is a little premature to begin talking now about our October books, but surely it is permissible to remark that next month we shall have something to say about the *Life and Letters of Henry Lee Higginson* by **Professor Bliss Perry**, of Harvard University; a delightful little book of verses, *Many Children*, by **Mrs. Schuyler Van Rensselaer**, with illustrations by **Florence Wyman Ivins**; the strangest of true stories of a bear, profusely illustrated with striking photographs, by **William Lyman Underwood**, of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology; and a reprint of the Christmas classic, *The Visit of St. Nicholas*, from designs by **Mr. Bruce Rogers**, who is now associated with the Press of William Edwin Rudge, in Mount Vernon, New York.

Of all these matters, more anon. We have been holding our peace about them so long that it is safer to clear the throat in this manner before beginning to talk a month hence.

* * *

A word was said here in June about a new educational text, *Youth and the New World*, edited by **Ralph P. Boas**, which the Atlantic Monthly Press is adding to its list. This word must have failed to reach a potential editor in one of the State Universities, for he has recently proposed a compilation of *Atlantic* articles dealing with education, science, politics, industry, religion, and the position of women in the modern world. Is it not a good omen for a new book when a second editor wants to produce something else exactly like it?

Digitized by Google

LANTIC MONTHLY

SEPTEMBER, 1921

HILANTHROPIC DOUBTS

BY CORNELIA J. CANNON

I

philanthropists
ed in a perfect
ity. They have
l every form of
ommon to the
have searched
n imaginations
hysical ailment
pies of old were
they might still
, and have even
spread of their
ey have organ-
form of human
ned institutions
of human de-
oversight, from
of those unfor-
along the way
ced adjustment
re-natal clinics,
rphan asylums,
y-saving socie-
ciations, home-
ns, social-hy-
nics, and settle-
d the land. The
oncerned them-
ied mother, the
he insane, the
ubercular; they
er housing, for
home nursing, for backyard playgrounds; they have enunciated a philosophy of the family, developed a technique of case-work, and formulated methods for conducting the philanthropic enterprises which have been generally accepted as an essential part of our organization of society. It has been social heresy to inveigh against or even question the fundamental importance of these charities. Indifferent to a protest so feeble as to be practically unheard, institutions for social uplift have followed our spread across the continent like prairie tumble-weed blown by an autumn gale.

But something has happened in the last year or so. The apparently solid support of these societies has shown signs of giving way. The expensive philanthropies, manned by professionally trained and highly paid experts doing careful individual work with the maladjusted, have been supported by a lavish public. The gifts came from the possessors of old wealth, who had been trained to accept philanthropic obligations as paramount, a sort of first lien on property, and from the possessors of new wealth, seeking outlets for their surplus. The money came comparatively easily. A mushroom tradition of

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

the ethical beauty of dying poor gave impetus to the generous impulses of the donors. Rich Americans have 'gone in' for philanthropy as the English gentleman goes in for sport. Each man has adopted his pet charity, has preyed upon his friends for help, and been preyed upon in turn.

This impulse of giving did not always imply personal sacrifice. 'Give till it hurts' was a slogan developed by the war emergency. In the piping days of peace such drastic advice would have defeated its own ends. 'Give as much as you comfortably can' is about as strong a stimulus as we can stand today. Of late the charitable institutions, perhaps in desperation, have assumed a truculent tone, an air of authoritative activity, of an implied right to our donations, that has robbed us of the grace of generosity. We confess to a harried feeling in the presence of the grim alternatives daily offered to us, of either surrendering our money or accepting a major responsibility for the downfall of philanthropic institutions.

Must we bear the burden of moral obloquy imposed upon us by the anxious philanthropists, or is there some justifiable limit to our charitable efforts to help our less fortunate brethren? May it not be just possible that this revolt of the giving public is not altogether selfish, but is the harbinger of a moral revolution?

II

A survey of the philanthropic quandary discloses some new elements in the complex. Thousands of families in the past had incomes with a comfortable surplus, which was available for the support of an elaborate system of philanthropies. These surpluses have fallen into the remorseless grasp of the collector of surtaxes. Our national, and only legitimate, community-chest now offers sanctuary to the used to be lavished on t orphan. This is a cons might be easily overloo a factor of significance times. We have seen fi mon good, to appropr pockets of our citizens s that they make the larg recent years to the ca thropy seem like a tiny galaxy.

If we can tax so heavi of war without raising test, would it not be something commensura of peace without reaping The money has passe reach of the philanthro responsibility associate mer use passed with it? duty is it to see that t world? Is it not the na the people who inhabi not of a selected few, people? Can we not loo day when our philanthro will be brought to our at an appeal from boards o by a tax-bill from the stituted authorities?

Whatever the future us, the community of t no longer support priva the scale and in the man in the past. We are for selves whether the basis thropic movement is sou is doing an essential wor that work can be carried of a general refusal on t public to back the phila

What lies at the root thropic impulse? The r say brotherly love. But takes a very different that we show toward ou ers. It could hardly be ship, for it assumes no

Digitized by Google

ubconscious re-
e drilled into a
u art thy broth-
obscure expres-
e herd-instinct,
m the palæozoic
e the conduct of
and of Edith
is not only not
extremely com-
ements of kindly
mpathetic fellow
generosity.
e philanthropist
re is a world ad-
nd here are we
to set it right.
be taken to our
ent? What if it
r minds and in
fferences of man
rences are there,
o them does not
re willing to give
and our enthus-
nd happiness to
oor and suffering.
the community
us. We are the
mperfect, of the
s the basis of our

gs to say in reply
stic friend of a
o bring another
thinking thereby
h. 'No,' said the
t wish to meet
f my infirmities.'
irst handicap lies
ntacts are on the
verty, ignorance,
is of any mutual
ty. It is not 'our
to which we all
'your baby-wel-
I bring my baby
ld take care of it.
conomics associa-

tion,' but 'your home-economics club,' to which I am invited to come and learn the wider use of corn-meal.

Environment has perhaps favored you more than it has me; but I also have a contribution to make to our mutual betterment, if you can only bring yourself to count me in. It is not enough for you to love humanity. You must have a delicate respect for the soul of humanity, that sensitive instrument which registers progress in terms of the individual's victory over himself. I do not wish to be lifted up by you or anyone else; I wish to lift myself. Even though the height I attain by my own efforts be not so lofty, the foundations of my character are firmer and are better able to resist the assaults of temptation.

A fastidious respect for our brother's personality makes heavy drafts on our tolerance — too heavy at times to be honored. So we fail in our efforts to help, and ascribe our failure to the obduracy of the beneficiary, or to inferior traditions inherited from alien races. We are willing to admit that our municipal government is very bad, but we aver that it is better for us to manage it inefficiently for ourselves than to allow anyone else to manage it for us, however admirable the immediate results might be. When, however, it comes to the decisions of a man's life by which his character is to be built up, if he happens to be poor, we may remove from him the opportunity for choice by a pressure he is unable to withstand. We show a Gargantuan daring in assuming responsibility for lives alien to our own. How much good are we justified in hoping or expecting will come of it? Of course, each reader will instantly think of cases he or she has known in which lives have been markedly altered for the better by contacts formed in philanthropic association. There are perhaps many, but how

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

large do these cases bulk in the total number of individuals dealt with? How do such successes balance the effort, money, enthusiasm, and vital energy that have gone into these attempts at human reconstruction? In our own personal lives, who has influenced us save those whose family relations, social status, and range of interests most closely approximate our own? We should regard as an impertinence, if done to us, the invasion of spiritual privacy that the more tolerant victims of misfortune accept as part of their disability. They act upon our advice if they must, they disregard it if they can, but they preserve untouched the inner citadel of their personality, whence their fighting forces may sally forth once the siege is raised. Could we accomplish as much with as well-bred dignity?

A serious defect, seemingly inherent in the organization of philanthropic effort, is the intense individualism of each unit and the frequent jealousy or disregard of one another. It may be the fault of their virtues, each organization having an almost fanatical sense that it holds the key to human regeneration. To the outsider it looks like a lot of ants tugging from all sides at a dead beetle. The beetle does not move, and the ants use a prodigious amount of energy, to no avail. Coöperation is a word often on the lips of the social worker, but not always understood. Indeed, such fundamental coöperation as has been achieved has usually been accomplished by forming an additional coöperating agency to accomplish it. And yet, duplication of effort or failure to recognize reasonable limits to the number of philanthropic establishments is a spoliation of the whole community.

A more fundamental danger, and one to which the best are prone, is reluctance to let go and cease functioning when the need is pas rooted traditions, per conspire to keep a which have served the continued existence is on the community. I of directors that will of its experiment or changing conditions tirely new alignment is to fulfill its purpose day nursery does clos fight for mothers' pen phan asylum lets its pl it places out its charg do not the chimneys taken charity pour ou high-priced coal on a long ceased to have a an organization? No seems more difficult this passion for a phil own sake. Endowm what should be only give immortality to the itory; until our land is with foundations and in fetter the free spirit world.

III

Are the philanthropi an essential work? In ty there are the disce eyes to see an evil and vision a good that can of it. They gather rou whom they can insp enthusiasm, and try o These are the social pi ers to whom we all lo In so far as charitable the spirit of these adve the ideal of their own ing, they do a vital w future, as in the past, w social progress. But th many philanthropic a they are to go on for

Digitized by Google

of the run-
ne ballot-box
much of its

ist may say,
if we do not
will? If we
ried mothers,
If we do not
ow can needy

nplex as ours
nould depend
pic groups to
oing and the
ng done, and
ould continue
r bounty. It
ny communi-
the responsi-
are we going
ic is bringing
ue by refusing
vate charities
her that scale
t or not. On
nains a mass
devotion to
ld, available
How can such
ch energy, be
ntage? How
the philan-
eserved, and
nated?
which has a
c societies to
man sin and
n has practi-
ot necessarily
e more richly
ou may say,
ity be with-
problems are
second city,
k only by the
sly inclined.'
y's standard
to its educa-

tional opportunities, its living conditions, its civic enthusiasm, its moral standards, its homogeneity of feeling, and not to the efforts that any one group may make to improve any other group?

The status of the philanthropies during the war was a revelation like that made by a dazzling streak of lightning. During those momentous years there were high wages, prohibition, and plenty of work for everyone. The demands on the charitable societies dropped fifty per cent and more. The poor and the sick seemed to be no more with us. The question forced itself upon us, 'Is it possible that the philanthropies have been on the wrong tack, that fair wages and decent living conditions are the basis of a sound civilization, and that the philanthropists are but poulticing a surface sore?' There were some few associations which saw in the light of this great experiment the portent of their own ultimate dissolution. Though of making philanthropies there seems no end, of ending them there seems to be no beginning, so that the total number in existence has not been appreciably reduced by the world-shaking convulsions of the war.

A new orientation has, however, taken place in the public mind toward the philanthropist as the sensitive register of human suffering, and the chief guide to the alleviation of human misery. We are beginning to recognize that the same passion for humanity that inspires one man to lavish money on baby welfare, rescue homes for girls, and Christmas dinners for the poor makes another man a radical. The impulses in both cases are the same, but the second man is trying to think more fundamentally than the first. His methods may be clumsy and his suggested solution crude, but his aim is to remove the causes of human despair, not to risk the loss of precious

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

time by attempting to modify their tragic consequences.

The philanthropists belong to a class on which the injustices of our present basis of society have not borne heavily. They serve unconsciously as a bulwark of the *status quo*, for whose defects they are ready and eager to apply palliatives. They are the great menders and patchers-up of society, not the surgeons who cut deep into the festering sore and scrape the bone. They express the tenderness and pity of man, not his reasoning intelligence. Their technique is developed to a high degree of perfection, but their philosophy lags far behind. They know better *how* to do a thing than *why*. We must turn to them for methods, the fruit of long and careful experiment; but as yet they have offered us no fundamental basis for the work of human improvement. It is not through their eyes that we shall see life steadily and see it whole.

IV

The interlocutor queries, 'What are we here for?' and instead of being satisfied with the exemplary reply, 'To help others,' invites disaster by persisting, 'But what are the others here for?' Here is the Achilles heel of the philanthropic movement. In the soul of the philanthropist stirs a passion for betterment, a real desire that life shall be more endurable for us all. But in the method he employs he ignores participation by the 'others.' He uses the ways of an aristocracy instead of those native to a democracy.

The major indictment against philanthropy is that it has ignored the opportunities democracy offers for reforms from within. It has distracted our minds and attention from community responsibility for the removal of social defects. It has encouraged us to leave reforms to the activity of self-appointed groups. Its reforms have tended to be superficial, because it has everywhere selected for its leaders those interested in philanthropy, but not in democracy. The typical lover of his kind will pour out money for the starving Chinese though he may hesitate to contribute to campaign expenses for public-school associations. The novice can catch the thrill of teaching folk-dancing to the tenement-house child or distributing bread tickets to the poor; but an offer to pay the expenses of a board of health 'clean-up campaign' requires imagination of a different order.

Yet a great people committed to the experiment of organizing a democratic society fails in so far as it refuses to use the forms appropriate to democracy. Here about us are all the types of community effort that we have so far evolved: boards of health, school committees, overseers of the poor, courts, probation systems, boards of parole, poorhouses, commissioners for the blind, public libraries, departments for the care of defectives, for the care of children, for giving mothers' pensions, for the supervision of public safety, for the treatment of the tubercular, hospitals, dispensaries, parks and playgrounds — and yet how few philanthropists try loyally to work out their problems through this wealth of agencies before organizing associations of their own.

And where is the reformer who ever feels that, once a law is passed and a department created, there is any further responsibility on his shoulders? Yet, if we had the wit to see it, our responsibility is then but just beginning. City and county and state officials are only our leaders; we are the rank and file, who must stand back of them if they are to be truly effective. An autocracy does not need the coöperation of its citizens; it is not organ-

Digitized by Google

accomplish more for the welfare of our youthful citizens than the work any private society for the care of babies could do in twenty years.

Has philanthropy any place, then, in a modern community? The concern of the philanthropist is legitimately with those social responsibilities not yet assumed by all. A group of persons dedicating themselves to the study of existing evils, to the practice of admittedly temporary demonstrations of improved methods for combatting these evils, and to a determination never to shoulder any permanent responsibility for the carrying-out of reforms, has a very important place in society to-day. If such a group of social experimenters has, after a suitable interval of time, failed to persuade the community of the value of the suggested reforms so that the authorities are ready to adopt them, it should feel no false pride in abandoning the venture. The experiment may have been impracticable; other forces in the community may have been attacking the problem from a more advantageous position; or public sympathy, without which no reform is possible, may have been lacking. In any case the paddle-wheels are beating empty air, and it behooves the reformers to conserve their fuel till the tide comes in. Such an attitude requires a very high order of self-effacement, though one surely not beyond the capacities of true lovers of their kind.

The reluctance of organized societies to surrender their work to the community itself is not always due to an exaggerated sense of the importance of their own contribution, but may be inspired by a very real fear of a consequent lowering of standards. The apprehension is understandable, but it is shortsighted. How many persons who have seriously tried to coöperate with public servants have found them impossible to work with? In some com-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

munities there is political corruption of a serious nature. This does not, however, justify turning to private charity as a way out. It might serve the poor and suffering of such a city much better if all the charitable institutions closed their doors and used their time and money to establish and back a good government. In most of our cities the government, though often inefficient and unenlightened, is not corrupt, or beyond the influence of the citizens who have no private axe to grind. The worst failures are due to the fact that, as soon as the officials are elected, the public forgets all about them and leaves them to the companionship of the few who come to abuse and the many who come to get some favor for themselves or their friends. Public servants can hardly credit their senses when citizens come with a desire to back them in doing a difficult task, or to help them in their efforts to carry on their work efficiently. Citizens have no one except themselves to thank if an official, left to the mercies of the self-seeking, becomes careless in self-defense or corrupt through evil associations.

Think of the daily battle the officers of a board of health have to fight! They are the bane of every vicious element in a city, the enemy of every man who wishes to break the sanitary laws. Every dishonest landlord, every filthy tenant hates them. They are hounded by peddlers who wish to be exceptions to the law; by the dealers who prefer to leave their trash on the sidewalk; by butchers who are unwilling to screen their premises; by stable-keepers who refuse to remove manure; by irate parents who see no sense in quarantine; by the gentry who spit on the sidewalk; and by lodging-house keepers who do not think eight sleeping in a hall bedroom excessive. The law-abiding citizens leave the board of health alone.

Is it any wonder that the officials feel that the hand of man is against them, and sometimes weaken in playing such a losing game? If only the people could realize that the board of health is their creation, trying in the face of mountainous difficulties to carry out their orders and make the community a place of safety for them and their children, they might feel a share in the responsibilities, a pride in the achievements, and a sense of personal failure in the mistakes. Real contact on the part of citizens with governmental problems often brings home the fact that the defects which loom large are due to a lack of money, of public backing, and of legal authority — circumstances beyond the control of the official, but within the power of his employer, the public.

The high standards of our heavily endowed and well-managed philanthropies may be beyond our station in life. A democracy has to surrender a certain perfection of efficiency. We deplore it, though we know the compensations are great. We make our mistakes, but we learn from our failures and develop a power that would be withheld from us if we were perpetually guarded from error by superior intelligences.

The taking over by towns and states of the responsibility for the care and prevention of tuberculosis, a work ably initiated all over the country by the anti-tuberculosis associations, undoubtedly meant in some places an inferior quality in the treatment given; but the comprehensiveness of the work that is being done and the promise that the activity throughout the country makes for an eventual control of the dread disease, is something no private organization, however efficient and ably run, could have hoped to attain. Yet anti-tuberculosis associations continue to exist, refusing to recognize that

Digitized by Google

their pioneer work is done and that their outposts should be moved further on.

Legal aid societies have figured as charities since their inception. Only recently a profoundly significant change of attitude has begun to show itself in the minds of those cognizant of the flaws in the relation between justice and the poor. Legal advice for those with small means is being accepted as a part of the public administration of justice, a responsibility of the people as a whole, not a benefit conferred by the rich on their less fortunate fellows. The very fact that the impecunious client becomes a part of the system itself brings him the assistance of the public agencies of our juridical machinery, which are not so readily available to the private organization. The needs of the litigant become of primary concern to those responsible both for protecting his rights and for enforcing the decrees of the law-makers.

In the educational world the kindergartens have passed through somewhat the same cycle. They were begun as an experiment, by private enthusiasts, then given a grudging hospitality by our public-school system, and finally accepted in their entirety as an essential part of the educational course in all progressive communities. And yet occasional settlement houses have maintained kindergartens close to those of adjacent schools, on the ground that the school was crowded or the teachers not so skilled as their own. Did the idea of lending an extra room for the use of the public school, or bringing community pressure to bear to increase school-equipment and to improve the quality of the teachers, lie beyond the range of possibilities in the minds of these settlement directors? Such institutions have kept up their old routine, instead of using their freedom to try new ways of bringing light into dark places. The amount of public money available for experiments is always small. The taxpayer is perhaps justifiably reluctant to have his money used for purposes which may prove to be utopian; so that many promising but untried methods must wait on the generosity and initiative of private enthusiasts for their testing out. This makes the plodding work of an institution which accepts itself as a fixed part of the social universe so deeply disappointing.

The Workmen's Compensation acts can hardly be said to be the result of an enlightened refusal on the part of the private charities to bear the burden of the tragedies of industry, but they lifted from the philanthropic agencies burdens which the industry should itself bear. The acts suddenly made the problem distinct. They drew the attention of the industries to the cost of accidents, which had been previously borne by the families of the victims and the philanthropies of the community, and had now become a heavy drag on the profits of production. The expense was quickly recognized as excessive, and intelligent efforts were made to reduce it. The most spectacular effect has been the greatly increased demand for safety appliances, medical and nursing care in factories, and a final and perhaps determining pressure for the prohibition amendment. The philanthropist might have gone on indefinitely carrying the load; but when the responsibility for faulty industrial conditions was thrown on the community at large, through additional cost of the products of industry, something fundamental took place.

The Mothers' Pension acts have had a similar history. They have removed a crushing weight from the shoulders of women with young children, and placed it on the shoulders of the taxpayers. The tax-payers, however, perform a double function. They not only

Digitized by Google

provide money for the pensions, but make and enforce the laws as well. They have not been content with doling out groceries and paying rent, but have made new laws about deserting husbands, and have stimulated the activity of the courts and the extraditing agents to return these evaders to the bearing of their responsibilities. In our capacity as the governing body in a democracy, we go far beyond any individual's ability to achieve. We become supermen, and can accomplish the seemingly impossible.

Education used to be regarded as a philanthropy. Charitable schools cast their turbid shadow on mid-Victorian literature. It was a form of charity which was withheld as far as possible from the working classes, lest it make them restless and dissatisfied, and was given out only in quantities which were expected to add to the usefulness but not to the ambition of the lower ranks of society. Democracy has discredited education as a philanthropy, and recognized it as the right of every potential citizen, the only insurance against the anarchy of ignorance, and the sole safeguard of the institutions of a free people.

The public schools offer to all the children of the Republic the opportunity to prepare for citizenship together — the rich and the poor, those with long traditions of culture and those with long traditions of toil — in the atmosphere and under the inspiration of the community institution. If the schools as they exist to-day are not good enough for one man's children, they are not good enough for any man's children, and the enlightened lover of his kind must throw the money, interest, and enthusiasm he may be putting into the private schools into the public. Whatever improvement he can there achieve will better the education of hundreds of children instead of tens, and will not lapse with the passing of his interest. Citizens interested in education, who devote themselves to the building up of private and parochial schools, have not been touched by the Americanization movement and have never fundamentally grasped the American idea. The place for them to help is in the school-system itself, where the problem is acute, the laboratory prepared, and where an outside intelligent interest is of value in keeping alive the professional enthusiasm which may be repressed by the insistent demands of the daily duty. No money can return larger dividends in real accomplishment than that added to the budget of our public schools; nor can any community interest more certainly strengthen the best elements in our civilization than that devoted to the improvement of the public education.

V

What is our moral responsibility to our brothers, fortunate and unfortunate alike? If we give the best education we can to every citizen, if we keep the community health at the highest possible level, and provide ample opportunities for innocent pleasure; if we strengthen the churches and safeguard working conditions in our industries; if we provide the most favorable environment that lies within our power, cannot we trust the individual to work out his own destiny? Even those social workers who devote most time and attention to work with the individual find that the problem of human difficulty is largely one of faulty character. Is not the remedying of that defect beyond the power as well as the province of any self-constituted group in the community? Must we not leave those changes to the interplay of the influences of a man's family, church, friends, teachers, and fellow workmen, in a

Digitized by Google

esome for all of
rts can make it?
is brother is the
ttering his home
s old coat to the
ent Seat we may
ou do to improve
t?' and not be
vidence as to our
craps from our
buttressing the
llows with our
ing the energies
his world.
eople is the com-
racy. Dreaming
alization nearer.
f human society
'Let there be
nless it is accom-
ete suggestion as
end may be at-
opist's contribu-
nental work on
living together.
dignity or virtue
soup-kitchen or
the children of
there is a tonic
ome, one's busi-
unity to prevent

American people
ow itself to be
oblem. A nation
traction plough,
and build the
nventive ability
tinuous mutual
Each man's work
nan's additional
The problem of
nent is surely no
oblems of organ-
n that our great
essfully wrestled
we placate our
our consciences
we put off the

day of attack on the sources of poverty and distress.

The game of democracy cannot be played from the grand stand. The humanitarian finds it fatally easy to sit on the side-lines and criticize. He may be willing to sponge the combatants' faces and run no risk of getting dirt on his clothes, but to play the people's game, he must get into the ring and be willing to take knockout blows and still come back. The only place where the game can be played is within the organizations of our towns, our counties, our states, and our nation. And the only way it can be played is by citizens fighting together as fellow sufferers against the forces of corruption and destruction that lie in wait for us.

The social workers, the professionals of the philanthropic movement, are themselves becoming weary of their dependence on the uncertain generosity of the patrons of the poor. Many of them, especially the more thoughtful, have felt an inner skepticism as to the fundamental character of their work, even while they have developed a technique which they feel is their real contribution to the solution of the social riddle. The primary interest of the best of them is not so much that of keeping their own particular institutions alive, as of animating the community as a whole with the spirit they have developed, and transferring to the public agencies the methods worked out by years of experiment in private enterprises.

The community organizations deal with masses; and, as masses are simply the sum-total of individuals, the perfection of the result depends on the intelligence with which each dependent's difficulty is treated. To carry over into public work the professional ability, the intellectual enthusiasm, and the discriminating judgment that have characterized the activities of the

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

best social workers, is a responsibility of the philanthropists who pay their taxes but who have ceased giving to private charities. The passing of laws alone will never bring in the millennium; the establishment of public commissions to do the work the private groups are now doing is not enough. We must feel a responsibility, as individuals and as a nation, for the organizations we sh afford to give our private in of our fellow exercise the sa devoted to the cial outlook o in increasing t tarian charac institutions.

THE WALPOLE BEAUT

BY E. BARRINGTON

[*From a packet of letters, written in the middle of the ei Fanny Armine to her cousin, Lady Desmond, in Ireland, of the strangest of true stories — the history of Maria Wa Horace Walpole and illegitimate daughter of his brother, S letters are a pot-pourri of town and family gossip, and in Maria Walpole into coherence, I am compelled to omit m and interesting.*]

July, 1757.

Why, Kitty, my dear, what signifies your reproaches? I wish I may never be more guilty than I am this day. I laid out a part of your money in a made-up mantua and a petticoat of Rat de St. Maur, and for the hat, 't was the exact copy of the lovely Gunning's — Maria Coventry. And though I won't flatter you, child, by saying your bloom equals hers (for I can't tell what hers may be under the white lead she lays on so thick), yet I will say that your Irish eyes may ambuscade to the full as well beneath it, though they won't shoot an earl flying, like hers, because you have captured your baronet already!

But 't is news you would have — news, says you the town.

And how i of Hamilton, folk still climb stare at her? She was in a sui last Birthnight white, and the ered in the ma in the satin. damask, trimm These cost fo my dear. Wh the present age ments? Her G tered on whe and all the pe to have a stare

Digitized by Google

off with as much glare as Vauxhall on a fête night, and she as demure as a cat after chickens.

But 't is always the way with these sudden-come-ups, they never have the easy carriage that comes from breeding, and 't is too much to expect she should be a topping courtier.

You must know Horry Walpole was there, in gray and silver brocade, as fine and finical a gentleman as ever, and most genteelly lean; and says I to him, 'What think you, Mr. Walpole, of our two coquet Irish beauties? Do they put out all the fire of our English charmers?'

So he drew himself up and took a pinch of rappee (can't you see him, Kitty, my girl?), and says he, —

'Madam, to a lady that is herself all beauty and need envy none, I may say we have a beauty to be produced shortly to the town that will flutter all the world excepting only the lady I have the honor to address.'

And, Lord! the bow he made me, with his hat to his heart!

'La, man,' says I, 'who is she? But sure I know. 'T is the Duchess of Queensbury reduced a good half in size and with a new complexion.'

But Horry shook his ambrosial curls.

'No, madam, 'pon honor! A little girl with the vivacity of sixteen and brown eyes, brown hair — in fact, a brown beauty.'

And then it flashed on me and I says, —

'Good God! — Maria! But sure she can't be presented. 'T is impossible!' And could have bit my silly tongue out when 't was said.

He shrugged his shoulders like a Frenchman — 't is the last grace he picked up in Paris, and turned from me to the new lady errant, Miss Chester, who models herself on the famous Miss Chudleigh. But nothing could equal the horrid indecency of Miss Chudleigh's habit at the masquerade at Vauxhall t'other day! She was Iphigenia in a Greek undress, and says Horry, —

'Sure, never was a more convenient thing — the victim is prepared for the priest to inspect the entrails without more ado.'

I thought we should have died laughing. 'T is only a woman of breeding knows exactly where certainty should stop and imagination take its place.

But, Kitty child, who do you guess is the new beauty? I give you one, I give you two, I give you three! And if 't was three hundred, you'd be never the wiser. Why, Maria Walpole, you little blockhead! Maria, the daughter of Sir Edward Walpole, Horry's brother. What think you of that? But Sir Edward never was married, says you. True for you, Kitty, but don't you know the story? No, to be sure. There 's no scandal in Ireland, for St. Patrick banished it along with the snakes and their poison, because the island that has so many misfortunes would have died of another.

Well, take your sampler like a good little girl and hearken to the history of the lovely Maria that's to blow out the Gunning candles. Let me present to your la'ship Sir Edward Walpole, brother to the Baron of Strawberry Hill. A flourish and a sliding bow and you know one another! Sir Edward, who resembles not Horry in his love for the twittle-twattle of the town, is a passable performer on the bass-viol, and a hermit — the Hermit of Pall Mall. But the rules of that Hermitage are not too severe, child. 'T is known there were relaxations. And notably one.

The Hermit some years since was lodged in Pall Mall, and in the lower floors was lodged a dealer in clothes, with prentices to fetch and carry.

Lord! says Kitty, what's this to the

Digitized by Google

purpose? Attend, Madam. The curtain rises!

'T is an old story: the virtuous prentice — and the unvirtuous. There was one of them — Dorothy Clement, a rustic beauty, straw hat tied under the roguish chin, little tucked-up gown of flowered stuff, handkerchief crossed over the bosom, ruffled elbows. 'T is so pretty a dress, that I protest I marvel women of quality don't use it! However, this demure damsel looked up at Sir Edward under the hat, and he peeped under the brim, and when he left the house and returned to his own, what should happen but the trembling beauty runs to him, one fine day, for protection, swearing her family and master have all cast her off because 't was noted the gentleman had an eye for a charming face.

Well, child, 't is known hermits do not marry. 'T is too much to ask of their Holinesses. But he set a chair at the foot of his table for the damsel and bid her share his pulse and crusts; and so 't was done, and whether in town or country, the Hermitess kept him company till she died. Sure the Walpoles are not too fastidious in their women, excepting only Horry of Strawberry Hill, who has all the finicals of the others rolled up in his lean body.

Well, Kitty, there were four children: — a boy, — nothing to the purpose, — and Laura, Maria, and Charlotte. And the poor lasses, not having a rag of legitimacy to cover 'em, must needs fall back on good behavior and good looks. I saw Laura, a pretty girl, in the garden at Englefield some years since, when I was airing in Lady Pomfret's coach; and as we looked, the little hoyden Maria comes running up in muslin and blue ribbons, all health and youth and blooming cheeks and brown curls and eyes — a perfect Hebe. And 't is she — the milliner's brat — that's to borrow the Car of Love and set the world afire. But she can't be pre
Kitty; for our high and mighty
frown on vice, and not a single c
with the bar sinister can cre
court, however many may cre
And that's that!

And now I end with complime
curtsies to your la'ship, and t
tidings that one of the virgin
Twickenham, those Muses to wh
Horace Walpole is Apollo, has
Ode so full of purling strean
warbling birds, that Apollo says
provide a side-saddle for Pegas
no male shall ever bestride him

September,

O la, la, la! Was you ever at th
child? Here am I just returned,
was great company, and all t
and belles, and Miss Biddy Gre
great City fortune, run off with
Howe, and her father flourishi
gouty stick in the Pump Roo
swearing a wicked aristocracy
have none of his honest guinea
he'll soften when he sees her pr
at court, with feathers stuck in
and all the city dames green wit
'T is the way of the world.

But to business. The town is
with hundred-woman power
marriage that Laura, — by c
called Walpole, — the Hermit's
daughter, makes to-morrow.
astound you, Lady Desmond
Honor, as much as it did your
servant. For Miss Laura hon
Church, no less, with her illegi
hand, and no less a dignitary
Canon of Windsor! Is not this
receiver of stolen goods? Does
Reverence compound a felony
ing such a bride? What say you
Canon Keppel, brother to Lord
marle; and mark you, Kitty
Honorable Mrs. Keppel has the
be presented where Miss Laura
knock at the door in vain! We c

Digitized by Google

, but the Walpoles
ret.
er charming daugh-
ride cake. All the
a, a shining beauty
lpole is enchanted
tch — sure, an ille-
niece to the Baron
rth a dozen of your
mersets! I laughed
sleeve when says
drum, —
s to be married to
e Miss Crasteyns,
— nieces to the rich
two hundred and
ds apiece. Nothing
e digestion of that
ness or a grocer.'
y fan, —
ng, sure, Mr. Wal-
een a royal illegiti-

s, and took a pinch
. Never was a man
ride, though he af-

f this latest news of
The people are not
upon the Gunning,
hat upon her last
t in the Park. Would
tty, that she com-
g, and His Majesty,
in wisdom, offers a
yship's beauty. On
into the Park and,
lesires the assistance
orders twelve ser-
reast before her and
lve men behind her;
id the silly little fool
ng, with more mob
ver, her blockhead
e and my Lord Pem-
r! I'm sure I can't
to better this, so
sister, with all af-

April, 1759.

Great news, your la'ship. I am but just returned from a royal progress to visit the Baron of Strawberry Hill. Strawberry was in prodigious beauty — flowers, cascades, and grottoes all displayed to advantage in a sunshine that equaled June. The company, her Gunning Grace of Hamilton, the Duchess of Richmond, and your humble servant.

Says Mr. Horace, leaning on his amber cane and surveying us as we sat in the shell on the terrace, —

'Strawberry Hill is grown a perfect Paphos. 'T is the land of beauties, and if Paris himself stood where I do, he could never adjudge the golden apple.'

He writ to George Montagu after, who showed the letter about town, —

'There never was so pretty a sight as to see the three sitting. A thousand years hence, when I begin to grow old, if that can ever be, I shall talk of that event and tell the young people how much handsomer the women of my time were than they are now.'

There's a compliment like a fresh-plucked rose from the Lord of Strawberry. It reads pretty, don't it, child? Horry was in vast wit — 't was like the Northern Lights hurtling about us — made us blink! The Duchess of Richmond pretending she could not recall her marriage-day, says Horry, —

'Record it thus, Madam. This day thousand years I was married!'

'T was not till a week later I discovered this to be a *bon mot* of Madame de Sévigné. His jewels are polished very fine, but 't is not always in the Strawberry mine they are dug. But to our news — What will your Honor pay me for a penn'orth?

'T is of our beauty, Maria — ahem! Walpole. The pretty angler has caught her fish — a big fish, a gold fish, even a golden-hearted fish, for 't is Lord Waldegrave! A belted earl, a Knight of the Garter, no less, for the pretty milliner's

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

daughter. You don't believe it, Kitty? Yet you must, for 't is true, and sure, if beauty can shed a lustre over puddled blood, she has it. Lord Villiers, chief of the macaronis, said, yesterday was a week, —

'Of all the beauties Miss Walpole reigns supreme — if one could forget the little accident of birth! Her face, bloom, eyes, teeth, hair, and person are all perfection's self, and Nature broke the mould when she made this paragon, for I know none like her.'

'T is true, but 't is so awkward with these folk that can't be presented nor can't meet this one nor that. Still, I have had her much to my routs and drums, where 't is such an olla podrida that it matters not who comes. But Lady Waldegrave may go where she will; and certainly the bridegroom has nothing to object on the score of birth, for he comes from James the Second by the left hand, and for aught I know a left-hand milliner is as good these Republican days. Anyhow, 't is so, and Horry, who would have all think him above such thoughts, is most demurely conceited that a Walpole — ahem! — should grace the British peerage. Remains now only Charlotte, and I dare swear she will carry her charms to no worse market than Maria, though not so great a Venus.

I went yesterday evening to the Bluestocking Circle at Mrs. Montagu's fine house. I am not become learned, Kitty, but 't was to hear the lionesses roar, and because I knew the Lord of Strawberry would be there and was wishful to hear his exultations. Lord preserve us, child, what a frightening place! We were ushered into the Chinese Room lined with painted Pekin paper, and noble Chinese vases, and there were all the lions, male and female, in a circle — the Circle of the Universe. All the great ladies of the Bluestocking Court were there; the vastly learned Mrs. Carter, Mrs. D lany over from Ireland, the Swan Lichfield Miss Anna Seward, M Chapone, and other lionesses and *cu esses*. My dear, they sat in a half-moo and behind them another half-moo of grave ecclesiastics and savants, a Horry at the head of them, in brow and gold brocade. 'T was not sprightl Kitty. 'T is true these women are goo and learned, and some of them w enough in looks; but 't is so pretentiou so serious, — I lack a word! — so ce sorious of all that does not pull a lo face, that, when Mrs. Montagu rose meet us with the shade of Shakespea in attendance (for no lower footma would serve so majestic a lady), I ha a desire to seize her two hands and ga lop round the room with her that could scarce restrain. But sure she a the company had died of it!

I expected great information fro such an assemblage, but 't was but snip-snap of talk — remarks pass from one to another, but served as were on massy plate — long words, a too many of 'em. Dull, my dear, du And so 't will always be when peop aim to be clever. They do these thin better in France, where they have fear of laughter and the women spark without a visible machinery. 'T w all standing on the mind's tip-toe her And when the refreshments were serv I made for Horry —

> On silver vases loaded rise
> The biscuits' ample sacrifice,
> And incense pure of fragrant tea.

But Bluestockingism is nourished tea as wit on wine.

'So, Mr. Walpole,' says I, 'what this news I hear of Miss Maria? M felicitations to the bridegroom on t possession of so many charms.'

And Horry with his bow, —

'I thank your ladyship's partialit and good heart. For character and cre it, Lord Waldegrave is the first mat

Digitized by Google

in England, and for beauty, Maria — excepting only the lady I address. The family is well pleased, though 't is no more than her deserts, and 't was to be expected my father's grandchild would ally herself with credit.'

'T is when Horry Walpole gives himself these demure airs that I am tempted to be wicked, Kitty. For what signifies talking? The girl is a beauty, but Nancy Parsons and Kitty Fisher are beauties, too, and if the court and peerage are opened to women of no birth, why what's left for women of quality? T is certain the next generation of the peerage bids fair to be extreme ill-born, and the result may be surprising. But I held my tongue, for I have a kindness for Horry and his niece, though I laugh at 'em.

I thought Mr. Walpole looked ill, and doubted whether I might hope to see him at my Tuesday rout. Says he, —

'T is the gout, Madam, that ungallant disorder, and had I a mind to brag, I could boast of a little rheumatism too; but I scorn to set value on such trifles, and since your ladyship does me the honor to bespeak my company, I will come if 't were in my coffin and pair. May I hope your ladyship will favor us at Maria's nuptials. Sure the Graces were ever attended by Venus on occasions of ceremony.'

He would have said more, but the Queen of the Blues swam up, protesting and vowing she had never seen such a goddess as Miss Maria Walpole; that were she to marry the Emperor of the world, 't would be vastly below the merit of such glowing charms. And so forth. 'T is a lady that paints all her roses red and plasters her lilies white, and whether 't is malice I can't tell, but believe 't is possible to blast by praise as well as censure, by setting the good sense of one half the world and the envy of the other against the victim. So she shrugged and simpered and worked every muscle of her face, in hopes to be bid to the wedding; but Mr. Walpole only bowed very grave and precise, and turned away, and I with him. And no more circles for me, my dear; and here I conclude, and my next shall be the epithalamium.

18th May, 1759.

Kitty, child, when you was married, did you look about you from under your hat? — did you take a sly peep at the World, the Flesh, and the Devil, and wonder which was the bridegroom? I did, but I'll never tell which he proved to be! Well, Maria was married two days since, and Horry Walpole favored me to-day with a glimpse of the letter he writ to his friend Mann on the occasion. 'T was very obliging; but you know all he writes is writ with one eye on the paper and one on posterity, so 't is no wonder if he squints a little by times. However, here's to our letter.

'The original day was not once put off — lawyers and milliners all canonically ready. They were married in Pall Mall just before dinner, and we all dined there, and the Earl and the new Countess got into their post-chaise at eight and went to Navestock alone. On Sunday she is to be presented and to make my Lady Coventry distracted. Maria was in a white and silver nightgown, with a hat very much pulled over her face. What one could see of it was handsomer than ever. A cold maiden blush gave her the sweetest delicacy in the world.'

So far our doting uncle, Kitty; but 't is indeed a fair creature. I saw the long soft brown eyes lifted once and flash such a look at the bridegroom — I dare to swear Lord Waldegrave wished away then the twenty years between them. Poor Lady Coventry, indeed! Her race is run, her thread is spun, her goose is cooked, and any other trope you please; for what signifies all the

Digitized by Google

white lead at the 'pothecary's compared to the warm brown of Maria's complexion and her long eyelashes!

Lady Elizabeth Keppel had a gown worthy of the Roman Empress she looks, with that beak nose and nutcracker chin. 'T was a black velvet petticoat, embroidered in chenille, the pattern a great gold wicker basket filled to spilling over with ramping flowers that climbed and grew all about her person. A design for a banqueting hall rather than a woman; or indeed a committee of Bluestockings might have wore it to advantage. She had winkers of lace to her head, and her hoop covered so many acres that one could but approach at an awful distance and confidences were impossible — a sure reason why the modish ladies will soon drop the hoop.

I saluted the bride after the ceremony and says I, —

'Maria, my love, I attend your presentation on Sunday, and I bring my smelling bottle for Lady Coventry. 'T is already said her guards will now be transferred to your ladyship, together with a detachment from each ship of the Fleet, to secure so much beauty.'

She has the sweetest little dimple in either cheek, and twenty Cupids hide under her lashes.

'I have no wish, Madam, to dethrone my Lady Coventry, if even 't were possible,' says she. 'That lady has occupied the throne so long, that 't is hers by right, and the English people never weary of an old favorite.'

'T was two-edged, Kitty, as you see, and I will report it to the other lovely Maria, and 't will be pretty to see the rapiers flash between the two. 'T is not only the men carry dress swords, child. But I thought Miss Maria a downy nestling, with never a thought of repartee, till now. 'T is born in us, child. It begins with our first word and is our last earthly sigh.

Well, was you at the p
Lady Desmond, for I did n
la'ship.

Says you, 'How was th
with the Irish Sea between
with the news!'

The company was nun
magnificent, and Horry Wa
wedding garment of a wh
with purple and green flow
a trifle juvenile for his lo
blame him not; for my La
hend would choose for him
protested that, however you
be in spirits, his bloom was
I could see he was quaking
tialities — lest Maria sho
in full beauty.

T' other Maria — Cov
golden flowers on a silver
looked like the Queen of
were not our Monarch an
a Solomon, I would not
A full stop to all naughtin
must tell you her last *faux*
know, child, she's as stup
pretty. She told the King
she was surfeited with sig
was but one left she could
What, think you, it was
coronation!

The old man took it wi
mor; but Queen Bess had ma
between her lovely head an
for less.

Well, into the midst of
gious assemblage, with U
quaking inwardly and makin
Walpole nieces were prese
day, comes the fair Waldegr
like a swan, perfectly easy a
in a silver gauze with kno
ribbon and diamonds not s
her eyes. I dare swear not
but envied my Lord Waldo
many might envy the beau
band, a good plain man,
handsome. But the bride!

Digitized by Google

ike Venus floating
urtsey and hand-
shall talk of blood
illiner's daughter
herself in the fin-
pe? 'T is true 't is
pole vintage; but
one, who were the
behind the coarse,
tern of a father,
nst Lord Mayors
is a world's won-
it.
ventry — do but
r pale under her
entered, and her
ire, like an angry
have destroyed,
l a heap of ashes
e Arabian Nights.
nelling-bottle, out
r, and then, smil-
nner in the world,
lwicke, —
re jealous of each
ny lord, but 't is
m vastly pleased
degrave's appear-
d what was to be
ntage. She looks
l I hope she will
mpany.'
n I supposed her,
did nothing but
d now the two
all the sights and
the top figures in
rld feasts its eyes
of nature — and
, so far as Maria
d; for she is two
ead, and the doc-
er 't will be the

y first gray hair
swan-song. I am
nd the toasts and
I spoke to Harry
, his eyes were so

fixed on Lady Waldegrave that he heard me not till I had spoke three times. Get thee to a nunnery, Fanny! I shall now insensibly drop into a spectatress. What care I! To ninety-nine women life ends with their looks, but I will be the hundredth, and laugh till I die!

Four years later.

Why, Kitty, your appetite for news grows by what it feeds on. Sure you are the horse-leech's true daughter, crying, 'Give, give!' You say I told you not of Charlotte Walpole's marriage. Sure, I did. Maria married her sister well — to young Lord Huntingtower, my Lord Dysart's son. 'T is a girl of good sense. She loved him not, nor yet pretended to, but says she to Maria, —

'If I was nineteen I would not marry him. I would refuse point-blank. But I am two-and-twenty, and though 't is true some people say I am handsome, 't is not all who think so. I believe the truth is, I am like to be large and heavy and go off soon. 'T is dangerous to refuse so good a match. Therefore tell him, sister, I accept.'

And 't was done. I had this from Maria herself, who took it for an instance of commendable good sense; but I know not — somehow I would have a girl less of a Jew with her charms. Anyhow, stout or no, she will be my Lady Countess Dysart when his father dies; and now sure, there are no more worlds left for the Walpole girls to conquer. Their doting Uncle Horry could never predict such success. The eldest girl's husband is now Bishop of Exeter.

Poor Maria Coventry is dead — the most lovely woman in England, setting aside only t'other Maria. 'T was from usage of white lead, Kitty, and tell that to all the little fools you know! It devoured her skin, and she grew so hideous that at the last she would not

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

permit the doctors to see her ruined face, but would put out her hand between the curtains to have her pulse took. She was but twenty-seven.

Sure, I am Death's herald, for I must tell you, too, my Lord Waldegrave is dead, and the beauty a widow after but four years' marriage. I saw her but yesterday, full of sensibility and lovely as Sigismonda in Hogarth's picture. She had her young daughter, Lady Elizabeth, in her lap, the curly head against her bosom, the chubby cheek resting on a little hand against the mother's breast. Sure never was anything so moving as the two — exact to the picture Mr. Reynolds painted.

She has a great tenderness for his memory, and well she may, when the position he raised her to is considered. 'T is like a discrowned queen, for her jointure is small, and she is now no more consequence to his party, so his death has struck away her worldly glory at a blow. Indeed, I pitied her, and wiped away her floods of tears with tenderness that was unaffected. But for such a young woman, I won't believe the scene is closed. What — are there no Marquises, no Dukes for such perfection?

But 't is brutal to talk so when she is crying her fine eyes out. I wipe my naughty pen and bid you adieu.

Two days later.

I attended Mrs. Minerva Montagu's reception, and there encountered the Great Cham of Literature, Dr. Johnson, rolling into the saloon like Behemoth. Lady Waldegrave's bereavement was spoke of and says he, —

'I know not, Madam, why these afflictions should startle us. Such beauty invokes ill fortune, lest a human being suppose herself superior to the dictates of Providence.'

'Certainly she is the first woman in England for beauty,' says I, very nettled; 'but 't is to be thought chose a little less beauty an more good fortune, had she b sulted. 'T is hard she should ished for what she could not h

'Let her solace herself with he works, Madam. A man canno pocket-handkerchief and so mad. To be occupied on sm sions is one of the great felicit female train and makes bere more bearable.'

'T is a bear roaring his igno the world, my dear. But he ha of horse sense (if the female tra but let him be) that makes durable and even palatable at

Kitty, my dear, have you for when my Lord Waldegrave die 'Are there no dukes to pursue t ly widow?' Give honor to the She refused the Duke of Portla all the fair were hunting with gems worthy of the Mohawks. fused this, that, and t'other. town said, 'Pray who is the n daughter, to turn up her nos first matches in England? Has signs on the King of Prussia, — own young monarch is wed to h lotte, — or is it the Sultan, or H ness the Pope that will cont ladyship?'

No answer. But, Kitty, 't i smell a rat at a considerable d and I kept my nostrils ope handsome young King has a ha young brother, — His Royal H the Duke of Gloucester, — a gentleman has cast the sheep's eye of passion, upon our lovely What think you of this? That not be? Then what of the K phetua and other historic exam would have you know that in der passion there's nothing th not be. It laughs at obstacles a

Digitized by Google

crest of the impos-
since, but 't is over
re now.
dy Sarah Bunbury
, —
ure you know the
r is desperately in
Waldegrave. Now
le cunning face with
me what's known.
heard from Horry
a'ship,' says I, very
"'t is reported the
m to speak to his
is gone out of town.
two pearl bracelets
pound. That's not
But for what?'
n ambiguous gift,
imsically; 'and may
. Give me leave to
rsuit or Attainment
ls it?'
ner head, the little
vent.
us much, Kitty: the
frightened. It may
he principles of the
nd there was never
een her and Sir Ed-
t there is between
of the Blood. Her
. My Lady Mary
he mother were not
ys I, 'I really cannot
's profession.' But,
is too true Maria is
nd there should be
n and her mother's
indeed more indis-
her. His chaise is
r, and, as my Lady
lucky that anyone
ner at all. If they
om curiosity as any
deed I fear her repu-
st repair. Meeting Horry Walpole last night at the French Embassador's, he was plagued with staring crowds, and he made off after braving it a while. I hear the King is highly offended and the Queen yet more. She has a great notion of birth, and though poor, the Mecklenburg family has as good quarterings as any Royals in Europe. For my part, Kitty, I know not. Yet, if we seek for pedigree in horse and dog, 't is to be supposed worth something in Adam's breed also. And this ill-behavior in Maria confirms me.

Yet I have visited the fair sinner, for I love her well. She can't help neither her birth nor her beauty, but sure her kind heart is all her own. She wept and would reveal nothing, but asked me to be so much her friend as to think the best of her. 'T is pity her tears were wasted on a mere woman. The drops beaded on her lashes like rain on a rose.' Well, God mend all! say I. Sure none of us have a clear conscience and if anyone was to come up behind us and whisper, 'I know when, how, and who!' 't is certain there are few women but would die of terror. Yet I did not think Maria a rake — though a Prince's.

1770.

Kitty, Kitty, 't is all come out! But I may say the town knew it after the masquerade in Soho, when His Royal Highness appeared as Edward the Fourth and Maria as Elizabeth Woodville, the pretty widow he made his Queen. You'll allow 't was a delicate way to let the cat out of the bag. It could not longer be kept within it, for the lady's sake, for there is to be a little new claimant one day to the Crown, if all the elder stem should fail. They were married four years ago, Kitty! Sure never was an amazing secret better kept! And I will say she hath borne much for the Prince's sake and with good sense. But think of it! Maria

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

No-name — the milliner's base-born daughter — to be Her Royal Highness the Duchess of Gloucester, Princess of Great Britain! Was ever human fate so surprising? 'T was a secret even from her father and uncle, by the Duke's command; but she has now writ her father so pretty a letter that 't is the town's talk, Horry Walpole having shewed it about. But Horry — have you forgot his pride, hid always under a nonchalance as if 't was nothing? I was at Gloucester House, where she received *en princesse*, two nights ago; and to see Horry kiss her hand and hear him address her with, — 'Madam, your Royal Highness,' at every word, — sure no wit of Congreve's could ever equal the comedy! But if looks were all, she should be Queen of England — a shining beauty indeed! She wore a robe in the French taste, of gold tissue, her hair lightly powdered, with a bandeau of diamonds and the Duke's miniature in diamonds on her breast. He, looking very ill at ease, as I must own, stood beside her. The King and our little Mecklenburger Queen are distracted, the royal ire withers all before it; but it can't be undone, though they will pass a Marriage Act to make such escapades impossible in the future.

But the Walpole triumph! 'proved in the face of all the w a Walpole illegitimate is bett German Royalty, for he mig married where he would. No d Horry Walpole always though 't is not always we see our fam so bolstered.

Meagre as a skeleton, he lo genteelest phantom you can in pure velvet and steel emb For my part, I am well con wish Her Royal Highness joy grimace. 'T is true I laugh a Walpole, for in this town w at everything, from the Alm Kitty Fisher; but I have a kin him and for Maria, and had soc triumphed than another. 'T i with the town. O Kitty, the and malice! 'T would take fift to tell you the talk, from th down.

Well, Her Royal Highness her hand to kiss, very gracio will not let her dignity dragg mud, like others I could nar whether she would have been m with Portland or another, I determine. The Fates alone k sure they can't be women, th their secrets so well!

Digitized by Google

MY OLD LADY, LONDON

BY A. EDWARD NEWTON

I

charming woman say
't think I ever had
resh asparagus as I
nanner, I don't think
much of London as is
omplete happiness; I
morning — before it
the streets are de-
nen throngs of people
d and politest people
crowd its thorough-
, I think, best of all,
ondon, in some of its
ery beautiful. If I
I should never leave
for a day or two now
I could enjoy coming

rld-upheaval through
st passed is responsi-
ving been in London
I greatly feared that
have left some un-
on the Old Lady. In-
ve lost a tooth or a
ristocratic old ladies
ceal the ravages of
ance, and as I looked
y station while my
eing stowed away in
room, I saw only the
tly going about its

ed into my taxi and
the Strand,' and was
er Waterloo Bridge,
Nothing has changed.
ged except that the

fare, which was once eightpence, is now a shilling.'

I said it again, with not quite the same certainty, when, after eating my piece of roast beef and a little mess of greens and a wonderful potato, I called the head waiter and complained that the meat was tough and stringy. 'It is so,' said that functionary, and continued: 'you see, sir, during the war we exhausted' (with careful emphasis upon the *h*) 'our own English beef, and we are now forced to depend upon — ' I looked him straight in the eye; he was going to say America, but changed his mind and said, 'the Argentine.'

'Very neatly done,' I said, ordering an extra half-pint of bitter and putting a sixpence in his hand; 'to-morrow I'll have fish. I'm very sure that nothing can have happened to the turbot.'

It was only a little after one, when, leaving Simpson's I lit a cigar and turned westward in quest of lodgings. As the Savoy was near at hand, I thought no harm would be done by asking the price of a large double-bedded room overlooking the river, with a bath, and was told that the price would be five guineas a day, but that no such accommodation was at that moment available. 'I'm glad of it,' I said, feeling that a temptation had been removed; for I have always wanted a room that looked out on the river; and, continuing westward, I inquired at one hotel after another until, just as I was beginning to feel, not alarmed, but a trifle uneasy,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

I secured, not just what I wanted, but a room and a bath which would serve — at the Piccadilly.

I had been kept waiting quite a little time in the lobby, and as I looked about me there seemed to be a good many foreigners in evidence, a number of Spaniards and, I suspected, Germans. A fine manly young fellow, with only one arm (how many such I was to see), who manipulated the lift and to whom I confided my suspicions, replied, 'Yes, sir, I believe they is, sir; but what are you going to do? They calls themselves Swiss!'

But in my anxiety to get to London, I have forgotten to say a word about the Imperator, on which I crossed, or of the needless expense and delay to which one is subjected in New York, for no reason that I can see, but that some of what Mr. Bryan called 'deserving Democrats' may be fed at the public trough.

After being photographed, and getting your passport and having it viséd by the consul of the country to which you are first going, and after assuring the officials of the Treasury Department that the final installment of your income tax will be paid, when due, by your bank, — though where the money is to come from, you don't in the least know, — you finally start for New York, in order that you may be there one day before the steamer sails, so that you may again present your passport at the Custom House for final inspection. I know no man wise enough to tell me what good purpose is served by this last annoyance. With trunks and suitcases, New York is an expensive place in which to spend a night, and one is not in the humor for it; one has started for Europe and reached — New York.

But fearful that some hitch may occur, you wire on for rooms and get them, and 'the day previous to sailing,' as the regulation demands, you present yourself and your wife, each armed with passport, at the Custom House. Standing in a long line in a corridor, you eventually approach a desk at which sits a man consuming a big black cigar. Spreading out your passport before him he looks at it as if he were examining one for the first time; finally, with a blue pencil, he puts a mark on it and says, 'Take it to that gentleman over there,' pointing across the room. You do so; and another man examines it, surprised, it may be, to see that it closely resembles one that he has just marked with a red pencil. He is just about to make another hieroglyph on the passport when he observes that the background of your photograph is dark, whereas the regulations call for light. He suspends the operation; is it possible that you will be detained at the last moment? No! with the remark 'Get a light one next time,' he makes a little mark in red and scornfully directs you to another desk. Here sits another man — these are all able-bodied and presumably well-paid politicians — with a large rubber stamp; it descends, and you are free to go on board your ship — to-morrow.

The Imperator made, I think, only one trip in the service of the company that built her; during the war she remained tied up to her pier in Hoboken and when she was finally put into passenger service, she was taken over pending final allocation, by the Cunard Line. She is a wonderful ship — with the exception of the Leviathan, the largest boat afloat; magnificent and convenient in every detail, and as steady as a church. The doctor who examines my heart occasionally, looking for trouble, would have had a busy time on her. I fancy I can see him drawing his stethoscope from his pocket and suspending it in his ears, poking round, listening in vain for the pulse

Digitized by Google

fearful, no doubt,
ose his patient, he
d certain drops in
rvals, and, finally,
ier in a very large

at I owe my com-
th to having been
ne matter of exer-
abit to take a con-
before breakfast;
s able to read and
a clear conscience.
around the prom-
e, the steward told
believe it.
rth, or rather sea,
ne empyrean, I am
the Germans knew
n ships. And the
e Imperator was
a German sign oc-
erman word was
tely, for the time
ne German nation
the sea! I some-
te of the English
nia'; it is so very

uthampton Water
quite uneventful
st the only sign of
ned to see. A long
hat we should call
yers, anchored in
ring their camou-
rusting themselves

ar, warm Septem-
Southampton pos-
atever, we at once
chester, which we
tend service in the
. The service was
inging better than
for the choir is
n the great school

founded centuries ago by William of Wykeham. After the service, we stood silently for a moment by the tomb of Jane Austen; nor did we forget to lift reverently the carpet that protects the tablet let into the tombstone of Izaak Walton. After tea, that pleasant function, we drove out to the Hospital of St. Cross, beautiful and always dear to me, being, as it is, the scene of Trollope's lovely story, *The Warden*.

Seated at home in my library, in imagination I love to roam about this England, this 'precious stone set in the silver sea,' which, however, now that the air has been conquered, no longer serves it defensively as a moat; but as soon as I find myself there, the lure of London becomes irresistible, and almost before I know it I am at some village railway station demanding my 'two single thirds' to Waterloo or Victoria, or wherever it may be.

So it was in this case. I did, however, take advantage of the delightful weather to make a motor pilgrimage to Selborne, some fifteen miles across country from Winchester. A tiny copy of White's *Natural History of Selborne* came into my possession some forty years ago, by purchase, at a cost of fifteen cents, at Leary's famous bookshop in Philadelphia; and while I now display, somewhat ostentatiously perhaps, Horace Walpole's own copy of the first edition, I keep my little volume for reading and had it with me on the steamer.

The Wakes, the house in which Gilbert White was born and in which he died, is still standing on what is by courtesy called the main street of the little village, which is, in its way, I suppose, as famous as any settlement of its size anywhere. The church of which he was rector, and in which he preached, when he was not wandering about observing with unexampled fidelity the flora and fauna of his native parish, stands near

Digitized by Google

the upper end of a tiny public square called the Plestor, or play-place, which dates only from yesterday, that is to say, from 1271! Originally an immense oak tree stood in the centre; but it was uprooted in a great storm some two centuries ago, and a sycamore now stands in its place. Encircling it is a bench upon which the rude forefathers of the hamlet may sit and watch the children at play, and on which we should have sat but that we were more interested in the great yew which stands in the near-by churchyard. It is one of the most famous trees in England, — a thousand years old, they say, — and looking old for its age; but it is so symmetrical in its proportions that its immense size is not fully realized until one slowly paces round it and discovers that its trunk is almost thirty feet in circumference.

The church, which has luckily escaped the restorations so many parish churches have been compelled to undergo, is in no wise remarkable. Many Whites are buried therein; but our particular White, the one who made Selborne notable among the villages of England, lies outside in the churchyard, near the north wall of the chancel, the grave being marked by a half-sunken headstone on which one reads with difficulty two simple letters, 'G. W.,' and a date, '26th June, 1793'; but a tablet within the church records at greater length his virtues and distinctions.

III

There is nothing more exhausting than the elegance of a big hotel; and to move from a fashionable caravansary in Philadelphia to another in London or Paris is to subject one's self to the inconvenience of travel, without enjoying any of its compensations. One wants to enjoy the difference of foreign countries rather than their somewhat artificial resemblances. At the end of a l when one is tired, one wan quiet, and simplicity — at le one does; and so, when our was called to a small apartme bemarle Street, from the ba which I could throw a stone windows of Quaritch's booksh event that such an act would a solution to the problem of sec books I wanted, I closed the ba stantly and was soon by way a householder on a very small

We had been told that 'se England was a thing of the pas has disappeared with the war; was only one of the many disc statements which were to be refuted in the experience. No c have been better cared for than valet and maid who brushed ou and brought us our breakfa shortly after ten each mor started out upon our wande whatever direction we would, any adventure that the streets don might afford. This is an sive and harmless occupatio esting in the event and delig retrospect. Is it Liszt who us to store up recollections for c tion in old age? Well, I am do

I know not which I enjoy mo ing the pavements of the we streets, which afford at eve scenes that recall some well-kn toric or literary incident, or jou into some unexplored regior opens up districts of hitherto pected interest. Years ago, wh ming first became fashionab never used to overlook Pettyco in far-off Whitechapel: of late has been cleaned up and made able and uninteresting. But ho people are there who know that a very pretty slum right in t of things, only a short distan of Liberty's famous shop in

Digitized by Google

in seeing how the
it up when you are
you will be aston-
hich the pursuit of
ppiness unfolds it-
streets and courts
. London has al-
n which extremes
h impinges upon
can greater con-
an in that *terra in-*
st to the south of
ves, if not in the
streets; and food,
elows are exposed
nd trestles in what
eakable confusion.
his curious slum
d Lucas, that sym-
London, called at-
delightful volume,
usiasms.

ny mind an even
ter, just off Fleet
urt, which I first
go, during a mem-
mble in company
ein, a Philadelphia
iend, who, by rea-
ng, retentive mem-
bservation, seemed
owledge of London
ere I had thought
home.

s east from Fetter
t by an archway,
passed unnoticed;
urprise one comes
v of old mansions,
inted out to me as
town residence of
. 'It was a grand
ir,' said a young
ing condition, who
ate one afternoon
'but it's let out
eir Hardie, M.P.,
e's in London; he
it's so quiet.'

'And how long have you lived here?' I inquired.

'Oh, sir, I've always lived about 'ere in this court, or close to; I like living in courts, it's so quiet; it's most like living in the country.'

All the houses look out upon ample, if now sadly neglected, gardens, through the centre of which flower-bordered paths lead to the front doors. Push open one of the several gates, — one is certain to be unlocked, — or peer through the cracks of an old oaken fence which still affords some measure of the privacy dear to the heart of every Englishman, and you will see a bit of vanishing London which certainly can last but a short time longer. The roar of the city is quite unheard; one has simply passed out of the twentieth century into the seventeenth.

Oxford Street is to me one of the least interesting streets in London. It is a great modern thoroughfare, always crowded with people going east in the morning, and west in the evening when their day's work is done. I was walking along this street late one afternoon, when my eye caught a sign, 'Hanway Street,' which instantly brought to mind the publishing business conducted in it more than a century ago by my lamented friend, William Godwin. I hoped to learn that it was named after the discoverer of the umbrella, but it is not. Hanway Street is a mean, narrow passage running north out of Oxford Street, as if intent upon going straightway to Hampstead; but it almost immediately begins to wobble and, finally changing its mind, turns east and stops at the Horse-Shoe Tavern in the Tottenham Court Road.

My hour of refreshment having come, I stopped there, too, and over a mug of ale I thought of Godwin, and as a result of my meditations, decided to follow up the Godwin trail. And so, the inner man refreshed, I continued east through

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Holborn until I came to Snowhill, to which street Godwin subsequently removed his business and his interesting family. Turning off to the left, and doubling somewhat on my tracks, I descended Snowhill, and found myself facing a substantial modern building, which challenged attention by reason of the rather unusual decoration of its façade. It needed but a glance to see that this building had been erected on the site of the Saracen's Head Inn, immortalized by Charles Dickens in *Nicholas Nickleby*. Let into the wall were two large panels, one being a school-scene bearing the legend 'Dotheboys Hall'; the other, a 'Mail Coach leaving Saracen's Head.' Over the arched doorway was a fine bust of Dickens, while to the left was a full-length figure of the immortal Mr. Squeers, and on the right a similar figure of Nicholas Nickleby.

In the pleasure of my discovery I almost forgot all about Godwin, whose shop was once near-by; proving again, what needs no proof, that many characters in fiction are just as sure of immortality as persons who once moved among us in the flesh. Then I remembered that John Bunyan had lived and died in this street, when Snowhill was described as being very narrow, very steep, and very dangerous. This led me to decide that I would make a pilgrimage to Bunyan's tomb in Bunhill Fields, which I had not visited for many years.

And so, a few days later, I found myself wandering about in that most depressing graveyard, in which thousands of men and women, famous in their time, found sepulture — in some cases merely temporary, for the records show that, after the passing of fifteen years or so, their graves were violated to make room for later generations, all traces of earlier interments having been erased. Poor Blake and his wife are among those whose graves can n be identified.

On the day of my visit it wa too damp to sit on the ground sad stories of anything; but I difficulty in coming upon the Defoe, or that of Bunyan, a larg like affair, with his recumben upon it. An old man whom I me ing about called my attentio fact that the nose had recent broken off, and told me that it h shot off by some soldier who h quartered during the war in the barracks of the Honorable Company. It appears that so creant had, to beguile the time, himself by taking pot shots at th ary, and that much damage h done before he was discovered. I shall accuse the Canadians of of vandalism. It is always we specific in making charges of th moreover, it will grieve my friend, Tait McKenzie, the s who comes to us from Scotland of Toronto, and who thinks it grievous crime to mutilate a stat to damage a man.

It will have been seen from t going that I am the gentlest of ex Give me the choice of roam streets of London in search of first edition of, say, *The Beggar'* — so delightfully performed after month at the Lyric Th Hammersmith, but which lasted ly a week in New York, — and a to explore some out-of-the-way with an unpronounceable nam my mind is made up in a mo have found the race with the sufficiently stimulating, and, o day, give me the simple, or at l contemplative, life.

Just before leaving home, lunched with my friend Fullert do; his face positively beamed w piness and his eye sparkled. Wh

Digitized by Google

Russia to see for
heviki were doing.
f misery, you may
Why look at it?
ians stew in their
ly they will come
eft, wagging their

to see for himself.
f us going his own
.
ne thing unusual
rested even so so-
r as Waldo, and
hich, on Armistice
ne eleventh of No-
tly eleven o'clock
l absolutely silent
tes. London is a
ceaseless ebb and
in a few centres
as with us, but
when this normal
y thousands from
on seeing the dedi-
aph in the centre
he burial of the
the Abbey, it is
And this huge
stroke of eleven,
a thing moved, ex-
nd there a horse
a bird, wondering
great silence, flut-
on's monument in
nd so it was, we
all over Australia
part of Asia and
Empire, Ireland
l with bowed head
ead. Not a wheel
ot a telegram or
me over the wires.
w how to stage big
eir Empire; with
and always in the
t last the bunting
the Cenotaph, and
he Unknown, with

the King representing the nation as chief mourner, were deposited in the Abbey, there formed a procession which several days afterward, when I sought to join it, was still almost a mile long!

IV

London can boast of countless little museums, or memorials, to this or that great man; and it is soon to have another: Wentworth Place, in Hampstead, with which the name of Keats is so closely connected. When this is opened to the public, — I have visited it privately, — it is to be hoped that it will take on something of the kindly atmosphere of the Johnson House in Gough Square, rather than that of the cold museum dedicated to that old dyspeptic philosopher, Thomas Carlyle, in Chelsea. I remember well when he died. He was said to have been the Dr. Johnson of his time. Heaven keep us! Carlyle! who never had a good or kindly word to say of any man or thing; whose world, 'mostly fools,' bowed down before him and accepted his ravings as criticism; whose Prussian philosophy, 'the strong thing is the right thing,' was exploded in the great war. I have lived to see his fame grow dimmer day by day, while Johnson's grows brighter as his wit, wisdom, and, above all, his humanity, become better known and understood.

To Gough Square, then, I hastened, once I was comfortably installed in my little flat, to see if any of the suggestions I had made at a dinner given by Cecil Harmsworth, in the winter of 1914, to the Johnson Club, to which I was invited, had been carried out. The door was opened to my knock by an old lady who invited me in as if I were an expected guest. She explained that it was hoped that ultimately one room would be dedicated to the memory of Boswell and others of the Johnsonian

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

circle, — Goldsmith, Garrick, Mrs. Thrale, Fanny Burney, and the rest, — and that the whole house would be pervaded by the immortal memory of Dr. Johnson, the kindest as well as the greatest of men; but that, owing to the war, not as much had been accomplished as had been hoped.

'And so,' I replied, 'my suggestions, have not been entirely forgotten. I had feared — '

'Why,' continued the old lady, 'can you be Mr. Newton of Philadelphia?'

I could have hugged her; for, gentle reader, this is much nearer fame than I ever hoped for. What a morning it was! Mrs. Dyble called for her daughter, and I was presented, and again found to be not unknown; and believe me, these two women were so absolutely steeped in Johnson as to shame my small learning and make me wish for the support of real honest-to-God Johnsonians, such as Tinker or Osgood, or my friend R. B. Adam, of Buffalo, who has the greatest Johnson collection in the world, and who, when next he goes to London, has a treat in store which will cause him to forget, at least momentarily, his charming wife and his young son; charming wives and young sons being not uncommon, whereas Gough Square is unique.

Any man of fine heart and substantial means could have bought the Gough Square house, but it required a singularly wise and modest man to fit it up so simply, so in keeping with the Johnsonian tradition; to say, 'We don't want a cold, dry-as-dust museum; we want the house to be as nearly as possible what it was when the great Doctor lived in it and compiled the dictionary in its attic room.' So it is, that 17 Gough Square, Fleet Street, is one of the places which it is a delight to visit. A fine Johnsonian library has been lent, and may ultimately be given, to the house; paintings, portraits, rare prints, and autograph letters abound; and in these interesting surroundi friends, literary societies, and c may meet for the asking, and teas dinners may be sent in from the ne Cheshire Cheese. And all this m have been done, and yet the h might have lacked one of its gre charms, namely, the kindly pres and hospitality of two women, the covery of whom, by Mr. Harmsw was a piece of the rarest good fort Mrs. Dyble is a soldier's wife, her band being a color sergeant in on the crack regiments; and the story that, during the air-raids, when Germans were dropping bombs o and sundry, the old lady went, not the 'tubes' for shelter, but, to meet bombs half-way, into the attic; th taking down a copy of Boswell, she quite composedly through the ni for, as she said, she would not be wo of her soldier husband if she were prepared to face death at home a was doing in France. But how l I ask myself, will her daughter, Rowell, a pretty widow, be conten live upon the memory of Dr. Johns

I was especially pleased to conve the Johnson House a superb ph graph of a portrait of Dr. Johnson Reynolds, which had recently been quired by Mr. John H. McFadde Philadelphia. I was sitting in my one afternoon, when Mr. McFad came up and asked me how I would to see a picture of Dr. Johnson whic had just received from the Agnew London. Of course, I was delighted, a few minutes later I was in the s but exquisite gallery of eighteenth- tury portraits which Mr. McFad has collected. Familiar as I am posed to be with Johnson portrait had never seen the one which shown me. It was obviously Dr. Jo son; and as soon as I returned home had an opportunity of consulting notes, I saw that it was the port

Digitized by Google

or of Ashbourne.
able to learn, it
ed or even photo-
ts owner that he
d all Johnsonians
ed in the best pos-
end a copy to the
hfield, and also to
This Mr. McFad-
to do; and so, on
, I had the pleas-
ing the pictures.
ery old man; the
the face is kindly,
is the tremulous-
t, indeed, to be a
d it pleases me to
Doctor has just
oted by Boswell:
n prepared to call
easier terms than

hen Germany was
London and Eng-
that no real mili-
rved thereby and
asures in the mu-
ays been open to
endangered, Ger-
ally replied that
eep her bric-à-brac
r London is a for-
t know; doubtless
, and doubtless a
ic-à-brac is stored
wer is a fatiguing
have visited it for
eas I shall never
London Museum,
rything that illus-
he social and busi-
who by no accident
d a leading part in
rld.

llection is housed
s regarded as the
ivate residence in
ed in Stable Yard,
's Palace, and not

so far from Buckingham Palace as to prevent the late Queen Victoria from dropping in occasionally for a cup of tea with her friend, the Duchess of Sutherland, who for many years made it her residence. The story goes, that Her Majesty was accustomed to remark that she had left her house to visit her friend in her palace. Be this as it may, it is a magnificent structure, admirably fitted for its present purpose; and I was fortunate enough to be one of its first visitors when it was thrown open to the public in the spring of 1914. The arrangement of the exhibits leaves nothing to be desired; and if one does not find the garments of the present reigning family very stimulating, one can always retire to the basement and while away an hour or so among the panoramas of Tudor London, or fancy himself for a brief time a prisoner in Newgate.

But the streets of a great city are more interesting than any museum, and it was my custom generally to stroll through St. James's Park, gradually working my way toward Westminster, thence taking a bus to whatever part of London my somewhat desultory plans led me. One morning I had just climbed the steps which lead to Downing Street, when a heavy shower forced me to stand for a few moments under an archway, almost opposite number 10, which, as all the world knows, is the very unimposing residence of the Prime Minister. Standing under the same archway was an admirable specimen of the London policeman, — tall, erect, polite, intelligent, imperturbable, — and it occurred to me that the exchange of a 'British-made' cigar for the man's views on the war would be no more than a fair exchange. And right here let me say that, all the time I was in England, I did not hear one word of complaint or one word of exultation. There was no doubt in Bobby's mind

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

who won the war, 'but mind you, your fellows was most welcome, when they came'; and I thought I detected just a trifle of sarcasm in his last words. 'We don't like the Germans, but we don't wear ourselves out 'ating 'em,' he said, in reply to my question.

Just here our conversation was interrupted by an old lady, who came up to inquire at what hour Mrs. Lloyd George was going out. 'I'm not in her confidence, ma'am,' replied my friend; and continuing, he suggested that he had gone to bed hungry many a night but had n't minded in the least, because he knew that British ships were taking the American army to France. 'I've a tendency to get 'eavy, hanyway,' he continued. His views on the League of Nations were what one usually heard. He 'had no confidence a man's neighbors would do more for a man than a man would do for himself'; that 'Wilson was a bit 'eady; and the American people 'ad let 'im down something terrible.'

Another morning, walking past the Horse Guards, I noticed on approaching the Mall an enormous German cannon mounted on its heavy carriage, the wheels of which must have had at least five-inch tires. This engine of death, having shot its last bolt, was an object of the greatest interest to the children who constantly played about it. As I passed it, one little chap, probably not over four years of age, was kicking it forcibly with his little foot, his act being regarded approvingly the while by the Bobby who was looking on; but when finally he began to climb up on the wheel, from which he could have got a nasty fall, the policeman took the little lad in his arms, lifted him carefully to the ground, and bade him 'be hoff,' with the remark, 'You'll be tearing that toy to pieces before you are a month older; then we won't 'ave nothing to remind us of the war.'

'I should n't think you wer
forget it,' I remarked, look
decorations and handing hir

'Well, sir,' he replied, tha
and putting the cigar in his he
curious how one thing drive
out of your mind. I was in i
years, and yet, except when
that gun, I can't rightly say
much thought.'

V

I had an experience one da
shall always remember, it wa
pected and far-reaching. I v
in the back room of Sawyer's
in Oxford Street, talking o
and rather especially of M
Jacobs's district thereof, in w
recently made several interest
cruises,' in company with
watchman (he who had a ba
festooned from his watch-cha
be remembered), when I f
than saw that, while I was
man had entered and seem
waiting, and rather impatien
into the conversation. Now
it came about, I don't exac
but soon I found myself
that Londoners know relati
of their great city and that i
the enlightened stranger w
knew his way about.

'And this to me,' said the s
a harsh, strident voice, of suc
timbre that its owner could h
a whisper heard in a ro
'Think of it,' he continued,
Sawyer, 'that I should live to
ed in my den — by a — by a

He paused, not at a loss f
so much as turning over in
whether that word should be
the reverse. This gave me
tunity to look at the man wh
tered, unasked, into the conv
very much the same way t

Digitized by Google

entered into his London. He was seemingly about sixty years of age, short rather than tall, with piercing eyes under bushy eyebrows, but chiefly remarkable for his penetrating voice, which he used as an organ, modulating it or giving it immense power. One felt instinctively that he was no patrician, but rather a 'city man' accustomed to giving orders and having them obeyed promptly, and having a degree of confidence in himself — say, rather, assurance — which one associates with Chicago rather than with London.

Now I am conceited enough to think that, with the ordinary mortal, I can hold my own in conversation when London is the subject; so almost before I knew it, I was trying to make myself heard by one who had evidently decided to take the lead in the conversation. The result was that two men were talking for victory at the same time, greatly to the amusement of Sawyer.

Finally my stranger-friend said, 'Have you many books on London?'

To which I replied, relieved that the subject had taken a bookish turn, 'Yes, about three hundred,' which number is, say, a hundred and fifty more than I actually possess.

'I have over six thousand,' said my friend; 'I have every book of importance on London that ever has been written.'

'Yes,' said I, 'and you have the advantage in discovering first how many books I had. If I had been as keen as mustard, as you are, I would have asked the question, and you would have said three hundred; then I could have said six thousand.'

'Listen to him,' roared my friend; 'he even doubts my word. Would you like to see my books?'

'Have you a copy of Stow?' I replied, to try him out.

'Yes,' answered my friend; 'every edition, including a presentation copy of the first edition of 1598, with an inscription to the Lord Mayor.'

Now, presentation copies of the *Survay*, properly regarded as the first book on London, are very rare; I had never seen one, and I replied that nothing would give me greater pleasure than to see his books. When and how could a meeting be arranged?

'Shall we say next Thursday afternoon?'

'Very good, but where?'

'Now,' continued my friend, 'pay attention. Tell your second chauffeur to get out your third Rolls-Royce car — '

'Never mind my chauffeurs and my Rolls-Royce cars,' I interrupted; 'if you are on the line of a penny bus, tell me how to reach you from Piccadilly Circus.'

'Good,' continued my friend; 'you know the Ritz?'

'From the outside,' I replied, 'perfectly.'

'Well, go to the Bobby who stands outside the Ritz, and ask him to tell you what bus to take to Clapham Junction; and when you get there, just ask any Bobby to direct you to John Burns's on the north side of Clapham Common.'

John Burns! Had I heard aright? Was it possible that I was actually talking to John Burns, the great labor leader, who had once marched a small army of 'Dockers' from the East End of London to Westminster, and who had finally become an all-powerful Member of Parliament, and Privy Councillor, and President of the Board of Trade and of the Local Government Board; John Burns, without whose approval not a statue, not a pillar-box or a fire-plug had been located for the past twenty years, and who had, when the war broke out, resigned all his offices of honor and emolument because he could not conscientiously go along with the government! As I recovered from my

Digitized by Google

astonishment, John Burns, with a fine sense of dramatic values, had disappeared. I looked at his name and address written in his own hand in my little engagement-book. 'Well,' said I to myself, 'that looks like a perfectly good invitation; John Burns will be expecting me about half-past four, and I am not going to disappoint him.'

A few days later, at the hour appointed, we descended from a taxi and found our friend awaiting us at his front gate. Across the roadway stretched Clapham Common, itself not without historic interest; but it was a cold, raw day in late October, and the inside of a city home is always more interesting than the outside. As I removed my coat, I saw at a glance that I had not been deceived in the number of his books. There were books everywhere, about fifteen thousand of them. All over the house were open shelves from floor to ceiling, with here and there a rare old cabinet packed with books, which told the life-story of their owner. Books are for reading, for reference, and for display. John Burns had not stinted himself in any direction. Throwing open the door of a good-sized room in which a fire (thank God!) was burning brightly, Burns said briefly, 'London, art and architecture in this room; in the room beyond, political economy, housing and social problems. Rare books and first editions in the drawing-room. Now come upstairs: here is biography and history.' Then, throwing open the door of a small room, he said, 'This is my workshop; here are thousands and thousands of pamphlets, carefully indexed.' On landing at the head of the stair, he said, 'Newton, I've taken a fancy to you, and I'm going to let you handle — carefully, mind you — the greatest collection of Sir Thomas More in the world; over six hundred items, twice as many as there are in the British Museum. Here they are, manuscripts, letters, first editi
then, dropping the arrogance
lector who had made his poi
up a little copy of *Utopia*, wh
bought as a boy for sixpence
'This book has made me w
for me it is the greatest b
world; it is the first book I ev
it is the corner-stone of my l
foundation on which I hav
life. Now let us have tea!'

During this pleasant funct
my host with question afte
and he, knowing that he wa
interviewed, was frankness i
replies. His judgment of the
of England with whom he h
for a lifetime was shrewd, p
and dispassionate; and, abov
ly; their conduct of the war,
for not going along with the
and Lord Morley were the
spicuous men in England wh
outbreak of the war, retired i
life) was forceful if, to me,
ing; and I quoted Blake's ax
man who was unwilling to fi
truth might be forced to figh
without in the least distu
equanimity. My remark al
served to send the conversa
other direction, and we wer
cussing Blake's wife, who
name he knew, and his unkn
in Bunhill Fields, as if the
effect of the great war were
that could be dismissed. See
signed photograph of Lord
the wall, and a copy of his *L
stone* and his own *Recollecti*
shelves, I voiced my opinio
friend was the author of five
est volumes ever written, an
would be glad to debate with

In reply to my question
he had accomplished so muc
leading as he has done for
years the life of a busy publ
answered, 'I read quickly, h

Digitized by Google

o false modesty
nd I never play

in one respect.'
asked; and then,
on't play golf, I

my time to score
to speak French,
tand unless it is
English accent.
to ask him wheth-
ucer's nun, stud-
Bowe, as evident-
aris was to him
hed heartily, and
the quotation.
empts to heckle
vork cut out for
harangued mobs
ondon and else-
own against all
f Commons, and
orary degrees for
from half a dozen
ly to feel the pin-
And when the
ny wife was with
ll too soon, it was
g that we were to
me walking and
er; and anyone
for a guide in
ad, is not likely

soon to forget the joys of the experience. Holidays at last come to an end.

> If all the year were playing holidays,
> To sport would be as tedious as to work.

We came home and, greetings exchanged, our first impressions were those of annoyance. As a nation, we have no manners; one might have supposed that we, rather than the English, had had our nervous systems exposed to the shock of battle; that we, rather than they, had been subject to air-raids and to the deprivations of war; that we had become a debtor rather than a creditor nation. We found rudeness and surliness everywhere. The man in the street had a 'grouch,' despite the fact that he was getting more pay for less work than any other man in the world; and that the President had told him that he had an *inalienable* right to strike. For the first time in my life I felt that 'labor would have to liquidate' — to use a phrase to which, in the past, I have greatly objected. No question was civilly answered. The porter who carried our bags took a substantial tip with a sneer, and passed on. It may be that America is 'the land of the free and the home of the brave'; but we found the streets of our cities dangerous, noisy, hideous, and filthy. It is not pleasant to say these things, but they are true.

Digitized by Google

BACK-YARD ARCHÆOLOGY

BY WARREN K. MOOREHEAD

During the past fifty years citizens and institutions of New England and New York have contributed large sums for archæological expeditions in remote sections of the New and Old Worlds. I suppose it is not inaccurate to state that certain individuals of New England were pioneers in financing Mexican, Central American, and South American expeditions for the Peabody Museum. Dr. Winslow's labors aroused much interest in the study of early European and Egyptian cultures, and other researches which were begun by the English, French, or Italians. To-day, the explorer seeking funds for a survey of ruins in Yucatan finds ready response to his appeal for contributions. In short, our American public — particularly here, east of the Hudson — is more or less educated in archæological matters. The subject has become of popular interest. We read with avidity articles in the *National Geographical Magazine* concerning peoples of remote corners of the globe — although these same descriptions, printed thirty years ago, would have bored us. Everybody knows about the cave-man, and what he did; our Sunday newspapers regularly announce the discovery of another 'new buried city.' Even the movies portray expeditions of all kinds, some slightly 'scientific,' and others made in the foothills out from Los Angeles, or in the mountains and woods a mile from the business section of Saranac Lake.

Last, but not least, Mr. Wells has delved — or his assistants have — into archæologic lore, and we find the whole 'beginnings of the human race' c densed into a few pages, in order t the tired business man, or weary p fessional person, or the general pub may absorb the leading facts of pre- tory, as well as history itself, quic and conveniently.

People not only buy, but they ac ally read, books treating in more en taining fashion of archæological disc eries and primitive peoples. I re that, thirty years ago, a scientist mediately lost caste, did he write the public. Following the preval custom of that time, his works were and pedantic. Few persons outside cult to which he belonged knew him his books; for it was considered form for him to do that which would terest mankind at large. To-day, m of us believe that our work is a par the generally accepted educational s tem; that it should be presented in attractive form, in order that it m reach the largest number of read While much nonsense has undoubte been published in the press and ma zines, and a great deal of sensatio and unscientific information disse nated by the movies, yet, on the wh people are better informed to-day c cerning the early history of our ra and of primitive man in general, th they were two decades ago.

Permit me to hasten, at this ju ture, to assure the anxious scholar t I do not claim there are more master archæology to-day than formerly; w I wish to convey is the impression t our public has a more intelligent in

Digitized by Google

This is indicated in
files of the average
im compare letters
to-day, and he will
respondent to-day,
e museum curator
somewhat familiar
have fewer 'crank'
t has been three
hese came to our
one month during
etters from persons
my 'formulæ' for
ods, by means of
es are found.'
sons supposed that
lace where 'relics'
then exhibited to
y-seeking visitors.
de toward the mu-
our museum prop-
of the Association
spread and influ-
iseums, — popular
as well, — and to
l talks on natural
topics.
rt in lifting archæ-
id museum study)
ut of the specialist
the hill, that its
idden, but, on the
men, is consider-
England occupies
n as the patron of
rch. Was it not at
in 1803, that the
ng-vessel masters
s' and ship-models
hem? Most fitting
there, after a cen-
istence, should dis-
objects of the long
or Morse, and at
or Putnam, began
ly eighteen-sixties.
ectures, sparkling
ith worth-while in-
d interest and had a

far-reaching result. Putnam preached thorough science in exploration, and gathered about him many young students. These men are to-day heads of, or occupy positions of standing in, a dozen of the larger museums in this and other countries.

Yet all the interest on the part of the young scientists who went forth, and of the men who gave funds, and of the public, seemed to centre in places *away* from and not *in* New England. With a few exceptions — notably Mr. C. C. Willoughby's explorations in Maine — no one thought that there *was* and *is* such a thing as the archæology of New England. Obviously, the reason they all neglected the home territory is not far afield. We have no mounds, no cliff-dwellings or ruined cities. We even lack caverns and cave-man! Thus we possess nothing calculated to appeal to the imagination. Wealthy people would give money for investigations of visible monuments. They had seen pictures of remains in the West, the South, and Asia. Putnam could secure little money for work hereabouts. He was told that there was neither romance nor charm in New England exploration. As a natural sequence, archæologists, with one accord, went West, South, or abroad, with the result that, until systematic explorations were undertaken in 1912, we knew less about our own land (archæologically) than we did about regions five thousand miles away.

In 1909 I visited my friend Director Willoughby of the Peabody Museum, and consulted with him concerning work in our home field. It had been neglected; yet here we might find the beginnings of Algonquin culture, Eskimo influence, tribes of pre-Pilgrim days, and so forth. There were far-reaching possibilities. Our trustees kindly voted the necessary funds, and I applied methods used in Ohio, Arizona,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

and New Mexico to the State of Maine. In short, we ran a Western survey in the East.

For nine years we have worked hard, carrying large crews to the most distant points in Maine and elsewhere; it is now time to render the public an account of our stewardship. During this period we have traveled over 5000 miles in our large, twenty-foot canoes. We have found seventeen Indian cemeteries of the prehistoric period, and taken out the contents of 440 graves. Our men mapped over 200 village, camp, or shell-heap sites in Maine alone. The grand total of artifacts in stone, bone, shell, and clay is rising 17,000; and all this in *one* state of New England where there were supposed to be few 'Indian remains.' We found one shell-heap (in the Bar Harbor region, near Lemoine) over 700 feet long and five feet deep, in places, and averaging over two feet of débris. From this heap the men took 5000 articles of prehistoric manufacture, and two years later reëxplored for another museum, and secured 2500 more. So far as I am aware, the total of 7500 stone, clay, bone, and shell objects (all human handiwork) from *one* site is exceeded by only five other sites in the whole United States, and these are in the thickly settled mound-builder and cliff-pueblo regions of the West.

Our stone-gouges from Maine graves evince a skill in stone-working, grinding, and polishing not excelled elsewhere in the world. That is, the Maine gouges are easily the highest Stone-Age art in gouge manufacture. I am not speaking of axes or hatchets, but of the long polished gouges.

We find slender spears 14 to 22 inches in length, beautifully wrought and scarcely thicker than a lead pencil. The famous prehistoric Japanese spears are much shorter and of less fine workmanship. One polished dagger of slate, with a wide blade and handle carefully worked out, is the equal of

specimen I have observed f
or Asia.

These graves are of suc
that no bones remain the
are eight distinct types of
— all stone, — and great
powdered red hematite oc
grave, seldom less than
quarts, and frequently ha
No large deposit of soft hem
in Maine, save at Katahdin
and analysis indicates that
brought it from that sourc
in canoes, possibly overla
villages farther south. N
ochre masses has been fou
heaps along the coast, or in
their village sites. We th
clude that it was used i
ceremonies.

These types of stone a
sistently occur in the 'Red
ple's' graves, but in more r
quin burials they are tot
We have proved the existen
ancient culture, different fro
in this country.

My purpose in mentioni
coveries at some length is n
attention to the interesti
known field that we have a
now proposed to spend th
years in intensive explorati
Indian places in Connecti
Island, and Massachusett
coöperation of local histori
entific societies and certain
We shall attempt — at lea
small measure — to reconst
of our aborigines in pre-Co
and at best our task is bes
culties. There are no prom
ments indicating where we
vate. Our results are obtai
persistent testing of one
another, for the surface ind
meagre. Land has been
hereabouts for the past tw

Digitized by Google

of the village-site
estroyed. We look
artz chips, burned
d soil. Then we
f ash-pits and pot-
of a large or per-
Upon a knoll, or
r-by, should be the
the men at work
It has been care-
in one hundred
nined, we find one
centage is ninety-
us — not a very
n if measured by
s.
n, for many years
logy in the Smith-
utter a sentiment
s: 'Evidences of
n of a given area
portion as they ex-
n search.' This is
ew England. Be-
of remains and the
to discover sites,
added to our ex-
nent of chance is
r as the element
types. Common
the shell-heaps, if
yers, when studied
to be those of the
toric dog, and ex-
Paint People' cul-
innings of Eskimo
it is unlike any-
tinent.
John River, in ex-
ne, a region of un-
no sign of human
occasional aban-
we discover pot-
er north in Maine
eviously reported.
uth of Big Black
ec line, and find a
over ancient ash-
man tarried some

time and manufactured stone knives and weapons.

We voyaged down the Penobscot and stopped at Mattawamkeag. Here once stood a village of large extent, inhabited at different times; for we discovered one type of implement on the west bank and other and different forms on the east bank. Upon the high hill to the north were buried the later Abenaki of the Jesuit mission; we found some of their simple graves, but ceased excavating, as it has not been our custom to excavate in cemeteries where Indians were buried with church rites. Tradition has it that one of the priests was mortally wounded when the mission was destroyed by Massachusetts troops; and on the retreat of the English, the Indians searched the ruins, found the chapel-bell, and buried it alongside the good Father in a simple grave on that hill.

Many interesting things are to be observed in New England archæology. Pipes were not so common as in the West or South, and the pottery is far inferior to that of the Iroquois and southern Algonquins. Thus, smoking was not in general use and the ceramic art was undeveloped. The stone axe probably came in from the West, and does not appear to be native to the region.

Our greatest Indian population lay along the coast, the lower Connecticut Valley, Martha's Vineyard, and Rhode Island. It is here that the larger villages of Pequots, Narragansetts, Podunks, and others were located. On the large town-sites and in the cemeteries one should be able to discover articles indicating tribal commerce with bands living in New York or New Jersey, and also to obtain specimens of aboriginal art, since the more skilled workmen would naturally locate in the populous communities. Hence, when the survey inspects the site of King Philip's town,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

the Pequots' fort, and similar spots, it is hoped that lower layers of the ash-pits will prove rich in evidence. There must have been Indian towns in New England long before the Smith, Cabot, and other visitations. Whence these people came, and their relationship to Long Island and New Jersey Algonquins — all these and similar questions may not be solved, but we shall certainly obtain more reliable data upon their migrations or origins.

New England is thickly settled, and most Indian sites are to-day occupied by towns. Where once were wigwams, lawns stretch down to the sea. One would suppose that we might encounter opposition in securing permission to excavate, yet the contrary is true. In twelve years of expeditions, we have requested hundreds of owners to allow us to excavate, and have been refused but ten times. This is a remarkable record. One lady at Bar Harbor stated that I could open trenches, provided no dirt was left on her lawn. We brought our tent-flies into service, used a sod-cutter, rolled the turf and stacked it on one tent, the earth on another. We dug large pits, filled them carefully, replaced the sod, and wet it down. My men, proud of a good job, have always, with one accord, agreed that she paid them their greatest compliment. We worked three hours; she, meanwhile, played auction bridge with her friends in the cottage. When we had finished, she came out, looked over the lawn, and asked me *when* we were to begin digging!

At Orland, Maine, a cemetery extended under a large barn, filled with new hay. The owner consented to explorations, provided his hay was not left out over-night. We secured extra labor, moved the stock, vehicles, and hay outside, took up the floor, and found seventeen graves. These were opened and photographed. Then the floor was relaid, the stock led back, hay put in the mow, and work finished before dark. We have taken up trees and flower-beds, moved pens and sheds, worked under a saw-mill, and even dug in railroad yards. One wealthy lady would not permit us to complete an important cemetery because the pine-needles covering the sand might be disturbed. These had fallen from 'runt' pines out on an ocean-swept point, and were of no size. I offered to send the men with a team into a heavy pine growth a mile distant and bring her a wagon load of larger needles; but in vain. Nature had deposited those pine 'spills,' and they must remain. Hence, we were compelled to desist; but local people dug there Sundays, undermined her precious trees, and they all fell! Therefore, she lost both trees and needles, and the cemetery was lost to science.

There is a charm in New England archæological research. Most explorers prefer difficult tasks, and finding evidences of our prehistoric American predecessors in this region is not easy. It is pleasant, this voyaging along in the canoe, carrying a crew of State o' Maine men, who have accompanied us on many a trip — the Susquehanna, Texas deserts, Connecticut, Lake Champlain, New Brunswick, and all the Maine rivers. We land at a convenient spot, and set up camp in thirty-two minutes. All hands help the cook, and we get four tents erected and baggage stored within that time. Then we scatter and look for surface signs. The farmers or villagers come to camp, and our mission is explained. They are very accommodating and kind — only the foreigners living in the lower Connecticut have caused us trouble.

One might suggest that explorers in distant lands face dangers, and that our work, contrasted with theirs, is both simple and easy. I have worked in the

Digitized by Google

days, before the
onally know one's
storms, how one
ater in the desert.
vith horse-thieves,
and experienced
Yet, in July or
Woods, the 'five
nade life miserable
have caused more
nan we ever expe-
nous Far Western
ne running of our
ne, safely through
e fifteen-mile falls
by Ralph Dorr,
surpassed by any-
by us on the West-
gating three long
avy sea-fog, from
one day, consti-
nich the crew may

suppose that there
possible in line of
take unnecessary
land explorations,
if possible, join us
ine to be made this
pe to examine the
head of the East
ence travel across
he upper St. John

waters, turn southeast, and work down to the Rangeleys.

There are not many indications of ancient Indian occupation in that region, for natives could exist with less hardships nearer the coast. As the colonists spread inland, there was an Indian migration northward; but there is no evidence of long-continued residence north of the central portion of the state. Indeed, I am of the opinion that the Indian occupation of much of Maine and Canada is comparatively recent.

Quite likely the next few years of exploration along the lower Connecticut River, and the coast from New Haven to Providence (including a strip some twenty miles back from salt water), will prove that we had a considerable Indian population prior to the Smith and Cabot voyages. The relationship of these tribes to other Algonquins is to be carefully studied, through a comparison of artifacts. Archæology alone must furnish the evidence, since languages and folk-lore of native Americans living prior to 1600 are unknown.

A few years hence, the pages of New England Indian history previous to European contact will have been written. We shall then realize that our aborigines played no unimportant part in the life of the American red race.

Digitized by Google

PIONEERS

BY MRS. A. DEVEREUX

[*The following authentic letters, which the Atlantic has been privileged to the yellowing sheets still in the writer's possession, tell a story of the pio which ought to be preserved. No introduction is necessary, but the reader sh that the writer was, in 1865, a wife of ten years. Mrs. Devereux still li age of ninety-three.*]

COLUMBUS, NEBRASKA, *October* 15, 1865.
(Geographical centre of the United States)

DEAR MOTHER, —

I have a long story to tell you, of why I am here with Will, in this small, rough prairie village, so small and remote, I am sure you have never heard of it before. It is 90 miles from our home in Council Bluffs, with no nearer settlement of any size in any direction, and hundreds of miles from any railroad, and I doubt if the view from our window would impress you very favorably, yet it seems very good to us to be here.

My last letter to you told of Will's successful return journey from Denver, as far as Cottonwood Springs; from Fort Kearney later he wrote of greatly improved health: he would be home ready for duty in two weeks more, coming on slowly to get the full benefit of longer outdoor life in the early October days; and his enthusiasm over wagon-travel and camping-out for health was greater than ever. Ranches were not so far apart, and the ranch women could bake his bread, which, he owned, with his own baking in the Dutch oven, had been often very poor. Nor need he wait to join the slow progress of pack-trains, as he was forced to do farther West, where the Indians were dangerous and an escort of soldiers was furnished. He would enjoy camping by himself in freedom and qui would soon be home.

At 4 o'clock P.M. of the ve letter reached me, a telegram Grand Island, saying, 'Very roadside; come at once and doctor.' You can imagine h was for an instant, and then t to move heaven and earth him quickly; but where Gra was, or how I was to get the no more than if I had not years at one of the gatewa great plain stretching 500 to Denver.

I called to a passing friend tunately, was a woman of p mind, and had been to Denv She recalled at once the imp that it was the day for the coach, which only every oth Omaha at evening for Denv was nearly time for the last b ferry to Omaha, and the ferr miles away.

'Send me the doctor and s take me to Omaha,' was all t ed to say; and hastened to p things in my bag I could thi

She found our good friend er, Mr. Deming, at the first his buggy, and he drove to t once, and offered to see me the coach; and best of all, a

Digitized by Google

e could furnish me
y, and arrange, as
emergency which
It was impossible
with me, but he
e me all the advice

rom the time the
e, we were on our
tle time to collect
g the ferry. I was
over that terrible
ne new light on it,
r hesitation about
nor did I recall
about such rough
d West, or what it
strength, if not of
ondered, vaguely,
ould ask me if I
ter try to go. Of

a just in time, and
the whole of the
h for me; and as I
clock, in the dark-
driver say, 'Two
l bring her there';
s outside showed
le and frightened
y.
s not added to my
movement of the
relief, and the in-
lack night left me
ough Mr. Deming
voice, as he shut
lady going to her
you be kind to
cious of persons in
ought no more of
t making myself
for one who could
e ill-smelling blan-
made a tent-cover
the big mosquito
ful friends insisted
t home.
l, we had left the

rolling hills between Omaha and the Elkhorn behind us, and were passing rapidly over the plains of the Platte valley. I had grudged the delays of the night, when they stopped to change horses, for every hour made one less of that terrible sum of 'two nights and a day,' before I could reach Will, 'ill by the roadside'; but when the light became clearer in the coach, there was a moment's sense of repugnance, but no fear, when I met the eyes of three of the roughest-looking men I had ever seen, staring at me. They had not spoken a word through the long night, I believe in kindness to a lone woman, though they seemed not only coarse, but dull. They rarely spoke to each other during the time I was with them, and never to me; and when awake, seemed filled with astonishment at my presence there.

At the noon station a new passenger took the vacant seat in front of me, and it was very pleasant to see the unmistakable signs of a more cultivated type of man. He was kind to me, giving me helpful attentions at the rough stage-stations, where we tried to eat. Once he insisted, without any complaint of mine, that a basin of water should be placed on a chair inside the shanty for my use, instead of my sharing with the men the towels and basin on the bench outside the door. A sense of being protected by this good man encouraged a little sleep, and the slow hours wore on.

Toward night I began to inquire about Grand Island, supposing that I was to go on to that station, and should reach it next morning. But when, later, the driver was changed with the horses, the new one came to the coach-door and asked, 'Is there a woman here, going to her sick husband?' To my eager inquiries of what he could tell me about Will, he could only say, 'They told me to watch out for ye, and leave ye at Lone Tree; get there in the night

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

some time.' This, I found, was eight miles east of Grand Island, from which the telegram came.

After midnight I began to peer into the darkness with beating heart, full of vague and terrible fears. I think my friend in the coach was anxious, too, with too much sympathy to sleep; for he was good to me in a silent way, which helped me to wait quietly.

At two o'clock in the morning the coach suddenly stopped, and we knew it was not to change horses; it was too quiet. The coach-door opened, and in silence my neighbor sprang out, and I silently followed. The driver bade us make for a dim light not far away; it was a lantern hanging under Will's wagon, standing by the roadside. My friend helped me to climb into the dark opening under the canvas cover, from which a voice strangely unnatural called faintly, 'I thought you would never come; now let me go to sleep.'

Instinctively I knew there was peril, though I could not distinguish his face.

The stranger exclaimed, 'I can't leave you so; this is dreadful; I will stay.'

But I knew Will must, first of all, get rest that night. No doubt he had forced himself to keep awake until the coach came by. I hope the man knew I was grateful for his kindness, but I could only whisper, 'Go on; I can do; send me a physician if you can find one.' Later on, I did get comfort at a critical time, through his remembrance of us, though he found no physician.

I crawled along the wagon-bed until I came to Will's head, and sat down on the straw and soothed him to sleep. He was too ill to tell me anything about himself, only feebly saying once, 'I shall get well now.'

When it was light enough to see, I crept out the front, and found the wagon was drawn up beside an old empty hut, and near-by was a newly built log-cabin, and a long sod-barn, and no other habitation in sight. Two half-grown boys came out of the new cabin, and I went in to find someone to get me the nourishment I must have for Will, and food for myself, and to learn something about him.

A frowzy, dull-eyed woman met me; her yellow face and yellow hair and lank figure told me the kind of emigrant she was. She seemed to have not a particle of interest in the sick man outside; had I been some unknown species of human kind, she could not have appeared more dazed. A coarse-featured girl of eighteen, maybe, joined her, and paying no attention to my wants, they continued to stand silent, and stare at my face, my clothes, and my hair.

I think nothing up to that time came so near breaking my courage as the silent stare of that dull, passionless woman. I knew then that I was little better than alone, on the wide prairie, with a very sick man.

I begged for fire, and hot water, and milk, and gained by degrees from them, that Will had come to their cabin a week before and given his horses to the care of the sons, because he was ill, and had sent one of them back to Grand Island with the dispatch to me, later; and they had made soup for him once, when he said they must. Did I think he would die? and, Was it a catching sickness?

I knew as little as they what his sickness was; but I meant that he should *not* die, and that they should give me help, though I did not say so. The hot milk I gave him revived him, and he slept again, while I searched his box of stores, and made myself a homelike cup of tea on their old broken cook-stove. A spider and a kettle were all the utensils they had; but I cleaned up Will's saucepans, and then looked about me. He could not stay longer in that wagon. I could not climb in and out, and care

Digitized by Google

for him. They insisted there was no place for him in their cabin, and indeed he needed quiet and good air, which he would not have there; but I found in the old hut a bedstead frame, with boards across it, and on them a ragged hay-bed.

The floor of the hut was like that of an old barn, and the sod-roof was broken in spots, but was shelter enough for those mild sunny days. I asked for fresh hay for the bed, and in perfect silence they did just what I bade them to do, and then stood again and stared at me.

The bed was the sole piece of furniture in the hut, and there was not much more in the newer cabin. I looked about for a box to serve as a chair, but none could be found. A cask of onions and one of oats stood at one side of the small square room, and the chickens ran in and out of the broken door, freely, all day. When the boys came to their breakfast, I got them to carry Will to the hut on the mattress-bed in his wagon, on which he had slept during his two months' journey; and on my taking off his heavy clothing, he slept more quietly, but could tell me little about himself.

I gradually learned that, after his last letter to me, he had failed for some nights to get good sleep. Mosquitoes appeared in swarms, and horse-thieves were about, so that Punch and Judy had to be watched at night. He felt himself growing ill, and pushed on, hoping at least to get to Columbus, the nearest place he could find advice and care. But that was 60 miles farther east, and when his strength gave out entirely, he stopped beside this cabin, because there was a barn where his horses could be made safe. How he had lived since he sent the dispatch, he did not know. He thinks the women brought him water, and he wanted nothing more. He was waiting for me.

I made a seat for myself on the foot of his bed, with his overcoat as a pillow, and watched, and fed him with all the nourishing things I could contrive from our limited stores, and did not know enough to know that he had a low malarial fever, fast assuming a typhus form. He insisted that he needed nothing but rest, and in his weak state I dared not experiment with the few medicines I had with me. I ate in the other cabin, with the silent family, living mostly on rice and crackers, and tea of my own making; their bacon and mashed potatoes, with the bacon fat stirred into the potato until it was almost a soup, was intolerable to me; and badly made hot soda bread, with coffee, was all they had besides to eat.

They came west from Southern Indiana. The women wore home-made linsey-woolsey gowns, with straight, scant skirts, and I envied them, as I went about in the dust with full skirts and hoops; so I packed away the hoops, and sewed up my skirts in festoons, and laid aside my small hat, which seemed so absurd a covering in that spot, and went bareheaded to and fro in the sun.

One evening the boys came in with an antelope thrown across one of their ponies, which they had shot at some distance, somewhere, and I thought Will could have soup, and I could have a change in food; but before morning they had it all packed in salt, and the stew they made for dinner had a dreadful taste.

All day long the sun shone from a cloudless sky. A few rods in front of our door, the perfectly level trail to Denver stretched in a yellow line of dust to the limits of the horizon, east and west. Four or five miles away, a brown spot indicated a cabin, and a dim fringe of low trees, still farther away, marked a stream; otherwise, the circle of the horizon bounded an unbroken plain,

Digitized by Google

green as in summer, but utterly silent and unvaried, except when clouds of dust rose in the west, and long lines of oxen came slowly by the door, sometimes as many as sixteen pairs fastened behind each other, drawing as many huge white-covered empty wagons on their return trip to Omaha. Made up in this fashion, one or more men could manage the train returning; and in these days of emigration west, wagon-drivers could be readily found to go to Denver; but few wished to return. Every day the stage-coach passed, east or west, and it seemed a friendly link between us and the world, 150 miles away.

The mail was carried the alternate day on a buckboard with a single seat, sometimes shared with the driver by a passenger. After ten days of hope and despair, I saw plain signs of increasing weakness in Will, and watched eagerly for the buckboard to pass at noon. I must get advice from someone, if only from the stage-man. It seemed odd that it should halt before I went out, and a passenger should spring out and come at once to me, asking, 'How is your husband?' I knew at a glance he was an Eastern man and a gentleman; and oh! the intense relief to my overstrained nerves just the sight of him gave me, utter stranger as he was.

In a few words he explained: he had heard of our desolate state from the man who was kind to me in the coach when I came to Will; he was not sure he should find us still there, but he would inquire. He was engineer of the force then at work at points east and west, surveying the line of the Union Pacific Railroad.

I could not speak of our great need, but he turned away and ordered the man to go on without him. I protested, 'You will lose your place in the stage, and cannot get away from here, maybe for days.'

'I can walk, and nine miles fa
I have a corps of men, and can o
them.'

'But you will have no place t
and little to eat.'

'I shall do; and this is drea
you and your husband,' he sa
bade the stage-man go on. He
he knew nothing at all of sickn
Will was too weak to bear the
a strange face; so he sat down
wagon-tongue outside, and I we
to the hut with more courage.

He brought me my food to th
and when, at evening, the mos
grew worse than usual, he
smudge of damp grass before th
and all night I saw him at in
pacing backwards and forward
it. He could not rest in the
even, for there were no blankets,
mosquitoes had taken possessio
ward morning Will revived, and
leave him, to consult with m
friend a moment. He said I mu
one of those boys back twenty-fi
to Wood River, where there wa
be a physician; and he undert
task of getting the boy off.

Then, finding he could do l
us, and the coach going east fo
ly having a vacant seat, he
charging me, if we needed as
later, either there or on our w
to send someone to hunt up a su
party, and he would give or
them, along the line, to go at
my call. This gave me much c
for a vague, horrible sense ha
growing clearer to me of what m
my needs if Will did not imp
that desolate land, sixty miles
Eastern settlement.

The doctor came next day; he
to be a German, from a small
ranch, with little knowledge of
and less of medicine. He looked
in astonishment and then at
fairly gasped as he exclaimed,

Digitized by Google

as *he* out here?'
ace certainly was
ary 'freighter' he

t he did n't know
d,' and he thought
lid n't get out of
d he would any-
urned away indif-
o gossip with the

ess was needed to
must move east
and that man
d drive. He pro-
not. He must go
ut I still had some
knowledge, and
with us, and set
Will was too ill to
rrangements, and
to start before I
him my plans.
its being best to
o allow us to move
s old place in the
rned to the doctor,
leclared he could
n to get into the
he obeyed, as if I
ntrol him.
ore of brandy at
side Will, and we
t first the motion
he was certainly
lted at noon, four
the end of a short
ound, at a ranch,
ge in the living-
which made a bed
milk more freely,
nd I lay on the
slept, too.
ow little sleep I
tle I minded the
ing.
t that his cattle
re, the German
gs comfortable for

the second day's journey, and, to my relief, went with us, though sulky and silent. As for nursing or giving advice to his patient, the man was utterly incapable; but I believed he could drive and care for the horses; and, in my anxiety, I had failed to take carefully the direction in which the surveying-party were to be found, and no one seemed to know anything about them, nor could we make any delay with safety, to find help from them. We must make a longer drive that day, to reach shelter at night; but the death-like look had gone from poor Will's face, and the smooth prairie trail gave little jar to the spring wagon, as the horses never moved faster than a steady walk.

Noontime brought us to the best sod-house I had seen; it was really a comfortable home. There were no floors, but the ground was hard and polished, and the inside walls were covered with white cotton cloth, and a ceiling, made of the cloth, was suspended under the roof of sod-covered poles. I made tea and toast for Will on the good cook-stove, and ate with relish, myself, the good dinner that the wholesome-looking women of the house prepared for the doctor and me; for though it was not a stage-station, in that new country all houses 'keep,' as the people say. At night, the house where we had planned to stay was more pretentious, but I did not like the looks of the ranch men and women who came out to help us; and having my choice between a bed in the living-room of the family and one in an empty old cabin near-by, I chose the latter. The door would not shut, the bed was not clean, the dirt-floor was no better than the roadway, and the dust from the old sod-roof above us lay in black ridges on our faces next morning; but it was enough that Will was certainly gaining strength.

The weather was still soft and mild,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

and the sun shone all day; the air was a tonic, and Will dozed away the hours in comfort. I had been able to buy an empty soap-box, of which I made a better seat for myself, and we started, with good courage, on our last day's ride to Columbus, where we should find a hotel and a good physician, and could dismiss our German, and rest until Will was well enough to go home.

But a new trouble met me. Our driver had found whiskey at the ranch, and brought a bottle away with him. He soon fell asleep and, after a little, tumbled in a heap on the floor of the wagon, under the high seat. I could not reach the reins nor dare I alarm Will, who was sleeping and had observed nothing. I only hoped the man would continue to sleep, for the dear horses were old friends, and I knew they would keep to the trail, and turn all right if they should meet a train, which was not likely to happen, as at this season they were all going east. Before we reached the crossing at the Loup River, not far from Columbus, which was a difficult ford and my dread all the anxious day, the man had slept off his stupor enough to climb to his seat and take the reins again; and to my great relief, another single wagon, like our own, was about to crawl down the steep bank into the deepest portion of the current. Our Punch and Judy did not need guiding to follow the lead; and we went safely on across the many islands and channels of the wide river, dangerous, some of them, from quicksands, if you lost the trail, and soon after drew up before this house, where I am writing to you; and it seems a palace to me, though it really is a dingy two-story building, very bare and common-looking. Freighters and stage-drivers, dressed in rather uncouth style, lounged on the dirty narrow porch; but I climbed down from the rear of the wagon, in my soiled, oddly draped cotton dress, with a confidence in their good-will that I did not find misplaced. A dozen strong men came forward to lift Will out, and take off the horses, and unpack the wagon — not employees of the house, but its guests on the porch; and if I had suggested to them to take that drunken doctor away and hang him, I think they would have done it.

An Ohio woman kept the hotel; she had heard of us from the stage-men, and a word secured us a room up the stairs, in her barrack-like house, though it was already overfull of men.

The wretch who had kept me in fear all day, and could then stand with difficulty, was paid and dismissed. He had seemed to obey me in coming, as if I owned the world; and I am sure he believed I owned it all when I paid him what he asked for coming; but it mattered little to me so long as we were safe and among friends, and Will was better. I ate my supper with pleasure, though the forty rough men seated at the table with me seemed much embarrassed at my presence. I recognized respect for me in my helpless state, when they scarcely lifted their eyes from the table, and spoke to each other in whispers.

But oh, dear! when I came back to our room, hoping to find Will resting and happy, he was, for the first time in his illness, wildly delirious. The sight of so many people, and the bustle and noise of the house, after the worries of the day, were too much for his weak state. I sent in haste for the physician here whom I had heard of, and when he came, I saw I could rely on his aid and his knowledge. He gave a quieting medicine, and this morning, as I sit beside Will, writing, he is quite himself, resting and stronger.

Daylight has shown the room to be exceedingly dirty; the house has been full of disbanded soldiers going east from stations and camps north of the

Digitized by Google

Platte River. The bed was unfit for decent people, and we grow more particular when we reach settlements. As there seem to be few, if any, women attendants in the house, I have taken the room in hand myself a little. I succeeded in getting a 'bucket' of warm water and a mop, and have taken up a good deal of the dust, and no doubt some fleas and other vermin. We hope soon to be able to go on home.

I have not dared to write to you before this. To think of you and my Eastern home, and put in words, during the past two weeks, what has taken all my strength and courage to face, would have weakened my self-control. Now I write full of hope and in comparative comfort.

COUNCIL BLUFFS, IOWA
October 30, 1865.

It is two weeks since I wrote to you, soon after reaching Columbus, and we thought a day or two would see us on our way to our home; but Will did not mend as fast as we hoped he would. Sometimes I lost hope; but had I not escaped with him alive, from those desolate prairies behind us, the very 'valley of the shadow of death'! We had the aid of a kind and intelligent physician, and the essential comforts of life.

I cooked Will's food on the kitchen stove myself; but I was in no way disheartened, nor did my appetite fail me, when I saw the process of cooking the food for the public table; I even helped pull out some of the flies from the batter of soaked bread, which stood on the cooking-table ready to be fried into great balls, in spiders full of grease, and knew, when I ate them later for supper, that not a few remained. To show daintiness, or seem to be different from those about me, would repel the kindness so freely given, which was our support and help.

When I could leave Will, I went to the porch and talked with the stage-drivers, as they came in, about the 90-mile journey still before us — learning how many miles we would be forced to travel in a day to reach the stage-stations at night; for our experience had taught us the wisdom of staying at public places on the road. That we were not molested the night our German doctor found the whiskey, at that lonely wayside ranch, was fortunate.

But, after ten days without much change, we both grew restive; there were so many things to make our going-on more and more imperative.

It was the last of October; these constant days of sunshine must soon end. What if November winds and cold storms set in early? We had no clothing warm enough for late traveling on the plains, and, to my great satisfaction, Will had come to see, what I had long known, that at his best, even in our pleasant city home, he would not be equal to the demands of Western life upon his physical strength, and we must go back to New York before winter. A coach-ride from Council Bluffs to Des Moines, of 150 miles, was not to be thought of at that season, and the only other way to reach the nearest railroad was by the Missouri River; and if we delayed too long at Columbus, the last boat of the season would leave for St. Joseph, Missouri. We *must* go on.

The anxiety and thinking kept Will from getting strong; but he could not yet walk, much less drive horses, and I could find no one to hire. Every man who could work was out on the prairie with hay-machines, cutting and curing hay for the keeping of the great trains of oxen and mules, which, coming and going to and from the far West, made Columbus a 'refitting' station, as Council Bluffs is called an 'outfitting one.'

Huge stacks of hay, high and long, and long barns, built of sod and stacked over with hay, stretched in every direc-

Digitized by Google

tion from the little cluster of cabins near the hotel, which made what we call a village and they call a town. They had been cutting hay since July, and would keep on till the frost drove them in; but there were not men enough to do the work of getting in the hay still needed.

There was a camp of soldiers stationed a few miles away, and someone mentioned that a convalescent soldier, an under-officer, had received a furlough, and would be glad of the free passage east, and would be a suitable person to help us. I wrote at once to the commandant of the post, and received a courteous reply, that the man would come the next morning and go with us as we wished; so, without delay, I made everything ready, and Will grew bright at the prospect of moving on. Our good friends, the stage-drivers, brought him to the porch next morning before they went out with their coaches, and our horses were put on the wagon, already loaded up and before the door. Good-byes were said to our hostess and her barkeeper, who stood smilingly in the doorway (after confirming to us our previous surmises, that they would soon make a united head to the house), and we waited for our soldier.

He came with a note from the commandant, saying there had been a mistake. The soldier's papers required him to report by the Southern route at Leavenworth, and he could not go with us!

Will grew faint with disappointment, and exclaimed, 'I shall certainly die if I stay here.' One glance at his despairing face, and then at our trusty horses, and a look at the sunny sky, and a thought of those stage-drivers who had promised to meet us at the stations, and I said, 'I will drive myself; help him in.'

Will did not object, and in ten minutes he was in his old place on the mattress and pillows, and his voice quite strong and cheery as he tell me how to climb over the h of the wagon, to reach the seat, up so high that the canvas almost touched my head; an elated and happy as I gathe reins in my bare hands, and tur the trail to commence our fo journey, and, in a few momen left all signs of habitation behi

I knew a good deal more abou traveling than when I came ou not yet resumed my hoops; the of fashion at Columbus, proud tral city as it claimed to be, required it. I had completed tha ing a most satisfactory bargai days under consideration, with driver's wife, who had come f days to the hotel, for her last s Shaker sunbonnet, with a bu bray cape and strings, in exch my quite stylish and new hat. pay her two dollars in cash be she was not *sure* that the *hat* w the thing. 'Most uns wore S At the last moment, she yielded the comfort of that deep sh fast strings, under the bright prairie winds; not that my co needed shade: I was already b the prairie dust, and my glo long ago worn out. A heavy shirt of Will's, put on under m may have looked a trifle clu gave me warmth and left my a

I was a little dismayed whe began to go lame after a mile dared do a good many things, b lift his foot to see what was the and Will must not be worried. soon cast a shoe, and I climb and recovered it; the soft, ston could do no harm, and the first master put it on again.

Our lunch-box was well fill made tea on the station stove, men hastened to take off the ho

Digitized by Google

care for them. When our stage-man John came swinging up later, on his coach from the East, he gave a ringing whoop at sight of us, and said I 'would do,' which gave me satisfaction.

And from that time on, for the whole four days, we were under the special care of the stage-men. They looked after the horses and our comfort, in every way possible to them. It was not *one* man, for of course we could not keep up with the coach, and the men were frequently changed; but going east and going west, all knew about us, and passed us on to each other, so that a bed was ready for us, and men waiting to lift Will out tenderly and carry him to it, at every night station.

The stations were sometimes very rough places, sometimes only one room for living and sleeping; but the one curtained bed was always ours; at least it was Will's; and if it was only a lounge, I spread our blankets on the floor for myself, as I had done farther west. It did not ruffle me in the least, if one or two men snored lustily in another corner of the room; I had learned to trust kind hearts under very rough exteriors. All our good Johns waved their hands to us, as they passed us on the road; and each day's travel was laid out for us by one of them each morning.

One day we were told not to go to the regular stage-station at night; it was *too* rough; but to leave the trail at a certain point and make for a house in sight, two miles across the prairie, where we would get a good room and bed. The owner knew we were coming, how, we could not tell, and welcomed us like friends; and when Will found he could sit at the table with us, and taste the fried bacon, our host looked at him with tears streaming down his face, and swore big oaths at him roundly, to show how glad he was. Later, the tall figure of our John stood in the doorway of our room, and he too cried like a child because Will called out 'Hullo' in a good full voice. The man had walked across the prairie several miles, 'to see if they was square with the horses,' he said, but really to see if *we* were all right. I cannot begin to tell you the comfort these men were to us. They scorned any reward for their services, and had few words to say; if we expressed gratitude, they turned away shyly and disappeared; they still looked at us in that wondering sort of way, I suppose because we showed plain marks of being 'tender-feet,' as newcomers from the East are called.

I was never frightened at our loneliness on the prairie, even when one day they told us there would be a stretch of 16 miles without a house. One day, I was startled for a moment, at a sudden apparition, behind a slight rise of ground, of a dozen Indians, coming in single file, at right angles across our trail; and the horses, too, showed signs of fear; but their squaws were with them with loaded ponies, and I knew we were beyond dangerous Indian ground, and they were soon out of sight.

Once, at our noon halt, we found no men at home at the station, only a young German woman who could not speak English; and as the usual custom for travelers was to water and feed their own horses, I was at a loss what to do; for to lift a pail of water to those thirsty, eager horses, was beyond my strength and my courage as well; but the woman came to my help, and did it all with ease.

Until the afternoon of the third day we had been following the unbroken trail on the level prairie; then we came to a large stream with deeply worn banks, and, to my dismay, some of the planks of the long bridge were upset, and it was impassable. I could not leave the horses nor could I lift the heavy planks to replace them. It was

Digitized by Google

nearing sundown; what could we do if darkness found us in that place? The coach had already passed us, and not a train or house was in sight. For the first time my teeth chattered with fear.

A half-hour's waiting, and two men in an open spring wagon came rapidly up beside us. Spring wagons are unusual on the plains. The slow-moving heavy white-covered wagons we call 'prairie schooners' are commonly used, and they can be seen at a long distance. I thought this one had dropped from the sky, and still more, when the men came quickly to speak to us, and in the tone and language of the far East, asked us how we were. They were entire strangers, but belonged to the surveying-party, of whom we had seen and heard nothing since that morning at Lone Tree, when our friend left us after his night's vigil. They had been told by their chief to look out for us, and had been expecting to find us at some point farther west, days before that time. Just when all other help failed us, they appeared, and we were soon safely on our way, to the last night station of our journey.

The last day was a difficult one for me, though Will was already so nearly well he needed but little care, reclining cheerfully on his cushions, telling me stories and enjoying the sunshine.

But the country changed to high rolling prairie after leaving the valley of the Elkhorn River, and the frequent long descents were perfectly smooth, like ice, and the worn shoes of the horses obliged me to 'put on the brake.' It was hard to reach it, and harder to press it down. Then the front bow of the wagon cover had broken, and left the canvas to flap about my face, and the sun beat in my eyes, altogether bringing on a violent headache. For the first time in all the four weeks of care and labor, I came near giving out; and the nearer we came to thickly settled country and town life, the less we could expect of personal interest in us. We were being lost in the edges of the rushing, busy life of that world, which seemed to commence at the Missouri River; and Heaven, which had been so near, and Angelic care, in the shape of good Johns and civil engineers, no longer seemed about us. When at last, we took our places in the line of white-topped wagons, waiting their turn to cross the river on the ferry-boat at Omaha, I hoped I might never again see the valley of the Platte. We realized, too, when we were unrecognized by friends on the boat with us, that we were filling well the rôle of emigrant 'poor white,' whose faded-out, shabby look had often excited half pity, half contempt in us, in the streets of Council Bluffs.

When we drew up at last, at our own door, safe and nearly sound, amid the congratulations of the kindest of neighbors and friends, I still kept in mind the tender, almost worshipful respect and care of our stage-driver friends.

And now Punch and Judy, our faithful horses, are to be sold, and a few days must see us on our way down the Missouri, for November's chill air is here, and our faces are set towards New York and home.

Digitized by Google

THE FOURTEENTH OF SEPTEMBER

1321–1921

BY CHARLES H. GRANDGENT

As age, their shadow, follows life and birth,
So autumn shadowed summertime and spring
And day was yielding fast to equal night,
When, homeward soaring from the rustling shore
Where weary Po exchanges life for peace,
His spring-born spirit fled, so long ago.

Six slowly winding centuries ago,
Reborn was he in everlasting birth,
To taste the food for which he hungered, peace,
At marriage suppers set in endless spring,
Shoresman eternal on the radiant shore
Which never saw its sun engulft in night.

A sinful world of self-created night
He left behind, so many years ago,
A world where hatred ruled from shore to shore
And men, despite their gentle Saviour's birth,
Like ancient Adam forfeited their spring,
For greed and discord bartering their peace.

To light the day of universal peace,
God-sent he dawned upon our bloody night,
Greatest of poets since the primal spring
Flasht forth into existence long ago.
Benignant stars presided o'er his birth,
That he might speak to every listening shore.

Still rings his voice on ocean's either shore,
And when he speaks, our Muses hold their peace

Digitized by Google

And wonder if the world shall see the birth
Of man like him before the Judgment night,
For all he died so many years ago
When this our iron age was in its spring.

Ere winter blossom into balmy spring,
Ere peace prevail on any mortal shore
(So taught the Tuscan poet long ago),
Justice must reign: in it alone is peace.
The Hound shall chase the Wolf into the night,
Then earth and heaven shall witness a rebirth.

Heaven gave him birth, one ever blessed spring,
Whose lamp through all the night illumes our shore.
He found his peace six hundred years ago.

WHAT IS A PURITAN?

BY STUART P. SHERMAN

I

Both the contemporary and the historical Puritan are still involved in clouds of libel, of which the origins lie in the copious fountains of indiscriminating abuse poured out upon the Puritans of the seventeenth century by great Royalist writers like Butler, Dryden, and Ben Jonson. The Puritan of that day was ordinarily represented by his adversaries as a dishonest casuist and a hypocrite. To illustrate this point, I will produce a brilliantly malevolent portrait from Jonson's comedy, *Bartholomew Fair*.

This play was performed in London six years before the Pilgrims landed at Plymouth; and it helps one to stand why the migratory move the day was rather to than fro ica. Jonson presents a group tans visiting the Fair. Thei are Zeal-of-the-land Busy, Dam craft, and Win-the-fight Little- his wife. Roast pig is a main fe the Bartholomew festivities; wife of Win-the-fight Little-wi strong inclination to partak Her mother, Dame Purecraft, h scruples about eating in the wickedness, and carries the que Zeal-of-the-land Busy, asking resolve their doubts. At first h

Digitized by Google

anting, sing-song na-
tributed to the Puri-
ies: —
disease of longing, it
nal disease, or appe-
t is carnal and inci-
, very natural; now
and a meat that is
y be longed for, and
ten; it may be eaten;
ell eaten: but in the
holomew pig, it can-
the very calling it a
and to eat it so, is a
and you make the
an one of the high-
ke it, is the state of
h-place.'
t remonstrates, say-
of necessity, place
Master Busy.' And
ries: 'Good brother
usy, think to make it
n.'
-of-the-land Busy re-
vs: —
be otherwise, but it
ruction, subject, and
ence with the weak,
l face; but that face
put over it, and be
re; it may be eaten,
take it, in a booth,
Vicked: the place is
y much, we may be
lst of the profane, so
eformed mouth, with
leness; not gorged in
reediness, there's the
e go there, as taking
or delight in the un-
eed the vanity of the
palate, it were not
, it were abominable

-the-land Busy not
joins the rest, say-
comfort to the weak,
I will eat exceeding-

ly and prophesy; there may be a good use made of it too, now I think on it: by the public eating of swine's flesh, to profess our hate and loathing of Judaism, whereof the brethren stand taxed. I will therefore eat, yea, I will eat exceedingly.'

The entire passage might be regarded as a satirical interpretation of Calvin's chapter on Christian Liberty. In this fashion the anti-Puritan writers of the seventeenth century habitually depicted the people who set up the Commonwealth in England and colonized Massachusetts. In the eyes of unfriendly English contemporaries, the men who came over in the Mayflower and their kind were unctuous hypocrites.

That charge, though it has been revived for modern uses, no longer stands against the seventeenth-century Puritans. Under persecution and in power, on the scaffold, in war, and in the wilderness, they proved that, whatever their faults, they were animated by a passionate sincerity. When the Puritan William Prynne spoke disrespectfully of magistrates and bishops, Archbishop Laud, or his agents, cut off his ears and threw him back into prison. As soon as he could get hold of ink and paper, Prynne sent out from prison fresh attacks on the bishops. They took him out and cut off his ears again, and branded him 'S.L.,' which they intended to signify 'Seditious Libeller'; but he, with the iron still hot in his face and with indignation inspiring, perhaps, the most dazzling pun ever recorded, interpreted the letters to mean, *Stigmata Laudis*. When the Puritans came into power, Prynne issued from his dungeon and helped cut off, not the ears, but the heads of Archbishop Laud and King Charles. After that, they said less about his insincerity. Prynne and his friends had their faults; but lack of conviction and the courage of their conviction were not among them.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

When, a hundred years ago, Macaulay wrote his famous passage on the Puritans in the essay on Milton, he tried to do them justice; and he did brush aside the traditional charge of hypocrisy with the contempt which it deserves. But in place of the picture of the oily hypocrite, he set up another picture equally questionable. He painted the Puritan as a kind of religious superman of incredible fortitude and determination, who 'went through the world, like Sir Artegal's iron man Talus with his flail, crushing and trampling down oppressors, mingling with human beings, but having neither part nor lot in human infirmities, insensible to fatigue, to pleasure, and to pain, not to be pierced by any weapon, not to be withstood by any barrier.'

Now this portrait of Macaulay's is executed with far more respect for the Puritan character than Jonson exhibited in his portrait of Zeal-of-the-land Busy. But it is just as clearly a caricature. It violently exaggerates certain harsh traits of individual Puritans under persecution and at war; it suppresses all the mild and attractive traits; and Carlyle, with his hero-worship and his eye on Cromwell, continues the exaggeration in the same direction. It gives an historically false impression, because it conveys the idea that the Puritans were exceptionally harsh and intolerant *as compared with other men in their own times*.

For example, the supposedly harsh Puritan Cromwell stood for a wide latitude of religious opinion and toleration of sects at a time when the Catholic Inquisition had established a rigid censorship and was persecuting Huguenots and Mohammedans and Jews, and torturing and burning heretics wherever its power extended. It is customary now to point to the Salem witchcraft and the hanging of three Quakers in Boston — who incidentally seem to have insisted on being h signal illustrations of the of Puritanism and its pecu cism. But, as a matter of things were merely instance paratively *mild* infection o tans by a madness that the world. In Salem there v victims, and the madness year. In Europe there wer of thousands of victims; and witches burned in Cath France, and South America years after the practice o witches had been condem the Puritans. Comparativel the Puritans were quick to condemn the common harsh tolerance of their times.

The Puritan leaders in teenth century were, like exceptional men; but if look ly, they exhibit the full con human qualities, and rather less than average respect fo and the personality of the since their doctrines, politic gious, immensely emphasiz portance and sacredness o vidual life. They had iron their blood to put duty befo but that does not imply tha ished pleasure. They pu above beauty; but that doe that they despised beauty. set them apart as a peculiar mal people. In every age o in every progressing societ there has to be, a group, a large group, of leaders and whom their own personal p secondary consideration — a tion secondary to the social the social advance. On the progress of the race out of the Promised Land, they p line of march, they look aft and munitions, they bring plies, they scout out the lan

Digitized by Google

up early in the morning, they watch at night, they bear the burdens of leadership, while the children, the careless young people, and the old people who have never grown up, are playing or fiddling or junketing on the fringes of the march. They are never popular among these who place pleasure first; for they are always rounding up stragglers, recalling loiterers, and preaching up the necessity of toil and courage and endurance. They are not popular; but they are not inhuman. The violet smells to them as it does to other men; and rest and recreation are sweet. I must illustrate a little the more intimately human aspect of our seventeenth-century group.

II

It is a part of the plot of our droll and dry young people to throw the opprobrium of the present drought upon the Puritans. These iron men, one infers from reading the discourses, for example, of Mr. Mencken, banished wine as a liquor inconsistent with Calvinistic theology, though, to be sure, Calvin himself placed it among 'matters indifferent.' And the Puritans, as a matter of fact, used both wine and tobacco — both men and women. If Puritanism means reaction in favor of obsolete standards, our contemporary Puritans will repeal the obnoxious amendment; and all who are thirsty should circulate the Puritan literature of the seventeenth century. Read your *Pilgrim's Progress*, and you will find that Christian's wife, on the way to salvation, sent her child back after her bottle of liquor. Read Winthrop's letters, and you will find that Winthrop's wife writes to him to thank him for the tobacco that he has sent to her mother. Read Mather's diary, and you will find that he suggests pious thoughts to be meditated upon by the members of his household while they are engaged in home-brewing. Read the records of the first Boston church, and you will find that one of the first teachers was a wine-seller. Read the essays of John Robinson, first pastor of the Pilgrims, and you will find that he ridicules Lycurgus, the Spartan law-giver, for ordering the vines cut down, merely 'because men were sometimes drunken with the grapes.' Speaking of celibacy, Robinson says, 'Abstinence from marriage is no more a virtue than abstinence from wine or other pleasing natural thing. Both marriage and wine are of God and good in themselves.'

Since I do not wish to incite a religious and Puritanical resistance to the Volstead Act, I must add that Robinson, in that tone of sweet reasonableness which characterizes all his essays, remarks further: 'Yet may the abuse of a thing be so common and notorious and the use so small and needless as better want the small use than be in continual danger of the great abuse.' And this, I suppose, is exactly the ground taken by the sensible modern prohibitionist. It is not a matter of theological sin with him at all. It never was that. It is now a matter of economics and æsthetics, and of the greatest happiness and freedom to the greatest number.

These iron men are accused of being hostile to beauty, the charge being based upon the crash of a certain number of stained-glass windows and altar ornaments, which offended them, however, not as art, but as religious symbolism. Why fix upon the riot of soldiers in war-time and neglect to inquire: Who, after the death of Shakespeare, in all the seventeenth century, most eloquently praised music and the drama? Who most lavishly described and most exquisitely appreciated nature? Who had the richest literary culture and the most extensive acquaintance with poetry? Who published the most magnificent poems? The answer to all these

Digitized by Google

questions is, of course, that conspicuous Puritan, the Latin secretary to Oliver Cromwell, John Milton.

In a letter to an Italian friend, Milton writes: 'God has instilled into me, if into anyone, a vehement love of the beautiful. Not with so much labor is Ceres said to have sought her daughter Proserpine, as it is my habit day and night to seek for this idea of the beautiful . . . through all the forms and faces of things.' With some now nearly obsolete notions of precedence, Milton did place God before the arts. But was he hostile to the arts? The two most important sorts of people in the state, he declares, are, first, those who make the social existence of the citizens 'just and holy,' and, second, those who make it 'splendid and beautiful.' He insists that the very stability of the state depends upon the splendor and excellence of its public institutions and the splendid and excellent expression of its social life — depends, in short, as, I have insisted, upon the coöperation of the Puritans and the artists, upon the integrity of the national genius.

These iron men are said to have been devoid of tenderness and sympathy in personal relations. But this does not agree with the testimony of Bradford, who records it in his history that, in the first winter at Plymouth, when half the colony had died and most of the rest were sick, Myles Standish and Brewster, and the four or five others who were well, watched over and waited on the rest with the loving tenderness and the unflinching fidelity of a mother.

These people had fortitude; but was it due to callousness? Were they really, as Macaulay intimates, insensible to their own sufferings and the sufferings of others? Hear the cry of John Bunyan when prison separates him from his family: 'The parting with my wife and poor children hath often been to me in this place as the pulling the flesh from my bone; and that not cause I am somewhat too fon great mercies, but also becaus have often brought to my many hardships, miseries, a that my poor family was lik with, should I be taken from *pecially my poor blind child,* nearer my heart than all I ha O the thought of the hardship my blind one might go und break my heart to pieces.'

Finally, these iron men are charged with a lack of romant and the daring necessary to ac Much depends upon what you romance. If you mean by ro life of excitement and perilou ture, there are duller records of the English Puritans. No some risk to themselves, not w least an occasional thrill, did t villagers decapitate the King land, overturn the throne of bishop of Canterbury, pull and settle in Holland, sail the Atlantic in a cockleshell, and kingdom for Christ in the ho derness. I don't think that d Gopher Prairie or Greenwic have a right to call that life humdrum.

Add to this the fact that fervent Puritans were daily e a terrifically exciting advent Jehovah. Some women of to-d think it tolerably interesting, suppose, to be married to a Cotton Mather, who rose e after breakfast, went into h put, as he said, his sinful mou dust of his study floor, and, tears streamed from his eyes, directly with angels, with speakable and full of glory.' tan wife was pious, she was e a true 'eternal triangle'; wh throp left home, his wife was c by him to the arms of her

Digitized by Google

re not pious, she stole
his conversation with
t, like Mather's wife,
fits of jealousy against
sts. The resulting at-
ot have been ideal; but
described as 'sullen
not humdrum like a
was tense with the ex-
g on the perilous edge

uritan husbands lack
ion to their women? I
hard to reconcile with
nany of them had three
us modern men feel
arm enough, if we can
n one, now that higher
nen has made them so
ir standards and so
intain. Now, Cotton
ee wives; and when he
n the short interim be-
wo and number three,
posal of marriage from
who was, he thought,
the prettiest girl in
onclude inevitably that
hing very attractive in
Call it charm; call it
e possessed that which
ne Journal would de-
women admire in men.'
llustration of the 'sul-
heir domestic habits,'
f John Winthrop, the
overnor of Massachu-
uly religious courtship,
ife, about 1618, against
friends. We have some
ly years of their life to-
n he addresses her as
'My sweet wife,' and
my chief joy in this
at is nothing; at first,

s later Winthrop pre-
New England, without
ound a colony. While waiting for his ship to sail, he writes still to his wife by every possible messenger, merely to tell her that she is his chief joy in all the world; and before he leaves England he arranges with her that, as long as he is away, every week on Tuesday and Friday at five o'clock he and she will think of each other wherever they are, and commune in spirit. When one has been married ten or twelve long years, that is more extraordinary. It shows, I think, romantic feeling equal to that in *Miss Lulu Bett*, or *Poor White*, or *Moon-Calf*.

Finally, I will present an extract from a letter of this same John Winthrop to this same wife, written in 1637, when they had been married twenty years. It is an informal note, written hurriedly, in the rush of business: —

SWEETHEART, —

I was unwillingly hindered from coming to thee, nor am I like to see thee before the last day of this weeke: therefore I shall want a band or two: and cuffs. I pray thee also send me six or seven leaves of tobacco dried and powdered. Have care of thyself this cold weather, and speak to the folks to keep the goats well out of the garden. . . . If any letters be come for me, send them by this bearer. I will trouble thee no further. The Lord bless and keep thee, my sweet wife, and all our family; and send us a comfortable meeting. So I kiss thee and love thee ever and rest

Thy faithful husband,

JOHN WINTHROP.

If, three hundred years after my death, it is proved by documentary evidence that twenty years after my marriage I still, in a familiar note, mixed up love and kisses with my collars and tobacco — if this is proved, I say, I shall feel very much surprised if the historian of that day speaks of the 'sullen gloom of my domestic habits.'

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

III

But now, three hundred years after Winthrop's time, what is actually being said about the Puritans? In spite of abundant evidences such as I have exhibited, our recent Pilgrim celebration was a rather melancholy affair. From the numerous commemoratory articles which I have read, I gather that there are only three distinct opinions about the Puritan now current — every one of them erroneous.

The first, held by a small apologetic group of historians and Mayflower descendants, is, that the Puritan was a misguided man of good intentions. Since he was a forefather and has long been dead, he should be spoken of respectfully; and it is proper from time to time to drop upon his grave a few dried immortelles. The second opinion is, that the Puritan was an unqualified pest, but that he is dead and well dead, and will trouble us no more forever. The third, and by far the most prevalent, is, that the Puritan was once a pest, but has now become a menace; that he is more alive than ever, more baleful, more dangerous.

This opinion is propagated in part by old New Englanders like Mr. Brooks Adams, who have turned upon their ancestors with a vengeful fury, crying, 'Tantum religio potuit suadere malorum.' And I noticed only the other day that Mr. Robert Herrick was speaking remorsefully of Puritanism as an 'ancestral blight' in his veins. But the opinion is still more actively propagated by a literary group which comes out flatfootedly against the living Puritan as the enemy of freedom, of science, of beauty, of romance; as a being with unbreakable belief in his own bleak and narrow views; a Philistine, a hypocrite, a tyrant, of savage cruelty of attack, with a lust for barbarous persecution, and of intolerable dirty-mindedness.

Despite the 'plank' of sympathy in the rather ha structed literary platform young people, it is manifest are out to destroy the cre Puritan in America. We a ceptionally rich in spiritual It would be a pity, by a persi paign of abuse, to ruin the cr good ones. One of the prin tions, indeed, of scholarshi ters is to connect us with traditions and to inspire us confidence and power wh from such a connection. P rightly understood, is one of progressive, and enriching hu tions. It is a tradition peculi sary to the health and the sta the safe forward movement cratic society. When I cons what antiquity it has come and what vicissitudes it has s do not fear its extermination sent the misapprehension o acter and the aspersion of Perhaps our insight into its t may be strengthened and o renewed, if we revisit its sou view its operations at some little remote from the dust tribes of contemporary jour

IV

A good many ages before founded, or Athens, or anci or Babylon, or Nineveh, the umbrageous banyan tree in whose wide-spreading top a lous branches red and blue chimpanzees, gorillas, oran and a missing group of anthr had chattered and fought a and feasted and intoxicated t on cocoanut wine for a thous At some date which I can't fi curacy, the clatter and mess gling of arboreal simian societ

Digitized by Google

pall on the heart of one of the anthropoid apes. He was not happy. He was afflicted with ennui. He felt stirring somewhere in the region of his diaphragm a yearning and capacity for a new life. His ideas were vague; but he resolved to make a break for freedom and try an experiment. He crawled nervously out to the end of his branch, followed by a few of his friends, hesitated a moment; then exclaimed abruptly, 'Here's where I get off,' dropped to the ground, lighted on his feet, and amid a pelting of decayed fruit and cocoanut shells and derisive shouts of 'precisian' and 'hypocrite,' walked off on his hind-legs into another quarter of the jungle and founded the human race. That was the first Puritan.

In the beginning, he had only a narrow vision; for his eyes were set near together, as you will see if you examine his skull in the museum. He had a vision of a single principle, namely, that he was to go upright, instead of on all fours. But he gradually made that principle pervade all his life; for he resolutely refrained from doing anything that he could not do while going upright. As habit ultimately made the new posture easy and natural, he found that there were compensations in it; for he learned to do all sorts of things in the erect attitude that he could not do, even with the aid of his tail, while he went on all-fours. So he began to rejoice in what he called 'the new freedom.' But to the eyes of the denizens of the banyan tree, he looked very ridiculous. They called him stiff-necked, strait-laced, unbending, and inflexible. But when they swarmed into his little colony of come-outers, on all fours, and began to play their monkey-tricks, he met them gravely and said: 'Walk upright, as the rest of us do, and you may stay and share alike with us. Otherwise, out you go.' And out some of them went, back to the banyan tree; and there, with the chimpanzees and the red and blue baboons, they still chatter over their cocoanut wine, and emit from time to time a scream of simian rage, and declare their straight-backed relative a tyrant, a despot, and a persecutor of his good old four-footed cousins.

You may say that this is only a foolish fable. But it contains all the essential features of the eternal Puritan: namely, dissatisfaction with the past, courage to break sharply from it, a vision of a better life, readiness to accept a discipline in order to attain that better life, and a serious desire to make that better life prevail — a desire reflecting at once his sturdy individualism and his clear sense for the need of social solidarity. In these respects all true Puritans, in all ages and places of the world, are alike. Everyone is dissatisfied with the past; everyone has the courage necessary to revolt; everyone has a vision; everyone has a discipline; and everyone desires his vision of the better life to prevail.

How do they differ among themselves? They differ in respect to the breadth and the details of their vision. Their vision is determined by the width of their eyes and by the lights of their age. According to the laws of human development, some of the lights go out from time to time, or grow dim, and new lights appear, and the vision changes from age to age.

What does not change in the true Puritan is the passion for improvement. What does not change is the immortal urgent spirit that breaks from the old forms, follows the new vision, seriously seeks the discipline of the higher life. When you find a man who is quite satisfied with the past and with the routine and old clothes of his ancestors, who has not courage for revolt and adventure, who cannot accept the discipline and hardship of a new life, and who

Digitized by Google

does not really care whether the new life prevails, you may be sure that he is not a Puritan.

But who are the Puritans? Aristotle recognized that there is an element of the Puritan in every man, when he declared that all things, by an intuition of their own nature, seek their perfection. He classified the desire for perfection as a fundamental human impulse. Still, we have to admit that in many men it must be classified as a victoriously suppressed desire. We can recognize men as Puritans only when they have released and expressed their desire for perfection.

Leopardi declared that Jesus was the first to condemn the world as evil, and to summon his followers to come out from it, in order to found a community of the pure in heart. But this is an historical error. Unquestionably Jesus was a Puritan in relation to a corrupt Jewish tradition and in relation to a corrupt and seriously adulterated pagan tradition. But every great religious and moral leader, Christian or pagan, has likewise been a Puritan: Socrates, Plato, Zeno, Confucius, Buddha. Every one of them denounced the world, asked his followers to renounce many of their instinctive ways, and to accept a rule and discipline of the better life — a rule involving a purification by the suppression of certain impulses and the liberation of others.

There is much talk of the austerities of the Puritan households of our forefathers, austerities which were largely matters of necessity. But two thousand years before these forefathers, there were Greek Stoics, and Roman Stoics, and Persian and Hindu ascetics, who were far more austere, and who practised the ascetic life from choice as the better life. There is talk as if Protestant Calvinism had suddenly in modern times introduced the novel idea of putting religious duty before gratification of the senses. But a tho before Knox and Calvin, Roman Catholic monaster mitages, where men and wo vision of a better life, n flesh far more bitterly th vinists ever dreamed of do tempt of earthly beauty pleasure were the works of then the hermit saints of who lived before Calvin sho nized as the model Purita hermit saint lacks that pass ing his vision prevail, lack tical sense of the need for s ity, which are eminent ch of the true Puritan, both without the Roman Chur

In the early Middle Ages Church, which also had a of the need for social solid resolutely to keep the Purit was constantly developing fold and to destroy those v If I follow the course of th cessfully left the fold, it is many did not remain with cause the course of those w led them more directly to the fourteenth century, Jo the first famous English that the Roman Church hopelessly involved with on the one hand, and with and therefore unchristian on the other, and that, in h had lost the purity of the tian vision of the better life freedom for the better life convinced that one must co the Roman Church, and tute for the authority of t authority of the Bible as in the best scholarship of the volted, as he thought, in be not merely more religiou more actively and practi and intellectually more h him, accepting certain trad

Digitized by Google

escence in ignorance
His followers, with
eristic of their tradi-
e stake rather than
igned miracle.' True
vere, of the man of
s truth wherever it

ifty years later the
whole revolted from
entially the grounds
and under Mary its
ers by scores burned
ir vision of the bet-
ded above all what
ctual integrity. At
ole English Church
Puritan mood, dis-
d, eager to make the
, fearless with the
learning, elate with
al purification and
s.
ritan actually came
the Reformation.
the later sixteenth
within the English
ught that the na-
still insufficiently
an belief and ritual.
h they regarded as
and unscriptural,
rrantable, was the
church by bishops,
ns, and the rest —
archy. And when
to suppress their
itans began to feel
urch was too much
orld to permit them
ctice of the better
in the seventeenth
ted as nonconform-
s; and drew off into
ies by themselves,
nents of representa-
character, the prin-
e soon to be trans-
communities.

If I recall here what is very familiar, it is to emphasize the swift [illegible] on-ward movement of the [illegible]ion of the good life. The revo[illegible] the bishops became a revolut[illegible] ich shook the pillars of the Midd[illegible] ges and prepared the way for modern th[illegible] es. The vision, as it moves, broadens and becomes more inclusive. For the seventeenth-century Puritan, the good life is not merely religious, moral, and intellectual; it is also, in all affairs of the soul, a self-governing life. It is a free life, subject only to divine commands which each individual has the right to interpret for himself. The Puritan minister had, to be sure, a great influence; but the influence was primarily due to his superior learning. And the entire discipline of the Puritans tended steadily toward raising the congregation to the level of the minister. Their daily use of the Bible, their prompt institution of schools and universities, and the elaborate logical discourses delivered from the pulpits constituted a universal education for independent and critical free-thought.

Puritanism made every man a reasoner. And much earlier than is generally recognized, the Puritan mind began to appeal from the letter to the spirit of Scripture, from Scripture to scholarship, and from scholarship to the verdict of the philosophic reason. Says the first pastor of the Pilgrims: 'He that hath a right philosophical spirit and is but morally honest would rather suffer many deaths than call a pin a point or speak the least thing against his understanding or persuasion.' In John Robinson we meet a man with a deep devotion to the truth, and also with the humility to recognize clearly that he possesses but a small portion of truth. He conceives, indeed, of a truth behind the Bible itself, a truth which may be reached by other means than the Scripture, and which

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

was not beyond the ken of the wise pagans. 'All truth,' he declares, 'is of God. . . . Whereupon it followeth that nothing true in right reason and sound philosophy can be false in divinity. . . . I add, though the truth be uttered by the devil himself, yet it is originally of God.'

The delightful aspects of this 'Biblical Puritan,' besides the sweetness of his charity and his tolerance, are his lively perception that truth is something new, steadily revealing itself, breaking upon us like a dawn; and, not less significant, his recognition that true religion must be in harmony with reason and experience. 'Our Lord Christ,' he remarks — quietly yet memorably — 'calls himself truth, *not custom*.'

Cotton Mather, partly because of his connection with the witchcraft trials, has been so long a synonym for the unlovely features of the culture of his time and place, that even his biographer and the recent editors of his journal have quite failed to bring out the long stride that he made toward complete freedom of the mind. If the truth be told, Mather, like every Puritan of powerful original force, was something of a 'heretic.' For many years he followed a plainly mystical 'inner light.' His huge diary opens in 1681 with a statement that he has come to a direct agreement with the Lord Jesus Christ, and that no man or book, but the spirit of God, has shown him the way. He goes directly to the several persons of the Trinity, and transacts his business with them or with their ministering angels. There is an 'enthusiastic' element here; but one should observe that it is an emancipative element.

Experience, however, taught Mather a certain distrust of the mystical inner light. Experience with witches taught him a certain wariness of angels. In 1711, after thirty years of active service in the church, Mather write diary this distinctly advanced c for inspiration: —

'There is a thought which I hav had in my mind; but I would r upon my mind a charge to hav tener there: that the light of re the law of God; the voice of re the voice of God; we never hav with reason, but at the same t have to do with God; our submis the rules of reason is an obedi God. Let me as often as I have reason set before me, think u the great God now speaks to me

Our judgment of Mather's must depend upon what reaso Mather to do. Well, every day life reason told Mather to und some good for his fellow men. beginning of each entry in his di a long period of years stand the 'G.D.,' which mean Good Desig that day. 'And besides all this,' clares, 'I have scarce at any ti these five-and-forty years and m come as to stay in any company out considering whether no good be done before I left it.' One Mather a striking illustration Puritan passion for making one's of the good life prevail. 'It has maxim with me,' he says, 'that a to do good not only gives a righ it, but also makes the doing of it I have been made very sensible t pursuing of this maxim, I have e ruined myself as to this world a dered it really too hot a place fo continue in.'

Mather has here in mind the and heroic test of his Puritan Toward the end of his life, in an epidemic of smallpox swep Boston. It was generally inter by the pious as a visitation o Mather, a student of science as of the Bible had read in the *actions of the Royal Society* rep

Digitized by Google

ion against smallpox
ca and among the
the physicians of
xplained the method,
their experimenting
ublished pamphlets
ation. He was vio-
opposing the decrees
ce of a storm of op-
ated his own child,
of the treatment.
ersisted, and invited
o his house and re-
t, among them a fel-
the room where the
own a bomb intended
failed, however, to
s attached this note:
you dog, damn you;
with this, with a pox

m, would not be dis-
ted martyrdom for
ruth. 'I had rather
such hands as now
han by a fever; and
r my conformity to
n essays to save life
s, tho' precious ones,
artyrs testified for-
s of Smithfield.'
e observe, is the free
revolt, courageously
ng his new vision of
il, resolutely under-
e and dangers of ex-
ve all, seeking what
the 'blessed Jesus,'
but in a medical re-
Society; thus fulfill-
binson's declaration
Christ calls himself
and illustrating Rob-
ration that true re-
lict with right rea-
erience. In Mather,
od life came to mean
ctical beneficence in
y and violence. For

his conduct on this occasion, he deserves to have his sins forgiven, and to be ranked and remembered as a hero of the modern spirit.

He hoped that his spirit would descend to his son; but the full stream of his bold and original moral energy turned elsewhere. There was a Boston boy of Puritan ancestry, who had sat under Cotton Mather's father, who had heard Cotton Mather preach in the height of his power, and who said years afterward that reading Cotton Mather's book, *Essays to do Good*, 'gave me such a turn of thinking, as to have an influence on my conduct through life; for I have always set a greater value on the character of a *doer of good*, than on any other kind of reputation; and if I have been . . . a useful citizen, the public owes the advantage of it to that book.' This boy had a strong common sense. To him, as to Mather, right reason seemed the rule of God and the voice of God.

He grew up in Boston under Mather's influence, and became a free-thinking man of the world, entirely out of sympathy with strait-laced and stiff-necked upholders of barren rites and ceremonies. I am speaking of the greatest liberalizing force in eighteenth-century America, Benjamin Franklin. Was he a Puritan? Perhaps no one thinks of him as such. Yet we see that he was born and bred in the bosom of Boston Puritanism; that he acknowledges its greatest exponent as the prime inspiration of his life. Furthermore, he exhibits all the essential characteristics of the Puritan: dissatisfaction, revolt, a new vision, discipline, and a passion for making the new vision prevail. He represents, in truth, the reaction of a radical, a living Puritanism, to an age of intellectual enlightenment.

Franklin began his independent effort in a revolt against ecclesiastical

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

authority, as narrow and unrealistic. Recall the passage in his Autobiography where he relates his disgust at a sermon preached on the great text in Philippians: Whatsoever things are true, honest, just, pure, lovely, or of good report, if there be any virtue, or any praise, think on these things. Franklin says that, in expounding this text, the minister confined himself to five points: keeping the Sabbath, reading the Scriptures, attending public worship, partaking of the sacraments, and respecting the ministers. Franklin recognized at once that there was no moral life in that minister, was 'disgusted,' and attended his preaching no more. It was the revolt of a living Puritanism from a Puritanism that was dead.

For, note what follows, as the consequence of his break with the church. 'It was about this time that I conceived,' says Franklin, 'the bold and arduous project of arriving at moral perfection. I wished to live without committing any fault at any time, and to conquer all that either natural inclination, custom, or company might lead me into.' Everyone will recall how Franklin drew up his table of the thirteen real moral virtues, and how diligently he exercised himself to attain them. But, for us, the significant feature of his enterprise was the realistic spirit in which it was conceived: the bold attempt to ground the virtues on reason and experience rather than authority; the assertion of his doctrine 'that vicious actions are not hurtful because they are forbidden, but forbidden because they are hurtful, *the nature of man alone considered.*'

Having taken this ground, it became necessary for him to explore the nature of man and the universe. So Puritanism, which, in Robinson and Mather, was predominantly rational, becomes in Franklin predominantly scientific. With magnificent fresh moral force, he seeks for the will of God in nature, and applies his discoveries with immense practical benevolence to ameliorating the common lot of mankind, and to diffusing good-will among men and nations. Light breaks into his mind from every quarter of his century. His vision of the good life includes bringing every faculty of mind and body to its highest usefulness. With a Puritan emancipator like Franklin, we are not obliged to depend, for the opening of our minds, upon subsequent liberators devoid of his high reconstructive seriousness.

I must add just one more name, for the nineteenth century, to the history of our American Puritan tradition. The original moral force which was in Mather and Franklin passed in the next age into a man who began to preach in Cotton Mather's church, Ralph Waldo Emerson, descendant of many generations of Puritans. The church itself had now become Unitarian: yet, after two or three years of service, Emerson, like Franklin, revolted from the church; the vital force of Puritanism in him impelled him to break from the church in behalf of his vision of sincerity, truth, and actuality. 'Whoso would be a man,' he declares in his famous essay on Self-Reliance, 'must be a nonconformist. He who would gather immortal palms must not be hindered by the *name* of goodness, but must explore if it be goodness.'

No American ever lived whose personal life was more exemplary; or who expressed such perfect disdain of outworn formulas and lifeless routine. There is dynamite in his doctrine to burst tradition to fragments, when tradition has become an empty shell. 'Every actual state is corrupt,' he cries in one of his dangerous sayings; 'good men will not obey the laws too well.' To good men whose eyes are wide and full of light, there is always breaking a new vision of right reason, which is the will of God, and above the law. Emer-

Digitized by Google

sion for emancipating, not merely the religious and moral, but also the intellectual and the political and social and æsthetic capacities of man, so that he may achieve the harmonious perfection of his whole nature, body and soul. To this vision of the good life, Puritanism has come by inevitable steps in its pilgrimage through the ages.

What have I been trying to demonstrate by this long review of the Puritan tradition? This, above all: that the Puritan is profoundly in sympathy with the modern spirit, is indeed the formative force in the modern spirit.

The Puritan is constantly discarding old clothes; but, being a well-born soul, he seeks instinctively for fresh raiment. Hence his quarrel with the Adamite, who would persuade him to rejoice in nakedness and seek no further.

Man is an animal, as the Adamites are so fond of reminding us. What escapes their notice is, that man is an animal constituted and destined by his nature to go on a pilgrimage in search of a shrine; and till he finds the shrine, constrained by his nature to worship the Unknown God. This the Puritan has always recognized. And this, precisely, it is that makes the Puritan a better emancipator of young souls than our contemporary Adamite.

A great part of our lives, as we all feel in our educational period, is occupied with learning how to do and to be what others have been and have done before us. But presently we discover that the world is changing around us, and that the secrets of the masters and the experience of our elders do not wholly suffice to establish us effectively in our younger world. We discover within us needs, aspirations, powers, of which the generation that educated us seems unaware, or toward which it appears to be indifferent, unsympathetic, or even actively hostile. We perceive gradually or with successive shocks of

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

surprise that many things which our fathers declared were true and satisfactory are not at all satisfactory, are by no means true, for us. Then it dawns upon us, perhaps as an exhilarating opportunity, perhaps as a grave and sobering responsibility, that in a little while we ourselves shall be the elders, the responsible generation. Our salvation in the day when we take command will depend, we believe, upon our disentanglement from the lumber of heirlooms and hereditary devices, and upon the free, wise use of our own faculties.

At that moment, if we have inherited, not the Puritan heirlooms, but the living Puritan tradition, we enter into the modern spirit. By this phrase I mean, primarily, the disposition to accept nothing on authority, but to bring all reports to the test of experience. The modern spirit is, first of all, a free spirit open on all sides to the influx of truth, *even from the past*. But freedom is not its only characteristic. The modern spirit is marked, further, by an active curiosity, which grows by what it feeds upon, and goes ever inquiring for fresher and sounder information, not content till it has the best information to be had anywhere. But since it seeks the best, it is, by necessity, also a critical spirit, constantly sifting, discri
jecting, and holding fast
good, only till that whic
within sight. This endless
it becomes central in a
labor, requires pain, requi
of courage; and so the m
with its other virtues, is an
As a reward for difficult
undertaken, the gods be
modern spirit a kind of e
with unfailing powers of
and growth.

To enter into this spiri
Puritan means by freedo
not, like the false emanci
cut us loose from the old
set us adrift at the mercy
tide. He comes aboard, li
lot; and while we trim our
the wheel and lays our
fresh voyage. His messa
leaves us is not, 'Hencefor
less,' but, 'Bear thou he
sceptre of thine own con
life and the passion of life.'
sage still stirs us as with t
trumpet, and frees and
not for the junketing of
vagabondage, but for the
cipline and renunciation
age, we are Puritans.

Digitized by Google

THINGS SEEN AND HEARD

BY EDGAR J. GOODSPEED

I

it is not too rigid to
l deviation into the
h times I direct my
boring City of De-
a lofty building, is
of light and leading
he darkness of the
ructure is not exter-
ut the modest frac-
to my activities is
ry apartment.
ry thing about my
s. One is formed by
oor, loosely fitting,
of such doors. It
the persons behind
action, while it as
all they may have
n eloquent conceal-
sounds that well
interstices of that
at it is psychology
the adjoining room.
firmations of that
nce break in upon
es with startling ef-
nd doubt that theol-
be inculcated to a
ato, an accompani-
f the mind.
ual is the other side
floor to ceiling it is
ot meanly divided
but broadly spaced,
rdly conscious it is
you may behold, as
ompany of men and
gh many motions but

making no sound. A tall romantic youth, presumably the teacher, stands before them, and they rise up and sit down for no perceptible reason and to no apparent purpose. One of them will get up and stand for a long time, and then will as suddenly and causelessly sit down again. At other times, even more distressing, they are all motionless. Lips move, but they give forth no sound. It is like a meeting of the deaf-and-dumb society. Worst of all, they will sometimes unanimously and quite without warning rise in their places, simultaneously adjust their wraps, and silently depart. It is as if they all suddenly realize that they have had enough of it. You know that you have. There is something weird in all this soundless action, this patient motiveless mechanical down-sitting and uprising, something far more distracting even than in those disembodied psychological voices that murmur in our ears.

But much more disturbing than either of these extraordinary neighbors of our reflections is their combination. The sounds that come through the door do not tally with the sights that come through the glass. What you hear bears no relation to what you see. It does not even contradict it. There is a war in your members. Your senses do not agree.

And yet you are haunted by the notion that what you are hearing has something to do with what you are seeing. When someone asks a question

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

behind the door at your left and someone makes a motion beyond the glass at your right, you instinctively try to relate the two. But in vain; there is no relation. Especially when all the visibles get up and leave, it seems as if it must be because of something the audibles have said. Nevertheless, the audibles go right on psychologizing, entirely oblivious of the visibles' departure.

Reflection has satisfied me that much confusion of the modern mind is due to the incongruity of what we hear and what we see. The conditions of my quaint lecture-room are typical. You look about upon a community of earnest hard-working people, soberly doing their daily work at business and at home. But you pick up the Home Edition, and read of a very different world of violence and vice. All its men are scoundrels and its women quite different from those you see, to say the least. You have long been assured that this is the Age of Reason; but observation finds little to support the claim. The Age of Impulse would seem as good a guess. You hear that the League of Nations is dead, but on visiting the movies you are astonished to see it in session and to find that it yet speaketh. You are told on all hands that everything about the war was a failure, and yet, as a whole, it seems to have accomplished its immediate end. You hear much lamentation over the sensationalism of the press, but as you read it, it is its conventionality that oftener leaves you mourning. The newspapers show you a comfortable view of the steel strike, but the cook's brother, who was one of the strikers, tells you something entirely different. With a laudable desire to preserve your reason, you do your best to cultivate the virtues of blindness, deafness, insensibility, and unbelief. Yet you are sometimes just a little bewildered. Your universe is not unified.

The most disturbing
things seen and things h
each other: that we mi
low for. The great trou
seem to bear no relatio
at all. Most political ta
scription. It has nothin
case. It is like the eff
friend of mine who, on
translate a well-known
tetus, produced the foll

'If teachings are no
sons of all things, and wh
trines, how much shoul
and as such the destruct

That mythical creatu
ican of British fiction,
trayed by Mr. Chesterto
Mr. Oppenheim, and M
as we love and enjoy hin
confessed, little known s
tion on this side of the se
in the strictest sense.
Quincey's unfortunate
est inventus. But he is no
lar among us for being
article. He is so rich, so
spoiled, so clear-eyed,
nasal-toned, poker-faced
all (true to the great tr
country), so quick on th

The trouble is not m
things we hear we neve
the things we see we ne
how extraordinary is the
you hear of something
Perhaps it is only an acc
not yearn to rise up and
that! I was there'? It
once, things seen coinci
heard.

Brain-proud men of sci
that Greek is dead. But
mind it is refreshing to
familiarity with Greek i
dinarily widespread in
This is all the more fa
time when the practical
triumphantly excluded

Digitized by Google

Brick Club, or the Gas and Gavel? But no! These rational considerations have no force with our youth. Nothing will satisfy them but more Greek letters. I have seen a man use twelve of them, or just half the alphabet, to set forth his social and learned affiliations.

Of course, to us Greek professors, shambling aimlessly about the streets with nothing to do, these brass signs are like the faces of old friends (no offense, I hope), and remind us of the names of the books of Homer, if nothing more.

But the Greek renaissance has gone much further than the alphabet. It pervades science. It is positively nonplussing to hear one's scientific friends rambling on in the language of Aristotle and Euclid, with their atoms and ions, their cryoscopes and cephalalgias, their sepsis, analysis, and autopsies. The fact is, they really talk very little but Greek, which is one reason why we all admire them so. They are greatest when they are most Greek; and were their Greek vocabulary suddenly taken from them, half their books would shrivel into verbs. Three fourths of them are indeed teaching Greek as hard as they can, though mercifully unconscious of the fact.

The Greek, on seeing a queer animal, waited till it was dead and then counted its toes. He thus soon knew enough to make a distinction between genus and species, which zoölogists are still talking about. Whence it comes about that our little Greek friends, the lion, the elephant, the rhinoceros, and the hippopotamus, are household favorites still. Consistent people who object to Greek will expunge these words from their vocabulary.

The Greek conquest of our social youth and of our grizzled age is nothing, however, to its triumphs in commerce. Here both letters and vocabulary come into their own. It must be

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

admitted that we English-speaking people are poor word-makers. Only in moments of rare inspiration do we achieve a Nabisco or a Mazola. But in this age of new creations one of Adam's chief needs is names for the bewildering things he sees about him. How indispensable to us inarticulate moderns is the voluble Greek! Like one who hides a thimble for you to find, he has named everything in advance, and all we have to do is to discover it. From Alpha Beer to Omega Oil, from Antikamnia to Sozodont, the Greek has taught us names. Even automobile is half Greek, which is really what makes it desirable. Who would want an ipsomobile? And Solon and moron, those twin pillars of the journalistic vocabulary, without which no newspaper could exist a week, are pure Grecian. When I attend the funeral of Greek, therefore, as I am constantly invited to do, I am comforted to observe old Greek himself and his whole family, thinly disguised, heading the chief mourners.

II

Nowhere is the contrast between things seen and things heard more striking than in language. Very conscientious people have observed this and, fearful of seeming something other than they are, have evolved phonetic spelling. Witty people like Max Beerbohm and Josh Billings have observed it too, and made such use of it as 'Yures til deth,' and '"The laibrer iz werthi ov hiz hire," an that iz aul.' Children are proficient here. One I know recently addressed a letter to his 'Dere ant LN.' 'Nit mittenz ar the kynd,' as they spell at Lake Placid. An intelligent-looking man steps in front of you at the club, and murmurs a deferential 'Skewmy,' to which you suavely reply, 'Doughmeshnit.' No one has ever been able to reproduce conversation in print. The gulf between the words we words we say is too great forts in this direction ar made by ambitious writ truth is that, from the s the printed page, we all spe

The fact is, almost ev hear is more or less conven type or in telling. People e ments of news, or funny few familiar types. News can easily be grouped und thoroughly conventional h servant friend once remar women of literature were contrivances compared t ones we know, and I was r to perceive that he was in books no one will go to relating things as unconv they really happen. We tomed to stereotypes, and w desire them. In reality, of c happen much more intri anyone will bother to rep to hear them reported. T ably what is meant when truth is stranger than fi vastly more complex.

Take a simple example. homeward of an autum fatigued by the labors of sorial day, you are met by a high degree, who declares been looking for you. Wil meet the Cardinal? Like Concord, you like a churc cowl, and you are careful No, as you conceal your and fence for more definite You fortify yourself by t that you have encounter and dukes before this, an remember which is His E which His Grace. It see Archbishop is to bring the from the other end of town fifteen they will hesitate down-town corner long en

Digitized by Google

ave to do is to carry
rn, to mark you off
rong. And you would
otor-cycle man who
memorandum of the
v.
line. You move on
ıg quite without ef-
ring things you will
shop and some ob-
address to the Cardi-
, you decide to ask
German Cardinal
emarked, 'We will
he really did answer,
of peace.' Your sim-
ıre soon made, and
y down-town in some

been said to be the
and you do not wish
rince of the Church.
ke your stand at the
treaming boulevard.
iest. You are less in-
you could wish, for
ing an academic cap
doctor's gown upon
nceal these accoutre-
the purpose of your
y by a wave of that
ou are to bring the
lotal cortège, motor-
stop. You scan each
ith eagerness. It be-
The Archbishop is
itude. He should be
perceive approaching
ely limousine, which
preconceived ideas of
in automobiles. It
ty. You have now
of passing cars. It is
-twenty-five — one-
eavens! Have you
al's car, Archbishop
our dawning dismay
observation reassert
tately limousine you

had once taken for his reappears, from the same direction as before and still empty. You are not mistaken. You recognize the chauffeur. You almost think he recognizes you. It strikes you that these cars that you have been seeing are not all different ones, but are simply circling about before you, like Cæsar's army on the stage.

It is two o'clock. You despair. The party has eluded you. It has probably already arrived at the University, having gone out some other way. After all, why should you have escorted the Cardinal out? He is escorted everywhere by two archbishops, five motor-cops, five plain-clothes men, and a civilian guard of honor. This should suffice. He is indeed a stranger in the city, but he can hardly go astray. You begin to feel sadly superfluous, yet, following a Casabiancan instinct, you stay on. A friend who has observed your situation goes into the club and telephones. He returns to inform you that, owing to the Cardinal's fatigue, the programme has been postponed one hour. It is two-ten. You observe that it is just time for him now to be appearing. The stately and mysterious limousine, already twice seen, now passes for the third time. It is still vacant.

The mystery of it fascinates you. Is it inextricably caught in the circling current, like some flying Dutchman on wheels, powerless to make a port? It occurs to you that, if the cars before you are in some instances merely running around in circles, the foot-passengers behind you may be doing the same thing. Two-twenty-five, and again that silent, vacant, funereal limousine sweeps by, for the fourth time. It is getting on your nerves. Is it possible that public-spirited owners send their limousines on idle afternoons to circle showily about the Avenue, hour after hour, to swell the concourse and thus contribute their mite, as it were, to the

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

gayety of nations? Or is this mysterious vehicle, with its hawk-like circling, bent on some sinister errand of abduction, or worse?

But at this instant a police-gong clangs down the thronging street. Five motor-cops appear, and in the car behind them a mediæval saint, a modern archbishop, and divers celebrities such as one sees in guards of honor. One knows them instinctively by their tall hats, and observes that there are still occasions for such hats — the cardinal points of existence, as it were. But you have scarcely registered this observation and handed the leading motor-policeman his typewritten instructions, when you are aware that one of the hats is pointing you to the second car. You turn swiftly to it. The gentlemen in it spring out with surprising agility and make a place for you among them. The cortège has hardly stopped. The nimble gentlemen spring in again (the car is an open one), and you are off.

You experience a momentary disappointment that you are not to hobnob with the illustrious prelates, but bend your attention upon their distinguished representatives about you. They are little given to conversation. If they are not communicative, neither are they inquisitive. They are of a negative demeanor. They drive at a frightful speed, shepherding all other traffic to the curb out of their way as they advance. They achieve this flattering effect by blowing a siren, sounding a loud gong, and hurling deep-throated objurgations, much deeper than you are accustomed to, at anyone who crosses their path. Who are these supreme autocrats, you ask yourself? Mere money could not behave thus. A suspicion crosses your mind and you ask what car this is. You are informed that it is the Police Car!

Of course, you do in the end meet the Cardinal and set his feet upon the long carpet pontifically stretche ception. That is all there i about it. You did meet th and you 'acted' (admirabl his escort. But as you look that day, that bald stateme summarize or even adumb pressions.

III

In one respect alone th does observation agree w Both are generally inconclu Repplier has recently rem frequently one who reads is ginnings of things and left t the end. It is just as true are always wondering wh became of this man and th our acquaintance, and of ment or that, once brought Life and print are alike full ous fragments, which we ha to fit into their exact places eral order.

Domestic rearrangements on a recent winter night, t in a room at the back of the looking what I call the gard retiring I put up a window refreshing whiff of the might perfume my dreams a me that there was no immed of famine.

The night was cold, and m slumber were frustrated by steadily recurring sound li shoveling coal or clearing f from a sidewalk. But the hou eleven and twelve, seemed able time for such operatio midnight, however, it ceased asleep.

The next morning I mer sound to a member of the had also been sleeping on t side of the house, and she de she too had noticed it and mystified about it. It did

Digitized by Google

to shovel off the hard-
it was, of course, hard-
n the thermometer was
ny astonishment, how-
tired on the following
e same harsh, grating,
repeated for an hour or
night. I thought again
that it was coal that
ed. Perhaps some poor
ighbor was hoarding
oyment took the form
hoard over and over,
er it through the mid-
is theory appealed to
lay awake and listened
ntil I noticed that the
whatever it was, made
fell. It therefore could

ourse, be snow, or at
upon a bed of snow,
oiseless. But why this
g of hardened snow
ete walks night after
d vast and middle of
t some wretch who had
ed his sidewalks and so
luntary homicide, who
th remorse, must pick
ng shovel at the icy
ht came to his relief?

ines ever meet the eye

of an elderly seafaring man, a pigeon-tamer by trade, who called upon me last Saturday on his way home to Pittsburgh from his second mother-in-law's funeral five miles from Madison, Wisconsin, which he had attended because he considered a wife the best friend a man has in the world, and his second wife, with whom he had become acquainted through advancing her eight dollars to enable her to reach Pittsburgh, was one whom he could not surpass if he married a thousand times; but in returning from which to Chicago by train, overcome by grief and fatigue, he had been robbed of all his money except fourteen dollars and was forced in consequence to seek out his old employer, a professor variously pronounced Riddle, Griggle, and Gridley, but spelled Lelley, in default of finding whom or the grand master of his fraternal order in Englewood, he was reduced to borrowing enough money to make up the price of a ticket to Pittsburgh, or four dollars and eighty-seven cents, from me, a perfect stranger — I should be glad to hear from him again. Till when, I shall continue to reflect on the disparity of what I have seen with what I have heard. Perhaps he was an actor out of work. If so, the performance was worth something, and it certainly had a plot.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

AT THIRTY

BY EMMA LAWRENCE

I

LINDA MAINWARING awoke to consciousness on the morning of her thirtieth birthday rather reluctantly. It was a day she had dreaded; for although her twenties had been somewhat turbulent, she had, on the whole, enjoyed them; and they had been, at least, intensely interesting. She was a person with great zest for life; but now, as she lay in her bed, it seemed to her that she had passed through every emotional crisis, in the last ten years, that a woman is capable of; and that there was very little left that life could hold besides stodgy and comfortable existence.

It was a long time that she lay there, thinking, before she rang the bell which would summon her maid, her mail, and her breakfast. She rather wondered that, at the end of thirty years, she felt so tremendously fit, so interested and eager for whatever the future might hold for her, so fearful that it might contain nothing that would not prove an anti-climax to all she had already experienced. She was rather given to self-analysis, and it interested her to compare the woman she was to-day with the girl who, ten years before, had married Harry Mainwaring. She told herself with some humor that, in spite of many lost illusions and the added years, she greatly preferred herself at thirty.

'What a horrible little thing I must have been,' she thought, 'half-doll and half-animal; and if I had any brains, they were sound asleep. Yet how important and how confident I felt; how convinced that no one else was capable of such ideals or of such love as Harry's and mine.'

This trend of thought brought her to considering another situation which the day held for her. To-day her divorce became absolute; from to-day on, she would be as free to plan her own life, dream her own dreams, think her own thoughts, as she had been before she married. Only the voices of her three little girls, whom she could faintly hear chattering at their schoolroom breakfast, could make her married life vivid to her. Financially she had always been less dependent on Harry than he on her; the house she lived in she had been born in and been married from. Yet she felt entirely free from bitterness for the experiences of the past ten years. Nothing could be entirely regretted that had helped to transform the sensual little doll that had been Linda Emmett into the clear-eyed, clean-witted Linda Mainwaring. There was no room for bitterness in her, no room for resentment for the forces that had tempered her, the fire that had left her pliable.

She marveled that Harry cared to use this glorious new freedom that she was reveling in, to form other bonds. He was to be married at noon to a woman in whom Linda, from a slight acquaintance, could discover nothing to equal this thrill of youth, recaptured through freedom. Passion was so dead in her that she was apt to forget it as a factor in other people's lives; and, as a

Digitized by Google

o distasteful was the
own experience, she
noring it. What could
ıd in marriage with a
le woman, she won-
sate for this magnifi-

dered at his desire to
state of matrimony,
ot at all. She was, in
ul to the woman who,
responsible for Har-
ered Linda infinitely
ge's decree alone could
she was sorry on the
t for the newspaper
the wedding would
aged eight, was too
put off much longer
ıd in a house full of
eless tongues, an in-
uld learn a good deal
s. The divorce itself
ently conducted, and
gement which made
for life of a trust fund
hildren, on condition
ll claim to them, had
public. It had always
f Harry's that Linda
hough it had worked
e to her advantage, —
ın argument he could
when she had signed
e sum for which her
trustee, she realized
ıe fully compensated
he might sustain.
ıen. Thirty years old
from marital ties —
are free from those,
prisoners in the house
ith curious eyes into
ing surreptitiously to
ıce and see the colors
inda had lived in the
season, and watched
resh bud to withered
e at the end was ajar,

and she stood gazing with eager eyes on a far horizon.

Thirty years old and free — when the power of youth and the wisdom which experience can give meet for a brief space. There was so much to do and so much to do with. Linda felt that, at this moment, the vitality of her body found its complement in the virility of her mind. The dark room suddenly seemed to stifle her; there was not time, with all she wanted to accomplish, for mornings in bed and breakfast on a tray; those had belonged to that half-numbed creature whom circumstance had so nearly wrecked. She would have to steer her boat clear from the sluggish current it had drifted into; she wanted to find the fast-flowing river where there were other boats to compete with; and of what use her certificate of pilot, if she could not avoid the rapids?

II

The maid came in response to her bell, and in a moment the room was flooded with sunlight. Hermence brought a handful of letters and papers before the breakfast-tray appeared; people were making a point of being nice to Linda — a fact she appreciated, though their attentions bored her. Her mail was full of notes from women, including invitations with their birthday congratulations. There was one letter which really interested her, and that was from a man. It read: —

My dear Linda, —

You must admit that I've respected your wish to be let alone for the past few months; but is n't it time to let down the bars a little? Are n't you making a mistake in thinking you can build up your life again irrespective of your friends? Even if you blame a few people (and, by the way, a remarkably silly set of people) who happened to be

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

your intimates for a few years, you can't eschew the whole race of your contemporaries and expect to make very much of the time left you. It's rather ridiculous in you, Linda, to despise all motion because you could n't keep up with a fast set. So, unless you absolutely forbid me, I'm coming out to see you to-morrow. For one reason, it's your birthday; and for another, there are n't any rules in the etiquette book on how to behave on your husband's wedding-day; and at least you can talk to me, which you can't to Philippa or Tiny.

Yours always,

LEIGH VANE.

Linda digested this with her breakfast. She had long ago ceased to wonder that Leigh Vane rushed in upon ground where the most tactful of ministering angels could not have trodden; yet she knew he was as wholesome for her as are sun and air for a fever patient. Many times in the past few years he had opened windows letting in light to the sick-room of her almost morbid brain. In a way, his letter took the edge off the mood in which she found herself prepared to face life; only a short time ago she had felt that she was ready for whatever the future held for her; but she realized now that she had wanted nothing so disturbing to her tranquillity as this meeting with Vane to happen at once. She was quite willing to enjoy her peace superficially, without stirring any of the depths of thought which he invariably discovered in her; nor did she want to be scolded for the philosophy of little resistance upon which she planned to erect her life. Vane, who appreciated only what he gained by his own labor, was not always sympathetic to Linda's moods. She had once told him that he made accomplishment his God, and had lost all temperament in his mania for efficiency.

As she dressed for ridi
ed herself very critically.
months she had been a b
her personal appearance,
ized that her physical
was no less an asset than
She certainly did not lo
was still essentially your
ness of her figure and the
face; the hair was bright
and if the light eyes were
the mouth was adorab
moreover, lucky in that
of wearing her clothes we
blessed with a skin that e
came. She was considered
in reality she was more d
certain dramatic quality
perfection of line.

She had ordered her ho
there was much to be att
she was up and dressed. I
servants, and the welfare
brought duties which she
serious consideration, tho
produced so smooth a m
a casual critic might have
ognize the personality w
hind it.

It was a delightful d
beat down with the first
everything alive must re
fresh wind from the nort
to be engaged in a gi
cleaning to remove any tr
tenant before spring tool
nite abode. Linda, mount
chestnut thoroughbred,
ride hugely. It made her
enthusiastic about life in
her own in particular, th
the confining walls of her
riot of sun and air, face to
colossal transformation t
undertook every year, he
diate problems took on
proportions. Harry's mar
birthday, her meeting
Vane, all proved themselv

Digitized by Google

trivial as the dan-
ginning to star the
gh. It was enough
to live and enjoy,
en all that the win-
had felt die within
is clean wind fresh-
ner mind and make
Fainwaring who was
here.
re distracted from
e meeting with a
closely connected
of her existence to
welcome. He was
man who had once
nion of the Main-
h Linda had often
t entirely endorse
was making an ef-
-day, probably be-
of Harry still less.
exercise, he joined
emarks about the
viously difficult for
nversation down to
ar of wounding her
at last he ventured
friend who was not
ed with the some-
nories they shared

iend Leigh Vane is
ings,' he said. 'If
overnor and he does
, there's no telling

l at once.
ering running him,
een Leigh for ages;
e was always dab-
had no idea they
eriously as that.'
thought of in the
neighbor told her.
n keeping out of the
n last year, and the
n't always ungrate-
nave a chance, be-

cause, if a good man is put up for our party, he'll poll a good many votes from the Democrats. Their man, you see, is a renegade from the Roman Church, and so Leigh has a hope of that vote.'

'I do hope he'll win out,' Linda said. 'He's exactly the type of man who ought to go in for politics in this country at a time like this. I must leave you here,' she added, 'as I'm going home through the woods. It's been awfully nice to see you.'

She nodded and turned her horse, starting off briskly through the sun-dappled path, glad to be alone again.

She had lunch with the little girls and their governess. When the clock struck twice, as they finished, it occurred to her that their father was already the husband of another woman. As the two younger girls left the dining-room with Mademoiselle, Philippa dawdled behind, apparently eager to converse with her mother. She waited, with the intuitive tact that children sometimes display, until they were alone in the room, before she put the question which had been troubling her ever since she had overhead a conversation between the servants that morning.

'Mother,' she said, 'how can Daddy marry somebody else? Caroline told Hermence this morning it was a wonder you felt like riding horseback at the very hour of your husband's wedding.'

Linda had been expecting some such question, but it found her with no ready answer. She was almost tempted to evade it, to chide Philippa for listening to the servants' gossip; but she knew that would in no way check the ideas forming in the busy little head.

'I am sorry you heard Caroline,' she said at last. 'I had hoped you need know nothing about it until you were older, when of course I should have explained it to you myself. You knew that Daddy did n't live here with us

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

any more because Daddy and I are not married any longer.'

'Is n't he our father any more?' asked Philippa.

'Yes, he's your father still, and because he's your father you must always love him and believe the best of him. You see, when he and I were married, we loved each other very much, so it was right for us to be married and have you and Tiny and Nancy for children; but after we found we did n't care, it became wrong to live together the way people do who love each other.'

'Did you get unmarried?' queried Philippa.

'So we got unmarried,' answered her mother. 'Only it's called getting divorced, and that left Daddy free to marry again, someone whom he did love.'

'How do you get di — divorced?' the child asked. 'Is it like a wedding? Do you go to church and have music and flowers and wear a white dress like Aunt Tina's?'

'It is n't like a wedding at all, dear. When people are married, it is a very happy time; but there is nothing happy about a divorce. It is very sad when two people, who planned to live all their lives together, find they don't love each other enough to make it possible.'

'Are you very sad, mother?'

She wished she could answer truthfully that she was. It seemed so terrible to have to explain the sordid tragedy of divorce, and to admit that it had left her almost untouched. All the arguments which she had used a few months before in justifying the course she had determined to pursue appeared so futile in the face of Philippa's bewildered gaze.

'I'm not very sad any longer,' she answered at last. 'You see, I have you three girls to make me happy; and if I had never married Daddy, I should never have had you. And we will hope that Daddy will be very
won't we?'

She tried to smile and s
from her chair, hoping th
lame explanation had satis
but Philippa had one mo

'Then will you marr
too?'

This time Linda was ab

'Oh, dear, no,' she sa
want to marry anybody.
be very contented here j
ways have been. Run al
darling, and remember tha
been telling you things
want you to talk about
not even Mademoiselle
girls. If there's anythin
understand, you're to ask

III

They left the dining-ro
Philippa to prepare for
drive in the pony-cart,
read up on any political n
find before Vane should
discovered, however, that
impossible to keep her
printed pages, so often did
revert to her conversation
pa. She had not meant
to the child of the sanctity
yet it seemed impossible
enormity of the step sh
had taken, and she doul
Philippa's psychology w
more affected if she foun
in a position which the
questioned.

But her pleasure in
gone, and Vane found h
possibly expected to find
had chosen this particular
his friendship. It would h
and probably shocked hi
covered Linda in her mood
ing. As it was, he had th
of drawing her out of hers

Digitized by Google

his own prospects. He personality, and as he r granted that women rested in the broader men, he took the same ll to them.

broken down the bar- e, and they were again ing, he began to ques- herself. He approved e had been dignified won the sympathy of by making no bid for r distinctly improved,

up,' he told her; 'not nd, because, as a mat- ok younger than ever, ne now as an intelli- '

rike you as an adult ered, making a little she was not displeased ng personalities with a nterested in her. She en she was to make up she had lost on things d so deplorably worth- ger she felt to recon- more rugged lines.

fe is so entirely over,' hat's the only part I bout. It's rather hard o begin afresh.'

ppose,' Vane answered, r as a wife is closed? you have only just e a wife for a man; not stand, but a grown-up a grown-up woman. 'that your present n't a very healthy one an comes along. You cond mistake.'

g a little far, even for came intensely serious. ould try to appreciate he said. 'You say I own up, and I assure you that it is true, if it is only in the way I look at the things which I accepted so lightly a few months ago. While I find myself happier to-day than I have been since I outgrew my infatuation for Harry and have seen him with the eyes of all the people, yourself included, who begged me not to marry him, I realize more than ever before the tragedy that has occurred, and I would rather go back to the hell which made up my life until six months ago than have had to make the explanation which I made to Philippa to-day. So there is no need, Leigh, for your kindly little warning about second mistakes.'

'My dear Linda,' he said, quite as serious as she, 'I don't want you to think that I, of all people, have taken this step of yours as anything but the very best way out of an intolerable situation, and I trust with all my heart that it is one which will prove to be for the happiness of everyone concerned; although I understand you perfectly when you say that to-day you feel that happiness is hardly an essential compared to your children's belief in the sanctity of marriage. Forgive me if I have offended by too great frankness in stating that I can't believe that life is over for anyone who has developed under it as magnificently as you.'

Compliments from Leigh were few and far between, and Linda treasured them correspondingly. She took his proffered hand.

'You will help me to go on, won't you?' she said. 'I am depending on you to keep me in touch with lots of big things, which are all around you and quite out of reach of a lone woman.'

'As a start, I'll send you some books which may be of interest,' he promised. 'At least, I hope they'll prove so involved you'll have to let me come often to explain them.'

In a few moments he took his departure, conscious that he felt more intense

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

sympathy for this old friend than he had in all the miserable years which had followed her rash disregard of his advice and the advice of all the people who had known both Linda and Mainwaring. To him, divorce was a very hideous thing; and the fact that it had become so to her made her more appealing than she had been before she had experienced it. Linda, on her side, felt that her friendship with Leigh had been put through the acid test and come out pure gold.

IV

She began to pick up the broken threads again, and in the next few months, although she became intimate with no one, she resumed a normal intercourse with the people who had been lifelong friends and neighbors. But behind her outer life she continued to expand and develop within herself. The books which Leigh sent her she not only read, but studied; and soon he was coming, not only to expound their meanings, but to discuss and argue them with her. That summer they went deep into a comprehension of Socialism, and, strangely enough, it made a strong appeal both to the woman who had spent her whole life among the frivolous by-products of capitalism and to the man who was running for governor, the choice of serious capitalists. As the work of his campaign grew more engrossing, he found tremendous inspiration in Linda's freshly awakened mental responsiveness; and in meeting the demands of her eager mind for more and ever more facts and explanations, he developed a knowledge of the psychology of the people whom he wanted for his constituents.

It happened that year that there was no dearth of gubernatorial material for the Republicans to choose from, and the nomination of a candidate promised a more bitter fight than the election itself. The state had suf
considerable period fro
governor, who had be
office by the labor vote
Church, of which he wa
had pushed representat
stitution on every sta
had hitherto kept clear
ferences; and he had be
the fore in advocating p
to be supported by the
tax-paying public.

But, although many
the Governor, his policie
en enough antagonism
districts, where the Re
look for their strength,
unless some defalcation
own ranks. Suddenly,
mies were despairing, h
ammunition into their h
ed an explosion among
ents. Whether it was a
conviction, or pressure
by some political magn
matrimonial difficulties
ascertained; but witho
the leaders of his party
the Governor announ
favor of more uniform
vorce laws. The preser
quoted as saying, en
only on the poor, while
them by taking up res
other state. It was pr
person could obtain
criminal, that one coul
natic; and if religious c
divorce and remarriage
cause, it should do as n
causes. He added that
could not affect peopl
Church denied divorce;
ly, as a Catholic, he de
but as governor of a pe
creeds, he invoked justi

This last, which wa
tended as a sop to his C
abate the antagonism t

Digitized by Google

en the weight of such
olitician as Mr. Henry
unable to crush the op-
hreatened to break the
ength. The fact that
e had been confined in
r the hopelessly insane
gentleman the oppro-
the Eighth; and it was
y that the Governor
with his Church, but
l honor was not above

y Republican leaders
presented itself which
a chance for reinstate-
McFarland and his col-
ong enough to keep a
from acquiring control
ty, they were unable to
ber of individuals who
d their disapproval of
vernor's pretension to
t therefore seemed not
t highly probable that,
ublican nominee prove
lly, he would stand an

eigh Vane, the present
to a hope, not only that
win the coming elec-
nan of ideals and vision
ore than hold down the
d lead the state back to
majority which a fairly
of foreign labor had
rthrown. But it would
firmly believed in his
lish this, — not a mere
and it would take a
sonal integrity and sin-
art from his political
duce the wavering ele-
ver to his side. Of the
ts to the nomination,
od out more and more
he date for decision ap-
e were Bernard Fabian,
and Leigh Vane.

Fabian was one of the largest employers of labor in the state; he was a self-made man, who had worked his way up in one of the woolen mills that he now controlled.

Joyce was the more usual type. He had been through the political mill, and had given up a profitable law practice to enter politics.

Though not a capitalist like Fabian, Vane came of people who had always belonged to the moneyed class. They were also people who had served their country in various branches. His grandfather had held the rank of colonel in the Civil War, where his name was still remembered in the homes of men who had composed his regiment. His son, Leigh's father, was concluding his useful if not brilliant term as United States Senator at the time of his death. Leigh himself had been brought up in the traditions of Republicanism, and several of the big men of the party had been his personal friends from childhood. But his present strength lay far less in these affiliations than in the esteem in which the influential men of his own state held him. Orphaned and well-to-do, he had chosen a life of rigorous work on a newspaper, where he had never attempted to score personally, but had given freely of himself to the good of the cause. A year before, he had been requested to contest the Congressional seat of his district, and for a while he had been greatly tempted; but he had proved himself big enough not to risk splitting the slim Republican majority; and he had done such excellent work in upholding the man who might have been his rival, that he was henceforth considered a definite political factor.

Linda had made a point of meeting both Fabian and Joyce, and assured herself that, quite apart from her affection for him, Leigh was far better qualified for the office than either of the

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

others. She was not the kind of woman who would ever be a direct factor in public life, but her influence could be none the less real. Men said things to her, when she expressed a wish to take politics seriously, which they might not have said to so casual a male acquaintance; and she was clever in using the information she received. She secured several bits of political gossip, which were of some value to Vane; and when he told her so, she was conscious of greater enthusiasm for life than she had felt for years. And it was not only in this way that she helped him. He had no one very near to him with whom to discuss the problems that his campaign presented; and not only did Linda's eager interest prevent him from feeling that he was imposing them upon her, but in putting them before her, he put them more clearly to himself. If Linda was a help to him, he proved himself invaluable to her, not only in stimulating her intellect, but in many little crises of her domestic life.

There were, of course, comparatively long stretches of time when they did not see each other at all, but these made them realize how closely their interests were attuned. Perhaps the fact that the whole situation was abnormal made both Linda and Vane slow to realize its normal consequence. Summer burned itself out, and the early autumn brought new political activities, which made frequent meetings impossible.

V

It was in October, after an interval of some weeks, that Vane found an opportunity to dine and spend a quiet evening with Mrs. Mainwaring — the last before his immediate prospects would be determined.

He came down to the country rather early; he wanted to see the children, he said; and they, enchanted to see him, swarmed over him, showed hi new acquisition since his la played a series of delightful ga him, and went reluctantly up their bedtime, bribed by the that he would come and help tuck them up. Linda had be audience than participant in th She was conscious of a queer h when she saw Leigh with her ch a jealousy for them, and a kn that he filled a place in their could never fill.

He stood up when they ha smoothing his hair with his straightening his tie, which t mad game had disarranged, Linda's eyes. The expression hurt him unbearably — it m look so detached, so apart from healthy, ambitious life.

'I should like some air before he said. 'Is it too cold for a las the garden, do you think, befor good-night to the children?'

'It's not very cold. Thi brought a frost, and there's left in the garden, but it's there, I know.'

She got up from her chair; he one of the long glass doors and her out on the terrace; they and descended some steps. It w save for the cold light of th autumn moon, which cast hard, shadows. The garden, surroun great hemlock hedge, had bee of color only a few days before night the flowers in the moonl peared dry husks, ghosts of a loveliness.

They were both very quiet; thinking that once she had st of the house and danced in thi lit garden with a vine twiste hair, and a man had pursued kissed her in the shadow of the hedge, and she had thought s him. Vane was thinking what

Digitized by Google

vas, compared to a wo-
ike that; a woman who
ore than state or party
him; a woman he want-
e laurels of a statesman.
o the blackness of the
they were visualizing
they were thinking of—
broke the long silence.
lear — my dear!' And
rms, their lips together
ommunion. And with
s sealed his; with it she
gdom, the kingdom that
ers before. The dancing
en kissed in the garden
the woman in Vane's
ainwaring had captured
e, which her youth had
he had never touched
soul that had matured
ompanionship and blos-
s.

until the children's in-
enetrated their fastness,
aced their steps to the
he nurseries, the little
ght-clothes were eager
p, but Leigh was in no
e was sweet with them,
t it was he who stood
or, while they crowded
o say their prayers and
night.

either of them spoke
erstanding was too deep,
too complete, to need
amatic touch, which no
enabled Linda to start
conversation when the
in the room, as their
tion led them to make
ating; but it was a re-
meal over and to find
n in the drawing-room,
uptions.

nine, when the motor
m to the train, they had
y good-night, to discuss
their next meeting, to plan any detail of their future — the present was gloriously sufficient.

'I'll write you in the morning, Linda; to-night, perhaps, when I get to town. Good-night, my darling —' And he was in the hall, struggling with the overcoat which her old butler was holding for him.

She watched him through a crack in the door, eager to see him, to see his face when he was not aware of her. He pulled a paper from his pocket and wrote upon it hastily. She saw him turn to the servant, and heard him speak.

'Mitten, here's a telegram — get it off for me to-night, will you? I meant to send it from the village, but I can't make my train if I do. You can send it over the telephone, but it must go at once. Thanks awfully.'

And he was gone, after handing the paper to the man. The noise of the motor became louder for a moment, and then died away in the distance.

Linda went back to her big chair beside the fire, almost unconscious of any movement she made. She had ceased to be mere flesh and blood; rather she was a sunlit beach flooded by warm waves of happiness.

The entrance of Mitten aroused her.

'Beg pardon, Miss Linda,' he said — after Harry's departure, he could never bear to call her Mrs. Mainwaring, and had gone back to her girlhood appellation. 'Mr. Vane left a message for me to send over the telephone, but I can't 'ardly make hout 'is 'andwriting. I wondered would you mind, miss, being as 'ow 'e said hit was most himportant?'

'I'll send it, of course. You can put the lights out here, and I'll telephone the message from my room. Good night, Mitten.'

'Good-night, miss.'

'Lord,' he thought as she went out,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

''ow 'appy she looks — the way she did before that skunk came foolin' round 'ere.'

Up in her room, Linda found it difficult to concentrate on the mechanical act of forwarding Leigh's message. She sat down by her telephone and smoothed out the paper; but it took several readings for his written words to connect with her mind, which happiness had temporarily drugged.

Then suddenly they and their purport became burned upon her brain. It was addressed to his campaign manager and left unsigned.

'Stop all activities to further my candidacy. Events have arisen which would render it impossible for me to accept the nomination. Throw any influence we can control to Joyce. Will see you to-morrow morning.'

If Linda had lost time through being unable to concentrate her thoughts, she made up for it now. Thoughts, unwelcome and at times confused, rushed through her mind, bearing her down with the weight of their evidence. Leigh was giving up his career because he was pledged to marry her, — Linda Mainwaring, — a divorced woman. She was that in the eyes of the world, though in her own she was divorced, not only from Mainwaring, but from the girl who had married Mainwaring. Had she known Leigh less well, she might have hesitated, might have seen less clearly that, should she marry him, his thwarted career would always prove a barrier between them that even their love could not surmount. But she knew him too intimately to deceive herself; she was fully aware of his ambitions, his convictions as to what a man in his circumstances owed to his country and to his tradition.

It was midnight when her course presented itself to her; so clearly did she see it, and so quickly must she act, that she was only dimly aware of her emotions. Soon they wou they would engulf her in and despair; but for the too swift reaction from numbed them.

She opened the door t her fire and lamp-lit roor spaciousness of the hall, along to the servant's p house, and knocked on M The old man opened it c gaunt figure and curious, lumined in the dim light on the service stairway.

'Miss Linda, — you're

'No, — no, Mitten, — matter. I mean, nothi Something has happened it necessary I should get a Vane early to-morrow m message was very import swer has come to it. I wa to town on the milk trai to him yourself; it is ver Wake Henry and tell him you to the station at five; letter for you then, — the quite ready, — it's very i

She was aware that she herself, that her voice sou without emphasis; but from Mitten's concerned he comprehended and wou her instructions.

Back in her own room to control her voice suffici the telegram. Then she w with the necessity for writ — the terrible letter whic Leigh from her forever, th which was in itself a sin She sat at her desk for h destroying what she had writing, drawing aimless li pictures of nothing. It wa o'clock when she folded h missive into its envelop across the room in respons knock.

Digitized by Google

DEAR LEIGH, —

I think I must have been mad tonight — life has been so difficult that at times I have felt utterly defeated, and it was one of those moments, my dear, when you called to me in the garden. All at once it seemed to me possible, because of my deep affection for you, to lay the whole burden of my problems on you. But now I am alone again, I am sane. I care too much for you to be willing that the woman you marry should go to you defeated, wanting only rest and comfort; she shall go to you triumphant, wanting nothing but your love. That part of me is gone forever, burned out by the fire which destroyed my youth — what I gave once I shall never have to give again; and here in this house where so much of my drama has been enacted, I realize that the stage cannot be reset, or the players recast for its conclusion. You have been a loyal, helpful, wonderful friend always; you will not, I am sure, ask me to relinquish that friendship because for a few short hours we mistook it for something else. You have made me more reliant, given me new confidence to meet situations as they arise in my path. It would be a poor return to give you the husk of love; forgive me for offering it, and forget that I once thought it could be made to satisfy you. It would be as impossible to find within myself anything more worthy of you as it would be to recapture summer in my frost-touched garden; but there will still be warm, pleasant days of Indian summer, when our friendship will ripen and deepen.

With every wish always for your success and happiness,

LINDA MAINWARING.

PRIME

BY AMY LOWELL

YOUR voice is like bells over roofs at dawn
When a bird flies
And the sky changes to a fresher color.

Speak, speak, Beloved.
Say little things
For my ears to catch
And run with them to my heart.

Digitized by Google

PREACHING IN LONDON. II

BY JOSEPH FORT NEWTON

January 1, 1918. — Christmas is over, thank God! The contrast between its gentle ideals and the ghastly realities round about us almost tears one in two. Here we sing, 'Peace on earth among men of good-will'; out there, the killing of boys goes on. What irony! Still, one remembers that it was a hard old Roman world in which the Angels of the first Christmas sang their anthem of prophecy. How far off it must have seemed that day; how far off it seems today. The world is yet in twilight, and from behind dim horizons comes ceaselessly the thunder of great guns. A frost-like surface of garish gayety sparkles in our cities, as anxiety turns to laughter, or to apathy, for relief.

After all these ages, must we say that the song of Christmas is as vain as all the vain things proclaimed of Solomon? No; it will come true. It is not a myth. It is not a mockery. Surviving ages of slaughter, it returns to haunt us, proving in this last defeat its immortality. Because that music is far off, we know that it is not our own, but was sent into the world by One who is as far above our discordant noises as the stars are above the mists. Whatever befall, we dare not lose Faith, dare not surrender to Hate, since that would be the saddest of all defeats. And the children sang carols at our doors, as in the days of Dickens, as if to rebuke our misgiving and despair.

January 7. — One serious handicap besets a minister who labors abroad: he cannot deal with public questions with the same freedom that he can at home. Indeed, he can hardly t them at all — when criticism i quired — save as they may be i national in their range. Yesterda the national Day of Prayer, I r protest in the City Temple ag allowing the increase of brewery plies to stand, on the ground that not cricket to destroy foodstuffs time when we have no bread fit t and cannot get sugar for our chil To-day every brewery paper in the dom jumped upon me with all feet, *John Bull* leading the pack does not matter if every journal i land stands on its hind-legs and h as most of them are doing. What me is the silence of the churches! majority of Free Churchmen are ag the traffic, but hardly so in the E lished Church. Indeed, that Chur more or less involved in the trad least to the extent of allowing its erties to be used by public ho Many of the higher clergy refuse forego their wine during the war, at the request of the King.

The situation is unlike anythin know in America. Liquor is use England much as we use coffee; intrenched in custom, disinfecte habit, and protected by respectab Moreover, the traffic is less open easy to get at in England, and those profit by it are often of the most a cratic and influential class in the munity. There is, besides, a scho English political thought which the sublime doctrine that the wa keep the workingman quiet and

Digitized by Google

tented is to keep him pickled in beer. Any suggestion of abolishing the traffic is, therefore, regarded as an invitation to anarchy, and dire predictions are made. Almost anywhere in London one sees a dozen baby-carts at the door of a public house, while the mothers are inside guzzling beer. Never before have I seen drunken mothers trying to push baby-carts! Surely England has an enemy behind the lines!

January 12. — Had a delicious tilt with Chesterton, who apparently regards the Dogma of Beer as an article of Christian faith. Every time I meet him I think of *The Man Who Was Thursday* — a story in which he has drawn a portrait of himself. He is not only enormously fat, but tall to boot; a mountain of a man. His head, seen from behind, looks larger than any human head has a right to be. He is the soul of good-fellowship, and as the wine in his glass goes down, one may witness an exhibition worth going miles to see. He leads words into the arena, first in single file, then four abreast, then in regiments; and the feats they perform are hair-raising. If he talks in paradoxes, it is for the same reason that more solemn persons talk in platitudes — he cannot help it.

From the Gospel of Beer, the talk turned to Wells and his new theology; and it was good to hear Chesterton laugh about a God unfinished and still in the making. His epigram hit it off to a dot. 'The Christ of Wells is tidy; the real Christ is titanic.' We agreed that the portraiture of Jesus by Wells is in bad drawing, being too much like Wells himself; but we remembered other portraits by the same hand, — Kipps, Polly, and the rest, — very ordinary men made extraordinary and individual and alluring by the magic of genius.

One may call Chesterton many names, — an irrationalist, a reactionary idealist, a humorist teaching serious truth in fun, — but his rich humanity and robust common sense are things for which to give thanks. He is a prophet of normal human nature, and his uproarious faith in God is a tonic in days like these. If Dickens was the greatest American ever born in England, some of us feel that Chesterton is the best thing England has given us since Dickens. One loves him for his strength, his sanity, and his divine joyousness. The Holy Spirit, said Hermas, is a hilarious spirit!

January 17. — Dr. John Hutton, of Glasgow, preached in the City Temple to-day, his theme being 'The Temptation,' that is, the one temptation that includes all others — the spirit of cynicism that haunts all high moods. Artfully, subtly it seeks to lower, somehow, the lights of the soul, to slay ideals, to betray and deliver us to base-mindedness. Such preaching! He searches like a surgeon and heals like a physician. Seldom, if ever, have I had anyone walk right into my heart with a lighted candle in his hand, as he did, and look into the dark corners. For years I had known him as a master of the inner life, whether dealing with the Bible *At Close Quarters*, or with those friends and aiders of faith, like Browning; and there are passages in *The Winds of God* that echo like great music. As a guide to those who are walking in the middle years of life, where bafflements of faith are many and moral pitfalls are deep, there is no one like Hutton; no one near him. But, rich as his books are, his preaching is more wonderful than his writing. While his sermon has the finish of a literary essay, it is delivered with the enthusiasm of an evangelist. The whole man goes into it, uniting humor, pathos, unction, with a certain wildness of abandon, as of one possessed, which is the note of truly great preaching. In my humble judgment he is the greatest preacher in Britain.

January 23. — Just returned from a

Digitized by Google

journey into the Midlands. At Manchester I preached on Sunday in the Cavendish Street Chapel, where Joseph Parker ministered before going to the City Temple, and lectured on 'Lincoln and the War' the following evening. No man ever had a more cordial reception in any city. As a preface to my lecture I paid a tribute to the Manchester *Guardian* as one of the great institutions of this island, and expressed gratitude for its sympathetic and intelligent understanding of America and her President, in the difficult days of our neutrality. The American Consul, in seconding a vote of thanks, told an interesting fact found in the files of his office. A group of Manchester citizens, knowing the admiration of Lincoln for John Bright, — a Manchester man, — had a bust of the Quaker statesman made, and it was ready to be sent when the news of the assassination came. They cabled Mrs. Lincoln, asking what they should do. She told them to send it to Washington; and it is now in the White House.

As a fact, I did not see Birmingham at all, because a heavy fog hung over it when I arrived and had not lifted when I left. I could hardly see my audience when I rose to speak, and felt half-choked all through the lecture. As it was my first visit to Birmingham, I began by recalling the great men with whom the city was associated in my mind. The first was Joseph Chamberlain. No sooner had I uttered the name than there were hisses and cries, 'No, no! John Bright!' I had forgotten that Bright ever sat for a Birmingham district. The next name was that of John Henry, Cardinal Newman. It was received at first with silence, then with a few groans. But when I mentioned the name of Dr. Dale, there was loud applause; for he was not only a mighty preacher, but a great political influence in the city. Then I reminded my audience that, when Chamberlain w
cused in the House of Comm
representing Dr. Dale, he retor
praise of the great preacher, that
no mean constituency. The las
named was J. H. Shorthouse, the
of *John Inglesant*, one of my fa
books. If the name was recogni
all, there was no sign of it.

January 27. — Have been o
other short tour, preaching to th
in the camps, including one
khaki colleges of the Canadian ar
Whitley. Twice, when the men
given a choice between a sermon
lecture, they voted to have a se
And what they want is a straigh
hot from the heart, about the
that make us men; no 'set sermo
a stunt text,' as one of them expl
When I asked what he meant, h
'Such texts as "Put on the who
mor of God," or "Fight the good f
or "Quit you like men"; they are
that now.' But they are being u
the while by a terrible shatter
faith, and in many a moral t
fight.

No end of nonsense has been
about the men in the armies, as i
ting on khaki made a man a saint
they are men like ourselves, — our
— with the passions and tempt
of the rest of us. As one of the
it: —

> Our Padre, 'e says I'm a sinner,
> And *John Bull* says I'm a saint;
> And they're both of 'em bound to b
> For I'm neither of them, I ain't.
> I'm a man, and a man's a mixture,
> Right down from his very birth;
> For part of 'im comes from 'eaven,
> And part of 'im comes from earth.

And upon this basis — being a ma
self, and therefore a mixture — I
to them, without mincing words,
the fight for faith and the desp
struggles of the moral life. Neve
I forget those eager, earnest, upt
faces, — bronzed by war and we

Digitized by Google

ch were soon to be torn
ell. The difference in
en who have seen little
those who have been in
or more, is very great.
the difference if blind-
ter are as hard as nails.
then does the preacher
of having dug under, or
, the wall of adamant
elter that shy and lone-
re not lose.
— The American camp
Preached four times
large moving-picture
ed to the doors, —
n as limp as a rag. It
erience, talking to such
of my own countrymen
ing, wholesome fellows
ne Union, among them
of the Tuscania, tor-
coast of Ireland. They
of spirits, having lost
pt their courage, as one
ery one with a cold, and
n every kind of garb —
id not lose their cloth-
d by the sea-water.
in Winchester, a city
memories, about which
f history and of legend
city on this island, ex-
t is the city of Arthur
Table. Here the Saxon
written; here King Al-
. It is the very birth-
ilization. The College
ss Hospital have about
the Middle Ages. But
s the gem of the scene,
t beautiful nave I have
a cemetery than the Ab-
ateur architect can trace
style, shading into the
nd then into the later
howing the evolution of
ile enshrining the his-
In the south transept I

came upon the tomb of Izaak Walton, and I confess I stood beside it with mingled feelings of reverence and gratitude. Behind the tomb is a noble window, not more than fifty years old, into which the fishing scenes of the New Testament are woven with good effect — an appropriate memorial to the gentlest and wisest fisherman who has lived among us since Jesus lodged with the fishermen by the sea.

The afternoon service in the ancient temple touched me deeply, as if those who conducted it were awed by the presence of Eternity, and were carrying for a brief time the Torch of Faith, changing but eternal; a faith natural to humanity, and affirmed and expressed by the ordered beauty around them. Such a building is a symbol of that in man which refuses to be subdued, either by the brute forces of life or by the anarchy in his own heart; an emblem of that eternal resolve to love rather than hate, to hope rather than despair.

March 6. — Returning from Edinburgh, I broke my journey at the ancient city of York, where the kindest of welcomes awaited me. Looking out of my hotel window, I saw a music-shop founded in 1768 — older than the American Republic. Preached at three o'clock at the Monkgate Methodist Chapel; at five held an institute for ministers; and at seven lectured on Lincoln to a huge audience, Mr. Roundtree, Member of Parliament, presiding. The Lord Mayor presented me with a resolution of welcome, in which the most cordial good-will was expressed for the people of America.

Earlier in the day I was taken to various places of historic interest, including, of course, the beautiful old gray Minster. Also to the grave of John Woolman, the Quaker, a brief biography of whom I had once written. I knew he died while on a mission to England, but I had forgotten that he was buried

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

in York. Reverently we stood by the grave of that simple man, — daringly radical, but divinely gentle, — who was the incarnation of the spirit of Christ, and whose life of love and service, of pity and prayer, made him a kind of sad St. Francis of the new world. York is a stronghold of the Society of Friends — the noblest body of organized mysticism on earth. Aye, the war is making men either skeptics or mystics, and wisdom lies, methinks, with the mystics whose faith is symbolized in the beautiful Listening Angel I saw the other day in the Southwell Cathedral.

March 12. — The Prime Minister spoke to the Free Church Council in the City Temple to-day, and it was an astonishing performance, as much for its wizardry of eloquence as for its moral camouflage. For weeks he has been under a barrage of criticism, as he always is when things do not go right; and the audience was manifestly unsympathetic, if not hostile. As no one knew what would happen, it was arranged that he should enter the pulpit during the singing of a hymn.

As soon as he rose to speak, — his stout body balanced on tiny, dwarf-like legs, — the hecklers began a machine-gun fire of questions, and it looked as if we were in for a war of wits. The English heckler is a joy. He does not deal in slang phrases, but aims his dart straight at the target. In ten minutes the Prime Minister had his audience standing and throwing up their hats. It was pure magic. I felt the force of it. But after it was over and I had time to think it through, I found that he had said almost nothing. On the question of Bread or Beer he turned a clever rhetorical trick, and nothing else. The *Evening Star* says that the Prime Minister is not a statesman at all, but a *stuntsman;* and one is half inclined to agree with it. Certainly his genius just now seems to consist in his agility in finding a way out of one tight c into another, following a zigzag c An enigmatic and elusive perso — ruled by intuitions rather th principles, — if he never leaves m a sense of sincerity, he at least giv a conservative thrill. Despite his the record of his actual achieveme colossal, and I know of no othe sonality in this kingdom that coul his place. Like Roosevelt, he how to dramatize what he does, m himself the hero of the story; an so skillfully done that few see th hero is also the showman.

March 25. — At the Thursday service on the 21st, we had news great battle had begun, but we dreamed what turn it would tak stead of the long-expected Allie vance, it was a gigantic enemy which seems to be sweeping every before it. Wave after wave of the e hosts beat upon the Allied lines, they first bent and then broke British and French armies may b dered and the Channel ports cap All internal dissension is hushed presence of the common danger one sees once more the real qual the British character, its quiet co shining most brightly when the lowering.

London is tongued-tied; people at each other and understand. If is any panic, it is among the politi not among the people. Resolut suffering, unconquerably cheery, brace themselves to face the wo it is magnificent! There was no for the people in the City Templ terday; the call to prayer come half so imperatively from the pul from the human heart in its intol anxiety and sorrow. These are when men gather up their final re for holding on in the battle of life, ing the ultimate solace of the Ete

What days to read the Bible!

Digitized by Google

a book of battles, its simple words find new interpretation in the awful exegesis of events. Many a Psalm for the day might have been written for the day; the leaping up of fires through the crust of the earth makes them luminous. As we enter the depths, those strange songs follow us. Doubt, elation, anger, and even hate are there perfectly expressed. To-day, as of old, the people imagine a vain thing; the earth trembles; the honor of God is threatened. The Apocalypse, too, has a new force, color, and beauty, as we regard it in the light of burning cities. Its pictures are like the work of some mighty artist on a vast, cloudy canvas, dipping his brush in earthquake and eclipse and the shadows of the bottomless pit. Once more we see the Four Horses riding over the earth. The challenge of the Book of Job is taken up again; Jeremiah is justified in his sorrow; and the Suffering Servant of God is a living figure in this new crucifixion of humanity.

And the Gospels! Never has there been so complete a vindication of the ethics of Jesus. If, the Facts now say, you take the anti-Christ point of view, this is what it means. Repent, or the Kingdom of Hell will swallow you up! Thus the Galilean triumphs, in the terror of denying his words, no less than in the blessing of obeying them: 'Thou hast the words of eternal life.'

March 31. — Easter Day! Dr. Rendel Harris tells how, in the musty pages of the Journal of a learned society, he came upon a revealing fact. It was there recorded that, on a morning in May, 1797, which broke calmly after a stormy night, it was possible to see from the cliffs of Folkestone even the color of the cottages on the French mainland. In the spiritual world, also, there is the record of such a day of clear tranquillity, when the fierce night of the Passion had passed, and the day of the Resurrection dawned white and serene. On that Day, and until the Ascension, — when the Great Adventurer was welcomed home, — the Unseen World was known to be near, homelike, and real.

To-day is the anniversary of that Day of Divine Lucidity, when men — plain, ordinary men like ourselves — saw through the shadows into the life of things. Softly, benignly, the Day of Eternal Life dawns upon a world red with war and billowed with the graves of those who seem doubly dead, because they died so young. Never did this blessed day shine with deeper meaning; never was its great Arch of Promise so thronged with hurrying feet. Blessed Day! When its bells have fallen into silence, and its lilies have faded into dust, pray God there may live in our hearts the promise that, after the winter of war, there shall be a springtime of peace and good-will!

When one thinks of the number of the fallen, and the heartache that follows the evening sun around the world, it is not strange that many seek communication, as well as communion, with the dead — longing to see even in a filmy vapor the outlines of forms familiar and dear. The pathos of it is heartbreaking! Even when one is sure that such use of what are called psychical faculties is a retrogression, — since genius is the only medium through which, so far, Heaven has made any spiritual revelation to mankind, — it is none the less hard to rebuke it.

Some think Spiritualism may become a new religion, with Sir Oliver Lodge as its prophet and Sir Conan Doyle as its evangelist. No matter; it has done good, and in a way too easily overlooked. Nearly all of us grew up with a definite picture in our minds of a city with streets of gold and gates of pearl; but that picture has faded. Time and criticism have emptied it of actuality. Since then, the walls of the universe have been pushed back into infinity,

Digitized by Google

and the old scenery of faith has grown dim. Admit that its imagery was crude; it did help the imagination, upon which both faith and hope lean more heavily than we are aware. Now that the old picture has vanished, the unseen world is for many only a bare, blank infinity, soundless and colorless. These new seekers after truth have at least helped to humanize it once more, touching it with light and color and laughter; and that is a real service, both to faith and to the affections. Meanwhile, not a few are making discoveries in another and better way, as witness this letter:—

DEAR MINISTER, —

Early in the war I lost my husband, and I was mad with grief. I had the children to bring up and no one to help me, so I just raged against God for taking my husband from my side and yet calling Himself good. Someone told me that God could be to me all that my husband was and more. And so I got into the way of defying God in my heart. 'Now and here,' I used to say, 'this is what I want and God can't give it to me.' After a while I came, somehow, to feel that God liked the honesty of it; liked this downright telling Him all my needs, though I had no belief that He could help me. One day I had gone into the garden to gather some flowers, and suddenly I knew that my husband was there with me — just himself, only braver and stronger than he had ever been. I do not know how I knew; but I knew. There was no need of a medium, for I had found God myself, and, finding Him, I had found my husband too.

April 15. — No spring drive is equal to the drive of spring itself, when April comes marching down the world. Kew Garden is like a bit of paradise, and neither war nor woe can mar its glory. How the English love flowers! Even in the slums of London — which are among the most dismal and God-forsaken spots on earth — one sees in the windows tiny pots of flowers, adding a touch of color to the drab and dingy scene. At the front, in dugouts, one finds old tin cans full of flowers, gather
no one knows where. Each
home is walled in for privacy, —
our American way, — and e
its own garden of flowers, like
Eden. One of the first things
lishman shows his guest is the
where the family spend much
time in summer. April sends ev
digging in the garden.

And such bird-song! The da
with a concert, and there is an
or a solo at any hour. They s
the heart of the world were a
unfathomable joy; and even a p
like Thomas Hardy wondered
cret the 'Darkling Thrush' kn
he did not know; and, furthe
right he had to sing in such a
this. After listening to the bi
cannot despair of man, seeing N
the task of endlessly renewing
His war, his statecraft, his scien
be follies or sins; but his life
budding even yet, and the flow
to be. So one feels in April, wit
beneath the window.

April 20. — Housekeeping i
land, for an American woman,
ing enough experience at any ti
it is doubly so in war-time wh
and fuel conditions are so bad
the rationing went into effect,
problem to get anything to eat
shops would not take new cus
Even now the bread tastes as i
been made out of sawdust; and
being almost an unknown qual
margarine, like the sins of the
Hamlet, smells to heaven. Sho
an adventure. Literally one has
not only with 'the butcher, the
and the candlestick-maker,' b
the fish-market, the greengroc
dry grocer, — everything at a d
place, — so it takes time and
patience, and even then one ofte
home empty-handed. As a last
we fall back on eggs and pea

Digitized by Google

English call them, — take off my hat. It one person to keep clean — it is so ill- ttered up with bric-à- one of the American ng labor — no brooms; d must get down on dustpan and hand- the room. There is ne house to keep one n busy polishing it. s more than one pas- ed indignation about gy spent in polishing ouses. It is almost a compensation is the rained English serv- ven they are either .

ice I have heard Ber- e recently, and have from the shock and g him. My idea of lert, aggressive, self- nceited, craving pub- n to an omniscience h most deities. That ry acrobat, standing ttract attention, or rope in the top of the aw is a myth, a leg- real Shaw is no such is physically finicky, h, not only shy and e platform, but awk- e a schoolgirl when le is gentle, modest, ick wisdom, but sug- and China tea served ld cups. The most Europe before the en dumb by the in- no word of comfort ike Romain Rolland, frame a bitter con- So, after one or two went back into his led the blinds down, and drank China tea out of his dainty cups, leaving the world to stew in its own juice. Who can describe the fineness, the fatuousness, the futility of him! Whether prophet or harlequin, he has shot his bolt and missed the mark. Of course, the artist will live on in his work — most vividly, perhaps, in his sham-shattering wit.

April 30. — Few Americans realize what the Throne and the Royal Family mean in the life of the British people. Our idea of the King is colored by our republican preconceptions, to say nothing of our prejudices — not knowing that England is in many ways more democratic than America. The other day, in the City Temple, an American minister spoke of the King as 'an animated flag,' little dreaming of the thing of which he is a symbol and the profound affection in which he is held. There is something spiritual in this devotion to the King, something mystical, and the Empire would hardly hold together without it. The Royal Family is really an exaltation of the Home, which is ever the centre of British patriotism. Never, in their true hours, do the English people brag of Britain as a world-power, actual or potential. It is always the home and the hearth, — now to be defended, — and nowhere is the home more sacred and tender. Of every Briton we may say, as Bunyan said of Greatheart: 'But that which put glory of grace into all that he did was that he did it for pure love of his Country.' This sentiment finds incarnation in the Royal Family, in whom the Home rises above party and is untouched by the gusts of passion.

'Their gracious Majesties' is a phrase which exactly describes the reigning King and Queen, though neither can be said to possess, in the same measure, that mysterious quality so difficult to define which, in King Edward and Queen Alexandra, appealed so strongly to the

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

popular imagination. Gentle-hearted, if not actually shy, one feels that the formalism and ceremony of the Court appeal less to the King than to the Queen, whose stateliness sometimes leaves an impression of aloofness. Something of the same shyness one detects in the modest, manly, happy-hearted Prince of Wales, whose personality is so captivating alike in its simplicity and its sincerity. At a time when thrones are falling, the British King moves freely among his people, everywhere honored and beloved — and all who know the worth of this Empire to civilization rejoice and give thanks.

May 19. — Dr. Jowett began his ministry at Westminster Chapel today, — the anniversary of Pentecost, — welcomed by a hideous air-raid. Somehow, while Dr. Jowett always kindles my imagination, he never gives me that sense of reality which is the greatest thing in preaching. One enjoys his musical voice, his exquisite elocution, his mastery of the art of illustration, and his fastidious style; but the substance of his sermons is incredibly thin. Of course, this is due, in large part, to the theory of popular preaching on which he works. His method is to take a single idea — large or small — and turn it over and over, like a gem, revealing all its facets, on the ground that one idea is all that the average audience is equal to. Of this method Dr. Jowett is a consummate master, and it is a joy to see him make use of it, though at times it leads to a tedious repetition of the text. Often, too, he seems to be laboring under the handicap of a brilliant novelist, who must needs make up in scenery what is lacking in plot.

Since his return to London he has been less given to filigree rhetoric, and he has struck almost for the first time a social note, to the extent, at any rate, of touching upon public affairs — although no one would claim th
Jowett has a social message, in t
meaning of that phrase. No, his
personal religious experience of
evangelical type; and to a con
Christian audience of that traditi
training he has a ministry of edif
and comfort. But for the typica
of modern mind, caught in the cu
and alive to the agitations of ou
Dr. Jowett has no message. Ho
we must not expect everything
any one servant of God, and the
is needed as well as the prophet.

June 2. — Spent a lovely day
day at Selborne, a town tucked
among the chalk-hills of Ham
There, well-nigh two hundred
ago, Gilbert White watched the
grow green in May and orang
scarlet in October, and learned
wise. One can almost see him
atmosphere and setting of his
an old-bachelor parson, his face
by the smallpox, as so many w
that day, — walking over the
which he called 'majestic mour
a student and lover of nature.
a man who knew his own mind,
his little plot of earth free from
lusions of grandeur, and publish
classic book, *The Natural Hist*
Selborne, in the year of the fall
Bastille. Because of this coincid
dates, it has been said that Whi
more concerned with the cou
events in a martin's nest than w
crash of empires. No doubt; but
be that the laws of the universe th
which empires fall are best know
man who has such quietness of so
a brooding mother-bird will
away when he visits her. White
the universe one question, and
to hear the answer: Take away
and what follows? The answ
Peace, even the peace without w
man cannot learn that when 'ree
shake their tails, they move ther

Digitized by Google

a day to refresh the

tended a Ministerial
and greatly enjoyed
frankness of the dis-
ervative in England
l in America, so far
ce of us. Evidently
ren have gotten over
umps, measles, and
For one thing, they
results of the critical
, without losing any
l glow of evangelical
iberal thought with
heart, — as we in
succeeded in doing.
the atmosphere of
anged; that the fin-
ns grope blindly amid
f the modern mind,
ew words of comfort
agreed that a timid,
up restatement of
here must be a radi-
n, if we are to speak
which thinks in new
questions, too, the
chant, at times even
as real searching of
s together in a final
g us back to the per-
of power. The spirit
s most fraternal, and
t fellowship is both
ling.
erican troops are
nd, and the invasion
the English people.
ass the kindness and
hich they open their
o their kinsmen from
They are at once
tical, torn between
rrow, and a kind of
at thought of their
who went away and
k. They have seen
ericans, among them

the tourist, the globe-trotter, the unspeakable fop, and the newly rich who spread their vulgarity all over Europe; but now they are discovering the real American, — the manly, modest, intelligent lad from the college, the store, the farm, — and they like him. He is good to look at, wholesome, hearty, straightforward, serious but not solemn, and he has the air of one on an errand. On the surface the British Tommy affects to take the war as a huge joke, but our men take it in dead earnest. 'Why, your men are mystics; they are crusaders,' said an English journalist to me recently; and I confess they do have that bearing — for such they really are. Last night, in a coffee-house on the Strand, I asked the Cockney proprietor if he had seen many American boys and what he thought of them. Something like this is what I heard: —

'Yerce, and I like what I've seen of 'em. No swank about 'em, y' know — officers an' men, just like pals together. Talks to yeh mately-like — know what I mean? — man to man sort o' thing. Nice, likable chaps, I alwis finds 'em. Bit of a change after all these damn foreigners. I get on with 'em top-'ole. And eat? Fair clean me out. Funny the way they looks at London, though. Mad about it, y' know. I bin in London yers an' yers, and it don't worry me. Wants to know where that bloke put 'is cloak down in the mud for some Queen, and 'ow many generals is buried in Westminster Abbey. 'Ow should I know? I live in Camden Town. I got a business t' attend to. Likable boys, though. 'Ere 's to 'em!'

July 4. — Went to the American Army and Navy baseball game, taking as my guests a Member of Parliament and a City Temple friend. Never has there been such a ball game since time began. The King pitched the first ball, and did it right well, too. The papers say he has been practising for days.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Then bedlam broke loose; barbaric pandemonium reigned. Megaphones, whistles, every kind of instrument of torture kept accompaniment to tossing arms and dancing hats — while the grandstand gave such an exhibition of 'rooting' in slang as I never heard before. Much of the slang was new to me, and to interpret it to my English friends, and at the same time explain the game, was a task for a genius. Amazement sat upon their faces. They had never imagined that a hard business people could explode in such a hysteria of play. An English crowd is orderly and ladylike in comparison. Of course, the players, aware of an audience at once distinguished and astonished, put on extra airs; and as the game went on, the fun became faster and more furious. My friends would stop their ears to save their sanity, at the same time pretending, with unfailing courtesy, to see, hear, and understand everything. The Navy won, and one last, long, lusty yell concluded the choral service of the day.

July 20. — 'The Miracle of St. Dunstan's.' It is no exaggeration, if by miracle you mean the triumph of spirit over matter and untoward disaster. St. Dunstan's is the college where young men who gave their eyes for their country learn to be blind; and as I walked through it to-day I thought of Henley's lines: —

> Out of the night that covers me,
> Black as the pit from pole to pole,
> I thank whatever gods may be
> For my unconquerable soul.

Many of the men are horribly disfigured, and it is a mercy that they cannot see their own faces. Yet, for the most part, they are a jolly set, accepting the inevitable with that spirit of sport which is so great a trait of their race. At least, the totally blind are happy. Those who see partially, and do not know how it will turn out, mope a good deal. At the head of the college is Sir Arthu son, himself a blind man who has to find his way in the dark — leader of the blind. It is wond hear him talk to a boy brought i college dejected and rebellious his fate. There is no maudlin sen It is much easier to cry than to They sit hand in hand, — comr a conquest, — while Sir Arth the lad, out of his own experienc though night has come at noon, is not ended. His words, taken their context and atmosphere, sound preachy, as he tells how fused to be beaten, and how d has its surprises. All honor Arthur, — Knight of the Dark — unforgettable for his coura chivalry, and his cheerfulness!

(Early in August I went again to A on another speaking tour, crossing at Liverpool, in the glow of a mi sunset, the sacramental beauty o haunts me still. Time out of min known Uncle Sam, in his suit of trousers strapped under his instep, swallow-tail coat and brass buttons, ancient high hat. It was not easy t nize him clad in khaki, wearing a g and a 'tin lid,' and going over the a Springfield rifle in his hand; a change in outward garb was a visibl much else. Down the streets of Ne at midnight, one saw long lines marching, singing 'Over There'; a ice Stars were everywhere, changi silver to gold. It was an awe-i America, — new in its unity, its po its vision of duty, — albeit to-day, like a dim dream of some previous existence. Returning to England i ber, my ship was one of fifteen loac troops, following a zigzag course ove ly sea. It was at the time of the i epidemic, and almost every ship funeral flag flying all the way. Off t coast of Ireland we witnessed the tion of an enemy submarine. Once a Thursday noon, I took up my l the City Temple, in an address

Digitized by Google

,' in which I tried to de-
perience of rediscovering
Events moved rapidly,
y one or two items from
f the end of the greatest
e meaning and issue of
the bosom of God.)

Three times since I re-
oken to groups in be-
erican friendship, but
ly audiences were al-
vinced, and it was like
ss Pankhurst in favor
ge — as useless as rain
we never get beyond
nd commonplaces of
uence. Yet the matter
rtance just now. Al-
rumors of friction be-
and the Tommies.
hings, but the sum of
t, and in the mood of
reactions of personal
be fatal. Not much
ter the long struggle,
dreadful reaction, — a
ip backward, — driv-
America further apart
before the war. Little
ing, but what we need
ture, to compel atten-
ize the scene for the
des of the sea. Frank-
as to the best method
e have not found it.
el that the end of the
l one detects tokens
different mood when

Ever and again one
revolution in England
will be turned upside
ht be more alarmed,
hat the revolution has
ace. The old England
with it much that was
new England is here,
n vision, in outlook, —
g in temper, but ac-

tually changing hands. As the Napoleonic wars ended the aristocratic epoch and brought the middle class to the fore, so the great war has ended the rule of the middle class and will bring the man down under to the top. Of course, as to outward appearance, the aristocratic and middle classes still rule; but their ideas do not rule. There will be no violent upheaval in England; the genius of the British mind — a practical mysticism, so to name it, though the practicality is often more manifest than the mysticism — will not let it be so. Again and again I have seen them drawn up in battle-array, ready for a fight to a finish — then, the next moment, they begin to parley, to give and take; and, finally, they compromise, each getting something and nobody getting all he asked. Therein they are wise, and their long political experience, their instinct for the middle way, as well as their non-explosive temperament, stand them in good stead in these days. Besides, if English society is a house of three stories, the house has been so shaken by the earthquake of war that all classes have a new sense of kinship and obligation. No doubt there will be flare-ups in Wales, or among the hot-heads on the Clyde; but there is little danger of anything more.

November 8. — Went to Oxford last night to hear Professor Gilbert Murray lecture on the Peloponnesian War of the Greeks as compared with our great war; and his words haunt me. With an uncanny felicity, the great scholar — who is also a great citizen — told the story of the war that destroyed Greek civilization; and the parallel with the present war was deadly, even down to minute details. About the only differences are the magnitude of the armies and the murderous efficiency of the weapons we now employ. As I listened, I found myself wondering whether I was in Oxford or in ancient Athens.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

The lecturer has the creative touch which makes history live in all its vivid human color. Euripides and Aristophanes seemed like contemporaries.

What depressed me was the monotonous sameness of human nature throughout the ages. Men are doing the same things they did when Homer smote his lyre or Hammurabi framed his laws. For example, in the Athens of antiquity there were pacifists and bitter-enders, profiteers and venal politicians — everything, in fact, with which the great war has made us familiar. After twenty centuries of Christian influence, we do the same old things in the same old fashion, only on a more gigantic scale.

This shadow fell over me to-day as I talked with a young French officer in my study. He used this terrible sentence with an air of sad finality: 'Ideals, my reverend friend, are at the mercy of the baser instincts.' What faith it takes to sustain an ardent, impatient, forward-looking soul in a slow universe! 'Keep facing it,' said the old skipper to the young mate in Conrad's *Typhoon;* and ere we know it, the ship has become a symbol of the life of man. He did not know whether the ship would be lost or not — nor do we. But he kept facing the storm, taking time to be just to the coolies on board, much to the amazement of Jukes. He never lost hope; and if he was an older man when he got through the storm, he at least sailed into the harbor.

November 11. — London went wild to-day. As a signal that the Armistice had been signed, the air-raid guns sounded, — bringing back unhappy memories, — but we knew that 'the desired, delayed, incredible time' had arrived. The war has ended; and humanity, on its knees, thanks God. Words were not made for such a time. They stammer, and falter, and fail. Whether to shout or weep, men did not know; so we did both. Something not ourselves has made for righteousness, and we are awed, subdued, overwhelmed. The triumph seems wrought, not by mortal, but by immortal thews, and shouts of joy are muffled by thoughts of the gay and gallant dead.

The rebound from the long repression was quick, the outburst startling. Men danced in the streets. They hugged and kissed and sobbed. Flags flew everywhere, flags of every color. Women wore dresses made of flags. Shops and factories emptied of their own accord. At an early hour a vast host gathered at the gates of Buckingham Palace, singing the national anthem. The King and Queen appeared on the balcony, and a mighty shout went up — like the sound of many waters.

St. Paul's was jammed by noon; the Abbey was packed. It melted the heart to hear them sing — there was an echo of a sob in every song. All know that the secret of our joy is locked in the cold young hearts that sleep in Flanders, in eyes that see the sun no more. Never was the world so coerced by its dead. They command; we must obey. From prayer the city turned to play again. No wonder; the long strain, the bitter sorrow, the stern endurance had to find vent. At first, peace seemed as unreal as war. It took time to adjust the mind to the amazing reality. Even now it seems half a dream. There is little hate, only pity. The rush of events has been so rapid, so bewildering, that men are dazed. Down on the Embankment I saw two old men, walking arm-in-arm, one blind, the other half-blind, and both in rags. One played an old battered hand-organ, and the other sang in a cracked voice. They swayed to and fro, keeping time to the hymn, 'Our God, our hope in ages past.' So it was from end to end of London. The gray old city seemed like a cathedral, its streets aisles, its throngs worshipers.

Digitized by Google

SUDDEN GREATNESS

BY KENNETH CHAFEE McINTOSH

A LEAN, quiet man pushed his way through the crowd into the open of the parade-ground at Fort Myer, and perched himself uncomfortably in the midst of a bundle of sticks. A weight crashed down from the top of a derrick, and the bundle, with droning, whining propeller, was thrown into the air, and *stayed there*. Breath was drawn in with sharp, audible gasping, and eyes grew round in upturned faces. The impossible had happened. Orville Wright was proving to the army that he could fly.

When the air-plane had landed clumsily on its two sled-like runners, and the reporters surged around, we have record of the following queries and replies: —

'How fast can you fly?'

'Forty miles an hour.'

'How fast do you think air-planes can be made to fly?'

'Much faster. But, of course, the flyer would be blown out of the machine at anything over a hundred miles an hour.'

'How high can you go?'

'High as I want to. But even in war you would never have to go over one thousand feet. No known gun could hit you at that altitude.'

'What uses can you make of your machine?'

'Sport mainly, and scouting in war.'

Of the thousands who saw that afternoon, and of the millions who read of the flight next morning, probably not one had the least dim perception that a mighty power was born, a power that is already affecting the lives of every one of us, that is forcing upon us changes as vast as those forecasted when the ape-man first discovered that, by swaying erect on his bent legs, he could see his enemies and his victims farther, and have two arms free for fighting.

In the immense development of aviation forced by the war we are apt to forget the tremendous strides made in the first faltering years. As usual, figures and statistics are deceptive, and performances seemed to confirm the opinion of those who saw in the air-plane nothing but a toy and a man-killer. Three years after the Fort Myer flight, it was still a remarkable performance to remain in the air for forty-five minutes, or to climb to an altitude of six or seven thousand feet. After six years of flying, it was still a dare-devil feat to loop an air-plane three times in one flight; and the first man to fly upside down made his name as well known as that of a champion heavy-weight, and known among much the same classes of people. Pilot after pilot was featured on the sporting pages of the newspapers as he succeeded in remaining aloft five minutes longer than the hero of the month before, reached an altitude fifty feet higher, or somersaulted his vibrating little kite once oftener. And with deadly regularity pilot after pilot was killed — his effort to find out how far he could stretch the capacity of his machine being successful.

During those years, however, clumsy skids gave place to wheels and pontoons, or actual boat-hulls; and, while

Digitized by Google

planes remained rickety toys, the root-idea of every practicable type we have to-day was discovered and demonstrated, waiting only for some imperative necessity to force its development. Rotary and V-type motors began to appear.

Before the war began, aviation had reached the point where its future could be confidently predicted by the initiated as a matter of improvement of existing types, of betterment of existing design, rather than as a new departure. Then came the World War, with its pressing demands on air-craft designers and pilots, and its almost limitless money for experiment.

Aviation has attained in fifteen years a degree of progress which can hardly be matched by any other epoch-making invention in centuries. One hundred and eighteen years since the Clermont, one hundred and fifty since Franklin's kite, and aviation is already as advanced, relatively, as steam and electricity. John Hawkins and Francis Drake revolutionized naval warfare by fighting broadside instead of head-on, and once for all made the gun the master of surface ships; and the all-big-gun battleship, throwing a heavy broadside, is the legitimate child of Drake's weatherly little Pelican. Three hundred and sixty years were required to produce the modern battleship after Drake had shown the way; and there is yet no more difference visible than already distinguishes the army's new Verville-Packard from the original Wright air-plane hanging in the National Museum at Washington. Orville Wright's forty-mile speed has become three miles a minute, and the end is not yet. His one-thousand-feet altitude has become seven miles, and there halts momentarily while we safeguard the gasoline and oil system against the bitter cold of the black upper air. His twenty-two minute, eighteen-mile endurance has become a screaming leap from
to continent, and air-planes
half a world with little comme

Similarly, the projected us
craft as 'scouts' and for 'sp
widened as greatly. Well-e
municipal flying-fields are m
rapidly, but the air-plane ha
grown the present possibili
sporting craft. Possible spee
come so great that a private
able of handling the newest
about as inaccessible to the
man as a private eighteen-h
links; and the only sporting
that are within the reach of
wealth are small flying-boa
lake shores and landlocked ba

A great future is claimed
borne commerce, and the clai
sibly, justified. At present,
planes and dirigibles are en
expensive, both in first cost a
keep in relation to durability;
small amount of freight they
will for some time keep cargo
senger rates above the bearing
the market. The problem of
cial aviation is, nevertheless
stated, and once stated, prob
eventually solved. The need
weight-carrier of considerable
ity, simple of operation and of
consumption. This is naturall
gineering problem, and the ap
of a lightweight, heavy-duty
'fool-proof' design may be co
expected sooner or later. W
body are already made of light,
rustproof metal; and the co
air-plane a generation hence w
ably resemble a plump-bodied
fish' or 'giant ray,' of slow
speed and excessive stab
machine as essentially a wor
tramp steamer, too clumsy f
too helpless for aggressive w
power-plant problem once so
tramps will probably become

Digitized by Google

ted ships or Ford cars.
n increase so rapidly
ulty will be encoun-
pare enough valuable
and around great
orts of call for them.
probably be found
forms covering ware-
tors and docks.
direction where util-
have been found ur-
tive, is where we find
ated questions to be
as yet unformulated.
remains and will re-
f air-craft, but it has
vershadowed by the
em in the battle-line.
ll we need, a single,
e would be quickly
ane of long endurance,
ility, and complete
machine that answers
s we find to be utterly
attle. It climbs slow-
badly, and it presents
able target. We must
nes to direct artillery
hore, to drop bombs,
es, to scout, to make
s of distant enemy
se them to advantage,
ver, have reasonable
ey will be able to fly

ea-problem in a new
ploit the air in war-
ommand it. In other
ight for it. Sailors, for
rs, have died to teach
n,— too often forgot-
se our power we must
nemy's power. An at-
o guard against the
ay, by extreme good
once or twice. Never
lenda est Carthago, and
st attack, court a bat-
a finish. If the enemy

is stronger than we, the attack is more difficult, but more than ever imperative; and to a battle of weapons is added a battle of wits. We must outwit him, outmanœuvre him, outshoot him; but to have even the faintest hope of victory, we must attack him, put him on the defensive — make him do the guessing and take the weight of the first blow.

Even to the layman, the necessary characteristics of the fighting air-plane are thus made apparent — speed, snake-like mobility, hitting-power. Speed and mobility mean small size and immense engine-power. If that were all, this question too would be simple. But to hit hard means *weight*. Carefully guarded planes now exist in every country, which can stand a great many hits from any ordinary machine-gun, and are fairly impervious in any vital spot to a glancing blow. A direct hit at present-day maximum speed is a matter of luck. Air-planes will soon carry cannon-like machine-guns — in fact, they already are carrying 37-millimetre guns and straining to attain a practicable 3-inch gun, baulked only by this matter of weight of gun and ammunition. Speed and ability to 'stunt' cannot be lessened, for the 'upper-hand' in an air-fight is as important as was the weather gauge to sailing-ships.

This brings the war-plane designer up sharp against his second stumbling-block. The inherent nature of the service means that little available weight-carrying capacity is left after the pilot and his motor are aboard. That little must be given mostly to weapons. And fuel weighs something, and fuel means endurance. A line-of-battle plane that can stay aloft three hours at battle speed is a marvelous plane indeed. In battles between armies, much can be done in three hours, especially where practically the entire three hours can be spent in fighting. Afloat, it is different. Battleships of to-day are hard

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

to sink, and there is no victory until they are irrevocably sunk. The battle between fleets may last intermittently for days, if there is sea-room; and may conceivably commence several thousands of miles away from the bases of either belligerent. To get our battle-planes into the battle-line, we must carry them there; and so one more type is added to the complicated surface fleets of the world, a type as helpless as a collier, but one which must have great size and battle-cruiser speed — the first non-fighting auxiliary to demand admission to the fighting-line. A small ship will not do, for her landing-deck must be not-missable at sixty to eighty miles an hour. A slow ship is worse than useless, for the air-plane carrier must be swift enough to lessen materially the relative velocity of the home-coming plane by running away from her, and also to keep safely out of gunshot behind the crashing, swaying, hurrying battle-fleet that she serves and by which she is guarded.

There is a third problem upon which this matter of command of the air depends, which as yet has made little progress toward solution. It is not so much an air-plane problem as a war-problem, and armies and navies have solved it at terrible cost. The present designs, even the best of them, make an air-battle a matter of individual duels and a mêlée, no matter how great the air-fleets participating. Tactical formation is usually possible only before battle. Once joined, battle is man to man, plane to plane, and control of a fleet by a single commander is confined to individual indoctrination and training beforehand, must often be suspended during contact, and can be resumed only after the fight is over. In other words, air-fighting tactics are the land tactics of the Trojan War, the fleet tactics of the Phœnicians. Victory depends upon supermen, and supermen cannot be made to order. Eventually, must find us a machine that one unit of an integral fighting stead of one of a number o duelists.

The underlying necessities problem have been made plai history of war on land and s manner of applying them to th not been found. The root of ter is that in its infancy every weapon, from a bare-handed machine-gun, fights *dead ahea* and blow are directed against t est enemy directly in front. soldiers, the first ships, and the air-planes have one thing in co they fight 'bows on,' have no watch for signals from their co ers, and no space on either side a command of movement with dering their comrades. Edw formed his bowmen into thin li sented the broadside of these tions to the enemy, and inau controlled volley-fire. Man for chivalry of France fully equaled England, and greatly outnumb but no Roland, no Bayard, cou against the disciplined storm of speeding on their deadly erran word of the single commandi of the English army. Engla disciplined Spain at sea by an tion of the same principle. Th Armada was admirably handl consummate seamanship and accord with naval science of ce but its tactics were bows-on, crush ship with a ramming bl to reduce her by hand-to-hand on her shattered decks. The relied on broadside gunfire and ness. Every phase of that cruel drawn-out battle shows a gal tack bows-on by the Spaniards abreast, met by a single line hauled English ships entirely u control of a single mind, raki

Digitized by Google

e full weight of their
e guns.
sea, fighting is in one
o broadside fire, with
nanœuvring and con-
and controllability,
ing-machine fighting
enemy has not been
nemy will probably
on our own level. We
hich can fight broad-
, as well as on either

e air once gained, the
ent of existing types
it it to the discomfit-
Torpedo-carrying air-
s his surface ships;
ill enable us to crush
efore he can so much
can destroy his train
apital ships with ex-

he air — this is the
ilitary aviation; and
problems and neces-
h of every activity
o armies and to cities
sity of bomb-shelters
up with poison-gas,
ti-air-craft batteries.
till panting from the
nake themselves rea-
to torpedoes under
he new necessity to
le-back impervious to
e air, and to rake the
zontally, or astern, in
aping apertures may
or a luckily dropped
eir vitals, and also to
of their boilers, now
n the air on the dark-
es imperative a still
-mask, in which sol-
, and civilians, may

live and work for long periods. It is forcing upon the submarine a new method of underwater propulsion, yet to be found; for an exploding bomb far outboard will cripple the present electric engine and force the submarine to the surface, where she becomes easy prey to bomb and shell.

Eight years of devoted, perilous, quiet work; seven years of feverish development — that is the history of aviation; and it is to-day probably the most far-reaching existing influence on future history. Gone forever are the sickly, thirsting expeditionary columns, which in the past have punished raiding savages in the jungles and deserts of the world at hideous cost. A few men, a few air-planes, a few days, and the chastisement is complete. Gone is the immunity of colliers and repair-ships lagging in the wake of the sea-borne fleets; and gone is the safety of the island cities.

In fifteen years aviation has superposed itself upon civilization. Its future is limitless, not predictable. It is daily demonstrating its ability to extend the scope of our economic fabric to lengths undreamed of, and in ways which were but yesterday fantastic dreams. And it has already proved its power to destroy utterly the world as we have built it; has forced us to take sober and urgent thought as to how this mighty and as yet irresponsible force may be subordinated to the common good. The industrial changes following the introduction of steam and electrical machinery are trifling and infinitesimal in comparison with those already following in the wake of mankind's new-found ability to fly.

The future of all the world is in the air — a future either glorious or terrible. Your generation and mine will decide which it shall be.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

BARN ELVES

BY CARY GAMBLE LOWNDES

SOMEHOW, May always reminds you of Horace and barns. True, the poet rarely mentions the months by name; but — 'With leaves all a-flicker at breath of Spring's advent' — is n't that May, the beauteous o' the year?

Thou shun'st me, Chloe, as a fawn seeking its timorous dam within the trackless mountains, panicky with vain fear of breath of air, and of the forest. For whether the thorn with its facile leaves shudders to the caress of the breeze, or the green lizards stir the brake, at once it trembles both in heart and knees. But not as a tiger fierce do I pursue to rend thee, nor as a Gætulian lion. Now, at length, a maiden grown, cease to cling to thy mother.

Wandering about the farm, some mid-May afternoon, you will think of that. You are on a fishing trip — your second visit: the first was in November, quail-shooting. It is singular that you, who never cared much for fishing, should suddenly have decided to try a place so lacking in game-fish that a white perch is a surprise, a 'spot' is an event, and a rockfish as big as the cork used on the eighteen-foot fishing-poles common here would cause a riot. All the same, with rod, reel, and basket, here you are. You have been here a week, and have n't caught anything but catfish, eels, and 'yellow-neds.' But there's the farm. You like farming. After all, what's time or fishing compared with agricultural research?

The farm, with its old buildings and broom-grassed, piny solitudes, is interesting to explore, especially when, in dove-gray skirt and snowy shirt-waist, her wine-dark hair deftly coil at your side the Spirit of th who is 'showing you around. rare. Her walk is pheasant-li clothes seem to caress her — model for a picture by the fam of *Society*, whose Grecian her tailored suits, on pages torn fro zines, adorn her room. They a spiration, perchance, of thos of grace, the classic carriage, proud little sway from the w happily, it is her Devon blood, r for all its centuries of poverty a gle, that moulds again in h form the lines of *haute noblesse*

Among her sisters your eye stantly singled her. She un At first she was reserved and shy; but now, free companion woods and fields, you wander w will. You watch the broke wild goose, tied to a post on and honking disconsolately. the tiny 'just-out' bantam eggs in the tool-shed and th stalls, and find a guinea's nest u weed-grown reaper. You gath fuls of lilacs, but drop them al a tattered last-year's hornet ca use telling her that the long-d nets are n't 'playing 'possum.'

You race across the pasture the bars, are introduced to t name a calf, and are presente young and very black kitten taking instant fancy to your fe thenceforth at your heels, maki ful pounces at your leggin-cord how, for all its idiotic attenti

Digitized by Google

like it, with that red ribbon about its neck.

You slide back the huge barn-doors. Together you mount the worn rungs of the loft-ladder. 'Pioneers! O Pioneers!' Up, up, you go. Up. Still up. High — so high! To the very roof o' the world — the great, wide, hollow, odorous barn.

'Tand' qu'aux bords des fontaines,
Ou dans les frais ruisseaux,
Les moutons baign'nt leur laines,
Y dansent au préau.

'Êho! êho! êho!
Les agneaux vont aux plaines.
Êho! êho! êho!
Et les loups sont aux bois.'

'Êho! Êho! Êho!' The resonant echoes, rolling, return the shouted refrain of the old Burgundian shepherd song. 'Êho! Êho! Êho!' That's the first French this barn — and Somebody — have ever heard. Somebody likes it, too, and is silent. Off from the gables storm the startled pigeons. Out from their nests, on beam and rafter, dart the twittering swallows. It is pleasant, lying on the hay before the wide window, awaiting their return. Back they come, the proud, iris-necked cock-pigeons, a-rou-cou-coo-ing, a-bookity-boo-ing, on the sill; the swallows, Spirits of the Loft, hovering stationary in the gray-framed azure of the window. Brave they look, in their new dress-suits, steel-blue-backed, white-and-chestnut-fronted. 'Now, what,' they twitter, 'what, in the name of common sense, can this pair of human nuisances be up to, high, so high, in our domain?'

'Êho! Êho! Êho!'

'Tell me something about the swallows,' she begs, when the Spirits of the Loft are a-nest once more, and all is the silence of the hay. 'You know so many verses. Tell me one, please. I love birds.'

She does n't have to beg very hard. It was on your lips, unvoiced: —

'I stray and sob in the forest:
The throstle sits on the bough;
She springs and sings her purest,
"What ails thee, sad of brow?"

'Thy sisters, dear, the swallows,
Can rede thee true, my child,
Who chose the lattice hollows
Where erst my darling smiled.'

You don't like it? I'm sorry. Yes; it is sad, but sad things are the loveliest and the farthest from earth. You will like this one. It is old English. Perhaps one of your Devon ancestors wrote it. Those morioned harriers of the Spanish Main grew poetic, sometimes, in the alehouse.

'The martins and the swallows
Are God Almighty's scholars.
The robins and the wrens
Are God Almighty's friends.

'The laverock and the lintie,
The robin and the wren —
If you disturb their nests,
You'll never thrive again.

'For swallows on Mount Calvary
Plucked tenderly away
From the brow of Christ two thousand thorns,
Such gracious birds are they.'

What's that? You don't see how I can shoot a bird? *You* would n't shoot one, of course. How about that quail somebody shot with my gun, last fall? Sitting, too. And right under old Hector's nose, while he was holding his point so patiently! Somebody's so tender-hearted she would n't think of going hunting again. What? She is? And is going to tramp ten miles of sedge-fields, tear her stockings to rags, scratch her hands, and shoot at anything that will sit still long enough? Good for you! Won't we have a time! We'll be *coureurs de marais*, in your canoe, on the river. With old Hector up front, to watch for falling mallards, we'll follow the happy day. I'll be here when the shooting season opens — it's only six months off. I'll bring my sixteen-gauge

Digitized by Google

gun and a pair of leather leggins for you.

'Êho! Êho! Êho!'

How you show off! When you were a boy, someone said, ''Fraid cat,' and you insanely rode your bicycle down certain brownstone front steps, landing on your head, in the middle of the street, and almost beneath the passing car-wheels. You hear her mocking laughter yet — the cruel, peppermint-sticky little coquette, your first flame, who 'dared' you.

It is different now. She follows eagerly, while you reveal the life of the barn, unveiling a creation of which she has scarcely surmised the existence. She knows the boring-bees; the 'black-faces' sting, but the 'white-faces' don't. The 'death-watch' beetle, ticking in the wall, frightens her, but she likes the nervous mud-daubers, brown and blue, and exclaims in wonder when she first hears their dry, gritty clicking, busily plastering their mud tunnels against the inner shingles.

Thin wings suddenly flutter overhead. 'Oh! oh! A bat! Don't let it get in my hair!' Down she burrows under the hay while, crazily flickering to and fro, the 'leather-bird' darts and twists in the semi-twilight.

You stand, with pitchfork raised. 'It's gone now. Come out, Barn Elf.'

She rises, blinking and sneezing, her hair loose and full of clinging straws. One's gone down her back. What a time it takes to get it out! How she laughs and shrinks and shudders! What's the matter with your fingers? The loosened hair is rearranged and pinned; the errant straw is, at last, recovered, and nature-study is resumed; but it is useless to expatiate upon bats and their habits.

'I think they're awful. I wish every one in the world was dead. I'm going down if it comes again. There! — Oh! oh!' at each returning swoop. Finally, the bat hangs upside down fro and is quiet.

'My goodness! But you things!' she exclaims, enthu chewing a clover-stalk an sidewise at you from under h filled hair. 'What an eye yo No wonder you beat father partridges last fall.'

'Hush, Barn Elf. See that head peeping out of the r the corner? Too late. "Pop" weasel. They always do, just look; it's their way. He's hun He won't bother your bantar does — I'll get him if I have all night. Yonder's a pewee' the old broom, behind that the west window. It's not fin There are no swallows on th the barn. Come over and see nests are empty; they've driv beauties away. Pewees are d They hate "swallowtails." '

She is glad to learn. She question. Composed, she liste fied with your knowledge. Ye then a side-glance at the lad ing. Only the faintest flush only the twitching of the bitt give token of the 'awfulness' of — but not undreamed of —

'In the loft so long, all b with the stranger!'

'Here comes that horrid b I'm really afraid. I'm going minute!'

But why so slow about de What glamour is in the odo That little trusting hand, wh quiver in your hand, like an in bird? That paling, dawn-flus where is its composure now? T der form, why does it trembl half-knowing she knows not w she look at you with eyes so luminous? She is a woman, f sixteen years. — Deep called u You can read the whirl of thou

Digitized by Google

bend her head. Her chums will know. She will give each a look at the 'stylish' outlines of her 'city' conquest. She will carry it, desirably tucked in pleasant places, until it's worn to shreds.

Gone a week. You've written twice. And, be sure, when your first letter came, the county knew it. Her sisters will tease. Bravely she will bear it. She will flash out at them, and stamp her foot: 'Yes. He does lo — like me. I'm not a bit ashamed. It's no such thing! He's not twice my age! What if he is? I — I even like the city!'

Then you get a letter — four pages crushed into a small envelope. It is a wonder, that letter, and perfect except for legibility and orthography. (She's better at reading.) More brightly shine the occasional misspelled words than all Alaska's river-gold, than all the diamonds of the Rand. A thing of joy is that letter, telling the life of every day, the life of the farm: —

'Brother dug out two cunning little fox-cubs, down on the river shoar. I'm going to keep one. It has a little white spot in its cute little nose and its name is Tansy. I was home, Saturday and Monday. I saw a wood-cock fly across the road in the pasture. Oh, it's so hot! The pewee's nest is finished building — where, I reckon you know. I send you a straw. The river is beautiful. Oh, I wish — I wish you were here.

'Barn Elf.

(You called me that.)'

'Êho! Êho! Êho!'

She loves you. Straws show how the wind blows. Dorothy and Swallow Barn are yours, should you go back. Go back. Heed not the Wise of Earth. More are under than on it. Go back. The old farm, and its rain-torn, briary fields, will be forevermore the home of Oread, Dryad, and Faun — an idyl of Sabinian days.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

VATICAN POLITICS AND POLICIES

BY L. J. S. WOOD

I

On the 30th of July, 1904, France left the Vatican unceremoniously, just a short note from the *chargé d'affaires*, put on paper, but diplomatically called verbal, being all the notice of her departure. The Ambassador, M. Nisard, had been called home on leave a month before. After an interval of nearly seventeen years, on May 28, 1921, she returned, with all the éclat possible and desirable. It was Cardinal Merry del Val who put on record the now celebrated phrase that 'France was too great a lady to come up the backstairs'; and ever since the resumption of diplomatic relations has been spoken of, it has been regarded here as a *sine qua non* that it must be carried out in the *grande manière*, if at all. That has been done; and indeed all that has led up to it in France, — the Committee report, the Chamber debate, the Senate opposition and delay, the suggestions of half-way resumption, with a representative in Rome but no nuncio in Paris, and, finally, M. Briand's determination, after a question had been put courteously but significantly from Rome, to carry the thing through without waiting for authorization from the Senate, — all this has enhanced the importance of the event.

By the very force of things, it had to be. Not only was the opinion of the country so manifestly in favor of it, but, after the abundant signs of good-will on the part of the Holy See, and more particularly after the honors of the altar given to France's St. Joan o the honors paid to France's resentatives last spring, not man but would have felt th lacking in the *noblesse* obligin est daughter of the church,' i try had not played the ga there can be little doubt that sition in the Senate — all tha the violent prejudice of seven ago — will be overcome, the tory vote of the French Parli tained, M. Briand's provisi officially indorsed. A hundre politicians cannot oppose t expressed desire of the great of the elected representative overwhelming majority of th

The way of reconciliation laboration is not quite clear. remain. But diplomacy, back dent good-will on both sides trusted to find a way round cannot definitely break them

The status of Catholics i Lorraine has to be regulariz the conquest in 1870, Gern dently left them the status French Catholics, they enjo the Concordat of July 15, 180 France and the Holy See. S therefore, while Catholics i have been subject to the di of the Law of Separation of C State, those in Alsace-Lorr retained the status given und Concordat. Although they a ingly unwilling to resign their

Digitized by Google

position, common sense demands that conditions be homogeneous throughout the country.

A second difficulty is found in the Law of Separation itself. Pius X refused to accept it, on the ground that some dispositions, particularly regarding the *Associations Cultuelles*, went counter to the divinely given constitution, rights, and duties of the Catholic Church, the charge of safeguarding which was laid on him as Pope. While, on the one side, Benedict XV of course realizes and takes up that charge and responsibility as fully as his predecessor, on the other side, the French Government has pledged its word that the Separation Law shall not be touched. An easy way out of the difficulty lies in ignoring it — not saying anything about the matter at all. If it cannot be ignored, a way around the difficulty is indicated by the record of the actual putting into practice of those dispositions of the law since 1906. It is argued that, inasmuch as the supreme courts before which cases have been brought have invariably interpreted them in a way so favorable to the Church that their tenor is shown to be innocuous, they do not in fact carry the meaning on which Pius X's refusal to accept the law was based.

A third difficulty is found in the realm of world-politics — the Near East, the privileged position given to France there by Turkey, the privileges granted, as accessory to that position, by the Holy See, and the changes in the situation brought about by the great war. Summed up, the situation was that, under the old Capitulations, France held from Turkey the protectorate over all Catholics in the Near East, with a few exceptions; and in consideration of that, the Holy See instructed Catholics in general, both individuals and religious communities, to apply to her for protection. It also gave to the representative of France certain privileges, mainly liturgical — a special place, and special honors, for instance, at important religious functions.

But with the passing of the old Turkish Empire the Capitulations no longer exist. The privileges granted by the Holy See were, as Cardinal Gasparri has authoritatively said, accessory to the principle in relation to the Capitulations: inevitably they cease to exist, in consequence. The old order has, in fact, gone by the board. In the Protocol to the Sèvres Treaty, drawn up at the meeting of the Council of the Powers at San Remo in May, 1920, it is definitely stated that the old protectorate and privileges have lapsed; and the signature of France is attached to that Protocol, together with those of the other great powers.

France holds the mandate for Syria, Great Britain that for Palestine; but French feeling is loath to surrender the old privileges in the Holy Land. It realizes the political advantage that the favored position of France there and in the Near East generally gave to her; and everything spoken and written recently in France on the subject of the resumption of diplomatic relations with the Holy See has shown how the wish for reconciliation with Rome is motived by the hope of regaining, through the religious agency, the privileged political position of the old days. No attempt indeed has been made to disguise the fact that it is political advantage, particularly in the Near East, that is sought. On its side the Holy See has all goodwill, in consideration of what France has done for the Catholic religion in the Near East during past centuries; but the fact remains, and has been stated clearly in Cardinal Gasparri's celebrated letter to M. Denys Cochin, of June 26, 1917, that, when the old Turkish régime and the Capitulations ceased

Digitized by Google

to exist, the religious privileges granted to France by virtue of them came to an end as well.

Evidently, then, there are points on which France and the Holy See have to reach an understanding. But the restoration of diplomatic relations, the reconciliation, is a fact. The importance of the event is self-evident. The old policy, which Waldeck-Rousseau started, and Combes and Briand carried to lengths far beyond the original intention, was summarized, when completed by the Separation Law, in Viviani's famous phrase, 'We have put out the lights of heaven.' Waldeck-Rousseau dissociated himself from the acts of his successors; Combes has died at the very moment the great change is being carried out; it is no other than Briand who is carrying it out, while Viviani attends the Funeral Mass of Cardinal Gibbons. *Au fond*, it may be nothing more than the inevitable victory of common sense over a phase of political fanaticism; but in itself it is a striking event. And, further, it carries beyond the limits just indicated by France and the Holy See. For, firstly, it has had immediate repercussion here in Italy; and, secondly, it has raised the diplomatic edifice of Rome, the world-position of the Papacy, to such a height that the world cannot help noticing it. The Holy See — to change the metaphor — seems to be riding on a great wave resulting from the storm of world-war; and the world may wonder where, how far, and in what direction, it may steer itself or may be carried.

II

On the part of Italy there is, of course, not the slightest objection to the restoration of diplomatic relations between France and the Holy See. When the British Empire determined to send Sir Henry Howard as representative to the Vatican at the end
Sir Edward Grey took the pru
of sounding in advance the Ita
ernment, and was assured th
jection would be made, or
The step was diplomatically
and courteous, but was unn
Numerous powers had repres
at the Vatican; the Italian
Guaranties explicitly recogn
the Pope may receive accred
resentatives from foreign pov
it gives them all the preroga
immunities due by internatio
such envoys. If an objectio
conceivable when England wa
a new departure, breaking a
old tradition, it is more inco
now, when France returns af
terval of only seventeen years

But, even though any obj
out of the question, the a
France at the Vatican has mad
think. In actual fact, during
the war, numbers of states h
establishing or reëstablishing
with the Holy See, without
ticular notice being taken he
quired the striking nature of t
of France to wake public opin
the fact that Italy is practi
only great European country
sented at the Vatican. And
papers and magazines there h
flood of comment on that f
since M. Briand decided to
Jonnart to the Vatican as Am
of France. 'Everyone sees t
matic advantage of being re
at the Vatican; we are the o
nation out of it; we lose th
remedy should be found.'
there is practical unanimity,
question then arises, 'How?'

The actual position, as betw
and the Holy See, is to-day wh
in 1870, after the Italian tr
tered Rome, or, to be more
in 1871, after the passing of

Digitized by Google

Officially, the protest
been repeated by each
XIII, Pius X, and the
Benedict XV has been
predecessors. In his
of November 1, 1914,
has the Church been
necessary freedom of
ce the Head of the
reme Pontiff, began to
of his freedom which
f God had raised up
se of centuries. . . .
for the speedy return
world, We also pray
put to the abnormal
e Head of the Church
tate which in many
liment to the common
ur Predecessors have
from self-interest, but
sacred duty — against
gs; those protests We
the same reason, to
ts and dignity of the

g man recognizes the
e Vatican to uphold
ude. If it did not do
its base — base of ac-
ything doing; base on
e standing, if not. But
passed under Tiber
1. There is no need to
all that has happened
fifty years. From the
n either side of the
cks have been falling
and forming stepping-
flow of prejudice and
s slackened. Through
World War, of late the
s become almost con-
he moment come to
o a bridge? It would
are many thoughtful
nk it has; and on the

paper on 'The Temporal
ic for June, 1919.

side of the Holy See, there have been many signs of good-will — tempered naturally by what one may now call caution, in place of the strict reserve of former days.

One such sign appeared just twelve months ago, in the Pope's Encyclical Letter on Reconciliation among the Nations and the Restoration of Christian Peace, of which one passage ran: 'This concord between civilized nations is maintained and fostered by the modern custom of visits and meetings, at which the Heads of States and Princes are accustomed to treat of matters of special importance. So then, considering the changed circumstances of the times and the dangerous trend of events, and in order to encourage this concord, We should not be unwilling to relax in some measure the severity of the conditions justly laid down by Our Predecessors, when the civil power of the Apostolic See was overthrown, against the official visits of the Heads of Catholic States to Rome.'

That is a very remarkable concession. In its literal form it is conditional, for the Holy See must envisage the bare possibility of a head of a Catholic state — who may not himself be a Catholic — or the Parliament of such a state, making some move, either in ignorance or by premeditation, not in consonance with the spirit of the present times and of the above concession, but rather in the spirit of the times now past. The Holy See must be free to safeguard its sovereign dignity in view of untoward eventualities. But in substance the veto against the visits to 'the Usurper' in Rome of the heads of Catholic states is lifted. It was on account of this veto that the Austrian sovereign could never return the Italian sovereign's official visit; and, in fact, no Catholic head of a state — with the accidental exception, on one occasion, of the Prince of Monaco, and, of course, the notorious

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

case of President Loubet, whose visit was largely responsible for the breaking off of relations between France and the Holy See — has been to Rome since 1870.

But here, too, the words of concession are followed up immediately by the saving clause of principle: 'But at the same time we formally declare that this concession, which seems counseled or, rather, demanded by the grave circumstances in which to-day society is placed, must not be interpreted as a tacit renunciation of its sacrosanct rights by the Apostolic See, as if it acquiesced in the unlawful situation in which it is now placed. Rather do We seize this opportunity to renew for the same reasons the protests which Our Predecessors have several times made, not in the least moved thereto by human interests, but in fulfillment of the sacred duty of their charge to defend the rights and dignity of this Apostolic See; once again demanding, and with even greater insistence now that peace is made among the nations, that "for the Head of the Church too an end may be put to that abnormal condition which in so many ways does such serious harm to tranquillity among the peoples."'

We have, then, the attitude of the Holy See outlined with sufficient clearness: in principle it is exactly where it was; in practice it has shown signs of real good-will. But, if anything is to be done, it awaits a move from the other side. In that, it is logical. If the Holy See were to speak out in the ordinary language of the world one may imagine it expressing itself thus: 'You took away my independence when you took away the Temporal Power by which it had been guaranteed for a thousand years. Sovereign freedom and independence I must have. Your Law of Guaranties does not give it to me: because the text does not contain it; because such law is unilateral, and a sovereign cannot have regulati posed on him by anyone or he l sovereignty; and because the law by one Parliament, could be rev any moment by another. It is eral. Even if it gave independ could not guarantee it. But if y me independence, actual and a to the world, and based on a g as effective as the Temporal P the old days, I will consider th and, if satisfied, will ratify the rangement in a bilateral cont between two sovereigns.'

Is it possible for Italy to move? The government of t could not make concrete propos less it had practical assurance th would be acceptable in substa both interested parties — the H on the one side, and Italian opinion, represented by Parliam the other. The government sho no difficulty in getting the infor necessary. As regards the Ho it is notorious that there has been an unofficial channel of co cation between Italy and the V There are almost daily happ some of little, some of great impo on which mutual knowledge and standing is necessary. The Itali way authorities — to take a ver matter — make special arrang for the journeys of cardinals from Rome; when several Pri the Church are traveling at th moment, to a Conclave for in a special train is put at their d During a Conclave the most el precautions are taken to preve inconvenience to single cardinal they are in Rome, and to ens entire freedom of the Sacred while it is in solemn session in t ican, at the moment when the the new Pope is announced fr balcony of St. Peter's, and the ensuing functions. At grea

Digitized by Google

he Cardinal Archpriest
f Italian *carabinieri* in
, which technically does
he Holy See.
xcitement among the
hreatened, the govern-
Vatican informed of the
en against disturbance
in its neighborhood.
dred points on which ex-
nation between the two
nient. During the war
s of a practically official
as, for instance, during
for exchange of Italian
risoners, a benevolent
eat measure due to and
Holy See, but cut short
ment by the prejudice
minister. In that case,
between the Foreign
ecretariat of State was,
tually direct.
government should find
learning, privately but
the views of the Holy
ncrete proposals to sug-
er side, the Chamber of
ded up into clearly de-
d a prime minister can
cety, after private con-
he party leaders, wheth-
count on their support
question. Every prime
as his own ways of bar-
support if he wants it.
is largely influenced by
e present case the bulk
ly be favorable; and if
re put before the Italian
vious way that presents
very explicit example
of renewing relations
lely in the country's
t, the proposal might
ll other circumstances
— on a wave of patriot-
in addition to religious
the great mass of the
people. The patriotic note would drown what little sectarian clamor might arise.

Recent Italian premiers have been well disposed to the Holy See; one of them, Signor Nitti, is notoriously desirous of seeing his name go down in history as the statesman who settled the Roman Question; and as he is equally notoriously anxious to return to the place now occupied by Signor Bonomi, it is quite possible that the latter might have no objection to doing the thing himself, while he has the opportunity.

III

As to the lines on which agreement could be reached, presuming, as is probable, that preliminary soundings show the possibility of approach, we have, speaking generally, a new willingness to consider the question on the part of Italy, and undoubted signs of good-will on the part of the Holy See. From that it is not a difficult advance to reach, on the part of Italy, the recognition that the existing Law of Guaranties does not give and guarantee fully and patently the necessary liberty and independence of the Pope; and, on the part of the Holy See, an attitude of relaxation of severity, in consideration of the changed spirit of the times, to which the Pope himself has so often alluded, and which, while it may go some way to meet Italian susceptibilities, may be sufficiently explicit and far-reaching to satisfy such claims of the Holy See as are fundamentally and absolutely vital because founded on the divinely given constitution of the Church.

Would it be possible to draw up an agreement, presumably in the form of a Concordat, — a bilateral understanding, that is, between two sovereign powers, — by which Italy would get the political advantage of direct diplomatic representation and communication, which is so evidently desired and

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

is now gained by France and other nations; and to embody also in that agreement clauses which should subjectively recognize the full sovereignty of the Pope and objectively provide a guaranty of it which he could accept as satisfactory? Sovereignty, it is recognized, must rest on territory: whether as much as would go in a teacup, — theoretically sufficient, practically absurd, — or the old States of the Church, or the City of Rome — practically out of date.

Largely theory must govern consideration; to any and every solution practical objections can be found. Granting that consideration of political interest impels Italy to move; and granting, as is practically assured, benevolent consideration by the Holy See, what guaranty of his sovereign liberty and independence will the Pope consider satisfactory? That is the point on which no one can prophesy. What is quite certain is, that there is no moral obligation on him to claim the old guaranty, the old Temporal Power as it used to exist; but he must claim something, and something satisfactory, in its place.

Before leaving the subject a passing note must be made of that very remarkable phenomenon of the times, the rush of civil governments to Rome. Before the war the Holy See had diplomatic relations with a dozen states; now it has such relations, either sending a representative or receiving one, or, in the large majority of cases, both sending and receiving, with twenty-five. Quality, too, has increased, as well as quantity. Before the war Rome sent to foreign powers only five nuncios, including those of the second class, and two internuncios; it received only two ambassadors and twelve ministers, of foreign states. Now it sends out nineteen nuncios and five internuncios, receiving eight ambassadors and seventeen ministers. Governments which had no relations have established them. Governments which had broken off relations have restored them. Governments which had second-class relations have raised them to first class.

In the first category the British Empire is noticeable. It sent a minister on special mission at Christmas, 1914, for the announced purpose that its policy, reasons, aims, intentions, and conduct in the war might be rightly understood at the Holy See. Now that war is over, it has converted its special mission into a permanent legation, by reason of the proved value of representation there. Holland, in the spring of 1915, carried through Parliament the proposal to send a representative to the Holy See, on the ground that it was the country's special and vital interest that peace should be brought about as soon as possible, and that it was to Holland's interest to coöperate with the Vatican. Now that peace has come, Holland has made its relations permanent, receiving a separate internuncio instead of a subordinate share in the Nuncio at Brussels. In this category, too, come all the states — Poland, Czechoslovakia, Yugoslavia, and the rest — that have risen from the war. In the second category, France is the outstanding figure. The third is very numerous: the German Embassy replacing the Prussian Legation; Belgium, Chile, Brazil, Peru raising their legations to the full rank of embassies.

And it is remarkable how this phenomenon has come about without objective effort on the part of the Holy See: the civil governments have approached Rome, not Rome the civil governments, though, of course, she has extended to them the most cordial welcome. If, indeed, one regards the simple objective historical facts, appearing on the surface, affecting the Holy See in relation to the war, the phenomenon seems more remarkable still. The Papacy

Digitized by Google

utrality and impar-
nnounced his policy
ıg possible: first, to
econd, to bring about
st count his success
ing to the world in a
manner the unique
er of the institution
the second count he
ard appearances, to
tely. A clause in the
April, 1915, by which
e war, — a clause
the resulting cir-
ess,—prohibited him
hing to do with the
whenever and how-
ome about. It was
the Holy See always
by agreement, and
taken part in a peace
erors on conquered;
lways held that there
and lasting peace —
y See itself desired
on the defeat of the
for the war and the
nition by Germany
pay.
ys the fundamental
the Pope and the
ook on peace. Presi-
y to the Papal Peace
917, with which the
themselves, brought
early. Strive as he
the Pope seemed to
ıt all. Yet we now
procession of the na-
toward the Vatican,
e of things, seems to
to do what it set it-
is the contradiction;
actual, evident fact,
s no getting away, of
creased prestige and
the Holy See to-day.
one of the great his-
ı to be noted among

the results of the great war. But to prophesy as to future historico-political possibilities arising from it would be premature, particularly in view of the very sudden way in which it has come about. There is a point, however, which rivets the attention. No one, in considering to-day's phenomenon, can help thinking of old times, when the Pope had relations and agreements with all the powers of the world — the historico-political world that counted then: Europe. Such relations were between temporal sovereigns of states and the Pope — who also was temporal sovereign of a state, but at the same time supreme spiritual sovereign of the Catholic princes with whom he had relations.

There is a varied history of the vicissitudes of those relations. But, as the Pope has said more than once lately, times have changed. If we run down the list to-day we find His Most Catholic Majesty of Spain the only remaining sovereign of the class of the olden days; we find states which may be called, in regard to their peoples, Catholic: Poland, Belgium, Bavaria, even France, and others; but Rome's diplomatic relations with the world to-day are not with Catholic princes, but with 'democratic' states, represented by parliaments and prime ministers. It has been said in disparagement of limited companies that they have 'no souls to be saved or bodies to be kicked.' In the old days of Catholic princes and of the Temporal Power, both these conditions stood. Such entities to-day have the first half of the phrase only in the measure of righteousness of feeling expressed in the policy of the nation influencing the Government; and the second half stands only in the lessened and entirely changed measure of adjustment of diplomatic differences. In truth, to-day, Rome's aspect in its relations with the world flocking to it must be very differ-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

ent from that of olden days. How it will align itself will be matter for interesting study by future students of history.

And it is for the future students of history, not for a passing note-maker of the time, to comment on another striking phenomenon. There is one great country to which the Pope's eyes turned specially in every crisis of the war; which, up to the very last minute, he believed never would come in; to which his eyes turned all the same after it had done so; to which the eyes of the Vatican are still turned, the view of its evidently increas and objective and subjecti ance — and that is the o which is not joining in the ru The United States receive religious representative of t the person of an Apostoli but it has no diplomatic rel the Holy See. That, too, as to which future students at the Vatican and in Americ opportunity for noting r forming judgment.

THE LABOR SITUATION IN GREAT BRIT

BY A. SHADWELL

THE editor of the *Atlantic* has requested me to explain the labor situation in Great Britain to American readers, and has propounded several questions, which I will try to answer in the course of this essay. He asks for an interpretation, rather than a résumé, of the facts, and I will therefore assume that the reader has a certain knowledge of outstanding events. My task is, as I understand it, to explain the broad meaning of what is going on in England without entering into too much detail. This, of course, involves matters of opinion, and a preliminary word on my own standpoint is due. I write as a detached observer, who has for many years studied social conditions and industrial movements from the life in many countries, without any partisan predilections of any kind, political, financial, or theoretical; with friends and acquaintances in every camp, from the Duke of Northumberla Maclean, and with no inter but the truth. If I am wron to lack of judgment, not to want of study.

I

Let me begin with the statement that so far we h through inevitable trouble better than we had any soun expect. We are by no mea with them yet; but as each corner is turned, the prospec

This view may cause so and be set down as 'optimist timism has nothing to do w shall show. It is based on anticipation, formed durin from past and current condi industrial situation likely t it, and on a broad survey o course of events since the

Digitized by Google

er to popular opin-
inion was, and is,
ways. The public
false anticipations,
was unduly height-
view of the actual

nerally expected to
sort of Utopia, in
d lie down with the
ecy contained in the
Isaiah would be at
fulfillment. There
n this sanguine vi-
a nebulous hope,
ment and fed by
ch as 'a land fit for
d the blessed word

no such prolific be-
s this idea of recon-
cialists, visionaries,
in it their oppor-
ted it in their own
g their promises on
rose to it like trout
proved an irresisti-
everyone's mouth.
paradise, in which
be gratified. Under
iose schemes were
ense of proportion
ing prospect took a
ut the general idea
was going to have a
after the war than
rticular, industrial
be improved out of
ndard of living was
ere to work less and
between employers
s to be banished;
ity were to reign;
iately. The illusion
be resisted; protest

tained by these no-
the frequent refer-
utes to the falsifica-

tion of promises and expectations. But good judges were not taken in by the rosy visions of reconstruction. More than five years ago — ten months before the first Russian revolution and eighteen months before the arrival of Bolshevism — I predicted, in the *Nineteenth Century and After*, great trouble after the war. I said that it would be a severer trial than the war itself; that the prospect was full of menace; and that everyone in a position to judge, with whom I had discussed the question, was of the same opinion. This reading was based on solid facts, which I elaborated a year later in the same review. I gave reasons for anticipating 'revolutionary changes, not effected without much tribulation and a period of adversity.'

I recall this, not to vaunt my prescience, which was shared by everyone who knew the real conditions and was not blinded by illusions, but to show that there is nothing obscure or mysterious about the present situation. It is due to forces recognized and understood years ago. Those forces have since been stimulated by events at home and abroad. Bolshevism; high prices; the spectacle of war-fortunes attributed to profiteering and held to be the cause of high prices; successive increases of wages extracted by demonstrations of force; the rapid growth of trade-unionism; artificial prosperity created by inflation of currency; war-time restrictions, especially of drink; revolutionary propaganda — all these have had their effect, and superficial observers have freely attributed the present situation to the influence of one or another of them.

That is a mistake. The trouble is more deeply rooted in the past and cannot be rightly understood without a knowledge of the historical evolution of labor movements, which can be indicated here only in brief outline.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

II

During the nineteenth century the growth of industrialism was accompanied by the periodical appearance of an active ferment among the wage-earners, at regular intervals of about twenty years. The outstanding dates, marking the rise of active movement, are 1831, 1851, 1871, 1889, and 1911. It will be observed that but for 1889, which a little antedated the lapse of twenty years, the succession has been remarkably symmetrical. To enumerate the signs of this ferment at each appearance would occupy too much space. I can say only that it took both political and industrial forms, sometimes one and sometimes the other predominating, with a sort of oscillating movement. It issued broadly in legislation and in the advance of trade-unionism in numbers, organization, legal status, and privileges. There were collateral and associated movements, both practical and theoretical; but I am concentrating attention on the points of greatest activity.

What is the explanation of this periodicity? The state of trade has something to do with it. Each successive time of ferment was associated with an upward movement of trade, following a depression; but this alone will not account for the phenomenon. For in each period of twenty years there have been intermediate terms of rising trade, during which no corresponding advance in the labor movement has occurred. In some of them a certain amount of response was perceptible; but it was very small compared with the activity of the fermentative years enumerated. These were followed in each case by a period of apparent exhaustion, during which strength was gathered for a fresh advance.

The chief explanation of this, in my opinion, is to be found in the natural procession of the generations, by which the old gradually give place to the young. The latter know nothing of the struggles and exhaustion of the past; they are fresh, full of energy and fight. More than that, their standpoint is different, their outlook wider, their aspirations higher — or, if not higher, more purposeful, because nearer to practical attainment. They start where the previous generation left off. This development has been particularly noticeable in recent years. It is the result of the many educative influences that have been brought to bear, and of the whole process of social change that has permeated the population.

The notion that class-differences have widened is quite erroneous. In Great Britain, whatever may be the case in other countries, there has been a great and multiform approximation of classes. I have witnessed it going on all my life and at an increasing pace. Those who do not know it are either bad observers or too young to be able to compare the present with the past. The contemplation of figures showing the extremes of nominal wealth and poverty is misleading. It hides the approximation in real conditions. To take the most visible thing, no one even thinks of building either the palaces or the hovels that once regularly represented the extremes. The hovels are abolished, the palaces are being abandoned, the extremes have come much nearer together, and the same process is going on in all the things that matter. There has been a great diffusion of real wealth in comforts and conveniences, a great diffusion of knowledge and the means of self-improvement, a great diffusion of political power and administrative functions. Men of all classes meet on level terms in the council chamber and on the magisterial bench; all classes mingle on the railway platform, where millionaires not infrequently betake

Digitized by Google

hird-class, labor leaders
compartment.
teems with such visible
lency toward the oblit-
er distinctions; anyone
see it. Indeed, it is so
ose who maintain the
of a widening gulf have
eyes to avoid seeing

ite grows with what it
rise in the standard of
ial status becomes a
or a further advance,
y entered upon when a
with fresh aspirations,
icient strength, by the
t of growing up while
f, to make the essay.
, the chief explanation
l ferment.
festation began in 1911,
umstances combined to
character. Trade was
ng, and wage-earners,
rganized than ever be-
conscious of strength,
rable case for a larger
g prosperity; for prices
up, while wages were
the formation of the
Party, ten years before,
ment had joined hands
he large trade-unions
ed increasing influence
ncils of the party. The
cesses of labor candi-
neral election of 1906,
hose of 1910, had given
s to the movement on
e and inspired it with

e conducive to a state
t was the spread of or-
onary propaganda, and
of new ideas, about
tly before, — industrial
icalism, and a little
alism, — which differed

from the old by making trade-unionism the source, and not merely the instrument, of revolution.

These ideas made little visible impression at the time, and were ridiculed by the advocates of State Socialism, to whom they were obnoxious; but they struck root and began to grow, chiefly in Scotland and South Wales. They were a leaven, and their influence is seen in the marked prominence of those areas in the turmoil during and since the war. In 1911, however, the movement was still confined to the old trade-union line of demanding advances of wages and allied changes, and enforcing their concession by strikes. Employers, blind to the new strength and vigor of the unions, adopted the fatal policy of refusing legitimate demands, which they could well afford to concede, until a strike took place, and then promptly giving way. The result was a series of strikes, unprecedented in number and magnitude, and for the most part successful, which had the effect of still further increasing the strength and self-confidence of the unions, enhancing the prestige of an active policy, and embittering the relations of employers and employer.

There is always a see-saw going on between industrial and political action, each having the ascendancy in turn. In the years preceding 1911, political action was in the ascendant, but it had apparently exhausted its potency, and a reaction had set in, which prepared the way for another turn with the industrial weapon. The striking success of the latter in 1911–12 led, as usual, to overuse and reaction. Strikes were still very numerous in 1913, — indeed, they were more numerous, — but they were on a smaller scale and did not last so long.

Then, in 1914, the character of the conflict began to change. There were indications of declining trade, many

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

employers were awaiting an opportunity to retaliate for the squeezing they had undergone, and what would have followed in the ordinary course was a period of renewed strife on the opposite line of employers' demands and workmens' resistance.

This is the background to the present situation. The prospect immediately preceding the war was one of declining trade and industrial conflict, waged with stronger forces and more embittered feelings than before. At the same time, it is to be noted that the period of prosperity-strife had produced other and contrary effects. It had led to a better appreciation of the principle of conciliation and to the development of conciliation machinery. In some quarters the relations between employers and employed had improved, and this element must not be overlooked; for it, too, plays no small part in the present situation. Still, the outstanding features of the industrial position before the war were a spirit of acute antagonism and the prospect of a determined conflict, in which the trade-unions would probably have had the worst of the encounter, with the result of reaction against the industrial weapon and recourse once more to the political.

III

Now the broad effect of the war has been to reproduce all these conditions on a higher scale, or in a more acute form, together with the complications introduced by government control, the break-up of international economy, the general impoverishment, and other aggravating circumstances. The economic process just outlined was short-circuited, so to speak; and a state of prosperity was restored by the war-demands on industry. It was artificial, of course, paid for by realizing capital assets and mortgaging the future; and it was conditioned by war-psycholog
usual influence of prosper
labor market was rather
than modified by the spe
stances, as the country sett
the business of carrying on
its strength. The demand f
vived, unemployment dimin
rose, and strikes reappeared
months of abeyance.

This movement went o
creasing pace during the e
1915; but it was not until
year that organized labor be
ize the immense strength c
it by the emergency of w
pensable industries.

The occasion was a dis
South Wales coal-mining dis
feeling between employer
ployed was already much st
revolutionary theories had
years been actively propag
miners, chiefly by the age
Labor College. Originally t
the right. The standing agr
about to lapse, and they
new one, with certain adv
owners boggled and put the
the general mass of the m
vinced that they were bei
became exasperated and rip
regardless of the war.

And here I may say th
workmen never did believ
Germans had any chance w
winning, until their compl
somewhat shaken by the
the spring of 1918. This a
their apparent indifference t
of strikes upon the war: it w
to lack of patriotism, but
cency. I found it out by g
them in many districts,
South Wales. A young m
whom I knew personally, t
they would have stopped
months rather than submit t

'But what about the war

Digitized by Google

't at work, I should
fight.'
ught that there was
f defeat, and conse-
y to accept the argu-
them by revolution-
d pro-Germans, that
war-measure was
, and that the war
use for the subjection
italism.' This belief
the ultra-patriotic,
ts, who told them
t the Germans were
and that wonderful
rtly happen. They
his nonsense because
hey wanted to hear;
the hands of those
ting trouble for their

e Welsh miners suc-
government and the
cess opened the door
that followed. The
ed that they would
they asserted them-
that, if they did, they
nd could coerce the
dually the lesson sank
perience in the three
le industries — coal,
ineering. Employers
ground through gov-
and the hostility of
red from them to the
h inspired distrust
y by conceding to
sed to argument.
redited the moderate
rs who were unwill-
emes from patriotic
e same time exalted
militant wing. The
d mightily in strength
; unemployment fell
ges rose continually.
een asserted that the
y followed, without

overtaking, the rise in the cost of living. That is doubtful, but, even if it is statistically correct, it does not apply to earnings, which increased far more through overtime; and it takes no account of family incomes, which swelled out of all proportion through the unlimited demand for boys and girls at very high wages.

The effect of all this was a general state of prosperity never dreamed of before. I witnessed it myself repeatedly in all the large centres; and the unanimous testimony of health-visitors, district nurses, midwives, and other persons whose duties take them constantly into the poorest homes, confirmed this impression with a cumulative mass of detailed evidence, to which the decline of pauperism gave statistical support. The standard of living was visibly and generally raised to an artificial height, which made reversal proportionately difficult when the economics of war, carried on by an inflated currency and State loans, came to an end. The people were the less prepared for reversal because they were given very freely to understand that the conditions of life were to be changed all round for the better after the war. The nonsense about 'reconstruction,' 'a land fit for heroes to live in,' and similar visionary promises was taken seriously.

Prosperity did not produce contentment, because popular indignation was continually aroused by the denunciation of 'profiteering,' which was held up to the ignorant by the ignorant as the sole cause of high prices. This put a powerful weapon in the hands of social-revolutionary agitators, who made the most of it. The same tendency was promoted within the trade-unions by the success of militant tactics, while the self-importance of labor leaders was fostered by incessant appeals, consultations, flattery, offers of ministerial jobs, and other marks of distinc-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

tion. The theory that Labor produces everything and ought to have everything seemed to be convincingly demonstrated.

The ferment was further increased by the new theories superimposed on the old ones, and actively spread by young intellectuals, drawn both from the trade-unions, through the Labor College, and from the old universities. Both have exercised a marked influence: the former by educating young workmen in revolutionary theory and tactics, the latter by taking up the mantle of Fabianism, permeating the Labor movement with new ideas, supplying it with arguments, and guiding its action.

It is not surprising that in the excited state of mind caused by the topsy-turvydom of war, the feeling that society was ripe for a radical transformation was already gaining ground in 1917, when the Russian Revolution occurred, and seemed to realize in a concrete form the half-conscious aspirations formed out of the elements I have indicated. A miscellaneous gathering of excited persons was hastily arranged in the name of Labor, and it was resolved to establish soviets in Great Britain. Nothing came of it, but this incident is significant of the state of mind then prevailing. Things had got out of focus. A good many labor men had lost their heads, and others, who never had heads to lose, thought their time had come.

The Bolshevist Revolution followed and increased the confusion; it sobered some, but deepened the intoxication of others. The general stir going on in 1917 was further marked by the increase of strikes, journalistically labeled 'labor unrest,' by the rise of the Syndicalist shop-steward movement, and by an ambitious reconstruction of the Labor Party which was widened to include individual members, with special facilities for the admission of women. The intellectual element was formally recognized by the phrase '[illegible] by hand or by brain,' whom [illegible] claimed to represent 'without [illegible] tion of class or occupation.'

IV

My excuse for recounting [illegible] ancient history is that it is [illegible] sable to a clear understanding [illegible] anced judgment of subsequen[illegible] I have cut it down to a minim[illegible] have said enough, I hope, to s[illegible] trouble was inevitable after [illegible] and that there were ample gro[illegible] expecting more trouble than [illegible] ally occurred. Any reader w[illegible] together the several factors [illegible] enumerated can see how gre[illegible] prospect of strife impending b[illegible] war had been enhanced. Th[illegible] unions had been schooled in it, [illegible] Lloyd George himself had, in [illegible] vised them to be 'audacious[illegible] manding an after-war settlem[illegible]

My comment at the time [illegible] the advice was quite superflu[illegible] that there would be more [illegible] than he would like. The Le[illegible] felt that revolution was in the [illegible] the trade-unions were attuned[illegible] purpose and that the end of [illegible] would leave the field open to t[illegible] to class-war. They yearned to e[illegible] external for internal war, and [illegible] mistice was no sooner conclud[illegible] they raised the cry — 'Get on [illegible] only war that really matte[illegible] class-war!' Employers, on th[illegible] chafing under bureaucratic con[illegible] the excess-profits duty, resentfu[illegible] treatment by the Government[illegible] had never consulted and flatter[illegible] as it had the Labor side, were[illegible] ing to get their own back.

The campaign was not long [illegible] January, 1919, saw it opened[illegible] engineers and the 'Triple Alli[illegible] combination of miners, railw[illegible]

Digitized by Google

workers, which had been
1912, after the general
l fully established at the
All came forward with
behind which the mili-
aries were busy stirring
hereby they hoped to
olution they believed to
Every pretext was seized
ry sort of provocation
play, to stimulate the
editor has relieved me
recounting events in de-
be enough to summarize

919 was marked by a
pts by the Left Wing to
o a head, and they met
measure of success. On
ons public order was
d some collisions actu-
but they never got very
utionary gun went off at
isfired, every time. The
ed calm, though by no
rent, while the trade-
to go beyond a certain
ved a general disposition
nstitutional methods.
eld at this time by ad-
t the most extreme, men
ion movement were well
Mr. Cramp, of the Rail-
on, at the annual meet-
ty at Plymouth in June,
ntre of gravity,' he said,
n the House of Commons
rters of the great trade-
While social in outlook,
im is the control of in-
ne did not advocate the
e of control; they must
elves for it by proper
not think the ideas of
called the rational revo-
on can be better put.
g on Mr. Cramp's state-
erate Socialist paper, the
nsted his view with that

of the 'hot-heads,' who 'believe that they are fully qualified now, immediately, to take control of the mines, the railways, the shipyards, the factories, the government of the country and the management of our international affairs. In this conceit of ignorance lies the danger of the troubled time. The wild men are using all devices of incitement — not excepting a plentiful supply of lying — to prompt them to instant revolt.'

They tried it, as I have said, on several occasions, but always failed. Success depended on the amount of support they could command from the general body of men concerned, and in every case the test of actual experiment proved that, though they had enough influence to start trouble, they had not enough to carry it through. And each successive failure weakened such influence as they had and strengthened the forces of sobriety.

This is what I mean by saying that the prospect has improved as each corner has been turned. To observers at a distance, it may appear that the state of things here has progressively worsened. On the surface, it has perhaps done so. The last three months have been economically the worst we have experienced. They have been a climax, the severest crisis we have yet gone through; but the more decisive by reason of its severity. And the issue confirms what I wish to assert with all the emphasis at my command, namely, that superficial appearances are deceptive, and that under the surface things have steadily improved.

The set-back of the revolutionary Left Wing is only part of the story; but before going on to other considerations, I will finish what I have to say on that head.

The organizations and agencies representing the Left Wing are many in number and varied in complexion, but

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

only two exercise any serious influence on workmen, and both of them have arisen within the trade-unions. They are the Labor College, at which young trade-unionists are schooled in Marxian economics and sent out to spread those doctrines among their fellows, and the Shop-Stewards' Movement. The former is an active and vigorous institution, started in 1909, and it has produced a number of young trade-union leaders, who have become prominent in recent years. It operates chiefly among miners in South Wales and Scotland, where the gospel according to Saint Marx is taking the place of the old teaching among a temperamentally religious people. Its influence has been conspicuous in the incessant turmoil in the mining industry, culminating in the great dispute of this year; but the termination of the conflict marked the limits of its sway, previously weakened by the breakdown of the Triple Alliance. In both of these crucial cases the plain sense of English workmen asserted itself against the adventurous policy of the Left Wing; and that fact is symptomatic of the present general trend of events.

The Shop-Stewards' Movement operates chiefly among engineers and ship-yard workers. Led by revolutionaries, it is an attempt to turn an old trade-union institution to revolutionary purposes. The Clyde is its home and headquarters, but it has been carried by traveling agents to many centres. Its constructive aim is not clearly defined, but it is rather Syndicalist or Guildist than Socialist, especially among electrical engineers, though some prominent leaders profess Communism. But here too the revolutionary influence has been waning, through the failure of several abortive demonstrations, the general economic situation, and the leaden weight of unemployment.

As for the politica
those that have drawn
from Moscow and pinn
Bolshevism are sinking
into insignificance. T
any hold over the gener
men, who have no us
or the 'dictatorship of
and since the visit of
Labor Party to Russi
shevism has gradually,
perceptibly, dropped i
favor in official trad
which once coquetted
cisive refusal of the La
mit Communists, in Ju
seal on a long series of
Labor Party is more
complexion than the
which furnish the most
part of it.

The same tendency
gradual dropping of
or the attempt to dic
policy by such labor-
the Triple Alliance and
Congress, which was m
in 1919 and 1920, when
that the 'centre of grav
from the House of C
headquarters of the gre
The 'Council of Acti
stituted and irresponsib
sons overconscious of
portance and wire-pulle
never did anything bu
quietly faded into obl
Bolshevism has achiev
cussion among Socialis

In short, the traditi
British workmen has be
dicating itself, all throu
and excursions of this
the end, it has always
The great coal dispute
ing demonstration of i
but massive influence.
merely the termination
moderate element sig

Digitized by Google

in the very demands of
and still more in the
ispute. The demands,
which they were made,
g contrast to those em-
ous occasions. Instead
r more pay, less work,
y changes, put forward
nguage, the Federation
soned case for modi-
ed reduction of wages
itted to be excessive
The policy of ruining
ted by the Welsh and
ing, was defeated, and
months of idleness and
without the slightest
r two or three trifling
l that have happened

V

nother and a positive
. It would be a great
rom the failure of revo-
nd the subsidence into
phere that the Labor
ling back into the old
to reactionary influ-
all. It is moving for-
nd massively, after its
ide of employers and
has been a correspond-
tween the Right and
Right Wing of modera-
tance of change, the
logged resistance and
in this case, too, the
ng defeated. The revo-
talks much of a grand
nst Labor and a plot
unionism, just as the
ss talks of Bolshevist
nspiracy to overthrow
sh the British Empire.
h, and as little, in the
other. There are reac-
rs who would like to
onism and reduce work-

men to a state of subjection; and Bolshevist aims, which have never been concealed, have been furthered by much underground intriguing. But neither are succeeding. These fears are out of date on both sides. There is no substance in them, and the campaign is kept up only by the ammunition which each supplies to the other.

The truth is that the relations of employers and employed are undergoing a radical transformation, which amounts to a revolution, peacefully and gradually accomplished. Once more the British — or perhaps I should say the English — people are displaying that genius for stability in change, for movement without losing balance, which has carried them safely through so many revolutionary periods in the past. I confess that I hardly expected it, so great was the turmoil and excitement at one time; but now I plainly see it going on. A test of extreme severity has been imposed by the artificial prosperity and demoralization due to war-conditions and government control, followed by the difficult process of unwinding the chain, and, finally, by the unprecedented depression of trade, entailing unemployment on a scale never heard of before and reductions of wages all round.

But the country is standing the test with increasing sureness. This has not been visible on the surface, because only one side of the account is presented to the public. Newspapers devote their space to the exciting, not the humdrum events, and foreign correspondents are particularly bound by this law. They report strikes, disagreements, and disturbances, but say nothing — indeed, know nothing — of the peaceful proceedings and the far greater mass of disputes avoided.

To deal adequately with this side of the case would take a whole article; I can treat it only summarily here.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

During the present year reductions of wages affecting some five million wage-earners, distributed over nearly all the chief industries, have been arranged in the great majority of cases without any rupture. They have been effected by three different methods: (1) sliding scales in accordance with cost of living; (2) sliding scales in accordance with selling price; (3) negotiations between employers and trade-unions.

1. The *Labor Gazette* (official) for December last gave a list of twenty-four industries having a cost-of-living sliding scale, and I have a further list of sixteen. The most important groups are railwaymen, textile workers of many kinds, dyers and cleaners, police, government and municipal services, civil engineering.

2. The most important industry applying the selling-price method of adjustment is iron and steel, in which reductions ranging from 7½ to 20 per cent have taken place, affecting about 125,000 persons.

3. Arrangement by negotiation has been effected in ship-building, building, mercantile marine, cotton, engineering, coal, and many other smaller groups.

Several principles of the first importance have emerged from this time of stress, greatly strengthened and extended. I place conciliation by joint committees of employers and employed in the forefront. Long established and well tried in a purely voluntary form, it was advancing in favor and usefulness before the war; but the Whitley Inquiry of 1919 resulted in a great extension of this principle. Under the Industrial Court Act, 70 joint councils have been set up, and 140 district councils, where single boards existed before.

Most of them have been active and efficient. The same act conferred powers of intervention on the Ministry of Labor by three methods: (1) Conciliation; (2) Arbitration; (3) Investigation.

During 1920 the Min
cases: 265 by negotiat
tration and six by inc
proceeds almost unno

I must be content
other highly importa
minimum statutory
ance against unemp
have been greatly e
greater significance t
more or less mechani
a change of attitude
among employers. T
to take a new view of
and to accord them a
The idea has dawne
really partners in a c
prise. It is not profit
copartnership in the
new conception of the
It has not got very f
clearly perceived, but
Employers are beginn
men systematically i
and to give them an
common enterprise.
forms in different co
spirit is the main thin

The scheme propose
which was accepted be
and is the basis of the
illustrates the spirit.
miners' secretary, has
far-reaching proposal
industry. It provides
minimum wage, as th
the industry; then for
bearing a fixed relati
gate of wages, and af
division of further pro
portions. It is not so
ing as product-sharin
ways seemed to me th
the ascertainment of t
joint audit of the book
of partnership rights.

It is in this directio
tion of our most di
problem is to be foun

Digitized by Google

rking efficiency. The
ar-conditions and gov-
has been to foster and
restricted output and
blame for it rests pri-
yers, and it was bad
e war; but it is far worse
esponsible for the ex-
oduction, which has
ket, than high wage-
o employers to cure it
ed — in effect a revo-
ge of attitude, which
arners a new status, a
l a new responsibility.
us obstacles. The first
dition. A typical dis-
t revolutionary work-
ately: 'The employers are changing their attitude, but it is too late.' No, it is not too late, if the old tradition is sincerely, consciously, and purposefully abandoned. Here lies the danger of reactionary employers, who are the second obstacle. They will play into the hands of the theoretical system-mongers, who will seek to undermine and break up good relations and promote strife by every means in their power. These are the third obstacle. But they will have little power, if the enlightened employers are sincere and steadfast, and if they deal firmly with their reactionary colleagues.

This is the way things are moving and will move, because they must. A revolution is in progress, but a peaceful and practical one.

AT SHALL WE DO ABOUT COAL?

BY ARTHUR E. SUFFERN

rsy between the sena-
egislation affecting the
d the National Coal
n calls attention to the
e of this question. If
he United States had
nother visited a coal-
be in a better position
of the problems in the
uch intimate acquaint-
nditions of the industry
asier to obtain a com-
ment of the problem
. However, a know-
nical process of produc-
sufficient. An under-
inter-relationships of
t factors affecting the industry is necessary. Not until we see concretely the technical elements of the problem and the importance of the inter-relationship between mining, transportation, and the consumption of coal, shall we have a sufficient general appreciation of the complications of the coal-industry to formulate an intelligent public policy.

A strike of the miners demanding a 30-hour week and earnings that will enable them to live during the year seems arbitrary and absurd to most people. But they dismiss the matter without inquiring into the conditions that have occasioned such demands. Those who take the trouble to analyze the problem will find that the miners are at-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

tempting to control, in a very inadequate way, circumstances that properly belong to the public. In fact, the miners seek to do the same thing we all do, that is, use collective effort to control forces and conditions too strong and adverse for the individual. In this case these forces and conditions are beyond the control of either the miners or the operators, or both combined.

The industry has been idle on the average ninety-three working-days during the year for the last thirty years. This means that owners, miners, and consumers have been paying a heavy bill for waste and inefficiency. We are just beginning to catch a glimpse of the waste through idleness of capital and labor in all industries. The World War demonstrated to modern nations some of their latent possibilities when they attempted to attain full productive power. And this proved important solely in connection with the use of existing equipment. A consideration of full productive power does not stop with existing equipment. It takes into account the fruits of new invention and better organization.

Coal-mining was one of the first of the basic industries to find out what it meant to run to full capacity. It meant glutted markets for coal. This was because the industry was not properly organized, and coördinated with other industries. Since competitive gain was the dominant motive, anybody who owned coal-lands could open a mine and produce coal for the market. The result has been over-investment in periods of prosperity, and a full productive capacity far beyond the needs of the country. This factor, along with seasonal demand and inadequate storage facilities, has made it impossible to maintain continuity of production. No element in the problem is more important than this. But no move (except in the anthracite field) has ever been made

to cope with the over
ing capacity. Vario
this at from 19 to
the last five years.
cing of mining capac
try's needs is necess
ation of our resourc
to maintain steady p
to relieve the railroa
demands upon thei
the encouragement o
technical processes.

The stage of effic
process in the indus
duction engineers to
an attempt to raise
the soil with a spade
because adequate
ment can easily be ha
who seek to provid
and operate under
methods are immedi
conditions establish
wasteful competitive
equipment used in co
'long-wall' system w
atism in opening mi
longer waiting for
ment, and would nec
tion between the co
portation facilities,
and household con
which, as yet, is litt

Much criticism ha
ward the railroads i
their failure to furnis
the mines. It may
that there has been f
best use of car-equip
cumstances, both d
ment administration
vate control of the
more significant ma
the transportation of
quirements on the ra
Another factor of eq
the physical impos
railroads keep pace w
of investment, arbit

Digitized by Google

mines, and the whims of the consuming public.

The railroads are compelled by law to furnish cars to any concern opening a coal-mine which can easily be connected by a switch. The more mines there are to be served, the more difficult the problem of allotting the existing cars and meeting the demands of transportation. Consumers complicate the situation still further by their seasonal demand, and by promiscuous purchasing, which involves much cross-hauling. The Fuel Administration saved 160,000,000 car-miles a year by a zoning system, and enabled the existing car-equipment to make 300,000 additional trips. To force railroad investment in car-equipment to keep pace with the opening of an increasing number of unnecessary mines, is a decidedly wasteful process. It is quite as wasteful for consumers to insist upon a car-equipment to meet unreasonable demands.

If the high prices for coal in the last few years shall make consumers more responsive to measures of relief over which they have control, a very useful purpose will have been served. It is now known that coals most subject to deterioration and spontaneous combustion can be stored successfully on a large scale. Moreover, production engineers say that 10 to 15 cents per ton is a liberal estimate of the cost of putting coal in and taking it out of stock, if the process is well organized and the best equipment is used.

Storage at the point of consumption would immediately affect the continuity of production, relieve railroad congestion, and permit more efficient use of railway equipment. This practice, supplemented by a policy of 'buying early,' would enable the whole process of distribution of local supply to be organized in a way to reduce the expense to the minimum.

To direct the expansion of mining capacity, to change technical processes in production, to distribute and use railway facilities properly, to encourage local storage and better distribution of the supply, will require a form and degree of control over the industry as a whole which, as yet, has not been considered seriously. Mere publicity through investigation, record-keeping, and reports may be designated as the loosest form of control. In so far as it would give an adequate factual foundation for considering conditions in the coal-industry, it would serve a useful purpose. It will undoubtedly be followed by an attempt to deal with waste and inefficiency. The greatest degree of control is put forth by advocates of 'nationalization.' They rest their case on the assumption of the priority of the public welfare over all other interests. Furthermore, they found their programme upon what the best production engineers in many countries say we should do in dealing with the industry according to the best-known science at our command. It remains to be seen whether a form of control in between these extremes can be had, and whether it would enable us to conserve our resources and to reorganize the industry.

Some who are versed in constitutional law are of the opinion that a basis of control could be obtained through a law extending the Federal powers to license businesses. The question may be raised, whether this power would prove effective enough to determine when new mines should be opened, to enforce the exploitation of the thick veins or the thin veins, and the best grades or low grades of coal to suit our needs, to require the recovery of the maximum percentage of coal at the minimum of expense, to control technical processes and the use of equipment, to standardize and enforce accounting, to regulate distribution, to standardize coal according

Digitized by Google

to quality, to deal with wages and conditions of labor, and to provide for adequate coöperation between managers and workers.

The mere enumeration of these factors forces the attention upon matters with which we shall have to deal. A process of mining that leaves from 20 to 50 per cent of the coal in the ground cannot long be condoned. Shoveling 600,000,000 tons of coal into mine-cars by hand, at a cost of 89 cents per ton, when it can be done by loading machines at a very small expense, is as primitive as digging the soil with a spade. To continue a method of mining by 'rooms' permits of little use of machinery, whereas the 'long-wall' system is favorable to the use of machinery and larger mine-cars, recovers the maximum percentage of coal, and is conducive to safety in the industry.

The investigations of the Federal Trade Commission and the Fuel Administration into costs demonstrates that one of the best things that could happen to the coal-industry would be an introduction to adequate and dependable record-keeping. The existing powers of regulation over transportation could easily be extended to supplement a policy of conservation, and encourage localities to provide storage and regularize their demands. To continue to permit the buying and selling of coal without a classification according to quality is to perpetuate a disadvantage both to the producer and to the consumer. Wherever commodities have been graded and standardized, the producer profits by the sale of a superior article, and the purchaser is protected against misrepresentation.

In the case of coal, as in general with all industries, the last factor in the industry to receive careful consideration is the human one. The production engineers seem to be the only people who have caught the meaning of the vision of bringing three fourths of a million of men out of underground work. Not only would it mean the release of an immense labor-power that could be profitably diverted to other employment, but proper organization and technical equipment would give those remaining in the industry better wages and working conditions. The vista of increasingly harmonious relationships between capital and labor in the industry would be considerably widened by such a development.

One thing is certain: we shall make a choice in connection with the present problem. Either we shall seek adequate powers and procedure for regulation, or we shall permit the waste and inefficiency to continue. But we shall ultimately face conditions in both anthracite and bituminous fields which will compel a policy of regulation. Both wasteful, competitive exploitation and concentration of ownership and monopoly will lead to the same result. Each entails a consequence which will force control in the interest of public welfare. If this is true, all parties concerned — owners, workers, railroads, manufacturers, and household consumers — could do no better than agree upon and work for a plan of industrial control founded upon adequate sovereign powers and enforced through effective organization.

It should be entirely reasonable to suggest that a nation depending increasingly upon power and industries for growth and progress should turn to the use of technical equipment and organization to conserve its resources. Moreover, consumers depending altogether upon coal for power, warmth, and health will ultimately demand an effective basis of control to meet these needs, regardless of the obstacles that may now seem to hinder its attainment.

Digitized by Google

TAKING FROM THE FEW FOR THE MANY

BY RUSSELL ROBB

It is easy for the public to destroy the value of private property; it is even easy for the public to take property away from the individual; but it seems extremely difficult for the public to take property, or its value, away from individuals, and at the same time increase the public's possessions.

One difficulty seems to be that the mere taking away so upsets confidence, or the equilibrium of social organization, that either the value of the thing taken disappears or some new burden or privation arises which quite offsets the value of the takings. It seems, in other words, to change the conditions that produced the value of the property taken, and also the conditions that produce new value for the public.

In very bald confiscation it is seen that often very little value rests in things by themselves. A thing has value only when there are joined with it the persons who are to enjoy and use it, and also the conditions and opportunities that make enjoyment and use possible.

The loot of the mobs in Russia had great value while the old régime was in power, but the value depended principally upon the old social conditions. When the social condition changed, and the looting was a symptom and a result of the change, many of the articles taken immediately lost their value. It was easy to take the objects, but nothing of value was added to the public possessions. Ball-dresses have value where there are balls, but are of little use otherwise. Statuary, pictures, fine furniture and hangings are valuable if there are fine houses, with owners who want such things; but their value disappears with the disappearance of the conditions that make enjoyment and use of such property possible.

Until the rise of Bolshevism and its sympathizers and apologists, it seemed as if only the most elemental minds could imagine that anything was to be gained by the public through such raw confiscation as has happened in Russia; but attempts have been made even in this country to destroy value or take away property by more indirect methods. Often it has been thought that something could be gained for the many by taking away from the few; but the public benefit seems always to shrink far below the value that is taken from the individual, and usually both lose through the effort.

For a long time, for instance, the public was deluded into thinking that anything that could be taken away from the railroads, street-railroads, lighting companies, and other public-service corporations was pure gain for the public. They succeeded, it is true, in taking enormous value away from the utilities, but the value was not transferred to the public; it was only destroyed. The value that attached to these utilities existed under conditions that induced owners to put new capital into them, extend the use, and maintain the greatest service. When the public attempted to take value away from the owners by loading the properties with burdens and by insisting upon prices that were less than worth and cost, the public

Digitized by Google

did not add to their own profit, but began to lose conveniences they wished to have, and, in some cases, even ran the risk of losing service, or did lose it altogether, to their own great hardship and cost.

It is curious that property of this kind has been conspicuously selected for attack. It represents a large portion of the country's permanent investment, and the investment has been made to give the public generally the advantages of the great useful agencies that have been the outcome of the last century's scientific discoveries. It is not property carefully sequestered behind a barbed fence, holding to itself technical knowledge devoted to creating benefits and luxury for a favored class. It is for the very purpose of adding to the national life the most widespread use of advantageous service. Of all forms of private property no other approaches so nearly to the ideal of socialized property. It is devoted to the service of the whole public, regulated by bodies chosen by the public and plainly put at their mercy. It is not like land, which the individual owner may build upon or not, may use or not, as he pleases; it is not like buildings, which are too similar in kind to the property of the majority to meddle with; it is not like manufactories, which may be operated wholly, or in part, or not at all, which may be torn down or built up or changed, which may produce goods to be sold at the price that seems best for the good of the property; it is not like mines or timber tracts, whose owner disposes of them or keeps them, like any personal property; it is not like the thousand and one objects of portable property, still the most sacred kind and the best protected because most people have some of it.

We hear very much of the 'common good,' and of the Utopian condition when all property will be for the service of all; when the old rig will be less inviolable; all property will rest w people; and yet the first leads away from purel control and use is me couragement, but with attack. It seems a pit experience and loss is the public learns the d way of taking value The heartening fact i learn it.

With the inauguratio tax, with its surtaxes, i last a way had been disc something of value coul the individual by the p the relief and profit of seemed such 'easy mo the few, that there spra port for a philosophy of holds not that those pay, nor yet that all s portion to what they those who have the mo fiddler.

As in other cases of has been easy for the ma the few, but difficult to vantage of the many. T creates conditions that densome than they w looked like a profitable public, this 'let the r there is usually some existence of all things possessors of wealth h tion in the life of the p sessor, in order to rem must perform the rare a of refraining from 'blow sessions. The self-cont this possible has been u and it has been worth alive by a reward in the return. Society is likely cannot play hot and co not bestow this reward

Digitized by Google

and take it away with the other, and still retain the service.

The man with an income of two thousand dollars a year thinks 'refraining' is easy for all those having over two thousand dollars a year. Some economists think it is easy for those having over, say, five thousand dollars a year. They even invent the term 'costless saving,' to apply to the excess income that they think it is easy to refrain from spending. Why it should be easy for the individual in dealing with his own money, when it has proved so difficult for all those in positions of trust in institutions and in government, is not clear. The national government, for instance, is now taking a very large proportion of the large incomes from individuals, so that this generation may promptly pay the war cost; but with the most constant efforts by all those seeking to hold down expenditures, there is great difficulty in preventing government undertakings that would require even greater taxes.

It has seemed wholly good to the public to take large proportions of the large incomes, and there has been strenuous objection to anything that looked like taxing the dancers in proportion to their dancing. Experience, however, is gradually bringing to light the disadvantages to the public, even in this case, of taking from the few for the many. Great amounts that the government takes from individuals would otherwise be devoted to productive industry, would go into houses, would be lent to railroads and other public utilities, would serve generally to make capital less difficult to obtain, and would have substantial effect in lowering the capital charges that the consumer has to pay in rent and in the prices of the goods he consumes. All capital charges that enter into costs are gradually being adjusted to prevailing rates. Nothing can prevent it, and there is something like two hundred and fifty billions of wealth on which capital charges must be paid. As time goes on, there will enter into rents, and into the prices of goods that the public buys, a somewhat larger return on two hundred and fifty billions than there formerly was. Whether the return will be larger by one quarter, one half, or one per cent, is difficult to tell. The increased capital charges that consumers will pay may not be six hundred and twenty-five million dollars a year, or two billion and a half, or any amount between; but comparatively small increases in supply have often a curiously exaggerated effect on prices; and it would require a very slight effect on the rate of capital return to raise costs to the general public by more than all that is taken by the government through the surtaxes.

The result of our system of surtaxes seems to be but another illustration of the difficulty of bettering the public by taking from the few. Justice, after all, is not so much an ideal that shines aloft, unaffected by universal law, as it is a practical reality. It always seems finally to be decided that the 'just' procedure is not what someone has imagined to be immutable, but what experience proves must be, because of natural laws.

Digitized by Google

MILLINERY MADNESS

A HAT is of man's life a thing apart; 'tis woman's whole existence — or so at least one would judge by the tense and concentrated faces reflected in the mirrors of 'Miss Hattie's Hat Shop,' as that specialist's consulting-room is euphemistically called.

The purchase of a hat should never be undertaken alone, any more than one should have one's teeth pulled out without a friendly face to confront one when 'coming out' of gas. And, by the way, what a good idea it would be to have a whiff of some anæsthetic applied to the victim who enters a millinery establishment to have twenty-five dollars painlessly extracted. 'Crown-work' is sometimes a nervous strain to the occupant of the dental chair. It is often an equally trying experience to the visitor in the millinery parlor.

To be sure the sight of a hat that seems designed by Fate — or France — to suit one's own particular contour and coloring frequently acts like a narcotic, and drugs one's conscience into complete subjection to the saleslady's wishes. No practitioners in psycho-analysis or hypnotic suggestion could more successfully subdue the conscious will and gain a mastery over the victim than the plausible Miss Hattie.

This is what happened when I went to look at hats — not to buy them: —

'Oh, no, madam, $29.87 is not at all dear for this little toque,' Miss Hattie protested to me when I faintly murmured at the price.

'What, you say that you don't wear feathers because you belong to the Auburn Society? Why, dear, auburn hair like yours is very season, only we call i stead of red, and bla real well with it. Wha birds' feathers? Well joke! This *is n't* a bi just made out of whal mind killing whales, suppose it hurts them than it does birds, the fluffy.'

All this time the ha pinned to my head. I preme effort of will t off, most of my hair the struggle; but I am to be hypnotized int early: it shows such p

'I'm only looking, n don't like that hat,' I i too young or *I* am too think the shapes are this year. Now look a pointed a finger of der peared to be a fruit-b oranges and bananas t the table beside me.

Suddenly a female n than a Shopper bore do a look that froze my b

'You are speaking of and it is *not* for sale, with bitter scorn. 'P n't know that yellow is year.' And she floun ing her agricultural e (*Exit slave, bearing fru*

This experience unn I felt a susceptibility to ing over me, of which quick to take advanta head-coverings of oth shades.

Digitized by Google

like something in
dy?' she suggested,
memories of pre-
'or maize is very
ar, as well as peli-
always bisque, or
ria.'
blues and reds that
alse colors? Where
yesteryear? I tried
ny state of partial
gh I recognized the
s she was introduc-
gotten their names.
ve it all to me,' the
purred soothingly;
t for you — some-
at the same time

ny fevered brow an
promising pyramid,
tediluvian lines of
remembered in my
rkaic days.
kled to death with
that hat,' my hyp-
king a few passes in
thereby completing
ess. 'You're just
erfectly stunning.'
, too,' I murmured

m comes down and
st too becoming for
ing to put your old
er, because of course
the new one and I
not one mite.'
were working as fast
knew that I must
in her parlor.
re, Miss Smithkins.
ad just what you
p, too. Good-morn-
. — I remember the
nd before I knew it
below.
t thought was that
ed the price of the

hat I was wearing; and I did not entirely shake off my stupor till I saw my reflection in a shop-window and awoke with a scream.

ON OUR STREET

At the risk of being dubbed egotistically mendacious, I set down the fact that Pollyanna would have thrived on our street. The typical pessimist (somehow or other I have n't kept step with the pessimists well enough to know who he may be) would have shriveled up and died.

For on our street (and I set it apart in a paragraph to mark its importance) every woman is in love with her husband and her home, and every man is in love with his wife and his children.

And we are all poor. That is, in a material sense we are poor. We would n't trade places with Rockefeller, though, any of us. He has a bad stomach, you know. And we can eat our own fresh cabbage out of our own backyard gardens, and sleep the night through with never a hoof-beat of the nocturnal mare.

Every man and every woman on our street could participate with full privileges in the home-coming celebrations of several and sundry colleges scattered here and there over the globe. Mr. Witwer, with his Rhodes scholarship, makes this last statement possible. Therefore, the traditional spots may be knocked forever from the theory that college women make poor wives and poorer mothers. They do not. We can prove it on our street.

The age-limit on our street seems to be about thirty-five. The salary-limit, so far, has placed itself at three thousand; *vide* Mr. Witwer. The average is twenty-four hundred. But Mr. Witwer's little girl is crippled, and the difference must be devoted to medical attention for her. Last week the doctor

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

told us that in another year she may walk. The news made us all as happy as if it had been our own Dorothy or our own Mary. There are a number of little Marys on our street and a corresponding number of little Johns. We have no Gwendolyns or Percys.

On Saturday afternoons our young assistant professors and engineers work on our lawns and our gardens. They all wear khaki when they do it, and haul out their old puttees or boots. For every man on our street spent his allotted time in Uncle Sam's service, and each had a shoulder decoration. Some of the decorations extended to the left pocket-flap before they returned home. We are as proud of these as if the right were ours, individually, to stow them away in our cedar chests. And we are as proud of Mr. Towner in his olive-green-and-red triangle as we are sympathetic of his fading sight that debarred him from more active service.

We share three or four 'by-the-day' women, to help us over the hard places, and, aside from a schoolgirl or two to help with the babies once in a while afternoons, we are servantless. Our husbands operate their own boot-black kits and pressing-boards. They boast about the shine on their boots and the lack of shine on their clothing.

We save our pleasure pennies for the movies, Galli-Curci, football, and Sir Oliver Lodge. We browse about the bookstalls for Einstein and Lansing, Kipling, de Maupassant, 'Opal,' and Peter B. Kyne. We all flivvered down to watch the bulletin-board report of the July bout, and came back with the thought predominant that peace with Germany had been consummated.

Are we some of the 'wild young people' John F. Carter, Jr., wrote about last September? Should n't wonder if we were. Our men were at Armageddon. One or two of our women were there. Most of us have an easy time convincing our parents, w
their Packard and Peerl
out in front of our houses
romp with the children, t
life.' Our particular forn
seems to be a reversion
valentine days, to old-
dens, old-fashioned relig
fashioned marriage days
We're pretty happy o

AN IMPULSIVE ODE T
OF BENJAMIN FRA
A BOX OF SU

(*On or about his 215t*

Great Benjamin! I chee
That, to Miss Reed,
As hungry and half-ill
Along the streets of Phil
adelphia you sped,
A-munching,
A-crunching
That loaf of baker's brea
You may have seemed
Beauteous and sightly,
And have been deemed
A person rightly
To have a place
— That is, your face —
Upon a sugar-box.

And afterwards in Franc
In homespun coat and p
With white locks streami
And from your countena
Kindness perspiredly bea
You certainly had them
— Those demoiselles —
As with your gracious sp
(Your best French muste
You held them all
In thrall.

Benjamin, you were grea
In all affairs of state;
Your Almanac's wise pag
Have hurtled down the a

Digitized by Google

and many,
thrift nation
vation
the Penny.
eming brain
aming train
entions;
ht a pity
ery city,
ad of each committee
s.

r! O Good Benjamin,
on does this put you

in of some young pro-

thought to start on
nt the features of a

ton?
task in kitchen, cook-

o,
e seems to me severely

slow.'
eem to be a-calling,
ow — go slower —
nat sugar 's still a-fall-

till lower.'
early strawberries are
eeting,
nors for the sugar-box,
chful seem to be en-

and then to be repeat-

Your adage, meant the prodigal to move,
'Who dainties love, you know, will beggars prove.'
('T was writ to touch the conscience of the cook —
The fourteenth page in his 'Poor Richard' book.)

And when it comes to cake and lemon pie
(With all that rich méringue),
Your presence there upon my sugar-box,
Your disapproving scowl — it fairly mocks;
No matter what I try;
I fain would say, 'Go 'lang.'
'T is true, of sugar cooking takes a mint;
Yet with all due respect to Richard's thrift,
I do maintain it is a wondrous gift
To make good stuff to eat
And make it sweet
Yet put no sugar in 't.

I'm glad, Good Benjamin, to gaze on thee
Hanging in state-house and the halls of Art;
Your homely features, lit with charity,
Are of our nation's life a treasured part;
But would you mind it greatly if I say,
I believe it would ensure us
More freedom in a culinary way,
If they would take you off and put on, say —
Say, Epicurus.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Cornelia J. Cannon, wife of the distinguished biologist, Professor Walter B. Cannon, will be remembered as the author of the striking paper, 'Can our Civilization Maintain Itself?' in the *Atlantic* for November, 1920. **E. Barrington** is a British traveler and scholar. That passionate pilgrim, **A. Edward Newton,** sends us a post-card announcing the consummation of his pious journey to Wales, where he has just placed a memorial nosegay on the grave of his 'Light-Blue Stocking,' Mrs. Thrale. **Warren K. Moorehead,** an archæologist of long experience and of recognized authority in his chosen field, and member of the National Board of Indian Commissioners, is Curator of the Department of Archæology at Phillips Academy, Andover.

* * *

Mrs. A. Devereux (Cornelia N.) writes to the editor from Albany that the experiences described in these letters befell her

> on the exact road which is now the Union Pacific R.R. The engineers who were so kind to us were part of the 1st Corps [commanded] by Maj. Gen. Dodge, sent out to survey the ground for the Union Pacific. The date of my husband's going out on 'the Plains,' [she adds] . . . is fixed in my memory, definitely, because he was all ready to put his horses in the wagon . . . on Saturday, when, a last errand taking him to the business part of town, he learned of the death of Abraham Lincoln; and as he was Pastor of the Congregational Church in Council Bluffs at that time, he said he must wait to start on his vacation excursion, reopen the church, and preach a sermon to lead his people in their intense grief.

At ninety-three, she writes as vigorously as if the habit of correspondence were still strong upon her.

* * *

Charles H. Grandgent, for many years Professor of Romance Languages at Harvard, is a Dantean of wide reputation. **Stuart P. Sherman,** critic and philosopher, is Professor of English at the University of Illinois. **Edgar J. Goodspeed** is a professor of Biblical lore in the University of Chicago, who seasons his patristic learning with the love of strictly contemporary life. **Emma Lawrence** (Mrs. John S. Lawrence, of Boston) is a new writer, several of whose stories will appear in the *Atlant*ter. **Amy Lowell,** critic, lives in Brookline, Mass**Fort Newton** is pastor the Divine Paternity, i**Lieutenant-Commander McIntosh, U.S.N.,** is stat Air Station at Pensaco**Gamble Lowndes** is a ba a sportsman, and an adv

* * *

L. J. S. Wood, the Rom the well-known British C*Tablet*, has lived in Rom and has devoted serious tics of both the Quirinal **Dr. A. Shadwell,** the vete the London *Times*, after p in his early days, has give study of sociological an tions. He has traveled wi tigated conditions in Cana States, as well as in Russ England. Any personal c Dr. Shadwell should men amusements as he gives th 'Recreations: being take fishing, music' — the pas opher. **Arthur E. Suffe** Department of Economics is the author of 'Concilia tion in the Coal Industry took the first prize in th and Marx Economic Essa In 1914 he was made Sp of the Coal Industry by sion on Industrial Relatio is a member of the famo Stone and Webster.

* * *

Here are answers to que more frequent than any the 'new' education.

ANTIOCH COLLEGE, OH
DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Nothing constitutes me a progressive school movemen thereto by the communicatio July Contributors' Column, for expression. If you will hu limit myself to two points.

Digitized by Google

teach a child obedience:
ry parent can testify to
obedience that children
other words, it is not re-
h is needed, for one can-
hen one meets it. What
v to recognize authority
rious from the genuine.
he conventional school is
ıer, though but a scribe,
ints out, attempts to ex-
urse, when the children
lo, — they resent it, and
*is*respect for authority-
ı the new schools, no one
authority, but everyone,
strives to earn it.
ning applies to the disci-
do not want to do, which
The only true and use-
ich is self-imposed. And
s abundantly present in
Does anyone think that
projects get miraculously
details and hard work?
t a school which deliber-
upils under real life-con-
liminate the 'irksomeness
rudgery it does virtually
is a state of mind, due to
or without illumination
ıding and without joy.
essive school knows full
utine'; has learned what
ional school rarely learns,
must be done somehow'
lox curriculum got to do
? But he learns also why
w it may be made a thing
underlying purpose. The
so many are asking whe-
worth doing. Is this be-
ore — not better — edu-
ation for life is to send the
rk of the world, even the
r unintelligible drudgery.
t, because the adventure of

HORACE B. ENGLISH.

* *

ı, CAL., *June* 28, 1921.

ıcident suggest that there
ıa like unto Chicago and

ade some purchases in a
served me offered to carry
ıomobile, and as we walked
d toward the many auto-
he street and said, 'These
fulfill the words of the

ed.
e chariots shall rage in the
e one against another in
ıall seem like torches and
lightnings."'

I did not know what prophet said it, and I was so amazed I had not the wit to ask; but on reaching home I found it in the second chapter of Nahum. Could there be a more apt description of of the ways and appearance of the modern chariot? Very truly,

GRACE C. SIMONS.

* * *

There will be cramps in the nation's 'innards' before the last Jew is assimilated. That we have always thought, and here is proof of it.

NEW YORK CITY, *July* 1, 1921.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

A Jew of Jews, like the undersigned, stands aghast before the present-day flood of articles on the Jewish question. 'T is a veritable pogrom in printer's ink. And inky pogroms are deadlier than bloody ones, and blacker.

As a Super-Jew, I feel at any rate grateful for the sympathetic tone of Paul Scott Mowrer's disquisition on 'The Assimilation of Israel.' But how weak in its argument! The Jew, forsooth, does not assimilate: he refuses to intermarry, and occasionally attends the synagogue. Ergo, his is a double allegiance! And this in the same breath with the statement that the Jew has given evidence during the great war of his loyalty to America. In what way, then, does religious loyalty interfere with political allegiance?

And the solution of the problem? Intermarriage — *Q.E.D.* But this is no solution of the Jewish question; rather, a dissolution of the Jewish people. It means, let the Jew cease to be a Jew, and he will have no trouble.

Mr. Mowrer's article is an illustration of the greatest of all sins — the Sin of Being Different. Life is a monstrous rubber-stamp affair. Liking depends on likeness. The Unlike must be annihilated. The sympathetic ones, like Mr. Mowrer, would kill the Jew with kindness. Euthanasia —

To many a thinking Jew, as to a few thoughtful Gentiles, the remedy seems to be, not in the Jews ceasing to be Jews, but in the Christians becoming Christians.

All this is said with no malice, and with a painful consciousness of the nearness of the wastebasket to the editorial desk. But I feel that there is a great deal of amateurishness in all these discussions of the Jewish problem. The expert has not yet been heard from. The undersigned does not claim to be an expert. But he proudly proclaims himself a Jew of Jews, and a Pharisee. And while everybody has something unbecoming to say about the Pharisee, why should not the Pharisee be given a chance to state his own case?

Respectfully,
JOEL BLAU.
Rabbi, Temple Peni-El, New York City.

* * *

If ever we showed disrespect toward the art of Charlie Chaplin, may we be forgiven! Here's matter worth reading.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

ARLINGTON, FLA., *July* 12, 1921.

EDITOR OF THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY

DEAR SIR, —

The interesting article on the movies in the current number of your magazine omits what seems to me to be a very important feature of the film pictures. People leading the monotonous lives that the largest numbers of our population do — and it is the same all over the world — are patronizing these shows for the hypnotic effect produced. Charlie Chaplin is not merely a great artist, but he is a careful student of psychology, and he has proved that it is the gliding movements of his feet and entire figure which carry the minds of his guests along with the smoothly flowing current of a pleasant dream. He carefully avoids changing the focus of the eyes of the spectators by forcing them to read any inserts, and keeps cleverly devised scenes moving swiftly across the screen. The audiences are lulled into rest and forgetfulness of the incidents of everyday life, and are unconscious of the lapse of time.

The movies take the place of alcoholic stimulants or drugs, and are so much cheaper that they would be used to a much greater extent if the scenarios were only written in the proper way, without any attempt to transpose literature. Old and young, rich and poor, alike enjoy a pleasant dream while harmlessly hypnotized. In my opinion there should not be a line of script; there should not be the slightest attempt to instruct or elevate or degrade — just scenes from life and action. Music can be introduced if the musicians are kept out of sight, and if it is of the same soft and low and sweet kind that comes to us in pleasant dreams. Nothing must be allowed to happen in the theatre to arouse us from our hypnotic state.

There is no telling what pleasure may be given to a world-weary race by the development of this new discovery of a practical method of sending us off into those wonderful regions which Shakespeare alone could describe. If he could only have had this new medium, instead of the crude *genre* of language, we should now be reveling in visions such as we have no conception of in the dull lives we are now leading, amid the confusing noises and ugly surroundings of our so-called civilization. The newest art may easily become the greatest of all, and its development cannot proceed too rapidly if it only moves along the right lines; and so far Charlie Chaplin is the true pioneer who is pointing the way to better days.

Yours very truly,

R. S. HOWLAND.

And, speaking of movies, here is another letter with a different story.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Katharine Fullerton Gerould's discerning and thought-provoking article on 'Movies,' in the July issue, seems to me of not quite the even excellence of most of her papers. In the second and more academic section, on what the movies might be, her analysis is penetrating. In the first section, on what they are, she tends to illustrate her opening remark that there is a lot about movies she does n't know. On any such ignorance, however, she is to be, in some ways, congratulated. Incidentally, there are a number statements or implications: tha dained three 'sacred' unities; tha have no unity of action; that mov tified if they keep their patrons f worse; and that the notion that vicious is a joke.

The assertion that the peril of t ture is sensationalism and cheap s rather than salaciousness, is emine once had a picture of the front ro watching wholesale murder on th the title, 'Passed by the National sorship.' Annette Kellerman *sans* wholesomeness itself, compared to of jealousy, hate, and murder.

But I cannot agree that 'motio ducers are much more scrupulous managers.' The salaciousness whi siderable extent, kept out of films is worked for all it is worth in unc tisements. The movies have ma savage euphemism for 'courtesan') used by young girls, have familia with low dance-halls and dens of 'they have closed up' any 'literary trict,' it was only to reopen it unde ment.

The one fault, sex-appeal, wh partly checked in moving-pictures an occasional undesirable crook pl only *positive* moral charge which c against the regular stage. (Even l times under-dressed chorus is bal bathing-girls so featured in the m most undressed revues are often q vulgar lines.) On the other hand tures have evil contacts with many of life. They are at their worst w themselves seriously, and they do santly. The movies have taken ove play and are always attacking mar or birth-control — championing s reform which will give them licen what may be advertised, and to filmed, pruriently, or in some othe manner.

The film *comedies* have this much however: they do not insist on bei ously. No wonder Mrs. Gerould is Charlie Chaplin as American A Large. But this much can be said characters of slap-stick comedy (th Italian farce, Punchinello, Mutt a lie Chaplin): the whole point of the destructibility, though they 'die da lack of amenability to moral sanctio their unreality. It is not Mutt or C characters of the real stage, for whom romantic youngsters pattern get into trouble — as in the last of Court Sketches' in the June *Atla* characters of the movie 'dramas,' f convincing and real.

A last serious charge against th that they disregard the laws of moral cause and effect, except for a hasty, hypocritical reconciliation

Digitized by Google

nan or woman may go the
ormation, feebly motived,
of a few extra wives, hus-
ng witnesses, and other
vances, readily clear the
in, under a semblance of
gotten gains or pleasures.
weth, he can reap some-
nanipulation at the studio.
tructive criticisms of the
in her destructive criti-
em with faint damnation.

CLYDE MURLEY.

nal suggestion, this: —

le on the movies is one of
y delightful contributions
pungently phrases what
en soberly feeling about
sensationalism, and senti-
els the big epic and realis-
made, and, for that mat-
shed, to a certain extent.
emental suggestion, along
nt the movie to become —
The movie is not drama,
y true. But it is a picture
alistic or epic picture, at
es good pictures. We hang
all them art. A moving-
ntages of a static picture,
nd that, we are told, will
ew process of color-photo-
movie has an advantage
not, namely, motion.
he tragedy and comedy of
on? In other words, why
pantomine be revived?
dancing. Sculpture, too,
w phases of art might be
ist, what not, — and new
would inevitably develop.
the past, I can imagine a
e in texture, in which gro-
n art; another, a dancing
e, a veritable spring song;
ntomime of tragic intensi-
uth, one of solemn beauty.
uld stop trying to talk, it
nove the world with the

LEROY ARNOLD.

* *

we be told that in the
es appear?

LY, COL., *July* 6, 1921.

inconvenient, to be poor,
wandering if the opposite
t is, less inconvenient. I
and therefore my income
coffers, if such an old-
sts in this modern age. I
nforced exile up 8000 feet
ny lonesome, and I assure

as arrived when my sub-

scription to Boston's only magazine has expired, and I must decide between two alternatives: shall I renew my subscription immediately and live for a while on beans, which, though a Bostonian, I dislike, or shall I expend the money on food for the body? Here is where the inconvenience of being poor but honest comes in. I might borrow the magazine from some good Samaritan; but I very much doubt if the ranchers around here ever read the *Atlantic*.

I must confess, *Atlantic*, that I have literary ambitions, which one of my English professors in college seemingly tried to destroy; for he had a very disagreeable habit of selecting my themes and exposing their crudeness to the public gaze. According to him, my sins of ommision and commision were like the sands of the sea. First, he began to howl over my scarcity of commas; and when I tried to satisfy him by scattering them liberally around, he objected very sarcastically. Then, at another time, he read a short story of mine in which the hero's name changed very frequently. I wrote that story in a hurry and could not remember my hero's name. Fortunately, I did not have a heroine. I hope, *Atlantic*, you are not so particular as to commas and the changing of the hero's name.

During the past few months, the *Atlantic* has contained many articles on education, and I think that something is the matter with our educational system, for, in spite of a college education, and some experience in teaching, I am having the deuce of a time to spell some words, and I have no dictionary here. If I have mispelled a few words, please overlook them and blame it not on my ignorance but on the system.

Sincerely yours,

ABRAHAM SEGAL.

P.S. Have decided to live on beans.

* * *

How we came to say it is past understanding, but say it we did. We make tardy amends to our readers by printing these pleasant paragraphs from a friendly reader, Mr. H. W. Yozall.

I am sorry to see in the June *Atlantic* one of your contributors assigning Lewis Carroll to the University of Cambridge. Shades of Wolsey and Henry VIII, the faculty of whose great Ædes Christi Dodgson so originally adorned!

My father once told me of dining at the high table of the House, and listening with eager expectation for the witticisms of Dodgson, who was sitting opposite. But not one word did he speak during the whole meal. They adjourned to the senior common room for nuts and wine, and talk fell on the subject of notes used by famous speakers and various systems of memorizing. The Dean told how Charles Dickens always visualized his lecture as a wheel, with the different divisions as its spokes. After completing each division, he would strike away a spoke with a curious gesture of the right arm. 'And when he came to the last spoke,' said the Dean — 'Then he had spoken,' Dodgson interrupted, and relapsed into silence for the rest of the evening.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Finally, you of course have heard how Queen Victoria, having read *Alice in Wonderland*, wrote to the author commanding him to send her his next book; to which request Dodgson responded by sending his *Symbolic Logic*.

* * *

Many readers to whom Miss Converse's miracle play gave pleasure will care to learn that, besides a great number of performances in many American church communities, the play was given by the International College in Smyrna, under extraordinarily picturesque conditions.

To the Editors of the Atlantic Monthly
Boston, Massachusetts

The Best Country in the World

Dear Atlantic, —

There are a lot of people out here in Smyrna, and in other parts of the Near East, who are very grateful to you for publishing in your March issue that beautiful little play by Florence Converse, 'Thy Kingdom *Come*.'

Each year we hold a student conference here at Smyrna. The conference is held on the campus of the International College at Paradise. (We did not name the place. The Romans called it Paradiso long years ago. We try to make good on the name.) This year there were delegates from the Balkans, Asia Minor, Greece, Syria, and Egypt.

On one evening of the conference, just at sunset, we presented Miss Converse's 'Thy Kingdom Come.' Faculty, students, and faculty children took part. Some three hundred watched the play in reverent silence. The play was given outdoors, in a little natural theatre on a hillside overlooking a valley, where the ruins of old Roman aqueducts added to the impressiveness of the hour. In the background was a hill that might have been Calvary. Natural rocks formed the tomb.

The parts had been studied for weeks, and the costumes were perfect. The speaking and the action were so natural that one forgot for the time that it was but a presentation. It thrilled with present life. Of course the conference helped create an atmosphere almost ideal, and the play was given the week following the Eastern Easter. We left out a little of the doughboy slang, which many of these students would not have understood, and we added one thing. As the angels came over the brow of the hill, to roll the stone away, a chorus of girls, hidden in a cleft of rocks below in the valley, sang, —

'Christ the Lord is risen to-day,
Alleluia!
Sons of men and angels say,
Alleluia!'

There was truly a thrill as those clear young voices carried the song of triumph through verse after verse. It seemed as if angelic voices had joined the earthly choir.

Cordially yours,
S. Ralph Harlow.

Not the lost Atlantis,
tic, gives the fine trag
Here is a sequel to the gr
Column.

Dear Atlantic, —

I was more than ordinar
published account of the m
the *Atlantic Monthly*. Here
I stepped to a newstand at
streets, to buy a *Saturday*
ing an article by H. G. We
the street, when two men

'You got an *Atlantic*,' o

'No,' I replied, thinking
a copy they supposed I ha
the counter. 'I got a *Satu*

'No, you got an *Atlanti*
the street.'

I did not yet grasp the
that I bought my *Atlantic*

'But you were seen to
from the stand.'

Then I understood what
one not myself had stolen a
It appears that out here the
fundamental needs of the hu
that, lacking the price, one
cident you publish seems
hunger for the *Atlantic* is
Pacific Coast.

* * *

Now and again bride
that they are taking the
on their honeymoon.
compliments, of course;

Dear Atlantic, —

This is not Boston — far,
other day, when caring fo
country girl — Texas-born
her room and found the yo
side her half-hour-old son,
ble — reading the last *Atla*

Our Texas sunshine seems
bodies and minds. A

Why drag in Texas s

* * *

When Miss Dora M.
interesting letter regardi
experience before a Nat
which we published in th
she dated her communic
field, Massachusetts. We
ter with the date-line, an
our readers the mistaken
selves receiv d — that it
that the stign a rests. At
extraordinary, for Spring
its civic sense. We are gla
the responsibil.ty should b

Digitized by Google

rial throat a month ago for
he October publications of
Press. Since that time good
r way a saying of Vauve-
s with peculiar aptness to
ose *Life and Letters*, by
is one of the autumn books
leal might be said. 'What
e saying runs, 'is a great
zed in maturer years.'
n, studying music abroad
great thought of providing
n city and country orches-
tiful and uplifting as that
in Vienna. In his maturer
with a definite object in
thought through the foun-
ymphony Orchestra, which
ly forty years. The French
ve found a better embodi-
ained in his generalization.
s contribution to the cause
ıd been all that he accom-
e been much. But many
ducation, the best citizen-
erment in many forms —
and to all of these he made
great personality. For-
ssed through a steady out-
cteristic letters, filled with
rosity, humor, and vigor.
und himself provided with
material that was almost

of a kind which Professor
alified to handle — all the
ne of those Bostonians by
ard the Brahmin annals of
rily in their human and
gnificance. His book is,
o readers in Chicago and
much as to those in Boston
all, in life as in fiction, it is
ıd personal partake a uni-
character commands, or de-
on. Such a character was

of Professor Perry's biog-
a single volume. For the
ıd of friends of Major Hig-
a more personal memorial,
ge paper' edition, in two
llustrations, portraits, and
ppearing in the one-volume

edition, will also be printed. On the day before Christmas it will still be possible to buy the book in the so-called 'trade edition.' We should be sorry to believe that this may also be said of the 'limited edition' — and mention this feeling for whatever it may suggest.

* * *

Wild Brother is the title finally chosen for the extraordinary bear story by **William Lyman Underwood,** of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, which we mentioned last month. Its sub-title, *Strangest of True Stories from the North Woods,* does not at all overstate the claims of this narrative. If there had been photographers in the days of Romulus and Remus, and if the early narrative of those worthies could have been made a matter of pictured records, fact might have supplanted fable in the story of the founding of Rome. Mr. Underwood is a photographer of uncommon skill, and his story of a Maine woods cub and his human foster-sister, Ursula, is so incontestably documented with pictures covering all the episodes in the strange life of a strange pet that what might well appear as fable is established as fact. Picture and text are joined to remarkable purpose in a story both of human kindness and of animal life under unique conditions. The narrative and the photographs are equally certain to take a distinctive and permanent place in the chronicles of animal lore.

* * *

'The time and the place and the loved one all together,' is a phrase which may be applied without undue strain to a small volume which the Atlantic Monthly Press will issue in October. Its title is *Many Children;* its author, **Mrs. Schuyler Van Rensselaer;** its illustrator, **Florence Wyman Ivins;** its printer, **Mr. D. B. Updike,** of the Merrymount Press. Text and picture and format have not often been combined to better purpose. The verses and the designs are concerned wholly with children; and children with any instinct for beauty are sure to respond to the charm of fancy, of rhythm in word and line, which the little book embodies. The adult book-lover — if he may be likened remotely to the kind uncle who cannot be restrained from escorting small nephews to the circus — will share it with 'the children,' and thoroughly enjoy it himself, especially if he cares for both the outside and the inside of books.

The work of **Mrs. Ivins,** by the way, has recently been honored by a special exhibition in

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

one of the Class Rooms at the Metropolitan Museum in New York, under the designation of 'The Children's World, in Drawings, Woodcuts and Sketches, by Florence Wyman Ivins.'

It happens that Mrs. Ivins has also provided the colored woodcuts which will decorate the reprint of *A Visit from St. Nicholas*, which **Mr. Bruce Rogers** and **Mr. William Edwin Rudge** are producing for publication by the Atlantic Monthly Press. This is something more than a Christmas card. Indeed, it presents the American Christmas classic in a form which will bespeak the permanence of careful preservation.

* * *

A fire that consumed, in June, one of the buildings of the Rumford Press, at Concord, New Hampshire, where the three magazines issued from this office, besides many of our books, are printed, caused some delay in the delivery of July periodicals, and might well have played havoc with a number of publications in process of manufacture. As a matter of fact, it made only one appreciable change in our publishing programme. This was the postponement of the publication date of *The Little Garden*, by **Mrs. Francis King,** which was to have appeared early in the summer, and now is scheduled for issue with our September books. The silver lining of this particular cloud is found in the fact that many members of the gardening brotherhood — and sisterhood — may find in this latest book by Mrs. King one of those Christmas remembrances (they are none too abundant!) which are equally blessed to receive and to give.

* * *

At the other end of the *Atlantic* a review of *Shackled Youth*, by **Edward Yeomans,** will be found. It cannot be amiss to supplement this notice by some words from the author, though they were written without any thought of publication. In a recent letter he says: 'I am not so much interested in this book's fortunes as a thing in itself, but because it is a part of a general effort, by various people you and I both know, to keep a clear and steady point of view in the terrible turmoil of modern life. This point of view is not a luxury, but a necessity. It is in the general direction of *beauty*, which term can be safely extended to include everything worth while — social justice, discipline, music, religion, anything at all.'

If there are those who believe that Mr. Yeomans is a mere voice crying in the wilderness, let them secure such a document as the report of a convention for the Progressive Education Association, held in Dayton, Ohio, last April, just before *Shackled Youth* made its appearance; or let them take note of such a gathering as the joint meeting, in July, of the Harvard Graduate School of Education and the Progressive Education Association. Through such conferences as these it is made manifest that the very aspirations for the unshackling of youth to which Mr. Yeomans has given so effective a voice are those which are now stirring the organized effort of considerable bodies of men and women in the profession of teaching all over the country. Thus are things wont to go forward. A single book may serve as a light through eastern windows; a 'movement' spreads — and westward, look, the land is bright.

* * *

One of the first substantial reviews of *The Founding of New England*, by **James Truslow Adams,** appeared in the Springfield *Republican*. The reviewer declared that the book, 'so far as contributions to American historical writing are concerned, is the real joy of the tercentenary period,' and especially commended the author for attempting to serve no end but historic truth. This review caused Mr. Adams to address to the *Republican* a letter of appreciation which should really have a wider reading than the columns of any single newspaper can afford. Two paragraphs from it will interest both those who have been reading Mr. Adams's book and the general company of believers in sound historical writing: —

'Although, as the writer notes, I have no New England blood, by chance I am quite as much an American as any of the Mayflower descendants, for my first Adams ancestor came to Maryland in 1659, and on my Spanish side my ancestors have been settled in South America since 1558, or sixty-two years before the celebrated little ship left the shores of England. I have been in all but five states in the Union, have lived in a number of them as well as knocking around other parts of the world, and on the one hand, am conscious of no local prejudice, and, on the other, am devoted to this country and its past. But I believe there are few things more dangerous, nationally and internationally, than falsifying history and misinterpreting the men, movements, and conditions of an earlier time. It not only vitiates the value of history as a guide, but gives a seeming basis for all sorts of false and dangerous movements and prejudices in the present.

'In writing my book, I tried to hold the scales of justice as even as a fallible man can, and I have been extremely interested in seeing how the public would receive it, not because it is my book, but because it is an attempt to tell the truth. One of my friends, perhaps the ablest student of the Revolutionary period among American scholars, told me recently that he found a decided improvement since the war in the openmindedness of the average American toward the truth of that period.'

So, indeed, may it be!

Digitized by Google

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY

OCTOBER, 1921

THE IRON MAN

BY ARTHUR POUND

I

A YEAR ago I sat in a meeting of schoolmen and leading citizens who were wrestling with plans for a new high school and technical college. The leading citizens were manufacturers of motor-cars, because our town's reason for existence is the production of such cars, of which we can be relied upon to deliver upwards of one hundred thousand a year, when the public buys them fast enough to clear the loading-docks. Our leading citizens, consequently, are leaders in their industry as well. For downright public spirit, no more satisfactory group of employers can be found anywhere. They took it for granted that our new high school and technical college was to be keyed to utility. They wanted practical education, or, as one phrased it, 'education for life.' As their programme unfolded, it seemed that their goal was rather education for production. They may have seen new light since the wheels slowed down, but neither then, nor later, did the school-men offer any protest.

As an outsider, a member of neither group, I sat there, dazed, silent, a little dashed and fearful, as one amid new ruins. I knew there was something wrong with the programme of these manufacturers; but what it was I could not say. Now I know, because I have been studying the reactions of automatic machinery upon social relationships.

There is no better place for such a study than this town of ours. It exists for, and accepts the dictation of, industry highly automatized. In brisk times more than twenty thousand men and women work for three corporations, whose plants are full of automatic machinery. When these marvelous tools are busy, the town is prosperous, gains population, spends lavishly, yet saves much withal; when the tools are stilled, the town loses population, develops poverty, and lives on its savings.

In 1900 this was a quiet little manufacturing city of 13,000. In 1904 it produced its first motor-car, and growth from this time was rapid and sustained, draining away the surplus labor of nearby farms and villages. The 1920 census showed 38,550. In the next ten years, the city achieved a population of nearly 100,000, acquiring, among other interesting phenomena, a Little Poland, a Little Hungary, a Little Serbia, other immigrant colonies, and a Cosmopolitan Club financed by the Chamber of

Digitized by Google

Commerce. We built a Polish church and school, two Russian churches, a Czech church, and presently we shall have a Jewish synagogue. During the war we imported camps of negroes direct from the Black Belt. All these non-natives, about 75,000 in the twenty years, came either to tend automatic machines, to supply the economic and domestic wants of the operatives, or to coöperate in a scheme of production in which the automatic tool was the decisive factor.

Of course, this growth induced the usual and to-be-expected rise in rents and land-values. We built houses as fast as we could find the money; but in spite of enormous profits to constructors and investors, we could not provide housing fast enough to satisfy the industrial leaders. In 1919–20 the corporation controlling our two largest plants built thousands of homes. As a strike ensued, the builders fell back upon the principle which had profited them in automobile manufacture, substituting for skilled labor machinery and unskilled labor.

In 1920, production on automatic machines here and elsewhere having outrun consumption, the wheels slowed down to a fraction of their former speed. Immediately our town began to lose population; thus proving that, with cities as with plants, quick growth means weak roots. Coincidentally rural districts began to gain. While we were losing 15,000 out of our 100,000, a village eighteen miles away added twenty per cent to its 1920 census of 400. Money brought these people into town, and, jobs failing, lack of money took them out again into the fields, woods, and villages. Michigan woods were full, last winter, of men who, a year ago, were tending automatic machines. What back-to-the-land propaganda failed to do in twenty years, economic necessity accomplished in six months.

Of all the states, Mi
greatest percentage o
from 1910 to 1920; a
growth in the use of
This is because ours i
state. The automobil
want, burst into be
grew. It was a new m
tation, not the develop
means. Its makers fa
with open minds an
hands. They had no
shop-practice to consi
machinery to junk. Th
large enough to ensur
increased production w
fits. Moreover, the na
ness required large out
parts, accurately mac
ized and interchangea
automobile industry is
highly automatized.
tions of automatic
human nature and the
be observed here in al

Those machines wh
place the worker or re
to a minimum are de
matic. They are so d
worker need not know
which the mechanism
ing the desired result
line between these tool
merely lengthen or str
of man is nowhere defi
but examples will help
tinction.

With the power wool
the sheep-shears, the
erator must work with
extract from use the in
of the tool. But with a
the attendant is requi
the machine and relie
duce from time to tim
good many semi-auto
but the tendency is to
plete automatization.
semi-automatic machi

Digitized by Google

c perfection; each month for skill in industry less- rly in those basic indus- ncentrate large numbers given centres, and so rmining influence upon

se, is still vital; but the as passed upward. Ma- hop-organization, rout- ls, and distribution of e require a concentra- nd technical knowledge similar requirements of industry. The rank and nly a fraction of their nce and manual dexter- kill-requirement, which l more or less over the listilled into a relatively ngineers and executives. vital function from the hine is the key to many ffects all departments of seen how it broke down pprenticeship which had s more or less against brought raw farm-boys eling farm and factory od prices. We have seen e Iron Man to pull the l the peasants of Europe ave seen something, but of his influence in shift- n the home to the mill. nistakable tendency of hinery is to level labor, ly and wage.

teral effects are equally ny automatic machines d as well by a child of is parents. In fact, the matic machines reaches st economic power early rves are steadiest. The in nursing automatic repetition-strain, com- ter. The operative does g over and over, amid rhythmic sounds, in an atmosphere frequently stale with oil or dust. Youth stands this better than age, because youth reacts more quickly. Whereas, in the old days, a man used to come more slowly into earning power, reach his highest pay at thirty-odd, and continue fully competent until age began to slow him down at sixty-odd, his son leaps into high pay as a hobbledehoy, reaches his economic apogee short of twenty-five, and from thirty-five to forty-five slides swiftly downhill. He is a better earner at twenty than his father was; but the chances are that he will be a poorer provider at fifty.

I prefer not to be too dogmatic on this point. Automatic machinery is so new, having been in common use about twenty years and still being in its infancy, that present deductions on economic life-expectancy are founded upon too few instances to be altogether conclusive. Moreover, the swift decline of earning power in middle life may be partly due to causes only indirectly related to industry — poor housing, youthful excesses, and the like. However, present indications point to the correctness of the cycle outlined above.

Now the difficulties of the problem presented to educators by automatic machinery begin to emerge. The majority of youths, male and female, no longer need to be taught how to earn their living. Three days after the law that sets limits on child-labor leaves them free to work at the machines, they will be earning big money — practically as much as they ever will earn. There is little to learn; the mills can teach that better and cheaper than the schools. The labor turn-over cost per man ranges from $25 to $100; this includes the pay of the novice and his instructor, investment, depreciation, and overhead. Since it includes the non-automatic and semi-automatic processes, the cost of training men to serve the automatics

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

must be considerably less than the average, and will decrease as automatization becomes more intense. The instruction period on automatics varies from half-a-day to a week; it is estimated that seventy per cent of the workers in an automatized plant can be brought to efficient production in three days or less. The schools can never match this record; in addition, the cost to the schools of the equipment for the effort is prohibited.

The pockets of these children are full of money at an age when their fathers earned less than a living wage as apprentices. They are economically independent of home and social control. They have the eternal belief of youth that the preceding generation is fossilized, and the buying power to act upon their belief. They are foot-loose to go wherever automatic machines are turning. They can buy their pleasures, and they do. They can afford to flout age and authority; they do. Their very active minds have no background, and feel the need of none. They have no conception of the cost of civilization; no standard of reference by which to judge social and political questions. They have not even lived long enough to learn the simple truth that common sense and wisdom spring from the same root. With far greater need for early thrift than their elders, because their effective economic life may be shorter, they spurn the homely virtue of economy. They buy pleasures, buy companions, buy glad raiment; they try — desperately — to buy happiness. And fail. Yet they are splendid raw material for citizens. Let a great cause kindle them, and they rise to it like knights and ladies — *noblesse oblige*. They met every war-need more than half-way; fought and fell; sacrificed and saved — during the emergency. Their faults are those of youth plus affluence.

Here is the explanation of our youthful delinquency. Our 'bad men' of this winter are mostly minors. 'My court,' said a Detroit judge, 'is the scene of a procession of beardless boys.' They acquire appetites — expensive appetites; pleasure leads into bad company. A prank gone wrong, an unfortunate slip, a month without a job and nothing laid by — and we have the beginning of what we call the crime wave.

II

Much as this situation complicates the educational problem, the school-system somehow must be adapted to it. Somehow these children must be brought up to a mental and moral level approximating the economic level upon which they set foot immediately after leaving school. This is a grim task. In the public schools, certain things must be taught before the age of sixteen, which now are taught only in college, and to which many college students appear to be immune. The proposal itself would be revolutionary if it did not arise from a new set of industrial conditions, to which society is accommodating itself clumsily, but, in the main, peaceably. As such, the change, though startling, is clearly evolutionary — and inevitable.

What are the positive educational requirements of the machine age? To clear the ground, let us eliminate the non-essentials. The child who is going to tend an automatic machine does not need, in any economic sense, to read more than a shop-poster or direction-sheet. If he can sign his name to a pay check, that is enough. If he is willing to trust the shop to figure out his pay, he need not know his numbers. For the time he stands beside the machine, his earning capacity is not increased by anything he knows. Knowledge may be useful in getting him away from the machine; but that escape is going to be

Digitized by Google

automatization pro-
s logical conclusion.
as the operative comes
sesses for him only a
It does not help him in
his living; but it helps
o spend his leisure.
dren — these prosper-
hildren — possess leis-
as to make the worst of
ost of them at least, no
ours a day. Presently
even six. As produc-
e and more automatic,
can be supplied with
or. Consumption, of
and enormously; yet
goods remains in stiff
the universal demand
got enough; let's go
te of mind so common
sturbed factory sched-
oyers, and set tongues
bor-profiteering.
y fight the tendency
ter working day, but
fight. Of late, in our
ne along producing on
lule all of our kind of
h the restricted market
so doing, we have dis-
h picked men, height-
d with a closer syn-
the elements involved,
an can be greatly in-
present highly effective
slowly enlarged, thus
fficiency, it is difficult
market, under normal
bsorb more than eight
om day to day.
o contradict previous
the elimination of the
through machine use,
the improvement is
ot altogether, to the
e engineers and execu-
iciently routing mate-
chines. Under boom

conditions, the stream of supply was often interrupted, thus throwing the machines out of production. This has been largely corrected; also, in the meantime, the machines have been tuned up, and new ones added in some cases. The attendant of the automatic machine remains just where he was; but the machine has the chance to do more and better work. Of course, even in a highly automatized plant, there remain a good many jobs that require either no machinery or semi-automatic machines; and in such cases the recent weeding out of the ineffectives does produce beneficial results. If the market will not absorb the products of the longer working day, on the present more efficient per-man per-hour basis, then it seems apparent that, viewing the country as a whole, industry will have to adjust itself to eight hours or fewer, probably fewer. The nation's supply of automatic tools is not going to be decreased simply to lengthen the working day; on the contrary, competition continually forces more and more of such tools into operation.

A shorter working day manifestly means greater leisure for the masses. Now it is everlastingly true that the bulk of human mischief is done in spare time. There is precious little chance for original sin, or any other kind of sin, to work itself out under the strict regimen of a modern factory. While human beings are at work, they are, perforce, reasonably decent: the employer sees to it that the time he buys is not wasted; but no one exercises an equal degree of control and supervision over a man's unbought time, — his leisure, — unless it is the man himself.

In a town dominated by automatic machinery, therefore, the educational problem is to train youth for the right use of leisure. Why waste time teaching city children how to work, when their chief need is to know how to live?

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Precisely here is the point of my argument. Education for leisure, under the conditions of automatic production, is education for life. The attendant of automatic tools does not live while he is on the job; he exists, against the time when he can begin to live, which is when he leaves the shop. His task does not call for a fraction of his full powers as a sentient being, or monopolize his interest. If he could buy the same amount of well-financed leisure as easily in any other way, he would shift jobs to-morrow. It is impossible for him to grow mentally through his work. So he comes to his post as a slave to the galley, and leaves it with the gladness of a convict escaping prison. Psychologists say that a large part of industrial arrest is due to the inhibition which automatic tools place upon the expression of personality through labor. Be that as it may, the fact is that the hours given to tending automatic machines are given to buy leisure; and in that leisure the operative lives. He lives in his sports, at the movies, at the prize-fights, at the blind pig, as well as at the theatre, the lecture, the library, the park, and on the front porch of his inamorata.

In general, it has ever been true that leisure is the cream of life. We have tried desperately to build up an immunity to leisure, with our dull gospel of work for work's sake. There is a glory in creative work; but even that becomes pain and weariness if we are kept too long at it. All labor produces, sooner or later, weariness and pain, nature's signal to quit and go a-playing. When does that most stolid of men, the peasant, live most fully — when he plods the endless furrow, or when, at evening, he sings his songs, dances, prays, and courts his maiden? When did the skilled mechanic of another day feel his manhood soar highest above clod and worm — when he was chasing a screw with a cold chisel, or when he was taking the air in h
chance, hobnobbing
the corner saloon? Is
ness man better com
chasing a golf-ball, or
ing a profit? Is the ba
with himself when he i
or when he is hip-de
figuring trout? I thin
the best sort reach th
in life, not in the hour
but in the hours they
Certain am I that nor
could find delight in
toil of the urban mass
has it become. Cons
tion for leisure is pr
for life. And educati
squarely down to edu

To apply the early
education to a machin
Matthew Arnold to
flurried and worried
seem absurd. But tha
uation needs; and the
absurd. That cultura
for leisure those wh
a small minority. Wit
tions in the interests o
said to have produce
minds and a very con
of gentlemen and gen
because leisure has br
clude the majority, v
gentlemen and gentle
What was once a priv
gant aristocracy has b
for an arrogant demo
American gentlemen
appear in due time
numbers, civilization
by machine-made ba
— though their mach
globe — to replace
destroyed.

III

What is the first re
right use of leisure? Se

Digitized by Google

ure is liberty from an exacting, definite control — that of the boss. In leisure a man is subject only to the state. When the worker leaves the shop, he passes from a positive control to a negative control. Inside, he is required to do certain things; failure to do them results in sure discovery. Outside, he is required not to do certain things, although, if he does them, no penalty may follow. Thus we see that it is immensely more difficult to train human beings for life and leisure than for toil, and that, in America, only odd and unusual persons get very much out of leisure. About all that a retired business man feels equal to is golf and musical comedy. The workers offer more encouragement — Brashear and Henry George showed what laboring men could do in spare time.

Need for self-restraint increases in direct proportion to affluence. I am sure that eight dollars a day at eighteen — and some of our lads earn much more than that — would have corrupted me beyond repair. The wonder is, not that some of these highly paid striplings go wrong, but that all do not do so, considering the opportunity offered them by their cynical and predacious predecessors. More even than wild oats, I am sure that eight dollars a day at eighteen would have insulated me against right relationship with the world of ideas and ideals, past, present, and future, by blasting nascent inquiry and speculation. The establishing of this relationship in youth is, I take it, the end of all true and worth-while education, involving, as it does, the subjugating of the assertive, unbaked Ego to the social well-being, as manifested in the legal, moral, and ethical codes prevalent in one's environment and enforced, more or less, by the power with which common consent invests political institutions. Respect for authority, even that qualified assent involved in the pragmatic view of established institutions, has extreme difficulty in getting a roothold in a generation whose youth is economically self-sufficient.

It follows that knowledge, as the chief restraining influence in the youthful mind, is the substitute that education must establish in place of the set of controls which formerly resulted from the young man's poverty or fear of poverty. Remembering that the rising generation reaches its highest economic utility early in life, and that it soon, relatively speaking, reaches the economic status of old age, I think we must agree that, unless youth is taught thrift, pauperism will lengthen and strengthen from this point in time. A grievous outlook, to be forestalled at any cost.

There is need, therefore, to drill thrift into children; let the experts busy themselves on methods. The whole field of economics must be opened earlier and charted more simply. Is it not odd, in a nation that bows down to economic fact, to find the teaching of that economic theory almost wholly a college monopoly? It ought to be possible to begin the teaching of economics in the kindergarten, and to bring the pupil along so that, before he becomes a part of the economic machine which supplies human wants, he may understand at least its delicate nature. Suppose a child of five were set moving a given number of blocks from this space to that by hand — an hour's work. Then suppose the child were given a basket to ease the job — time, ten minutes. Then suppose, further, that an intelligent teacher explained that the basket was capital, the result of previous thrift, of labor in past time. That lesson would stick. Somehow to get this, and other fundamentals, into the mind when it is plastic, is the supreme educational task of the future.

So with the idea of law. My children know, among other surprising things,

Digitized by Google

the chief products of every state in the Union; but they have no conception of the legal system which enforces equity and fair play in the exchange of those products. It seems the simplest thing in the world to teach them that laws exist to protect the weak from the strong, the just from the unjust, the person of good intent from the swindler. Once they had mastered that idea, they might see the policeman as a friend rather than as an enemy, and our economic-juridical system as something to be protected instead of destroyed. A generation so reared might insist upon the law doing its primal duty; but it would be evolutionary, not revolutionary, in its demands.

But self-restraint is not, of course, all that a man needs in order to make something out of leisure. A man may be ever so self-restrained, and yet be desperately bored at the prospect of spending an hour in his own company. Self-restraint is merely the brake upon the ego-motor; it will keep the individual from running amok in society, but it will not start anything. Its virtue is negative. What the ego-motor needs in leisure is fuel, something upon which it can travel, progress, journey into new realms of thought. The best fuel for the purpose is compounded of interest in the present, understanding of the past, and sympathy with the future. History, literature, science, art, music — all these give to life meaning, and to leisure, inspiration; a reasonable concern in all that man has done, is doing, or is about to do upon this planet; with such equipment any fool could use leisure aright. To sow that seed is the first duty of educators, now as always, now more than ever.

So much for the background. But backgrounds are always hazy; let us concentrate. Since work is coming to be no longer a primary interest for the child of the masses in civilized lands, it is incumbent upon us to provid far as they can be provided, ot mary interests through which t vidual can justify his existence ests which, rising out of and su by his background, shall flouri the green bay tree all the days life. Every man, whether he w turret-lathe or a comptometer, hobby to busy himself with in t of growing leisure. We hear less tional training than we did — f reason, since its utility is passing ently we shall hear more of avoc training, which shall give every destined for the mill or office a for the centre of his garden of lei

In a machine age the applied s are paramount. Let them rem There are important posts on th of industry which must be fille us see to it that every mind fit the directorate of industry g educational opportunity. Machi undeniably one of the prime intel interests of the American masses ure an informed generation woul tinue inventing, perhaps invent than ever. Therefore let us give all it can stomach of the sciences ened and broadened to the utt But by no means should we sub the specialist's obsession, that, w key to universal knowledge in hi he travels down a walled alley, s from the humanities, from philo from religion, from life.

I am not competent to provi synthesis for this analysis, to d the educational reforms whic necessary, and which I am sure the way. That is a task for ma mature minds. But certain key emerge out of the haze. We think insist upon ten years' sch for every child, as an irreducible mum, before plunging into the w automatic production. There sho four school-terms instead of two,

Digitized by Google

ween; the long summer
achronism in a factory
the Saturday holiday
k in school henceforth.
to be taught, and there
o teach it in, that youth
the same time, school
h more interesting that
udgery could not hold.
must be more teachers
ses; better equipment;
nt all round. Finally,
a complete system of
ools, wherein those who
ir labor-bought leisure
ther instruction could
d on their own time.
sumably will have been
l with the intellectual
will go on improving
isure, to some extent,
ting on a wide scale
not a matter of youth,
such a start, the many

will read, discuss, and enjoy the noblest works of man. And some among them, have no fear, will create as well as re-create.

But the programme, after all, may be left safely to the specialists, now that the problem is stated for their attention. They may have been a bit tardy in seeing how the Iron Man is frustrating their efforts, and why; but that is because they have been concentrating upon an even more wonderful mechanism — the human mind. Let them quarrel, as no doubt they will, over the details of the programme; but they can be trusted to accept the statement, — once they square the facts by the rule of reason, — that the welfare of our people and the preservation of our institutions depend upon our educating youth to use reasonably and gloriously the growing leisure which the common use of automatic machinery has in store for humanity.

next topic will be 'The Iron Man in International Politics.')

STANFORD LIBRARIES

IVE YEARS IN A FAROE ATTIC

BY ELIZABETH TAYLOR

Eide, Östero, Faroe Isles.
15 *November*, 1914.

last, I was digging in
ans Kristoffer. Now I
fishing village on the
Östero. Eide, as a win-
is but one attraction,
of a Danish Captain
knew in past years.
aughter, Amalya, and

her husband, will give me shelter during the winter.

I left the capital, Thorshavn, at early dawn, on an open-decked motor-boat, which was heavily laden with passengers, luggage, freight, the mail, Iceland fishermen's sea-chests, three sheep, a cow, and a large cask of soft soap, which leaked badly and soon spread itself over everything and everybody on board. Later, rain fell, and, mixing with the

Digitized by Google

soft soap, made a fine lather. We were nine hours on the way, most of the time within the fjords, where heavy mists hid the fjelds and, falling, seemed to bar the way. The air was dank and chill, and when I at last saw Eide in the distance, I thought happily that for seven long months I need go nowhere in a boat.

There were Kruses to meet me on the sea-rocks and help me with the surf, and other Kruses, higher up, to hug me and escort me up the stony path, Kruses running down the little lanes and coming to doors to greet me, and meeting me at Amalya's threshold, and dropping in later to bid me welcome. Other Kruses were out fishing. And so I settled down to keep house in Kvisten, which means the Attic.

You remember, of course, the story of the Three Bears and the Little Girl? Kvisten now resembles the home of the Little Wee Bear. All my life I have been bothered by chairs and tables unsuited to my height, and here was my opportunity. Joen Magnus, who is a carpenter, postman, fisherman, and a trifle of a farmer, has adapted many boxes for me. His charge is six cents an hour. I pay seven, and thus the pleasantest relations are established. There are twenty-two boxes, large and small, in Kvisten's two rooms, though you would never suspect it, and all are suited to the needs of the Little Wee Bear and of me. They are *my* boxes, — mine to me, — and therein lies their charm. *I* own the kettle, the zinc pails, the frying-pan, and the broom. No one has the right to invade Kvisten, and put soda in my tea, and boil it 'to get the goodness out,' or to add sugar and nutmeg to my potatoes. No 'sweet soup' shall cross *my* threshold! I am weary of conforming, through many years, to the ways of other people. Now I propose to have some ways of my own.

This cottage is perched h
above the sea, so close tha
my packing-case table, I
and water and distant fjeld
weather, the great surges s
on to overwhelm Kvisten.
me dizzy at first, and to
ings, I must rise and look
shore rocks and the grass
the Kruse trading-post, and
that shelter high-prowed f
Ornen, Svanen, Hvalen
— the Eagle, the Swan,
the Family.

The village of Eide (pron
lies huddled along the fj
south between two island
miles of sea. On the nor
storm-bleached grass fields
on either side, and a pond,
long dike of up-tossed bo
rates from the lonely North
the east, a great solemn
rears precipitous cliffs tw
feet above the surf, and
saying, 'Thus far.' I don'
my fancy that makes tho
waters seem sterner, more
than those of the east or we
mer nights the glory of th
the sunrise both are there
November, the sun is far a
its shallow arc in the south

I have been busy with
for winter — salting mutt
rings, ordering supplies,
boxes with soil, and planti
correctives of a too fishy,
chives and parsley, cress, a
of all anti-scorbutics, the na
grass.'

Amalya's quarters, called
mine, Kvisten, are on the
borly of terms, and often, s
downstairs with a little of
turnip or a cup of canne
met Amalya coming up w
fried fish or a pancake.

I am to have three lam

Digitized by Google

other island. The first one came in mid-October, escorted from the landing-place by a score of small boys. It was dismaying to be confronted by a whole lamb, — intact, — but Amalya kindly officiated as mistress of ceremonies. Ole Jakob, a neighbor, was asked to kill and dress it in the cellar, I peering down fearfully from time to time through a trap-door in the kitchen. Ole Jakob had half the tallow, the feet, fifty öre (about fourteen cents), and two cigars, and declared himself more than satisfied, — handsomely paid, in fact, — and sent his thanks. I replied, politely, through Amalya, that the thanks were to *him*.

Amalya's family has whale-meat, salted, to eke out winter supplies. I have eaten fresh whale-meat scores of times and found it very good — almost like beef. But it changes sadly when kept in brine, and has a curiously pervasive odor. The days when Huset has whale for dinner, Kvisten ventilates diligently, loses interest in cooking, and takes gloomy views of the war.

I find that many people think my name is Mistela. Not knowing the meaning of the word Miss, and adding it to my surname, they think it a Christian name, like Marguerite or Malene. I like it as I hear it from a group of children. 'Here comes Mistela,' I hear the older ones say; 'now, bid good-day prettily to Mistela.' And as I pass, they raise half-frightened eyes to me and say in soft chorus, 'Godan dagur, Mistela.'

This is the time of year when we are packed away in heavy, low-lying clouds that turn even midday to twilight. Storms and heavy rain day after day. Green slime growing on the little lanes, rocks, and cottage-walls. Housework is difficult in the uncertain light. There is a feeling like black cobwebs before the eyes. While I wait for the light to brighten, the shadows deepen and the brief day has passed. A lantern is an indispensable part of Kvisten's outfit. When, in late afternoons, a bit of war news is telephoned to the doctor, he writes it on a piece of paper, and puts it in a little frame that hangs on the outer wall of a cottage. Buffeted by the storm, I make a zigzaggy progress up to that cottage, where a group of men are burning their fingers with matches and growling about the doctor's writing. Often I am kept there long, reading by the light of my lantern the message, as others join the group, and feeling very bashful about my queer pronunciation of Danish.

Am I or am I not a *Kalve Kone?* That means a halibut woman, one who possesses mysterious powers that can charm a big halibut to the hook of a fisherman. But the fisherman must have promised her verbally, or in his thoughts at sea, the *beitu* — a choice bit, cut from the fish between the fore-fins. And for this beitu no thanks should ever be given, though pleasure may be *indirectly* expressed. Last week, a man on the fishing-bank promised me the beitu, and a few minutes later he was having a sharp fight with a halibut that weighed almost two hundred pounds. When he came with the beitu, Amalya, who was speaking Faroe-ese for me, explained that, of course, Mistela understood that no *thanks* were to be given for it, but she was *awfully* glad to have it, and considered it handsomely done of him. Two days later, another man promised me the beitu, and caught nothing. So what is one to think?

December 22, 1914.

A British trawler came in this morning to get supplies for the homeward run. I saw the ship's boat nearing land, and knew I would be needed to help with the 'trawler English.' I found Neils already in difficulty about 'grub,' 'bac,' and 'taters,' which the man had demanded. During the next hour I made acquaintance with plug, shag,

Digitized by Google

and cavendish, helped to make out attestations, and sent a messenger among the cottages to find potatoes. The man's face looked drawn and heavily lined, though he was not yet middle-aged. I understood it when he told me that he had been in the mine-sweepers' brigade. Two of their vessels had disappeared, leaving no trace of crew or wreckage. The man expected to reach port by Christmas, and I asked him about the homeward run — whether he followed all the prescribed routes of the Admiralty. 'Huh!' he exclaimed, with contempt, 'if we did, we'd never get any furrader. Run for it and take yer chances. That's the only way!'

He gave me no thanks for my help, no word of farewell. He gathered up his purchases, paused in the doorway, and looked with weather-wise eyes on land and sea. 'Wind's against us,' he muttered; 'everything's against us' — and so departedly sadly.

Later. I have heard that his ship has been shelled and sunk, but what has become of the sad little man I do not know.

Our letters to England now go first to Copenhagen, then to Aarhus in Denmark, then by a butter-and-bacon freighter back the whole length of the North Sea, north of the Orkney Isles, and down the west coast of England to Manchester or Liverpool. Time, from sixteen to twenty-six days.

Yesterday a little deserter from Germany had tea here. Really he is from Slesvig. He explained earnestly, 'Papa, Danish; mama, Swedish. Born in Germany, but *not* a German!' I was surprised to find how well he speaks Danish, though Germany has done all in its power since 1864 to suppress the language. When he tried to speak English, he mixed it with German. His elder brother had been killed in the first days of the war. His best friend was called to service, but an accident delayed him. Next morning his young wife received the message, 'Two hours late. Shot.' That was too much for the little Slesviger. He would rather be shot as a deserter than fight for Germany. He was a meek, pallid boy, but his eyes fairly blazed as he told of the death of his friend. Many adventures he has had, many narrow escapes, but now he has a British pass, is cook on a fishing vessel, and eventually will go to Denmark.

March 7, 1915.

The winter passes quickly, and it is time to think of garden-plots. Kvisten has lately been deeply involved in potatoes. Food-supplies are uncertain, and the Governor urges all to plant as many potatoes as possible, and new varieties have been sent from Denmark. I think my faulty Danish is responsible for the arrival from Thorshavn of more kinds, in larger numbers, than I had expected. It has been a time of stress, looking each potato sternly in the eye, to see if it means to sprout. I have made a little collection for each family of the Kruse clan, two other friends, and myself. Nine families, and five varieties for each family, and each variety to be kept separate and correctly labeled, and I to cook, eat, work, and sleep in the midst of it all. By bedtime so many potatoes had been imprinted on my retinas that, when I closed my weary eyes, I could distinctly *see* potatoes, brilliantly illuminated, floating in space. And now in the dim light, under my cot-bed, my packing-case table, wherever there is a place, are potatoes in shallow boxes, standing prettily in rows, making sprouts.

July 15, 1915.

I was going to show Eide what's what in the way of little gardens, but this is a bad ice-year in the far North. Those Greenland ice-floes will not go. They drift and pack and drift again, be-

Digitized by Google

d's northern coasts, and
gs that check and blast
these islands. Those peas
cauliflower and oyster-
s, one by one, went by the
nly potatoes and turnips
en blight attacked the po-
t and horrid white worms
nd a coast-wind tore my
s. I have two pea-plants
g well, but they are in a
n. Amalya has seen *dried*
lways thought they were
ground, like potatoes.
l felt the need of a peat-
ugi — the wild out-fields.
ng like it as a restorer of
And on one of our few
went to a lake among the
dred feet above the sea.
ldest picnic I have ever
with many attractions —
king fresh-water baths in
ck-backed gulls barking
ffs, and curlew chortling
sy slopes. *Omma* (which
nother) and I tended the
made large quantities of
the circulation of those
r trout, from boats, and
home at half-past nine,
was still shining on the
at we wanted to, but we
old!

January 30, 1916.

, —

eceived from America the
e thinks of me as 'dream-
peaceful days far from
gitation.' I will now tell
my 'peaceful days.'
y noon that a storm was
he sea was restless, the
g, and the rising wind
ay that meant trouble to
ss closed in early, and by
e were in the grip of a hur-
e north. The house shook
nd strained like a labor-

ing ship at sea. Torrents of icy rain and masses of sea-water carried horizontally through the air bombarded the house, and on the northern side forced their way through every crevice and joist and crack. Under the eaves, in the sloping closets, Josefine and I crawled on all fours, with lanterns, exhuming the contents, while Omma brought sacks and mops, buckets and tubs. In Kvisten, with its thin roof of zinc, its walls of two layers of planks, the uproar was so great that we had to shout to be heard. Yet above it all sounded that high shrill crying — the *vox humana* of a hurricane.

During the worst gusts there was a curious lifting sensation, as if something had gone wrong with the attraction of gravity. It was singularly disconcerting to lose all sense of weight and stability, and feel that Kvisten might whirl away like a pack of cards. What a night that was, we thinking that the roof would go, the house be carried from its foundations, and then what would Amalya do? For in that time of fear Amalya's little son was born. I had him in my charge, five minutes old, — so blue and cold he was, — and held him close in the skirts of my red wrapper, while the window-frames sucked out and in, and the curtains blew in the icy drafts. Oh, poor little man — to come into the world on such a night!

I make from time to time tentative efforts to secure a passport, but they come to naught. I am in the diplomatic jurisdiction of Çopenhagen; but with this troublesome heart the long and very dangerous journey to Denmark is impossible. I would venture the shorter one to Scotland, if I could get a passport. I wrote explaining fully how I was situated, that a 'personal application' could not be made, and giving the best of credentials. Such a trusting, naïve letter it was — so sure that there

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

would be some accommodation in the law for one of Uncle Sam's family, stranded in a far-away land. A few words, in reply, from a secretary, merely say that passports are issued on '*personal application.*' So I remain in my island attic.

June 15, 1916.

We have had an anxious week. First, a rumor of the great sea-fight off Jutland, and then the death of Lord Kitchener. Faroe folk, before the war, have known little and cared less about the great ones of the outer world. But they knew about Lord Kitchener, and his death seems to them a personal loss, as if one more safeguard between their homes and the enemy had been broken down. And now, in another sense, they are comrades of the sea, for he has died the death that some of them will die. When the news came, I took a Kitchener photograph with me down to the Kruse Store, where there is always a group of fishermen gossiping and smoking. They crowded around me eagerly, to see it, and I saw tears in the eyes of some of the older men. 'A brave man, a good man,' they said softly.

March 18, 1917.

The Thorshavn authorities announce that there is a three-months' supply of grain and flour on hand, but future supplies are uncertain, and we are enjoined to use as little as possible, and to bear our coming troubles 'with calm and dignity.' Now we have used a seven-weeks' portion, and in all that time not one pound of food has come to the islands. I cut down on light, fuel, and food, and could have eaten less and yet carried on as usual. I will not say that I did not *want* to eat more. Queerly enough, I was more hungry in my dreams than in my waking hours. I gave little thought to *bacon* in pre-war days, but now, about once a week, I dream about it. I sit down, with joy, before a large dish of del
curly bacon, when sudd
es away. Distractedly
where, mopping away
in the distance, pursue
eludes me. My grief w
find that real tears hav
comfortably damp.

Next week our ratio
and on Monday there
to-house inspection. F
must be declared and att
The whole matter is rath
and the Thorshavn pow
kindly tried to explain,
guage, in many colum
semi-weekly paper. W
well in everyday Danis
planations have made
now I see groups of exc
ing ragged copies of *Di*
hear such comments, i
as, 'Fool thou! I say
have sago!' 'Death
You've got it wrong!'
meal *is* rationed!' 'C
Thou'lt have to swear
honor how many potat
And I know that Eide
earnestly striving for
before the ordeal on Mo

Some supplies have c
carry us through the n
In Thorshavn some
given on public works, a
the islands land-owning
more food, some milk
dried mutton. But in p
lages there is much und
There is an old saying,
fishing-lines are dry,
Yesterday four 'six-ma
rowed by six men) were
small fish were the only
hard day's work of tw
Many people have only
coarse rye-meal, weak

Digitized by Google

dried codlings. I can tell other has been giving part of allowance to children or husere is a certain over-bright alted expression, a strained, of the skin over the nose and mouth.

-do friend in Glasgow offered wrote asking for a little fine l and patent health-foods hers of new-born babies and ildren. She wisely sent my o London, with her applica- permit. It showed that I for those in real need.

aroe cutters have been sunk roe Banks. The men could that Germany would harm hermen of a neutral land, on ls where their forbears had a thousand years. This is a . The cutters soon would to the Iceland summer fish- that the people rely for help e winter.

June 20, 1917.

cold, dark spring and early e have had a week of real such as we seldom see, and asked in it and become dry and sunburned, and the days all too long and too light for gth. It is the time of peat- a friend, Olivina, and I have ate picnic on a promontory wns a peat-field. She was to ats, and I to sketch and col- So it was supposed, but the had saved up flour from our l in all secrecy we took the with us and made pancakes ghts, and the full quota of ot done that day. After the — on a day so rare — it visable to let work go, and e top of the headland. There, dred feet above the sea, we oss perhaps twenty miles of g sea-levels, — blue and pink and pearl, — and there was no land between us and the North Pole. Puffins darted to and fro like little shuttles below us. Gulls circled with no perceptible motion of their wings. A long, lean freighter passed, probably bound for Archangel. Then, from the east, came two pretty sister ships, shining in new white paint. They kept close together, and seemed like two little children abroad on some brave adventure. Once they checked, almost stopped, and Olivina clutched my arm. 'Undervands baaden!' she quavered. But no, it was no submarine that had stopped them, only the fierce race, or current, sweeping eastward, and strongest at this phase of the moon.

12 *July*, 1917.

Yesterday I was startled by the sight of seven large trawlers, all armed, swinging in from the open sea. Eide is a lonely place. I had not seen a trawler, except far away, for more than two years. Amalya was calling to me to hurry — that probably torpedoed crews were being brought to land. I found that only a slight accident to machinery had brought them in. But I could help about sending a telephone message, and soon a burly skipper and I were having a chat while awaiting an answer. He looked at me in amazement when he heard I was an American and had been in Eide almost three years. 'Good Lord!' he exclaimed, smiting his thigh in emphasis. 'How have you held out in this hole?'

I replied, with spirit, that it was n't a hole: there were many beautiful places near; I liked the people and was glad to be here. But later, looking about me, I admitted that Eide in the fog was not looking its best that day, all dank and dripping, and the cods' heads and refuse too much in evidence.

Later, I met the young lieutenant in charge of the defenses. So trim and fit and lean he was, with clear, steady

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

eyes. It was a credit to his discernment that he understood that this shabby old party who appeared out of the fog had a message that he must hear. To trawler captains I could not give it. No censor would pass it in the post. I looked into the eyes of that young man, and constrained him to listen; and as, for the time being, I had much dynamic force in me, he did listen, bless him, murmuring at intervals, 'That is interesting'; 'I did n't know that'; 'I'll remember that'; 'I'll do my best.'

And then they sailed away, and I wandered about in much distress of mind. I was in the grip of nostalgia. The refined, clean-cut speech of the young officer, the first I had heard since April, 1914, brought to mind all I had lost, was losing, in this exile. Out in the world the current of life was sweeping onward, full and strong, and I — what was I doing in this backwater, this futile eddy?

Then the fog lifted from the fjelds. Between two peaks the moon was rising. No stars are seen on a Faroe summer night. The pale moon casts no shadows. But a silvery radiance mingles with the daylight and the last glow of the sunset colors. Nothing is hidden, nothing obscured. The faint far fjelds show lovely tones of blue and violet. I could see the shining of the little streams as they slipped over the basalt ledges, the vivid green of their mosses, and the rich purples and reds reflected from the cliffs in the sea below.

It was so still that not the least line of white showed along the coast; but, as I looked, the whole surface of the sea rose, swelled upward and forward, and with a muffled roar, a great white surge flung itself along the cliffs' base and over the dark reefs. It swept backward, and all again was still.

So beautiful it was, Helen, so peaceful, that my own troubles seemed of little moment, the way be follow.

Four out of five salt Mediterranean, which to come to the Faroes ger zone,' have been cruisers to turn back int tion at Kirkwall, and a they were torpedoed. S men are lost to Englan the salt would have c hardship is brought on with no salt to cure the no fishing. The Germ pleased to have their for them. . . . (The C this last paragraph. would, but I could n't

On Sudero is the last ships sail for lands There bands of British ward bound from Icela and signal to the port o come in to sleep.' Cl ships lie, a little flock tures, and for seven h on board. Then out th them till they reach a Much suffering and ships have been spare this little neutral grou waters where ships can torpedoed crews and w help and nursing. Mo for these things, but t ernment might let us troleum, and allow a s from America to be ex fax instead of at Kirkw zone.

We think with drea darkness. No petrole course no gas or electr no candles, and only a peat. America, as well fuses us petroleum. have Mr. Hoover here night, in one of our wo

Digitized by Google

odor has been added to Eide's general fishiness. House-fathers and mothers are trying out highly unpleasant fish-livers. Small boys are fishing for codlings. The old folks are praying that the Lord will send a flock of driving whales, to give food and light for the coming winter. And the smiths have gathered in all the old cans and every scrap of tin and brass, and are experimenting on little fish-oil lamps. They require a reservoir above the burner, a pressure to force the oil up to the wick.

The truth is, petroleum, postal rights, and other desiderata, are denied us because the British Government is afraid that the Faroes will be used as a supply station for German submarines.

It is surprising what can be done in contriving ways and means. The soles of my felt shoes are quite worn out, and I have re-covered them with a piece of a neighboring fisherman's discarded trousers, giving in return a little flour. Anna has made a fine pair of shoes for her little girl from a fifteen-year-old felt hat. I bartered three envelopes the other day for a lamp-chimney with a broken top, a handkerchief for a small cod, and I have known a large spoonful of soft soap to be 'swapped' for three hairpins.

20 *October*, 1917.

We have a new baby, a frail little creature, unfit to bear the coming winter. She is not six weeks old, an age when the normal child is a little pig, with unawakened intelligence. This dear baby looks from one to another with bright, questioning eyes, earnestly, sadly, and yet with a sweet composure that seems strange in such a helpless mite. We laugh at her, and tell her that she need n't put on such dignified airs, that we *mean* well, even if our manners are not as fine as hers. I suppose she seems older because there is no baby fat to hide the pure oval of her face and the fine lines of neck and shoulders.

We have had heavy rains and a low temperature since the middle of July. Even now, between snow-squalls, haymaking is going on. Many are bearing home the half-dry hay, to spread it out in their little cellars. Wretched food it will be for the poor cows; but there is nothing else to give them.

30 *January*, 1918.

Eide had a 'dry Christmas' (no spirits for sale), and so, for many women and children, a happier Christmas than usual. We made a quite charming little tree from a piece of spar, with sticks inserted here and there for branches, and covered with heather and crowberry. Amalya fished out some decorations from her childhood days; there were some little toys sent in August from a Scottish friend. I made cornucopias with the colored illustrations of a Liberty rug-and-carpet catalogue (and very pretty they were), and from beeswax cast ashore from a torpedoed vessel we had little brown candles, which spluttered briskly as they burned, from the sea-salt in them. We had long been saving from our flour- and sugar-rations, and by an elaborate system of barter and by mutual gifts in the Kruse clan, we managed to have some good Christmas food, and sugar-candies and gingernuts for the tree. It was really something like a Danish Christmas, with the singing of the Christmas songs, 'Still Night, Holy Night,' and 'A Child is born in Bethlehem.'

We are having a terrible winter. Such cold has never before been recorded in the Faroes. This long siege began on December first. I was at the window after dinner, wondering at the strange ashy-red color on the fjelds, when, with a noise like thunder on Kvisten's roof, all was blotted out, as if a gray blanket had been thrown across the window. The gale raged with hurricane force until the next morning.

Digitized by Google

Seven were killed (two on this island) and many injured.

Then followed week after week of gales from the North. No fjelds, no sea, no sky, all milled up in a whirling fog of hard-cutting snow. The light in Kvisten was dim and gray, so thick was the ice on the window. I shared my wardrobe with my potatoes, yet they were frozen. The water-supply gave out long ago. There is too little peat to melt much snow. The only water we have must be brought some distance, from a brackish pool near the sea. The salt water makes a sticky glaze on the skin without cleaning it. There is practically no soap in the village, no soda or other cleansing stuffs. The fish-oil lamps diffuse a universal oiliness. But there is one advantage in the common plight: no one can look with disdain on his fellow man and say, '*I* am clean.'

The pride of the family, Melrose by name, a large, half-Cheviot ram, blew away in that opening gale. His carcass was fished up three days later from the sea. This is not a time for undue fastidiousness, and Amalya has salted most of the meat, and the rest we ate with a properly thankful spirit. Only I wished that Amalya would speak of the dear departed as *mutton*, instead of saying, 'Nella' (our boy's name for me), 'will you have another piece of *Melrose?*'

The baby, Elizabeth, fails from day to day. The doctor went to Denmark last year, and no one will come to take his place while the war lasts. But no doctor could help her. She needs warmth and sunshine, and Amalya should have a generous and varied diet.

The people miss the little visits of happier days between the cottages, the gossip over a cup of tea and coffee, and perhaps little cakes brought out to honor a guest. Now the food-rations do not admit of hospitality. I admire the kindly fibbing that goes on when a neighbor comes on some necessary errand. 'Now don't
I've just had brea
eat a bite more.' O
fully, 'Has the Fró
Amerika ship — wi
ing an American, I
knowledge. But n
heard.

The baby, Elizab
Day. The world is
for little babies. O
for her; and knowi
are ordered from
Amalya to write fo
just like Elizabeth
once.

The American sc
Thorshavn, *nine*
She must have fear
be another Flying
after month of con
her at last, so she d
ger zone and had
haven for repairs.
damaged, but the c
news passed swiftly
happy voices from
saw tears of joy o
face, and heard a q
ing the gay 'Coffe
ballad that the sing
than a half century

And now our only
tion with the outer
hooker, which bring
stricted wares from
takes back salt fis
To name it is forb
call it 'The Lucky
ask when it will c
more than two ye
skipper, now aged
gone back and fort
zone, having advent
told. There is one
board, but all the
range from fifty-fiv

Digitized by Google

15 *December*, 1918.

t when the few-worded
of the signing of the Ar-
urse, in a little neutral
ld be no official celebra-
gathered quickly when
l bulletin was put up,
d me, 'Can it be true?'
'God give it be truth!'
l their eyes. And I said
(God be praised), and
re I could see from afar
hore, where now I need
ok, fearing what I might
the seas are to be clean
nd then I went back to
id my housework, and

15 *January*, 1919.

, for the first time since
al steamer entered Eide
y black old hooker, to be
the 'Lucky Ship.' And
ts name, the Cromwell,
old skipper's name is
of Aberdeen, and the
the Iceland Shipping
land. I wanted to go on
are quarantined against
luenza and no one is al-
Only by going to wind-
of salt be delivered to
boats, and oils and fish
he steamer.

HORSHAVN, 2 *August*, 1919.

up of my life in Kvis-
l time. I was really ill
eumonia' cold. Storms
swept the village-front,
nching of a boat impos-

sible. Could I get to Thorshavn in time to go on the Chaldur? Would she go to Scotland on her way to Denmark? Was my promised passage assured, when scores of passengers on the spot were clamoring to go? I dared not let myself think of the parting from those who had become so dear to me. Silence seemed the only way of getting through with it. Once I said shakily, 'Amalya, you know what is in my heart?'—'Yes, Nella, I know.' Then, just in time, the storm subsided.

Our boy at the last would not say good-bye. 'Nella was bad. Nella should not go to England. Nella should stay in Kvisten always.'

It was a small party that set forth in the tiny fishing motor-boat. Our housefather at the helm, a brother-in-law at the engine, two neighbors as assistants, Fru Kruse and I the passengers. The box-like pit where whelks for bait are kept had been cleaned out, and Fru Kruse and I sat down there, with our heads peering out above the rim. A piece of canvas stretched overhead kept out the rain. And so we chug-chugged southward, hour after hour, in the gently falling rain, toward Thorshavn, where I was to see a pony and a tree for the first time in five years. Part of the time we were between the islands, then on the open sea, past treacherous reefs and sucking whirlpools off the Stromö coast, where many a boat has 'gone away.' Then, as we rounded a point of land, we saw on the far southern horizon a faint smudge of smoke. That was our Chaldur, and she will take me south to Scotland.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

ON BEING A SPORT

BY KATHARINE FULLERTON GEROULD

I

'BETWEEN the bridge and the river there is time for an act of perfect contrition,' my pious French playmates used to tell me. I knew very little about 'acts' in the ecclesiastical sense, and the phrase puzzled me; but it stuck. It stuck like that other formula we were all brought up on, about remembering the whole of your past life as you rise for the third time before definitely drowning. I cannot, of course, verify the first, and verifications of the second are chancy. But there is no doubt that a deal of subconscious philosophy can be formulated in a few seconds, if the seconds are sufficiently uncomfortable. There is something about a brief sharp instant of fear, especially when there are no steps that can be taken, that makes one know a lot of things. The shock pieces together your hitherto random inferences, and you behold, with apocalyptic suddenness, a mental pattern. For example: —

The other evening I attended a carnival. The phrase, I know, is absurd; but in our village the only thing you can do with a carnival is to attend it — precisely as if it were a Chautauqua. We are not very riotous, and our vacant lots are very small. 'Carnival' is rather the name of our intention than of our achievement. The American Legion chose to call it a carnival, — having got used, in France, to a grand scale of doing things, — and we rather liked the term ourselves. We are too small for circuses, or band-concerts, or the legitimate drama. Rummage sales for charity are about our size. So when we take over an empty lot and officially place a carnival upon it, — as if we were Paris or New Orleans or Honolulu, — we grow a little excited, especially if there are children in the family, whose natural bedtime is eight o'clock (daylight-saving).

We set out: two parents, a son, and a godfather. Of course, it was only the vacant lot opposite the old athletic field, but who knew what the Legion might have done to it? Both the male parent and the godfather belong to the Legion, but they had no idea. Son knew that there was a merry-go-round and a Ferris wheel. The grown gentlemen of the party were rather cynical: they were going, 'to take the boy.' But I have found that the greatest moral advantage of living in a small academic town is to give one back some of the illusions of youth. You break your neck getting to see things that you would not turn your head for in New York or (I suppose, since the new census, one must say) Detroit.

The most exciting moment of the great war was not August, 1914, or April, 1917, or November, 1918. It was about 10.30 P.M. of that hot Sunday in July, 1918, when the Crown Prince, with all his staff and three hundred thousand German soldiers, had surrendered to the Allies. They had not surrendered in Europe, unfortunately, — only in Princeton, — but I assure you

Digitized by Google

with buckets of gasoline for the defrauded engine. The crowd grew: half of Naples and two thirds of the black belt, with an aggressive sprinkling from Jewry, surged waist-high about the demobilized guardians of the gate. But finally the lath-like mechanism was pronounced in order, and boy and godfather climbed into the last empty car. We stood and watched their revolutions, eyes fixed, it seemed, on the zenith, while Naples prodded and Lithuania kicked our ankles. Atlantic City would not have known there was a wheel there; but to me it took on the matured shape of Adventure. My husband was as gallant as on the verge of Molokai or Halemaumau; he did not prophesy, he did not warn, he did not frown. 'All right, if you want to' — and as son and godfather got off, we leaped into the empty car.

And this is what I was coming to, in all these weary paragraphs: my bit of bridge-and-river, third-time-rising-and-sinking philosophy. We rose, we attained the height, we swung on in the downward loop — once and once only. I do not know how many revolutions they give you for your money; but I knew that one was all I could bear. I said, 'Do you think they would stop and let us off?' — and left the rest to G. I knew that he would get me off if possible, and that he would not say, 'I told you so.' These are good things to be able to count on. After one unnatural glimpse of the dim New Jersey plain beneath us, I had shut my eyes — I who like heights. I was not sick, I was not giddy, I was physically quite comfortable; but I found myself hesitant to intrude upon the stars at their own front doors. I like to lie on a rock ten thousand feet in air and feel that, if I blew hard, I could blow a planet clean out of place, or disarrange Orion's belt. I am always hoping to double the ten thousand; then, for one instant, I shall

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

have the illusion of a supreme decision: whether or not to lift my hand and grope for the lost Pleiad. It is not the nearness of the stars I mind; simply, I like a back to my chair when I greet them. I would rather pull them down than have them pull me up. I wanted to get off the Ferris wheel — and did.

What I had possessed for fifteen cents was one priceless moment of fear. It is not often, in one's padded life, that one is stark afraid, primitively, for one's own skin. Under the revealing shock of it, I did a lot of emotional algebra, finding with astonishing speed what x equals. The equation slid through its paces to the solution. In the mere instant of eye-closing I compared myself, on my modest wheel, with those who brave the ether. Yes: but they are fastened in; if I were fastened in, I should not mind; in fact, what I mind most is this fearful detachment from anything like solidity. Think how many people go round on far bigger wheels than this. Yes, but the heart knoweth its own wheel. Besides, the bones of the baby are flimsier than those of the grown-up. This thing is made of string and *papier-mâché*, and even at Coney Island they have horrid accidents. All these contraptions are unsafe. We know it when we are on the ground, and are very wise over the accidents, in headlines, once a season. But see the children swarming; and did n't your own boy actually squirm about to look behind him, in mid-air? Ah, children are fearless through ignorance. But grown-ups like it, too: remember that at all pleasure-resorts you find the most uncomfortable and dangerous devices the most popular. They like to walk through rolling barrels, they like to shiver along the heights of the roller-coaster, they like to stand on the slippery whirling cone and be flung off irresistibly into a padded precinct. They like looping the loops, and bumping the bumps. *They like it.*

II

Ah, my dear defe
— Spirit of the Whe
you touch one of the
vital facts of human
us it is natural to
a dash of danger is
out of an act, an adv
yourself for that da
way, to meet it whe
right spirit, is to be a
a good sport, it is n
face the danger brav
you must, to some
Yet, to welcome da
for it — is not that
or foolhardy?

There are distinct
spoke the Interlocut
ter of the *quid pro*
nothing, in this worl
for something else
new sensation. Is th
it? Is the new sensa
must decide.

But that is not
protested. A sport

Exactly, replied
Wheel. And a good
a good appraiser of
ty times out of a hun
a good guess at whe
venture is going to
Otherwise men write
hesitant, a coward; if
idiot.

Is it worth my whi
my eyes, to be afraid
tions more, to repea
tion I have just been
top of our career —
Am I failing to be a
few seconds more, t
off? This has becon
matter, good Wheel.

Of course it is a
Spirit of the Wheel
anything that is n't.

Digitized by Google

wheels of my sort are so
se who make them count
not in vain, on the des-
, in drab lives, for adven-
lives must take adventure
an find it. A new sensation
and any man is lifted from
is gloriously individual,
periencing a new sensation.
a peak in Darien. If there
lded, he is not only a dis-
, for his instant, a hero.
folk who make these things
to increase the danger are
actors — are really acting
e, if you incur no risk at all,
chance of being a sport. I
terested to know what you
ing is so comforting to the
memory of past perils well
ed through. Does a man
narrating a hair's-breadth
u talk about being tied in.
ere tied in, you would not
Where would be the glory?
y the way, if you want to
ay so. Your car will pres-
the bottom. Then we are
Ve shall go faster next time.
one instant left, under the
is my fear, to decide. As
before, I decided to alight.
that I was deciding much
that, and that I had been
he wavering line which di-
sports from bad. 'Only let
his thing,' I said to myself,
ise to be a normal creature
o smile and split hairs with
me ground under my feet,
er my personality. Since it
sary that I should be again
sly lifted up, I cannot bear
re inevitable — but that is
her problem, and I refuse
it.' So I got off, careless of
s between myself and the
es who rushed to fill our

In mid-flight, I had come near to solving my own problem: x is what you get in payment for the discomfort you endure, the risk you run, the fear you feel. You must always determine x. Algebra is the most human of abstract sciences, since life is perpetually put to you in the form of a quadratic equation. The adventurer must be, above all, a half-way decent mathematician. He cannot afford to make mistakes as to the value of x. The whole point, I had said to myself, — or the Spirit of the Wheel had said to me, — is whether it is worth it. I shall hate going round and round, faster and faster; I shall be afraid, and 'fear is more pain than is the pain it fears.' What shall I get out of it that will preponderate over that terror? Indeed, will not my fear inhibit any æsthetic sense that might operate? The part of straight common sense is to end this adventure here and now. On this I acted. But not without knowledge that some temperaments would have seen it through none the less, equation or no equation. Were those the real sports, and I no sport at all? Perhaps. And yet — there was nothing at stake: neither pleasure, nor knowledge, nor reputation. I should hate it; it would teach me nothing; no one had dared or challenged me to the act. Common sense certainly told me to do as I did, as much as to come in out of the rain if I had no umbrella and no business out of doors.

But is there not something beyond common sense, very necessary to the world? something that is indifferent to the value of x, and says, 'I don't care to solve it beforehand, thank you'? Common sense has a deal of caution in it; and do we not, somewhere in the world, need rashness? If your adventures are to be many, or successful, you must bring your algebra into play. We still pity the person who did not at first glimpse see, from the mere look of the

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

problem on the page, that x was going to be a negligible amount. Yet what should we do without the people who disdain algebra — who try the strange new thing for the mere sake of trying it, a little careless of what it is going to bring them? What should we do without the people who love danger for itself — not as seasoning, but for the whole dish? Generally speaking, those people are used up early; and we are rather apt to deem them fools. I am not sure that the sum of them is not folly; that they are not, so to speak, all salt. A pity to be all salt; yet how could we get on without salt itself?

To be a good sport, — I think the Spirit of the Wheel was right, — one needs to calculate, and pay cheerfully, to the last exhausted nerve, if x looks good. I still do not feel sure that I was a bad sport, since there was nothing at stake. I sampled a thing which was to bring me at best nothing but pleasure. There was no pleasure in it — x was obviously zero — and I threw it away early.

My own conduct does not matter, except to me. I knew that in mid-air. What struck me, even as I trembled aloft, was that this is a vital question to us all. For deciding this question, the instinct of the race is the best test, I fancy. When does the mass feel a quick sympathy, and when does it shrug its shoulders? I leave out all rash acts of an altruistic nature; for when a thing is done for another's sake, no matter how mad the act, x looms large. Do we, or do we not, admire, instinctively, the Human Fly? Have we, that is, a moral sympathy with him? Skill, again, is another matter: it is not the man who crosses Niagara on a tight rope that is the test case; it is the man who shoots Niagara in a barrel. Skill, however employed, arouses an admiration purely intellectual. Thus or thus a man has trained his eyes or his toes or his muscles, and either he is we
ed to overcome difficul
But there is little roon
for skill.

Most of us, I think,
him, though many of u
see. We cannot believ
enough to justify him. I
we do all on such an o
our algebra and roughly
tion. But 'the dream is
and here is the rub.

True it is, as the Spi
remarked, that one mu
that little sum. But no
solve it for another. H
an imponderable, a ga
can estimate or realize

'We were dreamers,
ly in the man-stifled t
dream.

'In the faith of litt
lay down and died.' E
dream. For the chance
the chance of beauty, fo
fame, or the chance of
will risk his comfort and
the chance is clear enou
even if they do not em
understand. It is when
for success to bring him
away. We have come t
tirely that no man thro
except in the hope of p
thing he values more, t
think, little natural sym
man who throws his lif
mere sake of throwing
the time, in such a case
something that no one
value of x is his secret.
surely, the sole act is its
there we stop. We neve
ing that man a 'sport.'
fool. Yet the man in th
not like to live his life th
the spectacle of that fol

Life has, for the goo
become, in public opini

Digitized by Google

thing to have and a seemly thing to keep. Otherwise life is not worth the complex cost of reproduction. Fundamentally speaking, we fear death. It is the negation of everything we spend our breath and strength upon, the *reductio ad absurdum* of all our activity, the very contrary of all our attempts. Religion and philosophy have decked it out and given it an honorable place in the scheme of things. But the race saves its life if, according to its own code of decency, it can. Dying is something the race prefers not to do. 'I would rather die than' is, in the common speech of the world, the *ne plus ultra* of aversion. All this is instinctive. When we develop inhibitions and complexities, there are many things in life to which death would be preferable. But if you listen only to the deepest voice within you, you fear death as spontaneously as you blink your eye to avoid the mote that seeks it. The man who throws his life away for nothing is a fool; but — let us be absolutely honest: he is in some sort a pleasant incident. He has expressed an extraordinary and tonic scorn.

All subject peoples have been gladdened by the fool who defied the tyrant. To anyone who tells us that death is cheaper than life, we listen incredulously, but with joy. The person who has demonstrated that doing something totally unimportant is more fun than keeping alive makes the man in the street draw, for an instant, a freer breath. It makes him feel that death is only Mumbo-Jumbo, after all. To be sure, the man in the street will always say that the person who has done this for him is insane. But at the back of beyond — in his secret, savage heart — he will have liked it. He will not admit that he has liked it; for after that one blink, he becomes a citizen again. We judge so quickly, trained by the ages, that the sudden pleasure is gone almost before we have enjoyed it. But the fact remains that, for a half-instant, the sensation has been pleasurable.

We like death to be insulted, though we have been taught to be very polite to him. Our rules and codes must of necessity be made up more out of our knowledge than out of our instincts. Yet into most of our conventions, including that of 'being a sport,' instinct must to some extent enter. Finding out x is education; to feel delightfulness in danger is instinct. Primitive man knows that Nature is a brute. He will propitiate her, — he must, — but if he can make an impudent gesture at her behind her back, he will surely do it. If he can defy the elements, he will defy them. If he can contrive a mechanism that flouts the law of gravity, he will patronize that mechanism in thousands. Romance — his only ally against Nature — will steady his soul while he does it. In most cases, x is what you win from Nature when you have bluffed successfully. To be a sport in the finest sense, perhaps you must have the poker face.

Man's implacable resentment against the conditions of life lies at the heart of all this business. We become rational by canny observation of the bonds that restrain us. To be irrational is to pretend to ignore them. Real freedom does not lie that way, because our limitations bring us up very short. Real freedom is free will operating in a deterministic universe. Our philosophy professors used to explain it to us in college. Within the prison walls it is better to confine one's self to the hundred-yard dash. Surely you are happiest when you curb your desires within the bounds of possibility. No man but a fool enters for a Marathon race when the barbed wire is going to stop him so soon. But when we see him start as for his Marathon, we forget the barbed wire for an instant — until he crashes into it, that

Digitized by Google

is, and we can all ask, why attempt the obviously impossible? Why defy common sense? Why pretend to forget the barbed wire? Yet Coney Island will teach you, any day, how deep in human nature lies the ache to be the master, not the servant, of natural laws — yes, from Icarus down to the man who, since I began this page, shattered himself to pieces in the Niagara rapids.

Being a sport is, I suppose, going as far as there is any reasonable chance of your being allowed to go. That reasonable chance is sometimes a very difficult quantity to determine. But if the chance were not sometimes less than reasonable, there would be no thrill in being a sport. It is the dare-devil almost touching him — just over the line — that makes the good sport an exciting person. The good sport must calculate x — I think the Wh if x were not some or *nil*, we should n and good sports wou hint of the madma thralls us. It is not to face the inevitabl there must be the c finger toward the ris must be a good gues absolutely infallible, having looked up the A grade of a hundr suspicious.

I do not know wh bridge and the rive time for an act of per I do know that befo can come full circle lot of algebra. The witness.

THE JURY

BY EMMA LAWRENCE

'So what did you do about the woman?' Mrs. Alison asked.

And Tina Metcalfe answered: 'I kept her. I had a talk with the other servants first, and they were quite willing to give her another chance. I must say, they've been nice about it, never throwing her trouble up to her but just trying to help —'

'I wonder if people in our class could be so decent to each other,' Mildred Peryn broke in. 'I've never known whether we were more hard-hearted or whether we feel responsible for the moral code and don't dare make exceptions.'

Esther Davis lean hostess and whisper won't you tell them summer at Sevenoak

Mrs. Metcalfe ligh match illuminating countenance; but sh I will tell about it. S pened which makes you about Violet Os

'Violet Osborne!' women in the room erect.

They were dining six women, — as the three times a year si

Digitized by Google

ried and settled in the same city. It happened that they were all intimate friends, and, when their husbands left them for club dinners at their old university, the women put on tea-gowns and sallied forth for a genial evening. To-night, Tina Metcalfe had given them a delicious dinner, and they had made themselves comfortable in her beautiful great library, a bridge table waiting for some enthusiasts in the corner, with fresh packs and shaded light in readiness.

But apparently the hostess had some story worth waiting for. They were all women in early middle life, though one would not have thought of them in connection with any definite number of years, so alert, so *soignées*, so powerful they seemed in their splendid confidence — not, to be sure, the joyous confidence of youth, strong because it is untested, but the solid self-assurance of satisfactory accomplishment.

Mrs. Metcalfe threw away her cigarette and clasped her lovely, slender hands about her knee, leaning forward that she might look into the fire and avoid the curious faces of her guests.

'I'll have to go way back,' she said, 'to the fall directly after it happened. I had taken out my Christmas list and was going over it. You know the way it's arranged — Jim's family, my family, children, personal friends, and so forth — and the very first name under "friends" was Violet Osborne. I've often wondered what it was about her that made hers the first name on any list; but I am sure, with all of us, the first person we thought of for a big dinner or a tête-à-tête lunch or a Christmas present was Violet.

'Well, anyway, I was checking the list, and almost involuntarily I started to cross off her name. Then it occurred to me what a ghastly thing it was to do — as if she were dead; and she was not dead, and her name where it was showed what she had meant to me. It started me thinking about it for the first time all alone like that. Of course, I 'd talked it over and talked it over with all of you and with Jim, and we'd always come back to the same point — if only there'd been some excuse! If only Harry Osborne had been a brute, cruel or unfaithful to her, or even awfully unattractive or horribly poor — anything would have done, so that we could honestly have said, "Poor Violet!" But there was n't any. She was young, she was beautiful, she was adored; furthermore, Harry Osborne was rich and worshiped her.

'Then suddenly I realized that all that was the very excuse for Violet. If Harry has been a beast, it would have been her job to stick it out for his sake and the children's — after all, if she had been unhappy, she would have renounced very little. But this — this giving up of everything that she valued so tremendously, must be something more than mere passion. We speak of dying for a person we love — it's practically what Violet did for Cyril when she went away with him, not away from a brutal husband and sordid home, but away from the most congenial atmosphere that ever surrounded a gay and fascinating woman. As for leaving Harry and the children, it was of course horrible, but she left them to the pity and affection of countless friends and each other — for herself, outer darkness and Cyril Stanton.

'I hope you understand what I'm trying to say. At the time the lack of any circumstances which would have made the world more charitable toward what Violet had done suddenly glorified her act to me, and she stood out in my mind, superhuman, capable of so much more than we who judge. It seems rather an anticlimax to add that I did n't scratch her name off the list. Instead, I sent her a little lacquer match-

Digitized by Google

box, and months later I had a funny little scrawl from her, from somewhere in Spain. Apparently it had pleased her.'

No one spoke for the few moments Mrs. Metcalfe remained silent. Each of the women conjured visions of themselves busily erasing the name of Violet Osborne off their various lists, and each of them realized why Tina Metcalfe meant more to them than any of the others. Her low, pleasant voice continued: —

'The second part of my story takes us to when we were caught in Europe after the war broke out. We were lucky in getting to England, where Jim found he could be of service to our Embassy, so we stayed on. Thanks to a succession of foreign governesses in my faraway childhood and a natural linguistic ability, I was able to be of some use, too; but the excitement and one harrowing story after another rather did me up, and Jim insisted I take a week off or else give up entirely. We compromised on my going to Sevenoaks for a weekend. I had spent a summer there once, when I was a little girl and my family were on the continent. I remembered the Crown Hotel, and that there was a lovely garden behind it, and Knoll House with a great park full of browsing deer. I thought it would be rather fun to renew associations after so many years — at least it would be restful, after London and my work there.

'Jim motored me down from town on Saturday afternoon; but as he had to hurry back to the Embassy, he left me feeling frightfully lonely and depressed, and I felt for a few moments that Jim was right, and that I was indeed "all in." That made me want to cry; but after a bit I got hold of myself, and I asked one of the waiters if I could n't have a sort of tea-supper in the garden, as I did n't feel fit enough to stay up for the late dinner.

'He was most sympathetic and arranged everything beautifully, and I was beginning to feel much less forlorn, when I suddenly looked up. There, silhouetted against the dark square of the open door, stood Violet Osborne. She did n't see me. I had a succession of the queerest feelings sitting there looking up at her. The first was curiosity, pure and simple — what did she look like? But the answer was obvious — lovelier than ever; and then a funny feeling, almost anger, came over me. I thought of myself and all of you, and how we, who had honored our marriage-vows and the many responsibilities of our complicated lives, had grown into middle-age, careful of our figures and skin and hair, while Violet, who had shirked everything, remained the embodiment of Youth. She was leaning against the casement of the door, talking to someone in the room inside; and when she smiled and her face lit up in that glorious way it used to, something in me melted, and I wanted nothing so much as one of those smiles for myself.

'But I was shy about approaching, — shy as if I had been the social outcast, — and something warned me, as I looked at her, that, unless I could make the spirit in which I went to her intelligible to her, she would have none of me. One hint of patronage, of curiosity, and she would be up in arms. So I waited, and finally it seemed that her companion was no longer in the room, for she talked no more. Soon she stepped out on to the path and came slowly toward me. My heart contracted with each step, but she never looked my way and soon she was next my little table. So then I said the most inane thing that ever came into a human head; but I was delighted to hear my voice sound quite natural. "I double two no trumps," I said.

'Of course she turned, and in a minute we were in each other's arms, laugh-

Digitized by Google

ing, crying, talking in a ridiculous, hysterical way.

'Finally, she gasped, "You darling, you always did double me."

'And I said, "But you did play such rotten bridge, Vi. It must have been very expensive for you."

She nodded solemnly and adorably. "It was, frightfully," she said, "but you would all play, and I had to be with you all."

'This from the woman who had left us all, you understand, fully realizing what it would mean. She sat with me a while, and I explained why I was at Sevenoaks, and about my tea-supper; and she told me that she had taken a small house near-by, and that, owing to some hitch in her household, they were short of Sunday provisions and she had driven in to town, preferring to wait at the Crown while the stable boy collected packages.

'"I try to get away for a little, every day," she said. And then she told me how very ill Cyril had become. That was the first time she had mentioned him and her face seemed transfigured. "Tina," she said, "he suffers most awfully, and yet he never complains. I feel it must be a relief to him to have me away, so he can give in for a little while."

'It was time then for her to go back; and as she stood up, I marveled, but quite without anger, at her beauty and virility. I asked if I might see her and Cyril, and it was settled I should lunch with them the following day.'

Mrs. Metcalfe paused again. She was trying to create an effect upon her hearers, and she doubted if she was succeeding. Also, from now on, her story was more difficult and less dramatic. She relinquished her position before the fire and leaned back in her chair, smoking again, and giving an occasional spasmodic kick with her crossed foot, which betrayed her nervousness. She would have given much for some sign of sympathy or appreciation from some one of her audience; but except for Esther Davis, she had no idea how her story was being received. They were interested, she knew, and she had no fear that they would criticize her own actions; but whether or not she was arousing their old affection for Violet Osborne she could not tell.

'I drove out to their place on Sunday,' she continued. 'It was very much what you'd expect: shabby, picturesque, and inconvenient, with Violet's taste everywhere, — in the chintz, the ornaments, the flowers, — but nothing in the least luxurious. Violet herself was in wonderful spirits, and she amused Cyril and myself all through lunch, so that our laughter removed any possible embarrassment. After lunch she sent him to lie down on a long chair in the sun, and she and I started out for a walk. And at once her gayety fell away from her, leaving something terribly tragic and earnest beneath. She asked me how Cyril seemed to me.

'"He's thin," I said, "but otherwise in excellent form. Surely you're not seriously worried, Vi."

'"The doctors think he may live a year," she said, quite simply and with so little emotion in her voice that it sounded flat and harsh. I started to speak but she interrupted me. "Don't please talk about it, Tina, darling — except for this one thing that I've got to say. I want you to know always that in what I did the question of right or wrong does n't enter — it was the only thing possible. I'm sorry about hurting Harry and the children; but I have n't had time to be sorry very much. I'll have all the rest of my life for that; but while I've got Cyril, I'm glad every minute, and I can't wish anything different that might affect the wonder of the present. And I want you to know that I'd rather have had these few

Digitized by Google

crimson months than all the long, gray years that make up some lives which people call respectable and successful. And yet I'm not even so awfully sorry it's going to end like this," she said very gently; "when a man's old he wants his friends and his children and his clubs and all his comforts, and Cyril would n't have any of those, poor darling; but when he goes away, he'll still be quite young, and he'll never have wanted anything very much — but me."

'We were very silent until just before I left, when she asked me about the children — hardly trusting herself for the first question, and then her eagerness was tragic: how often did I see them? how did they look? what did they wear? — her hungry eyes straining to see the visions my answers conjured for her. But when Cyril appeared to bid me good-bye, she was quite serene; not gay, as at lunch, but deeply content to be in his dear presence once more. I think she was almost glad when I left them alone, though then, of course, she could not guess how short their time together was to be.'

Again the speaker paused. Everyone in the room knew the immediate sequel to the story: the Metcalfes had come home very unexpectedly, and a few weeks later Cyril Stanton had died. One of the women, the soft-hearted Esther Davis, wept a little; but from the others there was no sound; no one commented on the story, no one seemed inclined to gossip over its details. Mrs. Metcalfe spoke again, but this time not in the low, sympathetic voice used formerly; she had sudde very tired and old and depress her voice sounded harsh and qu

'Needless to say, I have not t all this to-night without a purpos Stanton died a year ago, an then Violet has been nursing in Serbia. Now, it seems, she' well done up and Harry Osborn to take her back.'

Five women stiffened. This w even to Esther Davis.

'As you know, he never divor Cyril Stanton was a Catholic, never could have married him a and, in spite of everything, Ha always been in love with her willing to come back on one co — if *you* want her. She does n you to accept her out of charity she confesses no sin, is unrepen her act, but she realizes that women can more or less reinst It sounds a worldly, snobbish t say, but it's true — if we take h she's back more or less wh started from; though, mind y could n't do it without Harry a than Harry could do it without u without us she won't come, kno she does that it's social damna her girls.'

Mrs. Metcalfe stood up and across the room — at the d paused.

'Your answer must be unan she said, 'and I must cable her y cision at once.'

Digitized by Google

AFRICAN FOLK

A FURTHER CONSIDERATION

BY HANS COUDENHOVE

I

aid about the negro that, l Indian, he is apt rapidly a kindness and an injury. er, I have my doubts. I ases when natives nursed ent for many years, ap- oblivious of the injury in- en, when the opportunity bility of impunity offered truck with a vengeance. e reproach of habitual in- nust be said that natives look on treatment expe- Europeans as the latter , and often take as their ndescension on their own e latter fondly imagine to ct of kindness, condescen- osity. It has repeatedly e interior, to me as well as t natives, after they had ully treated for some ill, med their reward.

rcumstance that helps to egro's indifference regard- eceived is that all native exception, look upon the a usurper, who has robbed r country; although the ple — not, of course, the it, as far, but only as far, are concerned, that they tected now than they were they all feel that a griev- and many of them look upon anything for their relief or comfort that Europeans do, only as a small part-payment of a debt.

But manifestations of gratitude do occasionally occur, mostly on the part of children, who are probably instigated to them by their mothers. Many years ago, a little Swahili boy in the hospital in Zanzibar, to whom an orange was brought, handed it back and begged that it should be given to the kind lady who had put medicine on his sore eyes. In British East Africa I once, without the slightest danger to myself, rescued a little boy from drowning. A month afterward he appeared in my camp with a dozen eggs, for which he refused to be paid. He must have collected them one by one, for they were all rotten!

Negroes do not feel as we do, or, if they do, they show their feelings in a different way. I once had a Kikuyu servant, an excellent fellow, named Tairara. We were camped for some time in the Mweli hills, in the Sayidie Province of British East Africa, and the village, a market-place, was periodically visited by Waduruma and Wanyika, who came from a considerable distance, to get, by barter, what articles they required. Tairara had already spoken to me about one of his sisters, who, years before, had been kidnaped from her native country and taken to the coast.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

And one day, sure enough, just as in a story-book, the two met in the principal street of Mideli. The emotion of Tairara was genuine and violent and, I must say, most affecting. He sat on the ground, holding with one hand the hand of his sister, who was standing near him, while, with the open palm of his other hand, he kept beating the ground; and, all the time, tears were streaming from his eyes. The sister showed much less emotion. She looked, if anything, rather embarrassed.

Well, I left them in this position. What followed, however, was the curious part of it. From that day onward they took no more notice of one another than if they had been strangers! I saw them pass each other a week or so later without exchanging even a word; and when I asked Tairara how that was, his reply was to the effect that they had now met, and that the incident was closed.

No native, I think, would hesitate to indorse the opinion of Bernard Shaw's charming heroine, Miss Lydia Carew, when she coldly remarks that 'grief of two years' duration is only a bad habit.' To the native, there is a time for grief and a time for pleasure, which may alternate without transition. Also, natives are, I believe, able to produce emotion at will; at least, the women are. At the wakes after the death of a relative or acquaintance, their wails are accompanied by genuine tears; yet both before and after, they are absolutely unconcerned, as if nothing had happened.

Ties of affection are strongest between mother and child, setting aside the transitory attachments of paramours. They are deep and lasting, and, in some tribes, manifest themselves in a touching way. Among the Wabuanji and Wakissi, for instance, the son, even when he is grown up, when he encounters his mother, steps aside and kneels down, and in this attitude waits until she has passed. I remembe when I was walking in Bu great chief, he suddenly l and knelt down near the pa old mother, who was comi and who might have stoo trait of 'She' after her sec of fire, had passed withou slightest notice of him or n

What a difference betwee tiful custom and that ru those dreadful Sakalavas c car! There every woman, a has reached the great clima graded to the state of villa comes the butt of childre jokes, is forbidden the ent house, fed on refuse, and n to except in rough accents, own children; whereas the ceive every attention.

I once ventured to rem that subject with a beautifu latto woman, much courte peans, whose white-haired mother was even then liv miserable status. 'In my said, 'old women are treat ticular respect and consi all people alike, men and children. The older a wo more respect we consider h titled to.'

To which this heartless replied pertly: 'Well, that is in your country — and th our country is different, yo

But that was twenty yea perhaps, since then, the i missions scattered along t bique channel may have s changing this disgusting sta

On the whole, I am incline that the feelings of East a African natives are deepe think. Cases of the most and romantic love occur, som a tragic ending. Some y brought down with me int

Digitized by Google

s, a Ngoma from the north of whose name was Barbarossa. ngoma are notorious for their ce, their pride, their cunning, iolence of their character; and sa was no exception. He left m a wife and two little child- circumstance that did not pre- from soon forming a new tie ire.

ject of his attachment was a mple charms, a widow, with e children and some means. obviously lived much among s, dressed Swahili fashion, in her way, quite a swell. I vas this that took so strong a Barbarossa's imagination; he a naked savage when he first ne.

ot encourage this liaison, as I im to go back to his family; ked upon it as a passing flirta- , until, one day, I happened to him about his return home, emphatically declared that he ver again leave the Shire High- his new love.

nstrated, reminding him of his and children.

ly was: 'But don't you know us, when a man leaves his his brother takes over his fam- wife and my children are now h my brother.'

ed that this infatuation would n in time, and, in the mean- liscouraged as much as possi- sits to his mistress, who lived r miles away, in the village of who was supposed to be her In time she became pregnant, followed the catastrophe. She hild-bed, and that beast of a not send a messenger to inform sa of her death until after she buried.

o days the poor fellow looked y crushed, and then recovered so rapidly from his grief, to all appearances, chatting and laughing just as before, that I thought that here was another example of native shallowness of feeling. I was mistaken. Three days later, during a heavy downpour of rain which deadened all sounds, he hanged himself in his hut, which stood not a hundred yards from my own.

I decided that he must be buried alongside the woman whom he had loved so much, and dispatched a messenger to the chief to inform him that I would send up the body for burial as soon as I should have got the eight carriers required, whom I was expecting. But before they had arrived, my messenger came back in breathless haste, to say that the chief and the villagers refused to allow Barbarossa to be buried in their burial-ground, because he did not belong to the same tribe. I sent back word to say that I should use force if they persisted in their refusal, and at last they gave way and the two now lie side by side.

I intended to adopt the baby, who was then still alive; but it followed its parents into the grave a few weeks later, because, so I was told, its foster-mother's milk did not agree with it.

II

The refusal on the part of the chief to let Barbarossa be buried alongside his mistress, because he did not belong to the same tribe, is significant of the native clannishness, which cannot have been exceeded by the particularism of the small German principalities before 1870. Although it undoubtedly has its disadvantages, both for the administrator and the missionary, the fact that in it lies the chief European safeguard for the future is so obvious, that all attempts to 'educate' the native out of it ought to be made punishable by law.

In East and Central Africa, the ex-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

change of children for food in periods of dearth is a common transaction; and, heartless though this kind of bargain appears to be, it must be admitted that it is one by which both sides profit. Besides, in my own experience, the children, after years have passed since the famine, frequently return to their old home of their own accord.

In Ukinga, until a few years ago, not always under the stress of hunger, children were sold to lake-shore dwellers for a basket of fish each, but the distance from the range to the lake is in reality so small, that the sale really only amounted to sending the child to the lake to be taught to fish and row, and accepting a basket of fish in celebration of the occasion.

It was, of course, quite different in the old days of slavery, when children thus sold had to follow their new masters to the coast. Mr. Giraud, a French naval officer, who visited the lake region in the early eighties, relates how disgusted he was with a mother who, after she had sold her little girl to a trader from the coast, turned round, without the least sign of emotion, and went her way without once looking back. He says that he intended to buy back the child and return it to its mother; but that the latter's callousness deterred him from doing so. I am not certain that the poor woman did not feel a great deal more than Mr. Giraud gives her credit for. He expresses equal disgust with the child, because it was soon laughing and playing with another child. Perhaps the tears came at night.

Although natives are capable of forming strong ties of affection or love, it is quite impossible to deny, on the other hand, the truth of the assertion that they are, like the man in Christmas carols who had lost his heart, utterly incapable of feeling pity for suffering fellow creatures, man or beast. They never volunteer to lend a hand for the necessary functions arou
Many a time, sick people, e
could not be brought to n
ever so short a distance, l
was not one among the id
surrounded them who w
to bring them; and the sa
pened when a sick man's l
cleaned, or an ointment ap
the Wayao, the most gras
tribes with which I am a
traveler, surprised by a h
of rain, and seeking shelte
but under the overhangi
hut, unless the owner hap
relation, is mercilessly cha
less he agrees to pay as
times, as sixpence.

The death of a Euro
even if they appear to be
him, does not seem to affe
the least. As a rule, they
they can, being present a
bed of a master, — parti
within reach of an authorit
they are afraid of inquiri
when down with fever, ha
deserted by 'boys,' who
my last moment had com

But they do not go far
vest is expected. The la
Baker, that 'great hunter,
Sir Samuel Baker, told n
when he was lying ill wi
apparently unconscious i
the wilds, he heard his devo
who were squatting just
tent, settle how they w
among themselves their n
as soon as he died, the o
watch, another this, anoth
yet, although strict, Baker
ous master.

But the master, to the
the source of food, and no
that. I remember how onc
mountains, when I was wa
steep incline, followed by
servants, I happened to sli

Digitized by Google

nation of anxiety. I looked
tified about his concern for
n, and the faithful creature
o will feed me if you fall down
'his child of Nature was noth-
frank. Once he commented
lden tooth I am afflicted with.
aid, 'you would like to cut my
hile I sleep, and run away with
n!'
Master,' he replied, 'who could
a thing now, with so many
karis about!'
must be said, in justice to
at natives do not look upon
the same light that we do. I
d men who were suspected of
leeping sickness discuss the
ty eagerly and with a great
terest, entirely as if they had
ng, not about themselves, but
angers.
s, as is well known, are admi-
ics and, during the war, imita-
people dying and being killed
eat feature, and, I regret to
at source of amusement, in the
On one occasion I witnessed
esentation, to an audience
of all the people in my camp,
voneting of a man. The actor
valided Askari, who had en-
service a short time before.
cut downward from the left,
her in the same direction from
then one upward, from the
then a terribly realistic imita-
e death-rattle. The audience
ghted; my cook, the brute,
o much that he had to lie on
d.

III

ot to be expected that people
o indifferent to the sufferings
hould be actuated by softer
their attitude toward the an-
dom. In general, they do not
their way in order to inflict
pain, but they are completely indifferent to the sufferings of animals, and they all delight in killing. It really does appear as if the witnessing of the transition from life to death in another creature gave the savage a peculiarly gratifying sensation. Where they commit acts of cruelty, they are generally meant as reprisals of a wholly irrational and wanton kind; as for instance, when they cut off the beaks of birds which they have caught feeding on their fields; or when they pull out the tongue of a live chameleon, for no other reason than because chameleons frighten them; or when they hang dogs which have committed a larceny. Negro children, I think, are not naturally as cruel as the children of Europeans, although they, too, enjoy walking about with a miserable little bird fluttering on a string fastened to its leg, as does the son of Rubens in his father's famous picture.

Unfortunately, the generality of Europeans do not find it worth their while to try to teach the native to exercise a little kindness toward his dumb brethren, and sometimes, alas, they are themselves the very pioneers of cruelty toward animals. Years ago, when I was living in a part of British East Africa where settlers were still conspicuous by their absence, and the aborigines still almost untouched by civilization, there appeared a taxidermist who collected small mammals for a great museum, and the parasites of small mammals for a private gentleman — a happy combination.

Up to then, in that locality, I had not seen a single act of cruelty to animals committed by young or old, although, or possibly because, the inhabitants were fearless hunters of wild beasts. But this state of affairs was now changed, almost at a moment's notice. All the little boys and some adults were called, rewards were lavishly promised, and the chase began. Whoever has

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

read records of naturalists in both hemispheres, knows how difficult it is to persuade natives to abstain from wounding or maiming specimens which they bring in. For one intact animal they injure a dozen. There was no exception to this rule in this instance, and, worst of all, animals not needed, or past repair, were simply refused.

I remember one particularly odious occurrence. Some boys had brought a quantity of live bats, fastened, for convenience of transport, to a string, like the beads of a necklace, the string passing through a hole which had been made in each bat's wings! But the taxidermist had no more use for bats, and refused to take them; and so the lot was simply thrown away by the side of the road, alive and, of course, not untied; for where is the negro who would take the trouble to untie a knot, unless compelled to do so by necessity?

This will, to some people, appear a small thing only; but who can doubt that that taxidermist has sown a seed which will, in the future, cause much suffering to an incalculable number of living creatures? As he was a peripatetic taxidermist, the place where I met him was only one in a hundred.

To the lover of animals it must also be a matter of great regret that the different commissions on tropical diseases have to use native help when they experiment on animals; for, given the negro's passion for imitation, and his passion for 'showing off' before other natives, one shudders at the thought of what these helpers may be doing after they have returned to their homes.

Although natives love to see animals die, especially mammals, they often omit to take the trouble to finish small wounded animals and birds, and will carry the latter, fluttering and struggling, for miles and miles, to their place of destination. It is pitiful to know, in this connection, that both settlers and officials, who are collectin themselves or to supply the hope of perpetuating a wise doomed to oblivion, affixed to a new specie are in the habit of sendi equipped natives on colle tions, which sometimes la at a time. It is all done motion of science, we are dare to utter a mild wo strance. Many a poor b mammal, which has bee half a day, alive and suffe able torment, if it had the might conceivably, before a variant of Madame Rol exclamation at the foot of

IV

One cannot mention the tude toward the animal k out speaking about his r the 'friend of man.' It making acquaintance wit dogs of native villages t understands why Moses dog, forever, as an uncle cept in those regions whe used for hunting, when sc of a devoured animal som his lot, he feeds only on n and is expected to do so. tribes the licking clean of is, as in the Old Testament and admitted part of a The most startling of the to which he is put, ho among the Wangoni, whe replace, with his tongue, morning tub! This is do matter of course, the m times helped by the father baby, while the dog consci complishes his duty. The seem to mind it much, mildly, as babies will do w ject to being washed. E

Digitized by Google

nd indignation on my part, st witnessed this performance, with undisguised astonish- he part of the parents.

nose unfortunate creatures rabbits! It is a pitiful sight oor native bitch, reduced to ones, trying to satisfy the rav- nger of half a dozen half- ng gluttons. In many places , hunting either in packs by s or with their masters, have xtirpated whole species of nmals. In Buanji, where they erly numerous, all the mon- e been destroyed by the joint f man and dog; and, surely, o has had the good fortune to personal acquaintance of a not to mention the famous y, will admit that one mon- orth a hundred native dogs.

to the greediness of certain s, who do not scruple to sell — who will pay almost any hem — the pups of large Eu- reeds, these nuisances con- crease in number, size, and The Wahehe, in what was German East Africa, keep , not only to hunt with, but d; and those destined for that revented from moving about by having one of their legs

train their dogs for the hunt skill and cruelty. Once, in stone Range, not many hun- s from my tent, and before I rfere, a native from Buanji, others, had been chasing a cudgeled his dog to death e considered that he had been e performance of his duty.

nders why administrators do duce a native dog-tax. It ct only the well-to-do, and an ed evil would gradually dis- There would be no necessity for drastic measures, like the maroon- ing of the dogs of Constantinople.

Among the hunting tribes, the men are incredibly swift of foot. I have known them to run down a buffalo, and get it, too. This was in Ubena, which is a hilly country, and the buffalo must have been old, as I have tasted of its meat, which was extremely tough. In a flat country, I think, such a feat would have been almost impossible, although I have been told by natives in the great plains of British East Africa, that men exist who will run antelopes down.

The pivot around which all native conceptions of life turn is food — *chakula!* To eat as much as he possibly can at one sitting is looked upon by every native as a sacred duty; and, like those dung-beetles described by Henri Fabre, he never, never stops, so long as there is anything to eat before him. An American divine, as well known for his beautiful preaching as for his successes with the rifle in East Africa, has told us how a native with whom he remonstrated for gorging himself with the meat of butch- ered zebras, excused himself by saying that he might be dead by the morning, and then, what an opportunity would have been lost! If you ask a native why he goes and gets married, he never re- plies: 'Because I love the girl'; but in- variably by the question: 'Who is to prepare my food?'

It is quite useless to try to give na- tives extras. I often started, but always gave it up again, quite disheartened. The more sugar and tea you give them, the quicker they finish it. They have no conception of husbanding provisions, and are never satisfied or grateful. There are, besides, always a lot of hang- ers-on; and the servants and porters, who fear retaliation in a moment of penury, simply dare not refuse to share. As one said to me once: 'If a man sees that I have got something that he has not got, and if I refuse to give him some

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

of it, perhaps some day, when I am very hungry and without food, and he has plenty of it, he will also refuse to share.'

That the native custom to share all food with everybody present is not, as some may imagine, the outcome of altruism, is amply proved by the heartless attitude toward the diseased and the disabled, where a reversal of the position appears an eventuality too remote to be worth being considered. Although all natives know how to cook, roast, fry, to a certain point, their palate is absolutely devoid of taste. The great majority will, like Mark Twain's Goshoot Indians, eat anything that the raven and the hyena — which latter, in Africa, stands for coyote — eat — or leave.

The variety of the native bill of fare is enormous, and, roughly speaking, implies, besides vegetable food, everything that breathes. Not all tribes, however, are so catholic in their taste. Some will look with disgust on what others consider a delicacy, and *vice versa;* and Mohammedans will, although they are not by any means strict as regards the ritual, abstain from certain things as long as they have to fear the censure of public opinion. Unfortunately all natives, including Mohammedans, eat all birds, with the exception, in some cases, of birds of prey, or of birds which are fetish, like the ground hornbill. Not even the smallest birds, like nectarines or waxbills, are safe from pursuit — a state of affairs which clamors for legislative interference.

Rats and moles are in great demand among many tribes; some, like the Wahehe, eat dogs; the Wangoni eat cats; the Wangulu, snakes and lizards. Several kinds of caterpillars, both smooth and hairy, are collected in baskets and eaten as a relish or *kitoveo;* locusts and white ants replace in native cuisine our oysters and turtles; and some people are particularly fond of a large, strong-smelling tree-bug.

But if the white man s
before the native articles
native reciprocates as far
our food-stuffs are concer
food, especially since the
enormous quantities of it i
try, is a source of incessan
inquiries. Natives have of
to me their wonder at the
of things which Europeans
them could not be persuad
he had seen in a tin was no

A settler whom I knew i
poisoned some wild dogs
nine and then buried them
lowing day several men
and asked permission to
carrion, in order to eat it.
refused, explaining that t
been poisoned; but they
the night, dug the dogs o
them away.

Once, in the Transvaal
tin of *mortadella di Bologn*
ing it entirely spoiled, thre
European who was stayi
presently saw my headboy
tin, and, before he cou
swallow the contents. W
pected the fellow to die
poisoning, but nothing h
seemed, if anything, rathe
ful after, than before, his

I remember that once,
camped on the shore of L
very large dead fish floated
poisoning the atmosphere
fluvium. Suddenly I notice
of my men rushed to the
and jumped into a dugout
asked them what they we
reply was, that they wante
fish ashore. 'What for?' I
fied. 'Because we want t
screamed a peremptory war
grudgingly and wondering

Up to fifteen years ago
called Kaffir eating-houses
native mining boys used to

Digitized by Google

eat full of grubs. They said
ner. It really would appear,
and other instances, as if the
organs of wild people were
d on a model different from

ntity of food that a single na-
e to absorb at one sitting is
al. About twelve years ago,
in British East Africa, I once
e rhino at a distance of about
rom the old disused house of
h Missionary Society, where I
at the time. When I walked
gun-bearer ran ahead and
immediate neighbors, mostly
Wachagga belonging to the
I met these people —eight
the gun-bearer — going out
l, as I was reaching home.
d bathed and changed, I sent
boys into the next village of
weta, a mile farther back in
to inform them also of my
hat they, too, might go and
t for themselves and their
oon afterward I saw them
out, past my house. They
gain toward evening, return-
and I noticed that they were
ing anything except a few
ide. I asked them if they had
ty, and received the despond-
'There was nothing left when
l.' I do not, of course, mean
hat the first lot of eight na-
eaten the whole rhino in a few
ut what happened was prob-
they ate, each as much as he
y inside, and then took away
oulders as much as they could
ide, having first cached the
My gun-bearer, a few days
ill with an intestinal disease,
h he died within a month.

do not look upon the appro-
f foodstuffs from Europeans
When caught in the act, they
y repudiate the charge of
theft. They look upon the food as their due. It is a tribute. Because no one of their race would refuse them part of *his* provisions if they were staying with him, they think they are entitled to part of the provisions of the white man; and if he does not give it willingly, they *take* it. Bernard Shaw's assertion, that 'what an Englishman wants, he takes,' might much more appropriately be applied to the negro. This thieving is an institution with which every European has to reckon — a fact to be accepted.

V

It is a mistake to believe that a native servant in whom you show confidence will try to live up to it. On the contrary, he will, as a general rule, consider your confidence as an invaluable asset in the occasions of pilfering that it will give him. And the women are much greater thieves than the men. They know practically no restraint, and even rob each other incessantly, even of the smallest trifles, or of medicines, bandages, and the like. I have known several cases where natives parted from their wives because they could not keep the latter from stealing.

It is interesting to remember, in this connection, that Sir Harry Johnston mentions the incessant pilferings perpetrated by the Askari women as one of the causes of the Soudanese rebellion in the early nineties. England was then engaged in one of her small wars in Equatorial Africa, and the women who had followed the black soldiers committed such depredations among the friendly tribes, that they had to be sent back to Uganda. This their husbands resented, and it was, if not the only, at least the principal cause of the ensuing revolt.

I mentioned that the articles coveted by the women are often mere trifles; but this applies to the men also. It is

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

certainly a fact that nothing is too soiled, too torn, or too insignificant, to find a collector; which does not, however, mean, that natives have not a very keen sense of the value of things. But they are very clever in turning even what has been discarded as totally valueless, to some sort of use. I once gave a native, a carver in wood and ivory by trade, an old disused sweater, not thinking that he would be able to turn it to any account. A few days later he appeared in my camp with a rakish white cap, culminating in a red *cocarde* made out of a strip of flannel. This cap was the torn-off collar of the sweater, which had been sewn together on one side, and then decorated with the cocarde. Shortly afterward the owner told me that he had found a purchaser for his novel head-gear.

If, as some people pretend, the secret of making poverty endurable — of reconciling champagne tastes with a lager-beer income — lies in abstaining from necessaries and indulging in luxuries instead, the negro undoubtedly has adopted this method. He buys unnecessary trifles — old watches past repair, matchboxes of metal, pencil-cases, whistles, motor-goggles — at ridiculous prices, while repudiating almost with indignation the suggestion to buy remedies for his own or his own people's use, or a plate or a tumbler for his household. The latter particularity, by the way, presents the greatest obstacle to giving a native any medicine to take home with him. How can one expect a member of a numerous household, in which the only drinking vessel consists of an old condensed-milk tin, to take, every two or three hours a certain number of drops of, say, chlorodyne, diluted in water? — quite apart from the fact that every inhabitant of the village would insist on tasting the stuff! In this respect, as in some others, the Latin axiom, *Cœlum, non animum, mutant,* *qui trans mare currunt,* w
apply to the Ethiopian in
gree as to the Europe
Booker T. Washington to
a negro household in Vi
could boast of a single
found a piano? This ha
ness is, perhaps, a manife
artistic temperament. E
seen reproductions of t
drawings of the Kalshari
it would be a mistake to
this gift is their monopo
countries hundreds of n
have bought little clay figu
made by children in pla
always been struck by th
accuracy with which t
main characteristics had
however disproportionate
ments. Among the grov
one often finds real artist
sent human beings and
equal skill. As an avoca
usually runs in families
from father to son, severa
ing sometimes employed
trade; and the self-manufa
ments which they use a
great a subject of surpri
sult produced.

At one time I saw a gre
of these carvers in wood a
was a Yao, called Beeb
remarkable creature, who
posed as a sample of the
perament quite as well as
Latin art student pictured
La Vie de Bohême. His like
mals were extraordinarily
casionally somewhat out
but he also gave free scope
imagination by inventing
new and grotesque shapes.
was brisk, as was the cas
war, he lived on the produ
and saw only, and walk
haughty and independent
times were bad, he used to

Digitized by Google

n some plantation or farm, wers or cropping the lawn. ng one of these periods of en I had given him a job, ht him helping himself to ns. I dismissed him imme- we remained on cordial e same, and he often came p afterward, either to offer art for sale or to borrow a

ered his hut, where he was at the time, having just d by his wife — a usual oc- h him. There was no furni- his stretcher; but every- e ground stood old oil tins ots filled with decorative plants, flowers, ferns, and low shrubs with berries.

I cannot help thinking that Beeboo, if he had been born in Paris, might have developed into another Rodin, or a male Rosa Bonheur. Born in the Middle Ages, in a cathedral town, he would surely have been a famous gargoyle-sculptor. But he, too, was not free of those aberrations in taste to which I have alluded before. One day he shaved the lower part of his head all round in a circle, and then let the hair on the upper part grow to an enormous length, so that he looked as if he wore a huge helmet of fur, like one of Napoleon's grenadiers. He looked fearful, and I told him so, to his intense delight.

MOUNTAINEERING IN AMERICA

BY VERNON KELLOGG

I

ca I mean the United States ska and the overseas appa- oy mountaineering I mean s scaling high peaks. One ll the qualifications into a

ltogether too little told and ut the mountains of our the high mountains, higher ps, — and about the joys res of climbing them. Be- re not snow- and ice-clad, e, — with *névés*, *crevasses*, *oirs* to tell about, and be- oes not climb them in a er chain-gang, led and fol- rofessional guides in pic- turesque costumes, along well-known paths often staircased and balustraded, the mountains of California and Colorado seem to have few attractions for Americans who have a fancy for climbing.

But actually they demand as strenuous and careful work, and offer as much adventure, as the more favored and familiar European mountains. You can climb as high, fall as far, and land with as much disaster, in the Sierra Nevada or Rockies as in the Swiss or Tyrolean Alps. And there goes with the climbing itself in America a lot of fine things that do not go with the Swiss climbing — the camping, the pack-train, the trout-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

fishing in almost virgin waters, the great forests, the aloneness, the real escape and change from that world which is too much with us — all these are pleasant surplusage in American mountaineering, added to the actual climbing, which latter, by the way, you do — as climbing should really be done, to get from it its finest flavor — on your own, unguided and unroped.

It seems an odd thing that the high peaks of the Sierra Nevada and the Colorado Rockies are all of about the same height. Take the highest twenty in each of the two mountain-systems, and not only will their average be very close to 14,000 feet in the case of each group, but the range of height in the whole forty will come within 500 feet above or below the fourteen-thousand-foot average. The high points of both Sierras and Rockies seem to have been cut off in their aspiring at fourteen thousand feet or a few hundred feet above or below that level — although there is little indication on many of these summits of any cutting off, the tip-tops of some, indeed, making two men standing close together on them seem badly crowded. But some, on the other hand, have a really truncated top, often surprisingly broad and level.

This is true, for example, of Long's Peak, one of the highest and best of the Colorado peaks — meaning by 'best,' most interesting, and possibly adventurous, to climb. One could lay out a very decent little farm on its summit, if the soil were a little further on in course of making — so far it is only in its first, or rock, stage. But in getting up to this broad, flat top, you have to work carefully almost completely around the great cliffy cap of the mountain, with a dizzying narrow ledge on one face, to test your head; a long steep trough, with snow and loose rock in it, at one corner, to try out your heart, lungs, and climbing luck; and a steeper, mostly smooth wall-face, to swa
last stretch.

Long's Peak is much b
and sudden sleet-storms,
safe climbing season is unu
although it is often climbe
after this safer period.
tempt at a late climb, how
adventurous woman her lif
board, fixed among the h
the great Boulder Field
which the real climbing
memorated, as long as i
death on the mountain f
exposure in storm. The
reads, —

Here CARRIE J. W—
Lay to rest, and died
with the date, which I hav

She died alone becau
mountaineer who, after n
went up with her when she
if he would not accomp
would go anyway by hers
found her helpless on his
sleet-storm on the summi
carrying her down the mo
part of the mountain, thro
struggle in blinding snow
ice-sleet, until he was a
hausted as she, left her a
the comparative shelter
rocks of the Boulder Fiel
stumble on down the mou
dark, for help.

He had a difficult decis
Should he stay there with
almost certainly perish be
should he take the chance
and possibly get help up
the night, and thus save bo
what he believed the onl
saving her. Alone, he co
sibly get her farther. Stay
he could have done nothi
probability, die with her.
the mountain to his father'
rescuers started back at
took long hours to get t

Digitized by Google

. She had, in panic or
her shelter among the
nbling about, had fallen
g her head against the
e. It has been always a
on with that man as to
done what a brave man
er such circumstances.
ountain and the man, I
ded as a brave and ex-
ntaineer should have

other fatal accident on
here may have been still
ie came about through
rience and foolishness.
ded revolver in his hip-
limb. He fell in a bad
artridge under the ham-
ed, the bullet shattering
ie companion did what
g him along the narrow
ie lay; but little progress
d, after hours of suffer-
ed man died. The com-
maturely old man when
own the mountain and
o go up for the body.
s maintained that there
men together on moun-
to get hurt, one to stand
go for help. But most
tain-tops in pairs; some
. I knew one such, —
uir, who, with his bit of
n of tea, almost always
who did much climbing
evada and took many
ed to carry a rope and,
es, where he could not
ugh for hand-grips, he
knot in one end of his
it up until it caught
n. Then he would drag
hout regard to the fact
ly could not get down
uppermost one of these
his rope. He trusted to
nt and easier way down

— and always did. He climbed Mount King — a very pinnacly peak in the King-Goddard divide, which juts out westward from the main Sierran crest near Kearsarge Pass — in this way, by one of its seemingly impossible faces. Although at best it is a difficult mountain, it has at least one fairly negotiable face. He came down that way.

II

American mountain-climbing, at all events as I am limiting it, is rock-climbing. There can be a good deal of snow on the symmetrical cones of the old volcanoes, like Rainier, Baker, Hood, and the others that are the high mountains of Oregon and Washington; and there are elsewhere occasional snow-patches and a few scattered, insignificant, persisting remnants of the once mighty local glaciers that did so much in the old days to give the Sierras and Rockies their present configuration. But these are rarely in the way of the climber; in fact, the ice-remnants have to be sought out to be seen, and are among the special goals of the mountaineers. Two or three in the Front Range of the Rockies, near Estes Park, now included in the Rocky Mountain National Park, are among the most accessible.

Climbing the American mountains, then, demands no special knowledge of the characteristics and habits and dangers of deeply crevassed glaciers, with their thin snow-bridges, or of the behavior of snow when it inclines, under proper weather conditions, to cornice-breaking and avalanche-making. But it does require, for safety's sake, a considerable knowledge of the character and habits of various kinds of rock in various states of firmness and brittleness, as met variously on cliff-faces or in narrow chimneys. It also requires some judgment as to the critical angle at

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

which loose rock may lie for the time quietly, yet may not be stepped on with careless confidence. It does not require ropes and ice-axes, but it requires hands as well as feet, and a steady head. Narrow ledges, hand-hold crevices on steep faces, knife-edges, both firm and badly weathered, and long steep troughs of mixed snow, loose stones, and easily excited granite-dust make earnest call on the American mountaineer's nerve and confidence and expert judgment of the possibilities.

It is not always the highest mountain, of course, that is the hardest, even in its demand on endurance, to say nothing of skill. Our highest point south of the Canadian border is Mount Whitney, yet it is but a tiresome steep walk to its summit, after one has made the long, beautiful, and inspiring forest- and cañon-trail trip to its western foot. Its eastern foot stands in a desert. A few miles north of Whitney is the slightly lower peak of Williamson, one of three closely grouped splendid Sierran notabilities (Williamson, Tyndall, Barnard). But Williamson offers everything to the climber which Whitney, except for its height and position, does not.

I had the privilege of spending a few weeks again last summer in the Sierras, after an absence of years. Our small party was composed of members of the Sierra Club, that organization which has done so much to make the California mountains known and accessible to mountain-lovers; and one of our group was intent on attempting to get up a certain peak which has long resisted the attacks of climbers — not that it has been so often tried, but that the few tries have been made by climbers well known for their success with difficult mountains.

We, therefore, pushed our pack-animals up a great side cañon tributary to the greater cañon of the Kern, until we could make camp in a
of tamarack pines pract
line (about 10,500 feet
rectly under a high no
this unclimbed mounta
nected with its main p
rough knife-edge. Fro
of the mountain from v
had been decided that
approach to the peak-su
be this northwest spur
In our previous move
nearly encircled the
which the unclimbed
and members of the pa
another mountain, not
ly for the sake of an ori
tion of the upper reache
peak.

The actual vertical he
above our timber-line c
little more than three t
the Geological Survey
an altitude of 13,752
three thousand feet ca
difficult than five or six t
ever, if the summit cou
all, it could probably b
from our high camp. So
properly three — made
start, aiming directly
of the spur. The going
was fairly good and en
the top of the spur wa
few hours. But the
enough where it was co
ed itself so deeply not
points, that it proved
able. It was necessar
ferent way. The nor
knife-edged spur was a
the knife-edge itself.
face is gashed by a nu
steep troughs leading a
main peak, any one
prove itself, on trial, to
any one, or all, of whic
feasible because of in
not visible from the cli

Digitized by Google

elect and try one was, how-
nly chance.
areful study, one was chosen
ed indications of a trickle of
ing from some upper snow-
seemed to be more winding
rse than the others; hence,
more protection than these
ng stones. The climbers,
worked their way from the
down, and laboriously across
her troughs until, finally
e selected one, they turned
upward again. There was
e rock in the trough, and
, but troublesome, cliffs run-
s it; but by skillful work it
ssfully followed to a point
ort acrobatic scramble gave
very summit. By half-past
hree men stood, or rather
closely together on the dizzy-
f the highest pinnacle of the
— and the Black Kaweah
nger the unconquered peak
ong remained. The near-by
Gray Kaweahs had surren-
rlier years. So the Sierra Club
e scalps to bring home from
mountain group. But there
her peaks, both in the main
st and in some of the great
rs, or 'divides,' that run out
it, which offer pressing invi-
climbers who like to be the
le untrodden summits.

III

d at the beginning of this pa-
surplusage of pleasant expe-
t the American mountaineer
in the high mountains of
and Colorado, — one really
o slight Washington, Oregon,
d Wyoming in speaking of
mountaineering, — in addi-
t of the actual climbing. This
is that of the trail and camp.

For example, while the three more venturesome members of our party were capturing the Black Kaweah, — when one is soft from five or six years of being kept away from high altitudes, and has had only a few days to accustom heart and muscles to severe work in them, one must not be among the more venturesome, — I busied myself with providing one of the courses of a proper dinner that should be ready for the returned climbers. Right past our camp ran the clear, cold water of a stream that had its sources only a mile or two farther up the cañon, in the snow-fed lakes of a great glacial basin, or *cirque*, of successively higher levels under the Kaweah summits. Nine Lake Basin contains even more clear little green lakes than its name indicates, and their overflow makes a stream that has helped materially to deepen the great glacial gorge that extends from the upper *cirques* down to the Grand Cañon of the Kern. In this stream swarm hard-fighting, firm-fleshed rainbow trout, not too sophisticated, or yet too inexperienced. A Royal Coachman and a Black Gnat made a good killing combination, and I soon had a sufficient number to furnish the second course of the camp dinner.

And then there was time for some rambling and scrambling over the granite faces and great rough blocks of the upper *cirques*, and even over a low divide that separates the Kern from the Kaweah watershed; to look down the precipitous gorge of trivially named Deer Creek, — what a confusing host of Deer and Sheep and Bear Creeks there are in the mountains! — which finds its swift and tumultuous westward way into the Middle Fork of the Kaweah, or 'crow water,' as the Indian name translates itself. Along the upper stretches of this magnificent gorge — or cañon, to give its character its proper due — are some vertical cliffs and

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

sky-scraping pinnacles and smooth-surfaced, onion-skinned granite domes, which are yet to have their fame in chronicles of Sierran scenery.

The trout-fishing in the higher Sierras and Rockies is a kind of fishing apart from other kinds, even from other fishing for trout. To get to it is an adventure; to live a few weeks, or even days, where it may be had is an exalting experience. It is so much more than fishing. It is realizing how the primitive granite core of the earth, and ice and water and time have combined to make great mountains, great basins, great moraines, great cañons. It is learning to know the giant trees and dwarfed alpine flowers. It is seeing close at hand the realities of the bitter struggle of life with boreal nature. 'Timber-line' is one of the strange and revealing places of earth, with its misshapen, scarred, fighting pines and fir and juniper, and swiftly growing fragrant flowers, which expand their brilliant colors in the short season of warm sun and melting snow, to attract the few hardy butterflies and bees that flit away their brief lives amid surroundings that awe and humble the greater animals and even man. Shrill-barking marmots and curious little squeaking guinea-pig-like conies perch on great granite blocks, to stare and challenge the human intruder in these upper levels of earth, and dive out of sight in the dark crevices as he turns to stare back at them.

But the trout themselves are reassuring. They may even be of the very sort you know in the meandering brooks of New England meadows. For many of the Sierran lakes and streams have been stocked with trout varieties foreign to their geography. One meets speckled Eastern Brook and brown Loch Leven in some of these waters. Most famous and most wonderful to see are the bizarre Golden trout, originally

of Volcano Creek, which
Kern from the foot of M
These trout were origin
that part of the stream
the high falls, not far fr
mouth; but they have be
into numerous streams a
Kern and Kings watersh
a brilliant scarlet belly,
rainbow line, and gen
red tinge over the who
do not seem to grow ver
curiously long and sl
weight. They are reput
ally vigorous fighters; b
I caught in the single
Five Lake Basin above
were tame compared w
Rainbows of the Arroy

Besides trout, the Sie
Mountain streams are
few other interesting a
used to be many beave
the reaches where the C
flowed through the mo
parks, which are chara
Rockies just as the narr
vertical-walled cañons
ite, Hetch-Hetchy, Te
Grand Cañons of the K
are characteristic of the

And there are the fas
braving ouzels, that t
merged, on the lips of lit
seek out the larvæ of th
Among these insects are
may-flies and, especiall
of caddice-flies, which
tecting cases out of t
granite grains, and so
glittering golden bits
and half-transparent mi
gold and glass and shini

Finally, there are th
winged midges, known
only to professional ent
to too few of them, wh
are scattered all over t
swift, clear, and cold m

Digitized by Google

small, slug-like larvæ of these
es cling by ventral suckers to
h surfaces of the stream-bed
h shallow water is running
They cannot tolerate sluggish
water. Their food is chiefly
resh-water diatoms, which
in felt-like masses on their
. The slender-legged, thin-
es may be seen occasionally
out in the overhanging foliage
am-side, or among the great
hat half block the streams
ey break through terminal

ides the streams that help
ountain regions beauty and
d life, and provide the purest,
ter for the mountaineer's
bath, there are the great for-
ests great in extent and made
rees. These forests are of
agnificence in the Sierra
ut the lower pines and upper
the Rocky Mountains form
s, the spruce, particularly,
ing along the range-flanks in
g unbroken zone, at an alti-
oughly) from nine to eleven
feet and even higher. The
ot large, as large trees go,
arly uniform in size, and the
lmost clear of undergrowth,
and dark and still.

there are few, but some of
of special interest. Among
the noiseless, ghostly camp-
moose birds, which suddenly
om nowhere in your forest
lly flying down to your very
or camp-fire to beg or steal a
Less quiet are their cousins,
crows, or jays. But most
f voice are the Western her-
es, which fling out their rip-
d notes at early dawn and
echo through the long forest

ber one special adventure in the Great Spruce Forest on the flanks of Flat Top and Hallet's Peak in the Front Range of the Rockies, near Long's Peak, in which the hermit thrushes played a part. A college companion, Fred Funston, — later the hero of the capture of Aguinaldo and one of the best-known major-generals of the American army, — and I had gone up into the forest, with a single burro as pack-animal, from our summer camp on the Big Thompson in Willow Park, to try to get a deer, in order to vary our long-continued camp diet of bacon and trout. We were rank tyros as hunters, and probably could not have injured any deer with even the best of opportunities; but we had no chance to prove or disprove this, as we saw no venison despite all care and pains.

We did see, however, an animal we had not come to see. This was a big mountain lion. We had made a hasty camp in the upper reaches of the forest in the later afternoon of our arriving, and had turned Billy, the burro, loose, to nibble at anything he considered edible in the camp neighborhood. Then we had hurried out with our guns, each by himself, to post himself at what he should think a vantage-point to see such deer as should come conveniently wandering through the forest. I had lain doggo for some time near an old trail, and dusk had come on so rapidly, and the forest had become so unnecessarily still, that I had decided to get back to the cheering companionship and comfort of the camp-fire, when I was suddenly frozen into immobility by the sight of a great mountain lion silently padding along the old trail only a few rods from me. What with long lean body and long lifted tail, that lion took an amazingly long time in passing a given point. And just as it was by, and out of my sight, it carelessly let slip from its throat a blood-curdling cry, half-bestial, half-human. That

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

completed my demoralization. As soon as the apparition had passed from my sight and the echoes of that howl from my ears, I got my numb muscles into action and speedily made for camp — not by way of the old trail.

As I came near it, I was further startled to see a great, roaring fire, and found my companion, later the reckless hero of many a dangerous, self-chosen venture in war, piling ever more fuel on the camp-fire. I asked him the reason for the conflagration, and he blurted out, without interrupting his good work, 'I have just seen the biggest cougar in Colorado.' Evidently both of us had had the same good fortune.

In the safety of the fire-zone we made a peaceful supper, without venison; and after a final heaping-on of logs, rolled up in our blankets by the fire. In the middle of the night I was awakened by a blow on the chest. I promptly sat up, with the conviction that I was being mauled by the lion. The fire had gone down, and it was very dark. But Funston, who had punched me into wakefulness, whispered hoarsely, 'That cat is prowling around the camp. I have heard it several times. We must build up the fire.'

I strongly agreed, and we soon had another reassuring pyrotechnic effect. Again we turned in, and I was soon uneasily asleep again, only to be wakened by another blow. This time Funston was really excited. 'He's still around,' he said. 'There, you can hear him now.'

I listened intently. I certainly heard something moving off somewhere beyond the piled-up pack-saddle and kyaks on the other side of the smouldering fire. I stared hard in that direction. It was the first gray of a welcome morning. As quickly as the light had faded out of the forest the evening before, it now invaded it. Even as we stared through the cold gray, it became light enough for us to see — our faithful burro browsing on a b
couple of rods from our b
It was a great relief, a
over for a real nap, when fi
the mountain-side came t
pling call of a hermit thrus
another, higher up, answe
another, almost over our
finally, still another from
the mountain-flank. It w
beautiful, most thrilling
have ever heard. We la
And then Funston, sittin
blankets to glance around
forest, stretched out again
of comfort, and murmurin
damn religious up here,' d
kets up to his eyes for the

We were boys in those
thought more of new peak
possible elk and bighorn a
deer to be shot at, and
caught, cooked, and eate
red raspberries for dess
the religion of Nature exp
greatness and beauty. I
this religion did reach us
and once ours, it has neve
have loitered in the inc
aisles of many a great c
listened to the rolling of th
hypnotic chanting of the
each time I have been rem
longer, more fragrant fore
the low repeated rumbling
among the great peaks of t
regions I know; and it ha
memories that have given
er hope in something still
dral towers and mountain

IV

Funston and I had a
adventure in the Rockies
with a third college mate,
college professor — that I
to tell. The three of us, w
suffering burro, had starte

Digitized by Google

rsion than usual from head-
amp, which was to carry
venty or twenty-five miles
toward the Wyoming line,
ater called Specimen Moun-
crater rose just above a high
vided the headwaters of the
-Poudre, which flow first
tte, and then into the Mis-
nally, by way of the Missis-
the Gulf of Mexico, from
e Grand, which, after join-
e Green from Wyoming to
olorado, and enjoying much
of cañon and desert, reach
California. In fact, on this
is but a few hundred feet
er-line, there are two tiny
y a stone's throw apart,
their overflow to the At-
acific oceans, respectively.
carried us to the bottom and
of a long, weird, fire-swept
wn as Windy Gulch, with
istling with the stark, gray
f burned trees, and its top
on to the broad low sum-
Range, stretching away for
les or more above timber-
pass I have spoken of.
rip we had our guns, as we
in those earlier days before
ion of the law had been
ound the disappearing elk
n. Near the top of Windy
aw a bear — a rather small
bering its way toward the
Ve immediately gave chase.
urned toward a rock-ridge
y, and disappeared. But on
e ridge we made out what
only hole or cave it could
into, and there expectantly
coming-out of the bear.
not come out, and Funston
e the rather startling pro-
e should crawl into the hole
the bear, which, he argued,
oubtedly chase him out.
We other two were to stand by the hole with cocked rifles, and were to shoot, not at the first thing that came out, which Funston fondly hoped would be himself, but at the second, which would presumably be an irate bear.

After careful consideration of this proposition, entirely generous on Funston's part, as one must admit, Franklin and I finally declined it, on the ground that in our excitement we should be almost certain to shoot at the first creature that appeared from the hole, and if this were Funston, — as it probably would be if he came out at all, — and we should hit him, we should have to answer to his parents. As his father was a Congressman, these parents seemed formidable. Also, if Funston, by any rub of the green, did not come out at all, we should have to help the burro carry Funston's pack back to camp. The final vote, therefore, was two to one against the proposal of the future general.

This Specimen Mountain was a famous place for bighorn; I hope it still is. The wild sheep used to come to the old crater from many miles away, to lick at its beds of green and yellowish deposits; and we rarely failed to find a band of from six to thirty of the wary animals in the crater's depths. In our later trips to the mountain, after the game-protection laws of Colorado were in force, we used to hunt the sheep with cameras instead of guns. The rim of the crater was sharp, and we could crawl up to it from the mountain-flanks and peer over into it, all unperceived. The inner slopes were covered with volcanic ash and broken lava, and great plutonic breccia crags or 'castles' lifted their bulk from various points. By getting one of these castles between us and the sheep, we could work our way carefully down into the crater and fairly near the animals, without startling them.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

However, not all the adventures and joys of mountaineering are on or even near the summits. Camp and trail must often be at lower levels, although still truly in the mountains. The trails must lead from wild pasture to pasture — 'meadows,' the mountaineer always calls them; for the pack-animals and riding ones must have good feed each night, to enable them to meet the demands made on them each day. The camps must be made near good water, — a dry camp is a sad thing, — but where there is mountain meadow there is water: there would not be meadow without it. Many of these meadows lie on the successive levels reached in moving up or down the glacial gorges. In the upper *cirques* and gorge-reaches these successive levels carry lakes — wonderful green-blue sheets of cold water set on the wildest and bleakest of rock scenery; lower down there are wet meadows and still lower dryer ones, or bits of forest, but different from the great continuous forest of the mountain-flanks. These meadows are often riotous color-patches, flecked and splashed with a score of kinds of mountain flowers. A stream wanders through them, or, if they are not too level, hurries along with much music. Of course, one can camp in smaller areas, in cañon-bottom, or even on fairly steep mountainsides. One can usually find a few little level spots for the sleeping-bags and fire-irons, or, if necessary, a little terracing work with the spade will make the needed flatness. For you must lie fairly level if you are to sleep at all. Fir branches, old pine-needles, or heaps of bracken help to soften the bed-spots; but you soon get used to the uncovered ground. You manage to fit yourself to its unevennesses.

Besides meadow and water and a bit of level ground, a good outlook is necessary for the best kind of mountain camp. Long views down gr or across them to high pea straight up along the toweri wonderful trees, are worth to, even for one-night ca trees of the Sierras are, of co worth going into the mount The huge, dinosaur-like bulk 'big trees,' — the sequoias, straight towering sugar-pin cedar, yellow pine, and red fi Sierran forests incompara John Muir loved these trees companion-wise with them! sculpture, the work of ice, an straight trees, were his first the Sierra Nevada.

There is something so d remindful of older earth d fauna and flora were stran sequoias, those relics of fores gone, that they impress n fortably. They do not seem to this time. They can hav panionship with the pines a cedars, which live so cong gether. Their day is past; feel sad to linger on.

The trails seem to run most but mostly they run wisely. avoid too bad places and steepness; but they must get the objective is high, they n times climb even steeply, zig and they must not go too even if they have to take places or skirt dangerously faces. They are most delig traversing the forests, for th cool and springy underfoot. most impressive when they the sides of great cañons o mountain-flanks. They see complish most when they over high passes. The way very steep and rough, an down long and hard on the the actual crossing of the p umph. You see both ways

Digitized by Google

ersheds; one may have a very aspect from the other. You erable near and distant peaks. eet are wonderful little green es, cupped in the great *cirques*. rpassing trail-triumph is to elf and pack-animals over a n pass, that is, to be the first with pack-train.

this last summer in trying to the Kings River watershed of the Kern by a shorter the usual ones. Some Sierra n, making knapsack trips e headwaters of Roaring Riv- side of the Great Western nd the Kern-Kaweah on the suggested in the Sierra Club hat it might be possible to Divide with animals through it about 12,000 feet high, a ance south of Milestone Peak. n with their flocks had un- occasionally used this pass, were indications of sheep- ling up to it on both sides. are more agile than mules s carrying packs of a hundred d more. However, we had a of animals, with two packers willing and even anxious to nture. So we worked up with- , and with considerable diffi- of Cloudy Cañon, to a high o (10,500 feet) by the side of l glacial lake not indicated on gical Survey maps, and hence and officially unknown.

one day was given to spying ible way up to the pass, and rail' to the extent of indicat- one ducks the most feasible followed, and throwing some of the way, and strengthen- and bad places by piling up their sides. The next day, man in front to guide and the ttered among the pack-ani- ead and urge, we started up slowly, and, with much care and many stoppings to work further at dangerous bits of trail, we won our way to the summit. We were rightfully very proud, and left a record of the winning of the pass in a stone cairn at the top. What needs now to be done is for Forest Service men, or National Park men (if the proposed lines of the new Roosevelt National Park are finally adopted), to make that a really available pass. Then Kern Cañon can be reached from Kings Cañon — or *vice versa* — in two days less time, and by a much more interesting trail, than now.

It is remarkable how effectively even the unexercised human body responds to the call of the trail to cover miles and make altitude. A distance that would be an exhausting walk on a smooth roadway becomes only a fraction of a day's inspiriting jaunt up and down over steep mountain trails. Lungs and heart and muscles seem to meet the need on call. You wonder at yourself as you count up in the evening, after dinner, how far you have come and how high you have climbed. I can't explain it; it is one of the pleasant secrets of the mountains.

But this paper, like the mountain trail, must reach its end. Its objective is simply one of suggestion. If you are surfeited with swift motor-riding; or tired of endless golf; or impatient with having the world too much with you, take a dose of American mountaineering. Go where the highest mountains are, the greatest cañons, the biggest trees. Get a camp cook, — though you will want to be trying your own hand at his game all the time, — an experienced packer, and a train of mountain-wise pack-animals, sleeping-bag, camp-supplies, and a sheaf of U.S. Geological Survey contour maps, — 'quadrangles,' they call them, — and take to the trail. Once out, you will not come back until you have to. And you will go again.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

LYRICS

BY JEAN KENYON MACKENZIE

I

She was the little wind that falls
Before the falling of the rain;
She was the one and early star
We lose and see and lose again.

She was the pang of the caress
That is too brief for our delight;
She was the torch another bore
And passed us in the night.

II

If you should say,
'Who goes there?'
Then I would say,
'You go there —
It's your hand at the door
And your foot on the stair
Of my heart every day
And everywhere.'

Then you would say,
'It is long since I passed.'
And I would say,
'It is year before last
Since you went on your way,
But I still hear you there
In my heart every day
And everywhere.'

Digitized by Google

III

THE SNOWY NIGHT

Let us be happy to-night —
It snows.
See where the hemlocks glimmer white
In the dusk and the snow and the half moonlight;
They never stir as their burden grows.

And you — O lovely and pale and near —
Loosen the bond of your maiden will;
Fall on my heart like the falling snows,
And I will be still as the trees are still.

IV

Suddenly, up through the forest gloaming,
A partridge rose, and that urgent whirring
Startled our breath and checked our roaming;
We stood and were still where the leaves were stirring.

So from the place of my deepest grieving
Memory starts on a wing so thrilling,
I stand in the dusk of my self-deceiving,
Struck to the heart with a pang that is killing.

V

In the street where you went away,
In the air that is still and gray,
Like golden fish in a stream
The leaves of the maple gleam;

And down in a place apart,
In the dark and the deep of my heart,
You shine in the pool of my grief
Like a fallen golden leaf.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

VI

I saw you as you passed
A hundred times before;
O come you in at last
And close the open door.

O close the door and mark
How deep a night is this;
And light our common dark
With the candle of your kiss.

THE EDUCATED PERSON

BY EDWARD YEOMANS

I

BECAUSE you believe in a good cause, said Dr. Johnson, is no reason why you should feel called upon to defend it, for by your manner of defense you may do your cause much harm. This, however, is a case where, in *multitude* of counsel, there may be some wisdom. Some kind of answer may evolve from the discussion of the above topic, which will be better than a pontifical statement from a person who has no doubt at all about his qualification to give an irrefutable opinion, like the old Doctor himself.

And if nothing does emerge; if there is no precipitate which you can filter out from the cubic contents of words, and *weigh;* and if that precipitate is not some kind of yeast which, added to the present educational dough, will help it to rise, then let us admit that something *ex cathedra* is needed.

This contributor pretends to no experience as a practitioner in th
He has been engaged in the
and market-place and, like
so employed, has gone abo
kinds of errands and has met a
people, in the cities and in
try and in small towns — magn
ness people, professional peop
ers, skilled and unskilled
and children.

The public schools and the
schools are engaged in pourin
lions, — and have been for yea
the private schools and col
technical schools, thousands;
man going his way in and o
the inhabitants of the ear
them, talks to them, dines w
employs them; and in all sort
gets the taste of them, and a g
cross-sections for careful exa
He sees them in offices, in

Digitized by Google

ubs, in churches, on trains
-cars and on street corners,
homes — city, suburban,

registers. They 'punch
ck,' so to speak, and on the
an impression. It is a dial
ed up for yourself — an old
e old marks on it pasted
w ones; and there are two
ns, one marked 'satisfac-
e other, 'unsatisfactory.'
le have the words 'useful'
ful' (to them); and some
ds 'interesting' and 'unin-
nd, perhaps, some, 'edu-
'uneducated'; and a few
as to divide their dial into
bad.' But that is about the
umption.
u have 'satisfactory' and
ry,' that means, of course,

, therefore, you say that
90 per cent of the product
d colleges whom you meet
ed under 'unsatisfactory,'
llow at all that they would
way on any other dial —
a very roundabout way of
you disclaim any superior-
time-clock.' You found it
wall of your vestibule when
l enough to look about at
which had been bequeath-
which you have been dust-
atching up ever since. You
to use this clock, and you
eal of exhilaration in using
you should insist on any-
rself believing in its records
t only foolish but exceed-
hough not unusual.
nt something to believe,
uel Butler, I will tell you
l it. It is in the thirteenth
Paul's first Epistle to the
At any rate, don't believe

II

The most comprehensive sentence in H. G. Wells's *Outline of History* — the sentence which 'pulls the whole picture together,' as the painters say — is this: 'It has always been a race between education and catastrophe.'

This is biologically, ethnologically, and nationally proved. And it can be individually proved, if, by education, you mean something fundamental, something intrinsic, something almost instinctive, and do not mean something external, something decorative, something pinned on.

And if this is true, then what constitutes an 'educated person' to-day is an exceedingly important question, both for the individual and for his nation.

If an educated person is just any kind of a person, — say a person with a reasonably well-built exterior, and that exterior decorated with mosaics in patterns, and pictures classical, scientific, historical, grammatical, or linguistic; but the interior more or less unventilated and unlighted, with the dampness of prejudice and provincialism, hereditary or acquired, making the walls clammy, and the creeping things of *essential* meanness and self-interest and conceit going and coming through the foundation cracks, — then that person is marked for destruction. If you had looked closely enough at the spiritual and intellectual house in which each of those eighty German professors lived who signed that statement of their faith at the beginning of the war, you would have found the words marked on it: 'Delenda est.' The man who lives in a house marked for catastrophe does not know it. From his youth up he has kept the rules, passed the examinations, received the degrees, secured the offices and the emoluments and the privileges.

But he is an offense — and catastrophe is his portion, and the portion

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

also of the man by whom the offense cometh, who taught him that exteriors were as important as interiors, that decorations were more useful than good homespun, that meat was more than the life, and raiment than the body. Which things were not directly taught, — oh, no, — but were too much implied; were the by-products of his total experience at home, in school, and in college.

I say, 'at home,' and I ought to say, 'particularly at home.' You and I know enough about homes to know that it is asking of schools and colleges a very great deal to ask them to correct the *implications* of the home atmosphere — with which their pupils are necessarily saturated.

If these implications are second-rate, are low-grade, — if the instinct of the family is for property as against humanity, for instance; for 'closeness' as against generosity; for self-interest as against disinterestedness, in social and political things, — then those are the latent instincts of the children.

But schools and colleges can be asked to begin, not to teach these moralities, but to make it perfectly clear that they are invariable corollaries of all that is taught, and that a boy or girl who has not distilled this by-product from his books and his teachers is, up to that time, uneducated, however high his marks may be. He may know English speech and other speech, modern and classical literature, engineering, law, or medicine, and remain uneducated, unawakened, because the only valuable qualities in him have been left interred there, like Lazarus, — 'bound hand and foot with grave clothes,' — no irresistible voice, to stir those emotions which alone make life worth continuing, having reached them.

III

I am taking my cue, in answering the query of the editor, from his own com-

ment in his letter inviti
'party,' as he called it.
can you decide what is t
educating a boy until y
kind of man you want?'

I am the more ready
cause it has, for a long ti
me that the kind of ma
our educational machine
poor kind; that therefore
with its highly complica
with many curious and i
eccentrics, clutches, adj
celerators and retarder
and frictions, is a good
great modern printing
folding and addressing a
the end; and when — as
met the other day remarl
fold the product, so nea
rately wrapped in a diplon
ed at your door after gr
you find that you have s
much like the Sunday Su

That I considered an as
believe he admitted that
said it was due to his havi
much lately to the conve
versity clubs. But even
is more like the daily pa
true that a very beautiful
anism and a very expens
been used to turn out s
ought to have been very
and more worthy of the ti
ment and craftsmanship

The man *talks* well, — i
too well, — and he knows
on, and makes a decidedl
ed effect in the smoking-
man cars and elsewhere.
such a man, perhaps, to
ful came on his pilgrimag

'"Well, then," said Fa
is that one thing that w
time found our discourse

'*Talkative.* What you w
of things Heavenly or th
things moral or things

Digitized by Google

ered or things profane; things
ings to come; things more es-
things circumstantial; pro-
be done to our profit.
lid Faithful begin to wonder;
oing up to Christian (for he
l this while by himself), he
m (but softly), —
t a brave companion have we
ly this man will make a very
pilgrim."
s Christian modestly smiled
"This man, with whom you
ken, will beguile with this
his twenty of them that know
'

an *does* well, too, because he
d working knowledge of the
s working at — the thing that
at he calls his career and his
n, and gives him his standing.
uild good buildings, or good
y, is diabolically clever on
n administration of business,
n the operating-room, and ef-
the pulpit.
lege takes much pride in his
and even invites him to talk
s on the rules for success. He
ee, and helps her to turn out
en something like himself,
hat the more of that kind of
e are in the world, the better

at the man actually is — how
n those great spaces *between*
abilities where he should be
cynical where he should have
v timid where he should ad-
ow indifferent where he should
nate; how critical where he
devoted — have n't we seen
of thing very close-up recent-
n't we seen too many 'educa-
of America failing completely
nination and even in decent
not even respecting the bur-
e bent and broken workman?
what is responsible for this
vacuity, this elemental hollowness? And as time goes on, must we expect this to continue, that so large a proportion of men from universities shall fall so unfavorably under Emerson's exclamation, 'With what you *are* thundering in [our] ears, how can [we] hear what you *say*?'

IV

And who are 'we'? We are the people who are paying the bills. 'We' are the folks who are working while you are having 'time off' in which to be educated.

We have a big stake in your education, because we actually have to pay for it; and we are entitled to say that we want a different kind of person to come out of universities. We want men who have regard for hands as well as for heads, — an *equal regard*, — for people as well as for profits. Having put the oil in your lamp, — as Graham Taylor said the other day, — we want light, and a much better light than we are getting.

And let no university call its men educated until they understand that we — the men and women who pour into factories every morning and out every night; who ride back and forth in the reeking trolleys, and live in the obscure parts of cities; who follow ploughs and harrows in the country and stoke boilers at sea; whose labor makes the buildings, the books, and the salaries of the professors possible — that we must be the beneficiaries of your training, and not, to so large an extent as now, its victims; and must, more and more, be taken into your confidence, and into your esteem — and even into your brotherhood.

If the war has not taught this simple thing, then, among all the dead losses which can be inventoried, here is the deadest.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

V

When you take the liberty of criticizing a thing, you can properly be asked to specify something constructive, too, and to quit working exclusively with the hatchet.

The worst thing you can do, however, is to follow the advice of the Mayor of Chicago and 'get a horn.' That is what he has got, and there is ample evidence that he has even two.

Therefore I take the liberty of marching quite by myself, perhaps, in the procession of disputants who shall consider this question at the suggestion of the editor — with a transparency, having on it certain words.

Maybe you think from what you have heard already that one of those words is 'Excelsior'; but you are mistaken, for the 'lifeless but beautiful' rôle is not congenial to this writer at all.

The first thing, then, that I might fondly hope would catch the piercing eyes of such educators as may be standing on the curb as we shuffle past, is the word 'Relationships' — relationships with the inorganic as well as the organic world.

Is n't it fair to ask that a man living on this planet shall have more regard for it, and for the processes which, from the condensation of a swirling nebula into planets and a sun, and by the cooling of one of the smallest of these, at last found its most profound expression in a living cell? For, by that means, and that only, could all this dramatic prodigality of time, space, and causality arrive at an adequate conclusion. Looking back upon the way it has come, this cell, arrived at *homo sapiens*, arrived at articulate speech, and reason and memory and dexterity of every sort, mental and manual — looking back upon the magnificence of the process that from the nebula evolved Christ, this cell must, in the minute allowed it above the surface, exp that shall illustrate its tion, 'of wonder, love, other words, the man tially religious — not th gious, but intellectually ally religious. And he m *prove* his kinship with permanent things and b

Now, maybe this is s enough to fill in some of educational institutions the subjects of their cu man must be more cons untarily related to those contemplative things, a therefore, to the fevers a his particular day and his political party, his sc his religious creed, — an to cosmic processes spirit has been physically ret suddenly and ostentat cemetery.

And the other word tions.' There is no educ worth our admiration produce people who are appraise life fairly, who difference between first c class — which does not, establish a scale of va stand some scrutiny. Th education breaks down ably. We cannot choos between fine ideas and mediocre ideas and purp what is worth doing an considering the shortne tween Beauty and the pr ty, or the total lack of i

This sort of thing has haps, with grandfathers, in elementary schools, an actively in preparatory s rive at some fruition, o in colleges. If neither t school, nor the preparat the college in that direc

Digitized by Google

are doing now, we cannot college too much. But, on hand, the college makes it the lower schools to get any value scales' going, because the issues terribly with its on' matters. It sets up a its gate, and almost all the e lower schools must be em- training to jump it. Great o learn to jump it; and is it er that the colleges find in ire too large a proportion of ers who keep right on jump- ation after examination, un- ally jump out, with a certifi- mping? But this is not just man they want, is it? Why, ey paralyze education in the ols with the Board Exami- Why don't they indicate that want is a certain quality — heliotropic instinct — upon can base what they have to some assurance that their ot be as much wasted as it is n't know the answer to that xcept on one hypothesis, and at these boys are to be more atures of privilege anyhow, hat immune from the laws of . They are to be 'little Jack and in their various corners, er 'big boys,' pull out plums ie.

rangely unconscious these to be that this great dining- urs, called the United States, g more and more crowded , and that a very large ma- he crowd, having done the e kitchen and made the pies, are looking on with an increasing sense of the disparity involved.

These bakers and boilers and scullery-folk somewhat impudently push up and and peer in, with their sweaty faces and greasy garments, and go back to the kitchen muttering — very naturally, don't you think?

On the whole far too many voyages are started from colleges without a compass that points north. The metal around it has deflected it; and on a voyage among the boisterous winds blowing off our huge industrial continent, — with newspapers for lighthouses, — what assurance can you give that you will not become a mere menace to navigation?

I submit one of the oldest and best exhibits in this connection. It is a picture of a man, the greatest master of the art of discrimination the world has ever seen; a rough man, not at all like the sentimental pictures, who lived all his life, probably, in a little one-story mud-house; who worked with his hands and walked much alone along the solitary ways of a remote and silent country under the tropic sun and stars. On this occasion you see him handing back a penny to some very crafty gentlemen surrounding him and pressing upon him the ancient and modern question of allegiance, and, in his penetrating, and very final way, requiring them to decide for themselves where payments to Cæsar stopped. There is the crux of all debates on education. Until the 'educated' man knows the answer to that question, whether he goes by it or not, he is uneducated, and, in the history of man, he is marked Zero.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

SOUTH SEA MOONSHINE

BY CHARLES BERNARD NORDHOFF

I

THE late Mr. William Churchill remarked, in the opening chapter of one of his distinguished works on Polynesian philology: 'About the islands of the central tract of ocean, romance has cast its charm; its power remains even in these later days. Sensitive natures have counted the world well lost for the enjoyment of its delights; ignorant men have yielded to the same compulsion and have found a dingy pleasure in settling down as beach-combers. . . . The people have won those who came to seek them; they have been treated as gentlefolk.'

Even in the days of Spanish exploration, Europeans recognized the tranquil charm of these islands; and now — after six years of war, economic crisis, and social upheaval — a great many people are finding relief from gloomy and alarming thoughts in dreaming of the South Seas. Late in the eighteenth century, fashionable France rhapsodized over the beauty of a life freed from restraint, in Bougainville's *Nouvelle Cythère;* one hundred and fifty years later, the sudden recognition of Gauguin's genius caused a ripple which has crossed two great oceans and is breaking gently, at last, on a score of lonely coral reefs.

Every mail-boat arriving at Tahiti nowadays brings its quota of an extraordinary pilgrimage — painters and literary men in search of atmosphere; scholars in search of folk-lore; weary men of affairs in search of forgetfulness; refugees from the arid portion of North America in search of wassail; steerage passengers in search of a land where food and work are not akin. To watch them come ashore at the quay is at once ludicrous and pathetic — a study in the childishness of grown-up humanity. Some bristle with weapons to repel the attacks of cannibals; others, when their luggage is opened at the custom-house, display assortments of beads and mirrors for barter with the savages. One almost envies them, for the radiance of the first landfall has not yet faded from their eyes, still dazzled with a vision the pilgrims have traveled far to seek.

I have often speculated on the motives actuating these men and women — most of them of a class neither adventurous nor imaginative. Why have they left home at all, and why have their wanderings led to a place so insignificant and remote? In some cases, of course, the motives are not complex. I remember a middle-aged Californian, who did not hesitate to be frank. We were sitting on the hotel verandah, wasting an afternoon in idle talk.

'Why did I come to Tahiti?' he said; 'that's simple — I wanted to live in a place where I could have a drink without breaking the law. I reckon I'm a good American, but I like to be let alone. The French are great fellows to mind their own business; I found that out during the war. Yes, I was there — over age, but I got into the National

Digitized by Google

e start. When I got home,
around and then made my
roposition to buy me out.
ce little business; my share
into bonds, brings in about
nd a year. When the deal
got a map and hunted up
French colony — I reck-
ld be quieter there than in
uess I'll leave my bones on
house will be finished in
nth; it's close to the water,
hady verandah where you
look out across the lagoon
I don't want any women,
or newspapers, or planta-
siness of any kind — I just
et alone; but any man who
k politics will be welcome
r a drink.'

one accounted for. A few
ter, on the same verandah,
n told his story in eight
nant as they were brief.
an Englishman with us —
who was stopping over a
the course of an eastward
the world. He had been
d was showing us his col-
photographs of that land.
ictures were passed about,
n elderly American, of mo-
pulent mien, sitting at some
m the rest of the company
no part in the conversation,
ttered from time to time a
l sounds vaguely suggestive
nd correctly interpreted by
girl to mean: 'One rum-
time we came to the inevi-
e of the Taj Mahal; and
zed at it, marveling anew,
spoke of the vast expense of
n a monument. When he
d, the man who wanted to
was the first to speak.

k of that guy,' he remarked,
en million dollars to bury his

Musing on the ancient and costly bit of sentiment, we sat for a moment in silence — a silence broken by a sepulchral voice.

'I'd give more than that to bury mine!'

It was the orderer of rum-punches who spoke, addressing the company for the first and last time. He said it without a shadow of humor — so earnestly, so convincingly, that several seconds elapsed before any of us smiled. He had placed himself. Curiosity regarding him was at an end; if he chose to spend the rest of his days in the South Seas, gossip would pass him by, to whisper of others less communicative — the ever-present rumored murderer or defaulting financier. For all we knew, the morose gentleman might have been quite capable of building a second Taj Mahal.

One quiet and pleasant Englishman, who might have passed for an elderly clerk, spending the savings of a lifetime on his first real holiday, gave the gossips of Papeete a shock when he appeared at the bank to draw money on a letter of credit for a million dollars. Another man came here not long ago, traveling to his former home in the States — an old trader who has put in forty years in the Western islands, and carries with him two heavy cedar chests in which the tales of eye-witnesses vouch for the presence of four hundred thousand dollars in American gold.

By far the greater number of adventurers, unfortunately, reach the South Seas without worldly goods of any kind — victims of a delusion, fostered by nearly everything printed about this part of the world, that in these blissful isles one need not work in order to enjoy the customary three square meals. There are said to be islands, far off and inaccessible, in the Paumotu group, where the good-natured brown man will not let a stray white starve; but, as

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

a rule, the islands of the Pacific are unhappy places in which to find one's self destitute. It is true that a rapid depopulation should make living easy for the survivors; but the land is closely held, and the surplus, which once supported far greater numbers, is now devoted to the articles of luxury for which a century of intercourse with Europeans has created a demand. Every steamer unloads one or more enthusiasts whose purses have been emptied to buy passage south, and whose heads are filled with dreams of slumberous ease in a palm-thatched hut, where the traditional dusky maidens, of surpassing amiability and charm, ply the fan or prepare savory repasts of the food that nature provides in superfluity. And the fact that such dreams are not entirely baseless makes them all the more deceptive.

Only last year, a boat's crew from a shipwrecked vessel managed to reach Rapa Iti, a lonely southern outlier of Polynesia, visited by a chance schooner at intervals of a year or two. The men of Rapa, brought up from infancy to the ways of the sea, are in demand as sailors, and the result is that on the island the females outnumber the males in a proportion said to be seven to one. When, after many months, a vessel arrived at Rapa to rescue the stranded mariners, the work of rescue had to be carried on almost violently; for the least popular member of the boat's crew was provided with half-a-dozen brown ladies, who hovered about anxiously, not even permitting their lord so simple a task as raising the food to his own lips. The parting was a melancholy one; the girls stood weeping on the beach, while the sailors protested that they had no desire whatsoever to leave the island — far from it, they asked nothing better than to be left undisturbed in the enjoyment of a life they found full of charm. But Rapa Iti is one island out of ma
he who seeks to eat of the
distant sea will be remi
Kingdom of Heaven, the
the Needle's Eye.

There is a Frenchman a
Tahiti, — a retired shoem
comfortable balance at
who has been trying for
to get to Rapa. He is a
agreeable fellow, with a
centricity which renders i
otherwise commonplace
ago, in the Norman village
a seafaring friend told him
island south of the Austra
since that day Rapa has
ject of his life — to be d
he stitched and pegged
monotonous day, or in
while he sipped a *chopin*
the inn. Last year he sold
closed his shop, bade his
well, and started on the v
was to take him half-way
world. But schooners fo
rare, and the French auth
wise by past experience,
courage white settlers
themselves on the more re
As things go, the cobbli
with his tools and seeds
clothing, may end his days
his quest unfulfilled to th

Unlike the majority of
he would probably make
and contented settler. He
knows what he wants, an
no absurd visions of beco
age; a generation among sa
little change in such a ma

II

The thought of him bri
another, almost at the oppo
of the human scale, whose e
solitude is already proving

This one is an America

Digitized by Google

ated, thoughtful, and well-
duate of a great univer-
wing intimately the people
of many lands. When the
r, he found himself out of
life that seemed feverish
nplex, and set out to seek
re he might pass the re-
his days in tranquillity.
d Tahiti before, and far out
rn extremity of the island
came to an end. There,
agoon, in a thatched house,
books and good furniture
n, he may be found to-day,
nd serene recluse. Pos-
ugh to live in modest com-
ns to have found the en-
est suited to his quality of
he asked me to spend a
h him, I went with some
observe how my friend's
working out.

n settled to a quiet routine,
utiful enough to excite the
nperor. The view from his
a panorama of mountains,
, and bright-blue sea —
nt a journey of a thousand
ring the year of his resi-
learned to speak Tahitian
ing fluency, and without
oward authority, has be-
of village patriarch and
native affairs. There is
e doctor nor brown *tahua*
fifty miles; perceiving this
d sent home for elementary
ks and a stock of simple
low he administers iodine
il to such a multitude that
obliged to set aside certain
nsultation.

nature is rewarded at times.
of my arrival he performed
ntentionally — a cure which
n a class with the famous
e island. Early in the morn-
led an old blind woman to
the door, asking treatment for a badly infected cut on her ankle. The cut was washed with soap and water, rinsed with alcohol, painted with iodine, and sealed with adhesive plaster. I arrived an hour or two later; and as we sat down to lunch, a group of men and women approached at a rapid gait and stopped before the house, talking excitedly among themselves.

The manner in which a caller approaches the house of his friend is worthy of remark, for it throws a curious side-light on Tahitian ideas of propriety. Since heathen days, the grounds surrounding the dwelling of every man of importance have been enclosed by a fence or hedge. The caller halts outside this barrier and waits, with an air of humility, until the cry of welcome is given by someone within.

'Haere mai,' called my host; and next moment the dining-room was full of people. They had come to tell him — all at once — of the wonderful results of his medicine on old Teura. Remedies given at daybreak had been known to cure before dark, but this one had done its work in a matter of four hours — effecting a cure without parallel in the memory of the village. The patient was eager to thank her benefactor in person, but her family thought it best, for the present, to keep her out of the sunlight. For five years she had been blind, and now — dimly, but more clearly every hour — she could *see!*

The doctor took his cue with just the right degree of casual professional interest — neither claiming nor disclaiming credit for the achievement. So much the better, if they chose to believe him capable of miracles; in future his simple admonishments would be heard with more respect. It was the moment to drive home a strong impression; he seldom gave rum to the natives, but now glasses were filled and we drank to the restored vision of Teura.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

When they had gone and we had finished lunch, the conversation turned to native medicine. I told him of an experience of my own, when I was down with an attack of old malaria — a souvenir of Vera Cruz. (The Anopheles mosquito, by the way, which carries the germs of malaria, does not thrive in the islands of the eastern Pacific, though his cousin Stegomia trails ominous striped legs under one's nose at all hours of the day, and makes one shudder at the thought of a carrier of yellow fever arriving by chance in Polynesia.) At the height of my illness, actuated by curiosity more than anything else, I called in a Tahitian doctor of the half-baked modern school. Perhaps I do the old lady an injustice — for my doctor was elderly and feminine; at any rate, I recovered, and can vouch for the potency of her *raau*, which may or may not have had a beneficial effect.

Ushered in reverently by an attendant, she squatted on the verandah beside where I lay, and regarded me for a time with shrewd black eyes, set in a face of wrinkled brown. Perhaps she was merely shy; perhaps she doubted the sincerity of a white man willing to pin his faith on native medicine. At last she seemed satisfied and asked me rapidly — and rather competently, I thought — a list of diagnostic questions. It did not take her long to decide on the needful febrifuge; within five minutes she had summoned three girls of the household and dispatched them in search of her primitive drugs. One was to gather a coarse grass found along the edge of the lagoon; another was ordered to grate the meat and express the cream of half-a-dozen cocoanuts; the third set out for the reef in a canoe, to search for a variety of sea-urchin called *fetue*. All this sounded ominous enough to me; I began to regret the curiosity which leads one into scrapes, but it was too late to think of retreat.

Before the tahua took h
suggested the frequent dr
infusion of orange leaves, a
me that the real cure cou
for another day, as the br
medicine required twenty-

I awoke next morning wi
premonitory depression fan
us — an overflow from the s
independent of positive me
was it that made disagreea
pect of the coming day.
the sea-urchins! Toward
the doctor appeared. The
with a bath from head t
dark tincture of the grass
day before; and after the b
bones were treated to an
sage. In this branch of
least, I can affirm the co
the native doctors. The ba
sage were calculated to p
for the final *coup-de-grâce*
deadly as the poniard-thr
the joints of a mediæval
came in the form of a half-p
filled with a viscous whitish
not know all its ingredie
they were compounded, bu
down power of strange sub
in it, and it tasted worse th

'Some people,' remarked
gazing admiringly at her h
the glass held out to me, '
this medicine — it is too
it will cure your fever!'

This was no time to
seized the glass and gulp
evil contents. An hour lat
understand why some peop
take it, and decided that I
of them. The tahua ha
gerated when she said
strong. Keats might hav
fects in mind when he wro

My heart aches and a drowsy nu
My sense, as though of hemloc

As the day dragged o

Digitized by Google

gly evident that I had been . I thought again of the words, and I recalled — not uneasiness — a passage in an nary chronicle of life in these nds: 'Many of their applica- wever, were powerful. . . . A on, in which milk from the e cocoanut formed a principal t, was sometimes followed by stant death. Mr. Barff once preparation, at the earnest ndation of the people; but it t him his life, although he had more than half the quantity

er thought, especially since I owed the whole dose, one half had nearly caused the death quiescent Mr. Barff! Toward when I was long past the stage able to smile at my predica- fell asleep — if sinking un- into a loss of consciousness escribed in words so peaceful. t dawn, weak and giddy, but n I had been for several days. he raau cured me. I only know curiosity is satisfied — I shall ble in native remedies again. re probably right,' remarked d, smiling at the announce- his decision; 'the last of the ned native doctors — who w something is dead. His s Tiurai; I met him when I ahiti before the war, and one ubt that he did, at times, ac- remarkable results. There is humbug involved in all native that it is difficult to distin- uine skill from quackery; but Tiurai used all the frills of his rtainly possessed a consider- wledge of anatomy and an ac- e with the virtues of many herbs. He never took a fee. e last decade of his life he was to travel about; people came to him from all parts of Tahiti, from Moorea and the Leeward group, and even from distant islands of the Paumotu. Some of his cures were too absurdly simple to seem real. I ran across an Englishman, when I was here before, who had suffered for months from an abscess of the leg — one of those hateful things which seem to heal from time to time, only to break out again, deeper and more malignant than before. When the sufferer had reached the point of arranging a trip to New Zealand, someone persuaded him to let Tiurai have a go at it. Skeptical, but ready to try anything in his extremity, the Englishman drove out to the district where the native doctor lived. A dozen carts were drawn up before the house, and groups of people, with the solemn air of mourners at a death-bed, sat under the trees awaiting their interviews. When the abscess was shown to Tiurai, he gave it only a casual glance and said that he would send medicine the next day.

'In the morning a boy appeared with the remedy: a small bottle of what seemed to be ordinary *monoi* — cocoanut-oil, scented with the blossoms of the Tahitian gardenia. The patient was instructed to obtain the scarlet tail-feather of a tropic bird, dip it in the oil, and draw a circle around the abscess — at sunrise, at noon, and at sunset. This sounds ridiculous enough, but for some reason the bad leg began to improve at once and was healed within a few days.

'Over certain organs of the body — notably the heart and kidneys — the remedies of Tiurai possessed a remarkable control; it is a pity that some European doctor did not gain the old man's confidence and persuade him to impart the more important of his secrets. He died in the epidemic of 1918 — the last of a long line of tahuas. His loss was a heavy one to the island; as an obstetrician alone he was of immense value,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

with his curious system of massage, which seemed to rob child-birth of nearly all its suffering. The fact that no others sprang up to take his place proves that Tiurai possessed unusual powers. There is a doctor practising at Paea and another at Haapape, but the natives have little confidence in them and consult them only in trifling cases. This does not apply, of course, to the professional exorcists, who form a distinct class. You will find them in nearly every village — the trusted exponents of an ancient art.'

III

The modern exorcists, to whom my host alluded, are descendants of the heathen *Faatere*, employed in the old days by friends of the demon-ridden, to drive out the evil spirit invoked by a sorcerer. European witnesses of the agony and death of those upon whom the destroying spirits preyed were forced to confess that powers beyond their comprehension were at work. Even the hard-headed missionaries admitted this. One of the most distinguished of them, writing of Tahiti nearly a century ago, observed: 'It is not necessary now to inquire whether satanic agency affects the bodies of men. We know this was the fact at the time our Saviour appeared on earth. Many of the natives of these islands are firmly persuaded that, while they were idolaters, their bodies were subject to most excruciating sufferings from the direct operation of satanic power . . . and . . . some of the early missionaries are disposed to think this was the fact.'

There are still on Tahiti one or two old men considered capable of dire necromancy, but the belief is dying fast, and nowadays it is the spirit of an ancestor — naturally malicious, or offended by some misdeed — which harries the human victim. I saw a case of this sort only a few weeks ago. I where I was stopping there girl who did the family w ironing — a gentle, good-nat ster of sixteen. I was rea verandah, one evening after noticed this girl near-by, over the sea in the detached manner of her race. Sudde her give a low cry, and, from my book, I saw that sh ering with an air of fear, and bent as if to ward off invi When I reached her, a mo she had collapsed in a faint; the awkwardness of carryi body to a couch. I felt her p seemed to me that her heart stirring. Then, screaming t with a suddenness that wa she sat up. I had noticed th a rather pretty girl, with ten soft dark eyes; now her lip torted in a snarl and flec light froth, while her eyes, open to the fullest extent, sh dull red glare. She sprang with an air of horrid despera next moment three of us While we took good care to harm, she was not in the lea hurting us, and flung us a we were children; it seemed there was something monst strength and ferocity of her

In the midst of the scuffle, man appeared on the ver spirit-doctor of some local who took in the situation at

'Tell me quickly,' he said can find a bottle of perfum perfume.'

I told him there was colo dressing-table in my room, instant he had a towel soa stuff, waving it about the fr head. Perhaps the fit had run for she ceased at once to str sank down on the floor, quiet

Digitized by Google

ne had run to fetch the Euro-
tor, and when he arrived the
recovered consciousness. He
beside her, to ask questions
oice. By the troubled look in
could see that she understood;
gh she seemed to make an ef-
eak, no sound came from her
ently he rose. 'It is a sort of
he informed us; 'though from
say the attack must have been
n usually violent. *Pauvre en-*
ere is no cure.'

he had gone the girl spoke.
may have been pure imagina-
he memory of a singular and
am; in the eyes of the natives,
it was terrifying, but neither
nor strange.

resting after my work,' she
tching the little clouds above
ll at once I saw an old woman
before me. She carried a staff
wood in her hand; her gray
tangled about her shoulders;
at me without smiling, and I
ly afraid. I knew her at once
andmother, who died when I
ld. Then she raised her staff
n to beat me, and I put up my
ard off the blows. After that,
elf dying. When I awoke on
, she was standing beside me,
opened my eyes I saw her
lub. Of the rest I know noth-
t that, when the doctor ques-
e, I could not answer, for the
hat woman was on my lips.'

upapau,' remarked Mahine,
doctor, when the girl had been
d, 'cannot abide perfume; it
e off the most dangerous of
ut though she pretends inno-
know that girl has done an ill
incur the anger of her grand-

ce to the spirit-world, I must
Mahine was not mistaken.
scovered afterward that the
girl had acquired a lover and was concealing from her family the fact of an impending motherhood.

There is a good deal of misapprehension in regard to the native code of morality, which most white men dismiss with the statement that no such thing exists. In reality, the discovery that this child was involved in an intrigue was something of a shock to the native mind, for she was supposedly one of the chaste girls of whom every village possesses a few — carefully guarded, and objects of considerable local pride. Chastity is, I believe, and always has been, in Polynesia, a virtue as highly prized as it is rare, though we are apt to lose sight of the fact, because the woman who cannot boast of it is neither shunned nor scorned.

Native morals — or rather the lack of them — are responsible for the advent of a regrettably large proportion of visitors to the islands. This is simple truth. The credulous and shoddy voluptuary — in England, America, or France — chances on one of the South Sea books in vogue, to feast his mind on a text spiced with innuendo, and his eyes on portraits of brown ladies whose charms are trammeled only by the sketchiest of attire. After that, if circumstances permit, he is not unlikely to board a steamer for the islands; but a month or two later you will find him even more eager to return, for the reality of his tawdry dream does not exist — the women within his reach are, if possible, less interesting than their sisters of Leicester Square, or Sixth Avenue, or the *Butte*.

In general the white men of the islands are there for one of four reasons: work, drink, women, or a murky past. But generalities are proverbially deceptive, and a man like my friend the American recluse, who chooses to live on Tahiti — decently and wholesomely as he would live at home, — because

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

he likes the island and its people, is a perpetual aggravation to gossip. And he minds his own business — here, as elsewhere, an unpardonable sin.

Gossip — the occupation of the provincial and the dull — makes no allowance for variations from type; yet one must remember that the European who does not run to type is the only one fitted to make a success of life in the islands — far out of the white man's natural range. Consider again, for a moment, the case of my friend. He has an income, and his doctoring gives him an occupation; the first is a help, the second an indispensable accessory to content. He has eyes for the beautiful and imagination for the strange; in order to live as he chooses, he is willing to sacrifice what most of us would never in the world give up. Like the cobbler in quest of happiness on Rapa Iti, he is one of the very rare men who possess resources within themselves, who are able to get enjoyment from their own minds, and are not dependent on others for diversion from dull and paltry thoughts. The only white man in a remote native community, he lives with the Polynesian on such terms of intimacy as few Europeans could endure. Their confidence is his reward; and because they are always welcome at his house, where there is a phonograph and an inexhaustible supply of cigarettes, the natives do many things for him — favors he accepts as gracefully as they are tendered. Breadfruit, bananas, and taro are brought to his door in greater quantities than he can use; when the men of the village return from the reef, to divide their fish, his portion is not forgotten. The fame of his idyllic life has spread abroad, and I wonder sometimes if, in the end, he will not be forced to seek tranquillity in places even more remote.

On one occasion a little band of wanderers, elderly and unattached white women from the sissippi, — devout rea and *White Shadows in* journeyed happily to gave him an anxious low,' they said, 'livi alone; he must be says he is so kind to We can just as well Papeete, and the sigh will do him good.'

They were counting visit of indefinite dura in some agonizing days nature gave way at la

'If you will reflect,' his uninvited guests, evident that I did not because I felt lonely th faces, I can always go want to gaze at them not felt so far.'

To most of us, in t stances, the sight of w be welcome — even earnest countenances males: thin-lipped, lea nished with black-rimm do not vary from the type is better off at many men and women the lands of the white elusive *dolce far niente* discovering this prof themselves.

The South Seas are when the ships of Cook and the people of the dying fast, are perha changed. The palms s ingly as in the days chanted vision; the s blows, and lonely lag under the stars. But th for people of our race — I set at naught an old may be places to visit o lands in which few w and to which fewer stil

Digitized by Google

FRIENDLY NEIGHBORS

BY ANNIE W. NOEL

cott is dead.'

nderson was shocked. She
er garden-shears and looked
xie, who was telling her.

. Anderson had been plan-
l; and she turned involun-
rd Mrs. Scott's house just in
r. Mrs. Scott had bought
just six years ago. She had
most wonderful red peonies
re blooming now — if she
-

derson turned rather indig-
Mrs. Hoxie. How should she
lived a whole block away —
ilson saw the hearse at the

!

derson gazed at the silent
behind. She had been plan-
.

Vilson was shocked,' Mrs.
on. 'She said she felt she
have known it before the
e, living only four houses
earse is a shock, of course.
n is a lovely woman.'

tainly was no way to speak
ad. Mrs. Anderson looked
Hoxie with resentment.
wn remorse deepened. She
lanning to call, and the red
ooming so heartlessly in
's own yard disturbed her.
right to let them stand that
s. Scott was dead. With a
he wished she had called.
into Mrs. Lewis's next door,
rs. Lewis knew.
vis knew. She had just read it in the New York *Tribune*. The New York *Tribune* still lay on the floor where it had fallen.

Tears were in Mrs. Lewis's eyes. It seemed so wrong, now, that they had lived so long almost back to back and had never spoken. 'I have met her on the street too,' said Mrs. Lewis, with profound regret.

Going back to her garden, Mrs. Anderson looked at Mrs. Scott's sightless windows. She had often wondered if Mrs. Scott was looking. Now she knew there was no one behind those windows. It was dreadful certainty.

She wished she had called.

She saw Mrs. Allen, next door on the other side, and wondered if she knew. She stepped to the hedge, irresistibly impelled.

'I don't believe it,' replied Mrs. Allen, with the utmost firmness.

Mrs. Anderson was aroused. Why a tone like that? Toward the dead? But she replied gently. The hearse had been seen at the door. And Mrs. Lewis had read it in the *Tribune*.

'Oh!' replied Mrs. Allen, unrelenting; 'the *Tribune*.'

She had n't known her personally, Mrs. Allen went on, seeming to think some explanation was due. All she knew of her was that, the day after they had moved in, a voice had called Mr. Allen on the 'phone, and asked if they were sure they had a building-permit to put up exactly that type of ready-cut garage.

Mrs. Anderson's eyes drooped as she looked at the garage. And again she

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

wondered, passionately, why she had n't called on Mrs. Scott.

Young Mrs. Baker was just passing, with little Marjorie.

'She's the only other woman in the block with just one child,' meditated young Mrs. Baker. '*Is* she dead?' asked young Mrs. Baker with energy.

The hearse had been seen at the door, And it was in the *Tribune*.

'Just before I left the house, not ten minutes ago,' continued young Mrs. Baker, only growing firmer, 'the Board of Health called up to say they had been asked to instruct me to keep Marjorie on her own premises until she got over her cough. A neighbor. With one child. They are not allowed to give names.'

Together they gazed at the silent house.

A colored woman came out and began to pick the peonies.

'I suppose she would know,' said Mrs. Anderson, with a catch in her voice.

She wished she had called.

The colored woman picked all the peonies.

The house stared at them.

'I was planning to call,' said Mrs. Anderson.

Mrs. Anderson went in to get her market-basket. She felt as if she must get away for a little while. But even the market-basket was on a shelf by the window, and through the window she saw Mrs. Scott's house.

'Oh!' cried Mrs. Anderso
'I wish I had called.'

At a turn of the road she
help a small child with hi
sandal; and on lifting her h
straight at Mrs. Scott, pau
ested.

'Oh!' Mrs. Anderson ca
in time.

'Yes,' replied Mrs. Sco
tactful. 'So many did. I
Scott's mother. She had b
us.'

Swept on by the current
Mrs. Anderson felt a great
ing something. She had b
foundly moved. She had
so much in the last hour.
seem possible to have thing
their former basis. She had
that she would have liked
She had felt that Mrs. Sc
quite understood by some.
died — actually died, witho
knowing it, when she lived

But, no, she had not.

Mrs. Anderson felt just
feeling she had always t
would have had for Mrs. S

She had felt that Mrs.
not.

'I have been intending
said warmly, trying to cr
passionate remorse of the la
a few words.

'Yes, do,' replied Mrs.
answering cordiality, as she
'Some time.'

Digitized by Google

PREACHING IN LONDON. III

BY JOSEPH FORT NEWTON

er had the Armistice been signed, followed, not simply a rebound, apse, which no one who lived will ever forget. Swiftly, tragi- igh mood of sacrifice yielded to a fishness, and the solidarity won was lost, together with most of n that had stood the stress and The moral demobilization was the disillusionment appalling. ived a generation in five years; l of a new world of which they ed, they found themselves in a ittered, confused, cynical, gray if not cracked to its foundations old envies working their malign ch a chaos offered free play to and slimy influence, making the uditorium for every hoarse and e that could make itself heard. ne of social irritation, moral re- l spiritual fatigue, almost more the war itself, the only joy being ling of boys had stopped.

ousies and new envies began to selves felt — among them a very anti-American feeling; a remi- part, of the impatience at our tering the war, joined with sus- ur wealth and power. The same n America, in its feeling toward nd the other Allies. Mrs. A. nith — 'Annie S. Swan' — in her book, *America at Home*, tells how arm the feeling in America was Armistice, and how quickly it There was a reaction, of which coolness, a new, subtle hostility, could sense everywhere.' Her y add, is one of the few of its ever fails of that fineness of feel- hould always exist between kin- s. Her observations are interest- nments frank but kindly, and the whole book is informed with a charming and sympathetic personality. As Mr. W. L. George has said, if the war did not make us love our enemies, it at least taught us to hate our allies.)

November 20, 1918. — For one who has set great store by the coöperation of English-speaking peoples, the new anti-American propaganda is like a personal bereavement. The feeling in England with regard to America is certainly, as the Scotch would say, 'on the north side of friendly,' and manifests itself in many petty, nagging ways. To read the London papers now, one would think that America, and not Germany, had been the enemy of England in the war. Every kind of gibe, slur, and sneer is used to poison the public mind against America. My mail at the City Temple has become almost unreadable. It takes the familiar forms — among the upper classes an insufferably patronizing and contemptuous attitude toward America and all things American; among the lower classes an ignorant ill-will. The middle classes are not much influenced by it, perhaps because, as Emerson said, America is a 'middle-class country' — whereof we ought to be both grateful and proud. This feeling against America is confined, for the most part, to England, — it hardly exists in Scotland or in Wales, — and, like the anti-British feeling in America, it is a fruitful field for the venal press and the stupid demagogue. Naturally, a journal like *John Bull* — leader of the gutter-press — is in its glory; but even in the better class of papers one reads nasty flings at

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

America and its President. As for the *Morning Post*, no one expects anything other than its usual pose of supercilious condescension and savage satire, and it is at its brilliant worst. Six weeks ago we were regarded as friends; to-day our country is the target of ridicule as clever as it is brutal. No doubt it is mostly nerves — a part of the inevitable reaction — and will pass away; but it is none the less a tragedy.

November 22. — It is nothing short of a calamity that in this ugly hour of reaction and revenge there is to be a national election. There is no need for an election, no demand for it. But to those who can see beneath the surface, there is a deeper meaning. Three months ago Arthur Henderson said: 'If we have a national election in Britain, you will not get a Wilson peace.' I did not realize at the time what he meant; but I can now say to him, 'Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.' There is to be a khaki election, such as Chamberlain had following the Boer War, the better to coin into political capital all the anger, suspicion, resentment, and disillusionment burning in the public mind. In other words, it is a deliberate scheme of the Prime Minister — or a group of strong men who use him as a tool — to mobilize the least admirable elements of England, — not the great, noble England, but a reactionary, imperialistic England, — and have them in solid phalanx behind the Peace Conference. And in the mood of the hour the scheme will work, with consequences both for England and for the world which no one can predict. Reaction in England will mean reaction elsewhere, if not everywhere.

November 24. — Nothing was left hazy after the speech of the Premier in Westminster Hall, launching his Coalition campaign. It was a skillful speech, intimating that even the Throne may be in danger, and playing upon the fears and hates of men. He wants a P
he said, in which there shall
position, — no criticism, no
— and this proposal to prost
liament was greeted with
There is protest in the Libe
but men in the street and
each other the knowing loo
approving nod, praising '
Welsh Wizard.' It is called
Election,' since each Coaliti
date must have the indorsem
Prime Minister, and the food
the most detestable thing in
mind. Sir George Younger
brewer of the kingdom — is
izer and wire-puller of the ca

As for the Prime Minister,
the author and the hero of th
markable blood-and-thunde
picture show in political hist
the papers call 'The Victory
How I Won the War.' He g
fro, shrieking two slogans. H
the Kaiser! Second, twenty-
sand million pounds indemni
sublime statesmanship! Be
smoke-screen of rhetoric an
the most sinister forces are
the trick will work. Liberals a
ites are unable to unite. Ev
should unite, they could not
tide. Two things are as plain
were written upon the wall.
President is defeated before
and second, if the war is won,
is lost.

November 26. — Once again
sharply divided as to the mo
purposes of the Prime Min
some he is held to be a m
others a light-minded mountel
others think he is only a politic
leon, taking color from the l
man, or group of men, he mee
ously he is none of these th
merely an opportunist, wit
principle or policy, — except
power, — feeling his way to

Digitized by Google

ory is that, walking in the rliament with a friend the e suddenly stopped, tapped nd said: 'I sometimes won- Lloyd George.' His wonder y millions of people. Cer- not the Lloyd George we ow, who had the light of his eyes. Limehouse is far ace. The fiery champion of he Boers is a pathetic mem- an who defied the vested England in behalf of the ged, the disinherited, is a e is another Lloyd George, strange that he does not f. With his personality, his eech, his political acumen, st amounts to inspiration, d England anywhere; but ed back. It is one of the lures of leadership in our

28. — Often one is tempted t the Labor Movement is ristian thing on this island. ship, at least, it is spiritually leaders, as I have come to being sincere, earnest, hon- have worked their way up ottom, or else have been the Movement by the op- r service. Not all of them ded, but the outstanding spokesmen of the Move- , unfortunately, are in ad- rank and file — are men of own, or nearly so, in Amer- Henderson, Thomas, Snow- MacDonald, Clynes, and ke a goodly group. Hender- preacher; so is Thomas. As millie, I do not know what affiliations, if any, may be, he is a disciple of Keir that his relentless idealism by the nobility of his char- gaunt, stooped, his face harsh attrition of earlier years; but his smile is kindly, and his eyes have in them the light of an unconquerable will. He helps one to know what Lincoln must have been like.

In this campaign the leaders of Labor are almost the only keepers of the nobler idealism of England, and their programme is essentially Christian. Alas, they have a heavy weight of inertia to carry, and one wonders if they can fire the apathetic mass, fatalistically submissive to its lot, and suspicious of anyone who tries to alter it.

November 29. — Anyway, I am having the time of my life, going to every sort of political meeting and listening to every sort of speech. It is a big show and a continuous performance. The best address I have heard, so far, was delivered by a Methodist preacher at a Labor meeting in Kingsway Hall. His sentences cracked like rifle-shots, and they hit the mark. The campaign makes me first sick, and then homesick; it is so like our way of doing it. That is, all except the hecklers. They are so quick and keen of retort. Also, the English can beat us at mud-slinging. It is humiliating to admit it, but it is so. We are amateurs in abusing the government; but we are young yet, and longer practice will no doubt give us greater skill. How like our elections is the hubbub and hysteria of it all. Mr. Asquith told me how he made a speech on world-affairs, and one of his audience said: 'What we want to know is, are we going to get a pier for our boats!' Always the local grievance clouds the larger issue. How familiar it is, as if a man went out, and encountered in the street what he thought for the moment was himself. Men, otherwise sane, seem to lose their senses in a political campaign. Statesmen talk drivel, promising what no mortal can perform, challenging the scorn of man and the judgment of heaven. O Democracy!

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

(As soon as it was known that the President was to attend the Peace Conference in person, the Tory papers in London began subtly and skillfully to paint a caricature of him in the public mind. He was described as a kind of Hamlet, living aloof in the cloisters of the White House; a visionary companioned by abstractions; a thinking-machine so cold that one could skate all round him, having 'as good a heart as can be made out of brains,' — 'not a man at all, but a bundle of formulæ,' — and, finally, by the *Morning Post*, as 'a political Moody and Sankey' coming to convert Europe to his gospel of 'internationalism,' which it described as a 'disease.' Such was the reactionary attitude toward the man who made the only constructive suggestion seeking to prevent the 'collective suicide' of war. But only a small part of the British press was guilty of such a violation of good form and good feeling. The *Times* — by virtue, no doubt, of its position, not only as a journal, but as an institution — secured from the President a memorable interview, in which he was shown to be actually and attractively human; and, further, that he had no intention of demanding the sinking of the British Fleet.

The President arrived in London the day after Christmas, and the greeting accorded him by the English people was astonishingly hearty and enthusiastic. Their curiosity to see the man whose words had rung in their ears, expressing what so many hoped but so few were able to say, joined with their desire to pay homage to the first President of our Republic who had set foot on English soil. His visit was taken to be a gesture of goodwill, and I have never seen anything like the way in which he captured the English people. He swept them off their feet. For a brief time his marvelous personality, his 'magic of the necessary word,' his tact, his charm, seemed to change the climate of the island. No man in our history could have represented us more brilliantly. In Buckingham Palace as the guest of the King, in the old Guildhall as a guest of the City, at the luncheon in the Mansion House, his words were not a mere formal, diplomatic response, but real in their unaffected simplicity, and as appropriate as they were eloquent. On the Sabbath, instead of going with the King to worship at went to the little Nonconform Carlisle, where his mother ha and his grandfather the minis talk in the old pulpit was a touched the people deeply. A House luncheon we heard th election returns — the result delayed in order to get the soldier vote.)

December 28. — So the P come and gone, and the Pri has learned what was in hi stocking. It is a blank ch may now fill it in with such can win at the Peace Table. aright the bitter mood an the hour. It is a Tory v trick, the Liberal Party asphyxiated, if not destro remains to be seen whether suscitated. Mr. Asquith w Mr. Bottomley was elected ica that would be equal to Elihu Root and the electio and would be deemed a disa Prime Minister gets what h a Parliament tied, hamstru moral mandate, three qua members having accepted and of the remainder, the l consists of seventy Sinn are either in prison or ple sit in the House. It is a P which there will be no effec tion, the Labor Party bei cant and badly led. The Pri gets what he wants, but at of the noblest tradition in tory. Labor is sullen, bitte predict a rapid developm dogma of Direct Action; an the Prime Minister will hav blame but himself. Such is a trick election, the traged grows as its meaning is reve

(The reference to Mr. Botto no ill-will to him personally, t the things for which he stands.

Digitized by Google

that I had accepted the invita-
City Temple, I received a long
from Mr. Bottomley, suggesting
te for his paper, *John Bull*, and
his admiration for Dr. Parker.
tely, as I did not choose to be
to England through such a
could not accept his invitation.
specially after my protest against
e of brewery supplies — he wrote
s about me. It did not matter;
ave been much more unhappy if
tten in my praise. He is the cap-
e most dangerous and disinte-
ments in Britain, — the mob as
om democracy, — the crowded
se, the cheap music-hall, and the
e of the sporting world. With
copious emotions, he champions
of the poor, with ready tears for
ls — preferably if the story of
will smack a little smuttily in his
nce the Armistice, his office has
oison-factory and centre of anti-
propaganda, and in playing upon
nd hates and prejudices of people,
ster. Alas, we are only too famil-
s type on this side of the sea.)

y 4, 1919. — Joined a group
on, to discuss the problem of
union, by which they seemed
Church union — a very differ-
But it was only talk. Men are
for it, and the time is not ripe.
it be hastened, as my friend
p of Manchester thought when
sed some spectacular drama-
f the Will to Fellowship dur-
ar. Still less will it come by
ll historical loyalties in one
uishable blue of ambiguity. If
icial, it will be superficial. It
ne spiritually and spontane-
e it will be a union, not of the
out of the churchyard. Dicker
suggest a horse-trade. No, our
arted in passion; in passion we
e together. It must be a union,
mpromise, but of comprehen-
ll the churches were made one
hat difference would it make?
Little, if any. Something deeper and more drastic is needed. As the Elizabethan Renaissance was moralized by the advent of Puritanism, and the reaction from the French Revolution was followed by the Evangelical Revival, so, by a like rhythm, the new age into which we are entering will be quickened, in some unpredictable way, by a renewal of religion. Then, perhaps, on a tide of new life, we may be drawn together in some form of union. In this country no union is possible with a State Church, unless the Free Churches are willing to turn the faces of their leaders to the wall. So far from being a national church, the Anglican communion is only a tiny sect on one end of the island. Its claim to a monopoly of apostolicity is not amenable to the law of gravitation — since it rests upon nothing, no one can knock away its foundations. Just now we are importuned to accept the 'historic episcopacy' for the sake of regularity, as if regularity were more important than reality. Even the Free Churches have failed to federate, and one is not sorry to have it so, remembering the lines of an old Wiltshire love-song which I heard the other day:—

> If all the world were of one religion
> Many a living thing should die.

January 12. — Alas! affairs on the lovely but unhappy island of Ireland seem to go from bad to worse, adding another irritation to a shell-shocked world. From a distance the Irish issue is simple enough, but near at hand it is a sad tangle, complicated by immemorial racial and religious rancors, and, what is sadder still, by a seemingly hopeless incompatibility of temperament between the peoples of these two islands. They do not, and apparently cannot, understand each other. It looks like the old problem of what happens when an irresistible force meets an immovable object. Besides, the friction is not only

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

between Ireland and England, but between two Irelands — different in race, religion, and economic organization. If Ireland could be divided, as Lincoln divided Virginia, the riddle would be solved. But no Irishman will agree.

The English people, as I talk with them about Ireland, are as much bewildered by it as anybody else. They do feel hurt at the attitude of South Ireland during the war, and I confess I cannot chide them for it. Ireland was exempted from conscription, from rationing, from nearly all the hardships of a war which, had it been lost, would have meant the enslavement of Ireland, as well as the rest of the world. A distinguished journalist told me that his own Yorkshire relatives were forced into Irish regiments by politicians, to make it appear that Ireland was fighting. The Irish seaboard, except in Ulster, was hostile seaboard. It required seventy-five thousand men to keep order in Ireland, and that, too, at a time when every man was needed at the front. Ulster, in the meantime, did magnificently in the war, and it would be a base treachery to coerce it to leave the United Kingdom. Ulster may be dour and relentless, but it has rights which must be respected. Yet, if England does not find a way out of the Irish muddle, she may imperil the peace of the world. So the matter stands, like the Mark Twain story in which he got the hero and heroine into so intricate a tangle that he gave it up, and ended by offering a prize to anyone who could get them out of it.

January 14. — To-day a distinguished London minister told me a story about the President, for which he vouches. He had it from the late Sylvester Horne, — Member of Parliament and minister of Whitefield's Chapel, — who had known the President for years before he was elevated to his high office. Horne happened to be in America — where he was al
come guest — before the w
after the President was in
and he called at the White H
his respects. In the course
he expressed satisfaction th
tions between England an
would be in safe hands whil
dent was in office. The Pre
nothing, and Horne wond
Finally he forced the issue, p
a question point-blank. Th
said, addressing him in t
language of religious fellow
ther Horne, one of the great
ties that has befallen mankin
during my term of office. I
from Germany. Go home an
Irish question, and there
doubt as to where America

How strange, how tragic,
kept America out of the wa
than two years, — since near
men are in the party of the
— Ireland should also keep A
of the peace, and defeat, or
definitely postpone, the orga
an effective league of nations
may be the price we must p
wrongs of olden time, by vi
law whereby the sins of the
visited upon generation aft
tion. Naturally the English
not understand our urgent
the problem of Ireland, no
how it meddles in our affairs
the springs of good-will, and
the coöperation between Eng
ing peoples upon which so
pends.

January 16. — At the Lor
ry Society — which has ma
of its vice-presidents — one n
interesting artists, as well as
are trying to sing the Everla
in these discordant days —
Noyes, Newbolt, Yeats, Ma
name but a few, with an
glimpse of Hardy. Nor do I f

Digitized by Google

little daughter of St. Francis, *The Way of Wonder*. A reading by Sir Forbes Robertson is event, as much for his golden for his interpretative insight. of Mackereth, some time ago, y as a spiritual teacher and aler, was memorable, appeal- e Spirit of Song to bring back grown bitter and dark the and guidance of vision. The I heard of Mackereth was itish officer as we stood ankle- ppy mud in a Flanders trench. e could have a League of Poets ld be hope of a gentler, better d they surely could not make ness of it than the 'practical' e made. [If the image in the the poets of to-day is a proph- morrow, we may yet hope for here pity and joy walk the old, an road, and 'Beauty passes sun on her wings.']

y 19. — The Peace Conference vith imposing ceremony at yesterday, and now we shall we shall see. An idealist, a t, and an opportunist are to world to rights. Just why a was not included is hard to t no doubt there will be pessi- lenty before the job is done. au is a man of action, Lloyd man of transaction, and what man the President is, in nego- f this nature, remains to be re- The atmosphere is unfavorable eliberation and just appraise- e reshaping of the world out- to the quieting of all causes of is humanly impossible. To- ritain and America would be e if they were agreed, and if e ready for a brave, large ges- world-service — but they are . America had only enough of o make it mad and not enough e it; Britain had enough to make it bitter. As a penalty of having no axe to grind, America will have to bear the odium of insisting upon sound principles and telling unpalatable truths, and so may not come off well. We shall see whether there is any honor among nations, whether the terms of the Armistice will be made a 'scrap of paper,' and whether there is to be a league of peace or a new balance of power — a new imperialism for the old. Meanwhile, all ears will be glued to the keyhole, straining to hear even a whisper of 'open covenants, openly arrived at.'

January 30. — On my way back from Scotland I broke my journey at Leicester, to preach in the church of Robert Hall — the Pork-Pie Church, as they call it, because of its circular shape. In the evening I lectured on Lincoln. Leicester, I remembered, had been the home of William Carey, and I went to see his little Harvey Lane Church, where he dreamed his great dream and struggled with drunken deacons. Just across the narrow street is the red-brick cottage where he lived, teaching a few pupils and working at his cobbler's bench to eke out a living. It is now a Missionary Museum, preserved as nearly as possible in its original form and furniture, its ceiling so low that I could hardly stand erect. There, in his little back-shop, — with its bench and tools, like those Carey used, — a great man worked. Pegging away, he nevertheless kept a map of the world on the opposite wall of his shop, dreaming the while of world-conquest for Christ. There, too, he thought out that mighty sermon which took its text from Isaiah 54: 2, 3, and had two points: Expect great things from God; attempt great things for God.

No other sermon of that period — 1792 — had only two points, and none ever had a finer challenge to the faith of Christian men. We need the vision of

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Carey in this broken world to-day, that so, however humble our lot, we may learn to think in world-terms — in terms, that is, of one humanity and one Christianity. I felt myself standing at the fountain-head of that river of God which will yet make this war-ridden earth blossom as a rose.

April 8. — The City Temple mail-bag entails an enormous amount of labor, bringing almost a hundred letters a week; but it is endlessly interesting. There are letters of all kinds — a series from Manchester proving that the world is hollow and that we live on the inside — and from everywhere: China, India, France, America, and all over Britain. If an American says a naughty thing about Britain, a copy of it is sent to me, underlined. If it is the other way round, I am not allowed to forget it. There are letters from ministers whose faith has been shaken, and from others who want to go to America; pitiful letters from shell-shocked boys in hospitals; letters from bereaved parents and widowed girls — heroic, appealing, heart-breaking, like that from an old woman in the north of England whose life of sorrow was crowned by the loss of her two grandsons in the war. In closing she said: 'Me youth is gone, me hope is dead, me heart is heavy; but I neglect no duty.' To which I could only reply that, though God had taken everything else, in leaving her a love of righteousness He had left her the best gift He had.

As nearly all the City Temple sermons and prayers are published, both hearers and readers write to agree or disagree, or, more often, to relate difficulties of faith or duty. The mail-bag is thus an index to the varying moods of the time in respect to matters of faith, and I learn more from it than I am able to teach others. Every time a sermon has to do with Christ, it is sure to be followed by a shower of letters, asking that the subject be carri
In spite of the agitations of
— perhaps because of ther
think ye of Christ? remain
absorbing and fascinating q
tions.

Somehow, in spite of my
the last ten years, I have al
shrinking feeling about w
printing prayers. Yet, whe
letters telling how perplexed
folk are helped by them,
Public prayer, of course, i
from private devotion; it is
indeed, but representative
bolic, too. One speaks for n
of whom are dumb of soul,
can help others to pray, i
while. Yesterday, in the Aut
a man took me aside and t
story. He was an officer in
of the service, having beer
and smitten with fever in th
tamian campaign. He tool
pocket a tiny book, — it lo
notebook, — saying that it
the bread, the meat, the mi
had kept his soul alive o
marches and the weary w
hospitals. I thought it was,
copy of the New Testame
Imitation of Christ; but, on
I found ten of my little praye
the paper and pasted in the l
things help me to go on, eve
shrinking I cannot define.

April 16. — The hearin
British Coal Commission, in
Robing-Room, some of wh
attended, look and sound li
judgment-day. Never, I da
England seen such pitiless p
the lives of the workers, th
profits of the owners, — run
high as 147 per cent, — an
ging' of the public. It is lik
light suddenly turned on.
the country stands aghast
could surpass the patience,

Digitized by Google

lentless politeness of Robert
o conducts the case for the
le has had all England on
de — lords, dukes, and nobles
e examined them as to the
ir holdings. They were swift
witty in their replies, but it
ch that they had to come
noned by a miner. They were
surly, but they humbly obey-
we are in a new England;
h their lordships may have
cess in the King's Robing-
y are in fact already defeated
y know it. They win a skir-
hey lose a battle.
. — What the Free Cathol-
turn out to be remains to be
so far, it is more clever and
an constructive. W. E. Or-
s Bernard Shaw, and W. G.
Chesterton. At first, it was
be only a protest against the
barrenness of Nonconform-
, in behalf of rhythm, color,
olism. But it is more than
eeks to unite personal relig-
ence with its corporate and
expression, thus blending
too often held apart. As be-
glicans and Nonconformists,
s the higher unity of things
not differ, seeking the large-
rist in whose radiance there
every type of experience and
It lays emphasis on fellow-
no one can find the truth for
nd no one can find it alone.
einterpreting and extending
ental principle, and at the
disinfecting it of magic, the
olicism may give new impetus
ative social endeavor. For
s been observed that many
Churchmen — for example,
re, who is one of the noblest
in modern Christianity —
leaders in the social inter-
f Christianity. Perhaps, at
last, we shall learn that it was not the Church, but Humanity, with which Jesus identified Himself when He said: 'This is my body broken for you.' The great thing about Christianity is that no one can tell what it will do next.

June 2. — Have been down in Wales for a day or two, lecturing on Lincoln, and also feeling the pulse of the public sentiment. I found it beating quick and hot. Indeed, not only in Wales, but all over the north of England, there is white-hot indignation — all due to that wretched election last autumn. One hears revolutionary talk on all sides, and only a spark is needed to make an explosion. When I see the hovels in which the miners live, — squalid huts, more like pig-pens than human homes, — I do not wonder at the unrest of the people, but at their infinite patience. Physical and moral decay are inevitable, and the spiritual life is like a fourth dimension. I asked a Labor leader what it is that is holding things together, and he replied: 'All that holds now is the fact that these men went to Sunday School in the churches and chapels of Wales years ago; nothing else restrains them.' Thus a religious sense of the common good, of communal obligation, holds, when all other ties give way. But the churches and chapels are empty today, and in the new generation what will avert the 'emancipated, atheistic, international democracy,' so long predicted? Religion must do something more than restrain and conserve: it must create and construct. If ever we find the secret of creative social evolution, it will be in a deeper insight into the nature and meaning of religion as a social reality, as well as a private mysticism. This at least is plain: the individual and the social gospel belong together, and neither will long survive the shipwreck of the other. Never, this side of heaven, do I expect to hear such singing as I heard in Wales!

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

June 16. — Henry James said that three marks distinguish London — her size, her parks, and her 'magnificent mystification.' To know the mystification one needs to spend a night — cool, moonless, and windy — on top of St. Paul's Cathedral. After climbing as many steps as there are days in the year, and a journey through devious diagonals, we emerge by a tiny door leading to the Golden Gallery, three hundred feet above the sleeping city. Sounds as they ascend are isolated and identifiable, even when softened by distance or teased by the wind. Fleet Street, westward, is a ravine of yellow glamour. Cheapside looks like a fissure in the side of a volcano, where blackness swallows up everything else. The bridges play at criss-cross with lamp-reflections in the river. The clock-tower of Westminster, like a moon and a half, shines dimly, and the railway signals at Cannon Street Station look like stars of the under-world — crimson, emerald, amber. By half-past three a sky, mottled with heavy clouds, begins to sift them into planes and fills the breaks with the sort of light that is 'rather darkness visible.' Slowly the pall over the city, half mist and half smoke, — the same 'presumptuous smoake' of Evelyn's day, — begins to drift sullenly with the wind, like a gas-attack. An hour ago the lamplights made everything seem ghostly; now the ghostliness is theirs. Presently, out of a sea of slate, Wren's steeples rise like gaunt spectres, with an air compounded of amazement and composure. The last thing to take shape is the Cathedral itself; first the gilt Cross shines palely, then the Lantern grows to unearthly whiteness, but the Dome still broods in darkness. As we watch, the campaniles and the statues below turn from alabaster to ivory. Squadrons of clouds float in an atmosphere that is turning from gray to pearl, and from pearl to gold, like the rosy *amorini* in a Venetian alta river is astir with barge trams sprinkle grains of hu the thoroughfares. Ca crawls back under its pall smoke. At last the city, i itude of detail, is reveal mystification of the night the day with 'sovran eye glimpse of the Cathedral in, in the glow of the east makes one wonder why we our worship, as they do at dawn.

July 25. — With appalli are beginning to see how lit by the war, and how m Instead of a world worthy osity and idealism of the d moral collapse, revolutiona industrial chaos, and an org gance. In politics, in busi life, things are done which excited horror and disg One recalls the lines of Che ten after the landslide 1906: —

> The evil Power, that stood for P
> And went with Women and C
> Bridge,
> Ceased: and Democracy assumed
> Which went with Bridge and
> Champagne.

Nothing is more terrible th let-down all about us, un ease and haste with which forgetful world has proved vows it swore in its hou Yesterday a London ma that half the crime in the bigamy. Reticences and seem to have been thrown an accompaniment of the which has become a symbol of the hour. Often it has b man is the modest sex, bu lieved it until now. Young fifteen and twenty-two are able, and imitate the manne

Digitized by Google

king for good wages, they are
nt of their parents, demand-
eys, to come and go at all
d at the slightest restraint
home. In broad daylight the
ks are scenes of such unspeak-
rity that one is grateful for
tion of garden walls. Who
ate the injury done by this
of the moral bonds, this let-
of the bars to the brute?
speak of war as a purifier of
masters of a Satanic satire!
er 12. — These are days when
may happen. Having lived
ars in an atmosphere of vio-
are irritable, and riots break
slightest pretext. Many fear
story of a century ago, when
ollowed Waterloo, may re-
Nobody is satisfied with the
he Peace Conference — sor-
quels to a victory won by
nd sacrifice. Some think the
hard, some too soft, and all
w it can be enforced without
e seeds of other wars. The
of the League is criticized as
re as in America, but with
e the poisonous partisan and
enom displayed at home. It
if the nations hold together,
ant can be amended and the
ised and made workable as
ires; but if they pull apart,
hopeless.

happening in America is hard
ut, except that, under cover
-gas attack on the President,
ments that opposed the war
g the whole hyphenated con-
have formed a coalition of
destroy him. At the Peace
e he was the victim of a ven-
nen of his own country who,
n purposes, tried to stab their
dent in the back at the very
when he was negotiating a
peace in a foreign land! Not
unnaturally the attitude of the Senate is interpreted on this side as a repudiation of the war by America. 'You came late and go early; having helped to put out the fire, you leave us to clean up the mess,' my English friends say. No wonder they feel bitter, and this feeling is fanned by the anti-American fanatics, whose organized propaganda — something new in England — has been so active since the Armistice. No doubt it is provoked in part by the stupid anti-British propaganda in America, with other elements added, the while sinister forces are busy in behalf of estrangement between two peoples who should be, not only friends, but fellow workers for the common good.

(An unhappy example of this feeling, which marred the closing weeks of my ministry, was an alleged 'interview' which appeared in the *Daily News*, purporting to come from me. It made me use words remote from my thought, in a spirit foreign to my nature; and the result was an impression so alien to my spirit, and so untrue to the facts, as to be grotesque. Such words as these were put into my mouth: 'I have come reluctantly to the opinion that an American minister cannot really succeed in England. There is something in the English character or point of view — I cannot define it — that seems to prevent complete agreement and sympathy between the two. There exists a body of opinion amongst the middle men in the ministry and the churches that objects to the permanent settlement of American preachers in this country.' All of which was manufactured so far as I was concerned, however true it may be to English opinion. When the man who did it was asked for his reason, he said that he wished 'to keep American ministers from coming to England.' Of course, it will take more than that to keep us from going to England, — though I dare say it will be many a day before an American accepts an English pastorate, — but the incident illustrates the state of mind almost a year after the Armistice. Unfortunately that feeling still exists, and it makes an exchange of pulpits difficult for Americans who have any national self-respect.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

However, by patience and mutual regard this irritation may be overcome in the morning of a fairer, clearer day.)

October 9. — Sir Oliver Lodge lectured in the City Temple to-night. The Temple was full, with many standing in the aisles. His subject was 'The Structure of the Atom,' and he spoke for more than an hour, holding his audience in breathless interest Even the children present heard and understood, as if it had been a fairy-story. Indeed, it was more fascinating than a fairy-story — his illustrations were so simple, so vivid. As a work of art, the lecture was a rare feat. If only the men of the pulpit could deal with the great themes of faith — surely not more abstract than the structure of the atom — with the same simplicity and lucidity, how different it would be! Tall, well-formed, his dome-like head reminding one of the pictures of Tennyson, the lecturer was good to look at, good to hear; and the total impression of his lecture was an overwhelming sense of the reality of the Unseen. He made only one reference to psychical studies, and that was to warn people to go slow, not to leap beyond the facts, and, above all, — since spiritualism is not spirituality, — not to make such matters a religion. This advice came with the greater weight from the man who more than all others, perhaps, has lifted such investigations to the dignity of a new science.

October 12. — Mr. Asquith, Lord Robert Cecil, Mr. Clynes, and Premier Venizelos of Greece, all on the same platform, speaking in behalf of the League of Nations! Such was the bill of fare at the Mansion House, to which was added — for me — a spicy little chat with Mrs. Asquith, most baffling of women. She is lightning and fragrance all mixed up with a smile, and the lightning never strikes twice in the same place. Mr. Asquith read his address — as he has been wont to do since he first became Prime Min style as lucid as sunlight a less: a deliberate and weigh more like a judicial opinion tion, yet with an occasional den fire. Clynes also read which was a handicap, for effective speaker when he go. Lord Robert — tall, st centuries of British culture his face — was never more his wisdom and earnestnes heard in his grave and simpl finer mind of England. If o more militant, as he would too keen a sense of humor. spiritual quality which on much in the statesmanship — I shall never be happy Prime Minister! Venizelos w graceful, impressive; and in that I had with him afterwa with warm appreciation of and high-mindedness of the He has the brightest eyes since William James went a out the moral greatness of the Christian vision of Smu of the most interesting pers our time and one of its able

October 20. — The Preside en at a time when he is most is appalling! Without him run riot. Though wounded ing manner, he still holds th trench of the moral ideal world! Whatever his faults his errors of judgment or his of temperament, — in his v he saw straight; and he ma proposal looking toward a co organized in the service of t good. Nothing can rob h honor. If our people at hon known the sinister agencies he had to contend, — how tarists of Europe were mobil him at Paris, — they would achievement, while falling

Digitized by Google

all mortal achievements do, ng short of stupendous. Those the scene from this side have able pride in the President; gh his fight should cost him nen the story is finally told he alongside another who went of dominion in pitiful, high- shion' to his martyrdom. He e a brave man should fall, at as much a casualty of the war ldier who fell in Flanders or ne.

er 11. — Sunday evening, the ny last service as the Minister ty Temple, and the sermon its text Revelation 3: 14 — ings saith the Amen.' It was o interpret that old, familiar, word, — the Amen of God to tion of man, and the Amen of he way and will of God, — make vivid that vision which gh the shadows, and affirms, ll is well, nor yet that all is ill, all shall be well when 'God e the pile complete.' Its mes- that, when humanity sees been the Eternal Purpose beginning, and the 'far-off nt to which the whole crea- es,' the last word of history grand Amen — a shout of e final note of the great world- -day, at noon, all over the everything paused for two in memory of the dead. The ple was open and many peo- ed for that moment of silent, embrance; and that hushed vas my farewell to the great it, and to a ministry wrought ne of Jesus in behalf of good- aking with stammering voice hs which will still be eloquent the noises of to-day have he feet that made them, into

er 12. — To-night the National Council of the Brotherhood Movement, which gave me so warm a welcome in 1916, tendered me a parting dinner — an hour which I can neither describe nor forget. Dr. Clifford — a veteran soldier in the wars of God — presided, and his presence was a benediction. Looking back over my three years and a half in London, I can truly say that, though I did not want to come, and would not have come at all but for the war, I do not regret that I did come — save for the scenes of horror and suffering, which I pray God to be able to forget. Nor do I regret leaving, though my ministry has been a triumph from the beginning, in spite of many errors of my own added to the terrible conditions under which it was wrought. As long as I live I shall carry in my heart the faces of my dear friends in England, and especially the love and loyalty of the people of the City Temple — the memory of their kindness is like sacramental wine in the Cup of Everlasting Things. Perhaps, on the other side of the sea, because I now know the spirit and point of view of both peoples, I may be able to help forward the great friendship.

November 14. — Hung in my memory are many pictures of the beauty-spots of this Blessed Island: glens in the Highlands of Scotland; the 'banks and braes o' bonny Doon'; stately old cathedrals, — strong, piteous, eloquent, — sheltering the holy things of life; the towers and domes of Oxford; Stoke Poges on a still summer day; the roses of Westcliff; the downs of Wiltshire, where Walton went a-fishing and Herbert preached the gospel — and practised it, too; Rottingdean-on-the-Sea; scenes of the Shakespeare country — the church, the theatre, the winding Avon; the old Quaker Meeting-house in Buckinghamshire, where Penn and Pennington sleep; the mountains of North Wales; great, gray London, in

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

all its myriad moods: London in the fog, the mist, the rain; London by moonlight; the old, rambling city whose charm gathers and grows, weaving a spell which one can neither define nor escape; London from Primrose Hill on a clear, frosty day; London from the dome of St. Paul's; Londo Savoy in October, seen thro of falling leaves, while a soft over the River of Years. It if one lives in London five y never be quite happy anyw and I am leaving it just in

WORDS

BY JOSEPH AUSLANDER

Words with the freesia's wounded scent I know,
And those that suck the slow irresolute gold
Out of the daffodil's heart; cool words that hold
The crushed gray light of rain, or liquidly blow
The wild bee droning home across the glow
Of rippled wind-silver; or, uncontrolled,
Toss the bruised aroma of pine; and words as cold
As water torturing through frozen snow.

And there are words that strain like April hedges
Upward; lonely words with tears on them;
And syllables whose haunting crimson edges
Bleed: 'O Jerusalem, Jerusalem!'
And that long star-drift of bright agony:
'Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani!'

Digitized by Google

RELIGIOUS CONTRASTS

TERS OF A PANTHEIST AND A CHURCHMAN

theistic philosophy of life, en with honest conviction d expounded by John Bur- een unsettling to the peace fs of many good persons, fear is the case, it is com- el — as I do after a study ce, about eighteen months f correspondence was ex- him — that it is a whole- ment! Because we are not with it.

, whether now of Chris- mmedan, of Buddhist, of f other persuasion, know- he incongruities of prac- hose persuasions, shall in art the Burroughs philos- superstition and sham, es and mysticism, it as- without material halt in the light, consider with we create a Creator, we we invent a Heaven and a Hell.' For that is but a step. And the next step must be a realization of the absurdity of the concept that impersonal, unreasoning, blind Nature, which Burroughs finds merciless and cruel as well as good, and finds to be all he can conceive of God, can be itself the author of the marvelous and inexorable laws by which it is confessedly driven.

No; I have an abiding faith that we shall march forward, away beyond him, first clearing the path of doubts such as he raises, that hold back our thinkers, and of pearly gates and immaculate conceptions that hold back our unthinking; and shall know that out of an unreasoning and impersonal Nature cannot have been developed blindly a highly reasoning, dominating, if sinful, race of beings. And if our God is not unreasoning and impersonal, then it is fair to believe Him reasoning and personal. — HERBERT D. MILES.]

Herbert D. Miles)

ILLE, N.C., *October* 27, 1919.

g your recent article, I nd have several times re- lse, to write you; I have ving that you may have by many a thoughtless tant. I am an ordinary, can business man, with ferior powers of analysis with your own. Had the de by you in the article en made in something late Robert Ingersoll, ey would have disturbed me not a whit, as my conception of him, rightly or wrongly, has always been upon a different plane from my respect for you. But since reading your statements it has seemed, unhappily, as if the Anchor to all that makes for hope beyond this life had suddenly been cut away.

It may well be that I have not comprehended the full meaning and intent of your article. The impression it gave me was, that you feel that it is rather childish in humankind to pray; to look to a sort of all-wise Father; to believe that any Power, higher than we are,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

cares for us individually; that in doing this, we are setting up a sort of Golden Calf for ourselves; and that there is but a slight and refined difference between 'Church bells and good Sunday raiment' and the ceremonies of the heathen; that Jesus Christ, and all that he has meant, is merely the product of an Oriental imagination and idealism, written, some generations after, into the presumably established fact of his life and crucifixion.

If it is not asking too much, will you let me know whether my interpretation of you, as above expressed, is substantially true?

(*From John Burroughs*)

RIVERBY, N.Y., *October* 30, 1919.

I suppose my paper, to which you refer, is capable of the interpretation you place upon it. I have enough such essays to make a volume. Did you see one called 'Shall we accept the Universe?' In all these papers I attempt to justify the ways of God to man on natural grounds. If you attempt to do it on theological grounds you get hopelessly mired. I am a Pantheist. The only God I know is the one I see daily and hourly all about me. I do not and cannot separate Nature and God. If you make two of them, then who made and rules Nature? My God is no better and no worse than Nature.

Of the hereafter I have no conception. This life is enough for me. The Christianity you believe in is a whining, simpering, sentimental religion. The religion of the old Greeks was much more brave and manly. Christianity turns its back on Nature and relegates it to the Devil. I am done with the religion of Kings and Despots. We must have a religion of democracy, and find the divine in the common, the universal, the near-at-hand. Such is the religion of Science. The Christian myths have had their day. Only the moral and ethical part of Christian

monizes with Science, w

legend must perish.

(*From Herbert D*

ASHEVILLE, N.C., *N*

Thank you for your v

of the 30th October. It

quiry perfectly, and I an

do not wish from me a

dissuade you from your

should I have the temer

such a thing. But I do

sibly have a more or les

tachment, in that I hav

of your former papers p

ligion, nor on the othe

indulged in the reading

higher criticisms, or pap

versial nature defending

narrow views of Christi

lieve it possible that w

common ground and eve

other something — whi

each of us good.

I wonder if you have e

self whether our civiliza

us anywhere if we were

like you? It seems to

cannot all be distinguish

and cannot all have yo

character, those of us w

average men would be a

without an 'Anchor' sa

and as we make human l

easily become changed

have a feeling of 'after

and license, rather than

the majority, would rul

And I wonder if you s

a half-truth when you

Christian religion is a si

mental thing, and that

the ancient Greeks wa

brave and manly? I k

teachers of our Christian

who are as brave and

Greek who ever lived; I

there were simpering sen

Digitized by Google

hens. Indeed, as you know, ncountered some. I would as e the religion of a tiger, if it hat; the tiger is as brave as, nsual than, the old Greek.

w you better, I might make r saying that you are done ligion of Kings and Despots. hese in history, you will re- reflection, were essentially . I know you are thinking nt war — after quoting the ho were never at peace! I you that the Christian myths heir day.

you cannot separate Nature f we make two of them, you who made and rules Nature? us answer is, 'God.' Surely persons, respect Nature too lieve it capable of making it- are you not, indeed, unfair, say that 'Christianity turns Nature and relegates it to ? How does that look to you, n marks? Is the teaching of otherhood turning our back re? Or are you in this refer- y to Christian myths, or fail- Roosevelt turn his back upon and was he a Pantheist?

heard from you, I kept turn- n my mind, 'What have I 'Anchor,'' after stripping all entiment and unanalytic be- Christian theory and prac- a result, I wrote for myself d, entitled 'My Anchor.' I an agree with it, and that it modify some of your precon- clusions; you are, I know, too to receive it with other than ind and heart.

MY ANCHOR

VE AN ANCHOR. In the midst of of skepticism and realism, my f life must be stripped to the of indisputable Fact; my good old sails of childlike faith and inspiring tradition must be furled, if I am not to drift upon the shoals of Doubt. I must have an anchor to my belief in God and in Immortality, that shall make it unassailable by Atheist or Agnostic, unshakable by Dogmatist or Pharisee, understandable by Child or Hottentot; that will encourage me to pray.

I *know* that the Seed is the child of the Flower, as much as the Flower is the child of the Seed: in each is life; in each is death. I know that power is given the Sun to transmit its light and heat; to the Moon to draw our great oceans; to Man to think and to dominate; to the Bird to sing and to fly; to the infinitesimal Pneumococcus to destroy our bodies; it is unthinkable that all of this can be self-made.

I *know* then, that a Higher Power does reign, stronger than its own creations; indestructible by them, and so immortal. I *know* that this Higher Power operates only through Law; that — though it seem cruel — law, being higher, takes precedence over life; as sacrifice, being higher, takes precedence over self-preservation.

I *know* that the Man of Sorrows, whether divine or human, was not a myth; that his doctrine of brotherhood has gone farther and deeper than that of any other teacher, and is truer. I *know* that our Bible, whether or not more than an imperfect, Oriental, man-made exposition of the law and history, is for the most part an inspiring and a beautiful thing. Each must take that as does him most good, but must not make doubts of it, or of the common sense of some of its devout acceptors, an excuse for pride, or for abstinence from worship or from prayer.

I *believe*, through deduction from what I *know*, that the Higher Power, called God, — and dreamed of in all lands, among all races, at all times, in some form plural or singular, — does assume to us, as pledged for him by the Man of Sorrows, a relation of Fatherhood. I cannot know how he qualifies this to the very young, the savage, or the misguided. It does not matter. I believe that this gift makes natural and logical both prayer and a hope of a share in his love and immortality.

THIS IS MY ANCHOR.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

(*From John Burroughs*)

WEST PARK, N.Y., *November* 25, 1919.

The arranging of a trip to California for the winter has imposed so many new tasks upon me that my correspondence has been neglected. I have received many letters of approval concerning this article and others of similar import, and very few of disapproval. I am no more moved by one than the other. Some former articles of mine you might find interesting. 'Shall we accept the Universe?' — 'Is there Design in Nature?' and so on. The aim of them all is to justify the ways of God to man on natural grounds. The theological grounds do not make any impression upon me. I am much less interested in what is called God's word, than in God's deeds. All bibles are man-made; but we know the stars are not man-made, and if they are on our side, why bother about anything else? Pantheism, as Emerson says, does not make God less, but makes him more. If you look into the matter, you will find that we are all Pantheists. If I were to ask you what and where God is, you would say he is a Spirit and that he is everywhere. The good church people would be compelled to say that, too. Is not that Pantheism? A *person* cannot be everywhere. Personality is finite.

Our civilization is not founded upon Christianity — would that it were in many ways! The three great evils of our age, of most ages, — war, greed, intemperance, — would then be eradicated. How much of the real essence of Christianity — love — the heathen Chinese could teach us in such matters! There is vastly more of the essence of Christianity in Chinese civilization than in ours. We live by the head, the Chinese by the heart.

Our material civilization is the result of our conquests over Nature, or of the discovery and application of natural law, or Science. Christianity as a system has lost its moral
scheme of salvation rests u
ma of the fall of man. B
has been upward. Evolut
key to his rise, and not th
a wonder to me that man
ed his creeds — Calvinism
Roman Catholicism, and
isms. If science failed hi
would not save him. Do
pose that such a man as H
dall, Spencer, or Darwin
safe man to administer ou
fairs? And these men we
or Pantheists. Yet do they
our ethical system? The t
moral and scientific truth
us free and safe.

I can subscribe to most o
in your creed, or 'Anchor,'
in the language of naturali

As soon as I try to think
verse in the terms of our
am in trouble. The univer
made, in the sense that m
made. It is eternal — wi
ning and without end; or, sa
if you prefer. It is the God
live and move and have
You and I are only a drop
of being.

I believe the Man of Sor
historical fact, and that I
loved him had I known hi
no more to me now than
All his alleged miracles
fables. If he really died o
he never rose from the de
law, which is the law of Go
trifled with in that way.

I do not cherish the drea
tality. If there is no imm
shall not know it. We s
awake o' nights in our grav
that there is no immortali
is such a thing, we shall ha
it, though the thought of li
makes me tired, and the th
without my body as the

Digitized by Google

es, is unthinkable. What
d. The flame of the can-
nough not one of its ele-
My consciousness, which
my body, ends at death,
rocess ceases. But what-
was involved in it goes
he sum of energy of the
stant.

ghly of the Bible as you
Book of Books, yet it is
— man-made. I fail to
orage in any creed, or
n, but only in Nature as
y own consciousness. I
paper in the *Atlantic*
d-by, in which I combat
Osborn calls a biological
y that Chance rules in
e as in the world of dead
ot escape the all-embrac-
spirit that pervades all
I have no purpose to con-
ny views of these great
ery man must solve the
fe and death for himself.
ept those of another.

Herbert D. Miles)

LE, N.C., *December* 1, 1919.

for your letter of 25th
had thought merely to
acknowledgment and
py journey to California.
ou are open-minded, and
what you crave, you will
ncluding some reflections
er, without any expecta-
part that you will care to
correspondence. I shall
r former articles to which
shall certainly read your
the *Atlantic*. I take it,
you have expressed to me
tals of your beliefs or
s, and that all you have
ay, must be merely elab-

that I believe you are really a pretty good Christian? as you are, of course, a better citizen than most 'professing Christians' — not excepting myself. I can subscribe to, or pass as unimportant, your ideas as to the Universe being without beginning or end; that the Miracles are fables; that Man has 'fallen upward,' rather than as dogma has it; and, of course, that God is a Spirit.

But you jump from extolling the ancient Greeks to extolling the Chinese. You are not constructive. Perhaps you are not even fair to your own generation and people! Do not be merely destructive, I beg of you. Your views are good as far as they go, but are necessarily depressing. Do either create a *better* church, for unified work of its tremendously far-reaching kind, in 'anchoring' Society; create a better comfort than prayer; create a better instinctive hope than immortality; or encourage the Church, encourage our rising generation to stand back of it, encourage prayer, and encourage spiritual hopes and ideals! I wonder if you know what the Church is as a 'stabilizer,' in spite of its shortcomings; in spite of the slanders of it, often from lazy or misguided persons? What its real accomplishment is, in this country, and the sum of it?

What a responsibility, to print articles that may affect the rising generation against it, and to give nothing constructive in its place!

I want you to think again, as to your statement that civilization is not founded upon Christianity. I know you mean partly that Christianity is too good to recognize such a bad child; but, thinly watered as our practice of the Golden Rule is, civilization *is* founded upon Christianity. I do not think you believe that, if the chief part of the Aryan Race had originally drifted from Heathenism to Confucianism or Buddhism, — yes, or Pantheism, — instead

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

of to the new Christianity, it would still have achieved, as now, the world-leadership in the arts and sciences which we call civilization. Perhaps you, and some other leaders in the sciences, do not know your own debt to Christianity.

Your letter which I am reviewing gives one an impression of a very good man striving to reconcile certain preconceived and rooted ideas, partly Agnostic, partly Christian, with life and history; trying to forget that the things material are the really temporal, and that there are things spiritual which, in the nature of what *could* constitute immortality, must be the things immortal.

I take it that you do not seriously consider things spiritual. You say the thought of life, without your body as the base for your mind's activities, is unthinkable. Of course, that merely proves a personal limitation, and a regrettable one. I wonder if you give serious place to the world's best Poets — who are unscientific, naturally — but spiritual? John Butler Yeats has recently written: 'Poetry is the champion and the voice of the inner man. Had we not this champion to speak for us, externality would swamp the world, and nothing would be heard but the noise of its machinery.' If the thought of living forever makes you tired, as you say, then perhaps the noise of the machinery, — very pleasant machinery, much of it, — being all you have listened to, has worn you out!

Pardon me if I say that I do not think your articles are 'stabilizers'; or that they bring hope, or comfort, or happiness; or replace the want of these with anything more than 'the noise of the machinery.' I would not take seriously, if I were you, the approval you cite from the majority of your correspondents. If you will reflect, you will agree, I am sure, that after a speech upon, say, Tariffs, Temperance, or what not, — things

world is divided in
camps, — those who
the speaker's hand
ways did agree with
wished uneasy doubt
victions, bolstered up

I am sincerely glad
scribe to 'most of t
creed, or "Anchor."
call my Anchor a cre
know, are *not* based u
fact.' That in my ch
the third century; we
thing since. They s
In mine are Church,
ity. I fear you leave t
parently refuse to co
made up of Panthei
and would, say, and
deluge.'

No, I do not think
ley, *et al.* would have
administer our humar
ask. Roosevelt, of a
knew all that they di
he was a Christian ar
tor for you. Emerson
Pantheists at one p
hardly when he was

Well, a happy wint
fornia. I see that I ar
to all of my Anchor,
the winter of your y
pliable. If you are, y
But do consider the 'i
of by Yeats; and the
ticles, if not construc

(*From John*

La Jolla, Californ

I with my son and
been here a week, and
py. The world here i
sea, never a cloud i
Pacific breaking its
the rocks one hundre
In February we go t
spring.

Digitized by Google

ng to our correspondence of a
s ago, and your statement
did not think Huxley, Spen-
would be safe men to admin-
human affairs, and that our
n is based upon Christianity
der if you remember that the
of our government, Washing-
rson, Franklin, did not accept
ity? They were Deists. Both
and Jefferson spoke very dis-
ly, not to say contemptuously,
ristian scheme of salvation;
ington said in so many words
age to Congress, 'The govern-
he United States is not in any
nded on the Christian reli-
ne founders of the Republic
-thinkers. Washington enter-
e infidel Volney at the White
nd had the works of Voltaire
ary. He gave Volney a letter
mendation to the American
which he said that, if men are
kmen, 'they may be Jews or
s, or they may be Atheists.'
quotes Gouverneur Morris as
at 'General Washington be-
more in that system [Chris-
han I do.'
onfound our ethical system,
all accept, with Christianity.
cal system is the growth of
hat is true in Christianity is
and what is new is not true.
zation is founded upon reason
ce. I have said in one of my
rticles that 'a man is saved,
e truth of what he believes, but
ruth of his belief.' His creed
perfectly absurd, like that of
tian Scientists, but if it affords
nchorage,' if he can fit it into
ne of life, that is enough. The
f the Greeks and Romans was
; but see what nerves, what
hat philosophers, developed

ligion of ancestral worship of

the Japs and Chinese saves them. The mass of our own people believe in Christianity on Sundays (or used to before the automobile came in); but how few of them practise it in their daily lives. They practise the square deal, because it is good policy; it pays best in the long run.

(*From Herbert D. Miles*)

ASHEVILLE, N.C., *January* 12, 1920.

My pleasure in having your letter of a few days ago was not unmixed with a certain feeling of guilt, in view of the possibility of our questions being too complicated, and your strength too limited, to attempt adequate discussion in writing — a view that is held I am sure by Dr. Barrus, from whom I have recently heard. It is charming, as you say, at La Jolla, with 'never a cloud in sight.' I am a little prejudiced, even in this January season, in favor of my home country here in Asheville; the clouds over the great old Blue Ridge mountains, which are falling back tier upon tier in the distance to the west, from my windows, are ever-changing visions of beauty, and fall upon real trees, in their shadows, — something that you have few of in California, except in spots, where you have the greatest in the world, — and our occasional rough and cold day serves to make even more delightful our usual bright and lovely days, of the temperature of the northern May.

Without prolonging what we shall not allow to degenerate into an argument which would convince neither of us, allow me merely to comment upon your new remarks. I have a feeling that you constantly miss something vital, in your line of thought and your conclusions; that may be characteristic of the Pantheist! You say, apparently in contradiction of my insistence that civilization is based upon Christianity, that Washington, Jefferson, and others

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

did not accept Christianity; and you go on to quote Washington as to the government of the United States. Without going into any dispute as to all this, are we to assume that you consider civilization to have begun with the establishment of the United States? I would say rather that these gentlemen of history, without doubt virtuous and great, made the same error that John Burroughs — also without doubt virtuous and great — is making: that they wholly failed in realizing the debt they were under to that slowly developing, but none the less potent and true thing — Christianity! How many practise Christianity in their daily lives is beside the mark. Would you condemn a great physician because (as is usually the case) he fails to practise what he preaches? That is, would you damn his science? You say that civilization is founded upon 'reason and science.' Well, does that damn Christianity? You say that our ethical system is the growth of the ages. What of it? Do Christians claim that we would have no ethical system without Christ and the Christian principles? By no means. But we would have Athens and the Roman Empire over again — and the Hun.

In a nutshell, my dear Mr. Burroughs, — to put it in tha frank manner at which neith taken offense, — your wri religion have pleased you, a anything you write, they ha ceived with respect; but shown us a God, near in the being in a spadeful of dirt, of miles away and terribly when it comes to having a whom to pray. You may lik it is bad for the rest of us therefore, done much harm turbed much fairly earne mind — innocent though yo edly have been of any such You have missed the bull's is: 'Love the Lord thy Go thy mind, and with all thy with all thy soul; and love th as thyself.' I do not mean that you have not personal life, done all of that; I mea teaching of Pantheism puts have stated, billions of mile a nebulous thing, — regard theory of his being in all theory which Christianity en that matter. We cannot lo manner so completely pictu above quotation, a Panthei which is why I hold that yo bull's-eye.

Digitized by Google

REBECCA

BY ARTHUR SHERBURNE HARDY

I

hould n't I, if I want to?'
ns fell on Billy's rough back
nphatic slap, but met with no
The shaggy hoofs continued
he frozen road with the stolid
e to stimuli born of the con-
at in the long run a steady
he part of wisdom.
d covered two miles for the
ne, with that contempt for
distance which characterized
settler, who first chose his
lace and compelled the road
Between the low stone walls,
lders were continually evinc-
re to return to their earlier
ces, down the rocky pitch to
ng bridge in the meadow, and
hrough the moaning forest, it
way, mysterious, unending.
slap.
— if I want to.'
ing this sentiment, Billy,
p the hill, stopped and, pull-
ins through the saddle rings,
or a tuft of withered grass,
ummer long had escaped hoof
, to perish in the winter.
t — if I was n't fifty.'
, when it was too late, past
seemed a mockery — a gate
ess locked by prudery. Re-
ed. If she could stand at that
!
I would!'
ins tightened with a jerk,
flattened instantly, and legs
o the load.

But *was* it happiness? Of course it was. Everything beyond the gate *must* be.

Nearing the top of the hill, the white finger of the spire rose slowly above the sky-line, then the roof, other roofs, straggling fences, the schoolhouse — duty! On the whitewashed wall behind the teacher's desk, Rebecca saw the motto, — her own handiwork, —

Be Good and You will be Happy.

Had n't she been good? When would she be happy?

In village parlance Rebecca 'ran' the farm — one of those hilly rock-strewn farms demanding constant prodding to prevent it from 'running out.' Down by the brook in the birch woods were pleasant places — pools of dark silent water, where the brook brooded before deciding to take the leap to the next one, to pause again, out of breath; shallows where it sang to Rebecca, who never sang except at seven-day intervals in the church choir. The brook was always singing, even in winter, cheerily, to the shivering birches.

But pleasant places *produced* nothing. Pleasant places never did. Alluring, they bred idleness, all that brood of prohibited pleasures generically grouped by the minister under the word 'sin.' The bare upland pasture where the cows grazed, the shed where they were milked, the barn-cellar where the pigs wallowed, the chicken-yard bereft of grass, the vegetable patch, with its tat-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

tered scarecrow rocking in the wind — *these* counted. No food or raiment came from that wanton, running without thought of the future, purpose, or conscience, through meadow and wood to the sea.

Sometimes — not now, in winter, but when the crocuses came — Rebecca wrestled spiritually with the brook — a thing without roots or attachments, a mere gadabout, scornful of duty, of everything behind it, in its eagerness to get on. Life was real, life was earnest. As for the goal beyond the grave, she wished that it might come occasionally at the end of the day, instead of at the end of living, like Billy's grain and blanket. Even at fifty the grave was a long way off.

Strictly speaking, Rebecca was forty-eight, a fact she strictly adhered to in public. In the privacy of her own thoughts, when grim and vindictive, she was fifty; down among the birches, forty; and, in crocus-time, even thirty. 'Steady, capable woman — no nonsense about Rebecca!' was the village verdict, knowing little of what it could not see or touch.

Billy's wants attended to, Rebecca went into the house. Her mother, sitting by the window, had been watching for her return.

'You've been gone a long time.'

For an ailing old woman, watching day after day at the window of a hilltop farm, every hour was 'a long time.' But the querulous voice passed over Rebecca's soul without leaving a trace. After forty years of duty, its surface, like Billy's hide, had ceased to be supersensitive. Rebecca possessed what the minister called 'a healthy spirit.'

'Yes, mother,' she said, warming her hands at the range; 'Billy is n't as spry as he used to be.'

'Did you see the Squire?'

'Yes, mother.'

'Is it true?'

'Yes, mother, it's tr

And the truth shall The sentence from the mon came from nowh alighting on a twig — apposite. That imperti the irresponsible mind, becca's trials.

Then, for a long tim lence, their thoughts goi ways. Much hard and s preceded 'getting toge two.

Rebecca hung her squ closet and turned to th

'Where are you going

'To the office, mothe

The 'office' was a building, with a single where her father used clients — even hilltop ing lawyers as well as doctors.

That, however, was l office had descended to its legend in gilt letters s of its door. Here she accounts, her books, a Whenever she spoke of was the office she had in

It boasted a desk, abo ington was perpetually farewell address; a horse billowy surface was former clients; a book mond panes, — the law relegated to the upper sh redeeming fireplace, op framed in a white ma Ionic columns and gar in plaster, on which, u stood a group of two g lain figures in bright co holding high a tambour with a guitar. The chil given these gay figures tion, as representing a w inhabited by fairies, other mythical perso

Digitized by Google

dently belonged. That also was . If Rebecca's glance rested on ow, it was only the glance of scorn and pity appropriate to ed creatures doomed, like the es fluttering in autumn sun- an untimely end. Yet there ained enthroned, with the sofa sign on the door and the clock ever ran down — relics of the ich would not let go.

four o'clock, growing dark al- Rebecca wound the clock, — it urday night, — threw a fresh he smouldering coals, and sat the rocker before the hearth, g the little flames, hissing, and g to curl up over their prey. danced on the walls and ceil- red lights on the polished balls ndirons.

all been like a dream, only, un- eam, it had not vanished. It — and Christopher was com- day morning.

eat of Rebecca's heart quick- t had been as steady in the office as the Squire's clock, en he said, 'You're a rich Rebecca.' 'Am I?' Rebecca to herself. 'What's more,' the vent on, 'and what ain't com- ur Uncle Caleb's set it down square in the will,' — the spectacles dropped from his to his nose, — "To my niece, , in recognition of her sterling ."'

ca's lip softened, then straight- ncle Caleb had bided his time. a telegram here somewhere ristopher.' — It was then Re- eart gave its first jump. — 'He's up from York.' The Squire's fumbled among his papers. xecutor. He says, "Tell Re- ll see her Monday."'

ing this announcement, Re- heart jumped again. She had slid from the rocker to the rug; but at the crunch of heavy boots on the snow, sprang to her desk. It would never do to have Hansen find her dreaming like a silly girl on the rug before the fire.

Hansen was the overseer. He came in, his red beard dripping with moisture, and they went over the milk receipts together. It was disconcertingly evident that Hansen had something on his mind.

'Is that all, Hansen?'

'Of course, Miss Rebecca,' — Hansen began every sentence with 'of course,' — 'if what's being said in the village is true, you'll be wanting to get that wire up from the mill. We could save — '

'Yes, Hansen.' Hansen was always trying to squeeze something more out of the land by putting something more in. 'We will go into that Monday.'

Faithful man was Hansen, — looking after the farm as if it were his own, — her right hand.

When he had gone, Rebecca went back to the rug. On the wall over the mantel the clock ticked on, solemnly, intent on duty, indifferent to the time it recorded.

II

Christopher and Rebecca had played together once in the pleasant places by the brook. Christopher was a wonderful playmate. He knew every bird by its note, where it hid its nest, — in tree, in hedge, or meadow, — how many eggs the nest should hold, and of what color. He knew the bait each fish loved best, and could catch the wariest with a bent pin. No colt ever foaled on the hill had unseated him, though he had to cling desperately, bare-back, to the mane. Even the brown Durham bull looked askance at Christopher. As for the dogs, they ran to meet him at the mere sight of the stocky little figure, bare-headed, hands in ragged trousers, sure of adventure.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Where Christopher got his chief possession — imagination — is a secret untold. It did not grow on hilltop farms, and he was never seen with a book out of school. What tales he could tell! The little flaxen-haired girl listened to them for hours, open-mouthed, eyes bulging with wonder. He confided to her what he was going to do when he was a man. Among other things he was going to find the North Pole. He spoke of the North Pole as if it were a marble in his pocket. Wonderful hours those were, among the buttercups by the brook and, on rainy days, in the haymow! No real person walking the village street was half as real as the phantoms that trod Christopher's stage. Wonderful hours! spiced with the sense of stolen joys — for motherless Christopher was the son of the village ne'er-do-weel, without favor outside of the animal kingdom.

And then, gradually, almost insensibly, Christopher drew away, like a young sapling from its fellows of slower growth, and Rebecca was left behind, alone, clinging to childish toys, dreamland, and all the creations of Christopher's riotous imagination, outgrown and spurned now for the solid things beckoning to manlier ambition. And then, suddenly, leaping out of the dark, came one by one those events over which there is no control — Christopher's disappearance, her father's death, her mother's failing health, closing in on her like the walls of a narrowing room, walking roughshod over the dreams, hardening her hands, putting that fixed, determined look in her eyes; till one by one the actors on Christopher's stage died, its lights went out, and of those splendid hours nothing was left but a few rebellious tears shed in the 'office,' when accounts were done and the fire was very low.

After all, Christopher had run true to life. It was in the natural order of things that he should dis
ural and inevitable as t
should get the foot dis
tined and foreordained,
frost and potato bugs.

It was quite otherwi
Caleb. *He* was a surpris

Uncle Caleb owned t
four miles away, though
have been a hundred. O
to be sure, he drove out
and Rebecca was consci
ing glances in his shre
They talked a little of th
he went away. And now
Christopher back — Ch
money at forty-eight! Al
wiggling to the surface w
thawed out for a day c
the birds back in winter
was only a winter sun,
mentary life what would
to sleep.

The clock struck five.
near supper-time. She c
put her desk to rights,
locking the door. The k
her pocket, as if there
the office to guard.

Her mother looked up

'Rebecca, I've been th

'We can talk of tha
mother. I am tired to-n

'But, Rebecca, to-mor
bath.'

'I know it,' said Rebe

But just before going t
word 'Christopher' was n
loaded with potentialitie
casual manner she let
tence: 'Christopher's co
Mother.'

'Dear me! how time fl

A gleam of humor tw
becca's eyes.

'I wonder if he fou
Pole.'

'The what?'

'Nothing. Good-night

Digitized by Google

III

ca had conquered the major
n the ride home from the
. They had all slunk away,
y that ominous word 'fifty' —
ne. This latter she slew before
wn to breakfast Monday morn-
roines in the books on the lower
behind the diamond panes in-
glanced in their mirrors before
mportant interviews. Like Is-
ld, Rebecca hardened her heart.
on her bureau-cover would
e slightest difference, had she
any. There would be only what
seen hundreds of times — a
almost forty-eight, not quite;
n oval face, tanned by wind
; grayish eyes quick to show
indescribable danger-signals;
en hair deepened to brown; a
firm, but ready to soften; and
— nothing the matter with it,
e did not like it. She had no
in these things. So she went
irs, ignoring the mirror, thereby
what had not been seen in it

er mother saw, when Rebecca
the breakfast-tray — and won-

without warning, while pour-
coffee, a horse neighed in the
nd there, at the hitching-post,
istopher, the Christopher of the
nly bigger, with the same quick
t gesture, the same compelling
lling to her in the doorway: —
o, little girl!'
ality dropped from her like a

o, Christopher! Come in.'
topher had falsified hill proph-
ersistent rumor had forced the
on that, instead of going to the
had, as Uncle Caleb predicted,
od. Uncle Caleb was a shrewd
w, saying little beyond an oc-
casional 'I told you so.' Moreover, success had not spoiled Christopher. It was impossible to spoil him. 'Sound as a winter apple,' Uncle Caleb had said to the Squire, when making his will. And here he was, sitting opposite Rebecca, clean-shaven, talking about Ceylon and India and London and Cairo, as familiarly as he used to talk about fairies and giants and the North Pole.

Rebecca listened as the little flaxen-haired girl had listened, her eyes growing brighter, her mouth softer, her heart lighter — till suddenly, lighting a cigar and looking straight in her eyes, he said: —

'Look here, Rebecca, we have business to talk over. Where shall we go?'

Except for the maid clearing the table, there was no particular reason for going anywhere; but just here the little fox, which had slipped his leash and laid the fire in the office early in the morning before anyone was up, spoke.

'We might go to the office. It's nearer than the brook — and warmer.'

'Just the place!' said Christopher. 'So the brook's still there.'

'Yes, it's still running away, Christopher.'

Not a word had he said about what she had refused to see in the mirror; but now, sitting in the rocker, the pine cones blazing and stars coming and going in the soot of the chimney-brick, —

'You're looking fine, Rebecca.'

'Am I? I've got the farm in fine shape.' She parried the amused smile in his blue eyes with 'Tell me about yourself, Christopher.'

He began without a moment's hesitation, just as he did in the hay-mow when she said, 'I'm ready — now begin.' Perhaps, in the hay-mow, neither of them wholly believed the things he said; but they both believed in Christopher. That was his glory and charm, his intrepid, nonchalant self-confidence, his faith in himself, serene, without a

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

trace of vanity. 'Why, it's easy as water running down hill,' he used to say. Listening again, Rebecca could think of nothing but the juggler she had once seen with Uncle Caleb, tossing the balls in dazzling arcs till her eyes blinked. Only *now* the juggler's balls were realities. Christopher had really killed a real tiger in a real jungle. The gold at the foot of the rainbow was in his pocket. He had actually made the journeys they had taken together on the magical carpet. And, little by little, her spirit kindling at the touch of his, getting the farm in fine shape dwindled to utter insignificance, the cares that worried her and the triumphs that elated her appeared miserable, petty trifles.

'I suppose I could, if I wanted to,' she murmured.

'Rebecca, you *must*.'

'Must what?' said Rebecca.

'*Live!* It's easy as rolling off a log. You're a rich woman, Rebecca — *rich*.' She liked the sound of her name amazingly. 'Sell the farm, rent it, give it away. Do you want to spend the rest of your life — '

'No, I don't,' she interjected, seeing visions; 'but there's mother.'

'That's easy. Put the breath of life in her too. Take her with you.'

'Where?' said Rebecca, breathless herself.

Christopher smiled his radiant smile.

'Practical little woman! Don't I remember how you used to save the crumbs for the chickens! You have n't got to bother with crumbs now. Leave it to me. I'll manage the whole thing for you — mother and all.'

It was dazzling, the old spell was sweeping her along with him. But on the horizon hung one black cloud, in the back of her mind one awful question. She summoned all her courage, desperately.

'I suppose you are married, Christopher?'

'Bless you, no!' laughed

She hurried over the th
strangely happy.

'Nor found the North P

He laughed again.

'The North Pole's all rig
pole, Rebecca, but you and
along to — well, say Aug
grows there, no more than
pasture — though you *ha*
stones out of it.'

'Yes, I have,' said Rebe

'Don't talk it over with
Just do it. That's my mot
it's done. I have my eye o
you in 73d Street already

The color print of Wa
clock, the bookcase, and
sofa were all fading away
self, substantial, century-
the granite hills, dissolvi
mist. She was treading ai
fountains sealed for years
she ever have been conten

'Where do *you* live, C

He was standing now b
hand patting her shoulde

'You don't have to thin
woman. *I*'m looking aft
Rebecca, could you put m
night? I'd really like to g
place.'

Rebecca had never in
looked after.

'Of course, Christopher

IV

Christopher came bac
just as hungry as the ra
whom Rebecca saved her
remarking cheerfully that
the worth of his dinner. S
what he had meant: exa
said — 'To go over the ol
had done it thoroughly. I
enough, not having gone
that he should pay off old s
ing on the minister, retur

Digitized by Google

h a check toward lifting the
ge. Natural, too, was the con-
n at the quarry for a monument
the resting-place of the ne'er-
— a pyramid overtopping hum-
ldstones. There was a certain
y in these retributive proceed-
ch appealed to Rebecca's sense
e — and humor. Above all, his
of the schoolhouse, scandaliz-
ure Miss Robbins and delight-
children by a vivid recital of
misdemeanors.

is was exactly like Christopher;
n, after supper, her mother hav-
e to bed, he proposed a second
ment to the office, she said:
s no fire there, Christopher.'
who always built the fires in
nes, I'd like to know!'
was the use! There was no
ding Christopher.

ristopher built the fire and sat
ocker, and Rebecca sat at her
d the clock stared solemnly at
nt sofa.

ay be a wrench at first, Re-
he week after I went away, I
erable for the smell of the fern,
wild strawberries — you re-
don't you? in the wood-lot.
ll be different with you. You'll
that in no time.'

es! Rebecca remembered. But
y, rolling off a log did not seem
easy as it did to Christopher.
not run down with me to-mor-

like a pistol-shot, and instant-
ld the first lie of her life.
't. The inspector's coming to-
to look over the herd.'
im off. Leave it to Hansen.'
ng ever daunted Christopher.
't,' she repeated helplessly.
as looking Truth in the face,
ready for any number of lies if
y. What would happen to her
l soul was of no consequence.

Christopher took out his notebook and plunged into figures. Rebecca was familiar with figures. They had plagued her all her life. He drew his chair beside hers and reached for her pencil, checking off the items of Uncle Caleb's inventory with comments — 'solid — good as gold — nothing better' — while Rebecca's world, as the solid total mounted, melted steadily, ruthlessly away.

'You see, Rebecca,' said Christopher when she gave him his candle at the foot of the stairs, 'you have n't got to worry about the farm. It cuts no ice anyway. Think it over.'

'I have.'

'That's right. And say, Rebecca, don't bother about me. I'm going to catch the early train.' His blue eyes twinkled. 'Just leave a piece of pie on the table. I have n't forgotten. Good-night, little woman. You'll see straight by morning. There's nothing like a good night's sleep to clear away the fog.'

'No,' said Rebecca. 'Good-bye, Christopher.'

Alone in her room, Rebecca went to the mirror. She was not afraid of it now. The little foxes were as dead as the major devils.

She sat down by her window. A white mist hung over the brook. The tops of the birches were still, like floating islands. But there was no fog in her heart. It was clear as daylight. It *was* daylight, and sleighbells were jingling in the yard.

In the office Hansen was fumbling his cap. 'I thought, Miss Rebecca, seeing as how Mr. Christopher talked about selling — well — maybe I might like to buy it myself.'

Rebecca did not move a muscle.

'I have n't the least idea of selling. You can see those people to-day about running the wire up from the mill.'

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

sense of impending failure. Her personal influence, through the black background of her consciousness, is, in spite of anything she may say, foreboding. Then she endeavors to 'get hold of herself'; to prevent this thwarted desire for her child's happiness and success from turning sour and becoming a fixed, if almost unconscious, conviction that the child will not get on well at school.

She begins to pray. She invokes another conviction, that the good Spirit of the universe has no such intention for her child. She recalls some of the great passages of religious inspiration, the words of the saints who have been sure of a power outside ourselves, as well as in ourselves, making for righteousness. Thus gaining the prayer-mood, she then reminds herself that she must be the channel for bringing this good-will into the life of her child. She replaces the picture of failure, which threatens to become fixed in her mind, with a more vivid and living picture of success. With all the love and sympathy and imaginative fire she possesses, she pictures to herself her petition being granted — the new attitude on the part of her child, his awakened interest in his studies, his liking for his teachers, his expectation of success. She prays intensely, with all her desire, through and in this mental picture.

This act is exceedingly difficult; but, if done, it changes the whole atmosphere of the home. The very face of the mother as she meets the child is magnetic of success for the child instead of being prophetic of failure. In the thousand ways, known and unknown, in which the mother's mind touches the mind of the child, encouragement, expectation of achievement, faith in his powers now flow in upon the will of the child. In petitions of this nature, the whole personality is stirred; desire, intellect, and imagination are at their highest point of efficiency, that she may become a conductor of God'

She concludes her prayer w giving to God that the pray granted, a supreme act of f

There is all the difference between the man who says, to give up my bad habit,' a who says, 'I have given habit.' So there is between God may answer the pray God *has* answered it. The act of faith that the answer ered only by the defect of t The answer *is* granted; the f piness and success is forci through the narrow and channel of the mother's pe ence upon the child. Praye tuted such an influence fo ous, almost unconscious, su failure. There is no dogmat prayer as to the method of — that is left to the infinite of actual experience. The c ply made on the universe fo ness of the child, and in th the claim the psychological is set in motion for its being the universe. And this effo ize unsatisfied desire not o influence upon those for wh but tends to purify and e desire itself, so that, when t is granted, it may be on a n plane than when it was fi Yet it is the same prayer. T always satisfied. But it of limated in the process of sa

In the face of the impendi her child, a mother who h tised prayer on lesser matte powers. Her very face in the as the child dimly sees it, is of health and life. And wh what numberless ways the those who love touch one a unseen even by the argus eye Miracles occur, and the tid turns into sluggish veins, w

Digitized by Google

e is kindled through the touch
d minds.

objections will occur to one
s for the first time this theory
. Does not this explanation of
will be asked, run counter to
tice of One who said in his
Not My will but Thine be
This phrase has been greatly
It has been misused so as al-
justify the Irishman's type of
before mentioned. Rousseau
ressed a prevailing interpreta-
thus: 'I bless God, but I pray
y should I ask of Him that He
hange for me the course of
miracles in my favor? I, who
ove, above all, the order estab-
his wisdom and maintained by
dence— shall I wish that order
solved on my account? As lit-
k of Him the power to do well.
what He has already given?'
d's highest will is carried out
ough human wills working at
at. Prayer is not asking God
e the course of things,but ask-
to help me to be a part of that
things. I become so, not in
ny will, but through my will.
ter used this phrase, not be-
had exerted his own will, but
great drops of the sweat of de-
falling from his brow to the
The phrase is no idle excuse
s praying; in it we see the sub-
of desire taking place. Idle
which place this phrase, mis-
the forefront, will ever excuse
and sickness and unhappiness
l of God. Justice, happiness,
rely these are the will of God
s to the detailed method of
ing, our desires in prayer are ever being enlarged and enlightened by the inflow upon us of the cosmic desires of God.

Again, it will be asked if this theory will not lend itself to the idea that, if you want a purse of money, you must imagine it very vividly lying on the pavement outside your house, and then go out and find it. A father heard his little girl praying for the red doll in the window of the corner store, and told her she ought not to pray for things like that; she ought to pray to be a good girl, or for the heathen. The fact was that she did not want specially to be a good girl in the father's meaning of that phrase, and she did not care about the heathen, but she did want the red doll. Why make a hypocrite of her at the start? So it is with money. If that is what you really want, pray for it. If you pray sincerely, you will receive an answer which will satisfy you. Possibly not the pocket-book, but an ability to get up earlier in the morning, or to keep awake between meals, or to reduce your expenditures. The answer always comes and abundantly satisfies anyone who dares persistently to carry out the art of praying. But prayer always initiates effort.

Prayer is a hard task without the mystic sense of the personality of God. In all the lesser problems of life it is easy enough to look upon it as the simple demonstration of a natural law. But when the storms are out and the floods let loose, when one has done all one can by action and has done all one can by prayer, then life is hard and cruel, indeed, unless one can feel, behind all the laws and beneath all the principles, in higher reaches of spiritual communion, a love that understands and forgives.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

ARE WE GIVING JAPAN A SQUARE DEA

BY E. ALEXANDER POWELL

I

THE most important country in the world to Americans to-day is Japan. Before you question this assertion, think it over for a moment. Japan is the only nation whose commercial and territorial ambitions, whose naval and emigration policies are in direct conflict with our own. Japan is our only serious competitor for the trade of China. She is the key that can lock the Open Door. Japan is the only country whose interests in the Pacific clash with ours. She is the only power, save England, which is in a position to challenge our naval supremacy — and the British navy, as we are perfectly aware, can never conceivably be directed against ourselves. With the temporary eclipse of Germany as a world-power, Japan is the only potential enemy on our horizon; she is the only nation that we have reason to fear. The problem that demands the most serious consideration of the American people and the highest quality of American statesmanship is the Japanese Question. On its correct and early solution hangs the peace of the world.

It is to the great mass of reasoning and fair-minded people in both countries, who, I believe, wish to know the unvarnished truth, no matter how unflattering it may be to their national pride, how controversive of their preconceptions, how disillusionizing, that I address myself. In writing this article I have discarded euphemisms. At the risk of being accused of sensationalism, I propose to rip away the c subterfuge and political c which have so long conceal torted the facts of the situat before I proceed, let me mak clear that I am not anti- Neither do I hold a brief for am an American and, because see my country morally in th deplore the tactless and b manner in which we are han Japanese question. I am a Japan and, because I wish h view with grave misgivings th sive imperialism which appe dominating her foreign poli absolutely convinced that, u two peoples can be jolted into tion of whither they are dri result of their mutual suspicio policies of their respective gov the present irritation, const flamed in both countries by p propaganda, will shortly brea open sore. Notwithstanding pedal put upon frank discuss question by the diplomatists and Washington, despite the and vehement denials of the g of the Japan Society, nothin certain than that the two na daily drawing nearer to *war*.

The cause of the existing between the two countries i barreled. We have halted immigration into the Far W would like to halt Japanese in the Far East. The Japanes

Digitized by Google

nsider themselves affronted
iliated by the discriminatory
n which has been directed
heir nationals in certain of our
states, and they resent as
me our objections to the
hich they are pursuing in those
ern regions which they have
regard as being within their
ere of influence. We have
a 'No Trespass' sign on the
continent by our adhesion to
ine of James Monroe. To that
nese make no objection; they
at it is our own concern. Over
ern part of the Asiatic conti-
Japanese have themselves
'Keep Off' sign, basing their
a doctrine not dissimilar to
We insist on a recognition of
of 'America for the Amer-
hile at the same time denying
laim of 'Asia for the Asiatics.'
u have the two basic causes —
ion and imperialism — of the
etween Japan and the United
Everything else — Shantung,
Korea, Yap — is subsidiary.
ar-hostility that characterizes
ions of the two great nations
each other across the Pacific
am convinced, not to any in-
-will on the part of either peo-
e other, but to a mutual lack
edge and sympathetic under-
In other words, both Amer-
Japanese have shown them-
able, or unwilling, to think the
nind. It is not enough for
of representative Americans
nese to gather about banquet
d indulge in sonorous protesta-
mutual friendship and inter-
good-will, or to cable each
etings couched in terms of ful-
ise. What is needed at the
uncture is an earnest endeavor
art of each people to gain a
derstanding of the tempera-
ment, traditions, ambitions, problems, and limitations of the other, and to make corresponding allowances for them — in short, to cultivate a charitable attitude of mind. The possibilities of cordial relationship and of harmonious coöperation between the two nations are so tremendous, the interests at stake are so vast and far-reaching, the consequences of an armed conflict would be so catastrophic and overwhelming, that it is unthinkable that the two peoples should be permitted to drift into war through a lack of knowledge and appreciation of each other.

The Japanese Question is an extremely complicated one. Its ramifications extend into politics, industry, commerce, and finance. It stretches across one hundred and fifty degrees of longitude. It affects the lives and destinies of six hundred millions of people. Its roots are to be found as far apart as a Japanese military outpost in Siberia and the headquarters of a labor-union in Sacramento; as the office of a banking firm in Wall Street and the palace of the President of China in the Forbidden City.

To understand algebra, you must have a knowledge of arithmetic. To understand the Japanese Question, you must have at least a rudimentary knowledge of the various factors that have combined to produce it. It has grown to its present menacing dimensions so silently, so stealthily, that the average well-informed American has only a vague and usually inaccurate idea of what it is all about. He has read in the newspapers of the anti-Japanese agitation in California, of the Gentlemen's Agreement, of 'picture brides,' of mysterious Japanese troop-movements in Siberia, of Japanese oppression in Korea, of the Open Door, of the quarrel over Shantung, of the dispute over Yap; but to him these isolated episodes have about as much significance as so many

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

fragments of a complicated jig-saw puzzle. So, at the risk of repeating facts with some of which you are doubtless already familiar, I shall endeavor to piece the puzzle together, so that you may see the picture in its entirety and judge of its merits and faults for yourself.

II

Some truths, more half-truths, many untruths have been said and written in each country about the other. The clear waters of our old-time friendship have been roiled by prejudice and propaganda. Much of our appalling ignorance of Japanese character, aims, and ideals is traceable to our national propensity for generalization — always an inexact and dangerous method of estimating another people, and doubly dangerous in the case of a people as complex as the Japanese. Let us not forget that we were accustomed to think of the French as a volatile, excitable, easy-going, pleasure-obsessed, decadent people until the Marne and Verdun taught us the truth. Such a misconception was deplorable in the case of a people from whom we had nothing to fear; it is inexcusable, and might well prove disastrous, in the case of the Japanese. I have heard Americans who pride themselves on being well-informed, men whose opinions are listened to with respect, betray an ignorance of Japan and the Japanese which would be ludicrous under other conditions.

And the ignorance of many intelligent Japanese in regard to ourselves is no less disheartening. Their way of thinking is not our way of thinking; many of their institutions and ideas and ideals are diametrically different from ours. Believe it or not, as you choose — the great majority of intelligent Japanese are utterly unable to understand our thinly veiled distrust and dislike of them. That people distrust and dislik nese, there can be no gainsay average American usually difficulty in giving a defi gent reason for his attitud Japanese.

Underlying all the mis ings between the two nati prejudice. Our racial antip Japanese is instinctive. source in the white race's at rogant superiority toward a peoples. We inherited it, our Caucasian blood, from ancestors. It is as old as The Japanese do not realiz are meeting in this an ol that the American attitud attempt to place a stigma o on them, but merely the ap them of the Caucasian's h tude toward all peoples skins. If the Japanese ques them observe the attitude lish toward the brown-skin of Egypt and India. But prejudice is by no means one Japanese consider themselv or to us as we consider oursel to them. Make no mistake The Japanese are by no from that racial dislike for which lies near to the hearts tals; but they have the good manners, and tact to repress where they differ from Ame

Another reason for Amer of the Japanese is the latter of equality. We don't call course. We call it conceit — The reason that we get alo other yellow race, the Chi cause they, by their abject and submissiveness, flatter racial superiority. Our pri tered to, we give them a co pat of approval, just as we a negro who always 'knows

Digitized by Google

his hat in his hand when he
a white person, and says 'sir'
m,' and does not resent ill-
or injustice. The Japanese,
trary, stands up for his rights;
t all humble or submissive or
t awed by threats; and if an
rican attempts to 'put him
e,' as he is accustomed to do
inese or a Filipino or a negro,
likely than not to find him-
way to jail in the grasp of a
extremely efficient and un-
ic policeman.
an American whom I met in
if he had enjoyed his stay in

rticularly,' he answered. 'I
for the Japs; give me the
very time.'
I queried.
dered my question for a mo-

n it up for you like this,' he
The Chinese treat you as a
he Japanese treat you as an

ommodore Perry opened Ja-
estern civilization and com-
held all Mongolians in con-
ng pleased to consider them
peoples. But in the case of
ese this contempt changed in
s to a patronizing condescen-
as a grown person might have
cocious and amusing child.
atulated ourselves on having
in the Japanese a sort of in-
gy; we took in them a propri-
est. We watched their rapid
world with an almost paternal
on. And the Japanese flat-
self-esteem by their open ad-
nd imitation of our methods.
that our national antipathy
panese had its beginnings in
ry over the Russians. Up to
we had looked on the Japa-
brilliant and ambitious little
people, whom we had brought to the notice of the world, and for whose amazing progress we were largely responsible. But when Japan administered a trouncing to the Russians, who are, after all, fellow Caucasians, American sentiment performed a *volte-face* almost overnight. We were as pro-Russian at Portsmouth as we had been pro-Japanese at Chemulpo. This sudden change in our attitude toward them has always mystified the Japanese. Yet there is really nothing mystifying about it. We were merely answering the call of the blood. As long as we believed Japan to be the under dog, we were for her; but when she became the upper dog, the old racial prejudice manifested itself. A yellow people had humbled and humiliated a Caucasian people, and we, as Caucasians, resented it. It was a blow to our pride of race. (A somewhat similar manifestation of racial prejudice was observable when the negro pugilist, Jack Johnson, defeated Jim Jeffries.) That a yellow race had proved its ability to defeat a white race shocked and alarmed us. We abruptly ceased to think of the Japanese as an obscure nation of polite and harmless little yellow men. They became the Yellow Peril.

Though the Japanese are of Asia, they cannot be treated as we are accustomed to treat other Asiatics. To attempt to belittle or patronize a nation that can put five million men in the field and send to sea a battle-fleet scarcely inferior to our own would be as ridiculous as it would be short-sighted. Japan is a striking example to other colored races of the value of the Big Stick. She has never been subjugated by the foreigner. In spite of, rather than with the assistance of, the white man, she has become one of the Great Powers, and at Versailles helped to shape the destinies of the world. Yet when she claims racial equality we

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

deny and resent it. Our refusal to treat the Japanese as equals, while at the same time showing a wholesome respect for their power, reminds me of an American reserve lieutenant, a Southerner, on duty at a cantonment where there was a division of colored troops, who refused to salute a negro captain. He was called before the commanding officer, who gave him his choice between saluting the negro or being tried by court-martial.

'I suppose I'll have to salute the uniform,' he muttered rebelliously; 'but I'll be damned if I'll salute the nigger inside it.'

III

I have already said that racial prejudice is at the bottom of our misunderstandings with the Japanese. Immediately overlying it is our fear of Japanese industrial competition, a fear which is whetted by our disapproval of Japanese commercial methods. If you will look into it, you will find that there has hardly ever been a conflict between nations into which some economic question has not entered as the final and essential factor. This fear of Japanese competition is not confined to residents of the Pacific Coast. It animates every American manufacturer and merchant who does business in the Orient. This competition would be serious enough if the Japanese played the game as we play it; but, unfortunately, they all too frequently disregard the rules of the game. To put it bluntly, we do not approve of Japanese business ethics; we have found to our cost that their standards of business honor are all too often not the same as ours. As one American importer put it: —

'The Japanese business man has two great faults — conceit and deceit. He is overbearing and undeveloped. He seems incapable of ordinary commercial foresight. In order to make an immediate profit, he will l
and profitable customer.
cept an order for anythin
can deliver it or not. He
an order for the Brooklyn
next Thursday, Kyoto —
something might turn up
time that would enable hi

Though it frequently ha
Japanese merchant does
stand what the American
ing about, his vanity wi
him to admit his ignora
he will accept the order a
unsatisfactorily. An Ame
er, who has made semi-an
Japan for a quarter of a
who frankly likes the Japa
regretfully that, of all th
whom he did business, th
could rely upon to send
the same quality as their s
be numbered on the fing
gle hand. As another fo
Englishman — doing busi
expressed it: 'The Japan
man has his nerve only on
ket. As soon as the marke
of falling, he hesitates at n
from under. When the silk
hundreds of Japanese fir
on orders which they had
cepted from foreign impo
would have lost money at t
When, on the other hand,
slump in the money ma
spring of 1920, the custom
at Yokohama and Kobe w
with goods ordered from a
the consignees refused to a

A trademark, copyrigh
does not, as a rule, preve
nese manufacturer from a
any idea of which he ca
though I am glad to say
legislation has done muc
the foreigner from such
example, Bentley's Code,
in the United States for t

Digitized by Google

ch is fully protected by copy-
s been copied by a Japanese
g house, which sells it for ten
A famous brand of safety razor,
lls in the United States for
rs, is copied by the Japanese
hing save quality, and is mar-
them, under the originator's
d in a facsimile of the original
for a fifth of the price charged
genuine article. The same is
idely advertised brands of soap,
ste, talcum powder, perfume,
r toilet preparations. An imi-
Pond's Extract, for instance,
a bottle exactly like that of the
n-made article except that a
, scarcely discernible, turns the
n R. This infringement was
in the courts, however, the
n manufacturer winning his
particularly unpleasant speci-
Japanese commercial methods
light last spring at Tien-Tsin,
ne American Consul-General
an official protest against
on of the Japanese Chamber
nerce of that city, which had
ed thousands of hand-bills,
in daily newspapers, intimat-
a certain American trading
was on the verge of insol-
a statement which was with-
dation in fact. The Japanese
r of Commerce refused to re-
allegations, and the American
which had been a powerful
tor of the local Japanese firms,
rly ruined.

are only a few examples of
e business methods. I heard
stories from every American
man whom I met in Japan.
I cannot recall having talked
single foreigner doing business
e Japanese who did not com-
their practice of imitating
l or copyrighted articles, of sub-
inferior goods, and of not keeping their contracts when it suits them to break them.

The amazing commercial success of the Japanese has not been achieved by these methods, but in spite of them. It has been brought about largely as the result of artificial and temporary conditions. At a period when the rest of the world was engaged in a life-and-death struggle, Japan, far from the battlefields, was free to engage in commerce, and she possessed, moreover, certain articles which other nations must have and for which they had to pay any price she demanded. Nor could the Japanese merchant, any more than the American, realize that this was a purely temporary condition and could not continue indefinitely.

The commercial unscrupulousness of the Japanese has worked great injury to the friendly relations of Japan and the United States. The distrust and dislike which such methods have engendered in American business men was strikingly illustrated one evening in the smoking-room of a transpacific liner. In chatting with a group of returning American business men I casually mentioned the case of a fellow countryman who had recently brought American commercial methods into disrepute in Japan by giving 'exclusive' agencies for certain widely advertised articles to several firms in the same city. Instead of deploring such trickery, my auditors applauded it to a man. 'Fine!' they exclaimed. 'Good work! Glad to hear of a Yankee who can beat the Japs at their own game!' They were as jubilant over that dishonest American's success in turning the tables on the Japanese as was the American public when it learned that we had perfected a poison-gas more horrible in its effects than that introduced by the Germans.

Now, mind you, I do not wish to be understood as suggesting that com-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

mercial trickery is characteristic of all Japanese business men. There are business houses in Japan — many of them — that meet their obligations as punctiliously, that maintain as high a standard of commercial honor, as the most reputable firms in the United States. But, unfortunately, these form only a small minority. It seems a thousand pities that the honest and far-sighted business men of Japan, and the Japanese chambers of commerce and similar business organizations do not take energetic steps to discourage dishonesty in dealings with foreigners, if for no other reason than the effect that it would have on American public opinion. The series of conferences held last year in Tokyo, between a self-constituted delegation of American bankers and business men and a number of representative Japanese, offered a splendid opportunity for a candid discussion of this delicate and irritating question. If the Americans, instead of confining themselves to patriotic platitudes and hands-across-the-sea sentiments, had had the courage to tell the high-minded Japanese who were their hosts how objectionable such methods are to Americans, and what incalculable harm they are causing to Japanese-American relations, it would have worked wonders in promoting a better mutual understanding.

Now, in spite of what I have said about the methods of a large section of the Japanese commercial class, I am convinced that the Japanese are, as a race, honest. Though pocket-picking is said to be on the increase in Japan, burglary and highway robbery are extremely rare, while the murders, shooting affrays, daylight robberies, and hold-ups which have become commonplaces in American cities are virtually unknown. I should feel as safe at midnight in the meanest street of a Japanese city as I should on Commonwealth Avenue in Boston — ably safer, indeed, than I sh tain New York thorough nightfall. I asked an Ameri who has lived for many yea if she considered the Japanes 'In Yokohama,' she replie think of locking the doors of my house, yet I have nev thing stolen. But when I last winter at a fashionab New York, I was robbed jewels, and clothing the ni arrival.'

Nor could I discover any tion of the oft-repeated ass positions of trust in Japanes held by Chinese. Certainly true of Japanese-controlled i such as the Yokohama Sp the Bank of Japan, and th Ginko, as I can attest fro observation. It is true th are employed in considerab in fiduciary positions in th branches of foreign banks, Hong Kong & Shanghai Ba poration and the Bank of tralia & New Zealand; but generally come over from the banks' European official ployment denoting no lack Japanese integrity. Yet su spread broadcast by supe usually prejudiced obser helped to give Americans a roneous impression of the J

My personal opinion is mercial dishonesty in Japan traceable to the contempt merchants were long hel country. Until quite recent position of the merchant in analogous to that of the J Europe of the Middle Ages. the bottom of the social sca top was the noble; then *samurai*, or professional figh followed in turn the farme

Digitized by Google

nd last of all came the mer-
e farmer and the artisan have
ld a higher place than the
because they are producers,
ne merchant has been looked
huckster, a haggler, a bar-
o made his living by his wits.
ese merchant, moreover, has
half a century in which to
game of business as it is
the West. Coming from a
nd down-trodden class, is it
er that in that brief span he
holly eradicated his ancient
that he has not yet acquired
Western virtues and ideals?
fair in judging him. The Jew
nder the influence of the West
ousand years, yet his business
not always beyond reproach.
s yet another reason for the
usiness methods practised by
anese merchants. And that
riously enough, was provided
es. It was Kei Hara, Prime
f Japan, — himself a business
the first commoner to hold
n of premier, — who brought
attention.

hould not forget that my
arned what they know of
usiness methods from you
,' he reminded me. 'It was
modore Perry who, in the
apanese opposition, opened
American commerce. It was
American traders who fol-
that the Japanese received
lessons in the business ethics
Vest. The early American
the methods they practised,
the Japanese with anything
lable example. If they could
apanese, they considered it
ditable; they took advantage
rance by giving him inferior
by driving sharp bargains;
antly bamboozled him. Is it
er, then, that the Japanese merchant, patterning his methods on those pursued by the Americans, adopted American commercial trickery along with other things? But, mind you,' he added, 'I am not condoning commercial trickery among my people. I am only explaining it.'

IV

We now come to a consideration of the political factor in Japanese-American relations. In order to estimate this factor at its true importance, it is necessary to envisage the trying political situation in which Japan finds herself. Since their victory over the Russians in 1904 the Japanese have seen themselves gradually encircled by a ring of unsympathetic and suspicious, if not openly hostile peoples. Overshadowing the Island Empire on the north is the great bulk of Bolshevist Russia, still smarting from the memories of the Yalu River and Port Arthur, and bitterly resentful of Japan's military occupation of Eastern Siberia and Northern Sakhalin. Every patriotic Russian feels that Japan, in occupying these territories, has taken unfair advantage of Russia's temporary helplessness; he listens cynically to the protestations of the Japanese Government that it has occupied them merely in order to keep at arm's length the menace of Bolshevism, and that it will withdraw its troops as soon as a stable and friendly government is established in Russia.

To the west, the Koreans, though now officially Japanese subjects, are in a state of incipient revolt, to which they have been driven by the excesses of the Japanese military and the harshness of Japanese rule. To the southeast, China, huge and inert, loathes and fears her island neighbor, their common hatred of Japan being the one tie which binds the diverse elements of the Republic together. As a protest against

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Japanese aggression in Manchuria and Shantung, the Chinese have instituted a boycott of Japanese goods, which is gravely affecting Japanese commerce throughout the Farther East. In regions as remote from the seat of the controversy as the Celebes and Borneo and Java and Siam, I found Japanese merchants being forced out of business because the Chinese refused to trade with them or to have business relations with anyone else who traded with them. In Formosa, taken from China as spoils of war in 1895, the head-hunting savages who inhabit the mountains of the interior remain unsubjugated, only the Guard Line, a series of armed blockhouses connected by electrically charged entanglements, standing between the Japanese settlers and massacre.

In the Philippines, there is always present the bogey of Japanese imperialism, both the Filipinos and the American residents being convinced that Japan is looking forward to the day when she can add these rich and tempting islands to her possessions. In far-distant Australia and New Zealand the Japanese are distrusted and disliked, stringent legislative measures having recently been adopted to prevent further Japanese immigration into those commonwealths. On the Pacific coast of the United States and Canada a violent anti-Japanese agitation is in full swing, new and severer legislation being constantly directed against them. In Hawaii the Japanese already outnumber all the other elements of the population put together.

Influenced by the attitude of her great overseas dominions, and fearful of its effect on her relations with the United States, England is gravely considering the advisability of renewing her alliance with Japan when it terminates next year. Holland, having ever in the front of her mind her great, rich colonies in the East Indies, with a suspicious eye on Japan's s territorial expansion and on th nificant increase in the strength military and naval establishr France, ever seeking new ma views with alarm Japan's atten dominate China commercially. Germany is not likely either to or to forgive the taking of Tsin and her former insular possessi the Pacific. To-day Japan is as pletely isolated, as universally trusted, as was Germany at the ning of 1914. Not only has she ar the suspicions of the peoples West, but she has alienated her bors in the East.

The Japanese have been hur bewildered by this almost uni distrust of them. Yet, instead tempting to win back the good- the West, which was theirs until more than a dozen years ago, by convincing proofs of their peacea tentions; instead of making an to regain the confidence of half lion Chinese and Russians by a p withdrawal from their soil, the anese have made the psychologica take of adopting an attitude of bornness and defiance. They replied to criticisms by embarkin military programme which will them the greatest military pow earth; their naval programme ca a neck-and-neck shipbuilding rac the United States; in Siberia they strengthened their occupational instead of showing a dispositi withdraw them. They seem utte capable of realizing that the wor the very best of reasons for bein picious of imperialistic nations; is in no mood to tolerate anythi voring of militarism. The peoples earth had hoped that those polici passed with the Hohenzollerns.

(To be continued)

Digitized by Google

NOTES ON ECONOMY AND DISARMAMENT

BY SAMUEL W. McCALL

e is probably nothing related
nment that is advocated more
ctised less than economy. It is
that lends itself easily to dis-
which rarely, if ever, material-
ction. The party that is out is
ewailing the extravagance and
wastefulness of the party that
nd when the people show them-
redulous enough to entrust the
ith power, the only difference
be seen is in an increased ex-
nce and waste. The fervor of
nise is usually found to be in in-
tio to the amount of perform-
t is vouchsafed.

has never at any period been
r demand, or a more alluring
nity, for economy in govern-
an in that period which began
e World War came to an end,
er 11, 1918. Expenditure had
tained a higher peak. Our great
and the tremendous stake in-
which was nothing less than
dom of nations and the continu-
civilization, had justified an
ture colossal beyond all prece-

s not merely that all money
ght be needed should be expend-
all money that might seem to
ed, even if in the end it should
that it was wasted. A prudent
nent could take no chances of
ne war by spending too little, if
the money that was saved
o good. Subject to the impera-
nand for honesty, the resources
ountry were all to be employed,
if only they might be of use, even if, like so many shells that were fairly fired at the enemy and did not reach him, much of what was expended did not appear to have any influence upon the result.

The need of such vast expenditure came abruptly to an end on the day of the Armistice. It became then at once necessary that all the energy previously employed in spending should be devoted to saving. And when Congress was in session the following spring, and our soldiers had returned to this country and been disbanded; when our munition factories had ceased their operation, and employment was dwindling, and the mass of our people was beginning to feel the first keen pinches of excessive taxation, it became the paramount duty of Congress ruthlessly to cut expenditure to the bone. But to pass over the debatable transition period when deficiencies were to be met, and to make no exalted demand upon the first Congress after the war, surely 'normalcy' in expenditure must be indeed a coy creature if she cannot be prevailed upon to show herself by the Congress that emerged from the throes of the last presidential campaign, and convened nearly two years and a half after fighting had ceased. The expenditure of the present fiscal year should be little greater than the normal expenditure of the government, with the exceptions to which I shall hereafter refer. Not to show results at this time would be wholly without justification, and those results should not be

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

expressed in a few coppers saved here and there, — a paltry reward for so much eloquence about extravagance, — but should reach into billions.

At the end of the Civil War the South was impoverished and was an unfruitful field for the tax-gatherer. A fifth of the present population of the country was at the moment staggering under a burden of expenditure as great, when the difference in wealth is considered, as that which rested upon us after the World War. And yet the statesmen of that period resolutely cut down expenditure and taxation, attacked our enormous debt, and put it in process of extinction. We should do well now to imitate the spirit they then displayed.

At the beginning of the World War the operation of all the machinery of our government cost, in a round sum, a billion dollars. That this amount was not generally regarded as representing an economical basis may be inferred from what the leaders of each party said about the other when each party had in turn expended substantially a like sum. But as against this billion, we are told that, for the fiscal year which runs through the winter and well into the summer of the fourth year after the Armistice, four and a half billions are needed. There would appear to be little need of our having more government now than before the war; but granting that fifty per cent more government is necessary, an additional five hundred million dollars would be required, which is more than the total annual cost of the government under Cleveland. We should add to that the billion dollars necessary to pay the interest upon the war-debt; and then, to be generous, if not, indeed, extravagant, five hundred millions more may be added, to cover contingencies. We should then have a cool three billions, or three times the amount required just before we entered the war. W — or, indeed, excuse — is spending more than three bi lars during the present fiscal y when four and a half billion manded, one may fairly ask the resources of statesmans been seriously employed, m exhausted.

Useless expenditure will at fasten itself upon the treasury life of the emergencies which necessary will be protracted art. But if it is attacked with r it will yield.

An instance of this is show reduction of our army. It was to cut the army to 150,000 m variety of objections was urge the proposal. The one seemin the most merit was that con enlistment had already been r the government would need to many of its contracts with it in order to make the reduct Congress, to its credit, insis cutting down the army; and before the bill had passed, the was effected. The men were ing to be released from their

To cut off a billion and expenditure more than is now would go far toward emancip productive energies of the cou toward that revival of indust is so necessary to the resto prosperity, and especially to ployment of labor.

There is an intimate relation the expenditure of governm what is called disarmament, Mr. Borah has so nobly led. saving of public money w doubtedly result from puttin an international agreement radical reduction in armame no harm could come to any na reduction were made proport world-wide. Very great item

Digitized by Google

enditure, grouped under the
e 'cost of past wars,' would of
untouched. The interest up-
ebts, and the pension rolls
l remain.
ament also would have a dis-
ing upon the future peace of
l. Sometimes the possession
ful armaments might tempt
use them. It would be a very
g to do away wholly, by gen-
ment, with many of those ter-
nes which have been devised
r the destruction of man. If
al times, as I have at another
, a single one of our modern
ghts or submarines had been
n the ocean, whoever should
royed such an enemy of man-
ld have received the general
of the world, as did the hero
the fabled Hydra. How im-
ly greater then would be the
im who should to-day make
oceans, swarming with these
and send them all to the

ere is extremely little likeli-
uch a result. The portents of
war have ceased to spread
ong a race which sets no limit
daring. If the old Hydra
ome back in our time, and
pear to be more horrible than
engines of destruction, it is
t our munition-makers would
take it up and attempt to
great numbers of the mon-
our appropriation bills would
supply suitable sums for
chase. To carry out a sweep-
nament would imply a radical
f view with regard to war,
uld be very wholesome.
e must guard against any
regarding the effect of a
of armament, extreme or
, upon the likelihood of war.
olicy would not go to the root

of the peace-problem. Neither reduction of armaments nor complete disarmament would furnish a sufficient solution.

Our country declared war in 1812, when it had practically no army at all. Cleveland sent his warlike Venezuelan message to Congress in 1894, when we were defenseless against England. France declared war against Germany in 1870, with hardly half the military strength that her adversary possessed. Time and again nations with relatively weak armaments have embarked upon war. For very many years the laws of England recognized only the militia, whose training was limited to fourteen days a year; and Macaulay, in his lively fashion, wrote of the concern of patriots at staking the independence of their country upon the result of a contest between ploughmen officered by justices of the peace and veteran warriors led by marshals of France. And yet England and her kings more than once took the chances and went to war. Nations will still have their differences, and under the present system they are likely to go to war to settle them, or to attain their ambitions, even if they all have weak armies and navies, or none at all.

War has become a matter largely of chemistry, and a nation might rely upon its superior laboratories in order quickly to blow up or poison its adversary. It might rely upon its superior proficiency in the art of flying, and its flocks of commercial air-planes would be at once available for warlike use. It requires no argument to prove that the military microbe, which has infected the blood of man for uncounted centuries, still persists. Unless nations shall provide some way to settle their controversies peaceably, they can be relied upon now and then to settle them by force. Thus, while a material reduction of armaments will

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

bring about a welcome saving, it will leave the general question of peace far from a final settlement.

It is indispensable that there should be an arrangement among nations to resort to some peaceful method of settling differences before taking up arms, and scarcely less necessary if they have no armaments at all than if they possess them.

The plan with which Mr. Wilson associated his name may have been far from perfect in all its details, but it was the noblest attempt at practical idealism that has ever been made by any statesman. It was evident that there must be some general and central agreement to outlaw war, and that the nations must band themselves together for that purpose, or that wars would happen in the future just as they had happened in the past. It was just as evident, also, that another general war, with the methods of warfare that have come in, as barbarous as they are destructive, might mean the obliteration of civilization, if not the extinction of the race.

It is objected that such an arrangement would infringe upon the sovereignty of nations. Precisely the same objection might be made against an agreement for the reduction of armaments. What more sovereign power is there in a nation, and what one is more necessary to its preservation than the power to arm? If by agreement it consents to put a limitation upon this power, it could as well be argued that it was limiting its sovereignty. But the right of a nation to shoot up the world and to endanger civilization should be limited, just as the right of an individual to shoot up the community in which he lives is limited.

Any treaty obligation is, in the sense in which the argument has been advanced, a limitation upon sovereignty, that is, a limitation upon the power of a nation to do anything it may ch In order to meet the requiremen such a claim, we should have inte tional anarchy, when each na would be subject to no law of nat but only to its own will and to self-imposed notions of righteous as it might see fit to recognize and in force. So long as the area of la circumscribed within the boundari states, and separate aggregation men do not come within its sway shall have a lawless universe. right of collective bodies of me murder, pillage, and commit pi against their neighbors is no gre than that of the individual, and assertion of such a right involv brutal and barbarous conception nation, which should at once be bro to an end.

But we are told that the thing all been settled by the last elec and Mr. Harvey, having referred t little glory, at his own appraisal, which we emerged from the war, clares that we are to have no pa the League. That, he tells us, wa creed by America by 7,000,000 ma ity. It must be conceded that, i are to accept any part of the Lea we are proceeding in that direc with impressive deliberation. Per we are to come to it by way of Pacific. But as to the significanc the sweeping majority, a distingu ed and influential group of Rep cans, headed by Mr. Taft, Mr. Hug and Mr. Root, told us before the tion that the only way to enter League was to have a Republican tory. Then, too, we must not over the fact that great race-groups functioning and voting with refer to their fatherlands. No one can just what was decreed by the vo — whether the amended League Messrs. Hughes and Root, or the league of Messrs. Johnson and Har

Digitized by Google

er one of the tremendous tides imes following a heavy storm , the waters reach heights before t unknown, and it seems doubtful er the old landmarks will ever appear. But on the next day, ps, when the sun shines and the s have gone back to the old level, ly result one can see of the far-ering upheaval is that there are red upon the sand some strange creatures such as were never before, which have been thrown om the nether realms and will ear with the next tide. Even the ar bones of some old wreck are here, and, as if more widely to im their uselessness, are even d up higher upon the sands.

he same way, great results in pol-re not apt to come to pass from are called 'tidal waves.' Grandilo- majorities sometimes indicate he political atmosphere is seeking uilibrium by a tempest, and that ttled current of popular opinion ultimately blow in the opposite ion. The sweeping victory of e, in 1852, for example, settled ng, and a reaction set in which ed his victory. Only the most onplace results followed upon riumphant election of the first son. But Lincoln, chosen by a plurality, with the majority of tes cast for other candidates, and n, another plurality president, ng in between Taft and Roosevelt, linked with things that shaped y and shook the world. To bor-n instance from across the sea Kaiser has not yet been hanged, thstanding the astonishing vic-of Mr. Lloyd George, with that g his assortment of issues, three ago. Generally, anything has settled by tidal waves except the about which the politicians have fiercely declaimed.

If nothing is to be done by our country upon the peace-problem except a cutting down of armaments, the work of garnering the supreme result of the war will remain undone. When the fighting was ended, the almost universal opinion of the country would have found expression in the phrase so pathetically reiterated by President Harding on the return to the country of thousands of our fallen heroes: 'It must not be again.'

If, upon the day of the Armistice, President Wilson had declared that, in the treaty which he was to negotiate, he would not consent to our entering into any combination of nations to outlaw war, it is impossible to believe that, in that moment of victory, his declaration would not have been received with general execration. Of one thing we may be sure — as a result of such a reversal, peace would have had champions new and strange, and there would have been a radically different cast appearing afterward in the rôles of the morning stars singing together for joy. But the issue was adjourned, and the pressing duty of the hour was put off. It seemed to become stale. Eternal debate took the place of action. Our memories became blunted, as year after year the grass sprang up anew on the French battlefields.

But the course to be taken is as clear before us to-day as it was two years or more ago. There is already formed a union of nations, of which, with scarcely an exception, all the nations of the Western Hemisphere are members except our own. Germany, it is understood, is willing to join when the right to do so shall be given her. Russia is at this time too dismembered and chaotic to speak with the voice of national authority upon any subject. In effect, America is the only part of the organized world that stands aloof. Let us make clear the conditions upon which we will

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

join hands with the civilized nations. The choice is clearly before us. We can show ourselves willing that the world should go on, as it has gone, exposed to the danger that some maniac may throw the brand that will wrap the universe in flames, and then we may marshal and consume our wealth, and drag our boys from their mothers, and with pæans of patriotism send them to destructio we may play the part of reaso creatures and unite with the rest o world to make the thing measu impossible by extending the reig law over nations. Not to choos latter course would be basely to ourselves with the forces at war civilization.

WORLD-EQUILIBRIUM

BY S. C. VESTAL

I

THE world has long been seeking to solve the great problem of the maintenance of peace. War is as old as man; and he who wishes to limit its ravages may learn its most useful lessons from some rather old books — Thucydides, Demosthenes, Grotius, and our own *Federalist*. To the neglect of these lessons we may lay the carnage of the last seven years and the futile efforts to form a league of nations. If we would put aside our prepossessions, and study a few books that may be found in any good library, we might easily learn what may and may not be done to eliminate war. In the matter of preventing war, nothing is so absurd that it has not been advanced by some writer. What is most needed is a statement of the problem. We may safely assume, for the purpose of this study, that human nature is unchanging, — though it varies greatly in different races, — and that morality is stationary.

A sharp distinction must be carefully kept in mind between domestic and international peace, and between and international wars. Much o confusion and incoherence of tho about peace and war is due to failure to make this distinction.

International war and civil o mestic war are separate and dis phenomena. An international wa contest between nations or stat civil or domestic war is a contes tween parts of the same nation or s The character of the military opera is very much alike in both cases the political problems involved a far apart as the poles. Neverth we continually meet people in sear a formula that would have preve the American Revolution and the War, which were civil wars within British Empire, and the great int tional war of 1914. No one with suffi logic to distinguish these cases ex to find a specific for civil wars. T is none, except good government; it is not infallible. We shall first sider civil wars.

Digitized by Google

ntal doctrine of free
ated by Mr. Lincoln,
anywhere, being in-
the power, has the
l shake off the exist-
nd form a new one
r. This right is not
here the whole people
ercise it, but extends
y portion of a people.
justified, and never
ng down a minority
it, as were the Tories
ution and the loyal
Southern Confeder-
il War.
nd, if parts of a state
secede without let or
ld soon be dismem-
rule prevailed gener-
ould be delivered to
haos, as was Europe
enth centuries of the
he shades of night
on the world. It is
existence of civiliza-
ate resist rebels with
er than let itself be
umerable small com-
gainst rebels is justi-
law of self-preserva-
gainsay the right of
ny the right to re-
want to dissolve the
Lincoln on the eve of
our national history;

of human existence,
used far greater loss
national wars. More
ed in the Taiping re-
than in all the inter-
the period between
y at Marengo, June
Armistice of Novem-
e greater number of
orld are prompted by
ations in determining
their armed forces,

although this fact, in regard to any particular state, is rarely recognized by statesmen in their public utterances. For obvious reasons the danger of foreign invasion is always alleged as the reason for appropriations for armed forces. Internal conditions in every European state make necessary a formidable army to preserve domestic tranquillity; and the armaments in North and South America are, with a few exceptions, determined by similar needs. In 1914 the armaments of about fifteen states exceeded domestic requirements by reason of armament competition.

Prior to the World War the strength of our army was fixed almost wholly by the requirements of domestic peace, and our military expenditures were largely caused by civil strife. The American Union was not saved by oratory. It was saved by the blood which dyed the slopes of Gettysburg; it was saved by the determination of the bravest of its people. The first generations of Americans after the Revolution pushed the right of revolution to the utmost limits; the generation after the Civil War appreciated the right of governments to exert their full strength to put down rebellion.

A majority of existing governments would be overthrown immediately by rebels if their armed forces were disbanded or seriously reduced, and all the newly established governments would face the same predicament. It is worthy of note that the strength of the British army has been determined in time of peace mainly by the necessity of keeping order in the dominions under the British flag; and that no government of France would face the possibility of a second Commune or a new French Revolution without the ready and loyal support of at least three hundred thousand men.

It is the duty of a state to maintain

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

peace within its borders, and every state must, for purely domestic reasons, have power to raise and support armies and maintain a navy. This power must exist without limitation, because it is impossible to foresee or to define the extent and variety of the national emergencies. No shackles, therefore, can wisely be placed upon the authorities to whom the maintenance of domestic peace is committed. Competitions in armaments do not arise from the presence in the world of the armed forces necessary to maintain domestic peace.

The test of a country's fitness for self-government is its ability to maintain domestic peace. The power that protects a country from outside interference is bound, by the law of nations and its duty to foreign nations, to preserve order within the protected area. To expect England, for instance, to withdraw from India, renouncing all responsibility for the domestic peace of the land, but continuing to protect it from invasion, as so many demand, is an absurdity in thought, which recalls the petition of the Filipino municipality for Philippine independence and an increase in the local garrison of United States soldiers. Self-government is of the nature of a faculty; it should be the privilege of those who are able to develop the faculty.

Any scheme of disarmament which reduces the armed forces of a state below the requirements for domestic tranquillity must provide for intervention of armed forces from abroad — an intolerable contingency for any people possessing the faculty of self-government. The problem of maintaining domestic peace confronts every government on the planet, and it would confront, in an aggravated form, any world-state that might be erected to eliminate international war — a subject which now claims our attention.

II

Periodically some ba
wild and strikes a league
the professional revolu
contented, and the ign
tions, and seeks to impo
the world in the name o
freedom of the seas. W
of these peoples and
rid of their will to rule u
by violent means; nor
them to subside into i
out the use of force of s

In coming to the res
who were resisting the
many, the latest of th
impose her despotic rule
the United States was o
of Mutual Aid,[1] whic
threatened nations, thr
ed history, to aid one
aggressive powers that
liberties. It is the law t
nations to unite agai
rius, Philip of Mace
Republican Rome, Eng
Plantagenets, Charles V
dinand II, Louis XIV,
public, Napoleon, and,
Germany. It is a law o
persists unaffected by t
publics and empires an
creeds, the same yester
forever. It is beyond th
and no intellectual revo
press or alter it.

[1] I have taken this term f
Vattel, in order to avoid t
ance of Power,' which signif
but is misunderstood and m
all recent popular writers. I
the Balance of Power means t
power or state against anoth
of powers against each other
League of Nations is an exc
the Balance of Power, or L
but its advocates exclaim lou
ance of Power, and say there
it. Does this come from ign
abuse of language? — THE A

Digitized by Google

cordance with the prin-
came to the rescue of
e was apparently in her
This universal law has
by the demagogues of
g and extinct, who have
e opposite principle of
when the occasion has
e followed the law with-
. This law is embodied
tion in the clause which
he 'United States . . .
ch of them [the states]
n,' not only from abroad
other, as the seceding
tes learned at Antietam
g; it is embodied in its
nd pleasing form in the
ne, whereby the United
guarantees every Amer-
gardless of its form of
gainst invasion by any
state.

gan the war in 1914, in
the Law of Mutual Aid
r, as the German Chan-
it in his speech of De-
, that the 'balance of
d become out of date
ger practicable.' She be-
passionate attachment
to the doctrine of neu-
nable her to isolate and
nediate neighbors with-
of intervention of other
found to her sorrow that
t, and that nation after
e forces arrayed against
ecame an outlaw among
e Germans had realized
fate that awaited them,
an their war of aggres-
f Prince Bismarck, who
derstood the law and
Germany from becoming
been at the helm, they
begun it; nor would they
reat armaments in prep-
reat war of aggression.

But how, we may ask, are the statesmen to be enlightened, who are usually at the head of the two or three aggressive nations of the world? The answer to this question will solve the armament competition question therapeutically, armaments being merely a symptom of a disease.

The answer is as old as Demosthenes, and may be found in nearly every one of his orations. Mr. Wilson recognized the malady, diagnosed it correctly, and sought to treat it therapeutically. A correct diagnosis is not always followed by correct treatment, and those who agree least with Mr. Wilson's remedy would do well to examine his diagnosis with care. It was a bold and remarkable confession of error, that the man who appealed to Americans at the beginning of the World War to be neutral in thought and action, publicly stated, when his eyes were opened, that neutrality in such a war is intolerable, and finally signed a treaty designed to abolish neutrality in war, and even sought to deprive his successors in office of the discretionary power which he himself had exercised in the tragic months of July and August, 1914.

The civilized world is a community of free commonwealths. The forcible absorption of any one of these by another is contrary to the interests of the rest, as the state thus aggrandized becomes a menace to its neighbors. The Law of Mutual Aid, founded purely upon self-interest, prompts nations to come to the aid of states threatened with absorption, in whole or in part, by powerful neighbors; the doctrine of neutrality, one of the fundamental bases of modern international law, which is largely designed to favor conquest, bids nations, so long as they are not actually attacked, to sit idly by, neutral in thought and deed, while neighboring states are being crushed by superior might.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

Mr. Wilson put his finger upon the disease; neutrality is not the way to peace between free commonwealths; it is the way to the peace which exists under despotism. The world will adopt peaceful habits only when the ambitious aggressor among nations is as certain to encounter overwhelming force as would be the aggressor among the states of the American Union.

How may this certainty be secured? It is not enough that a state should merely avoid aggression. To preserve peace and independence, something further is needed. While it is impossible to rely upon the self-restraint of nations, it is possible to limit their aggressions. A country that aspires to conquest is the most vicious of wild beasts. We cannot exempt ourselves from its attacks by resolving to avoid them. The negative policy of curbing one's own ambition must therefore be supplemented by a positive programme.

Does the Law of Mutual Aid lead to a new Holy Alliance? No, since the Holy Alliance aimed only at preventing revolutions arising within national boundaries, and had nothing in common with the measures designed to prevent one state from attacking another. It is well, of course, to remember that radical revolutionary governments tear up previous treaties. No treaty with the Tsar's government binds the Bolsheviki. Revolutionary governments are invariably aggressive toward other nations. The French Republic, in a single campaign, gained greater successes than all previous monarchs of France. Toward revolutionary governments it is wise to pursue a policy of non-intervention, but nations must be prepared to meet their aggressions.

III

Before we consider what may be done to facilitate the natural operation of the Law of Mutual Aid, it is w
out the ways that must be

A super-state, a govern
governments, such as the
Nations, is, from its nature,
failure. It is a confederati
posed to a federation, whic
ernment over individual hun
The United States is a feder
as a government, is efficient,
legislates for individuals, ha
tax them and to command
ices, and can compel obedie
process of a court.

A confederation legislate
ernments, lives by doles fro
ments which collect from i
and can compel the obedie
subordinate states only by a
In a confederation every bre
involves a state of war. W
federation is under the contro
coercing state, as were the R
public and the Assyrian Emp
tory is marked by civil wa
such a form of government
many intended to give to th
confederation which is not
control — such as the Uni
under the Articles of Confede
the League of Nations —
semblance of government, t
without the substance, built
materials, and resting upon
tions whatsoever.

It is futile to think of for
per-state by conferring up
power to make peace and wa
giving it the power of unlimite
directly upon the men and
the world. Whoever controls
controls the sword. This fac
nized in the rule of unanimit
for important acts in every
tion of the soft-core type. S
is a sure indication of a g
based upon unsound princip

A belief in the efficacy of a
as a bloodless substitute fo

Digitized by Google

s become a part of the
ht of the world; but sen-
be on their guard against
chantments. Nations do
r over things that can
and arbitration treaties
caustic irritants of the
een states. The fallacy
lies in the fact that the
being political in their
settled only by political
r by courts of justice.
upon which nations de-
a mere covering brought
nceal the real political
invariably the desire for
arbitrate the pretext is
ne symptoms in medical
rnational arbitration, as
plying the principles of
auses which lead to war,

n instance could arbitra-
have averted war. In
aggressor began hostili-
pose of making conquest.
up his mind to break
n arbitration treaty is as
as any other. Moreover,
willing to impawn their
and action by binding
abide by the irrevocable
judges who base their
what they decide is the
ey willing to confer legis-
pon judges by authoriz-
y what shall be the law.
not afford to enter into
hat will permit other na-
em into court, to answer
ts which may or may not
o do so is to resign their
into the hands of the
who advocate such action
f the fixed unwillingness
e political matters, either
nternational, by judicial

o proposals to postpone

actual hostilities until there can be an investigation as to the merits of a controversy, it may be said at once that there are never any merits in the 'controversy.' The quarrels of nations that are not bent upon conquest begin and end in words, and no elaborate machinery for making investigations is necessary in such cases. The aggressions of the international bandit aiming at the conquest of weaker nations can be stayed only by the known readiness of nations to aid each other in case of attack. Nations that seek protection in treaties of investigation and arbitration are foolish.

IV

We shall now consider the positive measures that may be taken to avert international war.

The nations have been able to preserve their independence against bandit states only by long and bloody wars. How may they preserve their liberty without the necessity of waging these wars? Surely in no other way than by making it unmistakably evident that inevitable defeat awaits the ambitious aggressor. Positive measures for the maintenance of international peace must be based upon the Law of Mutual Aid, and must recognize the fact that the control of the sword cannot be taken from the hands of the great legislative assemblies which now control, and which seem destined to control for all time, the nations' purse-strings.

Two methods, both of which are tried and approved deterrents of war, meet these requirements.

1. The first method is by defensive alliance treaties, of which the treaty long subsisting between England and Portugal is a good example. The objection to such treaties is that one or more of the parties may begin a war of aggression and claim assistance, as when the aggressive French Republic claimed

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

the assistance of the United States during Washington's administration, and Germany and Austria claimed the assistance of Italy in their war of aggression in 1914. It should be observed that the state whose assistance is claimed under such a treaty is judge of the occasion — a right which the United States and Italy asserted and made good. A general defensive alliance treaty, in which, to copy the language of our Constitution, the United States 'shall protect each of them against invasion,' has much to recommend it. After the treaty of alliance with France lapsed and was declared at an end, the United States did not renew it, and she has carefully avoided such treaties. She has refused upon more than one occasion to embody the principles of the Monroe Doctrine into a defensive alliance treaty with the nations of the American continent. It is therefore idle for us to discuss this phase of the subject.

2. The second method is by legislative declarations of policy, such as that contained in the preamble of the Annual Mutiny Act prior to 1867, which stated that one of the purposes of the British army was 'the preservation of the balance of power in Europe'; or by executive declarations of policy similar to that enunciated by Mr. Monroe, in which the nation, through its executive, announces that the invasion of one state by another will be regarded as an unfriendly act by the state making the declaration. The Monroe Doctrine is, in effect, a spontaneous offer of assistance, on the part of a nation which refuses to enter into defensive alliances, to all the states of the New World against any non-American state that may attack any of them. It leaves the nation free to adopt such measures as it may see fit to pursue, and makes it judge of the time and the occasion. It is stronger than any treaty, and has b potent deterrent of war and However unfriendly an Am public might be, our aid wou it as promptly as to any o Monroe Doctrine is not b sentimentality, but upon stable and respectable bas interest, which demands tha the close neighborhood of gressive powers. It is main the United States for purely purposes; but it has been of vantage to the Latin-Ameri

The great merit of the Mo trine is that it has caused th think along correct lines a duty clearly; it has given gu ciples that have removed all hesitation in troublous tim has served as a warning t trespassers. The maintenanc is a problem of education. T Doctrine has preserved peac cating our people, our state our potential adversaries.

What oceans of blood w been saved if the nations and ers had been educated in thei the strenuous days that pre German attack on Liége in 19 of education, want of a corr have cost the United States 000,000, and the nations a v Our defect, so far as want o tion of policy is concerned, remedied by Mr. Harding augural Address, by the follow which, let us hope, will be after times, as are the wor Monroe: —

> Our eyes never will be blind oping menace, our ears never call of civilization. . . . In exp pirations, in seeking practical translating humanity's new righteousness, justice, and its ha into recommended action, we are heartily to unite; but every co

Digitized by Google

study of war and politics. Organization without spirit is an empty shell. When the spirit is right, organization adjusts itself to the needs of the hour.

V

There are certain axiomatic principles in 'world-politics' that are of fundamental importance in the practical application of the Law of Mutual Aid. Several of these principles will now be considered.

Competition in land armaments between adjacent continental nations is not a mutual affair, as it is assumed to be in all discussions on disarmament: it is a one-sided phenomenon. A powerful nation, like Germany, arms to conquer a weaker neighbor, which, in turn, arms for defense. There is a vast difference between arming for offense and arming for defense, as every thoughtful reader of the daily press must have realized in the month of August, 1914. The defensive armaments of the weaker nation are not a menace to the stronger nation, which needs no great preponderance to assure itself against the attack of its weaker neighbor. War comes, not from armies and navies, but from the belligerent intentions of nations. The aggressors, the beginners of wars, the leaders in the so-called armament competitions, are the strong nations, not the weak. Excessive armaments in time of peace are a phenomenon of quite recent times, due to the ambition of Germany and one or two other states that have followed her example. Convince these states that the Law of Mutual Aid will be applied against them, that the fate of Germany awaits them if they attack their neighbors, and land armaments will automatically decline to the scale required in each state to maintain domestic peace, beyond which it is not desirable that they be reduced.

Competition in naval armaments is

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

one of the effects of excessive land armaments. There is never any naval competition between countries that maintain small armies, however great their naval forces may be. This is a fact of supreme importance at the present time. Nations like Great Britain and the United States, which maintain strong navies, but comparatively weak skeleton armies raised by voluntary enlistment in time of peace, measure their naval strength, not by each other's naval strength, but by that of countries which have powerful conscript armies backed by trained reserves ready for instant mobilization.

Recent propaganda does not disprove the foregoing statement. For more than four centuries England has gauged her building programme by that of the most powerful navy of those European powers which maintained large armies. She will, beyond all doubt, continue the same policy for a period of time that can be measured only in centuries. If we are wise, we shall follow a somewhat similar policy, taking into account Asiatic as well as European neighbors, which maintain powerful conscript armies.

England has never considered the strength of the American navy in determining her two-power standard, not because blood is thicker than water, as some would have us believe, but because she has known full well that she has nothing to fear from the aggression of a country whose army does not greatly exceed the needs of domestic peace. And we have been indifferent about her navy for the same reason. Nations that depend upon naval power for defense never enter upon a war that can in any way be avoided. The English, like the Romans, have generally had wars thrust upon them, and, like the Romans, have generally begun their wars with disasters. As England and America have each a tremendous interest in the peace of the civilized wo
be threatened only by co
large armies, each is vit
that the other shall n
naval forces. Their navie
stay of the peace forces

A strong naval power,
tains a comparatively s
not a menace to any st
power, unless the milita
its aggressions, unites t
coalition against itself; i
England, which relied u
as her first line of defens
have begun a war of agg
Germany; and the Unite
its small army, will neve
of aggression against
keeps up a large and effi

No nation ever attem
preponderance of armam
land and sea unless it is a
gressive purposes. The
like Germany, attempts
preponderance, brands i
ternational bandit.

The liberties of the na
an end whenever any
has the best army in th
command of the sea; or, *v*
ever any country which
navy in the world build
formidable army. The
the ancient world soon pa
when that Republic, alre
of an invincible army, wr
mand of the sea from C
defeat of the British fl
would have placed the m
a similar position in regar
unless, indeed, the Ameri
have restored the comm
to the Allies.

The modern world is
from the ancient chiefl
that it has not been bro
domination of a single
been saved from this fa
tunate fact that the stro

Digitized by Google

n the strongest naval
the insular situation
ability to command
inability to become
tary power. Herein
the existence of the
ths of the modern
ugliest aspects of our
esented by the cam-
prior to the World
olicy of England to
wer standard against

international situa-
uropean-Asiatic con-
urope and Asia, if
strong, efficient, co-
d have ample land
o compel the rest of
ot the policy of the
ıd free government
ıd. No such danger
y of the other con-
of their smaller size.
nt of republican gov-
olve the problem of
e. Hereditary auto-
often imperiled the
ut the dangers com-
es and democracies
erious. Rome con-
c, and, as an empire,
a choice of masters.
of the last century,
angerous to Europe
n France threatened
ı were defended by
autocrats. In 1914,
y threatened world-
danger was ascribed
government. Such
It is not the form of
ne act of aggression
Many good souls
ıuse autocratic Rus-
-ridden Japan and
l Montenegro gave
lied cause. But all
ave contained auto-
cratic governments. The Allies have fought against domination by a single state, not against any particular form of government. There is no instance in history of the defeat of a republican state by an autocratic state, both states being otherwise fairly matched; but history is replete with the defeat and overthrow of monarchies by republics in fair and open fight.

Absolute suppression of all trade with the bandit nation should be enforced in future wars, if, unfortunately, the history of the world continues to repeat itself. In the last war the Allies did not declare a blockade, in order, apparently, to avoid irritating neutrals, whose battles they were fighting. They preferred to follow an illegal practice, as measured by international-law standards, which attained the same ends and permitted the compensation of owners of ships and cargoes. The Second Peace Conference of 1907 stipulated that commercial and industrial relations between belligerents and neutrals should be especially protected and encouraged. This is the freedom of the seas which Germany desired—freedom from blockade, which was necessary to bring her to her knees and stop her aggressions. The international law of Grotius justifies the measures which the Allies enforced, or should have enforced, against Germany; indeed, if they had proclaimed the principles of the Father of International Law at the beginning of the war, they would have had a moral and intelligible code to follow. Truth is so delicate that, if we deviate ever so slightly from it, we fall into error. Grotius was a citizen of one of a number of small nations which were threatened by the German empire of the day, and he wrote as the citizen of an 'allied' country. Looking out upon a world much like our own, his thoughts are as fully applicable to our larger world as if they were written yesterday.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

The greatest crime that a state can commit is to kindle a war, either by its own aggressions or by creating the belief that it will play an unworthy part. War is not the supreme evil. The supreme evil is the habit of regarding war as the supreme evil. No nation has more serious difficulties to encounter than one whose courage and firmness are doubted. What a bandit nation believes to be true is, so far as its action is concerned, the same as the truth.

A primary power with a fearless and efficient government rarely gets into war. Such a government does not attack its neighbors, and does not provoke war by its reputation for inefficiency and want of spirit. The administrations of James Monroe, Andrew Jackson, Grover Cleveland, and Theodore Roosevelt were eras of peace.

It is the duty of every nation to maintain such armed forces as are necessary to preserve domestic peace. Where free government prevails, the control of these forces is in the ha representatives of a majo people, who have no interes ing to factious methods an to support needless armame

The path to internationa not in neutrality, or in Wo eration, or in arbitration, particular form of governm the unfailing application of Mutual Aid. International problem of education. Wor be averted and excessive will vanish only when that l understood and so sure in tion that ambitious natio nounce the hope of conque bors as little disposed to e offer an injury.

Although the United Sta enter into formal guaranties of the World War and the of her political departments ance that she will join the w any power that threatens free nations.

AN EX-ENEMY IN BERLIN TO-DAY

BY MAXWELL H. H. MACARTNEY

I

It is unfortunate that the opinion of the world at large on the conditions obtaining to-day in Berlin should so often be derived from persons falling into one of two classes.

The one class consists of those persons who put up at the most expensive hotels; eat at the most expensive restaurants; look in at the most expensive places of entertainment; and ing naturally enjoyed, at co low cost (for the mark sta about one twelfth of its pre- much obsequious and by no interested attention, rush a impression that the Germa charming, forgiving creatur perhaps drinking too muc

Digitized by Google

for a supposedly bankrupt
t are simply delighted to
ll their ex-enemies back in
.
nd class is made up of those
t travelers who, coming out
try with their minds already
all a facile prey to the prop-
those Germans whose mis-
convince the world of the
material and intellectual,
herland.
either of these classes is it
get that true picture of an
life in Berlin to-day which
n only after a long stay here,
one has mingled with all
society. Even so, it is ex-
rd for any one individual to
tisfactory picture, because
e of the German is not the
rd the American that it is
Englishman or the French-
this attitude again is apt to
ding as you are being dealt
rivate, a business, or an offi-
y.
e, if one is asked simply, as I
am on my rare visits back in
whether things are made de-
unpleasant for the ex-enemy
ividual now resident in Ger-
whether it is safe to speak
English in a restaurant, the
stonishingly simple. I say
'astonishingly simple,' be-
ne who had spent some time
y before the war, I was fully
o meet with a considerable
passive ill-will, if not of ac-
ity, even in everyday life.
ny German friends of those
dopted toward me much the
ude that the Walrus and the
adopted toward the oysters;
the actual outbreak of war,
hostility, as we all know,
oped into a rabid yet calcu-
osity, to which there was, at
. 4

any rate at the outset, no true parallel on the side of the Entente.

In spite, however, of the result and length of the war, exhibitions of private ill-will are not very much more marked than they were before 1914. Very possibly, indeed, the result and length of the struggle have had their effect. A defeated Germany does not feel very safe in giving way to a too-unbridled exhibition of her true sentiments.

It may be, too, that the very length of the war has had its effect, quite apart from the result. Even if a short war, such as that upon which Germany had reckoned, would have been over before the ingrained hatred marking the middle stages of the struggle had taken root in all our minds, the long-drawn-out hardships of four and one-half years of unintermittent fighting reacted upon the feelings of all but the most ferocious fire-eaters. Anyway, whatever the reasons may be, it is only the bare truth to say that, so long as the private individual of an ex-enemy nation behaves himself with ordinary restraint, he is very unlikely to have cause to complain of his treatment in the everyday affairs of existence, and may even be agreeably surprised.

I will give two personal experiences in support of this statement. The Armistice was not very many weeks old when I happened to be traveling in Germany on a very crowded train, the bulk of the passengers being soldiers from the notorious Ehrhardt brigade. Every seat in the train had long before been occupied, and I was compelled to clamber, with my valises and wraps, on to the couplings between two carriages, and to travel in this manner in the midst of a bunch of similarly adhesive soldiers. After we had gone a short distance, one of the soldiers who had been eyeing me curiously, inquired if I was a foreigner. I answered with a simple affirmative. He then inquired

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

my nationality. I replied that I was an Englishman. For a moment there was a profound silence all round, and I was beginning to think that I should be accidentally shoved off the moving train, when a voice asked, 'Have you got any English cigarettes?' As it happened I had a couple of packets of a brand that I very much disliked, and I distributed the contents of one all round. This sop to Cerberus had the happiest results. When at the next junction I had to change trains, two or three of the soldiers climbed down with me and insisted upon carrying my very portable luggage for me to the farther platform.

The second experience occurred not many months ago, when I was coming up on a journey from Vienna to Berlin. When we got into the German train at Tetschen, there was a young Englishman standing in the corridor who looked rather wistfully at my golf-clubs. The train was full, as usual, and he had failed to find a seat. After we had gone a short way, he opened the door of our compartment and asked if there was a vacant seat. On being told that there was, he sat down, explaining to me that he had only a second-class ticket but would gladly pay the difference on to Berlin.

Presently came along the ticket-collector, to whom the Englishman handed his ticket, saying in very broken German that he wanted to pay the additional fare. The collector grunted, and went off and fetched an inspector, to whom, after the Englishman had vainly tried to explain the situation in German, he addressed himself in English. In the meantime I had explained matters to him in German; but, paying no attention to me, the inspector turned to the Englishman and said, 'We don't speak English here. You're in Germany now, and if you have anything to say, you must say it in German.' Then, looking round for applause, ued in German: 'Who gave sion to travel in a first-cla ment? You have broken the and must pay twice the fir for the whole distance.'

This rudeness and officia however, brought forth a st test from my fellow voya all declared that they them quite ignorant of the reg question; and how then Englishman, or any other f expected to know them. Th vacant, the Englishman ha ed to pay the difference, a surely sufficient.

The official declined to li expostulations. The Englis upon said that he would wi the compartment and aske turn of his ticket, which, it was a through ticket to Ha inspector, however, decline up until the sum claimed ha and the more his own abused him for his scurvy b more violently and obstinat to the letter of the law. The not settled until we got actu lin, and, forming a small laid the full facts before a functionary, who, thank had some notions of elemen and reason.

Much capital was made l the Franco-British press, o sault delivered by Prince Prussia upon a party of Fre who were dining with their Hotel Adlon, Berlin. The certainly disgraceful; but admitted that Prince Joach been notorious as a bluste and that upon this occasion gazing upon the champag bubbled. In the ordinary conversation in French pro or no comment; and, so fa

Digitized by Google

nglish being objected to, the contrary, only too bish their acquaintance ue, and to give you full where they have worked America, where they were what they hope to do as rts again become avail- n citizens.

incidents are, however, they illustrate the in- f the old German Junker asses of all grades, and difficulties to be con- by such Germans as e lessons of the war to struggling to make the of militarism coincide pread of a more urbane c spirit. The dice are, hted against them, so sent generation of Junk- s survives.

II

ver, it comes to business ions, one very soon real- erman is unable to resist n to score off his late ch as he can. One of the ustrations of this pro- twenty-five-per-cent sur- mans try to impose upon u can go into a shop, for rder a number of articles. assistant finds out from address (if you have not en betrayed by your ac- u are a foreigner, down y-five-per-cent *Zuschlag* t for the wise, the remedy u begin by pointing out he terms of the peace ns are forbidden to dif- inst foreigners; and, if no effect, you walk out ation that to-morrow you oods ordered, through a German friend — and at another shop.

Nothing, again, could be more courteous than the way in which my colleague and myself have been, in appearance, treated by the authorities, but we are fully aware that, as representatives of the bitterly hated 'Northcliffe Press,' whose alleged calumnies against Germany are almost a daily theme with the majority of newspapers, we are, nevertheless, quite cordially disliked, and that we are never likely to get any real favor shown to us. Quite the contrary. Coincidence is notoriously long in the arm, but was it altogether a coincidence, I wonder, that when, not long ago, we wanted to get a certain report over to London before it had appeared in the German press, our telephone, which had previously worked quite admirably, suddenly became *gestört*, and remained in that useless condition for an unaccountably long period?

That amusing Dickens creation, Mr. Joseph Bagstock, used, if I remember right, to be fond of referring to himself in the following terms: 'Tough, sir, tough is Joey B. Tough and de-vilish sly.' Well, Joey B. was as tender as spring lamb and as angelically simple as Amelia Sedley, in comparison with many Germans whom I could name. One cannot, perhaps, blame them too severely. The under dog is never enamored of his situation, and when that under dog has been accustomed for half a century to be the top dog and to have his enemy by the throat, he is doubly infuriated when the positions suddenly become reversed. If, then, the Germans can put spokes in some of our wheels, they naturally do so, and it is 'up to us' to see that we give them back as good as they give.

Besides, it is not only we civilians who suffer from these more or less impotent struggles. Germany has never ceased to regard and proclaim the Treaty of Versailles as an outrageous

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

swindle, into which she was lured by the hypocritical protestations and fourteen points of President Wilson; by reliance upon the published war-aims of the Allies; by anything, in short, rather than by military defeat in the field; and between the ratification of the Peace and the advent of the insecure Wirth Cabinet, she has striven unceasingly to carry out as few of the conditions as she possibly can. She has wriggled (and Bavaria is still wriggling) over the disarmament question; she has called to Heaven in evidence of her inability to pay the compensations and reparations demanded of her; she has reduced the trials of the 'war criminals' to a farce. Her much-boasted revolution of 1918 swept away, indeed, the Hohenzollerns, but left behind the bureaucrats, who were indispensable because they knew where to find the blotting-paper and sealing-wax, and who have not yet learned that the old verbose and truculent notes, which may have suited the temper of a people bristling with bayonets, do not come well from a people which, after plunging more than half the civilized world into misery and shying at nothing, however barbarous, in its struggle for supremacy, has now had its fangs drawn.

III

So much may be said to be more or less the common experience of all Germany's former enemies. But this superficial equality of treatment does not mean that Germany, in her heart of hearts, makes no distinction between her foes. If President Wilson shares with the late King Edward and M. Clemenceau the distinction of being bitterly hated, the American people as a whole is more popular here than any of the others. This is only natural for the following reasons.

There are, in the first place, so many Germans and friendly neut
United States, that a Ge
hardly work up a permanen
the American people as a wh
second place, he realizes tha
ests of the United States a
many were never in serio
before the war; and thinks
leaders had not bungled thei
cy and their moral conduct
so idiotically, there would h
sporting chance that the Un
would never have taken up a
Thirdly, the comparatively
of the American troops on t
action naturally meant that
relatively little fighting be
two nations — though the
tion of the Americans round
Thierry in the summer of
ably discouraged any Ger
for a full-dress campaign
scale. Fourthly, America al
the greater belligerents has
territorial or monetary adv
Germany's expense. And, f
charitable endeavors of Mr
mission and other relief or
(duly advertised in the press
duced a sentiment of sincere
which has further reinforced
ure felt at reported Ameri
tience with what, apparently
times regarded by you 'ove
our meticulous determinati
force the Treaty of Versai
attitude, of course, delighte
mans, and encouraged the
that, when once the Hardin
tration was firmly in the sa
many might look to the Uni
as to the first great nation w
break down the tabu by wh
now surrounded; which woul
money; and which would ena
recover from her present pro

Recent events have great
these hopes. The unwaveri
of America to her associates

Digitized by Google

the clearly inspired tele-
Washington correspond-
nes, indicating that Mr.
d welcome an agreement
English-speaking peoples,
ll and wormwood to a
ermined to play off the
he Entente against one
press has not ventured to
n to its indignation; but
there, and is embittered
g perception that Mr.
's outburst on Upper
ikely to end in anything
The methodical German,
ushing back his nascent
r the United States, is
simply upon the material
aspects of future rela-
ng that, for the moment,
is not ripe, Germany is
attention more immedi-
ia and nearer markets;
ets the United States out
and speeches made at
the Hamburg-Amerika
ar large concerns show,
the restoration of pre-
with the United States
rdinal object of German
at, judged by the statis-
ng, it is beginning to
ith this success Germany
ly content, and that is
n business men, journal-
s find doors open to them
sed to men of French or
ality.

nk, that the individual
personally disliked. It is
itted that the British oc-
e Cologne area has been
ct and forbearance, and
ssions in Berlin have fre-
praised to me for the
usive manner in which
t their business. The in-
ce of the Englishman to
conspicuous has stood
him here in good stead. Except on special occasions, the British officers are almost always in mufti. When one recollects the outburst against Great Britain with which the war opened, and the immense popularity of Herr Lissauer's 'Hymn of Hate,' it is really astonishing to find so little overt trace of anti-British feeling. There are, of course, the recognized Anglophobes, headed by Herr G. Bernhardt of the *Vossische Zeitung;* but it is certainly curious how little the average German reflects that it was, after all, to the British that the German navy had ultimately to surrender in such dramatic fashion; that it was the British Empire which took over the bulk of Germany's colonial possessions; and that it is to the British Empire that Germany must look again for many of her indispensable raw materials and for customers for her finished products. As a matter of fact, Great Britain stands more than ever before in the sunshine of the German Michael. But the average German does not apparently look so deeply as this, and merely notices that Great Britain is showing a readiness to resume trade-relations with him, and to this end is prepared — within the limits of the Treaty of Versailles — to give him an opportunity to avoid national bankruptcy.

This is not, of course, to say that the British — or even the Americans — are positively popular or fêted here. Whatever may be the faults of the Germans, they have, at least, a spirit of national pride, which is sometimes lamentably lacking among the Austrians and Hungarians. During the many months which I spent in Austria and Hungary during 1919 and 1920, I heard many of the Allies declare that they found the friendliness and hospitality of the inhabitants almost too embarrassing. This criticism is not without justification. But neither Aus-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

tria nor Hungary ever seriously regarded herself as at war with Great Britain, France, or the United States. The troops of these nations practically never came into conflict with one another, and the pre-war personal relations between the wealthier and better-class families in Great Britain, for example, and Austria-Hungary had been in many cases very cordial and intimate. It was, then, often very awkward for an Englishman, Frenchman, or American to find himself being invited to luncheons and dinners and dances with unfeigned friendliness, during a time when the Allied representatives in Paris were preparing — in the treaties of Saint-Germain and Trianon — settlements infinitely more disastrous to Austria and to Hungary than was the Treaty of Versailles to Germany. Sometimes, in fact, the situation became intolerable, and some virulent outburst against our newest European allies compelled one to remind one's very hosts that, after all, they had begun the war by their ultimatum to Serbia.

There is no fear of any of the Allies being similarly embarrassed in Germany. Not long ago some of the Berlin correspondents gave prominence to a 'house law' of the von der Golz family, the members of which bound themselves to enter into no friendly relations with their ex-enemies, but to confine their dealings with them to strictly official matters. There was, as a matter of fact, nothing remarkable about this. A German baron to whom I mentioned this 'house law,' and with whom, as another old Cambridge man, I had fancied myself on tolerably good terms, bluntly told me that there was nothing extraordinary in this family pact, which was being observed in many houses. His avowal confirmed my own observations and experience. Exceptions may be made, for reasons of policy, in the case of recognized Germa influence; but the ordinary will have no opportunity, ev the desire, to mingle in th home life of any German good extraction. This ma Christianity, but it is unde *amour propre*, and human na

IV

But if, in the case of the o there has been a certain G ternal correctness, there has is to-day, one great exceptio Britain was the most hated ing the war, France is now lo a deadly hatred of which made. Before the war Ger tainly did not hate France France hated Germany; and ing the war the German expressed its admiration fo ery of the French *poilus*. A miration has long vanished. ago an American to whom I ing of this bitter hatred ha yet striking example of th these words. He was incli skeptical, so I rang the b waiter and asked him what of the French. The man's ey blazed, as he declared that willingly march against t again to-morrow because, 'they wish to make a natio of us.' When he had gone room, I rang for the chambe she was equally outspoken testation of the French.

People in railway-carria quite openly about this ha canvass the time — it may five years, it may be longer — final reckoning with France 'We want,' the Germans sa lies. We ask only to be left the French, and we are sur next time France will not

Digitized by Google

on her side.' Such
rd literally scores of
doubtedly represent
n's views and wishes.
urse, do something
down these feelings;
able fact that many
ersonal acquaintance
training up their
ance, and, above all,
n that they must
d wrongs done to
y the French black
ied area.
is the actual hatred
no matter how dis-
press proclaims that
was a joint decision
hole blame is invari-
ance. Every rebuff
Germany is due to
d revenge. The in-
irit of hatred against
, the more easy since
atry in whose name
s here act, and thus
the perhaps not al-
of pulling the chest-
for their partners.
e, the French appear
own accustomed to
scarcely to realize
ur years of shivering
menace, they have
s a freedom which,
enable them to pur-
can reasonably fore-
tional dignity com-
e position to which
by the valor, charm,
ligence of her popu-

to repay all at
lignities from which
1871 has been too
enchmen. Not only
are the professional journalists too often unbridled in their remarks, but men such as M. Poincaré are losing no opportunity of keeping French feeling against Germany at white heat.

The still dangerous question of Upper Silesia is exceptionally deplorable. The French representatives on the Inter-Allied Mission have made virtually no pretense of impartiality, and their attitude is resented the more in that Silesia is so closely bound up with the traditions of Frederick the Great; while the Poles are not only despised by the Germans for their lack of business capacity, but are hated by them with the hatred that the oppressor always feels for his victim. Not even the loss of Alsace-Lorraine could move Germany to such fierce hatred for France as the surrender of Upper Silesia to the Poles, after what would be eternally proclaimed as tampering with the results of a gerrymandered plebiscite.

The next few years are going to be critical for the future of Europe. France above all is walking to-day

per ignes
Suppositos cineri doloso,

and, no less than Germany, has temporarily forgotten the wise old dictum of Bismarck, that in politics there is no room for either hatred or love. Mankind, it is to be hoped, will eventually achieve a higher level than these words connote. But to-day we are not even on that humble plane, and the superficial observer, who eats his dinner in Berlin to the strains of the latest English or American musical comedy, is making a great mistake if he thinks that the German will-to-power has been finally crushed, and that there is no longer a steady, relentless national purpose behind the cheap veneer of the neo-Teutonic republicanism.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

THE SIMPLE SPELLERS

An anæmic youth in horn goggles has called on me in the interests of the Simple Spellers. He shamelessly appropriated to himself and his cause two good hours of my time, seeking by processes which, for want of a better name, must pass for argumentation, to enlist me in his army. I suppose someone pays him for his time. I wish someone would pay me for mine; it was the best I had, and it is gone where I cannot recover it. And the gist of his shameless argument was that simplified spelling saves time!

He seemed to be obsessed with the naïve theory that we save time if we don't spend it; whereas everyone who uses time knows that to spend it before it spends itself is the only way to save it. Accordingly I could get no real information from him as to whose time the simplification of spelling would save, or how. The idea seems to be that every time you write *thru* instead of *through* you save a second; and if you write it often enough, you might in the course of some years accumulate time enough for a vacation in Italy or an appendicitis operation. It appears to be based on the fatuous notion that time is money, and can be kept in the savings bank at compound interest till you need it. Suppose you write ten thousand simply spelled words a day, saving a second on each, or two hours and forty-two minutes on the day's work. Then you write for two hours and forty-two minutes and save three quarters of an hour more —and so on to infinity. It is subject to diminishing returns, but it goes on forever, and when you get down to split seconds you c start. It is a beautifu does n't apply to me. I time by writing *thru;* I finitely more time tryi to write it, and in hati written it, than I cou briefer than the very se

I suppose I am an ex am still old-fashioned e own writing; I am not and speeded up by me dictaphones and typis suppose I should get fi no matter how they w should be glad of simp saving in 'overhead.' over the thought that n by using simple spelli ceeded in learning it), w profit by a hundred do might save time; a fe But if I know anything would add it to her rec and devote it to gazing dow. So she will do, a have her simple pleasu purchase them for her seeing my perfectly goo lated into the syncop Billings or Ring Lardne

But how about the their little minds be superfluous letters? or freed by an Emancipa tion of the Simple Spell done when 't is done, t it were done quickly.' call any burden of sup that weighed heavily mind. My observation there are two kinds of p learn to spell, and tho

Digitized by Google

orries about 'mean-
ns of letters' — no
the Simple Spellers.
n whether learning
tion of memorizing
rs, any more than
r of memorizing se-
urves, and angles. I
through is seven let-
e a maple leaf that I
it, and with slight
v it with my pencil.
ewriter I make the
d by a series of reflex
count the letters. If
know *through* from
obably mention the
, but the fact is I
ow Uncle Jim from
ut consciousness of
eatures. I know that
e he *looks* like Uncle
simplify him on my
burdened my mind
ning him.

craft by itself: it is a
reading, training of
When a boy writes
or *Stabat Mater*, or
d, he writes what he
not with his ear, but
ge of the words. It
t a reader, and is not
appearance of the
each him the distinc-
ters alone would be
to try to teach him
ple he never saw by
escriptions. I doubt
really easier to learn
am still to be con-
rden of our present
ufficiently lightened
compensate anyone
ould certainly be on
o of children to have
tems; and I see no
hange could be made

The Simple Speller has his answer ready. The gain would be in logicality, and to become more logical in any department of life is, he is assured, worth any sacrifice. I have no such assurance. To make spelling logical would be only the first step toward making language logical. Now logic is a good tool where it fits, but it does not fit every contingency of life. It is a good thing in language up to a certain point — which nobody has discovered. If it had been the ruling principle of language from the start, and if our splay-footed ancestors who first began to grunt with meaning could have looked down through the centuries and seen what they were letting us in for, language might have been logical, and we too. In that case we should probably have but one language in the world to-day, one of downright Prussian efficiency, fitted accurately to every service of life except that of imagination. Is that our ideal? If so we must change ourselves first; for if by a gesture of magic we could make our language overnight as logical as mathematics, how long would it stay so with our minds working as they do? The language of a people is like the skin of a man; as a rule, it fits snugly, and it is not often that we can better its fit by taking thought, except as by taking thought we better ourselves.

Indeed, the Simple Spellers are ill-advised to seek more logic till they learn to use better what they have. The only arguments they have offered me are drawn from antecedent probability, which, if I remember my logic, is the weakest argument known, since it is built of inference before experience and buttressed with parabolic evidence. What we want to know about simplified spelling is whether it will simplify life for us and our children; what effect it would have on us as a nation; whether it is anything that would compensate us for the agony of the change. Why

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

not look to those who have tried it? The Germans have simplified their spelling as far as a people could, and still use the old symbols. At this time it might be impossible to get a fair answer to the question what the effect of the system has been on the nation, how much time the people have saved by it, and how they have spent it. The French understand themselves pretty well; they have a fairly sure instinct for what they can and cannot make themselves do. In the Year One of the Age of Reason, which was 1792 by dead reckoning, they rationalized by fiat everything in France except human nature and spelling. Human nature then took its course, and before long everything was back where it was before, except for a few matters chiefly political.

Even so do spelling reforms come and go, leaving few traces. You can make a formal garden by rule and compass, but eternal vigilance and labor are the price of it; if you allow yourself the least interval of relaxation, the irregularities of nature will reassert themselves. Simple spelling cannot establish itself by decree, for it has no authority. It must win its place by consent of the governed, and it has not a winning personality. So far it has not learned to smile. And if it has a scintilla of imagination, its sponsors would do well to let it show. I do not find simplified spelling useful; I know it isn't beautiful; it isn't even funny. Therefore, my word for it is that of the king to the harper: —

> Either ye serve me foot and hand,
> Or lift my heart with glee;
> Else ye have neither roof nor land,
> Nor guerdon get from me.

CONVERSATIONS

When still I prefaced my name with 'Miss,' none but my intimates ever thought of engaging me in conversation about the qualificat laundress and the amount o charge; acquaintances did r I found it well-nigh impossi satisfying food at a reaso and anyone would have bl quire whether or not I ma clothes. But once I had ch for Mrs., the veriest strang take a surprising interest in tic machinery of my life; co assumed astounding conver portance. And it is not th kindly inquiries about th macaroni we prefer, or burn soft coal or briquets, deplore the passing of a tim ple talked to me about inte personal things and I did intrigue them into such con

As I study what seems t cumscribed conversational ties of married women, I w some mischievous fairy go feasts, and cast a spell upo that robs her of all interes ity for, *real* conversation? world only think so? W answer, there are hundreds have escaped the wicked f escaped to protest and to p

I am quite sure that in bo and practice I am much b for participation in worth tion than I was two years unfortunately, I seem not o exchanged my name for husband, but to have given any ideas on any worth-wh 'to boot.' Do we have a ch she settles herself with, 'De you 've changed this hous you have a great deal of tro help?' Then follow the usu about the butcher, the groc dress, the coal.

If John passes through th I ask him to come in an neighbor, her face brighte

Digitized by Google

uine enthusiasm, 'Oh, e been wanting to meet l me what to give my ld girl to read'; and, ve of profusely illustra- ildren?' This happens which has claimed my st, and about which I d opinions; but it never e mother of the ten- my advice. John care- hat he knows to be my the matter; she thanks d at length leaves, hop- not lose my laundress, re so hard to get in this

uest to tea. She com- the quality of the straw- if I made it myself, and d to get sugar, and then ith, 'Mr. B——, what do is new play? Is it pos- hink, that the leading the favorable comment ?' By chance, this gifted as been my friend for ve enjoyed many a pleas- ther; but I refrain from fact and give my atten- riticisms of the play and stions of our guest, who ds my attention by ask- ve seen any pictures of I don't think her pretty. nd I first began to meet f wives in the field of ve attempted to combat ersation was directed to felt that my experience iscuss better, he said so e leadership to me. We d that the unusualness ıvre so pained and sur- ests that it made con- versation momentarily them. It was apparent bandon our course, if we ffer the charge of being boorish hosts and uncomfortable guests. We still protest occasionally, but, as a rule, we exchange an understanding glance, and then John talks, and I assume what seems to be the inevitable rôle of a married female person — that of serene onlooker at all conversations that have not to do with household matters that any Swedish maid-of-all-work is better equipped to discuss than am I.

Unmarried women, who are themselves engaged in interesting public work, are the leaders in this unconscious shut-out of their married sisters. I know a very intelligent and talented woman whose husband is an architect. He has a studio in his home, where his wife works with him. There is not a plan he makes which has not incorporated in it some idea that was hers. Yet I have more than once seen bachelor-girl guests in their home all but exclude Mrs. M—— from a spirited conversation on building art, and conclude the talk with that exasperating air which says plainly, 'If only these clever men married women who could appreciate them!'

Last summer, at my express request, John and I devoted the leisure we could find in two months to the fascinating subject of French verse. Our guest, an unmarried girl of enviable attainments, came in from the verandah one evening, where she had been in conversation with John, and said, 'It 's wonderful what John has got out of his study of French poetry.'

'Yes,' I replied, 'we have enjoyed it, and I am convinced that the French idea of rhythm — '

I got no further. 'Oh,' said my guest in surprise, 'I knew that John had been studying the subject, *but I did n't know that he had made you do it.*'

I am still wondering if I was rude to her. I never can remember what I said, only what I felt. I know that we did

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

not talk of poetry: we talked of the relative merits of cooked and uncooked breakfast-foods, and I was advised about what to give John for a summer breakfast.

What, I ask myself over and over, what do these clever girls imagine becomes of women like themselves? Many of them marry. Do they think that marriage miraculously invests all women with an abnormal interest in potatoes and pans, and inhibits their having ideas on the very subjects of which they were masters before marriage? Do they imagine that, with their names, they will gladly relinquish all right to an interest in the activities for which they were trained by college and work, and that they will be content ever after to lift their voices only in discussions of scalloped oysters, sheeting, and adenoids?

As I go about pondering these things, I keep my left glove on as much as possible, and often, on the car and in the station, I enjoy delightful conversations about opera, drama, Mr. Chesterton — yea, thigmotaxis, if I like! If my charming seat-mate knew what was under my glove, she would, — eight chances out of ten, — with perfunctory suiting of her mind to my pace, ask me if I had any children; and being answered in the negative, she would regard me reproachfully and then speak of the weather.

Yes, yes, surely, children and the high cost of living and jam and laundry and all these domestic subjects should be interesting to woman. I *am* interested love children, I like to ma laundress is a wonderful p appreciate her. *But* I do mind condemned to an exc domestic subjects. Only i are excused if they talk o ness to the exclusion of all

True, a woman can le tion into avenues that in she tries. I affirm it: she c But why, always, if she b woman, must she try? always compelled to pro can perform a housemaid's out having a housemaid's of us are women who did work before our marriage same women still. Why ever pay us the complime our intelligence for grante

JOY

When I am glad
There seems t
A toy balloon
Inside of me.

It swells and sw
Up in my che
And yet I do
Not feel distr

And when I go
Along the str
It almost lifts
Me off my fe

A NOTE FOR MORALISTS

In the 'Atlantic's Bookshelf' last month, Joseph C. Lincoln's new book warm encomium in which quite incidental reference was made to less credit sellers,' 'such undesirable characters,' so the reviewer called them, 'as H Wright.' It did not seem to us within the bounds of possibility that the ter this connection, could be endowed with moral significance; but since it h quarter at least, been open to suspicion, we beg the reader to discard any suc tion. We have not the honor of Mr. Wright's acquaintance, but that his ' in the moral sense, is good, we take, on competent authority, absolutely for g

Digitized by Google

E CONTRIBUTORS' COLUMN

mnus of the Univer-
at Flint, a manufac-
omobiles, where he
among them the pub-
ly and the conduct of
His knowledge of the
tory management is
ntelligent and imag-
h Taylor, once a lec-
ns, the Arctic farm-
ditions of the people
e letters at intervals
ege of the Faroes by
Katharine Fullerton
ceton, New Jersey.
Irs. John S. Law-
At Thirty,' which we
s in Boston.

*

whose first paper on
in the August num-
cribed as a detached
a recent interesting

sponsible for my com-
g my life in the wilds,
eir names are Fenimore
les Verne, and R. L.
l no intention, when I
nore than a few years.
upon you. Before 1905
sides Portuguese East
the Mascarenhas, —
ountries, like the differ-
es, — but since 1905 I
I have been hunting,
prospecting; but the
f my life, and the chief
is the study of the ani-
biological, but from a
v. I avoid all European
by only when I live in
which increases at the
iles which separate me
fraid that my long and
Nature has given me a
g about whom H. Fair-
Man who, through the
ddle Pleistocene time,
became the destroyer
er seen an aeroplane.
theatre last seventeen

years ago in Johannesburg, once only in twenty-six years; only twice in my whole life have I been within visiting distance of a cinema show.

* * *

Vernon Kellogg, whose earliest reputation was won in the field of biology, served during the war as a first lieutenant to Mr. Hoover, and is now revisiting the scenes of his extraordinary success. **Jean Kenyon Mackenzie,** who tells us, after her missionary wanderings over the earth, that 'the praise of steamers is the worship of the exile,' sends us these poems from her present home in Riverdale on the Hudson. **Edward Yeomans** is a Chicago manufacturer who has recently published through the Atlantic Monthly Press a singularly fresh and invigorating volume on Education — *Shackled Youth.*

* * *

Charles Bernard Nordhoff, whose element, air, earth, water, is the one he happens to be in, writes from Tahiti. **Annie W. Noel,** the most understanding of suburbanites, sends us her first contribution from her home in Upper Montclair, New Jersey. **Joseph Fort Newton** is minister of the Church of the Divine Paternity in New York City. **Joseph Auslander** is an American poet who has been teaching at Harvard.

* * *

The correspondence between **John Burroughs** and **Herbert D. Miles** began with a challenge from Mr. Miles regarding Mr. Burroughs's book, *Accepting the Universe.* The challenge was accepted, and many letters made their way between Asheville, North Carolina, and the famous Slabsides. **Arthur Sherburne Hardy,** diplomatist, editor, and novelist, has contributed to the *Atlantic* for a full generation. **J. Edgar Park** is the minister of the Second (Congregational) Church of Newton, West Newton, Massachusetts.

* * *

E. Alexander Powell is a wide-ranging war correspondent, with many years of

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

remarkable experience behind him. In the list of his important services was the correspondence covering the Turkish and Persian revolutions, the Balkan wars, and the French campaign in Morocco. He was the only correspondent officially attached to the Belgian forces in the campaign of 1914, and was decorated Chevalier of the Order of Leopold. Later he accompanied the Germans during the advance on Paris. He was in Antwerp during the siege, and was the only correspondent to witness the entry of the Germans. Mr. Powell has been connected with the Plattsburg camp and with the movement for military education of young Americans. **Samuel W. McCall,** long a member of Congress for Massachusetts, and for three years (1916–18) Governor of the State, is well known as a statesman and publicist of notable independence of thought and expression. **Colonel S. C. Vestal,** of the Coast Artillery Corps, sends, at the editor's request, this paper outlining the theories discussed in his interesting and highly important volume, *The Maintenance of Peace*. **Maxwell H. H. Macartney** has been for many years a correspondent of the London *Times*.

* * *

The future that the Orient holds out to Christianity has been the subject of an *Atlantic* debate of no small interest.

ST. JOHN'S UNIVERSITY,
SHANGHAI, CHINA,
June 15, 1921.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

In the June number of the *Atlantic* there is an article by Mr. Chang Hsin-hai entitled 'The Religious Outlook in China: a Reply,' which contains some statements requiring, it seems to me, some modification or correction.

Mr. Chang, we learn, is now studying at Harvard University. Perhaps he is not aware that Harvard was established by the Christian people of Massachusetts 'for the education of English and Indian youth in knowledge and godlyness'; in other words, that it was a missionary college receiving in early years generous aid from England for the special object of educating the natives, a college like those in China whose activity and influence he is deprecating.

It is untrue to say that 'missionaries have arranged that students may know as little as possible of the grandeur and dignity of their own national genius, the force and beauty of their own civilization, and the splendid character and discipline of their own great men.' As a matter of fact, all educational institutions in China provide courses of study in Chinese literature, Chinese history, and Chinese philoso
nese essay-writing, and in m
courses are not optional, b
cius's birthday is quite gen
mission schools.

Instead of its being the c
educational institutions hav
on with suspicion,' intellig
Chinese have generally lo
favor, have contributed ge
pansion and maintenance,
own boys and girls to be ed
Minister of Education in Pe
lien, sent a representative t
East China Christian Edu
held in Shanghai in Februa
'addressed the convention, e
ciation of the Ministry of th
sion schools and the desire t
in touch with Mission educa

Fortunately Mr. Chang d
ical mission work: the benev
Chinese and foreign, in the
throughout China is so co
would stultify one's self
criticism.

There is no danger of a du
when China becomes christ
trary, Christianity is usual
great a diversity. To begin
differences between the R
the Protestants. Among th
orders which are carrying o
their faith differ strikingly,
variety is even more marke
actually being evangelized,
a doubt. Mr. Chang's articl
alarm felt in certain anti-C
rapid advance made by the
China is indeed 'now willing
more powerful civilization o
low it in certain important a
important of these aspects
'It is the spirit that giveth

Yours faithf
MONTGO

* * *

This lady from Philad
Aristotle to some purpos

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Mrs. Gerould, in her brill
vies' in the July number, sa
the screen-play should be '
but Aristotle taught that s
the 'Three Unities' went to
play. He lays tremendou
'For,' says he, 'Tragedy is
men, but of actions — for
action, and the supreme goo
of life is action of a certain
The things that he thought
the order of their importanc
Characterization, Sentiment

Not a bad formula for a

Sincerely y
MARY E

Digitized by Google

includes the fol-
Green, taking for
hop-Talk editor,
e with his usual

ROTUNCKING
ons of a publisher's
l to live a definite
- to proceed, as the

tlantic Monthly.

er him,
terim.
w and hem.
s, *pro tem.*
cks his trunk,
nc pro tunc!

our merry print-
notype, and has-
wing untutored

was not alow
e quo.

d quem.
quite a stir,
topher,
es just *nunc*,
t till *tunc*.

hear many sides

le space of late to
anti-Semitic senti-
ly, for the question
ndictment against
refuse to be assim-
ningle — that they

who wishes to be
a of the difficulties
ay live in a Chris-
lozen Christian in-
ne Church. He is,
e a member of the
ds belong. He has
ramifying connec-
nding in the com-
a Christian, her
scended a bit, even
fine fellow; and his
ne should have cut
e so many attract-
ere is always a cer-
nce if the question
it ever so remotely.
r children to the
ttended by their
can be done, wires
of Tony Sarg must
summoned to the

principal's sanctum, and given, gently, tactfully, but unmistakably, to understand, that this is a Christian school and that his children are being admitted by special dispensation.

The question of finding accommodations at good hotels has been discussed *ad infinitum*, and I will not bore you with the numberless instances of Jews who have been turned away, to their great embarrassment, simply because they are Jews, though they have culture, breeding, and Christian connections. And with the refusal goes a sneer at the Jew for trying to force himself where he does not belong. How about assimilation here?

Finally, is it not unjust to the Jew who is adaptable, who wishes to be a one-hundred-percent American, to find himself constantly classed with the objectionable, noisy aliens who are flooding this country?

Perhaps these few arguments may set some of your readers to thinking, and to putting at least part of the blame for non-assimilation where it really belongs.

Sincerely yours,

H. L. K.

* * *

The Chicago *Tribune* hoists us a friendly signal now and then, this time a warning from a contributor.

A CALL FOR THE WATCH ON THE RHYME

SIR, —

In its August number, the *Atlantic Monthly* has a sonnet in which *us*, *glamorous*, *radius* and *continuous*, and *diameters* and *carpenters* are used as rhymes. And this from Boston! Please pass the beans!

OLE OLESON.

Even the editor was aware that the *Atlantic's* poet neither meditated nor employed the usual sequent rhymes, preferring the more complex assonance that has after all a charm of its own. But any critic from Chicago deserves a Boston audience.

* * *

Yeats's *Lake Isle of Innesfrae* comes to mind as one reads this account, not of a dream, but of a dream come true.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

I am living a unique life. Do you want me to write about it? I am living on an ancestral farm with my son (you have an article from him now, on stock exchange and speculation), and we are almost independent as far as living costs go. About all we buy is soda, sugar, coffee, cheese, and an occasional piece of meat (when our canned meat, which we kill and put up on the place, gives out).

We raise and grind our own wheat for breakfast-food; have our own milk and cream (buy butter); grind our own corn-meal, and get our wheat ground for flour; have all the fruit and vegetables we want; and our living costs us about a dollar or so a week, apiece. For this we live on

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

the top, everything being fresh and appetizing. Our inner life is delightful. We have all sorts of good books, papers and magazines, music, and perfect quiet, with only the birds singing about us. I throw down a blanket and sleep under the trees, and the birds and I begin the day together.

I have lovely flowers, to the raising of which I attend, often before the sun is up.

We have a car, and the roads are fine, so we can exchange our idyllic existence for the advantages (?) of city life whenever we so desire.

Our habit of life being so simple is, I think, largely responsible for our quiet, happy, and useful existence.

Neither my son nor I (we are alone here) eat breakfast; and when we eat at noon, it is that cracked wheat, hot or cold — generally out of the fireless cooker. No cooking for me until evening, when I throw a few of our new potatoes into the pot, and cook some eggs, and provide fresh apple-sauce and sweet corn, five minutes from the field before cooking.

It seems to me that from this quiet harbor, where life sings on so quietly and happily, there might come a message of simplicity and happiness to a bedeviled city population which could produce something of the effect on country-lovers that Thoreau's *Walden* did on me when I read it in Chicago, and yearned with all my heart to go and do likewise.

This life seems heavenly to me; and not one person who has been here but feels the charm and wants to return.

Yours truly,

ELLEN DE GRAFF.

* * *

Apparently the amenities of stamp-collecting may be appreciated by the stamp-collector's family, or then, again, they may not.

'Dear, your balance is running low.'

'Bought some more stamps.'

And again I had to listen to the Evils of Throwing Away Money. Would it not be well to stop squandering my hard-earned cash on mere scraps of paper, etc., etc.

Scraps of paper, indeed! Was not this stamp one of the great rarities? And here was a gem procured in Alaska. Not an ordinary one-cent stamp as the family would have it, but one which had been sent all the way from Washington by rail, steamer, and pack, to the gold-fields, there to lie until I should stumble across it. Useless to explain that it was a variety unknown until I found this specimen.

And this little engraving, worth many times its weight in gold, was found in a country post-office, where the postmaster refused to show me his stock one Saturday afternoon because he kept his stock upstairs in the safe, 'and,' he explained, 'some of the women are up there taking a bath.' No romance in stamps? Why, here was romance to saturation!

Useless to try to expl
national-bank letter-hea
stationery forgot their ste
me letters telling me of t
childish pastime. Foolis
less.

One fine day, a strang
office and asked whether
tion. I would. I would
mine there was somethin

Things moved rapidly
home, showed him the t
and sent him down the ro
my bathroom stamps —
climax to this tale — th
latelists habitually trust

Now, I would show in
I had parted with. With
car, and every time the
ting scenery I reminded
postage-stamps.

But my victory fell fla
No longer could I turn
after an off day at the o
long winter evenings in
felt lost.

Once a collector, alwa
interested in old maps
charts with their sea s
Terra Incognita fascinate
old books of travel, with
ical insets; old folio at
painted pages. The void
make a collection that w
joy forever.

'Dear, your balance is

Our correspondent
other stamp-collector
sometimes receives fr
that reads, in substa
ance is overdrawn.'

* *

In these days of
tests, it is refreshing
one young candidate
beginning early to s
lore against the day o
tions.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

That the *Monthly* has
the scheme of things is w
Extra proof 'out of the
of interest.

Small boy of four w
(globe), and interests be

'I know the names of

'Well, and what are t

'One is Atlantic and
Monthly.'

Yours sincer

Digitized by Google

ATLANTIC SHOP-TALK

SOMEBODY once showed us an early-nineteenth-century book whose dedication was substantially this:—

To my Revered Father,
To my Sainted Mother,
To all men, everywhere, of whatever tongue, who read;
To my sister Lucy, dear Lucy!
And to my God.

Of late, it has become usual to address a book to an audience more specific than that, and less scattering; to an audience whose thoughts are more probably our thoughts. Modern books are, therefore, likely to gather about themselves a special coterie, commonly more argumentative than sainted. For example, when a reader (of whatever tongue) finds a new volume that announces itself 'A Book for the Curious and Careful in Words and Print,' he picks it up, not only to see if he can qualify for that peculiar guild, but also with an eye open for his own peculiar hobbies.

If he chances to be an old contributor to the *Atlantic*, he reads this book by **Mr. George B. Ives** with special care. Mr. Ives has the knack of making 'Text, Type, and Style' his specialty, and human frailty in these matters his concern. Consequently, all writers whose manuscript has been through his hands turn the pages of his book with a feverish anxiety similar to that with which British statesmen thumbed the memoirs of Mrs. Asquith. One of the most distinguished of the Old Guard of *Atlantic* authors writes, —

'I have been enjoying Mr. Ives's book, and amused to find myself figuring as a horrible example. You might tell him that, when I saw he had examples from *Atlantic* contributors, a guilty conscience led me to look up "while" in the index and to learn the worst at once.' He found it, sure enough, in the index, where anybody can find at a glance the page where any given question of usage comes in for its share of decisive comment. The book does not run so much to the regulation dogmatic 'rules,' as it does to matters of good and better, and to the clash of arms that takes place in an editorial office over the matters which young writers like to think are automatic to the experienced.

All authors reading their proof, and all authors wishing that they had proof to read, will be interested in the attitude of a certain author who refuses to read his proof at all. He sends back his compendious galleys unread, assuring the office that their official proof-reading is quite good enough for him, and concluding, with weary dignity, 'I am not reading it myself, as it would only unfit me for life.'

* * *

At the opening of the college year, it seems in place to announce a new 'Atlantic Reading,' now ready for use: *After Thirty-Five Years: A Freshman of '85 to a Freshman of To-Day*, by **Frederick J. E. Woodbridge.** Regarding it, a business-like member of the English staff of one of our colleges writes: —

'Your readings are capital. The latest one, from the Freshman of '85, is going to be a treasure in teaching the loathed subject of structure and outlining in long papers. The article is good sense in the first place, and in the second place, it has an outline! By the shades of Lomer and Ashmun, it really has! No "Freshman of To-Day" can say it has n't. With the price at fifteen cents, each student can buy one, and paste it into the back of the notebook, and never forget to bring it to class. And, best of all, it is so inexpensive that he can afford to slice it up, with scissors.'

This sounds to us like a slashing method of teaching the gentle art of outlining, but it suggests that the series of thin, paper-covered reprints that make up the sixteen 'Atlantic Readings' can meet a special need.

While we are on the topic of educational texts, we wish to announce the arrival in the stock-room of a new collection of supplementary readings. *Story, Essay, and Verse* is designed with especial care to meet the needs of the senior high school. This is in direct succession to the very successful volume from the junior-high-school list, *Atlantic Prose and Poetry*, and is compiled by the same editors, Charles Swain Thomas and Harry Gilbert Paul. A few of the authors represented are Masefield, Strunsky, Crothers, Gay, Dunsany, Galsworthy, Frost, Gibson, and Mark Twain.

* * *

During the recent Pilgrim pageant season at Plymouth, we gained, besides a new respect for traffic-rules, a few bits of learned lore about the Fathers. For instance, we learned (not from the pageant, but from a friend) that the pastor of the Pilgrims in Leyden used to like to sign his letters, —

Yours to use,
JOHN ROBINSON.

That stately little term might easily serve as a motto to **Mrs. Francis King's** new book, *The Little Garden*. The book is for constant use by amateurs of gardening on small premises. It

Digitized by Google

is not a fairy tale about impossible landscapes blooming with inaccessible flowers. It concerns itself with such earthly matters as spading, and sod, and seeds, and brown bulbs, and where to plant, and how, and when. 'Yours to use,' *The Little Garden*.

* * *

Once upon a time, in a moment of prophecy, Mrs. Nickleby observed to her skeptical family, 'Well, all I say is, remember what I say now, and when I say I said so, don't say I didn't.' In somewhat the spirit of Mrs. Nickleby, we recall a prophecy of our own, regarding **Mr. Edward Yeomans's** book, *Shackled Youth*. If we are not mistaken, we predicted for it a varied audience. And here comes a letter suggesting a variety of audience that we had not foreseen: —

'*Shackled Youth*, by Edward Yeomans, recently published by you, seems to me the most remarkable volume on education that it has been my privilege to see in many years. I don't suppose Mr. Yeomans intended the book to be used by Sunday-school teachers, but I don't know any book that would do more to give Sunday-school teachers the background which their work demands. I want to have every teacher in my Sunday-school read and meditate upon this book during the summer.'

Still another variety is suggested in a letter stating the fact that the book is being ordered, and presumably read, by many judges of Juvenile Courts.

* * *

The special edition of **Mr. A. Edward Newton's** *Magnificent Farce* was, of course, oversubscribed six weeks in advance of publication. (When we say we said so, don't say we didn't.)

* * *

On a warm August morning, in Boston, a gentleman entered a Boylston Street bookstore, and inquired for 'a book on Ichthyology for four-year-olds.' (This really happened. We can point out the bookstore.) The saleswoman failed to hear the syllable 'ic,' and understood the customer to say 'a book on *theology* for four-year-olds.' Inured to the eccentricities of the trade, she produced a book of Bible Stories, prettily illustrated. 'Oh, no; *Ich*thyology!' explained the customer. At that, the resourceful bookwoman was brought to pause for a moment; but, rallying quickly, she told the gentleman that if the four-year-old could use a book on *orni*thology instead, she had in stock a book called *Bird Stories*, by **Edith M. Patch**; or if *en*tomology would more nearly pacify, there was *Hexapod Stories*, by the same author.

* * *

At the end of a busy day at 8 Arlington Street, the Shop-Talk editor went downstairs to the bookroom, and seated himself in one of the chairs sacred to waiters for trains, and reader editor was waiting for the last waited, he picked up the vol books, new and old, that were desk, and opened them at ran he would light upon. There lucky for this kind of text-hu one opens instantly at good se one of the days. The collecti that the editor, who was bo pencil in his pocket, fished o these jottings on the backs o that he had about him: —

The periods of history that ing are those which have be spiritual bonfires. — *William* JOHN JAY CHAPMAN.

Democracy is a difficult thi live up to or down to. — *Patr* by DALLAS LORE SHARP.

In the successful treatment o dimensions, in the beautiful qu garden, lies the true future beau *The Little Garden*, by MRS. F

It is an odd thing about the the past, as we enter it by the that it is so often gloomy; ofte ber was the ghost-chamber: a glad that it is not so any lon *forts of Home*, by RALPH BERG

To be in the right is such pleasant thing; what is diffic tragically difficult to endure is tragically in the wrong. — *Ad gence*, by LAURA SPENCER POR

I find a club tiresome if I go go at all. Now, if I could co you to-morrow, on two smoke feast it would be! — *A Scho Young Lady*, by FRANCIS JAM

One who is not familiar w naturally finds it hard to und same perfectly obvious error c through proof after proof and b after reader; but it always happens now, and it always *Text, Type, and Style*, by GEO

If you are dull, if you are unl bored — collect! — *Collector's* VAN LEER CARRICK.

You may kill me, but you s photograph. Always lovingly JAMES.

Digitized by Google

ATLANTIC MONTHLY

NOVEMBER, 1921

PRISON FACTS

BY FRANK TANNENBAUM

I

y nice view, is n't it?' as speaking — a tall l man in the early for- ed complexion, power- , and an open face with A self-made man, who he rank of a guard to ion of responsibility in prisons in the country. e to the old prison, and lace on the wall where, ore, he had started his he wall with a rifle on was proud of his newly ty and conscious of it thing.

porch facing the prison. river flowed by the tant range of low hills, t. It was a wonderful g! The sun barely ris- ree-tops, the dew still shade, the birds sing- ed, joyful, and madly all gave the setting a here that filled every ve of life. In front of on — long gray walls with ivy, the ground nted with flowers, and neatly kept. The sun, lowed curtain of early dawn from the upper turrets of the inside building, made everything vibrant and happy.

We were sitting in soft chairs, smoking our pipes, looking at the prison, and talking about its manifold problems. The warden was a very good fellow, kind-hearted and well-intentioned. He was, however, a man of no learning, almost illiterate. His whole training was the training he had received in the prison; his equipment was that which the prison environment provided. A varied contact with many men who had come under his observation, combined with a natural exuberance and intelligence, with a background of good-will that had remarkably well escaped the corroding influence of the prison atmosphere, had given him a really unusual personal equipment and power. He was telling me that he had been trained under the greatest of prison men, and considered himself a good disciple. 'These men can only be treated in one way — that is, strict and steady discipline. Always be just to the men, but punish them quick and sharp when they break the rules.' This completed his philosophy of life — strictness, justness, treat all men alike, and let punishment follow the breaking of a rule as

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

the night follows the day — without exception, without fuss, constant and inevitable. He liked to talk about himself, his experiences, the men he had met, the characters he had handled, and was proud beyond words that the men considered him 'square.'

We sped the rising sun into the upper sky by exchanging stories and adventures. Once, years ago, he had visited New York City, and the marvel of it still dwelt with him. He told me how he had been taken down the subway, had watched the crowds on Broadway, and stood bewildered before the 'crazy, shrieking, hair-tearing lunatics' in front of the Stock Exchange. The tall buildings impressed him, and the rumbling Elevated; but, most of all, the crowded East Side. 'I did n't tell my wife and children half that I saw, because they would n't have believed me anyway; and would you think that people would live like a lot of pigs, when they could come out here in the open and free West? But man is a funny creature, ain't he? and there is no explaining him.'

It was Sunday, and chapel-time came. He turned us — my wife and me — over to the assistant warden, with instructions to take us to chapel.

The assistant warden was a smaller man, stocky, a little gray, quiet, answering questions in monosyllables, and watchful. As the gates swung open, we followed him into the prison. This is one of the new structures, a model of the Auburn type — probably the best of its kind in the world. Everything was spick and span: the yard, the buildings, the halls, the brass, the marble floor — all looked shiny. It would have been difficult to find a speck of dust. In answer to a question, the assistant warden said, 'We make 'em spruce 'er up.' The halls were strangely silent. We could hear the echo of our steps go rumbling down the line. Nothing was visible but an occasio
blue uniform and
standing in a corner,
his club as we went b

The chapel, a half-c
something like fifteen h
empty when we walk
ourselves in the last r
warden standing at
stained windows with
the gray walls, heavy
the whole chapel a
setting. After a few s
moments, a door opene
warden nodded his he
later a brazen gong str
Suddenly, we heard the
tramp, tramp of a thou
marching on us from
came down four aisles
dressed in gray suits,
their arms folded, sh
bodies bent a little fo
were falling into the c
walking, eyes to the g
turning neither to the
left. There was a l
about these spiritless
hopeless resignation,
an unrelenting fate ar
mission, that made t
'being broken on the w
stalking, ghost-like ap
every twenty feet a gu
form and Sunday suit
and shiny, and arme
loaded cane, kept com

As they reached the
the guard struck the n
his loaded 'butt,' and
half around, and filed
seats. He struck the g
they faced the platfor
from the stick, and th
the men. This continu
until all the men wer
When the doors were c
placed at their proper
the men, with their s

Digitized by Google

on the ground and
en dropped to their
me not a head had
ound, not a whisper,
; — not even a ver-
d escaped the thou-
oom. Nothing but
fling feet, the iron
marble floor — and
dressed in gray.
er, a signal from the
ceremonies at our
door on the stage
essed in black was
platform. He was
headed, with thick
ed puggy face. As
platform, he kept
to his pockets, pull-
paper folded many
open it. He placed
eaker's desk in front
led out a red hand-
is face, cleaned and
lasses, hemmed and
es, stuck the paper
l began to read. He
ng voice, which did
ss the room.
describe the setting
the spiritual leader
odued flock without
nd ungenerous. I
udice and without
t tell the truth. He
nan. He stumbled
would get half-way
y to turn back for
re was nothing in-
nothing cheerful,
It was dull, stupid,
ould not hear what
o himself, and could
as he swallowed his
performance lasted
es, including a few
he little man on the
s yellow paper and
the side door.

As the door closed, the first sound of the keeper's stick against the marble floor roused the men in the last row. They stood up, folded their arms, faced half-about and began to shuffle out, followed by the next row and the next, and so until the end. Each movement was determined by the sound of the keeper's stick.

As they came out, we got a better look at the men. Most of them were young and tall, broad of shoulder and well built — men reared in the West, on farms, who had come into the cities and been dragged into the whirlpool of undercurrents that brought them to prison. Their faces were gray, their eyes sunken, dim, dull, and moody. As they noticed us sitting in the last row, their eyes shifted a little in startled surprise, — it was unusual for visitors to be seen downstairs in the chapel, — but hastily, fearfully, their eyes turned to the ground again when they noticed the little silent and grim figure at our back.

The tramp, tramp, tramp of the men could be heard as they crept down the distant halls. Silence fell upon the chapel — a hard silence, a feeling of horror, suppression, and distortion pervaded the air and filled it with something of infinite sadness. I turned my head to look at my wife, and the tears were running down her cheeks — tears that would not be controlled. When the last sound had died down, a keeper appeared at one of the doors, nodded his head, and the guardian at our back said, 'We can go now.' I asked if the men had to attend chapel. He said, 'Yes, prayers is good for them.' I have been haunted by the chapel service. Never before had I seen anything quite so humiliating, inhuman, and sterile.

Is this a typical Sunday morning service? No, I have seen others more cheerful, less grim — places where laughter and applause could be heard, where

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

prayers were intermingled with other things. I have seen services where there was some eloquence and a manly voice; but this picture is typical of the spiritual stagnation in prison. It is typical of the order and the discipline in prison — of the system, regularity, formalism, and, too frequently, of the silence. There is no spiritual life in the average American prison. There is no hope, no inspiration, no stimulus, no compulsion of the soul to better things. It is hard, cold, frozen, dead. This is so true, so general, so all-pervading, that one might describe the whole prison system in these few words — and I say this after seeing something like seventy penal institutions this summer.

II

The little Ford engine labored mightily as we barely climbed the steep hill to the State Reformatory at Y——. As the car reached the top of the hill, I could see, about a quarter of a mile away, a massive building with many towers, surrounded by most beautiful grounds. An uninitiated person would have taken this for some strange mediæval castle magically transplanted to this most favored spot, set off against many hills, with a clear blue sky above and mile upon mile of smiling rich fertile farm-lands below. This, however, was no castle of an ancient knight — it was the stony home of many a poor lad who had been placed there for the good of his soul and the safety of the community. This, at least, is what the kindly people would have said. This was a reformatory to make bad boys good.

As I rang the bell and presented my credentials to the keeper, he looked at me doubtfully. 'Whom do you want?' said he, with the sharpness of a rasped temper.

'The warden,' said I.

'The warden is busy.'

'Yes, I know he is b
shall have to see him
you had better take th
now.'

After a while I was p
warden — a tall, bony, s
old man, of about sixty-f
gray, thin-lipped, sullen,
displeased. As I came i
me to a chair and then t
on me. Pointing a long
my face, he said: 'I know
from one of them damn
mittees who believe in
prisoners. Well, I don't.
this business forty yea
what I am talking abo
coddle these fellows — y
Let me tell you. I do
sniffling committees tha
and investigate — that
and tell a man like me, w
this business forty years,
prison. It is just like te
how to run his army. Bu
I will show you every
shown the sum total of
in his blustering way, he
thing I wanted to know.
ing to hide. I treat the
can learn a trade, and if t
workers, they can earn s
and work is good for the
a bad prison. Men who
other prisons always t
better than most. But I
No rough-neck can come
he is going to rough-hous
to, I fix him. *I fix him.*
A little while ago they
fellow in here who said
was like a kindergarten
would show everybody h
of his hand. Well, I f
started by getting into a
of my officers. I took hi
yard, put him over a b
him the way his father u
put the cane to him —

Digitized by Google

im good and fine.
o rough stuff, no
t will wear off in
n I had given him
eventy-pound ball
ankle and put him
m which he came.
only a little longer
But I fixed him.
log ever since.'
ped; his face re-
ked at me as if he
iped his thin lips
hand, reflected a
d, 'Would you be-
story to a bunch
day when they
nd they hissed me
perplexed, and
the women must
zy,' or affected by
as.

me straight to the
cipline in the Uni-
as been so much
particular ques-
rucial question, —
w things stand at
be of interest as
I must begin by
tation has mainly
n — that those af-
ostly people who
g to do with the
re are a few excep-
ions that all the
n entirely in vain:
hod, a possible re-
r of men punished,
s a little in regard
ck-step, the aboli-
s the strait-jacket
ut this: rumors of
me in more than
ot actually see it),

and the abolition of what was once a common practice, of hanging men up by their wrists and swinging their bodies off the floor.

Let me introduce into this discussion of the situation the following quotation from the Detroit *News* of January 27, 1920: —

'Harry L. Hulburt, warden of the prison, explained to the committee how the flogging apparatus is worked. The man to be flogged is blindfolded, handcuffed, and shackled at the ankles. Then he is stretched out on a long ladder, which is made to fit snugly over a barrel. The prisoner is blindfolded, the warden said, so that he will not see who is flogging him. [The warden told me, when I visited the institution, that he did it himself, as he thought that no one else should be allowed to do it.] His back is bared and a piece of stout linen cloth is placed over the bare spot. The instrument used in the paddling is a heavy strap about four inches in width, punched with small holes about an inch apart and fastened to a handle. The strap is soaked in water, according to the warden, till it becomes pliable; Dr. Robert McGregor [one of the best and most conscientious prison doctors that I met on the trip], prison physician, holds the pulse of the man being flogged and gives the signal for the flogger to stop.'

The article then goes on to detail three different cases of flogging. We will quote only the first.

'Thomas Shultz, boy of twenty-one years old, seven months after being sent from the insane asylum, was given 181 lashes and kept in the dungeon during the period of the flogging for nine days and fed on bread and water. . . . Nov. 3, assaulted guard. For this and other minor offenses, none of them serious, he was sentenced to receive 181 lashes. Nov. 4, he received 40 lashes. . . , Nov. 5, he received 35 lashes. Nov. 6,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

he received 26 lashes. Nov. 9, he received 40 lashes. Nov. 13, he received 40 lashes. Total, 181 lashes.'

Now Jackson, to which this refers, is a comparatively decent prison (I had started to use the word good; but there are no good prisons, any more than there are good diseases). If I were asked to pick the least objectionable prisons in the United States, after seeing something like seventy, I should have to include Jackson among the first ten, or possibly even among the first half-dozen. The warden is unusually intelligent, interested in his job, an advocate of the honor system, who also practises it on a large scale. He is certainly among the most humane of the wardens in the country; and, by and large, his prisoners have more freedom inside the walls than is common. I do not repeat this quotation to give it extra publicity. I repeat it to show what happens even in those prisons which are least antiquarian and hide-bound. This does not mean that all prisons have whipping. A large number still do, — more than I expected, — but old methods of punishment are still prevalent in practically all prisons.

There is hardly a prison where solitary confinement is not practised. In some cases solitary confinement is for a few months, in some cases for a few years; and in not a few there is such a thing as permanent solitary. Some prisons have a few men put away; some have as many as twenty; and in one case there are about fifty men placed in solitary for shorter or longer periods.

Why do the wardens do it? Well, they do not know what else to do. They run to the end of their ingenuity, and do that as a last resort — that is, the best of them. Some do it as a matter of common policy. I recall climbing a flight of stairs with a good-natured warden in a Western prison, and being shown a specially built courtyard with some dozen solitary c four men put away th — one had been there They were not even al They were not allow had no reading-matte smoke. There had a only one man in the pl den permitted him to the others were put in to pass any tobacco t of course, an impossi insistence for a share joy in solitary — a sm ible. He did what w passed his tobacco an other fellows, — and prived him of the privi have obeyed what I wanted to hold on to h the reason given.

What is true of soli is true also of the dark all prisons have and u is common to find fro men put away in the on bread and water little bread and abou every twenty-four h prisons — about ninet punishment is added ing the man to the wa the door during the d period of ten to twelv that he is in punishm varying from a few da two weeks. In some handcuffs have been a placed by an iron cage human form, which, in be extended or contrac ing of a handle. A man cell has this cage place made to fit his partic it is usually made so 's to stand straight up i cannot bend his knees against the bars, he can his hands are held ti

Digitized by Google

nd he stands straight,
full day, on a little
— and for as many
n or the deputy sees
sked to observe that
ndcuffs: this was the
r, a dark, pitch-black
nds pinned against
eet straight all day,
r shift your ground,
ours a day, on bread
eform!
stitutions where the
is not adjustable, —
squeeze into the flat
n, — they added the
nstitution, — a com-
ion, as such things
— in one of the states
rided itself on being
d that they added to
handcuffing of the
t. In the particular
n mind the arrange-
ws. A bar was at-
ne walls, and slanted
ached within about
e floor. On this bar
ight, the board on
ept was placed near
ne pair of handcuffs
risoner's wrists, an-
ted with his hands
ne ring on the slant-
means that he had
ll night long, hand-
on this board, which
d.
complete the list of
s as they are now
lerground cell is still
bably not in many
it in at least two
s. In one state pris-
, dark and damp in-
punishment cell in
was built under-
tre of the hall there
on the ground, which

one lifts sideways — like an old-type country cellar-door. It creaks on its rusty iron hinges. I climbed down a narrow flight of rickety stairs. When I got to the bottom, I had to bend double to creep into a long narrow passage. It was walled about with stone, covered with a rusty tin covering. It was not high enough to stand up in, hardly high enough for a good-sized man to sit up in. The warden above closed the door on me. I was in an absolutely pitch-black hole — long, narrow, damp, unventilated, dirty (there must be rats and vermin in it); and one has to keep a bucket for toilet purposes in that little black hole. As I came out, the warden said naïvely, 'When I put a man in here, I keep him thirty days.' Let the reader imagine what that means to human flesh and blood.

I do not want to make this a paper of horrors. Just one more case. On my way back I stopped off at a certain very well-known prison that I had heard about since childhood. For the last ten years it has been famous as one of the great reform prisons of the country. I remember seeing pictures of the warden with prisoners out on a road-gang. The article in which these pictures appeared gave a glowing account of the freedom these men had — they guarded themselves away from the prison proper, out in the hills, building roads. The state in which this prison is situated has constructed many miles of prison-built road — and in fact it was one of the first in the country to undertake to build roads with convict labor, without guards. When I knocked on its gates, I thrilled with expectancy. Here, at least, would I find a model prison, unique, exceptional, a pride to the state and an honor to the man who was responsible for it. In fact, I had heard that the warden was being considered for political advancement to the office of governor because of his remarkable

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

prison record. I found a remarkable institution — remarkable for its backwardness and brutality.

The first thing that I saw as I entered the prison yard was a strange and unbelievable thing. Nine men kept going round in a circle, wheeling wheelbarrows, while a heavy chain dangled from each man's ankle. As I came nearer, I noticed in each wheelbarrow a heavy iron ball attached to the chain. In the centre stood a guard; and the men kept circling about him all day long, wheeling the iron ball in their barrows, their bodies bent over, their faces sullen, their feet dragging. They did that for ninety days each, I was told by my guide. At night they carried the ball to their cells, and in the morning they carried it to the dining-room. For three months this iron ball and chain stayed riveted about their ankles — a constant companion and, I suppose, from the warden's point of view, a stimulus to better things — one of the ways of making 'bad' men 'good.'

There, too, I found all the other characteristics of the average prison — dark cells, bread and water, solitary, handcuffs, and, in addition, a hired colored man to do whipping when that was called for — as no one else could be got to do it. This negro was never permitted in the prison yard for fear that the men might kill him. The report that I sent to the National Committee on Prisons and Prison Labor, for which I was traveling, reads as follows: —

I have just visited the famous reform prison at C—— and this is what I found: —

Nine men going around a circle, wheeling ball and chain.

Whipping-post, with special colored man to do the task.

Dark cells.

Solitary.

Men handcuffed to the doors.

Bread and water.

No work for the men.

In addition to loss of privileg
time, which is usual as a means

A traveling prison chapla
ited the institution the Sun
I came, and made a speech
In beginning his speech, h
upon the fame of the warde
world abroad, and upon the
the men for being under su
treatment. Some of the n
For that the moving-pictu
had been torn out from its
chapel, and the men were
prived of their weekly pris
I was told also that Sunday
leges had been rescinded. In
about it, one of the guards
'We will show them [the pris
this can be a real prison.'
what they think it is now —
else they can add to make i
this conclude the description
disciplinary methods.

IV

The use of man by man i
test in the evaluation of any
especially one designed to
'bad' 'good,' the 'hard' 'so
'unsocial' 'social.' The test
institution is its disciplinary

The picture I have dra
sided and not sufficiently c
sive. If one desires to secur
view of the technique of pen
tration as it is at present pr
must look at other elements
ture. There is the problem
The opportunity to keep b
the day, — to do something
hasten the passing hours, th
a sense of contact with th
reality, that will exercise o
and use one's body, — this si
ing of the human organism i
a much larger scale than one
ine unless he is actually brou

Digitized by Google

should say that
e prisoners in the
are unemployed.
some prisons all
some practically
ly a part.

aggressive, opin-
d coarse individ-
out, his lower lip
jammed against
e talked, and at
e he banged the
opped, looked at
ed with him, and
in his mind about
at he had said,
traight fact.'
e evening, swing-
g rocker on the
mall couch cush-
mmaculate white
dkerchief in his
king a big cigar
olitician's' angle.
l, his face shiny
I felt uncomfort-
front of him and
inside. A feeling
me, as if he were
pig — and self-

y psychology; if
psychology I will
l in psychology,'

sed that night. I
ven all day; and
it better after I
the prison.
ember the whole
it is as simple as

on — only it had
'idle-house' is so
s the idle men —
all day long but
ded together, all
week, every week

of the year, and every year of their prison term — a term that may range from one year to a lifetime. It is a large bare loft. There I found four hundred men, dressed in their prison suits, sitting, all facing one way. Around the room there were keepers, seated on high stools, watching these idle men. In the morning after breakfast the men were marched to this idle-house. At noon they were taken to the dining-room; after lunch they were marched back to the idle-house. They were being made good by sitting. This is better than in some prisons, where the men who have nothing to do are kept in their cells. And yet — how little ingenuity it would have taken to put most of these men to work at something useful, if not remunerative. It would not have been difficult to find enough public-spirited citizens who would have provided a dozen old and broken-down automobiles and typewriters, and thus put a number of them to work taking them apart and putting them together — learning something and keeping busy, doing something. It would not have been difficult to put a number of these to studying Spanish, French, Italian — every large prison has men who would like to teach these languages and others who would like to learn them. There are a hundred ways in which these men could — at least, most of them could — have been occupied in doing something: learning how to draw, to box, to play an instrument, to typewrite — anything that would have taken the burden of eternal idleness off their hands. All it needed was a couple of days' use of the imagination. But the warden lacked the imagination. He was not really vividly conscious of the problem. When I had seen the prison and was ready to go, I asked him if he would give me that lecture on psychology, and he said with an emphatic bang on the table, 'My boy, psychology is common sense.'

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

What is true of work is true of other things. There is no imagination in the American prison field — or so little that one has to look far and wide to find it. Take the question of housing. Practically all American prisons are built on the same plan. That is the Auburn type. The best way to describe it is to begin from the outside. The first thing is the high stone wall. After you get into the prison yard made by this wall you come face to face with a large square building about five stories high. It has narrow windows, heavily barred — in some cases these windows are so narrow that it would not be possible for a man to get through them. When you enter the stone building, you find another building inside. This inside building is the cell-block, a square stone structure standing four stories high. Each tier, or floor, is divided into a large number of little cells — each cell looks like every other. Each floor is like the one below it. The cells vary in size, but not much. In the older prisons — and most of the prisons are old — the cells are about three and a half feet wide, seven feet long, and seven feet high. Some, as in Sing Sing prison, are even smaller. In the newer prisons they are larger — in some cases more than twice this size. The cells are set back to back.

The space of a cell is so small that it is inconceivable for one who has not been in it. You cannot spread your hands, you cannot lift your hand above your head, you cannot take more than three steps without hitting your toe against the wall. A cell is not larger than a good-sized grave stood on end. It is dark, half-dark, all the time. There is no window in the cell. The windows are in the outer wall and the cell is set about thirty feet away from the outer wall. The windows in this wall are generally narrow, and are always heavily barred. The sun must first get into the prison before it can get into the cell.

But the cell is not mad
the sun. In the older pris
of the front facing the
walled up. The other half
In the very worst prisons,
completely closed at the
that is, the lower half is n
steel. To get around this
Sing, they have drilled h
part. The upper half is cl
with heavy bars, in some
only little square holes for
air to get through after it
into the prison. In the old
these cells have no interna
at all! All the air must com
through the limited space
door. In others, more mod
a ventilator in the cell —
up through the wall, abou
square. In all the old pris
have no toilet system; buck
for toilet purposes. These
generally numbered, so th
can get his own back; but
As the men are put into
about five in the afternoon
out again at about six in th
ing they are in this cell-
least thirteen hours. Thin
means to have eighteen h
in a prison under such
Think of a hot July nig
ture the air on the top tie
can describe the pollution
under these conditions.
the fact that, in most pris
are kept in practically all
half a day Saturday, and
happens to be a holiday, a
day, and you will have a
torture that life under thes
imposes upon the sensitive
callousness it implies in tho
ceased to be sensitive.

This, however, is not all.
cannot be kept clean, — c
the old prisons, — even if
consciousness that this ough

Digitized by Google

tructures, standing
r a hundred years,
r ventilation, never
infected with bugs
ıy own case — and
e old prison — the
Blackwell's Island
my day there were
n my cell. I strug-
stantly, and indus-
as a hopeless fight.
and the bugs made
ney crept over me
ey made life mis-
laming the warden
cribing a fact that
ce. But the sense of
y keen among pris-
as a whole. There
, mostly in the new

cell-life under these
oe conceived. I re-
I was first put in a
a little yellow space
d drawn together,
door. A little yel-
lb was stuck up in
as a narrow iron cot
heard the door be-
felt myself cramped
for movement. I
the retreating offi-
back.
ınt?'
ave to stay in this

ou will get used to it

my cell. The walls
d made more room
pt in and away from
ow glimmering light
as fully half an hour
myself to the fact
the night. On my
t, I found two dirty
them up, shoved
ll beneath the light,

and took out a little book that I had with me.

When I came into the prison that morning, I had some books, but they were taken away. I protested that I had to have something to read — I simply had to have something. The keeper objected that it was against the rules. He looked at my books carefully, and then picked out a little paper-covered volume, which he gave me with the remark, 'You can have this. We permit men to bring in anything that is religious.' It was William Morris's *News from Nowhere*. The little glimmering light on the yellow page, and in a few minutes I was off in dreamland — I followed Morris's idyllic picture and perfect beings into a world where there were no prisons and no unemployed.

This happy setting was interrupted by the sobs of a boy next to my cell — he too was a newcomer. He sobbed hysterically, 'My God, what shall I do? What shall I do?' I climbed down from my cot, knocked on the wall of his cell, and tried to talk to him. But he paid no attention to me. He just sobbed and cried like a child torn from its mother, as if his heart would break.

Finding no response, I clambered back to my place, and was soon off in dreamland again. I did not wake until the lights were turned out at nine o'clock. I looked out of my cell and saw, through the far-off window in the outer wall, a star glimmering; then, without undressing, straightening my blankets, I fell asleep and, in my sleep, dreamed of the free fields of early childhood.

I mentioned the dirty blankets on the cot. I used that word deliberately. It is not uncommon for the blankets which a man gets in prison to be dirty. They are rarely cleaned or fumigated. One man goes out and another goes in — receiving the blankets the other used, without any attempt to

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

clean or wash them; and of course there are no sheets. I have seen blankets so dirty that the dust actually fell out of them when you moved them. This is not true of all prisons, but is of many.

It is not uncommon to find a prison where the men have not their own individual underwear. The underwear is sent to the laundry, and a man gets what luck will bring him: some is too long, some too short; some has been used by healthy men, some by men who were sick with contagious diseases. In some prisons the small cells have two men to a cell. There are two cots, one above the other; and these men live in this narrow cramped place — and at times the health of the men so crowded is not examined. They use the same bucket and drink out of the same cup.

Practically none of the prisons pay the men for their work. A few places make it possible for a few men to earn what might be considered a fair wage, but the mass of the prisoners earn little, in many cases nothing. Just at random: New York pays its prisoners one cent and a half a day; California and Massachusetts pay them nothing. And yet, it is asked why the men are not interested and ambitious!

Practically none of the prisons make a serious attempt to educate their prisoners. The eight grades for illiterates are in use in places — but as a rule they amount to little, both the system and the method being antiquated and the spirit poor. In only one or two places is there a real attempt to use for educational purposes the extraordinary advantages of time and control which prisons imply. San Quentin is conspicuous by the fact that it is making a real attempt in that direction. What I have said about education is true of health. Health is neglected. Here and there the fact that crime and health, both physical and m
a relation to each other, i
being recognized, but not as
fully as one would expect.

This rather sketchy des
American penal conditions
the exceptions — but the
are few and far between. T
a prison in the country, in
have seen them, that does
this general picture in one
its phases. Of the worst
that I have said is true. Of
ones, some of the things I ha
true. For the casual visit
taken around by a guard
warden, who is told all the g
and not permitted to see the
whom lack of experience
ledge makes gullible, this n
startling story. If it is sta
not more so than the facts a

There are other things
prison — developments of p
cation, self-government, far
which are more hopeful tha
ture painted here. These,
must be left over for anoth
have separated the hopeful th
prison situation from the o
shortcomings, deliberately.
bine them is to give the
and we are all ready to han
mism to the most fleeting ex
opportunity to rationalize
the burden of present evil. T
prison system is bad. I have
scribed all its evils. Some
written about without grea
and literary subtlety than
Others were hidden from
are indications of a possible
of better things, of more hop
human intelligence; but to
these are negligible and lim
if a significant contribution
methods.

Digitized by Google

THE PURITAN HOME

BY GEORGE HERBERT PALMER

I

re celebrating the
the landing of the
eople are making an
recall the tremen-
o requires consider-
ny but themselves
ally been a distaste-
was the last century
bitter and almost
caricature, and de-
however, when the
ger walk our streets,
nder and aversions
ot unwelcome now
te estimate of what
was.
im, we must study
-place, the Puritan
s the most funda-
nstitutions. Its ef-
us. It formed New
came much of the
of the entire coun-
lder among us have
influence. Yet it is
re it has not alto-
Its usages are large-
gth and weaknesses
olly studied. Often
cturesque material
t only to be held up
ssor of youth and a
d hypocrisy.
n it, am profoundly
pline, and feel that
half of all that has
iful and rewarding.
me forward as its eulogist. And while not blind to its defects, — aware indeed that its sudden passing has been inevitable, — I would insist that American civilization will have a hard task to find a source from which to draw an inspiration so bounteous and so constructive.

To fix the worth of the Puritan home I shall endeavor first to give a clear account of the facts usually found in such homes, and then proceed to trace the setting and influence of those facts.

What was the daily current of life in a Puritan home? All recognize that its distinctive feature was its elaborate religious training. But how did that training secure its hold on the young? To be of any worth, this depictive side of my subject should be minute and well authenticated. I will base it on a description of my own childhood, and thus will show in some detail what were the assumptions, the practices, and the ideals of a typical Puritan home.

II

My father was a Boston merchant, who had come from the country and by diligence had climbed to a competence. In our home all was plain and solid. There was no luxury. Expenditure was carefully studied, and waste incessantly fought. But we had all that was needed for comfort and dignity, and on all that we possessed and did religion set its mark. To exhibit that ever-present influence, I trace the course of a single day.

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

On rising I read a chapter of the Bible and had a prayer by myself. Then to breakfast, where each of the family repeated a verse of scripture, my father afterward asking a blessing on the meal. No meal was taken without this benediction. When breakfast was ended, the servants were summoned to family prayers, which ended with the Lord's Prayer, repeated together.

Then we children were off to school, which was opened with Bible-reading and prayer. Of school there were two sessions, one in the morning and one in the afternoon; so that our principal play-time was between four-thirty and six o'clock, with study around the family table after supper. Later in the evening, when the servants' work was done, they joined us once more at family prayers; after which we children kissed each member of the family and departed to bed, always however, before undressing, reading a chapter of the Bible by ourselves and offering an accompanying prayer. Each day, therefore, I had six seasons of Bible-reading and prayer — two in the family, two by myself, and two at school; and this in addition to the threefold blessing of the food. No part of the day was without consecration. The secular and the sacred were completely intertwined.

Permeated thus as was every day with divine suggestion, it may be said that on Sunday our very conversation was in the heavens. On that day the labor of the servants was lightened, so that they too might rest and attend church. Many household cares were then thrown upon us children, and it was arranged that there should be little cooking. But while play and labor ceased and solemnity reigned, it was an approved and exalting solemnity; for then occurred two preaching services and a session of Sunday School.

To me the day was one of special happiness, because my father at home, and during almost e of the day was his children's co We gathered about him for talk after breakfast, and after dinner he usually read to us *Pilgrim's Progress*, or some nign and attractive book. Aft the whole family assembled in lor, and when each one presen peated a hymn or poem, we ha of music — solos on the pian girls, and familiar hymns sung book by the entire company.

Toward the end of the ev father was apt to put his arm one of the children and draw the library for a half-hour's pri Blessed and influential sessio serving the purpose of the Ro fessional! As frank as that peace-bringing, but freed formality, with no other auth ognized than a common allegi Heavenly Father, the indepen us little ones guarded by the a wisdom, tenderness, trust, playfulness of our adored con

III

Such unceasing presence in tan home of the religious moti easily have become unwholes enfeebling, had it not been att several other powerful influenc diversified it and enriched the which religion gave stability. supporting interests are gener looked by those who censure tan home, I name a few of th

To the family tie the Puri great prominence. Marriage v rament, and the family a div tution, where each member wa with the well-being of all. In family there was little authori striction. With father and m children were on terms of te

Digitized by Google

They joined us in
ers in our studies,
rations. To them
our half-formed
them took a jour-
retty sure to be a

e there were few
ook part in house-
were rooms to be
be split, errands to
hildren must wait
this way all were
common cares.
rs became close
s deep and openly
fear of sentimen-
ne another often,
ed, on rising, and
the house for even
re generous with
oneys, and wept
ation carried away
a member of our
home cannot be
ithout noting the
ffection, which its
irectly contributed

e was the insistence
by the presence of
the studies around
he evening, by the
went on wherever
be gathered to-
was not a college
he had desired to
ner to Yale and ac-
e for himself. But
up the regretted
ing, and to all his
utmost education

ence on education
n families. Lavish
d for it when strin-
ractised elsewhere.

The foundation of Harvard College in the early and poverty-stricken years of the Puritan colony was characteristic of Puritanism everywhere. It set great store on intellectual vigor and filled its homes with books. Our public libraries have done us one disservice. They have checked the habit of buying books. The libraries of my father and grandfather were considerable, containing most of the important books in history, biography, divinity, and poetry. Physical science was then just starting. Of fiction there was little; until the beginning of the nineteenth century, novelists were few.

V

There is a widespread impression that Puritanism was hostile to the Fine Arts. I believe it to be untrue, or, at most, true only with reference to the lighter, more ornamental and vivacious of the arts. In the view of the Puritan life was not meant for amusement. Whatever fostered self-indulgence or heedless gayety was certainly frowned on. But in my childhood several of the Fine Arts, notably poetry and music, were cultivated with an ardor and general approval infrequent to-day. From our family library none of the great English poets was absent. My grandfather loved Pope, my father Shakespeare and Byron, my mother Cowper. All three wrote respectable verse, as did several of the children. Most persons did. No one of us ever doubted that to be a poet or a composer of music was the highest attainment of human faculty, unless indeed that preeminence might be challenged by the minister, to whom these artistic seers were thought to be near of kin. We studied our poets, therefore, as those who brought us messages of importance. We committed their verses to memory enormously.

A clerical uncle begged that I might

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

be named for his favorite poet, George Herbert — a rich endowment! By the time I was twelve, I knew by heart about half of all Herbert wrote, and that not to the prejudice of Chaucer, Pope, Wordsworth, and Tennyson. It should be remembered that among the English poets Puritanism had rather more than its fair share, — Milton, Marvell, the Wesleys, Watts, Cowper, Montgomery, the two Brownings, — sufficient to make poetry a natural inmate of most Puritan homes. Burns's poems were printed in America two years after they appeared in Scotland, and the *Lyrical Ballads* of Wordsworth but four years after they had been laughed at by Englishmen.

So far from any natural antagonism between the greatest of the arts and Puritanism, it may well be urged that the constant sense of the infinite in which the Puritan was nurtured was the very soil most favorable for developing the poetic spirit. Certainly, among the friends of my youth I came upon enjoyers of poetry twice as frequently as I do to-day. The number of great writers was smaller, but the study of those few was more serious and general.

And something similar may be said of music. Few indeed were the Puritan homes where music of a high order was not cultivated. As a rule, girls were expected to master the piano. Three of my four sisters played, and played well, Bach, Beethoven, and Mendelssohn — the last especially in his sacred settings — being accounted sovereign. Mozart, Schubert, and others of a lyrical vein were, I suspect, counted somewhat too sportive and spontaneous.

In almost every family there were seasons of song in which all were expected to join. The meagre conditions of that primitive day could not afford the many concerts that we now enjoy. Populations were not large enough for

that. But it is worth notin
Puritan New England, the f
arly Journal of Music, and
carefully trained orchestras –
sical Fund and the Germani
strong support. My father
means rich, but he supplied
with season tickets each win
symphony rehearsals of the
Society.

It is true that to several of
painting, sculpture, and the
Puritanism was unfriendly.
grounds of this aversion were
and not to be explained by
posed sourness of disposit
first and the last pieces writt
ton were dramatic, and the
Shakespeare by him and b
are among the warmest in our

But there came a change
time of the great migration
1650, the English stage ha
such a pitch of degradation t
came necessary to close the
and when they were again o
the coming of Charles II, the
ed an indecency unparalleled
since. No wonder that the
that foulness became fixedly
in Puritan minds with the
self, and that, even as late as
hood, self-respecting people p
erally kept away from stage-
doubt that absence encou
very vices against which it
and the Puritans lost an ing
character of utmost worth i
the imagination. But when
been so captured by the forc
abstention from it becomes
sity, and confidence in it is o
established.

In less degree a similar de
be offered for the Puritan at
ward painting and sculpture
sentations of the saints in
glass did not then merely sti
emotions of beauty, such as

Digitized by Google

y excited, and were
e, feelings closely
Mourn, as we must,
aking which, during
naged the loveliness
s, it is only fair to
ge, perhaps a neces-
mancipation of the
e sculpture was em-
e almost exclusively
ious ends, it natu-
n in men of clearer
he dangers against
mmandment warns.
re not counted ob-
ainted portraiture.
lozen contemporary
n are known, and
were fairly common
Except for these,
re generally bare.
and expensive, and
ions connected with
use did not readily

and, Puritans were
f design. Their fur-
na, and the many
and beauty for the
irable. They are
superior in taste to
. There is solidity in
eedom from caprice,
of that sober ration-
characteristic of the
On entering an old
ave often wondered
nodest means could
of such excellence.
ought slowly, either
ot the best, and pro-
dren no less than for
temporary conven-
n article of inferior
esign was reckoned
bliquity. Standards
n established in most
individual fancy did
rt. Such standards

give quiet dignity to Puritan architecture, making the three or four types of Colonial house worth preserving. For adaptation to climate, wise use of accessible materials, inner convenience obtained at low cost, for modest stateliness and freedom from discordant lines, Puritan domestic architecture deserves high praise.

It has seemed worth while to examine thus minutely the artistic attitude of the Puritans because it has generally been so grossly misrepresented. Since these lovers of purity and righteousness held themselves aloof from the debauched representative arts of painting, sculpture, and the drama, they are charged with an indiscriminate hostility to all beauty, their exceptional devotion to the nobler arts of poetry, music, and the home being quite overlooked.

It is true that, even in these regions, Puritan taste was severe. Whatever a Puritan loved must be rational, thorough, and marked with deliberate purpose. These are fundamental qualities in all the arts. But they are best attended by a light touch, spontaneous gayety, and superficial grace. Hence arise two types of beauty: the one intellectual, where the beautiful object is an embodiment of law and is stripped of all that is not called for by its purpose; the other, exuberant, expressing freedom, play, ornament. In the former Puritan art is strong. On the latter it looks askance. Because the latter, the easier and prettier, is at present in favor, Puritans are apt to be denied all sense of beauty.

VI

Such, then, was the constitution of the Puritan home, such its central religious ideal, and such its three supporting influences — education, family affection, and the nobler Fine Arts. In

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

dealing with so controversial a subject, I have thought it safest to record the actual facts of a personal experience. The subject is one which readily lends itself to picturesque treatment, whether of eulogy or scorn. Both of these I would avoid. On the basis of sifted fact I would ask a dispassionate estimate of the training which fashioned New England's character during three centuries. My experience, I think, is fairly representative, though late. My life began in 1842, when the Puritan régime was drawing to its close. But on both sides my ancestry was purely Puritan and American for nine generations, my father a deacon of an Orthodox church, four of my uncles Orthodox ministers.

Living, too, as I did throughout my boyhood, as much in the country as the city, I caught the Puritan traditions of creed and practice where they lingered longest. The habits of the many other Puritan homes familiar to my boyhood did not differ materially from mine, except in the matter of temperament. Wherever the head of the house was sombre, disappointed, or unapproachable, I have found an atmosphere far removed from that of my cheerful surroundings. A bad temper will spread gloom anywhere, and spread it the more readily when life is regarded as a serious business. I would not assert that Puritanism is an antidote for every infelicity of temper. I merely maintain that it provides ample room for men of good-will, and I think it unjust to hold a special faith responsible for evils incident to all mankind. Out of a happy experience I am certain that Puritanism was no check on well-made parents, but that it helped them to lead an honorable, richly fed, and lovable life, with great contentment and blessing to all around them. Yet while acknowledging myself fortunate in the well-governed temper of my companions, I cannot fail to see how that companionship was fostered by the desire on their p
tate the patient bounty of the
us all.

VII

In turning from this desc
the Puritan home to emp
worth, I would put forwa
nently the literary power it
gave. Puritan children, we
were likely to read or hear si
of the English Bible every d
book, without regard to its
value, is acknowledged to be
summate masterpiece of our
Here are primitive folk-lore
history, personal anecdote,
traiture, incisive reflection,
poetry, weighty argument, i
appeal, the whole presenting
range of interests than any o
affords. Throughout our ver
runs a style of matchless simpl
cision, animation, and dignity
exquisitely changing color to
diverse subject-matter. Wha
training in English can com
the year-long reading of this

Literary taste cannot well b
taught. It comes best unco
while the attention is given
thing else. The Puritan ch
through his many Bible-readi
religious aim, the extraordina
of the literature affecting hin
tally as something which coul
be otherwise. In that holy hu
most naturally incorporated
structure.

I understate the case, ho
saying that the matchless En
daily read. Almost every wee
erable portions were comm
memory. Before I was fifte
learned half the Psalms, th
Gospel of John, three of Paul's
and large sections of Job an
And this personal study wa
taken, not in obedience to co

Digitized by Google

t contact with no-
f itself a desire for
intance. Any man
ng in the company
re to think music
rtant. Just so the
drawn, not driven,
Bible through asso-
ically minded. Be-
hat processes were
imself in possession
ss. He understood
pretty generally

II

vhich the Puritans
sacred volume, or
no need to write at
eneral tenor is well
er is not a treatise
exhibit of Puritan
ic training. Still,
as based on certain
s, I must briefly
But it should be
there was much di-
uritans, and never
a Puritan Church
ttle group of be-
pendent existence,
itself its under-
bout things divine
g this whenever it
closer conformity
majority. During
church has rewrit-
hree times.
ture of Puritan re-
nat it lays on per-
preserving it and
person is the one
universe to whom
. God Himself is a
ligence, will, love
municability and,
ess, or respect for
no mere abstract
r law. Behind all

these there is a He, their possessor and director. We too are persons, made in God's likeness and therefore able to have thoughts about Him which are true, however inadequate. Human relationships are our best clue to an understanding of Him and his government. Indeed, so near is God to man, that a finite person, perfect within his human limits, would be the fullest possible revelation of God and a fit object of worship. Loyalty to such a being saves us from sin and vicariously redeems the sinner. Vicariousness is a principle throughout the personal universe. The modern Socialist finds that my wrongdoing afflicts my group and by it must be healed. Individualistic Puritanism puts perfect manhood, the suffering Christ, in the place of the redeeming group.

Puritan religion is thus essentially personal religion. The Spaniard is highly religious. So is the Russian, the Hindu, the very English people from whom the Puritans came out. But the religion of all these is preëminently social, embodying a group-consciousness and largely concerned with the performance of sacred ceremonies. Puritan religion is experienced, not performed. It needs no church, no ritual, no priest. Each believer stands face to face before God, responsible to Him alone, and through his witnesses — conscience, right reason, the Bible 'as spiritually discerned' — is directly instructed what to do. Obligation is minute and perpetual. All things are full of duty. Each situation in life presents a best way of acting, expressive of God's will, and a worse way, expressive of our childish and temporary will. We are incessantly tempted to some partial good through stupor, slackness, caprice, or bodily allurement.

Human life is a daily strife with sin, and drill in duty, bringing home to us the futility — the suicide, even — of

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

following any other will than that of our exacting Father. The restrictions, the disappointments, the sufferings of our existence here become comprehensible when viewed as preliminary education for a perfected existence hereafter. A wise father sets his child tasks somewhat beyond his powers. Our athletic trainers fill our sports with difficulties and dangers, and forbid us to shrink from bodily harm. Just so God plans his world. He makes it a preparatory school for those destined ever to remain individual persons, unmerged in anything so meaningless as universal being. The consequences of such discipline, either in enlargement or shrinkage, go on forever.

I hope the brevity of this statement still does sufficient justice to the Puritan faith. Possibly I have over-rationalised it through the attempt to give unity to a complex body of doctrine. Wise beliefs are seldom free from incongruities. At almost every point, too, the utterance of some eminent divine can be quoted, giving to this or that doctrine a coloring different from that given here. I have said that Puritanism held no authoritative creed. Its fellowship was based on general consent, with room left for individual divergence. A faith that included Princeton and Andover, Jonathan Edwards and Samuel Hopkins, permits no exact formulation. But I believe my sketch will be sufficient to show where lay the strength of Puritanism and to make plain its hold on the realities of life. It fitted its followers to fight Indians, endure the hardships of New England, found a democracy, and send forth throughout the land a sturdier folk than any other single stock can boast.

IX

But, if Puritan religion was able to give weight to character, dignity to

speech and bear
duty, and such ex
and political insti
has taken pattern
why did it decay
the days of its po
imosity? Becaus
lence involves so
danger at least,
limitations of P
liarly obnoxious
They stifle him a
time clamor for a
to be already stro
strength from Pu
on all things *sub*
takes altogether
that in God we li
our being. In the
ging world, the I
Things of earth
quence compared
and are to be de
prepare us for th
extreme idealism
weak natures. T
morbid about ther
and even about G

The miseries att
consciousness are
peculiarly difficult
stantly analyzing
to be sure that the
ings of a tempor
veritable voice of
many men, for st
course, we should
doing. Blind actio
excessive introspe
painful, it escape
The wise man kee
while still looking
within. So long as
plicated planet, w
share of our atten
How large that sh
proportion it sho
interests can, fortu
termined. The dif

Digitized by Google

mutual aid is for
mportant part of
l that Puritanism
worldly, over-em-
f one's own soul;
s tendency it ex-
self-deception and
re was danger in
ious. But danger
gh results is worth
danger grossly ex-
nly fair to remem-
world was a far
ss spiritual place
since the rise of
the study of the
which mind and
o coöperate.
f its slender com-
tion between per-
been badly shaken
l deal out of date.
rsonality and the
e individual, we
Self-respect might
l Puritan virtue.
resent sense of sin
Puritanism con-
re with personal
damage. Society,
is something al-
d has seen fit to
ach a person, and
respect ourselves,
uality is the high-
Puritan sociology,
ts natural expres-
nt of our time has
ifferent direction.
beral creed for at
s now disparaged,
Instead of viewing
the addition of in-
cline to look upon
and an individual
cialism, though by
n its opposite, has
a single detached

person, complete in isolation, is inconceivable. We exist in relations and are essentially conjunct. But while society and the individual are mutual factors, meaningless apart, I think Puritanism drew attention to that side of the dual fact which is the more important for human welfare. The initiation of action is an individual function. Too often it is forgotten that society has no central consciousness. That is lodged in individuals, who alone, therefore, have the power to criticize, on which power all progress is dependent. Without personal goading, society remains blind and inert. It cannot reform itself. A Garrison, a Phillips, a Mrs. Stowe, a Whittier, a Lincoln must first appear, before American slavery is overthrown. While then the meagre Puritan conception of personality was destined to perish and to carry with it a pretty large superstructure, it trained strong men as the equally one-sided philosophy of to-day cannot. Socialism begets enthusiastic followers. Leaders are fashioned where honor is paid to personality.

If the Puritan notion of personality, however, was too small for man, it was doubly belittling when applied to God. Yet He, too, was imagined as an individual, contrasted, on the one hand, with physical objects, and on the other, with human beings. He easily became pictured as an old man in the clouds, trying, not very successfully, to manage his obstreperous world. It is true, such concrete representation has its uses and is unhesitatingly employed by the Psalmist and most religious teachers. Stated baldly, it seems irreverent to speak of God as a hen. But when we read that 'He covers us with his feathers and under his wings we may trust,' how true and comforting is the comparison!

Just so with the Puritan humanization of God. If we are to speak to Him

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

in prayer, hear his voice in duty, find Him our supporting companion in privation and sorrow, the object of our gratitude in happiness; if, indeed, we are sincere in our hopes of individual immortality, we must detect in our own personality something too precious to be lacking in Him whom we worship. Only to a person will love go forth. The danger is that personality may become an empty form, excluding all contents. As in ourselves, it should be an organizing principle, rich in relations and powers, and capable of the utmost self-diversification. But for the Puritans the world was somewhat aloof from God. They knew Him as its original and arbitrary creator, but not as its present indwelling life, as

> Something deeply interfused,
> Whose dwelling is the light of setting suns
> And the round ocean and the living air
> And the blue sky and in the heart of man.

In like manner the human body, with its multifarious joys, instincts, invigorations and seductions, was looked on, not as a temple of God, but as a prison-house of the Spirit. No monotheism, however, can be permanent which ignores the massive truths of polytheism. Puritanism tried to and failed.

No doubt I magnify these faults by abstract statement. Practical life usually finds its way to facts, even through restrictive theories. And it would be unfair not to recognize the enlarged scope offered to Puritan thought about God by the doctrine of the Trinity. According to this, God presents Himself to us in three contrasted ways, — as the ground of all existence, as perfected humanity, and as the gener
not ourselves, which makes
eousness, — all these being
tions of the same person.
found doctrine should, especi
third phase, have checked th
to think of God as an empty
unit. The Trinity makes H
unit, but a unity. Like all
sons, his nature involves diffe
and forthgoing. But popula
tions with the word person
to overcome, and the puzz
trine easily slipped down into
When so held, it offered as tr
perplexities in the reconcilem
members as the Greeks and
felt in harmonizing their p
pantheon.

While, then, I believe that
civilization owes more to P
than to any other single agen
no desire to see it reëstablish
is plainly impossible. We mu
its problems in our own terms
remould its beautiful home
if we would not be blind to
world has learned since the
landed.

Each age has what may
its holy passions. Those o
times were rationality, order,
garded as personal loyalty;
to-day, humanitarianism, soci
scientific pursuit of ever-d
truth. These later ideals, th
derly regarded by the Puritans
as needful as their own in t
ment of Christ's moral law.
them the spirit of Puritanism
a richer significance.

Digitized by Google

SUNSET

BY VICENTE BLASCO IBÁÑEZ

I

Pontecorvo left her
ottom of the hill on
f Roquebrune is sit-
g on the arm of a
ascent of the steep,
ads leading through
of the Maritime
oquebrune had be-
bitual with the old
when the sky was
ss. She had found
nook — where the
blue cobblestones,
some weeks before,
its beauties enthusi-
her friends. Every
uld go up from her
ade in front of the
njoy a magnificent

ement of vanity in
he duchess had dis-
unknown to the
the Mediterranean
n her achievement
get the fatigue im-
ghty years by the
endicular streets of
, too narrow for a
ith no other means
the donkey or the
rs to the church.
a decidedly flaccid,
ould get along only
old-headed bamboo
y her deceased hus-
f Pontecorvo. On
despite the chronic
swelling of her feet, the Duchess moved with a certain sprightly youthfulness that had been passed on to her old age by the impatient, nervous energy of her mind.

A majestic, a Junoesque beauty, she must have been in her younger days. 'A Marie Antoinette all over again,' her flatterers were still saying, even now, when she was old. Nevertheless, two deep lines fell from her sharp, aquiline nose upon the corners of her mouth, and her blue eyes were faded and watery. She habitually dressed in black, with an impressive, aristocratic sobriety. Curls of white hair, far too thick and lustrous to be genuine, strayed from under her bonnet. What at once struck the eye, however, the thing that had made her famous along the whole coast, was a necklace, the 'Necklace of the Duchess,' as it was familiarly called — five hundred thousand dollars' worth of pearls, according to the estimates of people who were supposed to know! This necklace — a 'dog-collar,' in the jargon of the fashionable world — was a veritable corset for her neck and throat, flaming like one great jewel, and hiding in a blaze of glory any defects there may have been in the complexion of her wrinkly skin.

The duchess entered the church, which was quite deserted at that hour. The lackey left her side and stood at respectful attention near a little door, swung out from one side of the building, and casting over the tiles a rectangle of

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

blue shadow broken by flickering spots of sunlight as round and glossy as coins of gold. The footman never went beyond that point. The duchess preferred to be alone, sole sovereign of a domain that was hers by right of discovery.

The lady made her way through the church and stepped out through another door into a garden lined with palm trees. As she progressed, her cane tapped noisily on the red flagstones that rose and fell unevenly from years and years of exposure to sun and rain. The delight the duchess knew in this clerical retreat came from the charm of contrast. Everything here was different from the sleek, ornate, majestic elegance of her villa down below, on the edge of the great blue Mediterranean plain. On this mountain terrace, flowers were growing in wild freedom and profusion. Rose bushes, untrimmed, uncared-for, wove their branches and thorns and blossoms into one entrancing thicket of color and perfume. The trees, unpruned, crowded close upon one another, even intertwining their trunks to make strange, fantastic, almost human forms. Wild flowers, borne hither on the winds, were disputing the soil with garden plants. All around was one confused hum of insect life — ants, wasps, multi-colored beetles, crawling over the ground, climbing up and down the tree-trunks, or flitting musically through the air.

What the duchess was really looking for, and enjoying in advance, was the wonderful view that opened just beyond the growth of trees, where, from a sort of natural balcony, she could look out from a great height upon the sea, and then down along the curving shore where the promontories of the Alps jut out, making gulfs and bays and peninsulas in the azure mirror. In the distance towered the mountains of Nice, peaks that stood out like blocks of ebony against the crimson afterglow. Nearer, on the seashore, of Monaco, with the ol back. Then came the pla Carlo, bristling with pal dens. At her feet lay where her own house erected among the pine late Duke of Pontecorvo. the summer house of h former patroness, the Em with the residences of oth dethroned monarchs. Th the huge palace of John American iron king, who in those parts as one of t in the world.

The old lady pushed he the shrubbery along the precipitous slope, in sear ticular spot from whic panorama of the Blue Co before her delighted eye could sit for an hour or m the slow, placid death of No one surely would distu tranquil garden. There for a time, far away fro cares of the world, take plunge, as it were, into t sunset, at an hour when memories of the past retur of all that has been and again, — like a sweet an music coming to the ear f or a lingering perfume o that will bloom no more!

There was something daily recreation of the was like some despot of n an opera sung to an e while he sits alone there, his ease in the depths of a chair. The wondrous b dying sun, the purple m that draped the sky and Mediterranean paradise she wanted all for herself garden she could have th

On this occasion, whe

Digitized by Google

retreat, she noticed, f annoyance, that l, entirely alone. A moke mingled per- fragrance of the a cough behind the es of the trees. A ner dominions and iew which she had wn.

tempted to protest, had ventured on And yet, when the nd stepped toward f displeasure on her of cordial greeting. Baldwin. I am so .'

time to time, John an multimillionaire, weeks in the palace ich he had bought per advertisement, ention of the whole gh any number of — ex-premiers, de- etired magnates — e small strip of ter- s between Cannes e was not a single Riviera comparable rities were always r public charities. izations were for- ost important men tion to knock at his f this or that good cal or musical func- e among its patrons. lionaire was some- never reveals him- s, but makes his where through his

autiful palace were him in person, though just as rarely, if they came for any defensible purpose, did they go away without some donation. The few who had met him personally would point him out as a real curiosity when he appeared on the boulevard in Nice, or in one of the gambling-rooms at Monte Carlo. 'Do you know? That is Baldwin over there — Baldwin, the American millionaire!' Such information would usually be received with an exclamation of surprise. 'What! Baldwin? That, Baldwin? Why, he looks as poor as a rat!'

Baldwin, in fact, always dressed very plainly; and his habits were as simple as his clothes. Though his garages on Cap Martin held numerous automobiles of the most fashionable makes, he went almost everywhere on foot. He chose his secretaries for their refinement and good taste in dress. He seemed to enjoy being taken for the servant of the elegant secretaries who sometimes went with him on his walks.

People described him ordinarily as 'the richest man on earth.' Those who pretended greater intimacy with his affairs asserted that he had a million dollars on his checking account at the bank. When asked why he allowed such an enormous capital to lie idle, he would answer with a sigh of weariness. Money bored him so! What could he do with money? It was impossible to invest it in anything better than his own business; and since his various enterprises in mining and manufacturing had already reached their maximum development and were in need of no further capital, why should he worry?

The Duchess of Pontecorvo had known Baldwin ever since he became her neighbor on Cap Martin — the friendship of an old lady, famous in her time, but now forgotten, with a rich man whose name was a catchword throughout the world. The duchess had found times much changed since

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

the days of her youth. Countries where she had been intimate with royalty had become republics. In the present democratic age, millionaires like Baldwin were the real lords of the earth. She herself had spent the larger part of her former fortune on the careers of her children, and for years had been living a life of gilded poverty, which allowed only infrequent excursions from her villa on Cap Martin.

That is why the aged aristocrat felt the greatest respect for this potentate of a younger age; and that is why she smiled so cordially when she discovered that the intruder on her solitude was the American millionaire. Hitherto she had seen him at social gatherings, of an afternoon, in sombre palace halls, where the lighting was controlled by older hostesses, careful to avoid the glaring, indiscreet rays of unobstructed sunlight. Now, here he was before her in the open air, and in that garden where trees and stones seemed to have halos of green around them, so intense was the golden radiance dripping from the sky.

She was eighty, and he was quite as old, if not, as the duchess suspected, a few years older. But he was still a strong man, one of those hard, wiry, elastic persons on whom the storms of the years beat as on a marble temple, roughening the surface, perhaps, but powerless to break them down. Old age seemed to have toughened John Baldwin, throwing a wrapper of parchment, as it were, around him, an armor proof against disease and impenetrable to the shafts of death. His dark-blue suit had been cut to fit him; yet he seemed to move about in it as if it had been made for another person. The slenderness of his neck emphasized the massive structure of his head — a prominent, bulging forehead, a strong, protruding lower jaw, evidences of intelligence and will, remnants of a vigorous youth, which the deep lines face had not been able to ob

And his eyes, also! His ey bright as they had ever be easy to guess how they flashed in his angry mom youth. They looked out upo the piercing, disconcerting belongs to men who are mast In them one could see the s great worldly success. And outlines were somewhat sof by a trace of gentleness and They suggested willingness o part to forget the struggles

At sight of the duchess threw away the smashed a chewed cigar-butt he had bee

'How do you happen to be duchess asked, offering her h dial greeting.

'Oh, one of my friends tol the view from here. He hea scribe it so enthusiastically day! I thought I would com a look at it myself. You madame! It is wonderful!'

They sat down on a rusti tree-trunks, looking out over their feet, the villages along and the distant foothills of Automobiles, like so many in running along the thread-like visible far down at the foot A train was in sight on th Italian railroad, though at th the locomotive seemed to be silence and there was no rumb wheels. In fact, the stillness den was broken only by the little bells that came from goats grazing along the slopes garden — a soft, mellow tin the ring from a Venetian g sea had turned to a more azure, less harsh on the eyes viously in the blinding delu rained upon it from the sun.

'Yes, it is beautiful!' said t

Digitized by Google

'It is wonderful!' in silence, the full ing day came over y it is,' Baldwin ave to wait till we enjoy the deepest res of life! When re always worried re looking forward pes and ambitions he things actually imagine that many to know, if they graves on the other d come here now, see old man Bald- at a landscape and without a thought ns of exchange!' ed without clearly r companion was

you, too,' he con- wait for the years could take a really eauties of Nature; ule, are born more ental, than men, oung, furthermore, levote to what are gs. I am sure you ou see before you u used to enjoy a s.'

nodded, quite flat- erful personage at an interest in her ing of her vanished e again. Baldwin, e world, had come arden just because one of his friends! is upstarts of the d, so lacking in all en told. She began if the aged Amer- nd of hers.

e said. 'The life I t so brilliant as the life of gayety I led when I was young. But it has its consolations. You see, I have suffered a great deal in my time, Mr. Baldwin. People's lives are something like houses, are n't they? You have to live in them before you know what they really are.'

The American millionaire had heard many stories about the career of the duchess in the old days. She had been a very interesting person; and he began to listen to her story attentively.

The Duchess of Pontecorvo was a Spanish woman, by birth distantly related to the Empress Eugénie. She had come to Paris to join the galaxy of beauties that revolved around the magnificent sovereign in the Tuileries. Her family, of the ancient Spanish nobility, had long since been ruined; so the Empress tried to arrange a suitable marriage for her protégée with some important personage in France. The man in whom the young lady showed greatest interest was a general in Napoleon's army, who had just received a title of duke — Duke of Pontecorvo — for a victory his division had won in the wars in Italy.

The duchess made no mystery of the incompatibility of taste and temperament between herself and the rough soldier she finally married. But life at court was so gay that domestic troubles were not terribly oppressive. She had found life quite tolerable. When the Empire fell, and all the brilliant life that centred around the Court in Paris came to an end, the marshal died of a broken heart. He could not survive the overthrow of the Emperor and the shock of the great disaster of 1870. Two children, boys, had been born to the duchess. They in turn had set up new families and carried off the greater part of their father's fortune.

To escape unpleasant contrasts between her former splendor and the modest way in which she now had to

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

live, the widowed duchess went to Cap Martin, intending to spend the rest of her life in the palace that had been her vacation home in the days of her splendor. There she could live in company with old friends from earlier times, without obtruding the decline in her resources.

The Empress was a not infrequent visitor to the Riviera. When Eugénie came to Cap Martin, she would pay a visit to the duchess; and the two old ladies, dressed in their widow's weeds, would talk of the happy days gone by. But now the Empress was dead; and the passing of that lifelong friend brought home to the duchess the short time that must be left before she too passed on.

Only one memento was still left from her really brilliant youth — her necklace, the 'Necklace of the Duchess,' a jewel so closely identified with her fame that to dispose of it would be a public declaration of poverty.

'You are right, Mr. Baldwin,' she continued. 'Old age does have its pleasures. I am now well acquainted with something that I never knew before — peace, quiet, tranquillity. I have no ambitions left, of course. I have so restricted my daily needs that there is hardly a thing in the world I really want. Life does not call to me with the vibrant voice that it used to have before. At the same time it is without the old sorrows and the old worries. At our age, for instance, there is no such thing as love; but yet, there is friendship! And how much more wonderful and lasting than love that sometimes is! You can't imagine what a beautiful woman, a woman whom many, many men desire, has to go through in life. You live in a state of perpetual alarm. You are afraid to venture on the slightest intimacy with a man. The moment one appears, you come to regard him as a possible enemy. The life of a great beauty is like that of the commander of a fortress under siege: she ne moment's rest!

'For the first time in my free to enjoy friendship, com with men. That is something knew when I was young. It w surprise to me to find that a not necessarily be a torment our age, you see, people are and women. They are frien panions, comrades. When once out of the way, all the ot ties of the human soul come evidence and seem more attr our eyes.

'Of course, sometimes, whe pretty, charming, popular yo I remember my own days of and feel a flash of envy; but I over that. Why envy them? they will be old, too. They the point that I have reached. is, I suppose, one can be rea when one is old. One can just feel all the delights of just something that a young pers dreams of. Believe me, Mr. B am not at all sorry that I a years old; and I am glad to see after your long and active life do about it.'

'Well, yes,' the old man repl ing sadly; 'yes — if only always be old! But there is n't there?'

The animation with which ess had been speaking vanis her face, and there was a trem ness in her voice as she replie

'Yes, that is true. There We old people have not ver live!'

III

There was a long silence. old man expressed aloud all th been thinking while the duc telling the story of her life. found a strong contrast bet

Digitized by Google

t; but he did not
after a life so full
atest business men
nsidered him the
action. After all,
n why he should
ver. What could
not already done?
rôle left for John
he comedy — the
nd yet he went on
is something in us
to live, quite aside
tions and conven-

a, duchess, of the
siness enterprises.
ut that word gives
the wealth I actu-
world would have
e I could be entire-
think up devices
wth of my income.
ns of money lying
st because I have
an possibly use. I
ve so much around.
n everything, and
n I could easily be
ght it worth while.
s that attract men
charm for me now.
e the futility of all
an vanity. I have
one concern is to
ny money where it
ter I am gone.
ded libraries, mu-
es. I have endow-
izations — though
e that charity is
in this world. I
en without exam-
e requests that are
ired of buying pic-
books that do not
of giving money for
ce and invention.
r way, such things

— when you are young and enthusiastic, and believe in the future! Now I have no enthusiasm about anything; and as for the future — '

The old man fell silent for a time. Then he resumed, in a voice not untouched with rancor: —

'As for the future, the future does interest me, to tell the truth, the way exciting business propositions interested me when I was young. Sometimes, when I meet ragged newsboys on the street, or little cowherds on the mountainsides, I feel a sort of jealous anger at them. They are so young, those little shavers! They are sure to live so much longer than I can ever live! "Ah, you little rogues," I say to myself, "you will be here to see things that I shall have no chance to see." The thought makes me feel how useless money is, how absurd the respect it inspires in everyone! The famous John Baldwin, for all his two billions, is worth, in terms of future experience, less than a little beggar who crawls along on all fours to pick up the cigar-butt you are throwing away!

'We are living in 1920. Sometimes I amuse myself by wondering what things will be like when you double the twenty part of it — 1940! What are twenty years for any of the young people who are now around us? They are so sure of living that long, that they are ready to risk their chance on it for a passing moment's pleasure. And I, John Baldwin, who have stood before the kings of the earth, and am a king myself so far as money and power are concerned, could not for all my wealth buy those twenty years, if I took into my service all the intelligence and science in the world.'

The two old people lapsed into silence again.

'I have seen everything,' Baldwin finally resumed, 'and I have had everything. For that very reason life has no more attractions for me. And yet I still

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

want to live! The certainty that I am soon to die angers me, depresses me, beyond endurance. I suppose it is the idleness of my retirement that makes me think of such things now, and emphasizes reality as it is. The old days were days of struggle. There were obstacles to overcome, problems to solve. There is a kind of poetry in youth, and poetry disguises things, throws a veil of illusion over them, so that the dreamer never sees them as they really are. In my case it was the thirst for power; and the pursuit of power was an absorbing, an inspiring preoccupation. Now that everything has come to me, the enchantment is gone. I see the framework of fatuity that underlies human existence; and on that my eyes, by a strange perversity of old age, are fixed. It is as if a man saw only the skeleton under the beauty of an attractive woman.

'I remember how anxiously I used to wait for the outcome of enterprises that meant success or total ruin for me. I have lost four fortunes in my time. More often it was a great triumph. Now, the arrival of a cablegram fails to give me the slightest thrill. Whatever the message it contains, I know it will make very little difference in the mass of my possessions or achievements. Most people, when they have fought a long battle to make a fortune, have to make a second and sometimes harder fight to keep what they have earned. I am beyond all such worries. My victory has been so overwhelming, so complete, that my wealth stands there on its own feet, and a generation of the world's activities could hardly overthrow it. Well, there you are! What have I to live for?'

The duchess, in her humble way, had many pet charities in which she was always trying to interest her more fortunate society friends. She was going to mention one of them when she remembered what the had said some momen win did not believe in he practised it in a m way, giving money to for it just because th Besides, she was loath any commonplace adv obviously a despairing part of the old man, melancholy beauty of

'I have no hopes desires unsatisfied,' he I don't want to die. me something insultin worthy of me, someth dignity as a man. S Everything in life is so mysterious, so hard Nothing is ever simpl we go beyond the obv of everyday life, things beyond our compreher instance — Well, pe talking about death fo thousands of years, e the same things, so th dreds of trite express isms, which we repe without thinking eve mean. It is only when find death right befor fate in its actual outli understand the full m misery.

'Some people find c fact that death is the g death represents demo Well, that reflection ma to the millions of unfort got nothing out of life. may represent the reve have failed, the satis who are envious of oth not my case. I am one men. What have I to

'The thought of dea freshing sleep, the slum our wearied strength, is

Digitized by Google

who lies down to sleep
will wake up again in the
h as sleep is a fancy of
reat consoler of human
best, the notion is but a
cy, that may or may not
e are not sure that the
will ever break into a new

ave compared death to
eriod of cold and silence,
preparing the rebirth of
e splendor and exuber-
r. That, also, is a guess,
an attempt to snatch a
lation from the infinite

just touching the higher
stern mountains, casting
rose along the horizon,
a sash of violet and blue
ne to the south. Some of
ned to be catching fire
furnace flaming beyond
n. The old man pointed
sinking sun.
f the sun is not death at
knows that he will rise
rning in the east, and
ath of glory he has fol-
sands and thousands of
agine that is why, each
us farewell so gloriously.
of a great actor who does
cene on the stage, with
midnight supper he is to
é an hour later. No, we
that. With us it is once
; and what makes mat-
st, is that, when we get
, we see others in the full
coming on to take our

envy the great trees in
ey die so slowly and so
ey keep the ground un-
dark. There are no im-
rising in the shade, to
y of the giant with his

helplessness. Human beings are not so fortunate. Decrepitude comes over us, while the young people about us are beaming with the radiant prospects of their long futures.'

The duchess was listening attentively, because she judged that everything that such a celebrity thought and said must be important. Nevertheless, all that brooding over death disquieted her. Could n't he talk on some more pleasant subject? Had n't he heard any new gossip about the people living along the coast? There was that young woman in the house on the Cape. Did n't he know what people were saying about her? Why should old people worry about death, anyhow? Death comes to them soon enough without their troubling to send a special invitation!

When the duchess timidly ventured this last reflection, Mr. Baldwin showed himself the man of authority, the man accustomed to holding the floor at directors' meetings. He did not choose to be distracted from his line of thought. He went on talking, but in a lower voice, and with his eyes on the ground, as if he were embarrassed in advance by the complaint he was to make against destiny.

'Human life reminds me of a badly managed piece of business, where the superintendent is either a lunatic or a malicious fool. Life never succeeds in doing what it undertakes to do. When we are young, we work to make our way in the world. We set out after glory and wealth. In attaining them, we waste the years when the possession of them would do us any good. We find success when we are old, at a time when success and failure are much the same thing. The years when we might enjoy them are years usually of sacrifice and renunciation.

'Just imagine, duchess! For years and years I worked like a dog, shut up in dark offices or in smoky factories,

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

when, outside, the sun was shining and the gardens were in flower. Now, when I have everything, I can even improve on Nature, if she does n't satisfy me. I can make a paradise out of a desert. Do you know that many women who found me impossible when I was young, I could now persuade to love me, old and decrepit as I am? Money is a wonderful thing, duchess — when you don't have it!

'People all consider themselves immortal. A man knows all along that some day he is going to die; but death is always a concern for some future day. It is never real to the moment! We find it natural that other people should die. As for ourselves, death is something incredible, almost impossible. The young people of the present would not understand us if they heard us talking now. They will have to wait till they get older, to know the full misery of human life. But when their turn comes, they will moralize as we are doing, and prove just as unintelligible to the generation after them.

'People like to delude themselves. They refuse to think of death in the midst of their happiness.'

At this point the duchess broke in, to emphasize the necessity of illusion, without which life would be impossible. The old man agreed.

'Yes,' he said, 'we must deceive ourselves in order to go on living. We all pass through life on the wings of some dream or other — all of us, even those who seem furthest removed from any kind of sentiment. You think me a hard man, don't you, duchess? Well, all my life long I have been chasing a will-o'-the-wisp, living on an illusion that in every moment of trial has given me strength and courage to push on.'

Baldwin reviewed the story of his life from the days of the Civil War, when he had thrown up a promising business position to become a soldier. When, after the war, he
thousand dollars, h
and was in Paris or
years of Napoleon's
of the famous Expo

'That was wher
duchess, when all
about your beauty,
magnificence of you

'O Mr. Baldwin!
rupted, very much
pity you were nev
would have been so
you when you were

'I should never h
Baldwin replied. 'I
vigorous, and not ba
but something far le
the old man you see
very poor then, an
education. I had
called breeding. My
and calloused from
did n't even occur t
of those days that h
at one of your rece
tent with standing o
in the Exposition cr
that the Emperor w
in an open carriage,
at his side, and, in
the Duchess of Pont
full effulgence of her

'O Mr. Baldwin!
again, looking at th
faint blush overspre
cheeks.

'Well,' the Am
'that is when I saw
you know, I have n
all my life long! Yo
fix their eyes on so
something far abov
unattainable the goa
it is quite out of rea
hang on it will nev
contact with cold r
that inaccessible pi
will excuse me, duc

Digitized by Google

e when we can say
of the restraints
. Yes, you! In my
nd struggle, three
ays in my mind,
e to be the reward
, first, an enormous,
rrounded by a tre-
anted a yacht big
sea on earth. And
— of course, it was
ne most persistently
was to have for a
like the Duchess of
Duchess of Ponte-

e often affords un-
nat it seemed quite
n advance. As for
a dozen of them
there about the
acht, I could build
I weren't bored to
e I already have in
f the United States
the third ambition
ed. The one thing
n failed to attain
existence was the
rvo!'

!' the duchess re-
tter of effusiveness.
w funny!'

ne reason why that
been with me is
n winning her. I
uchess, that I have
ery moment of my
e has work to do,
ves little leisure for
gs. But I am able
e few moments of
very time I was able
der as it listed, the
ly to come into my
ry of you.

rse, and I loved my
was a good woman,
wife, a charming,

delightful comrade; but the flare, the glory of my dream of love always lingered about your image; and I believe it was in that that I found the stimulus to go on with my work. I understood in a certain way that the beauty of my dream lay in the fact that it would never come true. That is why I never tried to find you when I had become a really successful man. I was old, you see, and you could not have been very young. Your children had grown up and established families of their own. You were long since a grandmother. What would have been the use? Why destroy the last illusion left me?'

He stopped for a second, while the duchess studied his face with interest, struggling apparently to reconstruct before her mind's eye the image of the American millionaire as he must have been in those youthful days.

'O Mr. Baldwin!' she said again, 'why did n't you declare yourself?'

The old man, absorbed in the thread of his own thoughts, seemed not to be listening.

'I did n't try to find you because I was afraid you might have changed in the meantime. Now — it does n't matter! You have changed, if I may say so; and I have changed, changed immensely. There is little left of the John Baldwin who used to stand on the sidewalk in Paris and watch you go by. We are two old people who have outlived their real lives. The woman I am speaking of is the woman I can still see in my imagination. In my mind no time has passed, and fashions have not changed. The only Duchess of Pontecorvo that I shall ever really know is a woman in a hooped crinoline skirt, in the style of the Empress Eugénie and the other ladies of the Imperial Court. — And that is the only duchess I care to know. For that is the woman who was loved as few women are ever loved, loved by a poor young American, who

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

likewise has passed away — a love whose principal charm was its unselfishness; a love never to be requited because it was never to be revealed!'

'O Mr. Baldwin!' the old lady repeated in a trembling voice, as if she were about to weep; 'why did n't you speak? Why did n't you tell me then what you are telling me now?'

Baldwin shrugged his shoulders. He had a clearer, a more accurate sense of reality than she. He understood that what now seemed to this old woman an unpardonable oversight, she would have regarded in those days as an unpardonable presumption.

The sun had set, leaving a patch of pale rose upon the mountain-tops, the last trace of its departed glory. The evening star was twinkling in the luminous trail that still brightened the western sky. The eastern horizon above the Italian mountains was deepening to an intenser blue, through which, fainter still, a few stars were struggling to appear. A breeze had begun to blow down from the mountains, setting the leaves of the garden astir on its way out to wrinkle the placid mirror of the sea. The old duchess seemed not to notice. Her mind was on other things.

'Why did n't you speak then?' she insisted. 'It would have been so interesting! Why did n't you declare yourself?'

Baldwin again shrugged his shoulders; for now the illusion was quite dead, and it had been dead for a long time. He had spoken only under the impulsive need for confession that we all seem to feel at certain moments. Ever since he had found the duchess living near him on Cap Martin he had to make this revelation perhaps, was what had pay a visit to the garde But, once confessed, the lifted from his soul and backward; peace be wit

But the woman, mo sentimental things, w forget. She clung to th were a life-raft come to torrent of time that w so rapidly toward ete her feminine vanity ha from its sleep of half declaration of love at ei the most powerful man

Baldwin coughed. T was chilling him.

'Let 's go,' he said. not quite safe to catch

He gave one last lool afterglow. 'The sun ha 'To-morrow he will r next day, and the next sink below the horizon

The duchess took his to walk back along t church, her bamboo can mically on the flagsto conscious of everything seemed not to hear wh ion was saying. She ha into the past — and those memories were!

They pushed their w bushes of the garden, heads to avoid the han

'Why did you not de she kept repeating. 'W tell me then what you h now?'

Digitized by Google

MAN IN INTERNATIONAL POLITICS

BY ARTHUR POUND

I

ent, manufacture,
ction of goods, an
machines; but we
he effect of these
olution of society.
eat Middle West
re the automatic
e production has
development and
, we possess tools
aris. Yet it would
o any of us to say
ergson, addressing
:—
, when the reaction
left only the grand
perhaps, is how a
k of our age. He
peculiar to the nine-
employing science
our material wants
unforeseen exten-
l arts, and equip-
n fifty years, with
d made during the
e had lived upon
achine being for
an artificial organ,
suddenly and pro-
n size, without his
time able to dilate
his new body.'
e 'machinate mam-
iking phrase as a
eing, adding limbs
tum, without cor-
f soul — a modern
our busy Frank-

ensteins, the inventors. Let us consider, rather, man in society, organized into states, and observe some of the political and social results which have followed, and are likely to follow, multiplication of man-power by machinery.

Multiplying man-power by machinery sets going certain forces and tendencies in key with — but not at all points parallel to — those set going in other times by brisk breeding. However generated, new peaks of human energy strain social and political systems evolved to carry currents less high. Unless the current is cut down, or the system of distribution readjusted to carry the new peak-load, something breaks. War is simply one method of restoring equilibrium between the kinetics of human energy and the statics of social order.

Machine use, on the expanding scale of recent years, multiplies goods-production over and above any point attainable by natural increase without machine assistance. Power over machines enabled the coal-and-iron members of the great-nations group to establish world-leadership in the years between the industrial revolution and the World War. Not only did population in the industrial state increase absolutely, but the effectiveness of those increased populations in wealth-production multiplied over and over. States with more machines assumed preponderant political influence over those with less.

Because the nations of leading power

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

at the opening of the twentieth century were all white and all Christian, a false idea arose that this overlordship rested upon race or religion; but Japan's entrance, following victory over Russia, proved the acid test of world-power to be industrial prowess. Enough productivity to furnish, year after year, a considerable excess of goods for export, and to support naval and military forces proportionate to the resulting extensive overseas interests — these were the prime desiderata of power; and the nation possessing them could be sure of its place in the sun, regardless of color or the constitution of its Godhead.

Machine-power not only strengthened nationalism by slowing down dispersion through emigration, but also intensified it through generating real need for group-action to ensure subsistence from foreign sources. To make the industrial centre secure, its economic hinterland must be likewise secure; states were constantly urged by groups oppressed by the conviction of insecurity to move outward toward the control of that ever-widening hinterland, without whose produce and consumption the industrial complex at home must languish in unprofitable depression.

In earlier times natural increase set going centrifugal forces, which machine increase shifted into centripetal forces. Nations in effective possession of coal and iron held their nationals, because machines permitted the use at home of more labor and more capital per acre. Instead of sending forth surplus population at the former rate, the industrial states sent forth, in ever-increasing volume, surplus goods to compete with those of their rival nationals in world markets. The descendants of men who had won sustenance at the spear-point in forced migrations now fought one another with goods, and recorded their victories in ledgers instead of sagas. Upon the profitable and certain sale of these goods depended national solvency and domestic content, the hunger or plenty of millions of wage-earners, the revenues which supported governments, military establishments, educational institutions — in short, modern Western civilization. Realizing the vulnerability of their economic supports, the industrial societies of the Old World grew more and more state-conscious, and drifted into more and more bristling attitudes toward one another. Thus modern nationalism developed a sinister accent.

Given the determining mechanisms, this development was sure as fate. Arteries of national existence, inextricably interwoven, came to thread the Seven Seas. Though the bulk of imported nourishment grew in stabilized quarters, certain essentials of industrial life were gathered from lightly settled districts of uncertain political complexion, where the white man's code did not run. Concessions and capitulations, extra-territoriality and economic penetration — these satisfied neither natives nor invaders. Willy-nilly, the situation made for imperialism. Wherever moneys were owing and courts were not; wherever raw materials needed in the mills back home could be produced; wherever goods could be sold to the heathen if the latter could be educated sufficiently in wants; wherever capital could be multiplied by exploiting cheap labor — there industrial societies, although located on the other side of the earth, had stakes, vital stakes of existence. The temptation was powerful, indeed, to change these stakes of existence into stakes of empire. Africa was partitioned; western Asia became a bickering ground; China was partitioned into spheres of influence, and must soon have been parceled out, if the United States, not yet hard pressed economically, had not initiated the saving reprieve of the Open Door.

Digitized by Google

l the war had the nations
e beginning of the cen-
ter came intrigue after
djustment and review.
and restating the Mon-
in terms which would
Monroe, were we able to
ng hands from South
iance to keep for our-
of action in that quarter
ate. Elsewhere the game
ever-increasing openness
ic needs of Europe be-
te. The nations looked
es, coaling-stations, mer-
as so much national in-
the conditions imposed
n. Popular hate must be
funds for naval expan-
aments and tax-payers.
nda, the press doing its
leagues the rest. Diplo-
followed incident, well
so obviously incidental
he primary force that
r more difficult to keep.
don, The Hague — all
ory wheels continued to
er-accelerated pace, and
inued thinking in terms
ead of economics. Back
lomatic jockeying and
ing, commercial zeal and
n, — the motor-force be-
expressions of national
d unceasingly the over-
energy released by ma-
ation of man-power.
y for this dangerous
upon political rigidity
oon industrial progress.
of the industrial states
ch a division of the re-
ry that its full produc-
be consumed at home;
trade and finance reach-
roportions without cor-
road political and legal
ng such controls, the situ-
ation marched swiftly to its conclusion. Almost to the last, either of two dénouements was possible — either the boundaries of industrial states must burst under inequalities of pressure generated by increased populations and increased machines, or the machines themselves must be slowed down by eliminating profits from their operation. The first meant war — the World War; the second meant war also, but of a different sort — the war between classes, the social revolution.

In midsummer of 1914, it was hard to say which method of bleeding the too-vital patient would be adopted. Had Juarès lived, who knows how changed the face of history might be? The state-war method won the desperate race against time. At the moment decision rested with certain Germans, who may have been influenced, consciously or unconsciously, by the hovering spectre of social and political revolution. If deferred then, the decision a little later might have rested upon other persons elsewhere; and if so, the answer must have been the same — war. Useless to apply ethical rules at such a pass; indicting forces is even more absurd than indicting nations. The important thing to understand, here and now, is that, given nationalism as the dominant social fact of the planet, sea-striding industrialism as its dominant economic fact, and the control of weak peoples by strong as its dominant political fact, peace in or near the year 1914 could not be maintained without qualifying one or all of the three. It was not done. There were none big enough to do it. To that extent the war may be considered inevitable.

II

Has Europe's blood-letting, plus its post-war Socialism and Communism, rid the world of wars bred in the market-

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

place? The situation does not make for confidence. State competition, intensified by hunger, hate, and debt, is not yet restrainable by international bonds. Russia's experiment does not recommend the class-war as a means to peace. Just as industry and nationalism conceived and brought forth the World War, without quite knowing either when or how conception occurred, so they may add to the Martian family in the future. Indeed, certain tendencies of modern industrialism, in its new automatic phase as yet but dimly understood, seem destined to put even more strain upon the political framework of the planet than that under which the same framework cracked in 1914.

One such aspect of industrialism is its tendency to spread. Born in England, the factory system has migrated to northwestern Europe, northern Italy, the United States, and Japan. It has healthy roots in Canada, less healthy ones in Mexico. It appeared in Russia, and contributed to that débâcle. China is getting under industrial way, slowly, but with a steady ponderosity which Ross, Stoddard, and Weale agree means nothing less than an economic upheaval certain to affect every nation and individual on earth as time runs on. India, too, is on the way, quickening step during the war; Australia, by erecting a tariff wall, encourages domestic industries. Thus industry travels; how far can it go?

The spread of industry among colored and Slavic populations has been retarded appreciably by the fact that, in the past, industrial production required the application of certain traits, natural or acquired, which, for historic reasons beyond the scope of this paper, are more apparent in white peoples than in others. The skill element was paramount. Now industry has machines so highly perfected that highly specialized skill is not required. Ordinary intelligence and average manual dexter requirements, from t of production only, fo or attendant of autom He who brings maximu the shop at minimum his employer most. O Chinese coolie, at first unbeatable. If not the his cheapness still may anese have demonstrate degree of Oriental adapt ern machines. The H not be far behind. And ency in machine-develo toward less and less upon the operative, the bility that even more ba than these may some da attuned to their ment capacities. The huge follow promptly upon cheap, low-standard lab automatic and semi-auto should be enough to ensu late, all peoples will be ordeal by the Iron Man.

But whether browns, lows can withstand thi other matter. Theoreti of industry should proc trade in manufactured curtailed. But there ar sider — capital, coal, i power. Dearth of thes from many quarters. F ant, however, are the v of races and peoples to and political problems machine industry. Th progressive; the historic has motivated western it a superior elasticity to changing conditions. proves that even we could not escape at least back resulting from ind The depth and breadth

Digitized by Google

asizes the difficul-
n that side of the
colored races have
the fiery crucible
can prophesy their
act of modern in-

is angle some of
at industry makes
nd upon society.
overnment at once
Government must
rder against class
upon the dispar-
ably arising from
rivate ownership,
s in his comparison
ia and Wisconsin.
racts under condi-
ctual relations be-
omplex. It must
m their employers
; it must maintain
and working con-
the workers from
ruthless competi-
their own weak-
ourage the public,
eans to compensate
rifices involved in
n, which compen-
ovided outside of
njoyed in leisure.
sedatives requires
ongly functioning
of the industrial
ding of funds to
ms of social prog-
east sufficiently to

sented by heavy
very real danger of
is not an easy one
ates highly organ-
rove insoluble for
hina and Turkey,
ility to establish
. Finally, history
believing that in-

dustry and autocracy are compatible; in the long run, so strong are the social pressures involved, a successful government of an industrial state must grow out of the conscious will of its people, represent their ideals, and be amenable to those ideals as they change from generation to generation. Even in Japan the advent of industry brought constitutional forms, not yet nationally digested. Those states in which representative democracy had reached its highest expression emerged from the desperate test of war and the grind of war-production with the least political and social damage.

Industry prospers best under capitalism and under representative democracy; I cannot conceive industry functioning well under other dispensations. German autocrats might introduce state socialism as they pleased; the fact of autocracy remained a threat to German industry. And because no colored race equals the white in its power to create the social and political setting in which machine industry thrives, I am unable to follow Lothrop Stoddard as far as he goes in forecasting the shrinking of the white man's markets, in his book, *The Rising Tide of Color*.

Indeed, the impact of industry upon colored races seems as likely to weaken them as the reverse. Modern industrialism places both the individual and society under severe and continued strains, physical, mental, moral. The more static the society, the more custom-tied the individual, the more severe the strain. English people have been evolving with and in industry under representative government for six centuries; for two centuries they have been applying power to machines and building up a factory system. All this time they have been building up definite immunities against industrial ills and definite predispositions to bargain themselves out of industrial ills. Yet they are

STANFORD LINKAGE

Digitized by Google

never out of hot water, politically and industrially. I do not see how peoples without that background, or something like it, lacking alike political flexibility and industrial experience, can stand the shock of modern industrial life. Industrialism in its functioning and growth — and it is still growing — requires never-ending readjustments, compromises, and concessions, which are born of freedom and responsibility — the right of individuals and groups to bargain freely; and the duty, freely accepted, of living up to the bargain after it is made. Where these concepts have no place in the popular mind, there industry will have rough sledding, and can become efficient only through a system of force and repression which eventually defeats itself.

It is easy, under the automatic régime, for a man to stand beside a machine and produce goods, and difficult for him to stay there and remain a reasonably satisfied, contributing member of a political and social group, strong enough to maintain itself, yet flexible enough to give him reason to believe industrialism worth while. Mexico's experience is a case in point. Diaz, proceeding toward the industrialization of his country with the aid of foreign capital, enterprisers, and engineers, unmistakably bettered the economic condition of Mexican labor. Nevertheless, the peons' ideal of life remained agricultural; Madero won their backing with his promise of forty acres and a mule. Carranza, inheriting from Madero, frankly declared his country's antipathy to industrialism; whatever his faults, Carranza sized up his Indian correctly. Though the Mexican peon has certain innate capacities for factory work, notably high manual dexterity and stolid patience, he prefers to half-starve on the land rather than work upon modern machines indoors at wages that would enable him to maintain a higher standard
may bring him
whites insist; but
active or potenti
organization so i

The Mexican'
against industria
in degree, but no
many of our own
develops among
automatized plan
faction, which can
without reference
to be proof aga
good conditions. V
shop-councils, ev
not drive it out.
contributing fact
confinement, mo
tance from the r
personality, stric
fort, and the scan
for the play of t
the joy in produc

But the basic
of us are descende
a comparatively
farmers, hunters,
occasional experi
Their work held
called for great
energy interspers
downs. They h
along with their
simple annals of t
have been crowd
compared with
less, bare-of-dram
factory. Your w
factory, not bec
but because he
can discover no
it. Yet there is th
which informs
voice of the agita
viction, that this
He gets, literall
labors. His envi
out of that attri

Digitized by Google

l as the *Weltschmerz* that
ered. Our tenders of ma-
ng starved in their souls;
re may be sedatives for
there is no specific.
to me the root of social
erica, and it is probably
Europe. Under our po-
cial controls, in a people
ist and hopeful in spirit,
nay not run its course.
our mechanics talk radi-
vote with the others for
baseball in our parks,
relief and encouragement
erate citizens of a repub-
tion tends, however slow-
interests of the masses.
ill this chronic work-pain
eeds to do — breeds that
out of sport and voting?
the shining example, it
poisoned Russia's indus-
gainst the only system of
r which industry func-
y in our day; the Com-
ussia come from her few
ns. Signs of similar explo-
cking in Japan. No mat-
are organized, no matter
e divided, this fraying of
stry continues. Industry
porarily the simple folk
and Peshawur; but can
e shock any better than
ithstood the white man's
he white man's whiskey?
try is strong drink; those
ed long with it, despite
nity born of experience,
happy; and those less
lly with it at the risk of
ustoms, general effective-
ical stability.

III

m these angles the possi-
ding industrialism, a tre-

mendous dilemma presents itself. On the one hand, the economic forces that spread industrialism outward from its English inception are still operative, and more vigorous than before. To the constant of self-interest is added a heightened state-interest flowing from huge debts. These converging interests now have tools at their disposal which admit to efficient production breeds of cheap men not hitherto available as industrial workers. These dynamic forces are not to be denied their trial of strength. On the other hand, peoples about to be introduced to industrialism must overcome grave social and political inhibitions before they cut down materially the demand for the white man's goods, and so restrict his influence in the world. These contrary forces — one set positive, the other negative; one the essence of progress, the other the essence of conservatism — are bound to do battle with one another on the world stage. Upon the outcome depends the future of terrestrial society.

Alarm as to the outcome has been sounded vociferously enough; and while the warnings may be more strident than the dangers are imminent, still the outlook calls for the highest statesmanship. The trial period, while the old and new do battle in Asia, is sure to be an era of extreme nervousness in international relations. During this period the white nations must strive toward a genuine solidarity, at the very time when their traders and governments are forced by powerful economic motives to cut into each other's markets. At a time, too, when rankling hate persists, and statecraft is still under the shadow of chauvinism. Any statesman who does not make an effort to overcome these difficulties deserves ill of posterity; because the situation is one in which peace must be labored for, and of which war is the logical outcome.

There can be no durable peace, and

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

no effective white solidarity, so long as the coal-and-iron states continue treading the path of economic competition toward another Armageddon. A sword is suspended over civilization, and that sword can be sheathed only by such a reorientation of industrialism as will permit the aggressive nationalism it fosters to die of inanition. Much may be done by international agreement, with force back of the agreement; more may be done by the forward spirits in each industrial society forcing into public attention these internal adjustments necessary to bring social and political evolution into line with industrial evolution. The more energy goes into internal developments, the less will press outward to complicate international relations. There is plenty of work for all governments to do at home, before their populations recover their pre-war trust in governments.

Every alert man or
nizes that the masses
governments in this yea
conviction is growing th
of economic origin. Me
willing to turn out war
of goods — on machines
source of belligerency is
tion, sovereignty has be
of control over machines
men. That is the dire
competent government
and those which fail to
possess no valid reason
the automatic-machine
ples of the earth look
to set up a moral contr
use; and this instinctive
state for relief is sound t
states are the only gr
manity strong enough
Iron Man to the chariot
being.

THE GUILD OF STUDENTS

BY WILBUR C. ABBOTT

I

Of all concerns of our democracy, most men agree, the chief is education in some form. From little red schoolhouse to Research Council, all of us at some time, some of us at all times, are brought in touch with it; and all of us at all times profess an interest in it. Our boys and girls go — or are sent — to college or university. Thence they emerge like a recent 'graduate,' who, standing on the steps of the Commencement hall, waved his beribboned diplo-

ma about his head a
the appreciative crowd,
gosh!' And as he stood
in more than one mind a
was this 'college course
gree,' which set him off
lacked his 'advantages'
college, which had 'edu

To uninitiated eyes t
stitution, — they are a
its buildings and its gro
and laboratories, its lec

Digitized by Google

d president, had
s. But he and his
ng a 'college man'
hip in a fraternity
ew that when, in
gathered with his
ity, he would not
st word in chemis-
eripatetic 'faculty
or reasons only re-
ommon interest in
ther for president
for buildings, nor
outh, of which he
titutions of higher
ation it accepts,
, as the case may
rity it is the 'col-
— and their par-
ot easy to define a
to lie somewhere
ere and a factory.
is a state of exist-
ctive to a certain
in which buildings
al training have a
ole, nor, frankly,
t important place.
United States; for
nerations, almost
f men now living,
d beside, or rather
rk of formal and
niversity another
largely outside the
, and largely inde-
ellectual impulses
rdinances. While
he institutions of
elaborated curric-
e scope and con-
ivities, the volun-
he undergraduate
ne alumni, have
itution, created in
meet their own
framed their own
ir own instructors,
ildings, provided

their own income, and evolved a system that challenges comparison with that of their academic superiors. They have, in truth, 'called a new world into existence, to redress the balance of the old'; they have created a real *imperium in imperio*, a student university — what would have been called, in older times, a guild of students.

It is easy to say that this is the only too familiar phenomenon of outside, or extra-curriculum, activities, long one of the chief concerns of deans and faculties and even presidents. It is easier still to say that calling this a student guild, much less a student university, is but another way of saying what everybody knows, another startling discovery of the wholly obvious. For this is, in many respects, the best-known feature of American education, even in the non-academic world. It has been the subject of long and dull discussions in public, and longer, though not so dull, discussions in private. We heard long ago from a distinguished college president — as he then was — the danger of allowing the side-shows to swallow up the circus. Yet the very fact of considering this phenomenon as a side-show indicates how little the problem is appreciated by minds which still consider the advice to undergraduates, 'Don't let your studies interfere with your education,' as humorous. And no one familiar with common conversation among undergraduates and alumni in their natural state will make that mistake. Let us consider the matter from another point of view than that involved in calling this an outside interest.

The problem of student activities outside of the curriculum is not new. At all times since universities began, students have lived a great part of their lives beyond the view of faculties. There have always been student organizations, for pleasure, for profit, and for protection; there are such organizations now

Digitized by Google

in other lands. The first university of which we have any adequate account, the University of Bologna, was, in fact, a guild of students, which employed its own professors, hired its own buildings, and managed its own affairs. Our modern guild of students has not, indeed, reached the point where, as in Bologna, it has succeeded in 'reducing the Masters to an incredible degree of servitude.' Not only does there yet remain to our faculties that sole prerogative of the Bolognese professors, 'the one function and only one over which the Doctors to the last retained an exclusive control,'— that of examining and conferring degrees, — but they still maintain those disciplinary powers denied to their unfortunate Bolognese predecessors, into whose lecture-rooms 'the idea of discipline never entered at all.' It is still measurably true now as then, that 'opposition to the Professors formed no part of the original *raison d'être* of the [student] universities.' The modern student guild, like its forerunner, as yet claims 'no authority over the Doctors or the control of strictly Academical matters' — with some modifications, perhaps, as to attendance and the exigencies of its own public exercises! And like the Bolognese guild, it still has 'little or nothing to do with the *Studium*.'

Moreover, it is perhaps not so true now as it was then that the 'jealousy of the Professors arose simply (so far as appears) from the fact that the students were attempting to do for themselves what the Professors claimed to do for them.' They cannot, perhaps, in the very nature of the new student guild's ambitions and desires; for the mediæval student guild was chiefly concerned with the cultivation of the mind, and the modern guild has wider scope than this. The older body employed its instructors to lecture in philosophy and rhetoric and theology and law; and whatever charges may be brought against its later counterpart, this will not be found among them. Nor have we reached, as yet, the point where, as at Bologna, the students 'acquired a complete control over their professors, and to a large extent usurped the powers elsewhere exercised by the professional body.'

Yet, like its ancient analogue, the twentieth-century American phenomenon is no less a 'wholly new departure in the history of education . . . distinct from anything which preceded it.' To us it seems the simplest, most obvious, even inevitable, of developments. Of casual visitors from other lands it fills the mind with wonder, not unmixed with awe. None the less, strange or familiar, like its prototype of Bologna, 'it is not difficult to explain the genesis of the new creation if we bear in mind the character of the environment wherein it grew up.'

That environment may be measured in three terms — the initiative and organizing capacity of American youth, the desires of American parents, and the conditions in American colleges fifty years ago. Those institutions, excellent of their kind, were, in the main, dominated by ecclesiastical influence. They provided a classical education of the old school, admirable in its way, if to our eyes somewhat limited in its range and appeal. They paid small attention to the graces and amenities of life, and less to the social and physical development of the undergraduate. There was a plentiful lack of those facilities for comfort and amusement which we now regard as essential to our welfare. A boy was sent to college to improve his mind, and incidentally to gain contact with his fellows. The literary and debating societies, the casual outdoor sports, the occasional social event, were the sum of his extra-curriculum activities, together with such loosely organized clubs as he contrived to form. In

Digitized by Google

was the expression
ained, if not more
American life. It is
n the high hats, long
adornment still re-
otographs of earlier
tain the present un-

I

anged, and her col-
ere arose a class of
egarded the college
acquire social polish
wledge of the world
an as essentially a
scipline. And many
ew nor rich altered
life and preparation
dful of paternal ex-
the college is sup-
t my son,' writes one
w to dress and be-
riends of the right
ike,' writes another,
learn how to meet
cquaintances which
ge to him in after
more frankly, voices
n many minds, con-
nts his boy to 'join
e the football team,
tleman.' — 'Educa-
'know men,' to 'get
college life,' 'social
re the commonest of
ys.

ural desires of man-
es ago, some vision-
n town-meeting sug-
ttention be given to
chool; but 'he was
l by a substitute
that the youth be
s of manners, there
in that respect, as
es change, and man-
ire to have youth
es, to be 'socialized'

in all senses, survives both time and change. And the college, through the student guild, has thus conformed to that desire. 'To ride a horse, shoot with the bow, keep clean, and tell the truth' — these, the oldest educational requirements, are not out of date, save as the instruments have somewhat changed. The 'friendships formed at Yale,' or Harvard, or Michigan, or Emory and Henry — are these not as enduring as the mental discipline, and of more ultimate value? And how shall these be attained? How train men in laboratory or by lectures to meet their fellows — and their fellows' sisters?

These are some of the reasons why the undergraduates have formed their guilds. They began their social education with those willing instructors common to us all, the tailor, the haberdasher, the dancing-master, the theatre, the teacher of musical instruments, and their fellow men. They played some kind of ball, and less innocuous games of chance and skill; they formed debating clubs and boarding clubs and literary societies, and mingled as they could in social events. All these are as old as universities. And in America, some time before the middle of the nineteenth century, they turned to secret societies. There they parted company with most other nations, unless we may regard the German corps and Burschenschaften as a parallel. How greatly these 'fraternities' have grown, we know. They are numbered now by scores; their members by tens of thousands. A generation since, a distinguished Bostonian boasted that he could go from coast to coast and sleep each night in a different house owned by his college society. There is at least one organization now where he might sleep each night for at least two months in a different house; and no one familiar with the college world need have attention called to the increasingly luxurious

Digitized by Google

habitations which adorn so many college towns — houses so splendid that many have come to doubt the wisdom of such elements in student life.

This is but one manifestation of the student guild. For undergraduates have not been content with building dormitories where the colleges had none, or none sufficient to their needs and desires. Far more important than this matter of housing, they have developed a curriculum. Football and baseball, rowing, track and field sports, games of all kinds, indoor and outdoor, boxing and wrestling, manly exercises, they have brought in, with or without the aid of the faculty, and these they 'elect' and follow with a zeal worthy of a better cause — if such there be.

Nor is their educational system purely physical or social. The guild of scholars shows how things are, or should be, or have been, done; in his system the student does them for himself. He is nothing if not concrete. The lecturer on journalism expounds his principles — and the student produces a paper. The professor of business management explains how business is, or ought to be, conducted — and the 'managers' of 'student enterprises' devote most of their waking, and not a few of what should be their sleeping hours to the conduct of their respective interests. The professor of literature directs their attention to the masterpieces of prose and verse and drama; but the student writes and acts his plays, and contributes to his own periodicals, too often far from the softening influence of the English Department. The music school may cultivate his taste and sensibilities as best it can; but he makes more or less sweet sounds for himself with his own voice, attuned to vaudeville strains, or on the latest instrument, ukulele or saxophone, as the fashions change; he frames his glee-club programmes and those of his banjo and mandolin clubs with small regard to the c academic muse.

His methods, like his mea sion, differ widely from t faculty. He chooses for hin ing to his tastes, or real or or his ambitions, the cours which he will pursue — 'w out for,' in his sharper ph the resemblance to his intell ing stops; for two factors have little place in modern cation as conceived in of The first is competition, wh barred from purely acade where studies are no long sport. In the student univ petition is the rule of life. M or 'try out' for every pla activity — athletic, literary musical, even social. Fron to Senior, life presents one one endless rivalry, with p end. And this great stimul this game he plays through this is one reason why th activities detract from int formal curriculum. They of youth continually desires, try its strength and skill wit And his elders might perha that 'curriculum' once rela rather than to something goes round and round.

And more: among the wi of wise old 'educators' the the ancient dispute whethe to watch over men from da point the way to youth an its course, examining from to see how closely youth h it, with or without extrane to what result. But in the s there is no such argumen tested and passed or flunk ally. In athletics, indeed, th some attempt to introdu chinery of higher education, the lessons of the football c

Digitized by Google

cture system — so-
talks' — to illus-
nd their practices.
nas trained a team
as said, 'Do thus
e comes Saturday.
ow much you can

t them in a mass,
e? Whatever may
cipline, the training
lacked for individ-
ntimate relation of
taught. The stu-
ried to carry on a
wholesale methods,
y for quantity pro-
for machines. Nor
borer unworthy of
something of rela-
world, it has not
he best. Its mem-
zed that it is only
at money they have
out for men. Only
begun to reach the
velopment of their
de the great struc-
r contests we begin
e buildings erected
s interests — with
n another stage of

I

y and the curricu-
quipment and the
he student univer-
ued catalogues. If
e realities of a col-
on its dull, formal,
ourses and names.
e college 'annual,'
it appears. There
e announcement of
, but a fascinating
There you may see
nt habitations; the
hletes unadorned,

or in their panoply; the 'boards' and 'fraternities'; the teams of every sort; the orchestra, the vocal and instrumental clubs; the endless organizations in which men find their interests expressed. There is the heart and mind of the undergraduate laid bare. This is his university, which he has built for himself; the educational system which he has devised.

Two things it seems to lack: the one degrees, the other unity. Yet it has its degrees — not sheepskin documents, obscure and for most recipients untranslatable, but genuine insignia. There are true 'bachelors of letters,' as their raiment testifies; honor men of the teams, pass men of the squads, aspirants of the numerals. There are the successful seekers after social degrees, with their strange symbols of gold and precious stones. There are the winners in this great competitive scheme, adorned with tangible symbols of their prowess in a chosen field. It is no fable, that story of the man who was too busy to graduate — for he had won five 'letters' in five different sports. This is no idler's club, this guild of students. Viewing its manifold activities, we may well revise Arnold's line, 'There are *our* young barbarians all at *work*.'

And for the general organization of this great complex? By its peculiar nature it cannot be so centralized and directed as that of the scholar guild. In the mediæval university there were 'Reformatores Studii,' with a formal code of laws, a student legislature, student courts, and a rector above all. But have we not 'student councils' pushing their young stalks through the academic mould? Is there not, in every institution, a code, written or unwritten, — a 'Freshman Bible,' — of traditionary or customary law, hardening year by year into a Codex Studentium? What of 'disciplinary committees' of undergraduates, and 'inter-fraternity councils,'

Digitized by Google

and 'honor systems,' and 'student self-government'? There are already individuals who stand at the head of all; and in more than one institution there is a group, in some places formally organized and recognized, which acts as an executive council. And the system is young!

Finally, there is another element in this young vigorous organism, which the formal institution, and perhaps even the mediæval student guild, lacks. It is the oldest of all appeals to youth — romance. Who has not felt the fascination of the secret societies, whether from within or from without, whether as friend or foe? Who has not felt the thrill of 'coming back in the fall,' to meet the old associates, to live again that ever-changing, ever-delightful life? Who has ever gone away with the team, whether as player or spectator, who has not felt the charm? The invasion of the land of the friendly enemy, the journey, the cheers and crowds, the tournament between 'their' men and 'ours,' the sense of unity in the face of the struggle and the supporters of the other side — how shall the concerns of intellect compete with this? Can lecture and laboratory ever provide such contacts with each other and with concrete realities as this? And is it any wonder that youth loves it?

To this college life the price of admission and continuance is the performance of those intellectual exercises for which colleges and universities exist. Its expenses — greater by far in many instances than the modest demands of the guild of scholars — its members pay in part from their own pockets. As in Bologna, its 'receipts are derived from entrance payments . . . from fines . . . and from the occasional presents of an alumnus'; and though they are not now 'chiefly devoted to convivial and religious purposes,' as they were then, there is ample use for them, indeed for more than undergraduates would be likely to supply from their own resources. But the student guild has hit upon a source of revenue, — the public, — and from the outside world is drawn much of the revenue essential to the continuance of a great part of this system.

And to what end, the cynic inquires? To see men play games like, and not as well as, the professionals on whom they model themselves; to yawn through dreary imitations of the vaudeville stage, and crude, expensive parodies of poor Broadway shows; to groan through ill-composed and vapid glee-club concerts? We see the teams recruited by 'scouts' and too-enthusiastic alumni, to beat a rival, with no regard to the ethics or spirit of amateur sport, and less to the training of the mass of men. We stand aghast at revelations of the incompetence, or worse, of student managers, from whose hands we are compelled to take control of revenue and expenditure.

And why should we put up with it? Why permit men to waste their time and money — and ours — in such follies? Is it the business of the colleges to provide great public spectacles? Is this why we support the 'higher education'? The thing is a sham. The colleges are nothing more than clubs, — city or country, as the case may be, — where idle youths fritter away four years to unfit them for the real business of life. Let us mend it or end it.

Moreover, adds the critic, this comparison with the mediæval student guild is misleading and absurd. There is no argument so fallacious as the argument from analogy — especially a false analogy such as this. It is preposterous fantasy. The mediæval students were serious men, bent on improving their minds. These things are youthful folly organized. It is ridiculous to call them a 'system of education'; and it is worse than ridiculous to dignify these 'social and athletic merry-go-rounds'

Digitized by Google

rt of college work. ch answers are ef- e two reasons why conclusive. They lls of learning from never before, nor evelopment of the ner denial nor de- We lack the word ain into the bottle. pression, not even irements and stif- ough these would ons which pride bers, — will solve call it what you the great issues in . The demand of aduates for train- ded by the faculty : it is legitimate. n not set down in in lectures; and cquirement by it- on for this wicked ow, this part of our perhaps ill done. d us to end it; it

omplished by some d sub-deans and visers and super- ave done and are l more, the earnest ors of many indi- of scholars among orne fruit. Some- omplished by the Year by year the hat take an active erious activities of increased. Some holarships; many vise the studies of men; many more h the faculty in a d slowly, toilsome- s, to the advantage colleges themselves are embarking on a score of activities unknown to older generations, bringing themselves in closer touch, not only with the undergraduates, but with the alumni and with the world outside.

For it is obvious that there are two things which must be done. The one is to infuse into this mass of youthful energy something of judgment and direction more than is natural to youth; to connect this vigorous, undisciplined, loosely organized development with the saner standards and the worthier ends of maturer minds, on the principle of 'old men for counsel and young men for war.' What can be done by closer coöperation is revealed in one institution by the development of a glee club which has achieved distinction in the whole world of music; in another by a school of poetry, and in another of drama, which need not hide their heads even before professionals. The second is the recognition by the undergraduates themselves of the duties and the responsibilities which their system has brought with it. They must direct this movement to better ends than material comfort, or mere pleasure, or mutual admiration, or social distinction, or organization for organization's sake, unless it is to destroy itself. The idea of 'doing something' for this institution or that, though often expressed in futile forms or running to absurdities, points the way to better things than living for one's self or for one's club alone.

In these two things — closer coöperation between the guild of scholars and the guild of students, and acceptance of the obligations of their system by the undergraduates and the alumni — seems to lie the only perceptible basis for the proper development of the future college and university. But there is a third — the recognition of this problem for what it is: an integral part, not only of the situation as it exists, but of the education of our youth in its entirety.

Digitized by Google

A YOKE OF STEERS

BY DUBOSE HEYWARD

A HEAVE of mighty shoulders to the yoke,
Square, patient heads, and flaring sweep of horn;
The darkness swirling down beneath their feet
Where sleeping valleys stir, and feel the dawn;
Uncouth and primal, on and up they sway,
Taking the summit in a drench of day.
The night-winds volley upward bitter-sweet
And the dew shatters to a rainbow spray
Under the slow-moving, cloven feet.

There is a power here that grips the mind;
A force repressed and inarticulate,
Slow as the swing of centuries, as blind
As Destiny, and as deliberate.

They will arrive in their appointed hour
Unhurried by the goad of lesser wills,
Bearing vast burdens on.
They are the great
Unconquerable spirit of these hills.

Digitized by Google

THE ATTAS AT HOME

BY WILLIAM BEEBE

I

ugh white, pasty
our boots by the
ough bitter, cold
out a thinner skim
by flurries of icy
he atmosphere by
a crash; breathing
et, horrible, pene-
was the world as
r one night, while
Douaumont and I
pletely lost, on the
We finally stum-
ed opening through
peered unceasingly
of mud. The mist
vered the cave-like
or a moment the
b-bells rising from
raped our boots on
d went down again
ctuary on earth.
sion that flashed
I began vigil at an
tas — the leaf-cut-
ish Guiana jungle.
glade, about thirty
green growth and
regular expanse of
ative to the height
feet must seem a
from this height I
w again the same
clay of France.
washed gullies, the
to the vast under-
ean-swept, perfect
the arteries of Ver-

dun; flapping dead leaves like the omnipresent, worn-out scarecrows of camouflage. And over in one corner, to complete the simile, were a dozen shell-holes, the homes of voracious ant-lions, which, for passing insects, were unexploded mines, set at hair-trigger.

My Atta city was only two hundred feet away from the laboratory, in fairly high jungle, within sound of the dinner triangle, and of the lapping waves on the Mazaruni shore. To sit near by and concentrate solely upon the doings of these ant-people was as easy as watching a single circus ring of performing elephants, while two more rings, a maze of trapezes, a race-track, and side-shows were in full swing. The jungle around me teemed with interesting happenings and distracting sights and sounds. The very last time I visited the nest, and became absorbed in a line of incoming ants, I heard the shrill squeaking of an angry hummingbird overhead. I looked up, and there, ten feet above, was a furry tamandua ant-eater slowly climbing a straight purple-heart trunk, while round and round his head buzzed and swore the little fury — a pinch of cinnamon feathers, ablaze with rage. The curved claws of the unheeding ant-eater fitted around the trunk, and the strong prehensile tail flattened against the bark, so that the creature seemed to put forth no more exertion than if walking along a fallen log. Now and then it stopped and daintily picked at a bit of termite nest.

Digitized by Google

With such side-shows it was sometimes difficult to concentrate on the Attas. Yet they offer problems for years of study. The glade was a little world in itself, with visitors and tenants, comedy and tragedy, sounds and silences. It was an ant-made glade, with all new growths choked either by upflung, earthen hillocks, or by leaves bitten off as soon as they appeared. The casual visitors were the most conspicuous: an occasional trogon swooping across — a flashing, feathered comet of emerald, azurite, and gold. Or, slowly drifting in and out among the vines, and coming to rest with waving wings, a yellow-and-red-spotted Ithomiid — or was it a Heliconiid or a Danaiid? with such bewildering models and marvelous mimics it was impossible to tell without capture and close examination. Giant purple tarantula-hawks hummed past, scanning the leaves for their prey.

Another class of glade-haunters were those who came strictly on business — plasterers and sculptors, who found wet clay ready to their needs. Great golden and rufous bees blundered down and tore off bucketsful of mud; while slender-bodied, dainty wasps of ebony, after much fastidious picking of place, would detach a tiny bit of the whitest clay, place it in their snuff-box holder, clean their feet and antennæ, run their rapier in and out, and delicately take to wing.

Little black trigonid bees had their special quarry — a small deep valley, in the midst of a waste of interlacing Bad Lands, on the side of a precipitous butte. Here they cut and gouged to their hearts' content, plastering the thighs until their wings would hardly lift them. They braced their feet, whirred, lifted unevenly, and sank back with a jar; then, turning, bit off a piece of ballast, and heaving it over the precipice, swung off on an even keel.

Close examination of some of the craters and volcano-like cones revealed many species of ants, beetles, and roaches searching for bits of food — the scavengers of this small world. But the most interesting were the actual parasites, flies of many colors and sizes, humming past like little planes and Zeppelins over this hidden city, ready to drop a bomb in the form of an egg deposited on the refuse-heaps or on the ants themselves. The explosion might come slowly, but it would be none the less deadly. Once I detected a hint of the complexity of glade life — beautiful metallic green flies walking swiftly about on long legs, searching nervously, whose eggs would be deposited near those of other flies, their larvæ to feed upon the others — parasites upon parasites.

As I had resolutely put the doings of the tree-tops away from my consciousness, so now I forgot visitors and parasites, and armed myself for the excavation of this buried metropolis. I rubbed vaseline on my high boots, and about the tops bound a band of teased-out absorbent cotton. My pick and shovel I treated likewise, and thus I was comparatively insulated; for without precautions no living being could withstand the slow, implacable attack of disturbed Attas. At present I walked unmolested across the glade. The millions beneath my feet were as unconscious of my presence as they were of the breeze in the palm-fronds overhead.

At the first deep shovel-thrust, a slow-moving flood of reddish-brown began to pour forth from the crumbled earth — the outposts of the Atta Maxims moving upward to the attack. For a few seconds only workers of various sizes appeared; then an enormous head heaved upward, and there came into the light of day the first Atta soldier. He was twice the size of a large worker and heavy in proportion. Instead of being drawn up into two spines, the top of his head was rounded, bald, and shiny, and only at the back were the

Digitized by Google

shifted downward. head was thickly n hair, which hung r a round, glistening One by one, and oulder, these Cyclo- ered forth to battle, s were covered in , all sinking their the leather. d these boots this ds and jaws of two attached, relics of y of the preceding ical, vise-like grip, of life or death, is uiana Indians. In extensive wounds, giant Atta Maxims eir jaws applied to n, which are drawn s take hold, their off, and the row of til the wound is

the outpouring sol- ers ran and bit and natever they could nts made their way t found the utmost ring over the loose however, a needle- of my neck showed these shock troops when I was thank- only bite, and not uch a time as this, nce is apparent be- Eciton army ants. with his long curved ift, nervous move- of these great in- Artagnan would be k. The result was however — perfect

and crashed with three feet of soil. arteries of the nest

branched and bifurcated, separated and anastomosed, while here and there were chambers varying in size from a cocoanut to a football. These were filled with what looked like soft grayish sponge covered with whitish mould, and these sombre affairs were the *raison d'être* of all the leaf-cutting, the trails, the struggles through jungles, the constant battling against wind and rain and sun.

But the labors of the Attas are renewed only when a worker disappears down a hole with his hard-earned bit of leaf. He drops it and goes on his way. We do not know what this way is, but my guess is that he turns around and goes after another leaf. Whatever the nests of Attas possess, they are without recreation-rooms. These sluggard-instructors do not know enough to take a vacation; their faces are made for biting, not for laughing or yawning. I once dabbed fifteen Mediums with a touch of white paint as they approached the nest, and within five minutes thirteen of them had emerged and started on the back track again.

The leaf is taken in charge by another Medium, hosts of whom are everywhere. Once, after a spadeful, I placed my eye as close as possible to a small heap of green leaves, and around one oblong bit were five Mediums, each with a considerable amount of chewed and mumbled tissue in front of him. This is the only time I have ever succeeded in finding these ants actually at this work. The leaves are chewed thoroughly, and built up into the sponge gardens, being used neither for thatch, nor for food, but as fertilizer. And not for any strange subterranean berry or kernel or fruit, but for a fungus or mushroom. The spores sprout and proliferate rapidly, the gray mycelia covering the garden; and at the end of each thread is a little knobbed body filled with liquid. This forms the sole food of the

Digitized by Google

ants in the nest; but a drop of honey placed by a busy trail will draw a circle of workers at any time — both Mediums and Minims, who surround it and drink their fill.

When the fungus garden is in full growth, the nest-labors of the Minims begin; and until the knobbed bodies are actually ripe, they never cease to weed and, to prune, killing off the multitude of other fungi and foreign organisms, and, by pruning, to keep their particular fungus growing, and prevent it from fructifying. The fungus of the Attas is a particular species, with the resonant, Dunsanesque name of *Rozites gongylophora*. It is quite unknown outside of the nests of these ants, and is as artificial as a banana.

II

Only in Calcutta bazaars at night, and in underground streets of Peking have I seen stranger beings than I unearthed in my Atta nest. Now and then there rolled out of a shovelful of earth an unbelievably big and rotund cicada larva — which, in the course of time, whether in one or in seventeen years, would emerge as the great marbled, winged *Cicada gigas*, spreading five inches from tip to tip. Small tarantulas, with beautiful wine-colored cephalothorax, made their home deep in the nest, guarded, perhaps, by their dense covering of hair. Slender scorpions sidled out from the ruins; they were bare, with vulnerable joints, but they had the advantage of long, mobile arms, and a pair of hands which could quickly and skillfully pluck an attacking ant from any part of their anatomy.

The strangest of all the tenants were the tiny, amber-colored roaches, which clung frantically to the heads of the great soldier ants, or scurried over the tumultuous mounds, searching for a crevice sanctuary. They were funny, fat little beings, wholly blind, yet supremely conscious of the danger that threatened, and with only the single thought of getting below the surface as quickly as possible. The Attas have very few insect guests, but this cockroach is one who has made himself perfectly at home. Through century upon century he has become more and more specialized and adapted to Atta life, eyes slipping until they are no more than faint specks, legs and antennæ changing, gait becoming altered to whatever speed and carriage best suits little guests in big underground halls and galleries.

He and his race have evolved unseen and unnoticed even by the Maxim policemen. But when nineteen hundred humanly historical years have passed, a man with a keen sense of fitness named him Little Friend of the Attas; and so for a few years more, until we scientists give place to the next caste, Attaphila will, all unconsciously, bear a name.

Attaphilas have staked their whole gamble of existence on the continued possibility of guestship with the Attas. Although they live near the fungus gardens, they do not feed upon them, but gather secretions from the armored skin of the giant soldiers, who apparently do not object, and show no hostility to their diminutive masseurs. A summer-boarder may be quite at home on a farm, and safe from all ordinary dangers; but he must keep out of the way of scythes and sickles, if he chooses to haunt the hayfields. And so Attaphila, snug and safe, deep in the heart of the nest, has to keep on the *qui vive* when the ant-harvesters come to glean in the fungus gardens. Snip, snip, snip, on all sides in the musty darkness, the keen mandibles shear the edible heads; and though the little Attaphilas dodge and run, yet most of them, in course of time, lose part of an antenna, or even a whole one.

Digitized by Google

riend of the Leaf-
hrough his term of
or perhaps even a
ng to fear for food
nemies. But Atta-
e in a single nest,
a crisis, when they
ge world of terrible
of foes. For these
te roaches to find
unaided, would be
e big nest that I ex-
them on the backs
f the large soldiers,
ens, which swarm-
the galleries; and,
queens, seven had
them. This has
Brazilian species,
lize what splendid
insects are. They
or their gamble, —
, — the slenderest
we are almost in-
irresponsible im-
ct, and cheer the
ng up on this for-
e time comes, the
re off up into the
if an earthworm
gle's feathers; past
acious flycatchers
e millionth chance
otable male of the
the mating comes
for a suitable site;
itifully unfair gam-
a single fortunate
aphila climb trem-
cept what fate has
d-nine fellows have
as many ways.
on of these strange
ery few tenants or
f the Attas. Unlike
iton, who harbor a
ers, the leaf-cutters
heir nest free from

Once, far down in the nest, I came upon three young queens, recently emerged, dazed and stupid, with wings dull and glazed, who crawled with awkward haste back into darkness. And again twelve winged females were grouped in one small chamber, restless and confused. This was the only glimpse I ever had of Atta royalty at home.

Good fortune was with me, however, on a memorable fifth of May, when returning from a monkey-hunt in high jungle. As I came out into the edge of a clearing, a low humming attracted my attention. It was ventriloquial, and my ear refused to trace it. It sounded exactly like a great aerodrome far in the distance, with a score or more of planes tuning up. I chanced to see a large bee-like insect rising through the branches, and following back along its path, I suddenly perceived the rarest of sights — an Atta nest-entrance boiling with the excitement of a flight of winged kings and queens. So engrossed were the ants that they paid no attention to me, and I was able to creep up close and kneel within two feet of the hole. The main nest was twenty feet away, and this was a special exit made for the occasion — a triumphal gateway erected far away from the humdrum leaf-traffic.

The two-inch arched hole led obliquely down into darkness, while brilliant sunshine illumined the earthen take-off and the surrounding mass of pink Mazaruni primroses. Up this corridor Atta nobility was coming, slowly, with dignity, as befitted the occasion. The males were more active, as they were smaller in size than the females, but they were veritable giants in comparison with the workers. The queens seemed like beings of another race, with their great bowed thorax supporting the folded wings, heads correspondingly large, with less jaw-development, but greatly increased keenness of vision.

Digitized by Google

In comparison with the Minims, these queens were as a human being one hundred feet in height.

I selected one large queen as she appeared, and watched her closely. Slowly and with great effort she climbed the steep ascent into the blazing sunlight. Five tiny Minims were clinging to her body and wings, all scrubbing and cleaning as hard as they could. She chose a clear space, spread her wings wide and flat, stood high upon her six legs, and waited. I fairly shouted at this change, for slight though it was, it worked magic, and the queen Atta was a queen no more, but a miniature, straddle-legged aeroplane, pushed into position, and overrun by a crowd of mechanics, putting the finishing touches, tightening the wires, oiling every pliable crevice. A Medium came along, tugged at a leg, and the obliging little plane lifted it for inspection. For three minutes this kept up, and then the plane became a queen and moved restlessly. Without warning, as if some irresponsible mechanic had turned the primed propellers, the four mighty wings whirred — and four Minims were hurled head over heels a foot away, snapped from their positions. The sound of the wings was almost too exact an imitation of the snarl of a starting plane — the comparison was absurd in its exactness of timbre and resonance.

It was only a test, however, and the moment the queen became quiet, the upset mechanics clambered back. They crawled beneath her, scraped her feet and antennæ, licked her eyes and jaws, and went over every shred of wing-tissue. Then again she buzzed, this time sending only a single Minim sprawling. Again she stopped, after lifting herself an inch, but immediately started up, and now rose rather unsteadily, but without pause, and slowly ascended above the nest and the primroses. Circling once, she passed through green leaves and glowing balls
the blue sky.

Thus I followed the pa
queen Atta into the jungle
as human eyes would per
mind returned to the mote
detected at an equally gr
the queen descending aft
riage, as isolated as she ha

We have seen how the
roaches occasionally cling
ing queen and so are trans
new nest. But the queen
thing far more valuable.
fully than ever virgin te
fires, each departing quee
pouch in her mouth with
the precious fungus, and h
fully guarded until the tir
its propagation in the ne

When she has descended
excavated a little chambe
the entrance, and for for
nights labors at the found
colony. She plants the
cutting, and tends it with
solicitude. The care and f
past life have stored within
stance for vast numbers o
out of ten that she lays she
her the strength to go on wi
and when the first larvæ
too are fed with surplus e
they pupate, and at the end
the first workers — all tin
hatch. Small as they are,
ness, yet no education is
Spirit of the Attas infuses
and rest are the only thin
hensible to them, and they
at once of fungus, of excav
care of the queen and eggs
of the larvæ. As soon as
Mediums appear, they br
into the upper world, and
first bit of green leaf is
into the nest.

The queen rests. Hence

[1] See *Atlantic* for July, 19

Digitized by Google

as we know, she becomes a mere egg-producing machine, fed mechanically by mechanical workers, the food transformed by physiological mechanics into yolk, and then deposited. The aeroplane has become transformed into an incubator.

III

As we have seen, an Atta worker is a member of the most implacable labor-union in the world; he believes in a twenty-four hour day, no pay, no play, no rest — he is a cog in a machine-driven good-for-the-greatest-number. After studying these beings for a week, one longs to go out and shout for kaisers and tsars, for selfishness and crime — anything as a relief from such terrible unthinking altruism. All Atta workers are born free and equal — which is well; and they remain so — which is what a Buddhist priest once called *gashang* (or so it sounded), and which he explained as a state where plants and animals and men were crystal-like in growth and existence. What a welcome sight it would be to see a Medium mount a bit of twig, antennæ a crowd of Minims about him, and start off on a foray of his own!

We may jeer at or condemn the Attas for their hard-shell existence, but there comes to mind, again and again, the wonder of it all. Are the hosts of little beings really responsible; have they not evolved into a pocket, a mental *cul-de-sac*, a swamping of individuality, pooling their personalities?

And what is it they have gained — what pledge of success in food, in safety, in propagation? They are not separate entities; they have none of the freedom of action, of choice, of individuality, of the solitary wasps. They are the somatic cells of the body politic, while deep within the nest are the guarded sexual cells — the winged kings and queens, which, from time to time, exactly, as in isolated organisms, are thrown off to found new nests. They, no less than the workers, are parts of something more subtle than visible Attas and their material nest. Whether I go to the ant as sluggard, or myrmecologist, or accidentally *via* Pterodactyl Pups, a day spent with them invariably leaves me with my whole being concentrated on this mysterious Atta Ego. Call it Vibration, Aura, Spirit of the Nest, — clothe ignorance in whatever term seems appropriate, — we cannot deny its existence and power.

As with the army ants, the flowing lines of leaf-cutters always brought to mind great arteries, filled with pulsating, tumbling corpuscles. When an obstruction appeared, as a fallen leaf, across the great sandy track, a dozen or twenty, or a hundred workers gathered — like leucocytes — and removed the interfering object. If I injured a worker who was about to enter the nest, I inoculated the Atta organism with a pernicious foreign body. Even the victim himself was dimly aware of the law of fitness. Again and again he yielded to the call of the nest, only to turn aside at the last moment. From a normal link in the endless Atta chain, he had become an outcast !— snapped at by every passing ant, self-banished, wandering off at nightfall, to die somewhere in the wilderness of grass. When well, an Atta has relations, but no friends; when ill, every jaw is against him.

As I write this seated at my laboratory table, by turning down my lamp and looking out, I can see the star-dust of Orion's nebula, and without moving from my chair, Rigel, Sirius, Capella, and Betelgeuze — the blue, white, yellow, and red evolution of so-called lifeless cosmic matter. A few slides from the aquarium at my side reveal an evolutionary sequence to the heavenly host — the simplest of earthly organ-

Digitized by Google

isms playing fast and loose with the borderland, not only of plants and animals, but of the-one and of the many-celled. First, a swimming lily, Stentor, a solitary animal bloom, twenty-five to the inch; Cothurnia, a double lily; and Gonium, with a quartette of cells clinging tremulously together — progressing unsteadily, materially, toward the rim of my field of vision, and, in the evolution of earthly life, toward sponges, peripatus, men, and ants.

I was interrupted in my microcosmus just as it occurred to me that Chesterton would heartily approve of my approximation of Sirius and Stentor, of Capella and Cothurnia — the universe balanced. My attention was drawn from the atom Gonium, whose brave little spirit was striving to keep his foursome one — a primordial struggle toward unity of self and division of labor; my consciousness climbed the microscope tube and came to rest upon a slim glass of amber liquid on my laboratory table. A servant had brou
tail, for it was New Year
the thought came that t
number of worthy people
also approve of this appr
I looked at the small spirit
and I thought of my frie
York, and then of the Atta
the laboratory. With my
I went out into the starligh
the usual hosts strugglin
with their chlorophyll b
rushing frantically out in
jungle for more and yet
My mind swept back ov
from star-dust to Kartabo
from Gonium to man, and
cutting ants. And I wonde
the Attas were any bett
denied the stimulus of te
whether I was any the w
opportunity of refusing a
I went into the house, vo
to tolerance, to temperanc
pterodactyls, and drank m

YELLOW ROSES

BY EMMA LAWRENCE

THEY were talking about an embezzlement, the old story of a trusted employee, who had taken funds so cleverly and systematically for so long that he had come to look upon his peculations as a part of his salary. At last he had been found out. Tina Metcalfe remarked bromidically that people always were found out.

'Do you suppose,' she asked, 'that anyone ever really lived a lie and got away with it — forever, I mean?'

Reggie Forsyth said he k
an who did once — he wou
about it if they liked. The
around the fire, who had ju
would eventually make up
bridge, assured him they di
told them this story.

'It happened a few
Forsyth said, 'and it happ
way from here. The wom
wife of a mill agent in a litt
turing town. Where she c

Digitized by Google

certainly not bred
ne there had ever
ne been in society
eauty would have
her fellow towns-
t her odd, she was
ventional and so
incial. She did as
might have done.
re the little chap
d her, or why she
was a good little
d in his work and
n, delighted with
roken because no
e to it. Ugly little
l quite typical of
ur name when he
ed to meet you,"
ve," just where,
, he should have.
s like a wild bird
set in a border of
well-kept border
expect to find a
She was slender,
peless as a young
n and white, and
wonderfully set.
f reddish hair, —
, — but her lashes

townspeople dis-
y bored her, and
nsisted that they
re her by forcing
ty, she became
e became almost
d her and would
the greatest doc-
; and the doctor
by his diagnosis,
hat nothing ailed
r life did n't suit
t be left freer, to
genial. So after
, free to find the
ded the town, to
The townspeople

thought she was "touched," and were kinder to her than she knew. They ceased to criticize her and made it easy for her to be alone. In the summer-time she would take her book and her lunch-basket and tramp the fields and woods till she found some spot she could love, and spend the days with her dreams and her long, long thoughts. But the evenings belonged to her man; though what they found in common I cannot guess.

'But one day on her walk she had an adventure. She found a field she liked — liked because it was flushed with hardhack and white with meadow-sweet, and inhabited by a man whose type was unknown to her. Any of you would have placed him quickly enough; his riding togs and English boots would have marked him for you — a young blood who had come a cropper among the hardhack and meadow-sweet. But to her he was new; his looks and his clothes and his opening remark to her were all quite different.

'"I've lost my horse," he said genially. She looked curious, which apparently encouraged him. "I don't mind," he said. "He was a horrid horse." She looked about her. "You won't see him," said the man; "he could run most awfully fast."

'It occurred to her that he had fallen off. "Are you hurt?" she asked.

'"Thanks, not a bit. This is a jolly field, is n't it?"

'"I like it," she said.

'"Blueberry-picking?" he suggested, looking at her basket.

'She shook her head. "No, just lunch."

'"Picnicking! By Jove, what luck. Falling makes one so frightfully hungry, you know."

'She did n't know, but she believed him and invited him to share her meal. They found a shady place, and in the course of time discovered many things

Digitized by Google

about each other. He was staying at a country house with people she knew by sight — knew their traps and their grooms when she saw them outside shops in the town; knew what the town people had chosen to tell of them and of their ways. He discovered more about her. And he found her book.

'"Masefield, *Daffodil Fields*," he said; "do they read that — in the town?"

'"No," she said, "I read it — in the woods."

'"Oh, no, you don't; I read it to you."

'So he began and read for a while; and he read delightfully, for he had a pleasant voice and he loved what he read. But by and by he put down the book and they talked for a while, of books and of themselves again. It was a wonderful day for her — a surprise to find the things she cared for were loved by others, and that she was not really "odd" at all. By and by it was time to go home, before her man should come from his work. But they made plans for the morrow, or, should the morrow not be fine, for the day after.

'It happened they were in for a spell of fair weather, and they spent long hours together in the fields and in the woods. They read books together, and he told her of cities and of life in the cities, and of people he knew, people who would not have bored her and made her ill. He told her of music, and art and architecture, and stories of hunting and balls and dinner-parties, and about the women who hunted and danced and dined. But of her about herself — how lo and how lovable. They we in love before long, and a curious courage in her d that, having missed so muc not pass her by.

'So they lived to the utn the fair weather lasted. T he met her, he brought her from the garden of his hos

'"I searched the gard her, "to find what flower This is it."

'So every day she wore tucked in her gown.

'At last the weather b went back to the city, longer could roam the field She drooped like a flowe wet autumn, confined to t though nothing ever ail much, she died before th half through!

'Her husband was be with grief, and the neighb bored her came and looked she was dead. Her husba her hands with yellow ros

'"She loved them so," friends; "all summer lo them in her dress."'

'So that,' said Reggie the story of a woman wh yet no one ever knew.'

'Yet you knew,' said T quickly — and wished sh out her tongue before she

Digitized by Google

MYSTIC'S EXPERIENCE OF GOD

BY RUFUS M. JONES

I

sticism, which has worthy features in our time, has pre- nber of interesting ions. We want to t mysticism really t to know whether n abnormal expe- many other ques- ait their turn, we er mystical expe- rge our sphere of whether they are of authentic in- ritative truth con- ch lie beyond the es.

first question ap- t to accomplish as was. The secret is ok. One can mar- ray of definitions, challenge one an- sprung from the he purposes of the , we can eliminate ed under psychical the phenomena of trances, hysteria soteric and occult ears ago Professor Father's house are their furniture is Astral bodies and nd mental heal- from the dead and e living" — such people to-day the sole quite unmistakable evidence of the supremacy of the spiritual world.' These phenomena are worthy of careful, painstaking study and attention, for they will eventually throw much light upon the deep and complex nature of human personality — are, in fact, already throwing much light upon it. But they furnish us slender data for understanding what is properly meant by mystical experience and its religious and spiritual bearing.

We can, too, leave on one side the metaphysical doctrines that fill a large amount of space in the books of the great mystics. These doctrines had a long historical development, and they would have taken essentially the same form if the exponents of them had not been mystics. Mystical experience is confined to no one form of philosophy, though some ways of thinking no doubt favor and other ways retard the experience, as they also often do in the case of religious faith in general. Mystical experience, furthermore, must not be confused with what technical expert writers call 'the mystic way.' There are as many mystical 'ways' as there are gates to the New Jerusalem. 'On the east three gates, on the north three gates, on the south three gates, and on the west three gates.' One might as well try to describe the way of making love, or the way of appreciating the Grand Cañon, as to describe the way to the discovery of God, as if there were only one way.

Digitized by Google

I am not interested in mysticism as an *ism*. It turns out, in most accounts, to be a dry and abstract thing, hardly more like the warm and intimate experience than the color of the map is like the country for which it stands. 'Canada is very pink,' seems quite an inadequate description of the noble country north of our border. It is mystical experience, and not mysticism, that is worthy of our study. We are concerned with the experience itself, not with second-hand formulations of it. 'The mystic,' says Professor Royce, 'is a thoroughgoing empiricist.' 'God ceases to be an object and becomes an experience,' says Professor Pringle-Pattison. If it *is* an experience, we want to find out what happens to the mystic himself inside where he lives.

According to those who have been there, the experience that we call mystical is charged with the conviction of real, direct contact and commerce with God. It is the almost universal testimony of those who are mystics that they find God through their experience. John Tauler says that, in his best moments of 'devout prayer and the uplifting of the mind to God,' he experiences 'the pure presence of God' in his own soul; but he adds that all he can tell others about the experience is 'as poor and unlike it as the point of a needle is to the heavens above us.' 'I have met with my God; I have met with my Saviour. I have felt the healings drop upon my soul from under his wings,' says Isaac Penington, in the joy of his first mystical experience.

Without needlessly multiplying such testimonies for data, we can say with considerable assurance that mystical experience is consciousness of direct and immediate relationship with some transcendent reality which, in the moment of experience, is believed to be God. 'This is He, this is He,' exclaims Isaac Penington; 'there is no other. This is He whom I have waited for after from my childhood.' Foligno says that she experi and saw that the whole worl God.

II

There are many different intensity, concentration, a tion in the experiences of dif vidual mystics, and also in experiences of the same indi time to time. There has b dency in most studies of m regard the state of ecstasy a *lence* mystical experience. T ever, a grave mistake. The c meditative, less emotional, l experiences of God are not l ing and possess greater c value for life and charact ecstatic experiences which p peculiar psychical frame a tion. The seasoned Qual corporate hush and stillnes meeting, is far removed fr but he is not the less convin is meeting with God. For of mysticism we do not ne upon a certain 'sacred' my upon ecstasy, or upon any p of rare psychic upheavals. to insist, however, upon a co of commerce with God an conviction of his Presence.

> Where one heard noise
> And one saw flame,
> I only knew He named m

Jacob Boehme calls the that came to him, 'breaki the gate' into 'a new birth tion from the dead'; so that knew God.' 'I am certain, hart, 'as certain as that I nothing is so near to me as G nearer to me than I am to m of these experiences — the was an ecstasy, and the oth we can tell, was not. It wa

Digitized by Google

of God-conscious-
aching a sermon to
e of Cologne. The
gton, again, was not
the vital surge of
occasion of hearing
after a long period
simple normal case
en in a little book of
d from the *Atlantic*
ng time of jangling
misery, I one day,
no conscious effort,
singenuous thing [I
hen the marvel hap-
great rubber band,
tched almost to the
e suddenly released
o its normal condi-
arth were changed
g was glorious be-
to some great cen-
seemed to matter

e, a barefooted lay
teenth century, ac-
hony of the brother-
nbroken and undis-
Presence of God.'
tic; he was a quiet,
d his ordinary daily
emed to his friends
on, an illuminated
rupted joy.' Simple
he was, he never-
ough his experience
dinary spaciousness

expansive mystical
pparently when the
ts best. Its powers
aised to an unusual
gether. The whole
mulated submerged
e process of prepar-
ievement is a severe
but nothing seems
t of success than is

the accomplishment for which the life has been prepared. There comes to be formed within the person what Aristotle called 'a dexterity of soul,' so that the person does with ease what he has become skilled to do. Clement of Alexandria called a fully organized and spiritualized person 'a harmonized man' — that is, adjusted, organized, and ready to be a transmissive organ for the revelation of God. Brother Lawrence, who was thus 'harmonized,' finely says: 'The most excellent method which I found of going to God was that of *doing my common business* purely for the love of God.' An earlier mystic of the fourteenth century stated the same principle in these words: 'It is my aim to be to the Eternal God what a man's hand is to a man.'

There are many human experiences which carry a man up to levels where he has not usually been before, and where he finds himself possessed of insight and energies that he had hardly suspected were his until that moment. One leaps to his full height when the right inner spring is reached. We are quite familiar with the way in which instinctive tendencies in us, and emotions both egoistic and social, become organized under a group of ideas and ideals into a single system, which we call a sentiment, such as love, or patriotism, or devotion to truth. It forms slowly, and one hardly realizes that it has formed until some occasion unexpectedly brings it into full operation, and we find ourselves able with perfect ease to overcome the most powerful inhibitory and opposing instincts and habits, which, until then, had usually controlled us. We are familiar, too, with the way in which a well-trained and disciplined mind, confronted by a concrete situation, will sometimes, — alas, not always, — in a sudden flash of imaginative insight, discover a universal law revealed there and then in

Digitized by Google

the single phenomenon, as Sir Isaac Newton did, and as, in a no less striking way, Sir William Rowan Hamilton did in his discovery of Quaternions. Literary and artistic geniuses supply us with many instances in which, in a sudden flash, the crude material at hand is shot through with vision, and the complicated plot of a drama, the full significance of a character, or the complete glory of a statue stands revealed, as if, to use R. L. Stephenson's illustration, a *geni* had brought it on a golden tray as a gift from another world. Abraham Lincoln, striking off in a few intense minutes his Gettysburg address, as beautiful in style and perfect in form as anything in human literature, is as good an illustration as we need of the way in which a highly organized person, by a kindling flash, has at his hand all the moral and spiritual gains of a lifetime.

There is a famous account of the flash of inspiration, given by Philo, which can hardly be improved. It is as follows: —

> I am not ashamed to recount my own experience. At times, when I have proposed to enter upon my wonted task of writing on philosophical doctrines, with an exact knowledge of the materials which were to be put together, I have had to leave off without any work accomplished, finding my mind barren and fruitless, and upbraiding it for its self-complacency, while startled at the might of the Existent One, in whose power it lies to open and close the wombs of the soul. But at other times, when I had come empty, all of a sudden I have been filled with thoughts, showered down and sown upon me unseen from above, so that by Divine possession I have fallen into a rapture and become ignorant of everything, the place, those present, myself, what was spoken or written. For I have received a stream of interpretation, a fruition of light, the most clear-cut sharpness of vision, the most vividly distinct view of the matter before me, such as might be received through the eyes from the most luminous presentation.

The most important mystica
riences are something like that
occur usually, not at the begin
the religious life, but rather in
and developed stage of it. They
fruit of long-maturing processes.
ent's 'harmonized man' is alway
son who has brought his so
parallelism with divine curren
habitually practised his religi
sights, and has finally formed a
central self, subtly sensitive,
responsive to the Beyond with
In such experiences, which ma
suddenly or may come as a mor
ual process, the whole self opera
masses all the cumulations of a l
They are no more emotional tha
are rational and volitional. We
total personality, awake, activ
'aware of his life's flow.' Instead
ing in a flash a law of gravita
the plot and character of *Hamlet*
uncarven form of Moses the La
in a block of marble, one sees
times the moral demonstration
lifetime and vividly feels the i
tions that are essentially involv
spiritual life. In the high mome
is seen to be as sure as the soul

> I stood at Naples once, a night so dark
> I could have scarce conjectured there w
> Anywhere, sky or sea or world at all:
> But the night's black was burst throu
> blaze —
> Thunder struck blow on blow, earth gro
> bore,
> Through her whole length of mountain
> There lay the city thick and plain with
> And, like a ghost disshrouded, white the
> So may a truth be flashed out by one b

To some the truth of God neve
closer than a logical conclusion.
held to be as a living item in a
To the mystic He becomes real
same sense that experienced be
real, or the feel of spring is real,
mer sunlight is real: He has been
He has been met, He is present.

Before discussing the crucia

Digitized by Google

se experiences are evi-
orthy of consideration
o the world's stock of
edge, I must say a few
normality or abnormal-
thing of any value can
oint of mystical expe-
stract. One must first
te case. Some instan-
nd some are undoubt-
Trance, ecstasy, and
sual experiences, and,
t normal occurrences.
dicate, furthermore, a
dition of personality,
ormal in the more tech-
ere is, however, some-
said on this point. It
l established that some
hey have often been
and religious geniuses
ed in organizing their
their trail, in charging
onality with power, in
l dynamic, and in tap-
irs of energy by means
if occurring in other
o doubt be called path-
al test here is a prag-
eems hardly sound to
ormal if it has raised
as a mystic experience
a hundred-horsepower
s influence has turned
ther men and women
, hopeful, and efficient
uestion of abnormality
us not one to be settled
perficial diagnosis.
which brings spacious-
w interior dimensions,
l the universe,— and
it,— and capacity to
asks with patience, en-
dom may quite intelli-
normal, though to an
r it may look like what
a trance of hysteria, a
ation, or hypnosis by
auto-suggestion. It should be added, however, as I have already said, that mystical experience is not confined to these extremer types. They may or may not be pathological. The calmer and more restrained stages of mysticism are more important and significant, and are no more marked with the stigma of hysteria than is love-making, enjoyment of music, devotion to altruistic causes, risking one's life for one's country, or any lofty experience of *value.*

III

We come at length to the central question of our consideration: Do mystical experiences settle anything? Are they purely subjective and one-sided, or do they prove to have objective reference and so to be two-sided? Do they take the experient across the chasm that separates 'self' from 'other'? Mystical experience undoubtedly feels as if it had objective reference. It comes to the individual with indubitable authority. He is certain that he has found something other than himself. He has an unescapable conviction that he is in contact and commerce with reality beyond the margins of his personal self. 'A tremendous muchness is suddenly revealed,' as William James once put it.

We do not get very far when we undertake to reduce knowledge to an affair of sense-experience. 'They reckon ill who leave me out,' can be said by the organized, personal, creative mind as truly as by Brahma. There are many forms of human experience in which the data of the senses are so vastly transcended that they fail to furnish any real explanation of what occurs in consciousness. This is true of all our experiences of *value,* which apparently spring out of synthetic or synoptic activities of the mind, that is, activities in which the mind is unified and creative. The vibrations of ether that bombard the rods

Digitized by Google

and cones of the retina may be the occasion for the appreciation of beauty in sky or sea or flower, but they are surely not the *cause* of it. The concrete event which confronts me is, very likely, the occasion for the august pronouncement of moral issues which my conscience makes; but it cannot be said that the concrete event in any proper sense *causes* this consciousness of moral obligation. The famous answer of Leibnitz to the crude sense-philosophy of his time is still cogent. To the phrase, 'There is nothing in the mind that has not come through the senses,' Leibnitz added, 'Except the mind itself.' That means that the creative activity of the mind is always an important factor in experience, and a factor that cannot be ignored in any of the processes of knowledge.

Unfortunately, we have done very little yet in the direction of comprehending the interior depth of the personal mind, or of estimating adequately the part which mind itself, in its creative capacity, plays in all knowledge-functions. It will be only when we have succeeded in getting beyond what Plato called the 'bird-cage' theory of knowledge, to a sound theory of knowledge and to a solid basis for spiritual values, that we shall be able to discuss intelligently the 'findings' of the mystic.

The world at the present moment is pitiably 'short' in its stock of sound theories of knowledge. The prevailing psychologies do not explain knowledge at all. The behaviorists do not try to explain it, any more than the astronomer or the physicist does. The psychologist who reduces mind to an aggregation of describable 'mind-states' has started out on a course that makes an explanation forever impossible, since knowledge can be explained only through unity and integral wholeness, never through an aggregation of parts, as if it were a mental 'shower of shot.'

If we expect to talk about *kn*
and seriously propose to use th
word *truth*, we must at least be
the assumption of an intelliger
tive, organizing centre of self-co
ness, which can transcend itself
know what is beyond, and oth
itself. In short, the talk about a
between subject and object —
and thing known — is as absu
would be to talk of a chasm
the convex and the concave si
curve. Knowledge is always kn
of an object, and mystical ex
has all the essential marks of o
reference, as certainly as other
experience have.

Professor J. M. Baldwin ve
says that there is a form of con
tion in which, as in æsthetic exp
the strands of the mind's divergi
isms are '*merged and fused*.' H
'In this experience of a fusion
not a mixture, but which issu
meaning of its own sort and k
experience whose essential char
just this unity of comprehensio
sciousness attains its complet
most direct, and its final appre
of what Reality is and means.'
comes round to the question
the mind of a self-conscious per
any way of approach, except
of the senses, to any kind of
There is no *a priori* answer
question. It can be settled only
perience. It is, therefore, pure
tism to say, as Professor Dunla
recent attack on mysticism doe
all conscious processes are ba
sense-stimulation, and all thou
well as perception depends on r
to sense-stimulus. It is no dou
that behavior psychology must
to some such formula; but tha
means that such psychology is
dealing with greatly transform
reduced beings, when it atten
deal with persons like us, who,

Digitized by Google

oncrete lives, are never
avior-beings.' We have
ons, and 'that is the end
rsons — and they are by
-minded individuals —
hat they have contact
ithin, as they are that
iences of a world out-
Thomas Aquinas, who
d nor in doctrine leaned
m, though he was most
nonized man,' and who
oned the vision of God
nd death, nevertheless
ce two years before he
e him put his pen and
shelf and never write
his *Summa Theologiæ*.
eminded of the incom-
s great work, and was
with it, he replied, 'I
which makes all that I
k small to me.'
possible that there is a
tual reality upon which
open inward as inlets
a.

e crescent sea-beach
is new and thin,
high yearnings
nd surging in —
t mystic ocean
oot has trod —
nging,
it God.

erfectly sane and ten-
s with no proved and
cts in the nature either
or of mind. It seems,
the mystic that there
that he has found it as
ous found San Salvador,
erience is a truth-telling

that it is truth-telling
e reference, is the mys-
claiming that he has
s God? One does not
ry wide and extensive

student of mystical experience to discover what a meagre stock of knowledge the genuine mystic reports. William James's remarkable experience in the Adirondack woods very well illustrates the type. It had, he says, 'an intense significance of some sort, if one could only *tell* the significance. . . . In point of fact, I can't find a single word for all that significance and don't know what it was significant of, so that it remains a mere boulder of impression.' At a later date James refers to that 'extraordinary vivacity of man's psychological commerce with something ideal that *feels as if* it were also actual.' The greatest of all the fourteenth-century mystics, Meister Eckhart, could not put his *impression* into words or ideas. What he found was a 'wilderness of the Godhead where no one is at home' — that is, an Object with no particular, differentiated, concrete characteristics. It was not an accident that so many of the mystics hit upon the *via negativa*, the way of negation, or that they called their discovery 'the divine Dark.'

> Whatever your mind comes at,
> I tell you flat,
> God is not that.

Mystical experience does not supply concrete information. It does not bring new finite facts, new items that can be used in a description of 'the scenery and circumstance' of the realm beyond our sense-horizons. It is the awareness of a Presence, the consciousness of a Beyond, the discovery, as James put it, that ' we are continuous with a More of the same quality, which is operative in us and in touch with us.'

The most striking effect of such experience is not new fact-knowledge, not new items of empirical information, but new moral energy, heightened conviction, increased caloric quality, enlarged spiritual vision, an unusual radiant power of life. In short, the whole personality, in the case of the constructive

Digitized by Google

mystics, appears to be raised to a new level of life, and to have gained from somewhere many calories of life-feeding, spiritual substance. We are quite familiar with the way in which adrenalin suddenly flushes into the physical system and adds a new and incalculable power to brain and muscle. Under its stimulus a man can carry out a piano when the house is on fire. May not, perhaps, some energy, from some Source with which our spirits are allied, flush our inner being with forces and powers by which we can be fortified to stand the universe and more than stand it! 'We are more than conquerors through Him that loved us,' is the way one of the world's greatest mystics felt.

Mystical experience — and we must remember, as Santayana has said, that 'experience is like a shrapnel shell and bursts into a thousand meanings' — does at least one thing. It makes God sure to the person who has had the experience. It raises faith and conviction to the *n*th power. 'The God who said, "Let light shine out of darkness," has shined into my heart to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God,' is St. Paul's testimony. 'I knew God by revelation,' declares George Fox; 'I was as one who hath the key and doth open.' 'The man who has attained this felicity,' Plotinus says, 'meets some turn of fortune that he would not have chosen, but there is not the slightest lessening of his happiness for that.' But this experience, with its overwhelming conviction and its dynamic effect, cannot be put into the common coin of speech. Frederic Myers has well expressed the difficulty: —

> Oh could I tell, ye surely would believe it!
> Oh could I only say what I have seen!
> How should I tell or how can ye receive it,
> How, till He bringeth you where I have been?

When Columbus found San Salvador, he was able to describe it to those who did not sail with him in the Santa Maria; but when the mystic finds God, he c give us any 'knowledge' in plain of everyday speech. He can only to his boulder, or his Gibraltar, *pression*. That situation is wh should expect. We cannot, eithe scribe any of our great emotions cannot impart what flushes int consciousness in moments of lofty tion. We have a submerged life us, which is certainly no less rea our hand or foot. It influences a we do or say, but we do not find i to utter it. In the presence of th lime we have nothing to say — or do say anything, it is a great mi Language is forged to deal with e ences that are common to man sons, that is, with experiences tha to objects in space. We have no ulary for the subtle, elusive flas vision, which are unique, indiv and unsharable, as, for instance, personal sense of 'the tender gr a day that is dead.' We are for all these matters to resort to sy suggestion and to artistic d Coventry Patmore said with mu sight: —

> In divinity and love
> What 's worth the saying can't be sa

I believe that mystical exper do, in the long run, expand our k edge of God, and do succeed in ing themselves. Mysticism is a s spiritual protoplasm, which und as a basic substance, much that i in religion, in ethics, and in life It has generally been the myst prophet, the seer, who has spott new ways forward in the jungle world, or lifted our race to new sp levels. Their experiences have in way equipped them for unusual have given supplies of energy to which their neighbors did not hav have apparently brought them vital correspondence with dime and regions of reality that others

Digitized by Google

y have found God, of spiritual reality, new stock of knowl- nostic secret, which is to be seen rather iritual fruits which the experience. beauty or of truth s analysis as much God does. These bjective standing- psychology. They he world of space. adequate causal ex- ve their ground of kind of world than ical order, a world titative masses of These experiences of real for experience make very clear the depths and capaci- the normal human t usually recognize, ve scant and imper- ur textbooks. Our r full range, in other ort of contact and n eternal nature of an atoms and mole- wly and gradually ned, through finite ral forms, to inter- uth and goodness, nce, are as ineffable as is the mystic's Plato often speaks ments of experience ne naked vision of lone, separate and and his myths are , as J. A. Stewart thers to experience a beauty that 'does not grow nor perish, is without increase or diminution and endures for everlasting.' But, as a matter of fact, however exalted heavenly and enduring beauty may be in its essence, we know *what it is* only as it appears in fair forms of objects, of body, of soul, of actions; in harmonious blending of sounds or colors; in well-ordered or happily combined groupings of many aspects in one unity, which is as it ought to be. Truth and moral goodness always transcend our attainments, and we sometimes feel that the very end and goal of life is the pursuit of that truth or that goodness which eye hath not seen nor ear heard. But whatever truth we do attain, or whatever goodness we do achieve, is always concrete. Truth is just this one more added fact that resists all attempt to doubt it. Goodness is just this simple everyday deed that reveals a heroic spirit and a brave venture of faith in the midst of difficulties.

So, too, the mystic knowledge of God is not some esoteric communication, supplied through trance or ecstasy; it is an intuitive personal touch with God, felt to be the essentially real, the bursting forth of an intense love for Him, which heightens all the capacities and activities of life, followed by the slow laboratory effects which verify it. 'All I could never be' now *is*. It seems possible to stand the universe — even to do something toward the transformation of it. The bans get read for that most difficult of all marriages, the marriage of the possible with the actual, the ideal with the real. And if the experience does not prove that the soul has found God, it at least does this: it makes the soul feel that proofs of God are wholly unnecessary.

Digitized by Google

MEDITATIONS OF A BACHELOR

BY EDWARD CARRINGTON VENABLE

It is printed on some page of a now forgotten volume: —

'The cry of "The Christian to the Lions!" resounded everywhere through the dark streets.'

The page was probably describing the reign of the Emperor Nero, and was possibly written by Sienkiewicz, though that is no matter here.

The little boy who read it, and went to bed immediately afterward, lay alone for a long time — or at least what seemed a long time — in a perfectly dark bedroom, hearing that terrible cry. It came to him in a dozen forms, but each distinctly articulate. There was a large clock below, at the stairs' foot, which ticked it; somewhere in the fields outside a cow bellowed it defiantly into the dark universe; a lonely whip-poor-will down by the river somewhere lamented it with equal intervals.

It was the very worst night of that little boy's life. Never afterward was he quite so frightened. He believed, a trifle arrogantly, may be, that he was a Christian, and, of course, he was sure of lions. To these facts, add that unnamable quality which the dark possesses, even for an animal, and you have by the simplest reasoning a truly terrifying situation. For it is a terrifying situation to be alone in the dark, a very small Christian, and hear a horde of barbarians shrieking for your life. It is terrifying, and it is childish, and it is as impeccably reasonable as arithmetic.

Of course, to the adult mind that last quality, the rationality, is not self-evident; but that is because the adult mind cannot recapture firm faith i orthodoxy or shed its acquir edge of the scarcity of lions. ing these two feats as acco certainly the perfect reasona that terror is undeniable. afraid of being thrown to the knows that he is defenselessl such a fate and that there is and immediate supply of lio small boy was not, as his eld have assured him, groundless ed. He was ignorant, very, an things — of zoölogy, of the customs of theological disput was not in the least irratic fright was childish, but it w any correct sense unreasonab

That so simple a conclusio any demonstration shows the the evil — this confounding reasonable with the childish. terms have become positive synonymous. The two adjec out in any casual talk like the rels of a shot-gun. It would accurate, however, to say are in antithesis. For exampl question is rather whether any reasonable fears, excep fears. It is this that gives t unequaled poignancy. They the imagination, but the ve reason itself. They cannot away, because they have all ments on their side. Not Soc self that night could have reas little boy into serenity. He alarmed at the horrible possi his merciless logic, until e

Digitized by Google

f probability to his
– a faultlessly logi-
the result was ab-
t was the defect of
vas helpless in that
acquire only what
im. Beyond that
of his method — a
only children and

een these two class-
between children
ich has become the
servations, is, in-
of chance. It is as
ovious. Each con-
telligible universe,
ed to explain, at-
to order by the
n. The central ef-
ner is precisely the
he child becomes a
quires experience,
hy, superstitions,
complishes his few
losopher commits
l age, according to
convictions. As
a child who has
pher is a child who
ne Pauline admoni-
ay childish things
– not, at least, in
ildish of all things.
ost obvious of ob-
pe of philosopher
and carries about
eart of a child has
in the most popu-
ge that the equal-
on, the philosophy
ed an equally gen-
haps the explana-
have so recently

who has ever en-
less rationalism of
s failed to mark it.
dant of that small

boy with the lions, then grown to thirty years and more, had such an experience. It was terrifying; but how absurd, how beyond all reasonable explanation appears this adult terror — occurring, too, not in the darkness of a lonely bedroom, but in the mild afternoon light of a nursery — by comparison with that earlier one.

It was exactly mid-afternoon in May that he, a grown-up Christian now, was thrown into the arena of his grown-up fear, a nursery, to three little lions seated about a sort of Gulliver's Travels table before a window. The mother of these lions stood in the doorway. The poor Christian stood in the middle of the floor being looked at, not at all angrily, only thoroughly. The mother of the lions looked anxiously at the group about the table. Then she turned a tranquil glance for an instant to the Christian. So, exactly, might some Imperial Roman, lolling on velvet-covered marble, have glanced down at the terrible sands. And just as that one might, for a brief instant of bored indecision, have looked at his thumb before deciding 'up' or 'down,' so she glanced at her wrist with its tiny watch.

'I shall be back,' she said evenly, 'about six.'

It was then about five. So it was distinctly, 'Thumbs down.'

Then she went out, closing the door behind her — chaining it possibly. And the lions sat implacable.

When, at a little before six, — she was not so heartless as she appeared, — the door was unbarred, it was a truly exhausted man who was released. He was exhausted because no adult can live in the rarefied air of pure truth, purged of every uncertainty that interrogation can detect, for that length of time without exhaustion. He, like an air-pilot at altitude, must get down for a few lungfulls of earth-contaminated

Digitized by Google

atmosphere, or die. Only children and philosophers can do otherwise.

Yet this man's ordeal had been a light one. He had been set three tasks. First, he had been asked to sing. He could n't sing; but then, neither could the children. He had been taught the fact by experience. Innocent of experience, their ecstasy during ten repetitions of 'My Country, 't is of Thee' was exquisite. His mortification was unnecessary, unreasonable, and painful.

Failing completely to explain his lack of voice, he was asked to tell a story. Now it happened, that whatever self-respect he had he had won for himself by the belief that he could tell stories and by the stories he had told. In fact, he was a story-teller by trade. It might be well to explain that the situation as it stood then was caused by the mother of the lions, who was his hostess for that week-end and rather at a loss to dispose of him, suggesting, —

'I have to meet Elizabeth on the 5.35. Why don't you go up and tell the children stories. I am sure you would tell such wonderful ones.'

He remembered later that he had thought he would — would, that is, tell wonderful ones. He even had a remnant of such confidence after the failure of 'My Country, 't is of Thee.'

So he started off gallantly at the command, 'Tell us a story,' with 'Well, once upon a time —'

In three sentences he had lost his audience. In ten he had disgusted them. They were, on the whole, polite about it, though not obscurely circuitous. They merely said, —

'We're going to play Alps.'

Fortunately they let him be the mountain. He possessed superior qualifications for that rôle.

So he lay for the better part of an hour covered by a white table-cloth, and was an Alp, while disregarding feet trampled on his diminished head. In that way, at the last, he ach
cess of a sort. But to be o
tain in a nursery is not
experience.

When at last he lifted a
table-cloth and peered ou
turned hostess, all vanity h
that man. There was an an
bolism about his attitude o
He had been brought low
less logic that seemed to st
mene' upon his forehead.
tested, soul and body, and
body. He had been subje
dreadful and merciless ar
many of whose celebrated
have justly suffered death
of outraged humanity, —
judgment which, taking no
the nobler, though abortive
mankind, their capacity fo
dauntless aspiration, their
and sympathy, the myste
imagination, will accept o
cash of Reason.

'Well, how did you like i
hostess as they went down

If he had answered fran
lence of his feeling, of his
ment, would possibly have
the length of the flight of
is the way her children wou
swered her.

He managed to preserve
of truth, however, by repl
was one of the most instru
noons of his life.

It was a just answer.
tion has confirmed it. A
assailants were unconscio
acts. Like himself thirty y
they were the victims of th
And that method was the o
knew. Strip any human so
perience, of the sympathy
by suffering, of the aspi
springs only from watchin
ings of others, of the humili
failure can teach — what

Digitized by Google

rue, the infants were
terribly they were
s free from the prej-
nce, unsoftened by
with mechanical ac-
the qualifications of
t of a human soul.
lenied that, the more
e especially one has
rately one reasons.
titude of the child's
ts his elders, it is its
nfant terrible is ter-
of his accuracy, of
is perfect unconcern
t truth. Surely, to
spent in such com-
ructive, is not to ex-
of even their rigid

er was not daunted.
ner.

'Yes,' she agreed as her feet touched the bottom step. 'Are n't they fascinating?'

That was the fatal step too far, the famous little bit of the too-much. There is the story of the man who developed feliphobia fainting at the sound of a purr, or the touch of fur, and explained his aversion on the grounds that 'cats can *only* reason.' There is a difference between an association that is instructive and one that fascinates.

'I love to watch their little minds grow,' she finished happily.

The remark, somehow, instantly called up a picture of this most delightful gentle human being, spending her life gloating over the gradual and inevitable deterioration of her offspring — like some distraught marksman enthusiastically calculating the increasing error of his rifle.

COURTSHIP AFTER MARRIAGE

ead with pious mis-
narchism, by Emma
ined — as I expected
objectionable, wild,
t it also contained
ing observations and
deeply impressed by
er on marriage, in
rotested against the
er modern social and
ns in the United
in New England,
are denied the nat-
herhood. A painful
of the many thou-
ed, atrophied wom-
out their lives un-
ed of their rightful

Statistics show that one out of every twelve women remains unmarried between the years of forty-five and sixty-four; one out of ten between thirty-five and forty-four; and one out of five between twenty-five and thirty-four. Among the men, one out of ten remains unmarried between the ages of forty-five and sixty-four; one out of six between thirty-five and forty-four; and one out of every three between twenty-five and thirty-four. Something must be decidedly wrong with our civilization, to permit such a state of affairs.

It is evident that this extraordinary problem concerns the unmarried man quite as much as the unmarried woman. The man who has never known the dignity, the responsibilities, and the deep

Digitized by Google

satisfaction of fatherhood is also an atrophied, abnormal member of society. As an unreconciled bachelor, I have wrestled hard with the problem and have reached certain conclusions, which, I fear, are regarded by some of my friends as most heretical.

I recognize, of course, that economic conditions are partly responsible for this abnormal situation; but I believe that this difficulty could be surmounted without much trouble if it were not for other much more serious influences. The necessity of earning a living, in order to care for dependents; the struggle to acquire an education in law and medicine, as well as in other professions — all this often compels a lamentable delay, or an indefinite postponement, of marriage. This delay is itself frequently tragic in the strain of inhibitions and the consequent ills it imposes on both sexes, at the time when Nature is calling imperatively for her unquestioned rights.

But I am thinking primarily of those who never marry, who bravely put up a cheerful front, but whose hearts are never free from a sense of irremediable loss. I am thinking of those who cannot stand this strain, and who collapse, either mentally or morally. Economic reasons may in some cases absolutely preclude marriage; but I believe that other causes are of much greater weight.

First of all, I accuse the spirit of Puritanism for having fostered a false attitude toward the sex-instinct. Many a boy and girl brought up in a Puritan environment have come to regard the first attractions of sex as something utterly unholy. They have resisted these inclinations and brooded morbidly over them, until they have felt damned beyond redemption. They have turned to ascetic discipline and severe torments of the soul, until their outlook has become badly distorted, even at times to the extreme of insanity.

These unhappy victims o
ism have been prevented fr
ing that Nature is only askin
that she rejoices in the instin
lations of sex; that adolesc
natural as breathing, and m
too long ignored.

Among simple primitive
have mercifully been spared
shadow of Puritanism on the
tions, the process of matin
reproduction is rightly regar
ture's richest gift. They do
Nature by pleading for a del
guilty when obeying the imp
mands of mature adolescenc
that matter, even our Puritan
were in this respect more n
more moral than is the case
favoring early marriages an
coming the rather abundan
of such unions.

Puritanism, in its peculiar
of moral purity and its gloomy
to marriage, has created a
mosphere in which it is e
difficult for men and wome
naturally. There is a restra
prudery that render courtsh
or illicit love easy. Desperat
are necessary under such c
Severe admonitions or cruel j
kill budding affections or p
acts not infrequently unfo
their consequences.

And this preposterous att
after marriage, when many
mother finds herself conden
painful reticence and evasion
when she should be boldly e
her supreme realization of
greatest miracle. Puritanism
ed to associate with this
something abhorrent and sh
remember how I once shocke
by remarking that one of ou
was expecting a baby; and
on, she admitted her inability
stand why she should have fel

Digitized by Google

ırse, was this strange
nism, which has cast
the most joyous and
mankind.
anism I accuse the
cism — an odd part-
rendering marriage
eve. Poetry and fic-
heir worst to foster
concerning love and
hers, moralists, psy-
iters of various kinds
represent the sex-in-
d unreal. The native
been sicklied o'er by
of thought. Youths
attended theoretical
oondence schools on
trimony. They have
o subject their emo-
nd microscope, to try
alysis whether these
scribed in the books.
ed to be hypercritical
t that they become
ective. And all the
earts may have been
ach other in vain! In
reat romance, for the
ng for courtship, they
nfused and hysterical
play on each other's
hing is bound to hap-
ppens is too often a
is scornful of play-
of the heart, and
alties on the actors.
out have a grudge
nticism, which blinds
and impels them to
uus, in an utterly un-
lectual creation.
e Feminist movement
wildering society re-
tions of the sexes.
omen, in their devo-
dom to the cause of
ve practically taken
like nuns. At least,

the effect is the same, by reason of the emphasis they place on the entering of women into the various professions, their right to economic independence, and their obligation to demonstrate their absolute freedom. The making of a home, the rearing of children, seem to be regarded by the Feminists as, at best, nothing but an evil necessity, to be borne under protest and to be avoided if possible. This attitude in some amounts virtually to an angry revolt against Nature for having been outrageously unjust in placing a heavier burden on women than on men. The way some of these Feminists talk would lead one to infer that they desired legislation from on high, to impose on men part of the task of bearing children!

Another and more sinister effect of Feminism has been the hideous reaction of the argument against a double standard of morality for men and women. Instead of inducing men to be more moral, the tendency would seem decidedly to make women more lax, and even cynical on the subject. I have known women who, ignoring the sententious and incontrovertible argument of Franklin concerning the double standard, have frankly asserted the right of a woman to have her 'fling' as well as a man. There are various sets where an amused tolerance condones moral delinquencies, or fosters a most dangerous attitude toward marriage. As in the case of certain social or stage celebrities, marriage becomes a joke, or a meaningless formality, well characterized by a shrewd Turkish observer as 'consecutive polygamy.'

It is to be hoped, and in fact is to be expected, that, after this exaggerated movement of protest by the Feminists has spent its force, we shall have a return to a sane and natural attitude toward the marriage relation and all that it implies in obligations and ultimate contentment.

Digitized by Google

And out of Puritanism, Romanticism, and Feminism, as well as from prevailing economic conditions, have grown false standards of happiness. Nature says to a man and woman: 'Unite, make a home, have children, cherish them, and build for their future, if you would know true contentment.' Modern civilization says: 'Do not think of marriage until after you have had a chance to enjoy yourselves in a life of independence; until you have sufficient means, a fine house, an automobile or two, and a mate with whom to continue your good time. Do not think of having children if they interfere in the least with your good time; certainly do not have more than one or two. And do not stay married for a moment if anything disagreeable occurs to mar your happiness.'

Or many a high-minded young man or girl is thinking of perfect bliss in marriage, of an ideal union of kindred souls, that will ensure eternal harmony and contentment. Their conception of domestic happiness is too exacting and unreal; it cannot allow for strain and stress. It renders marriage either more difficult to achieve or impossible to maintain.

I recall an observation by a statesman of note, when addressing a group of college girls, to the effect that it was much better for a woman never to marry than to marry unhappily. This sounds rather reasonable, but requires, first of all, a clear definition of married happiness. Such a definition, under modern conditions, is becoming increasingly difficult. Many a girl would be rendered unhappy by being deprived of certain comforts and privileges she has enjoyed in her home. At least, she may think so, and thus avoid matrimony and, very probably, miss true happiness. Other girls, who could readily endure such privations, may be made miserably unhappy to discover that their glorious ideal of n fully realized.

Here is the diffi tutes true happines tentment? Many have learned the ar ing in accordance w Nature. They have standards of happi civilization in liter lege, and social co tesquely false. Yes, sessing that grea *understanding heart* preme happiness t round, the daily tas loyalties and lovin known women who have enabled them fearful humiliation unworthy husband redeem them to a sanctified and reco have known men tenderness have enc thoughtless wives, their follies, yes, the have brought them and sane realizatio ment. I have seen s learn, through the married life, that th after all, lies in sacr principle of our W the obligation to b home is the corners tion and of true co

In the light of thi ness I venture to re observation on mar man to whom I ha better by far to h with the ills and s hood than to live blessedness. To liv ed, though with m many a chagrin, is to living in relative opposition to Natu

Digitized by Google

n to view with dis-
ain tendencies of
The mode of dress
han *discloses* fem-
ance that exacts
familiarities; the
s sexual emotions
amentable as it is,
rded in part as a
unnatural condi-
itated against the
f the sexes. It is a
m should swing so
ous extreme; but I
ay yet find a gold-
result in a greater

an I find on the
tlantic, where the
riage are regarded
urally than on this
ere — nature, par-
general — unites to
ople to mate and
gerated intellectual
antic fancies, no
and in the way of
e 'cosmic urge.'
of Europeans of
, marriage is rela-
en delayed for one
It is erroneous to
ital marriages are
negotiations, irre-
ments and prefer-
tly concerned. If
e should not coin-
her side may freely
o. I recall several
g away from Ger-
cluded by this fact
nces from an early
e time arrived that
ry, it was a simple
ome folks know of
turn found it easy
ord to someone in
s, who likewise had
part in the making

of a home. When the prospective lovers came together, there was no constraint, either of Puritanism or of Romanticism. On their finding each other congenial, the engagement was shortly entered into, and marriage followed soon after. In the cases I have in mind there was every evidence in later years of tender devotion and contentment.

I hope it will not be thought that I am arguing in favor of marriages *de convenance* as against sentiment and romance. There is nothing finer than some of the truly romantic and idyllic courtships it has been my privilege to witness. The *grande passion* does come to some, and is greatly to be desired. I am merely arguing that where such extraordinary experiences seem unlikely or unattainable, — as I fear they are in most cases, — obedience to the demands of nature should compel one to admit that marriage is not only desirable but imperative. I am contending for a saner attitude on the part of society in general toward the whole subject. I am writing as frankly as I can, out of the depths of experience, — sweet as well as bitter, — to try to help others to think more clearly on this vital problem.

Society should do all in its power, in my opinion, to render marriage easier, in order to restore it to its rightful place as the basic and primordial fact of life itself. We should feel much greater concern over the unpleasant fact of the large numbers of unmarried members of society. And early marriages should be facilitated, in recognition of the fact that delay can hardly be good, either for the individual or for society in general. The home is the basis of our civilization, and the more homes, the better the community. Whether early or late, marriage should be the immediate and the most serious concern of society at large.

All that has been said thus far should

Digitized by Google

not be interpreted as minimizing in the least the sacramental nature of marriage as it rightfully is regarded by the Church. To those who think deeply, there is hardly anything in life that may not properly be deemed sacred. In fact, it is this sense of the sanctity, beauty, and dignity of human relationships that brings the greatest joy in life. But it does not follow, because marriage is sacramental, that courtship is to be considered as of divine origin, more than any of the many other human relationships. What really matters is the specific act of consecration. The mating of man and wife may be elemental, a most natural response to an imperative and irresistible command; but God may not have joined them together unless they themselves have solemnly laid their plighted troth on his altar.

This to me is the true significance and beauty of the marriage service, so often missed, alas, amid the pomp and theatricals of elaborate church weddings. The thoughtless and the cynics, occupied with thoughts of how the bride looked or the groom behaved, are often too unmindful of the fact that here are two souls who have dared present themselves to dedicate their union before God and in the sight of man. They have solemnly pledged in prayer that, come what may, they are determined to show each other patience, reasonableness, charity, forgiveness, loyalty, and the love that pardoneth throughout the trials and of their wedded life.

Whether in a religious or mony, this is what all reaso should pledge. It is a sole edgment of the fundamen falling in love is not nearly importance as the sacred riage itself. The emphasi placed, not simply by the by all society, on the sacr ture of married life.

Confucius said: 'A man should be as guests to Could anything more profo exquisite be said of the m tion? Unfailing courtesy an consideration, thoughtful attentions, rare patience all that the hospitality of another implies — is not t answer to the whole problem and divorce?

This, it seems to me, is society should aim to fos natural approach to the freedom from fantastic noti ficial restraints, a shifting from the search for romanti to the necessity of a dail after marriage; in sum, ins simpler and deeper concepti ness, based on home loyaltie and joyous revelations of li ies, 'until Death us do part

Digitized by Google

HIPPOLYTUS

BY ANNE WINSLOW

N these untarnished meadows, where the bee
lies undisturbed his summer husbandry,
Where never sound of men who sow and reap
Vexes the earth's soft sleep,
ll is so still I sometimes hear her pass;
er foot's divinity has touched the grass
And left its bloom more fair,
And falls upon the air
A brightness from her hair.

ere in her timeless garden, where the hours
eave off their ringèd dance, I wreathe pale flowers
o crown her brows. So would I gather peace
And find at last release
rom the dark visions the immortals send;
hey give men death, but man's blind fate no end;
Counting the wasted sands,
Knitting the broken strands
With their all-patient hands.

ke a dim legend written on the brain,
he shadows come; deep caverns yawn again
the steep rocks, and monstrous deeds are done
Under an ancient sun.
r voices call me and I hear the sound
endless hoof-beats on the echoing ground.
Why must you fall so fleet,
Dark and avenging feet,
While life and youth are sweet?

Digitized by Google

DISARMAMENT AND THE STATE OF EUR

BY CHARLES À COURT REPINGTON

All Commonwealths ought to desire Peace, yet it is necessary ever to be prepared for the War; because Peace disarmed is weak, and without Reputation: Therefore the Poets feign, that Pallas the Goddess of Wisdom did always appear armed. — SIR WALTER RALEIGH: *The Arts of Empire.*

THE Washington Conference is about to open, with disarmament for its leading theme, and I think it may be interesting to American readers if I give them, for what it is worth, the deductions that I have drawn concerning disarmament and kindred subjects during recent travels from the Baltic to the Ægean and from the Channel to the Black Sea. These journeys have occupied me during the greater part of this year and have brought me in contact with most of the directing minds which exercise authority in the old Continent, as well as with many other people of all classes, professions, and nationalities. I write for American readers with the greater pleasure because, wherever I have been, I have found English and American opinion firmly united, with or without previous discussion or agreement, on almost every single question that distracts Europe, and I have certainly returned home with this fact as the most satisfying, if not the only satisfying, conclusion of my tour.

The Question of Disarmament

One may divide Europe, broadly speaking, into three parts: the victors, the vanquished, and the neutrals in the late war. The victors are suffering from indigestion, the vanquished from exhaustion, and the neutrals fr comforts inherent in prop sick neighbors. No people no nation loves another; and years for the hates and jeal ing out of both the war and t die down. Practically speak tors are still dominant an quished still in subjection. are dominant because they pelled, in greater or less de main armed until all the te peace treaties are carried ou must be an affair of long yea the reparations exacted, th tithe of the real cost of t done, have been spread over l of time, in order to make th possible. The presence of nu ter-Allied commissions in the countries is a source of hur them, but cannot be helped, there in pursuance of treati

It is no satisfaction to th remain armed, because the c and every state is at its w money. In fact, the des treasuries is so marked tha victors have to impose on people almost unendurabl and in many cases do so wi gard for the elementary p economics, thus helping to crisis of which even America But they dread that, if they main armed and impose the on their taxpayers, the vanq either recover and renew t at all events, find good prete continuing their payments

Digitized by Google

the fact that there
nt to coerce them.
n of the victors will
uined.
rst unpleasant fact
the victors are still
quished almost en-
d that, though this
te of affairs, offers
l heals no wounds,
ot within sight for
risk of the renewal
lternative is, of all
that nobody can
quanimity. 'Peace
not only 'without
ignal danger.
ing at disarmament
England apart, and
e-tracked herself in
victors retain com-
e the vanquished, or
nments, all pine for
re not allowed to
the vast war-mate-
mains in existence,
part, perhaps, and
ut of date, but still
use; while the huge
vanquished, greater
e imagined at the
as been swept into
ors and has either
ved. Disarmament?
rried out by force,
e of the conquered

disquiet is the fact
whole of the able-
of Europe were
918, or trained or-
rs of the needs of
nother. Therefore,
mpelling sentiment
e rise, it would only
rically strong forces
magic, and all the
war period could be
s situation will not

end for another fifteen or twenty years, when all the veterans of the war-time will be too old, or too stout, or too much immersed in their new occupations, whatever these may be, to desire, or to be able, to march and fight. The victors have seen very clearly that these veterans cannot be destroyed, but that war-material can be; and the various Inter-Allied military commissions have therefore concentrated upon material, and have shown relentless severity in insisting upon a thorough surrender of arms—not only of guns and rifles, aeroplanes and machine-guns, but of the whole machinery of military equipment, including carts and limbers, harness, and all the thousands of articles that go to make up a properly found army. It is held that this action will make the vanquished states incapable of creating modern armies, except after a long delay, which the victors will naturally exploit.

The vanquished, on their side, have naturally sought, by every available means, to escape the control of the military commissions, and, in effectives as in armament, to conceal what they are doing by more or less clever camouflage. It has not succeeded, on the whole, but there are still military organizations in excess of treaty stipulations; there are all sorts of pseudo-civilian societies, associations of old soldiers, compulsory-labor laws, and so forth, which are not indeed very formidable, but which show that the disposition endures to resuscitate military power at the first opportunity. Similarly, there is a certain amount of war-material still concealed and undelivered, especially rifles and machine-guns; but to me the wonder is that so much has been given up, and I feel confident that it would not have been had the vanquished been certain allied and associated powers that one could name.

However, there it is, and that is the

Digitized by Google

present situation. But not quite all has been said; for it is the decided and well-weighed opinion of the best men in control of the military commissions that, after they withdraw from the territories of the vanquished states, it will not take more than two years for the war-material to be replaced, at all events in the case of Germany; and that in five years the whole of the vast war-material may be renewed, quite apart from contracts that may be made with neutrals, perhaps through foreigners. Therefore, the question arises whether these commissions should not be retained until all the veterans are past the fighting age; for though, by the Treaty of Versailles, it is the League of Nations that has the duty of checking future designs of an aggressive sort, the League will have difficulty in carrying out this task; and, in fact, no one believes that it can do it.

Another real difficulty is that, when we disarm a state, we practically become, in a moral sense, trustees for her internal order and external security. A country whose forces are compulsorily reduced to the vanishing-point may not be able to suppress Spartacists, Bolsheviki, or what not; may not be able to prevent bandits from crossing from their territory into another, or to keep out other peoples' bandits; while there is the still more serious danger that the government itself may become so weak that it may lack authority, and be at the mercy of a *coup d'état*. This lack of authority is one of the most constant complaints of the vanquished states. It is certain also that a long-service, voluntarily enlisted army, gendarmerie, or police, offers an easier prey to intriguers than a conscripted army based on short service; for the latter constantly refreshes itself from the whole people, whence it springs, while a volunteer force has to be taken from less choice elements, and in unsettled times and territories easily becomes a
torian Guard, or corps of
at the call of the highest
countries of peasant propr
even difficult to recruit a
army at all.

These are among the pro
Washington will have to con
side of the recently vanqui
but perhaps they will be s
complexity when the armie
lies are passed in review.

It is true that England w
much difficulty in securing
of health, because we hav
compulsion and all our mili
the war period. Except for
sion of better material and
and for the acquired precede
ing a national army based,
compulsion, we are in a wo
military destitution than
1914, — which is saying a g
whereas we have much grea
ments all over the world, a
series of new difficulties fo
ultimate analysis, force m
only remedy.

But when I think of our
will, I imagine, be asked
their position; and they m
be asked why, if the disar
their late enemies has been i
measure accomplished, th
themselves disarm. The rete
tically all over Europe ex
vanquished states, of comp
tary service, and of the pote
armies which derive from it
imagine, escape comment.
our allies I will, therefore, b

If we take France first, w
mit that she has the greates
haps, — with a saving claus
— the only really great a
world. She has a numero
ganized, and splendidly equi
much superior to her army
by commanders of the great

Digitized by Google

I verily believe, of
ıtal Europe. If a
ɔ view, he would
ment ready to his
rvation, that — at
Frenchmen would
a good cause, and
scope of an opera-
ɔut to them. But
e, I hope, far from
do not dabble in
ɔle army despises
generals in France
ɔrm. No civilian
ɔ, repeat the Napo-
ch he would prob-
n. But even more
that France's pop-
that her strength
reat though it be,
and perhaps tem-
an army, and not
based on founda-
alth, and science.
ɔn Berlin, even on
ɔth with ease; but
of confronting the
of the world, or
h every aggressor
empts to emulate
ɔleon or Wilhelm
r heads cool when
ıt power of France.
of the French
standard of num-
s due to want of
ıre; and if France
confidence, one
ınd lay the blame
ue, namely, upon
ɔ-American guar-
ntly consented to
ve plans on the
ica, and England
e agreement, were
anty against Ger-
the future. Two
d America has not
ing. Consequent-

ly our adhesion falls to the ground, although our Parliament accepted the liability under the conditions named. Very likely we on this side of the water were very great fools, and curiously ill-informed of the real state of public opinion in America, when we signed that conditional guaranty. That remark applies to our Government, if the cap fits them. It depends upon whether our former Ambassador at Washington warned the Government that the American Senate might not second the guaranty of President Wilson. I do not know whether our Ambassador gave a warning or not. But the public in England and France certainly never had the glimmer of a suspicion that a guaranty signed by a President of the United States and countersigned by a Secretary of State, in a vital matter affecting the safety of France and the future peace of Europe, would not be honored in America.

It is impossible not to attribute a very large share of France's want of confidence in the future to the above cause, and a very large share of Europe's unrest to France's want of confidence. Over and over again I have been told by French statesmen and generals that France would never have taken the unrelenting course that she has taken toward Germany had the Anglo-American guaranty stood. Over and over again I have been assured by representatives of all the allied and associated powers that Germany would never have dared to confront that combination, and that, secured by the guaranty, France would, and could safely, have disarmed. The fact that none of these things happened is the main cause of the sanctions, the Upper Silesian trouble, the reparation wrangles, and most of the resulting unrest that has followed throughout Europe, which seems to take its cue from the barometer of Franco-German relations.

Digitized by Google

I am not blaming America in the least. Our own long-established practice, to keep out of continental entanglements when we can, is as deeply rooted in principle as that of the United States, to steer clear of European commitments. The difference between us is merely the difference between the breadth of the Channel and the breadth of the Atlantic. By that much our policy differs from yours; but it is a difference of degree, and not of kind. But for all that, when one observes, as every traveler through Europe must observe daily, the truly appalling results that have followed from this failure, misconception, desertion, or whatever one should term it, one stands aghast at the consequences, and laments the little wisdom with which the world is governed.

France has no definite guaranty now that any state but Belgium, and perhaps Poland, will support her when Germany feels strong enough to act; and in the sheer desperation of self-defense, has thought it necessary to inflict upon her neighbor one humiliation after another, in order to make her, and keep her, weak. The policy of broad and genial tolerance, which would have so well become a country with France's generous traditions, she could not follow, for with her forty millions there were over against her seventy million Germans, with a far higher natality; and France saw no salvation except in the rigid exaction of all her treaty rights, so that Germany, for a great number of years hence, might be inhibited from even dreaming of revenge. But when one thinks of the dry-powder régime under which France has been living for so long, and of all the terrible injuries inflicted on her by Germany in the past, one can understand, and *tout comprendre c'est tout pardonner*. If France declares at Washington that nothing tangible except her army stands between the world and the renewal of the war by Germany, I do n she can be gainsaid. In stances, it is the truth. I that we English and Ameri left to France the largest war, must feel a tinge of sh ing also to her the main b forcing the peace, with all that follows.

Italy will plead that she reduced her army and din service periods. She can s tice that her policy has be tory, and that she has shu tures. But she can also sh *Anschluss* movement in underlined the danger of A ing Germany, and she ca that such an act would bri down to her borders. Yug urge that both Hungary a are uneasy neighbors; Czec that she is liable to be st Germans round her, and and Hungary to fear. R point to dangers from thre and, above all, from the So upon the Dniester, and from the Bolshevist reserves no Belgium has too complete bring up from 1914, for any fault with her for abandoni trality and reorganizing h more modern lines; while say that she has recently sa from the Reds by her militar Lastly, there is Greece, wh that she went to Asia Mino quest of the Allies, who ha her down and given her no because she chose, in the ful of popular right, to recall h

Two states of unequal and discordant character w most wholly beyond the infl Washington Conference. Russia and Turkey. The p we make of both is not a pl but in reference to armar

Digitized by Google

l, because the exist-
l forces is primarily
tervailing armies in
d them. If Poland,
ce are more immedi-
he moment, it must
v far Russia extends,
the Turks are able
ammedan sentiment
Nothing final in the
n in armaments can
nese two contuma-
n the comity of na-
say when they will.
ossess the capacity,
or for repentance.
alliances, supple-
ry agreements, be-
s of Europe, which
conclusion of agree-
France has a treaty
ement with Belgium,
rstandings, at least,
n the east of Europe
e unites Rumania,
ugoslavia, and Po-
of alliances which
y join; and all these
ot only these under-
eir fear of warlike
ns for maintaining
gth.
asons we cannot be
ent, or reduction of
as they relate to
ve more than a *suc-*
hington. It is not a
to discuss this ques-
n open to argument
tack on armaments
securing either their
r abolition. I hap-
nimportant part in
Conference at The
1899, when all the
were not separated
gonisms aroused by
ere very well inten-
lly, and set out to discover a formula for the reduction of armaments, in response to the late Tsar's humanitarian appeal. We could not find one, though we sought high and low for it, and a very good American delegation helped us in our search. Time has passed, and the urgency of the question may lead to the discovery of the formula for which we sought in vain; but I am not confident that it will.

Recently I had the pleasure of meeting again that very competent Belgian lawyer, M. Rolin Jacquemyns, who also was at the Peace Conference of 1899, and is now the Belgian representative on the Rhineland High Commission. We compared notes and were both convinced that the creation of the Permanent Court of Arbitration at The Hague, which was the *chef-d'œuvre* of our Conference, was of more value than the League of Nations is ever likely to be. The Court still exists and has done much useful work. To it should have been submitted the Upper Silesia case. The Hague Court represents the main idea that seemed to me to be in President Harding's mind at the time of the late presidential election in the United States; and I hoped that we were on the right track once more and were getting back to practical politics after our Geneva day-dreams. I shall retain that hope till the end.

An International Court of Arbitration, rather than a spurious form of world-government like the League, is the real remedy for most of the present troubles of the world. But I would like to see its importance magnified a hundred times by the acceptance of the principle of obligatory arbitration by all the states of the world. That condition we could not secure in 1899, because several states insisted on withdrawing from the purview of the Court all questions in which 'honor and vital interests' were involved. That reservation practically made the Court useless

Digitized by Google

at the time when it would have been most needed. If the United States were ever great enough and wise enough to accept the principle of compulsory arbitration, I cannot name the state that would not follow her. Can any arbitral decision, even against the claims of any one of us, cause one millionth part of the ruin and loss of life and treasure of the late war? And, on the other hand, compulsory arbitration is a sure means of sterilizing armaments, since, once international arbitration becomes our settled rule in diplomacy, the use of force must end; for no state would be so foolish as to keep up expensive forces for long when there was no use for them. On these lines, and I believe on these lines only, can the design that must stand behind the assembly of the Washington Conference be carried out to its logical completion.

I suppose that we shall not hear very much of the League of Nations at Washington. It was mainly American handiwork, but America's refusal to recognize her own child has relegated it to the political workhouse. No world-authority can exist when the United States, Germany, and Russia have no share in it. There are League enthusiasts here, as there doubtless are in America, and we must admire the devotion with which the League works and accumulates mountains of documents and reports. But we must also admit that it makes little progress and has scant authority. Some say that the Council of the League is a mere creature of the French and British Foreign Offices. Others declare Geneva to be a focus of international intrigue. In any case, it is common ground that the League has no authority, and no force at its back except that of moral persuasion; and that it can do nothing but report, warn, or recommend. With difficulty it has at last agreed that the election of judges to an International Court of Justice shall be placed on its agenda at its second assembly, which is taking place as I write; but I do not know why this Court should be any better than, or even so good as, our Hague Court of the first Peace Conference. To take two years to begin to duplicate the machinery that we finished twenty-two years ago does not strike me as an achievement of great merit. The real practical international diplomacy of the moment, in all but American affairs, is controlled by the Supreme Council and by the Council of Ambassadors in Paris, both of which are, in effect, instruments for registering the decisions of the Allied cabinets. The League is left to its pious aspirations, and the main stream of diplomacy passes it by. Even when it has taken up a question like that of Armenia, with passionate earnestness, the only result has been that its protégé has become either Kemalist or Red; while in the matter of mandates, the United States has protested against decisions made without its approval, and the whole question is consequently hung up. Well may a French statesman have said to himself sarcastically every morning in the spring of 1919, as he rose from his bed: 'Georges Clemenceau, you believe in the League of Nations.'

The Sorrows of Europe

In what particular manner President Harding and Mr. Hughes will change the situation for the better, we shall all learn presently; but that the old Continent of Europe is beset with immense difficulties, political, social, economic, and commercial, is manifest to a traveler in every country that he visits. I place the question of exchange first among the anxieties of Europe; and it is needless to remark how gravely British and American trade have been affected by it. It is not only the depre-

Digitized by Google

he world so hard, ictuations, which ice, caused every y times before he volved, not only ut many British as well, in very reigner, except in als, cannot afford present rates, and es only what he uy elsewhere. In s refuse to pay for because the local nce the order was , notably in Ru- y and inadequacy preclude the for- from ports when there the goods the quays, often ure.

against this dead- eciated European of none except ment, and time. hould explore the urrencies, the re- by new, and cur- the international . Sound currency sound trade; but st of the gold of o her to initiate

illes for not hav- ges at the time of e; but when one ure recommended, hat the remedy is own, mark, franc, h five, or possibly zation is financial ernational finance ut apparently it is of conditions with ous acquaintance. seeing how the ies like Germany

undersell us owing to their depreciated exchanges, that their governments promote this depreciation. I have seen no evidence of it. The fall makes it enormously more difficult for countries to pay their foreign debts; and those countries at all dependent on foreign imports naturally have to pay through the nose for them. The depreciation, or, at least, the fluctuations, may be in part accounted for by speculation and gambling, which proceed on a vast scale; but, taking the situation as a whole, the fall seems generally justified by foreign debts, by inflation, by internal exhaustion, by reduced output per man per day, by consequent failure of productivity, and by the inability of many countries to complete the reconstruction of their state machinery, without which their wealth cannot be fully exploited.

The countries doing best are those in which Labor is most moderate in the standards of wages and living it accepts, and in which governments provide cheap coal and relatively cheap food. This is Germany's strength. She is resolutely setting to work, and all classes are accepting a standard of living and of wages far below ours and even farther below the American scale. Compare the seventeen shillings per ton for German coal at the Ruhr pitheads with the price we have to pay; and compare the fifty pounds a year of the German bank-clerk with the pay of the English or American clerk! This difference runs through all German social and industrial life, and there is, besides, a rigid elimination of waste, which is unknown with us.

The combination of the benefit from a depreciated exchange and that derived from low wages and poor living is enough to account for our difficulty in competing with German trade. In many other countries the scale of remuneration of the highest dignitaries

Digitized by Google

is preposterously small. In Austria the President of the Republic draws only eighty pounds a year, and heads of departments in the Foreign Office tell me that they cannot afford a new suit of clothes. The High Court Judge in Bucharest draws sixteen pounds a month, and the lieutenant four pounds. How they manage to live at all, with prices at their present height in these countries, is one of those mysteries which I have not been able to penetrate, though we must, of course, admit that the purchasing power of the local currency in the country itself is much higher than the English or American equivalent of it would be in London or New York. A few countries have checked inflation and are bravely facing their liabilities; but in many — and Poland and Austria are the worst cases — inflation goes on, and selfishness often prevents the imposition of taxes needed for reconstruction.

Generally speaking, I regard this question of the rates of exchange as much more vital to England and America than to Continental Europe, though in one way or another all suffer from the present situation. We are really in presence of a state of chaos which injures all the world, and only the union of the world for the purpose of mending matters can improve conditions. In this matter, America might take the lead, and, by collecting the best practical exports, endeavor to formulate a solution. The Brussels Economic Conference gave us the most excellent advice upon the questions of state finance and economics; but something more is needed before we can go ahead. Unless some financial genius can discover a remedy, one must regard British and American trade with Continental Europe as almost dead for a long time to come.

Second only to the exchanges, there comes the urgent need of freeing international trade by every possible means from the very great obstac at present accumulated in refer especially to passpo houses, tariffs, permits, an machinery for selfish natio which seems especially de assist trade, but to ham grand tour of Europe is no days. One's passport beco able document. One must advance for every coun which one passes, even if propose to stop there. On only a very limited amoun money out of each cou traveling across a number must carry the coinage, horrible paper, of each. greatly handicapped by permits, and export and i and the wonder is how any ton of goods into, or out try. This arises from sta trade, and everything show ever else the state may be, as a merchant.

We see the system at trade in full perfection in sion States of Austria. Th Hungarian Empire was fa ated economically, becau parts of it supplied thing parts lacked, and every freely from one province There was internal free tr Empire was almost sel Hungary sent her wheat ber, Bohemia sent her co Styria and the other parts ducts. It was less the A riages that made Austria ha very shrewd business sens ized that certain provinces to supply Austria's deficie

Now all this economi state of affairs has term Succession States have al frontiers against Austria each other. Each has its o

Digitized by Google

to build up customs
de against the terri-
once traded freely.
he present Austria
d reduced her state
xtremities by com-
ast sums for wheat
ore long the selfish
found that, in in-
y were losing their
ing themselves; so,
e of circumstances,
rse see a change of
stria, Hungary, and
a are almost ripe.
of Dr. Benes, the
Czechoslovakia, to
ates of Central Eu-
ariff agreements be-
tates in this part of
e long to be carried
arters the tendency
ies, chiefly in order
ut also to protect

mains that interna-
evously hampered,
e our object to free
both for our own
ake of these small
e busy strangling
ossible benefit for
e that the quickest
e for the evils of Eu-
rency and exchange
year of completely
ariffs at all, inward
must confess that
ed, not to speak of
eached such a state
ot a remedy of so
a kind. The ten-
ole, are the other
nternational rivers,
tates are most ten-
all their rights, and
he régime of inter-
t allow them.
ant money, wheth-

er to administer the state or to reward political friends. Therefore the rule is to tax everybody and everything, but especially the foreigner. The export duty on Rumanian oil is a typical case; for, if it hits directly the foreign capital invested in this industry, it also injures a source of local wealth, and gives a subsidy to other states which supply oil. The idea of a fixed export tax, laid on regardless of world-prices and falling-values, is one which must have originated in a lunatic asylum. In other places we discover a consortium, or government trading-machine, which supplies posts for political adherents, usually ignorant of trade needs and practices; and it need scarcely be said that it trades badly, and imposes on the produce of the country quite needless losses, often failing to find markets at all. In short, there is every grade of incompetence to be found as we pursue our inquiry; while, of course, the immense loss and damage of the war has thrown numerous states into a disorganized condition and communications have particularly suffered.

Another change, which we in England, at all events, watch with some anxiety, is the agrarian policy, which has taken the form, in several states, of distributing the land among the peasants. It may have been, and it was in some cases, a political necessity, and may have prevented an agrarian revolution; but the effect which it will have upon the export of cereals is of considerable interest to the world. The great estates are being broken up and replaced by small holdings, which usually run from some three acres in Alpine regions up to twenty acres in average arable land, rising again to six hundred acres at most for the old proprietors. There is no universal scale, nor even the same scale in all the provinces of each separate country; but the general effect is to replace large landed properties by

Digitized by Google

small ones, with various scales of compensation — all very low — to the former landlords. Most of these laws were passed in the first flush of revolutionary enthusiasm after the war. In some cases they have been widely applied, in some partially, and in others scarcely at all. But all the laws stand, and it is the general belief that the exportable surplus of cereals, and especially of wheat, will diminish with a generalized peasant-proprietorship. The tendency of the small holder is to grow patchy crops, primarily for his own food and that of his family; and there will not be the capital necessary for rich manuring, for providing modern agricultural machinery, or for purchasing high-class stock. On the other hand, a plurality of landowners means more stable political conditions, and may lead, some hope, to increased production, owing to the personal interest of each small farmer in his land.

Some attempts have been made by the proletariat, notably in North Italy, to seize factories and to exploit them for the exclusive benefit of the workers. These attempts have failed, because the new men in possession found themselves quite incapable of managing the administrative part of the work, the contracts, and the sales. They, therefore, in many cases, invited the old proprietors and managers to return, while the bourgeois parties created the *fascisti* in Italy, and took other measures to defend themselves.

In general, the tyranny, the excesses, and the fearful results of the Russian Revolution, have sunk deeply into the minds of the workers in Europe. If Bolshevism had been specially designed to expose the futility and uneconomic absurdity of the theories of Karl Marx, it could not have more appropriately carried out its mission than it has done during the last four years. The error, and the tragedy of the error, have been denounced to the workers o many missions to Russia men of extreme views. Wit tions these men have conf selves horror-stricken by th they have found; and thou nism is not everywhere dea there has been a power against the disruptive theo years ago. The affair reall head in the Bolshevist inv land; and if the failure of did not convince Lenin an of the futility of their theo veyed to them, at all event their weakness against ev trained troops; and since t vism has been steadily losi countries other than Russia some communistic centres where outbreaks of this recur, but I do not know th Europe which has any seric that its people can be stamp fanatics of Moscow. The ex Berlin and Munich, Vienna pest, have sufficed. The one hold over the towns: it starve them.

The disruption of four g empires, and the substituti of various forms of demo have naturally caused imme ance in the political atmo the political weather is mos Bulgaria keeps her dynast tria thinks more of joinin than of recalling the Hap Hungary is monarchical, have a king to-morrow if while a large and influential German population remain ple monarchical, and desir to that form of government man Empire acquired its f position under a kaiser, and man is regretful of the past

The present government and the personality of

Digitized by Google

ghly esteemed by
ciated diplomatic
ancellor Wirth is
his duty by the
as well as by his
has to call upon
o double the state
pay reparations;
vinced that he can
h proper support,
re very bitter, and
n stick at nothing.
y forces are still in
, the Church, and
oine with the land-
ndustrial magnates
cult for a govern-
great prestige for
es, and has the in-
ing the hat round
ass of the Left, and
ermediate parties,
lied to the Chan-
l if street demon-
nuch, the majority
r him. The Allies
Rhine customs as a
owing to the oppo-
ve not withdrawn
uhrort, and Duis-
has very earnestly
ould.
in Germany com-
ernment lacks au-
esent the country
ion, and is subser-
Most of the notable
alist party are get-
they probably feel
ide of German Re-
few years most of
have settled down
and may retain lit-
entimental attach-
The Right probably
afford to wait, and
ne reason, upon the

national pride, which revolts against the peace and the surrender to the Allied ultimatum of last May. But it seems to be the prescriptive right of this party to make colossal blunders, and the assassination of Erzberger, almost condoned as it was by many Opposition newspapers, is the last on the list.

No one can safely predict the future of German politics, which depend on events that cannot be foreseen; but that the character of the new Chancellor and the policy of his Government offer the best ascertainable chance for the gradual pacification, not only of Germany, but of Europe, will not be disputed by the closest observers of European politics.

For the reasons stated in the earlier part of this article, I do not think that very much can be expected from the meeting at Washington in the way of reduction of land forces. With respect to navies it is different, because there are only three great navies that count, and none of these is specially concerned in the enforcement of the terms of peace upon our late enemies, who have no navies at all. It is, therefore, merely a question of agreeing to a mutual stand-still in naval armaments; and this question, it would seem, should present no insuperable difficulties.

But I cannot think that such an important conference will break up without suggesting a remedy for the ills which I have briefly described. Armaments are symptoms of a political disease, but are not the disease itself. The real diseases of the world are unstable exchanges, unsound currencies, hampered trade, and the false nationalism which shuns obligatory arbitration. Cure these diseases and armaments cure themselves.

Digitized by Google

WHAT DELAYS DISARMAMENT? [1]

BY WALTER B. PITKIN

I

EVERY civilized man wants peace. But peace has its price, payable in two installments. The first installment is disarmament. The second consists of all the consequences, political, economic, religious, and racial, which must flow from the laying down of arms. Nine tax-payers out of ten sigh for the privilege of paying the first installment at once. But are they willing to pay the balance of the bill?

This is the world's gravest question to-day. It must be faced and answered before the close of the Washington Conference. Thus far it has been evaded. Most people, who are always looking for a panacea, dream that disarmament alone will bring the Golden Age. Others, more canny, admit that the move may involve some unpleasant changes, but they belittle these. Only a few thousand bankers, international traders, and political specialists foresee some of the startling transformations that must ensue. And nobody knows all the impending upheavals.

It is these certainties and uncertainties that cause well-informed men, who have no interest in bolstering up militarism, to doubt the wisdom, as well as the possibility, of quick disarmament. They all know that the Conference will make no effort to disarm the world, but will only reduce army a penses; which, as one close marked, 'will bring disarma as fast as a cheapening of will abolish transportation.' eign observers no longer even such a reduction of primary aim. They see Am ing to force Japan's hand by her to define her Asiatic po the pretext of a peace mov ant-General Sato advises th Government to send no mer rank to the Conference, 'bu who are fluent in foreign lan sociable.' For, in common French critics, he thinks th fair will dwindle to a string dinners and press-agent hu hind their caustic doubts lie facts too jauntily overlook peace-lovers. The longer w eyes to them, the longer we for world peace.

The Conference faces si of the first magnitude — knows how many lesser hind all odds the greatest is th China. Next ranks the chao coupled with Russia's absen arms parley. The third is dilemma in Japan's national fourth a similar one in our both dilemmas aggravated sons of the World War. The still unbroken power of th party in Japan. And the sheer physical impossibility

[1] The phraseology of this paper is not intended as a reflection upon the recent statement of Secretary Hughes that the subject of the forthcoming Conference is to be *limitation of armaments* rather than *disarmament*. — THE EDITOR.

Digitized by Google

rogramme that will equitably all partici- o one or two of these uffice to thwart the menace lies in all six ction and reinforced difficulties, economic, al, the whole tangle of human beings, bil- undred theories, and ons and prejudices of

oo great for the mind t one which only a rush at hopefully? so or not, one thing he organization and f the Conference be- neglect of the inmost ic problems. To real- nly recall the follow-

to the Conference ntil the nations of the me understanding as policies in that area, o move for disarma- s are too huge, the ts too acute, the dis- nd political codes too as promptly accepted atesman at home and matic, in spite of the nd ignoramuses who e caused by talking to disarm is to dis- nerica must lead the m — whatever that us see how President this statesman-like

lems of the Pacific, ic emigration, centre eria. There lie, still the world's vastest naterials, the greatest he hugest coal-fields, deposits, millions of ay must yield wheat and cotton. There too swarm some four hundred million unappeased consumers of manufactured goods, a multitude greater than the combined populations of Western Europe, North America, and Australia, with Japan thrown in for good measure.

China and Siberia are richer in economic resources and in man-power than all these lands. Beside them, all the rest of the Pacific area is rather insignificant. They are the two problems of the Pacific. But neither China nor Siberia can be reckoned with at the Conference. Neither will be truly present there. Neither will be able to present or to defend its rights and policies. And there is not the remotest chance that either will like the decisions of the foreigners.

Here, then, is the comedy, and here the stuff of which tragedies are woven. Briton, Yankee, and Japanese meet to usher in world peace. They dare not discuss laying down arms until each knows what the other two are planning to do with the Far East. What each can there do depends in the long run upon the wishes of the Chinese and Siberians, unless these peoples are to be overawed by force. If thus bullied, Asia will see no disarmament, nor can America. If bullying ceases, China and Siberia will automatically settle their own destinies; for they will then have the freedom to do so, as well as the desire.

Thus the Washington Conference must choose either to disarm and leave Asia to the Asiatics, or else to run Asia and maintain immense fleets. The first alternative wrecks the policy of every non-Asiatic power. The second makes the Conference futile. Lacking the moral courage to solve this dilemma, the delegates may dodge the problem of disarmament and confine themselves to the task of trimming budgets. But even this develops painful difficulties.

Digitized by Google

II

Look first at the chaos in China, around which all other difficulties revolve. That land is rotting, politically and socially. It is an indescribable pandemonium. Famine, pestilence, civil wars, and the alien enemy at the gates have undermined its frail structure of state. Corrupt politicians and foreign adventurers prey upon the weakened members. And the masses sink deeper into the sleep of opium, while the classes burn with a new hatred of the foreigners who contribute to the ruin.

Two governments wave their banners, one at Peking, the other in Canton. And a third is struggling to be born at Hupeh. The Peking affair is a scream. Led by President Hsu Shih-chang, a gentle philosopher and poet of renown, it is the vilest militarism in all the world to-day. Honest, noble, and unworldly, Hsu was cleverly chosen by a bogus legislature made up of the henchmen of China's two mighty war lords, Chang Tso-lin and Tsao Kun, who are busy making money at the country's expense. Hsu is not a party to their disgraceful ventures and treacheries. He protests much, and sometimes manages to thwart them for a time, in lesser affairs. But, as they control the armies and collect taxes and play practical politics with veteran skill, Hsu disturbs them little.

Only three or four of China's eighteen provinces even feign to obey Peking. In reality these do not, for they are the domains of the three war lords who created Hsu's régime. Hsu gets taxes and obedience from them only when the war lords feel like contributing either, which is not often. Last July, Chang Tso-lin, being short of change, pocketed the salt revenues of Manchuria, where he rules. The *tuchun* (military governor) of Shantung recently appropriated the post-office receipts. In three other provinces, the retiring officials were graciously permitted to take with them considerable funds from the treasury. And thus everywhere and always.

The result is chronic bankruptcy at Peking. Troops go unpaid for months. Sometimes they mutiny, as at Ichang and Wuchang, last summer, where they pillaged terribly. To check such outbreaks, Hsu has raised money by 'diverting' the educational appropriations. For nine months teachers have gone penniless, and the schools have been closed by a teachers' and students' strike. These funds being lamentably inadequate, the Government has lately pressed the Chinese Eastern Railway for a twenty-five-year-old debt, and has allowed that company to pay up with a bond issue, put out on such terms that only the Japanese would consider buying it, and they not for profit so much as for political reasons. At the same time Hsu and his Cabinet have been making desperate economies in small matters. Their auditors have found 1256 office-holders in Peking drawing two or more salaries; the ministers are reorganizing their staffs downward, and some high officials have been invited to accept half-pay. All of which does not improve Hsu's credit at the banks, as we mark in his emergency loan of a million dollars last summer, on which he was obliged to pay 18 per cent interest. The only wonder is that the financiers did not demand 50 per cent.

The Cabinet and departments are befuddled and disorganized past all belief. They appeared at their worst in the recent radio dispute. Seemingly, the Government had granted three wireless concessions to as many parties, all overlapping and incompatible. The fact was, though, that no Government granted any concession. The Ministry of the Navy entered into an agreement with the Mitsui Company in 1918.

Digitized by Google

War did likewise with
npany in 1919. And
Ministry of Communi-
suit with the Federal
y, an American con-
vo agreements carried
ights, and it was this
our State Department
investigation showed
y serenely ignored, or
ng about, what the
ing; and neither Pres-
t checked up on the
nance. Which moves
ld China trader's re-
politics: 'When you
ng for the Open Door
open it and find no-

rag-doll government
before these lines are
e a thing of the past.
will depend chiefly
hang Tso-lin and Sun

vernment is a model
trength beside Hsu's.
ommands respect even
nts. President Sun is
egarded as a patriot of
and the vital force be-
ina. For a decade he
genuine democracy,
his side many of the
happily, though, the
seen fit to follow the
miliar habit of masses
ordinary Chinese has
litics, which he looks
what shady business,
han peddling opium,
than gambling. The
t in politics are the
fice-holders, who look
od, the thousands of
ho need political pro-
corrupt mandarins
no subsist on *likin*,
mple 'appropriation.'

Now all these worthies fear Sun, and either oppose him, use his movement for their own ends, or else hold aloof, under the pretense of favoring provincial autonomy instead of a strong central government. Many Europeans and Japanese in the treaty ports dislike Sun for reasons only a degree nicer. Some brand him as a Bolshevik and accuse him of playing Lenin's game.

This is absurd. Sun stands for the simple democracy which Americans believed in half a century ago. He thinks the ideals of Lincoln; and he is paying the price in much bloodshed and dubious progress. The Canton armies have been fighting steadily for many months, have scored brilliant victories in Kwangsi and the Yangtze districts, but still control little more of China than the northern Government does. To be sure, twice as many provinces have declared for Sun as have sided with Hsu; but with their favor goes no true control. Sun does not truly govern even his own province of Kwangtung, whose tuchun, Chen Chiung-ming, is the commander-in-chief of the Constitutionalist army recruited from five provinces. Chen levies taxes and hands over such funds as he sees fit to the Canton Republic. The Republic, as matters now stand, is nearly as poor of purse as Peking; and were Chen to reduce his bounty, Sun would have nothing to fall back upon save the contributions of Chinese nationalists abroad, the very groups who financed the revolution. There is no reason for believing that Chen will with draw support; but it is important to keep in mind that the Republic, with all its virtues and fine aspirations, owes its very existence to an enlightened tuchun, who may break with Sun almost any day on some new political issue. Such a break may come over the issue of provincial autonomy, which finds its most ardent champions in the five provinces that support Sun.

Digitized by Google

Provincial autonomy is a fact, and many sincere thinkers wish to make it the basis of Chinese policy. Each tuchun dominates his province and is a law unto himself, thanks to his control of troops and taxes. As most provinces are fully as large and as rich as France, a tuchun is comparable to a pre-war European potentate, but with the powers of an Asiatic despot. Several tuchuns have made millions by trafficking in opium. Others sell concessions. Not a few have levied tribute on subject-towns under one pretext or another. And all maintain their rule by force. Their armies now number about 1,700,000, or an average of nearly 100,000 active soldiers under each tuchun. Naturally the tuchuns tend to favor the division of China into eighteen nations, with themselves as lords and emperors. Why should anybody else approve? Simply, because China is too huge, too immature politically, and too inchoate, to think and act as a unit.

The political realist has often noted that this land should be thought of, not as an ordinary single country, but rather as a backward continent containing widely differing races and economic divisions, more or less like Europe of the seventeenth or eighteenth century, when there were no railroads, posts, telegraphs, or sense of community. China as a whole is surely less of a political entity than Europe was when the Treaty of Utrecht was signed. Yunnan has less in common with Manchuria than Portugal then had with Sweden; and the wider conflicts of interest between North and South are quite as acute and as stubborn as any between the popes and the emperors or the Hapsburgs and their many foes. Most important of all, the level of political intelligence in modern China is certainly lower than that of Western Europe three centuries ago. And nobody who understands the origins and nature of political intelligence believes that the Chinese can rise much faster than Europeans have risen. You do not make men good citizens by building railways through their farms. You do not produce statesmen merely by installing telephones in the offices of senators. Slow experiment by trial and error, still slower education of millions, slow crushing of superstitions, slow refinement of tastes and desires — out of such stuff is citizenship made. And this process must work from the home and the village outward and upward.

The people who dwelt between Dublin and Constantinople when the Treaty of Utrecht was signed could not have been organized into one successful State by the greatest of political geniuses. Even to-day their descendants cannot create the United States of Europe, which is the only sure salvation for that wretched continent. Geographical differences, many languages, race-prejudices, childish nationalistic fancies, and grave economic conflicts still keep the European masses ignorant, provincial, and befuddled. How hopeless, then, to expect that the eighteen provinces of China, with their 350,000,000 mediæval folk, mostly destitute of all the tools of civilization, can combine under one government, which will work even as smoothly as a backward European nation!

While this powerful argument for provincial autonomy makes headway, the vast rim of China lapses deeper and deeper into simple anarchy. Civil wars — four violent — in the past six months; famines unparalleled, pestilence, and the interminable border warfare lawlessly carried over into Mongolia by the Russian reactionaries under Semenoff and Ungern, have shattered what frail web of law and order once hung over the western and northern fringes of the chaotic kingdom. The river pirates are looting

Digitized by Google

s again. The robbers
n from the mountains.
des the *hunghutze* (pro-
n robbers) are maraud-
huria. On the borders
nave baffled and beaten
the tuchuns. Out of
few months past, the
the fanatical Living
ithin a day's march of
king. Harbin, at the
ing, saw thousands of
ing near. And for a
the Chinese Eastern
en attacked and plun-
ly by these same out-
Chinese troops dare
ng that many of them
certain Japanese ad-
thers for the Russian
clients of the mighty
Tso-lin.

of ruin spans the two
hat lie between Vladi-
frontier of Burma. It
de on a thousand high-
the boatmen from the
ween large cities travel
nat local officials forbid
mpt it, and require na-
to take along armed
numbers that only the
ssion can justify the
thirteenth century on
England; night, and a
d.

III

rumbles, a plan grows
only half successful, it
orld before many years
outsider knows its de-
ceethe in the cunning
Tso-lin, inspector-gen-
ria, the power behind
most sinister and stren-
r lords. Chang rules
of bloody memory,

where he holds the most strategic position in all Asia. His is the rich land where Russia, China, and Japan meet in their struggle for existence. Manchuria dominates Peking, Vladivostok, the Trans-Siberian Railway, the Amur River Valley, and Korea. It is the gateway from China to Siberia, from China to Japan, and from Japan to Mongolia and world-power. Chang sits at the gate and collects toll, such as the traffic will bear.

The traffic bears a good deal, and the proceeds have gone to Chang's head. He dreams of empire. Some observers have imagined that he would be monarch of all China; but Chang is too shrewd for that; and if he were not, his shrewder Japanese backers would halt him. His vision is much more practicable, hence more dangerous. He sees a new Manchu-Mongol Empire, stretching from the sea to the core of Asia. On Manchuria and Mongolia Chang would rebuild the throne of Jenghiz Khan, and send the bill to the Japanese. He will sell to the Japanese, at their own terms, a thousand concessions; and on his coronation day Japan will occupy peaceably a wedge twenty-four hundred miles long, giving them 'interior lines' dominating both Siberia and China. In short, what 'little Hsu' and his Anfuites dreamed of doing 'for China,' Chang would do for himself and his Tokyo friends. The Japanese backed the Anfuites, and lost. Now they are backing Chang, and hope to win. And to-day the odds are strongly in their favor.

Three facts will convince you of all this. One is Chang's military power, another is his management of the Peking Government, and the third is his long series of business deals with Japanese. It must shock the American reader to learn that this clever schemer now rules an army of 300,000 well-equipped soldiers, over which the so-called Cen-

Digitized by Google

tral Government exercises not the slightest control, although it is compelled to pay most of its upkeep. Since Hsu demobilized some 300,000 of the Peking forces last summer, Chang has become the overshadowing force; and not alone because his is the largest army in China. His strength flows largely from three immense strategic advantages: adequate food-supplies within his own lines, the superior railway system of Manchuria, and the reserves of munitions held ready by his Japanese friends in Manchuria and Korea. To all this, add a double geographic advantage: Manchuria is quite detached from the rest of China, hence not surrounded by potentially hostile provinces; and it is near the arsenals and shipyards of Japan. Why should not Chang dream of empire?

And how can the frail Hsu resist Chang's demands? Dexterous, cunning, and strong of will, the uncrowned king of Manchuria manipulates his marionettes at Peking without an effort. His technique is too elaborately celestial to report here. Judge it by its fruits. Chang milks the treasury dry, plays off one clique against another, and traffics with the Japanese 'going and coming.' Week by week he sells off China's assets and invests the proceeds in Chang. And all so quietly and suavely, that nobody quite knows what is happening until too late.

Last July Chang seemed to be desperately hard up. But of a sudden he handed over to his commissary general $2,510,000 in honest cash, albeit Mexican. This oddly coincided with his signing incorporation papers and concessions for a large Japanese development company in Mongolia; and it preceded by only a few days his shocking surrender of the Chinese Eastern Railway, through a shady bond-issue vote. Because of an old debt, conveniently overlooked for years, Chang's Peking Government was able le mand the payment of son taels from that road; a could pay only with a bon terms had to meet with th the Peking Minister of Fir Minister of Communica Chang's trained Pekinges was authorized in such a fo Japanese would consider it, and they for political p

At the date of writing, are being made to bloc Whether they succeed or intentions and methods If he is thwarted here, it for a while. Legally as wel no man can launch an Manchuria or Mongolia sav leave. And Chang sees fit Japanese. Steadily sinc Japanese have been pou into his domain. They h twenty-seven large corpor ly banks and the rest minin lumber-mills, railways, a plants. They show a gros capitalization of 71,525,00 which means much more country of cheap land and than twice as many dollars to-day in our own country its arithmetical significanc ment acquires abnormal the protection against n competition furnished by authorities, as well as by self.

Manchuria being thorou Chang now prepares to a golia. Circumstances pla hand last spring, when peasants and the Far East drove Ungern's reactionar the way to Urga, in Mongo carried on a variety of schemes, now to capture to attack Peking through Buddha. Chang saw in Pe

Digitized by Google

nowing, as every
person in the Far
enoff and Ungern
turers, with never
he Chita Govern-
were merely being
que of Japanese
of bringing pres-
Far Eastern Re-
g of concessions,
ered to drive the
oil. It would cost
illions, of course,
done with neat-
Unhappy Hsu ad-
, then two more.
s of his plans and
assed, and not a
g had to wait till
with Semenoff.
anese had kicked
ngern, his under-
roken reed to lean
Buddha had wan-
windy solitudes,
marshaled a mere
haps some of them
now; and Chinese
ue to form unless,
y there as long as
for his Mongol
e there when the
enters in triumph,
onorary Japanese
Mad dreams do
uth itself is often

do with disarma-
dency in China's
foreign investor
much more after
ramme, however
opted. Now, the
na largely shapes
China; and so
n and Japanese.
ment hangs upon

a prior understanding among the powers as to their Far Eastern policies. Plainly, then, every move toward disarmament must be determined chiefly by what foreign investors think of the drift in China. What must their thoughts be?

What if Chang has his way? Then Japan will become a colossal continental power as well as a maritime one. Her protectorate will extend first over Manchuria and Mongolia; next over Shantung; then probably over Kansu, whose tuchun is a friend of Chang, installed by Chang's cunning. The Japanese militarist party will have justified its expensive policy. The price of conquest will be collected from the conquered, and Japan's finances will be greatly strengthened. The present monopolistic policy of Japan, which has just been extended still further in Korea, will swiftly drive foreign investors out.

What if Sun Yat-sen prevails? Sun is an intense nationalist, aglow with the desire to free China from the alien. He hates Japan most, America least. In common with millions of his countrymen, he believes that the foreigner has caused most of China's woes, and that expelling the money and the political influence of all foreigners is the first step toward national regeneration. Given full power, Sun would cancel or heavily amend every foreign concession, put a quick end to extraterritoriality, restore the treaty ports to China, and finance the country from within. All of which would not encourage outsiders to drop money in Chinese ventures.

What if provincial autonomy arrives? The eighteen new nations would soon join in one or two loose confederations, but these latter would not hamper the new military kings. Forthwith, the status of innumerable concessions would become dubious, for the central government which had granted them would have ceased. All would depend upon

Digitized by Google

the good will, the cupidity, or the fear of the local tuchun. It would be Central Europe and the Balkans over again, but poisoned with mediævalism. Civil wars, intrigues, an endless unstable balancing of petty powers, and interminable uncertainty as to to-morrow would sap the courage of the boldest foreign investor and leave the field open only to the adventurer. Probably the treaty ports would thrive, for even the dullest war lord realizes that they are the life of their provinces. But all expansion beyond their environs would halt.

To all this, one exception. Japan would profit richly by the disintegration. She would sign treaties with the new northern kingdoms, paying gladly the tuchuns' price. The technique followed in olden days by the British in dealing with the native states of India would be repeated, with modern variations and embellishments. And a quarter-century would see Japan the master of the continent.

Here are the three outstanding possibilities in China, in their baldest form. Each is little more than a possibility, as matters now stand. Chang will not have his way as sweetly as he hopes; for his countrymen understand him, and the Japanese behind him realize the danger of quick and open imperialism. Sun's foes are many and mighty, while his purse is lean. And provincial autonomy is suspect because too many militarists are shouting for it, while clear thinkers understand that China must present a united front against Japan, or go under. Over and above all these restraints tower the battleships that ride in the harbors of Manila, Shanghai, and Hong Kong. These vessels are singularly unpopular among river pirates, opium smugglers, poppy farmers, white slavers, bandit chieftains, and exploiters white and yellow. All of which suggests a leading question. What if the Conference, moved by lof whatever that may me persuade the three do powers to scrap, let us s their fleets, or to cease tion? How would that n Chang, Sun, and provinc And how, in turn, the A ish, and Japanese invest

The answer is too easy us a first clear glimpse o to disarmament.

Cut the British and A one half, whether by scr ships or by suspending tion, and you leave the Chang and his Japanese nex Mongolia and Shantu and will double their spe on the day Anglo-Sax dwindles. How so? Geog whole story. From Japa port, Nagasaki, to the Asia is less than 150 mi night's run for transpor ships. The waters are islands which, fortified o for destroyers and subm the passage fairly safe heavy attack. Furtherm ese can mass in Korea a millions of soldiers, if nee fore a foreign power co interfere. Military ra houses, terminals, and necessities of war, are al in vital points. And t Manchuria can now sup sizable army. To all of need add but one, unsusp Americans, perhaps, but all naval experts: neith nor the American fleet strong enough to carry war anywhere in the Fa because of the abnorm weak line of supplies an from primary bases.

Digitized by Google

of Japan would
onal slashing of
ed nothing was
xpenditures and
t, they will win
e price they had

Chang may turn
three ways. He
sts to trump up
ne will offer only
hould Sun and
weep the coun-
rt to this proce-
He will find it
sets of China, as
ent grows more
funds; and thus,
buyers will own
the highly re-
rchase. Should
hird method re-
me out for pro-
the battleships
y retain sundry
llege professors,
ious world that
salvation. The
famous doctrine
And they will
dinarily strong
run, provincial
e the best solu-
den will secede
. The new em-
raightway enter
Japan. And all
nzai.
after naval dis-
en wins. What
to make more
ectures, as the
ionalist victory
x. This much is
tored Republic
's expansion in
olia, as it lacks
nical staffs, and
nd, with British

and American navies negligible, Japan might declare war on a democratic China, on the ridiculous pretext that Sun is Bolshevist, precisely as it attacked the Maritime Provinces of Siberia. As for Sun himself, he would doubtless uproot British and American concessionnaires at a great rate, if not menaced by their battleships. And in this he would be aided by the fast-mounting hatred of the foreigner, among even the common folk of China.

Were disarmament to be followed by provincial autonomy, it is doubtful whether even the lives of foreigners would be safe in most regions. The World War shattered the white man's prestige and revealed the infamy of the Japanese militarists. China now follows Japan and India in her distrust of European civilization. The thoughts of Gandhi, the Hindu saint, and the poet Tagore are blazing up the dense valleys. The outcry against the Consortium, the thirty-million-dollar loan from native bankers to the Peking Government, last summer, and, above all, the wild enthusiasm in the south over Sun's extreme nationalism, are a few gusts that scurry ahead of the great storm which must some day break, once the restraint of naval force is withdrawn. Everybody who knows China seems to agree that, in the chaos following the creation of eighteen kingdoms, the foreign devils would suffer first and foremost.

V

Thus far we have noted only internal tendencies in China. Is there not hope that the prospect will brighten when we consider other possibilities? May not Japan, reassured by Anglo-Saxon disarmament, forsake her militant ways in Asia? And if China, no longer threatened by her neighbor, continues chaotic, may not the powers join to put her house in order, under some benev-

Digitized by Google

olent scheme of international control?

Alas for these hopes! The militarist party is still unbroken at Tokyo, and its counsel will prevail at the Washington Conference, where it will confound its adversaries with an argument borrowed from the very advocates of disarmament. Japan can defend her Asiatic policy with the greatest lesson of the World War. Her militarists can appeal to Mr. Frank I. Cobb's vigorous and accurate statement of it, in the August *Atlantic:* —

'Nations that are rich are not defenseless. They contain in themselves all the elements of defense. They may have been defenseless in times when war was the exclusive business of professional soldiers, but all that has been changed. The elements of national defense are now the sum total of all the economic resources of the country plus all the man-power. . . .

'Economic resources can be easily and quickly translated into military resources; and a sound economic system is the essential element in any extensive military undertaking.'

Mr. Cobb correctly used this as an argument for America's disarming. Japanese war lords can use it to demonstrate Japan's need of dominating Manchuria and Mongolia, if not also a slice of Siberia. They can thus prove that their fatherland cannot even defend itself unless it acquires immense economic resources. To-day their country is perilously poor in the materials that make for strength. Her people no longer feed themselves, but import vast quantities of rice and millet. Most of her peasants make money only from silkworm culture. Unhappily, silk is a luxury whose value fluctuates widely, and imitations made from cotton already threaten its market. So a nation whose natural resources are mostly silkworms hangs by a thread. To survive, Japan must own coal, iron, copper, timber, cotton, and ingredients of modern comfort. She will seek t Great Britain, France, ar States do to-day. Failing she must join the ranks of and Greece. Economic ex vast scale, or a surrende power — there is no third

Can any American or E advise the Japanese deleg should show true moral choosing the second alter if you once grant the righ expansion, where else wo Japan expand, if not due

We come now to the pr national control of China observers feel would at order there and hold the tarists in check. Here is debate the broader merit We have only to note its r armament, which is as shine. So sincerely do the foreign domination, that al management could su backed up by a large arm The day the first alien ma Peking, Sun Yat-sen's st be doubled. To the 1,700, the tuchuns would be add of armed mobs and banc able; and we should be co new benevolent militarism come.

This brings us to the or world peace which lies v our own gates. We have world's gold, most of th tal, immense factories, of skilled workers. The trade has ruined our forei Europe; our exports and clined 50 per cent in th months of this year; Germ textiles 60 per cent chea can; German mills are Pittsburgh in our domest

Digitized by Google

bile factories are run-
ent capacity; and five
re idle, as winter comes
taxes refuse to shrink,
are being built, while
heir minute profits de-
mal freight-rates and
n only the most urgent
is but one escape from
ination of war-debts,
l factory system, and
New markets must be
new consumers found,
ted. But where and

e, for Europeans are
enough to fill their
ey can undersell us at
int. Not in Russia,
dollar save for black
outh America, whose
robably less than that
of the large claims of
sidents whose know-
tinent and its people
been derived from
geographies and smok-
Where, then? There
Far East. China and
rb billions of capital,
s Mr. T. W. Lamont
ventually earn a thou-
hey can also consume
f manufactures; and,
s of living rise, these
ne tens of billions. To
n, our financiers and
ust look for the only
t can restore our eco-
preciably. Their logic
nting the premise that
oad for new markets.
any American finan-
s in such chaos, where
er, intriguers plot new
r lords revel in civil
eking nor Canton can
Tokyo will not. His
, are clear: either he must have his own country protect him with as much force as is necessary, or else he must stay out of Asia. As for the manufacturer and the exporter, he is vexed by this same dilemma and two further annoyances. He must undersell the British, Germans, and Japanese in China; and this he cannot do now save in a few monopolistic lines, such as cheap automobiles and sewing machines. And even when he can meet their prices, he cannot reap their profits, because Great Britain and Japan have exempted their nationals doing business in China from all income taxes and excess-profits taxes on their China trade. But these worries pale beside the chaos in China.

This chaos creates for the Republican party a terrible dilemma. Champion of the full dinner-pail, roaring factories, and hundred-per-cent dividends, — all excellent ideals! — it has committed itself heart and soul to the utmost stimulation of foreign trade and foreign investments. Champion of general prosperity, it aims to reduce the cost of living, especially taxes, which are nine tenths military. The first goal demands a navy. The second demands the abolition of navies. And neither a navy nor an abolished one will guarantee success in the Far East!

Is it to be marveled at that some Republicans have lost interest in the Disarmament Conference, while others are losing sleep over it?

VI

Disarm and leave Asia to the Asiatics, or else run Asia and a huge fleet. This, when all is said and done, is the alternative that delays disarmament. It may be dodged for a while, but it cannot be evaded. It will not help to emit hypocritical shrieks over the wicked Japanese, whose imitation of our political ways is the sincerest flattery. Nor

Digitized by Google

will it serve any good end to shed crocodile tears over poor, down-trodden China, which is not a whit worse off than some of our own Southern states, man for man, road for road, town for town. Asia is Asia. It must work out its own salvation. Too far away and too huge to be controlled by us, who cannot even manage our own cities intelligently, its hundreds of millions can be swayed by us only under the compulsion of overwhelming force. They who are compelled will gain little. We who compel shall lose much in money and in reputation. Only a few exploiters, white an with riches.

Some influential stand this and are implications. But still under the spe rialism, or else hyp anese bogey manu low press. And so, for world peace a must bring, they t to accept the conse ment. If the Confe probably have to the extreme milita

THE FAR EASTERN PROBLE

BY J. O. P. BLAND

I

EARLY in August, the Washington correspondent of the Philadelphia *Ledger* announced that it was the intention of the United States Government to 'make the settlement of the Far Eastern situation a condition precedent to the discussion of the curtailment of armaments.' If this be so, supreme importance must attach to whatever scheme of settlement is eventually framed and proposed by the State Department. Seldom, indeed, have the prospects of peace in our time been more directly dependent upon the knowledge and breadth of vision of a few statesmen. America, because of her unchallengeable wealth and resources, holds the master-key to the gates of peace and war in the regions of the Pacific. If, at this juncture, her foreign policy is based upon recogn of the Far Eastern recognition of the ervation which un pansion on the Asi Conference should least, to what Pres 'approximate disar relieve the world of ger of acute naval

At the outset it should America see national agreemen dependent upon th Far Eastern questi the removal of any of conflict? The an in the fact that ev policy is inevitably damental instinct

Digitized by Google

d preserve, at all
rity. Also, that
pened during the
public opinion in
the belief that
menaced by Ja-
he front rank of
the activities and
ary party.
so-Japanese War,
ayed the part of
at the making of
outh (1905), the
the American na-
akable sympathy
apan; but since
ed to change this
rehension and in-
First came the
nte of 1907, fol-
te agreement of
de the Treaty of
ter and definitely
ple of the Open
and Mongolia.
iliating fiasco of
s scheme for the
ways in Manchu-
nexation of Korea
significant than
of Japan's activi-
was her increasing
inciple of racial
ith the assertion
to the American
re the revolution
at war in Europe
nexpected oppor-
her outposts and
omic penetration
undeveloped re-
ainland adjacent
w Peril (as pro-
a in the *Valor of*
to loom largely
, and public opin-
become definitely
viction that Ja-
involve a chal-

lenge to Western civilization and, ultimately, a claim to the mastery of the Pacific.

The course of events during and since the great war — the elimination of Russia as an Asiatic power, the increasing chaos in China, and the swift rise of the United States to leadership in the council of nations — has served to increase the points of contact and to accentuate the economic and political differences between the two nations which confront each other across the Pacific. The racial aspect of the antagonism thus created was emphasized at Versailles, and finds expression today in a widely prevalent belief in the idea of a 'color war,' wherein the forces of Pan-Asia (and even Pan-Africa), organized and led by Japan, will challenge and overthrow the dominant white race. Mr. Lothrop Stoddard's *Rising Tide of Color*, and other works of the same kind, have given form and substance to a Yellow Peril spectre, as fantastic in its way as Kaiser Wilhelm's famous vision of China's warlike millions ranged in battle array against the pale legions of the West.

The limits of this article do not permit, nor does the occasion require, any detailed exposition of the absurdity of this Pan-Asian delusion. In propounding their scheme for the settlement of the Far Eastern question to the Washington Conference, the American State Department and the British Foreign Office will have work and to spare in dealing with the actual and immediate difficulties of the situation. The theory of profound racial antagonism is obviously incompatible with the proclaimed intention of the British and American governments to substitute a spirit of coöperation and mutuality for the intense spirit of competition in solving the problems which arise out of the political and financial disorganization of China. It is a theory that cannot be

Digitized by Google

invoked without weakening the whole Anglo-American position in the matter of the Asiatic Exclusion acts, and stultifying their essential justification, which rests on economic, as distinct from racial, grounds.

Mr. Lloyd George has recently declared that the foreign policy of Great Britain, as a partly Asiatic empire, 'can never range itself in any sense upon the differences of race and civilization between East and West. It would be fatal to the Empire. No greater calamity can overtake the world than any further accentuation of its divisions upon the lines of race. We look confidently to the Government and people of the United States for their understanding and sympathy in this respect. Friendly coöperation with the United States is for us a cardinal principle, dictated by what seems to us the proper nature of things, dictated by instinct quite as much as by reason and by common sense.'

Mr. Lloyd George's words undoubtedly express the sentiments of the great majority of his countrymen. Every discussion of the question of the Anglo-Japanese Alliance, by the Imperial Conference, in Parliament, and in the press, has served to emphasize the general opinion that the treaty should be renewed, but in a form that will give no umbrage, and evoke no misgivings, in the United States. The Australian Premier has declared that 'Australia's safety lies in a renewal of the Anglo-Japanese Alliance, and that it is her bounden duty to use every means at her disposal to effect such a *modus vivendi* as will secure it in a form agreeable to the United States.' On a later occasion, Mr. Hughes expressed the opinion (which has found wide support in the British press) that, in the event of a tripartite understanding being reached between America, Great Britain, and Japan, dealing with the Far East and with disarmament be no necessity for a re Anglo-Japanese Alliance.

II

As matters now stand, t necessary, to remove th difficulties and dangers of ern situation, and to dimini of friction between Jap United States, is the con international agreement fo tion, by concerted action, of law and order in China. are taken, and that spee end, there can be no pro permanent settlement of t ern question. American in such an agreement, and national Council' to carry is a solution that presents culties; nevertheless, it is that affords practical mea out the American idea of f eration, and the only way end to the chaos of misrul a spirit of genuine friend Chinese people. Failing ican participation, the An Alliance, renewed unde consistent with the Cov League of Nations, woul offer the only alternative s problem; the only one, a that would provide Engl leverage necessary to secu maintenance of the Op trade, a revision of the Sh tion, and the settlement o of difference in the Far E

Assuming that the first for the Washington Co spirit of harmony and he tween the representativ powers, whose ultimate limitation of armaments, to invite China's particip Conference, though diplo

Digitized by Google

nd, is calculated, in
rate the ends desired.
dy ample evidence in
l in the United States,
presentatives on this
orm faithfully to their
of setting one bar-
nother, and will do
ir power to make the
ena of enmity and sus-
undeniable eloquence
of that highly vocal
g China which pro-
t belief in American
ideals will be concen-
eal to the chivalrous
American people, and
o doubt be powerfully
ny of the missionary
he Y.M.C.A., which
thize with the aspira-
ils and protégés to be-
ant force in Chinese
already evidence that
nces of adroit diplo-
s like Mr. Wellington
g, and the press prop-
d by Putnam Weale,
ners in Chinese pay,
ssor Dewey's distin-
ion lends additional
eved considerable re-
tion indicated; that is
ve created an atmos-
y toward Japan, and
-Japanese Alliance, in
es. Something of the
propaganda and ap-
e discerned in the dis-
tate Department that
correspondence ante-
tablishment of the In-
ncial Consortium last

the object of the Amer-
, as expressed in these
o eliminate all special
lar spheres of interest
throw open the whole

country, *including Manchuria and Mongolia*, without reserve, to the combined activities of the Consortium. The British Government, at the outset, gave friendly support to this proposal; but inasmuch as it conflicted obviously with certain accomplished facts and recorded pacts, it was possible to do so only by concurring vaguely in the benevolent argument that, 'with the establishment of the Consortium, a new era was about to dawn, in which conditions have changed, and that the powers therefore propose henceforward to work together in harmonious and friendly coöperation, rather than in competition.'

The Japanese Ambassador's reply to the dispatch in which Lord Curzon supported this argument tactfully refrained from discussing the practical effects of the 'new era' upon international politics. He contented himself with reiterating his Government's reliance upon the British Government's explicit assurance that the powers would refuse to countenance any activities of the Consortium 'affecting the security of the economic life or the national defense of Japan,' a reservation capable of the widest application, and one which leaves the question of Japan's 'special interests' in the same nebulous condition as that in which it remained after the Lansing-Ishii agreement of 1917.

III

The line that China's representatives and advisers may be expected to adopt at Washington was clearly indicated some months ago by the Chinese Minister in London, Mr. Wellington Koo, well known in the United States. They will undoubtedly present a glowing picture of the Chinese Republic, successfully progressing toward Utopia by the development of liberal ideas and democratic institutions, all regardless

Digitized by Google

of the fact that these are as remote as the planet Mars from all the realities of the situation in China. They will make eloquent appeal to the sympathies of the civilized world, in the name of Democracy, on behalf of Young China's chimerical Republic, and of its splendid programme of purely imaginary reforms. In the typical words of Putnam Weale, they will 'claim their place in the family of nations, not only on terms of equality, but as representatives of Liberalism and subscribers to all those sanctions on which the civilization of peace rests.' They will continue to describe the social activities and academic theories of a few thousand 'Western-learning' students and journalists as truly representative of the political convictions and institutions of the Chinese people.

And all the while they will complacently ignore the lamentable and notorious facts of China's actual position, the utter demoralization and inevitable bankruptcy of the Peking Government, the lawlessness and insatiable greed of the military chieftains, whose rabble armies have devastated the country for the last ten years, and the untold sufferings of the defenseless people, more pitiful to-day than ever they were under the Manchus. Above all, they will carefully refrain from admission of the undeniable truth that the political and financial ascendancy which Japan has established at Peking, and the rapid advance of her 'peaceful penetration' in Manchuria and Mongolia, are direct results of the incorrigible money-lust of the mandarin class, more flagrantly displayed by the officials of the Republic than under the old régime. They will earnestly invoke the assistance of America and England against Japan, for the restoration of China's rights in Shantung, and of her unfettered sovereignty over the Northern dependencies; but they will say nothing of the lamentable fact
of Yuan Shih-k'
political factions
for mastery at
each other in
in return for
many rights, priv
calculated to jeop
political indepen
Early this year
in London gave
indication of the
by China's repres
coming Conferen
renewal of the An
They desire to pr
against any refer
renewed, to 'the
territorial integri
pendence of Chi
derogatory to the
sovereign State,
sentiment of her
Inasmuch as th
presence at the
voke assistance f
China's sovereign
test may be regard
vice, a mild bluff
gallery, based on
of Oriental stated
ask for the abroga
demands' agreem
Shih-k'ai in May,
of a Japanese ult
restoration of Ch
in Shantung. He
point of the Far E
it is undeniable t
one demands, Jap
the opportunities
in Europe and t
China, to regulari
position at Chin
tung (as successor
Manchuria, East
and on the coast
Now, it must
satisfactory resul

Digitized by Google

from the Washington Conference, except upon the initial assumption that henceforward Japan, in concert with England and the United States, is prepared to coöperate loyally in practical measures for the restoration of law, order, trade, and sound finance, in China. This assumption implies, not only the definite cessation of the Japanese military party's activities in Peking, but the abandonment by Japan, as part of a general self-sacrificing agreement between the powers, of all claims to 'special interests' in any province of China proper, such as those which were created by the twenty-one demands in 1915, and subsequently by the secret 'military agreement,' concluded in March, 1918, with the corrupt clique then in power at Peking.

Having discussed these questions with many of the leading statesmen and publicists in Japan, I firmly believe that the Japanese Government is prepared to welcome an Anglo-American-Japanese understanding, having as its avowed object a common reconstructive policy in China. Even before the prospect of a limitation of armaments had emphasized the desirability of such an understanding, the Japanese Prime Minister had declared (1919) his Government's readiness to coöperate in the difficult task of restoring financial and administrative order in China, with due regard to her sovereign rights. Many things have happened in the last five years to lead the rulers of Japan to perceive that persistence in the aggressive 'forward' policy of the military party can lead only to a dangerous position of national isolation, besides involving the over-taxed people in further heavy expenditure. For these and other reasons, there appear to be valid grounds for expecting good results from the Conference, provided that responsible American opinion be not misled by the specious pleadings of China's representatives, into finding in the gospel of the 'new era,' tidings of comfort and joy for all the world — with the exception, and to the detriment, of Japan.

In particular, the question of Shantung, though apparently simple enough in its broad moral aspect, will require delicate handling. China and the United States, not being parties to the Treaty of Versailles, may be justified in questioning the decision of the Allies, whereby Japan obtained the reversion of Germany's exclusive privileges in Shantung; but the fact must not be overlooked that America's representative and President was a consenting party to that decision; also that, because of it, Japan agreed to withdraw from discussion the thorny question of 'racial equality.' In originally raising that question, Japan practically claimed recognition of her right to equal opportunity in the matter of migration overseas; and President Wilson, unable to concede that claim, was fain to compromise it along the line of least resistance — that is, at China's expense.

As for the position of China in the matter, it is evident that the activities of her diplomats and publicists are inspired rather by the desire to create dissension between Japan and the United States than by genuine zeal for the integrity and independence of their country. For the men who strain so noisily at the Shantung gnat are the same as those who quietly swallowed the camel of the secret military agreement (to which I have already referred) — a pact concluded by their Government, of its own accord, with Japan, which made Peking, for all practical purposes, a subsidized dependency of Tokyo.

IV

Two fundamental facts must be faced at the outset by the Conference if the Far Eastern problem is to be solved

Digitized by Google

in a spirit of mutuality and helpfulness. First, that China's military weakness, financial chaos, and internecine strife now constitute the root-cause of the problem. This fact requires no demonstration for anyone who has studied the situation. Second, that Japan is impelled, by acute economic pressure, either to seek new outlets for her surplus population overseas, or to endeavor to secure such a position of economic advantage in the undeveloped regions of the Asiatic mainland, adjacent to her frontiers, as shall enable her to maintain and increase her industries, and thereby feed her people, at home.

Japan's imperative need of expansion is, indeed, an undeniable and constant factor in the Far Eastern problem. Morally speaking, and from the political idealist's point of view, it is, of course, lamentable that any race or nation should expand at the expense of another; nevertheless, *pace* the 'new-era' doctrine, the struggle for supremacy and survival between races has not ended with the Treaty of Versailles, and the ideal of self-determination must always prove to be an empty phrase when confronted with the elemental instinct of self-preservation. Japan has expanded into Korea, and is thence expanding northward and westward, impelled by the same instincts and impulses as those which have peopled England's colonies and doubled the territory and number of the United States.

America's naval programme affords more convincing testimony to the realities of the situation than all the acts of the apostles of pacifism. The conflict between benevolent idealism and the stern facts of existence is as old as the hills; and despite humanitarians and vegetarians, the inexorable law remains that all life on this planet exists and persists at the cost of other lives. Charm they never so wisely, it will need more than the el idealists to convince resp men that this instinct and pressure behind it can b invoking a new era of u ism. The philosophers found the stone which people that cries for brea

Considered in this ligh the Far Eastern discussi ably be found to lie in t Japan's claim to 'special Manchuria and Mongoli the abrogation of the demands agreement of 191 in fact, that Japan shou 'leased' territory of the insula, including Daire Arthur, at the date name inal Russian lease (that March, 1923), and that years' term — subsequen in compliance with the demands ultimatum — sh annulled. But no good p served by ignoring the t original 'lease' of the Li sula by China to Russia w thing but a diplomatic fic device whereby the face Chang was partially sav sense, if not common jus recognition of the lame that China's sovereign ri churia and Mongolia w doomed when Russian di cluded the original 'lea with China's complaisan that compact, Japan's ec ence and national security ened with dangers so im war between her and R inevitable.

The development of a economic and political as Japan in Manchuria and euphemistically described sing-Ishii agreement as 's ests — became equally ine

Digitized by Google

Portsmouth, Russia conqueror the leased ung and the South ay. China not only arrangement, but by ses of an agreement led between her Gov- in December, 1905, lf of valuable rights, ed for her by the uth, in regard to the ustrial development By pledging herself ailways which might South Manchurian possible for Japan to quently did, in part- sia) all British and ises in that region. privileged position fluence on the main- and west of Korea is tion, not only as one but of indisputable tablished at the cost ars, and subsequent- neans of concessions China's rulers in oans. To suggest (as d Curzon and Mr. nsortium dispatches churia and Mongolia gral 'provinces' of rded and dealt with the same way as the of China proper, is realities of the situa- on elementary geog- .

dependency, stands recisely the same rela- is not easy to under- grounds Great Brit- required China to ns to effective sover- nomous Tibet, can Mongolia (which has ndence of Peking) as China. Nor can any valid process of reasoning justify England or America in supporting China's contention that Japan should now surrender, or greatly modify, her claims to 'special interests' in Manchuria. The arguments and attitude of Japan's representatives at Versailles clearly demonstrated their determination to insist upon recognition of those interests, as an equitable *quid pro quo* for our Asiatic Exclusion acts and all that they imply. The same determination was unmistakably manifested in the negotiation and conclusion of the Lansing-Ishii agreement in 1917.

To sum up. If England, America, and Japan now concur in recognizing the critical condition of affairs in China, and unite, in a common purpose of good-will, to restore her stability of government and to protect her sovereignty, the resources of diplomacy should be capable of devising a practical and equitable solution of the Far Eastern problem. Frank discussion of the existing situation should entail, *pari passu* with reasonable recognition of Japan's established position in Manchuria and Mongolia, the simultaneous restoration to China, by all the powers concerned, of 'leased' territories in China proper, the withdrawal of all foreign garrisons and post-offices from the eighteen provinces, and the abandonment therein of all claims to spheres of influence and concessions, which conflict with the sovereignty of China and the principle of equal opportunity.

Given such an agreement, concerted measures for the restoration of the Central Government's authority and fiscal machinery, for the effective disbandment of the *tuchuns*' irregular forces, and for financial reorganization, might be profitably discussed with China's representatives. But, pending the application of such remedial measures, it is foolish and futile to talk of restoring the unfettered authority of

Digitized by Google

the Chinese Government in Mánchuria and Mongolia, for the simple reason that there is no effective government in China. Under existing conditions, the rapid economic development of these dependencies, which has resulted from Japan's railway and mining enterprises, has proved of immediate benefit, not only to China's revenues, but to large numbers of Chinese workers and settlers, who have poured into the country from Shantung and Chihli, attracted by good wages and the prospect of immunity from the lawlessness that preys upon all forms of productive industry, as the result of chronic misrule under the Chinese Republic.

A word, in conclusion, with the political idealists who would have us believe in the impending federation of the world by virtue of Christianity and faith in the blessings of Democracy. It were well for the peace of mankind if they could be led to realize the simple truth that the impact a the West have tended cohesive and self-sufficie China's patriarchal syst ment, without supplyin practical value in its plac civilization, probably t certainly the oldest, that produced, is now in dan ing, as so many others by contact with our m armor-plated culture, i with soulless internat Time will show whether disintegration wrought ruptive influences can arrested by a new policy coöperation, for China's the friendly powers, so her independence as a restore peace and pros people. Reduced to sim is the real Far Eastern q awaits the deliberations o ton Conference.

ARE WE GIVING JAPAN A SQUARE DE

BY E. ALEXANDER POWELL

I

THE key to Japanese militarism and imperialism is to be found in the dual government that exists in Japan. There is the constitutional government — the Cabinet, the Diet, consisting of the House of Peers and the House of Representatives, and the administrative bureaucracy — with which the world is familiar. But there is also an invisible government, an unseen empire, composed of a clique of mili men with military affilia by the Genro, or Elder St the General Staff of the A strument. Of the two the latter is by far the m Japanese policy, particul affairs, is invariably sh unseen government, its ally being translated by

Digitized by Google

ent's actions. The two interests are by no pposed, are of necessity ermixed, like interlock-. For example, many permanent civil bureau-, the bureau chiefs and re drawn from the mili- which is identical with rnment, with which, as ted, they work in har-

of the Japanese State peror, generally spoken as the Mikado ('Hon- title comparable with , and by his own sub-, or Heavenly King. peror, Yoshihito, is the d twenty-second of his to Japanese history, from 660 B.C. when d the throne. But as do not carry us back D. 712, the reigns and ery early monarchs are ocryphal. Still, the fact pan has been ruled by ynasty ever since the story, in which respect nong all the nations of he Constitution of 1889 mbines in himself the ignty and exercises the cutive powers, with the tance of the nine Cabi- He alone can make war, and conclude treaties. the Cabinet and the small body of men, the nose by whose genius vas raised to her present nong the nations. They the Genrō, or Elder the present time only - Field-Marshal Prince quis Okuma, and Mar- . These three old men rs of Japan.

Now let me make it clear that the Elder Statesmen are neither appointed nor elected. Indeed, there is no such office as that of Elder Statesman *per se*. You will find no mention of them in the Japan Year-Book or other works of reference. They are not officials, though they hold the reins of power, though by virtue of their rank they have seats in the House of Peers. They are private citizens who, because of their experience and sagacity, are the trusted advisers of the Emperor, as they were of his father before him. They are so firmly intrenched in the confidence of the Emperor and great nobles; they are the embodiment of traditions so indissolubly linked with the history of the Empire; the social, political, financial, and military interests which they represent are so powerful; that all attempts to dislodge them or seriously to weaken their influence have met with failure.

The invisible government of which the Elder Statesmen are the head and brains is not a modern development; it goes back into Japanese history for centuries. For nearly a thousand years Japan has had a nominal government and another unacknowledged government, the latter more or less cloaked and independent of check or control, existing side by side. This unseen empire dates from the period of the Shogunate, during which the Emperor was the titular ruler and the Shogun the actual ruler of Japan. When the Shogunate was abolished in 1868, and the unification of the country under the Emperor Mutsuhito begun, the task of reconstruction was undertaken by the *daimyo*, or feudal nobles. They became the officials of the new government and directed the transformation of Japan into a modern state. Their descendants fill those offices to-day.

When it is remembered that the present officeholders are almost all members of the ancient military clans,

Digitized by Google

it is not difficult to understand the ascendancy of the militarists in Japanese politics. For example, nearly all the members of the military clique belong to the Chosun clan, while the navy clique is recruited from the Satsuma clan. The acknowledged leader of them all, the uncrowned ruler of Japan, is Prince Yamagata, himself a soldier and a field-marshal. The Emperor, feeble in health and mind, in spite of the profound veneration in which he is still held by the great mass of his subjects, is a ruler only in name.

Of the nine members of the Cabinet, two — the Minister of War and the Minister of Marine — are not answerable for their actions to the Premier, but are responsible only to the Emperor — which, translated, means the Elder Statesmen. As a result of this anomalous situation, these two ministers can, and frequently do, defy the Premier and block legislation. In fact, a former Prime Minister resigned because he was unable to find men for these portfolios who would consent to carry out his policies. As the members of the Cabinet are appointed by the Emperor, instead of, as is the custom in most European countries, by the Premier, it is self-evident that no one could obtain the portfolio of war or of marine unless he was *persona gratissima* to the militarist party. This closest of close corporations is still further bound together by family ties, the present Minister of War, Major-General Giichi Tanaka, being a son-in-law of Prince Yamagata.

It is this curious relic of feudal times which is responsible for those failures to keep her agreements which have done so much to lose for Japan the confidence of other nations. Japan's failure to abide by her promise to evacuate Siberia upon the withdrawal of the American and other Allied troops provides a case in point. This commitment was made to the U and her European allies by tutional Government, as rep Premier Hara. I have goo believe that, in making th the Government was enti and that it fully intended the evacuation. But the uns ment — by which is meant ist party — wished Japan in Siberia, for reasons of wanted territory in that re ritory rich in mines and for here was an easy way to not know precisely what pr followed by the militarists but I imagine that it was like this. Prince Yamagat with the authority of the E formed his son-in-law, the War, that the occupation of to be continued; whereupo ister of War, presumably consent of the Premier, and sibly without his knowled of withdrawing the Siberia reinforced them. It thus impossible for the constitu ernment to keep the agreem made, Premier Hara, in ord his face,' as they say in th forced to explain his failu draw the troops by assert had been found necessary them in Siberia temporari to guard Japan from Bolshe Result: loss of confidence b powers in Japan's promises

The effect on foreign opin usurpation of power by th government is recognized b al element in Japan; as witn editorial in the *Yomi-Yuri S*

'It is regrettable that t tions of the Japanese Gove often not taken seriously. regard Japan as a country not mean what it says. Th portant reasons for this will

Digitized by Google

militarists, whose ut-
ause of the Govern-
being misunderstood
he militarist evil is
undred declarations
orial ambitions will
vince the Powers.'
placed the Govern-
embarrassing a posi-
t year as in Siberia.
rred to action by the
panese troops, issued
litary forces in Korea
dinated to the civil
e military, backed by
nment, virtually ig-
, the newly appointed
, Baron Saito, being
his commands where
concerned. Should
ter resent such at-
ne policy of the Gov-
eal to the Emperor,
be appealing to the
who, as I have ex-
etween the Emperor
Or, should the Diet
check on the militar-
o pass the army ap-
uld have no effect on
in such a case the
r from the previous
ct access to the Em-
funds of the Imperial
is the richest in the
rists never lack for
when all is said and
who hold the purse-
seen, therefore, that
remier, Mr. Hara, is
one too strong posi-
party and the forces
ed by Prince Yama-
h power for him. The
for the Government
Minister of Foreign
mmitments to other
seen government ig-
itments and leaves it

to the Premier to explain as best he can. There you have the real reason why Japan seems so often to violate her treaty obligations. She is not insincere in making them. The men who make them are not the men who break them.

This continued exercise of irresponsible authority by the military party is the most important and the most dangerous factor in the whole Japanese question. Until the invisible and irresponsible powers behind the throne are suppressed in favor of the constitutional Government, there can be no real hope of a satisfactory understanding between Japan and the United States. A democracy like ours cannot do business with a government that is masked; we must know with whom we are dealing. If Japan sincerely desires the friendship of the United States, then she must give valid assurances that the declared policies of her Government will henceforward be binding on her military, as well as her civil agents.

II

Although close observers have of late detected a noticeable change in the attitude of the younger generation of Japanese toward the Emperor, who is no longer venerated as he has been by past generations, and although the strength of the anti-militarist party is steadily increasing, to talk glibly, as certain American visitors to Japan have done, of Japanese militarism being on its last legs, is to reveal profound ignorance of the actual conditions. If the system of unseen government were merely transitory, it might readily yield before the growth of education and enlightened opinion. But it is not transitory. Its tentacles reach deep into the traditions of the Empire. It would be strange, indeed, if the militarists were not dominant in Japan, for the whole history of the nation is

Digitized by Google

punctuated by wars, feuds, and revolutions; it climbed to its present position as one of the Great Powers on the guns of its battleships and the bayonets of its soldiers; it has always been ruled by military men. The militarism which pervades the nation is vitalized, moreover, by Japan's obsession that she is hemmed in by a ring of enemies. The truth of the matter is that the great majority of Japanese look to the militarists as the saviors of the Empire.

Although the Japanese are gradually becoming more democratic in their tendencies, let us not delude ourselves into thinking that the disappearance of militarism is a probability of the not far distant future. That it will eventually disappear is as certain as that dawn follows the dark. But it may take a generation, or more. That the militarists will remain in the ascendant during the lifetime of the Elder Statesmen there can be little doubt. Not until the grip of those aged dictators has been relaxed by death is the power of the militarists likely to wane. Nor is there any certainty that it will wane then; for in recent years their power has been immensely strengthened by a force far mightier and more sinister than that of the Elder Statesmen. I refer to the force of organized capital, of Big Business. As Mr. Nathaniel Peffer, one of the shrewdest and best-informed students of Far Eastern politics, has shown, it is Big Business that has reinforced and is keeping in power the unseen government — the military party.

Only recently has modern industrial Japan awakened to a realization of its own strength. But it is now fully alive to the almost unlimited power, the endless possibilities, to be realized by the great business interests of the country joining hands and working together for a common purpose. One who could trace, through the political structure of the Empire, the ramifications of the great industrial and tradi would be in a position to anese politics, domestic Those policies of the Japa ment which are usually a foreigners to the ambition tarists are in reality due t nations of the capitalists have the key to the annex rea, to Japanese aggressio ria and Siberia, to the demands made on China, t tion to the restoration o All of those regions are im in natural resources; they ited possibilities for profita tion. And it is Japanese which proposes to do th So, in order to obtain contr ritories which it proposes has joined forces with the militarists. It is the most bination of high politics a ness that the world has ev

Dominating Japanese finance are a few great c Mitsui, Mitsubishi, Suz Sumitomo, Kuhara, Ta kawa. So much larger tha that they are in a class by are the Mitsui and Mits panies, owned respectiv Mitsui and Iwasaki famil it is a common saying in J one knows where Mitsui Government begins. Th sink deep into every phas life — commercial, industr political. They own ban steamship lines, mills, fac yards, mines, forests, pla surance companies, tradi tions. They and the lea unseen government are as by marriage, mutual intere locking directorates as Pres boasted that the Treaty was intertwined with the the League of Nations.

Digitized by Google

eat companies, ac-
r, has its political,
alliances with the
seen government.
one of the Elder
l by marriage to the
have said, own the
subishi. The same
with the opposition
der, Viscount Kato,
asaki's son-in-law.
er Statesmen, Mar-
adviser to one of
ties. The late Mar-
ld in turn the port-
re and commerce,
ce, and foreign af-
onnected with the
The late Field-Mar-
ne time Prime Min-
one of the foremost
ry party, was equal-
relationship which
e's success in ob-
cts and concessions
Asia. And so with
men of the Empire
tesmen of both po-
h has his relation-
financial house, to
ustry. Big Business
ns with the militar-
s schemes the sup-
government, which
gthened by the affili-
rists with Big Busi-
oss-ruff at bridge.

II

lies oversea.' In
found the policy of
al combination that
annexation of For-
d Sakhalin, the oc-
ria and Siberia and
as the world sup-
f haphazard land-
ses of a vast and

carefully laid scheme, which has for its aim the eventual control of all Eastern Asia. Ostensibly to solve the problems with which she has been confronted by her amazing increase in population and production, but in reality to gratify the ambitions of the militaristic-financial clique, Japan has embarked on a campaign of world-expansion and exploitation. Convinced that she requires a colonial empire in her business, she has set out to build one as she would build a bridge or a dry-dock. The fact that she had nothing, or next to nothing, to start with did not worry her at all. Having once made up her mind that the realization of her political, economic, and territorial ambitions necessitated the acquirement of overseas dominions, she has permitted nothing to stand in the way of her getting them. In other words, wherever an excuse can be provided for raising a flagstaff, whether on an ice-floe in the Arctic or an island in the Pacific, there the Rising Sun flag shall flutter; wherever trade is to be found, there Yokohama cargo-boats shall drop their anchors, there Osaka engines shall thunder over Kobe rails, there Kyoto silks and Nagoya cottons shall be sold by merchants speaking the language of Nippon. It is a scheme astounding by its very vastness, as methodically planned and systematically conducted as an American presidential campaign; and already, thanks to Japanese audacity, aggressiveness, and perseverance, backed up by Japanese banks, battleships, and bayonets, it is much nearer realization than the world imagines.

In China, Siberia, and the Philippines, in California, Canada, and Mexico, in the East Indies, Australia, and New Zealand, on three continents and on all the islands of the Eastern seas, Japanese merchants and Japanese money are working twenty-four hours

Digitized by Google

a day, building up that overseas empire of which the financiers and the militarists dream. The activities of Japan's outposts of commerce and finance are as varied as commerce and finance themselves. Their voices are heard in every Eastern market-place; their footsteps resound in every avenue of Oriental endeavor. Their mines in Siberia and China and Manchuria rival the cave of Al-ed-Din. The railways that converge on Peking from the north and east, the great trunk-line across Manchuria, and the eastern section of the trans-Siberian system are already in their hands. They work tea-plantations in China, coffee-plantations in Java, rubber-plantations in Malaya, cocoanut-plantations in Borneo, hemp-plantations in the Philippines, spice-plantations in the Celebes, sugar-plantations in Hawaii, prune-orchards in California, apple-orchards in Oregon, coal-mines in Manchuria, gold-mines in Korea, forests in Siberia, fisheries in Kamchatka. Their argosies, flying the house-flags of the Toyo Kisen Kaisha, the Nippon Yusen Kaisha, the Osaka Shosen Kaisha, and a score of other lines, bear Japanese goods to Japanese traders on all the seaboards of the Orient, while Japanese warships are constantly a-prowl, all up and down the Eastern seas, ready to protect the interests thus created by the menace of their guns.

In regions where Japanese banks are in control and Japanese settlers abound, it is seldom difficult for Japan to find an excuse for aggression. It may be that a Japanese settler is mistreated or a Japanese consul insulted, or that a Japanese bank has difficulty in collecting its debts. So the slim cables flash the complaint to Tokyo; there are secret consultations between the militaristic leaders and the chieftains of Big Business; a spokesman of the unseen government rises in the Diet to announce that, in Siberi
Japanese interests have
gered or Japanese dignit
the newspapers controlled
ness inflame the national
the heads of the invisible
speaking with the autho
Emperor, issue the neces
to the Ministers of War
and before the country
awakens to a realization of
pening, Japanese transp
anchor in her harbors a
troops are disembarking
Before they are withdraw
are withdrawn, — Japan
ceeds in extorting a conces
a railway, or to work a co
underwrite a loan, or a
year lease of a harbor w
converted into a naval
cession of a more or less v
of territory — and so t
building up an overseas
merrily and steadily on.

Now this steady territori
— or, rather, the aggressiv
that has produced it — h
aroused suspicion abroad o
tentions. In less than a qua
tury the area of the Empi
from 148,000 to 261,000 s
And virtually every foot of t
ritory has been won by the
have seen Formosa and the
filched, as spoils of war, fro
China. We have witnessed
Korea. We have observed
become Japanese in fact, if
We have watched first So
now Northern Sakhalin br
the rule of Tokyo. We ha
Rising Sun flag hoisted
chow, the Marshalls, and
lines. We have noted Ja
tance to withdraw from Sh
permit the neutralization
have watched the armies
pushing deeper and deeper

Digitized by Google

wing altogether, as
ment had promised.
nded Japanese ask
n the face of such
ism, we are not jus-
n and apprehension.
ır suspicion of Jap-
is directly traceable
tial stories told by
ng from the East,
and navy officers, of
esigns against the
stantiation of these
to the temptation
at natural wealth of
ne alleged alarming
umber of Japanese
y in Mindanao; and
fact that the Philip-
ngation of the Jap-
(Were you aware
nosa], the southern-
nd, can be seen from
uzon on a clear day?)
nes would be an ob-
attack in the event
e United States and
e conclusion. What
ight be were we to
islands, leaving the
their own canoe, is,
uestion. But of this
things stand to-day
designs whatsoever
pines. Look at it
at of common sense.
n embark on a war
werful country like
in order to seize the
ch, as she doubtless
d not permanently
nout the risk of war,
f to even more valu-
n nearer home? It is
an is opposed to the
Philippines, which
as a threat against
are opposed to and
ohibit the establish-

ment of a fortified Japanese naval base on the coast of Mexico. While on the subject of the Philippines, here is an interesting bit of secret history. Viscount Kaneko told me that, some years prior to the Spanish-American War, Spain approached Japan with an offer to sell her the Philippines for eight million dollars gold, and that Japan declined the offer on the ground that the islands were too far away for her to administer satisfactorily and that their climate was not suitable for Japanese to live in.

Another reason for our distrust of the peacefulness of Japanese intentions is to be found in the fact that, at a time when other nations are seriously discussing the question of disarmament, Japan announces a military programme which calls for an army with a war-time strength of close to five million men, thereby making her the greatest military power on earth, and a naval programme designed to give her eight battleships and eight battle-cruisers, each to be replaced by a new vessel every eight years. Japan asserts that these vast armies, this powerful armada, should not be interpreted as a threat against ourselves. But, we naturally ask, against whom, then, are they intended? Surely not against her ally, England, or against revolution-torn Russia, or against prostrate Germany, or against decrepit China. Leaving these out of the question, who is left?

But there are two sides to every question. Let us look for a moment at Japan's. Is it not fair and reasonable to judge her by ourselves? What should we say if the Japanese charged us with planning a war against them because we are increasing our naval strength? We are building a navy for national defense. Japan is building one for precisely the same reason. Defense against whom, you ask? Well, if you wish to know the truth, defense against

Digitized by Google

the United States. For, grotesque as such an assertion may appear to Americans, the majority of Japanese are convinced that we are deliberately trying to force a war upon them. As evidence of this, they point to the discriminatory and humiliating treatment which we have accorded to Japanese in the United States; to our opposition to Japan's legitimate ambitions on the mainland of Asia; to our blocking the insertion in the Covenant of the League of Nations of a clause recognizing Japanese racial equality; to our refusal to recognize the Japanese mandate for the former German possessions in the Pacific; to our unofficial but none the less active support of China in the controversy over Shantung; to the strengthening of our naval bases at Cavite and Pearl Harbor; and finally, to the long succession of sneers, gibes, and insults indulged in by American jingoes, anti-Japanese politicians, and certain sections of the American press. Viewing the situation without prejudice, it seems to me that Japan has as good ground for her suspicion of us as we have for our suspicion of her.

IV

Finally, we come to the most pressing, the most delicate, and the most dangerous of all the questions in dispute between the two countries — that of Japanese immigration into the United States. Now I have no intention of embarking on a discussion of the *pros* and *cons* of this question. But, because I have found that most Americans have of it only an inexact and fragmentary knowledge, and because a rudimentary knowledge of it is essential to a clear understanding of the larger question, our relations with Japan, it is necessary for me to sketch in briefest outline the events leading up to the present immigration situation.

Under the administrative interpre- tation of our naturalizatio anese aliens are ineligible citizenship. But down to of 1908 there was no restric anese immigration. In tha ever, the much-discussed ' Agreement,' whereby Jap ers are excluded from States, went into effect. ment is not in the shape treaty or undertaking. T plies simply to the substan ber of informal notes ex tween the then Secretar Elihu Root, and the Japan sador in Washington. Und of this agreement we ann no Japanese could enter ou Japan or Hawaii withou passport from their own and Japan promised in tur passports to laborers. The no charge that Japan has f both letter and spirit of thi with absolute integrity. Japanese Foreign Office h leaned backward in its ende faith. But the labor elemen nia, unable to meet Japane competition and jealous success, continued their ese agitation, being aided b seeking the labor vote; an law prohibiting the purch by Japanese in that state on the statute-books of Ca

But there were certain lo by this law which made it agricultural land to be leas years by Japanese; for lan chased by corporations in anese were interested: an to be purchased by Am children of Japanese parent up these loopholes the Orie sion League circulated a place an initiative act — k Alien Land Act — on the 1920. To bolster up its a

Digitized by Google

called attention to
of the Japanese
rnia. This increase
s due, it was claim-
llowed by many of
e settlers in Cali-
tures sent to them
ble girls, to whom
in absentia, these
brides,' being thus
ing the right under
ir husbands in the
nore picture brides,
nd the more child-
passing under Jap-
the Japanese cir-
rohibition against
by purchasing in
nerican-born child-
natically American
n the parents were
. Japan, in order
source of contro-
, 1920, ceased to
'picture brides.'
sfy the anti-Japan-
rnia, which succeed-
option of the Alien
opular vote. This
ost stringent meas-
inst the civil rights
United States —
ibition (*a*) of land-
se; (*b*) of leasing of
y Japanese; (*c*) of
ompanies or corpo-
anese are interest-
rship by Japanese
United States, by
n the guardianship
ch cases.
n November, 1920,
ried by a minority
ers and by a three-
who expressed an
ct. The vote stood
222,086 opposed.
he Japanese immi-
to the minute.

Now, the point I wish to emphasize is this: the Japanese are not clamoring for the removal of any of the present restrictions on Japanese immigration. They consider these restrictions offensive and humiliating, — that goes without saying, — but they concede our right to decide who shall enter our doors and who shall stay out. Not for a moment, however, have the Japanese accepted our assertion that our exclusion of them is based on economic grounds. They know, and we know, that the cause of their exclusion is racial. No one realizes more clearly than the Japanese that, in excluding them from the United States, we have virtually proclaimed them an inferior race. I repeat, however, that they concede our right to exclude whom we please. But what they do not concede, what they will not agree to, is the right of the United States, or of any state in the United States, to discriminate against those Japanese who are lawfully resident in this country. To attempt to deprive those Japanese dwelling within our borders of the personal and property rights that we grant to all other aliens is so obviously unjust that it scarcely merits discussion. The Japanese have excellent grounds for believing that such discriminatory legislation is unconstitutional; they know that it constitutes an open defiance of justice and equity. They feel — and their feeling is shared, apparently, by the 222,000 Californians who voted against it — that such legislation makes ridiculous our oft-repeated boast that we stand for the 'Square Deal.'

The bitterness of Japanese resentment over the immigration question is not entirely due, however, to wounded racial pride, but quite as much, I think, to the rudeness and lack of tact which have characterized the anti-Japanese campaign in California. For it should

Digitized by Google

be remembered that in no country is the code of social courtesy or consideration for aliens so rigidly observed as in Japan. In dealing with the Japanese nothing is ever gained by insults or bullying. Politeness is the shibboleth of all classes, and the lowest coolie usually responds to it instantly. Is it to be wondered at, then, that the Japanese are irritated and resentful at the lack of courtesy and ordinary good manners which we have displayed in our handling of so peculiarly delicate a matter as the immigration question?

It may be that local conditions justify the wave of anti-Japanese hysteria which is sweeping the Pacific Coast. It may be that the people of the Western states can offer valid reasons for their constant pin-pricking and irritation of Japan. But I doubt it. I am no stranger to California, — I have lived there, off and on, for years, — nor am I ignorant of the relations between labor and politics in that state. That is why I refuse to become excited over the threatened 'conquest' of California by a little group of aliens which comprises only two per cent of the population of the state, and which owns or leases only one and six tenths per cent of its cultivated lands. The Californians assert that their anti-Japanese legislation is a matter for them to decide and does not concern the rest of the country. Therein they are wrong. For in the unwished-for event of war with Japan, it would not be a war between California and Japan, but between the United States and Japan. Therefore, in its treatment of the Japanese, it behooves California to take the rights and interests of the rest of the country into careful consideration. So, because we must all share in the responsibility for California's treatment of the Japanese, let us make certain beyond doubt or quest
treatment is based on equ
tice. Under no conditions
prejudice or political exped
mitted to serve as an excu
the Japanese anything sa
deal.

From talks that I have
with many of the leading n
including the Prime Minist
ter for Foreign Affairs, the
War, and the President of
Peers, I am convinced th
standing can be reached wi
ese Government over the
question, — and, indeed,
the other questions pendin
two nations, including tha
provided we approach
courteous manner and wit
outward show of sympat
liness. My conversation
Japanese leaders showed
have a much clearer unde
our difficulties and perp
most Americans suppose.
well for us to remember t
anese Government is itse
tremely trying position,
leaders are extremely app
the effect on Japanese pu
of any settlement of the
question which might be i
an affront to Japanese ra
national dignity. But of t
sure you: Japan is genui
pathetically, anxious fo
confidence and good-will,
to obtain them, she is prep
almost every concession t
respect will permit and
minded American can den

[1] For many valuable suggestion
important data incorporated in t
deeply indebted to the Hon. Ro
former American Ambassador to
Nathaniel Peffer, Esq., correspon
East of the New York *Tribune*.

(*The End*)

Digitized by Google

AND THE WASHINGTON CONFERENCE

BY HERBERT SIDEBOTHAM

n little public discus-
f the problems of the
ference; but on that
ve been thinking the
ago it used to be said
English politics led to
y did people feel that
nt of the Irish problem
th of the whole State.
nd, the British Gov-
e everything that it
about a settlement;
reached or not rests
n leaders rather than
t any rate, we have
s hoped, to prove the
esire for peace, and to
nge legend of England
ted with Imperialism
ng for the liberty of
as her own interests
this point of view, the
Sinn Fein, whether
il, will serve to strike
of our policy and of
Washington.
Liberal government in
but in the real sense,
domain of foreign af-
s the most liberal gov-
ngland has ever had.
ompare the ease with
humane, liberal idea
in official circles now,
obstinacy it used to
past, and they will
s no idle boast.
ow interest and senti-
the most diverse quar-
shington the focus of

every political orientation just now. Is relief from heavy taxation the dominant desire in the British electorate? It can look nowhere for hope except to the success of Washington in producing some effective scheme of disarmament; for, apart from economy in armaments, the anti-waste compaign is only a succession of cat-calls. Is the conscience overborne with a sense of the horror and wickedness of war? We cannot escape the sense of impending tragedy except by settling before they become acute the political differences in the Far East, which, left alone, are even now shaping themselves toward another great war. Does this man long for the power and opportunity to sweeten the toil of the poor? He too must fix his hopes on Washington, for the expenditure on war is the greatest of obstacles to all political schemes for promoting domestic happiness. Or is that man's principal interest in the personalities of politics? For him, too, Washington will provide one of the most moving of dramas.

By his offer of peace to Ireland, Mr. Lloyd George has proved that war has not dulled the edge of his Liberal faith. If, in addition, he can in conjunction with American statesmen settle the problem of disarmament, which has defied the efforts of good-will for generations, his power is assured for the rest of his life, and the policy of England will be Liberal for another generation, or more. Mr. Lloyd George knows that, and the spur of ambition will speed him in the same direction as the

Digitized by Google

conscience of the people. America need have no fear that our politicians will not take the Washington Conference seriously. They are desperately in earnest about it, and they have every reason — of ambition, of expediency, and of principle — to work hard for success.

America has been led to propose the Conference for reasons that are parallel to, but not identical with, those which lead us to support her effort so warmly. She has, like us, economic reasons for desiring a reduction in the expenditure on armaments, though they are less strong than with us. America has not passed the limit of her taxable capacity (or so it seems to us here) so far as we have done. On the other hand, her political reasons for desiring a settlement with Japan which shall avoid the occasion of war are stronger even than ours. In no conceivable circumstances, should we go to war against America on the side of Japan; our risk of war lies in the remote contingency of our intervention if America were really hard pressed; for we could not afford to let America be defeated any more than America could have afforded to let us be defeated in the late war. And it is safe to say that, if Japan knew that that would be our attitude, there would be no risk of war between her and America. We hold the keys of peace between America and Japan, and America must allow us to use them in the sense that we think would be most effectual for the purposes of peace. If we were to denounce the alliance with Japan, the danger could be met only by a military alliance between England and the United States, by which we should bind ourselves to provide an army for the defense of China against military aggression by Japan. That is a prospect that is agreeable to neither of us. As neither of us wishes to engage in difficult and dangerous operations in China, let us rather use the instrument that we have to hand in the Japanese alli associating Japan with ou vent the occasion of war fr ing. It would be a great mi part of America if she were abandonment of this allian our friendship with her, fo be to precipitate the danger anxious to avoid. But if A to say, 'Make this allianc of preserving peace and that we have in common,' that we should accept with cause we are sure that we c

The main motive, howe dent Harding's invitation ference at Washington is cry against excessive tax fear of war with Japan, b world-policy with which E very close sympathy. A that, if expenditure remain ent height, not only will t of commercial enterprise but an irresistible popula will arise for the repudiati There are people in Engla it too, and on that accoun enhead is believed to be democratize the House of give it some control over order to prevent a chance jority in the House of Co measures of confiscation.

A second motive with that she has made the dis the world is, in the econon one. Nations live on each perity, and the first conditi exchange of commodities state of the exchange in had just made up our mi 'economic man' of the school did not exist, when economic man comes into li is that man; and she is inte political and economic he rope because (apart from sons) without it her own f

Digitized by Google

true is it that na-
thy and prosperous,

nerica, dissatisfied
arrangements made
rence for preserving
rld, knows that she
titude of mere nega-
he rejects those ar-
ist substitute some-
n. That arises from
the political as well
orld is one; indeed,
parate politics and
e than you can sep-
the tail of a coin.
ng into world-poli-
ce but because she
first and most im-
of the Conference.
the decision, not be-
at America will sup-
views of hers, but
a new arbiter in Eu-
whether she agrees
l at any rate speak
iom is the idiom of
which we share. Its
is the view that the
nly the sum of the
mpose it, and has
t entity, which has
nd it follows that it
tion of foreign poli-
chancelleries, to be
h human lives as its
hat the test of for-
he welfare of an ab-
State, but the sum
the individuals who

rence was far from
l, and, so far from
erences between na-
d in sharp conflict
ceptions of foreign
conception, which
te is strong by an-
prosperous by its

depression, secure by strategic combinations and alliances, and the Anglo-American conception, which believes in the family of nations and in a concert of powers based on law and justice. At Paris this conflict could be resolved only by compromise, for, in the face of the enemy, our first duty was at all costs to maintain, at any rate, the semblance of unity. It is nothing to be surprised at that such compromise has aroused dissatisfaction; the wonder rather is that so much promises to be durable. But now the conditions are different. The Paris Conference was governed by the conditions of war; the Washington Conference will be held in an atmosphere of peace — a state, however, not of tranquil acquiescence on the part of the peoples, but of clamant demand that they shall cease to be ridden by the nightmare of the omnipotent State exacting toll of life and treasure from its citizens.

The more one thinks of the work of the Washington Conference, the more one realizes that it must develop into a revision of a great deal that is in the Treaty of Versailles. The article that I wrote for the July number of the *Atlantic Monthly* insisted that no effective disarmament was possible except on the basis of certain political settlements. It was not, therefore, surprising that, for the reasons then advanced and doubtless for many others, President Harding's invitation to a disarmament conference was also an invitation to survey some of the problems that make for swollen armaments by the political friction that they engender. But no survey of political conditions can be restricted artificially to one part of the world, even though that part be a hemisphere like the Pacific. For every political settlement implies a political philosophy, and in laying down conditions in the Pacific, we create a presumption in favor of similar conditions,

Digitized by Google

similar guaranties of the peace, elsewhere. Besides, one main motive of the invitation to the Conference was America's conviction that the world was economically, and therefore politically, one.

One can now distinguish three main divisions of the work of the Conference. These are: —

1. To determine the conditions on which America will be able to take her part in maintaining the peace of the world.

2. To settle certain political problems in the Pacific, more particularly in relation to China.

3. On the basis of this political settlement, to bring about a measure of naval and military disarmament.

Some observations, necessarily general in character, may be offered on each of these divisions in the work of the Conference; more particularly in relation to the policy that England is known to approve, or is likely to advocate there.

It was a great disappointment to England that America could not see her way to join the League of Nations; but her reasons were intelligible, and were not, in enlightened English opinion, referable to mere selfish desire to maintain her old isolation. Nor does it lie with Englishmen, who used to speak of their own 'splendid isolation' from the quarrels of Europe, to reproach America, at the other side of the Atlantic, with her detachment on many matters which seem to us of vital importance. In fact, the Covenant of the League, like many other things done at the Paris Conference, was a compromise between two logical alternatives. Your League of Nations could be one of two things. Either you could give it executive power, or you could deny it that power. In the former alternative, your League, if it was to be effective, would have to be a super-state, with an army and navy of its own. In the secon
ternative, your League would be a p
ly advisory and administrative bo

The actual League sought to re
cile the objections to either alterna
by combining them in one scheme.
as usual in such cases, it succeede
combining their faults without com
ing their advantages. It was critici
and in America very successfully,
cause it impaired national soverei
and committed the people beforeh
to a policy which it might not app
when the time came. On the other h
the League had very little real po
and when any definite action had t
taken in connection with the settlem
it always fell to the national gov
ments (until the last reference of
Silesian problem to the arbitratio
the League), and the League sho
itself quite unable, unassisted, to
the egoism of French policy in Eur
These objections to the League a
present constituted are fully realize
the British Government; and, on
other hand, much of the advocac
the League principles is avowedly
tile to, or at any rate critical of,
present Government.

President Harding is credited wi
project for setting up councils of a p
ly legal character and without ex
tive power, to deal with specific regi
problems. He will not find the Bri
Government unsympathetic, for t
regional Areopagi, consisting of re
sentatives of the powers concerned,
not necessarily supersede the Wo
League, but will enable America to
her weight in the regeneration of
world and in the prevention of fu
wars. That is an object hardly less
portant for America herself than for
rest of the world.

The danger in the second part of
programme, namely the political se
ment of Pacific problems, is that t
nature and difficulties lend themse

Digitized by Google

f intrigue. It was for
r. Lloyd George pro-
y conference between
y concerned, namely,
, Japan, and Great
Canada and Aus-
the ground and to
al definitions of pol-
matter of very great
sh Government that
ot approved. Possi-
the proposal, namely
ss and to forestall in-
ieved in some other
are attacked in the
se political problems
ew strongly held by
ment is that the best
a political settlement
ace in the Pacific, are
ce, but with modifi-
mit it strictly to the
agreed upon at the
pudiate this alliance
apan to seek another
about the system of
nter-alliances which
European militarism.
ry of a repudiation
d be an Anglo-Amer-
aval alliance for the
ainst the attack that
he obligations of her
uld probably make.
propose such an alli-
e some strong advo-
but one does not so

read present political tendencies in America; and, that being so, our alliance with Japan will be an understructure to the settlement made at the Conference, not lightly to be removed.

To the long discussion in the July *Atlantic Monthly*, by the present writer, of the problems of naval disarmament, it is not necessary to add anything here. The more ambitious the project is, the more likely it is to succeed; and nothing less than the neutralization of the Pacific outside certain limits should satisfy the Conference. The basis of naval disarmament should be partly political and partly legal, and should include certain reforms in the laws of international law at sea. On the other hand, the *rationale* of military disarmament is financial. There is no common divisor possible except that of finance, with a universal reduction of military budgets by one half, two thirds, or three fourths, or whatever proportion may be arranged, allowances being made for the military costs of administering a mandate.

But this is a vast and complicated subject and may demand a whole article to itself. One thing, however, can be promised. When the proposals for reduction of armaments come to be discussed, England will not be among the laggards but among the most drastic of pioneers, and the most probable criticism of her will be that she wants to do too much and to go too fast.

Digitized by Google

JAPANESE AND AMERICAN NAVAL POWER[1]

BY HECTOR C. BYWATER

I

In discussing the forthcoming Conference at Washington and the issues to be raised there, the Japanese newspapers, with very few exceptions, assume that under no circumstances whatever will the Imperial Government consent to abandon the so-called 'eight-eight' programme of naval construction, because, as they insist, it represents the irreducible minimum of naval strength needed by the Island Empire for its own security and that of its overseas interests. The *Chuo*, a semi-official organ, denies that Japan entertains any fresh scheme of naval expansion, and adds: 'All that we wish to do is to complete a national defense programme which was decided on long ago. For our part, we see no necessity for restricting our naval armaments; nor, indeed, is there any margin for curtailment.' It would, however, be a mistake to interpret these press utterances too literally. From recent speeches by the Foreign Minister, Count Uchida, and the Minister of Marine, Admiral Kato, it is clear that official Japan does not regard the eight-eight programme as sacred, and would be prepared to consider its revision, in the event that the other great powers agree to make corresponding reductions in their own navies.

In his address to the Gubernatorial Conference held at the Home Office, Tokyo, on May 4, Admiral Kato made the following significant statement: 'The Japanese Government indo the theory of disarmament in princ and is ready to support any con plans for the carrying out of disa ment proposals.' At the same tim took occasion to explain that the ei eight programme was in no sense a scheme. It originated, he said, as back as 1905, and was based upon experience gained in the war with sia. Previous to that war the Japa Navy had been organized on the ciple of a 'six-six' squadron, that main battle-fleet consisting of six tleships and six armored cruisers, a proportionate complement of cillary vessels. But the engagem fought in the Yellow Sea in Aug 1904, and in the Sea of Japan in following year, showed this fleet t too limited in numbers to carry ou tactical functions with full effect was consequently decided to incr the strength of each armored squa by 25 per cent, thus making the tac unit a battle-squadron of sixteen ital ships, half to be battleships the other half armored cruisers.

Such a squadron was actually for soon after the war by utilizing th mored ships captured from Russia; as most of these vessels were obs cent, the practical fighting value of first eight-eight squadron was consi ably below its paper strength. Adm Kato argues, therefore, that the struction programme on which Ja is now engaged signifies nothing bu attempt to make up for the de

[1] Mr. Bywater, a British naval writer of note, speaks as a friendly, but absolutely neutral critic. — THE EDITOR.

Digitized by Google

t-eight tactical
awal of obsolete
vill be recalled,
nt to justify her
er the successive
enabled her to
ncient coast-de-
er-dreadnoughts
pe. Used in this
nt' is therefore
nism, though it
ticize Japan for
nt word, which
other powers in
al programmes.
ct, the Japanese
ay does include
tal ships so old
t their only rôle
t of defenseless

ore the extraor-
cies of the eight-
l be a thankless
nce in terms of
easily explained.
et consists at the
en ships of the
cluding battle-
of these ships
ithin the scope
ogramme. This
readnoughts re-
five of which are
tion, leaving ten
wn.

a moment to the
At this date—
ises 20 dread-
npleted, with 15
in various stages
ion. In ships of
mediate service,
e Japanese fleet
position, super-
entirely in favor
that the idea of
contest the su-
may seem ab-

surd. Of that, more anon. The point to be noted is that, as regards capital ships still in the building stage, — that is, ships which incorporate the very latest ideas as to armament, protection, and other military characteristics, — the two powers are absolutely equal.

The international naval view, which may possibly be exaggerated, is that ships designed before the battle of Jutland are so inherently inferior to those designed subsequently, that the result of a duel between a pre-Jutland ship and a post-Jutland ship would be a foregone conclusion: in other words, that the post-Jutland type of capital ship has rendered all her predecessors totally obsolete. That there are grounds for conceding this claim in large measure will be denied by no one who is conversant with current developments in naval architecture, ship-protection, ordnance, and so forth; and the fact that pre-Jutland and post-Jutland are labels which are coming to bear much the same meaning in naval circles as that which attaches to pre-dreadnought and post-dreadnought is sufficient to indicate the importance attributed by students of naval warfare to the line of demarcation between ships dating from these respective periods. While it might be straining a point to assert that all capital ships belonging — as the vast majority do — to the pre-Jutland era would be useless in any future sea fight, it is unquestionably true that naval opinion has lost confidence in these vessels and is ready to consign them to the scrap-heap as soon as they can be replaced. As we have seen, Japan and the United States are both at work on large programmes of post-Jutland capital ships; and it is at these programmes we must look, not at the respective fleets of older ships, if we wish to form a true estimate of relative naval strength in the Pacific a few years hence.

Digitized by Google

II

Of the 15 big ships authorized by the eight-eight programme, only one has been completed to date. This is the Nagato, commissioned in December, 1920, and at present the largest and most powerful battleship in the world. With a displacement of 33,800 tons and a speed of 23 knots, she is 1200 tons heavier and two knots faster than the Maryland, America's first post-Jutland vessel, which is now performing her trials. Both ships carry a main battery of eight 16-inch guns, and may be classed as equal in fighting power, though the Nagato's superior speed might give her an advantage in certain conditions. A sister to the Nagato, the Mutsu, is practically ready for sea, and will join the flag before the close of the year. The next two battleships of the eight-eight programme are the Kaga and Tosa, laid down last year and due for delivery in 1922–23. They will displace nearly 40,000 tons, and are credited with a battery of twelve 16-inch guns, which is identical with that to be mounted in the American Indiana class. Next come four battle-cruisers, the Amagi, Akagi, Atago, and Takao, all of which are expected to be in service before the end of 1924. These vessels are approximately of the same size, speed, and armament as the six American battle-cruisers now building.

Of the eight remaining capital ships to be built under the eight-eight scheme no definite information is available, save that four of them will be battle-cruisers. As these vessels have not yet been begun, their designers, having had the advantage of studying current developments abroad, will be able to endow them with tactical qualities on the very latest principles. Two of the battleships to be laid down next year, the Owari and the Kii, are reported by Japanese papers to be designed for an armament of 18-inch. would be nothing surpri Japan has always had very heavy guns, and w first power to arm he weapons which had p carried only by battlesh

In this connection at drawn to an importan that is almost invariabl making comparisons be ent and future standing and American navies. 16 capital ships authoriz ican three-year program under construction, an tial characteristics knov the 16 capital ships for is made under the Japa project have been actua remaining eight may t to be vessels of unprec sions and fighting powe all estimates of futur strength based on th 'counting noses' woul This is not by any means contingency, for on t since the dawn of the Dr Japan has enjoyed for tinction of possessing th ful capital ship afloat battle-cruiser Kongo in tleship Fu-so in 1915, a ship Nagato in 1920.

Of course, it may be conventional method of lative strength by the fo ship tonnage is no lon seeing that the primacy has been impeached by critics, such as Admiral This, however, is not th cuss the present status o in the naval hierarchy, sary to do so, in view o the three leading navie have all decided to perp tleship as the chief tacti

Digitized by Google

en by members
school, that the
still prove val-
able, when war
o vast an arena
much her value
stricted waters
Mediterranean
y the evolution
rcraft. Conse-
eded for basing
wer in the Pa-
f the respective

ould be a great
any other types
every modern
Light cruisers,
and auxiliaries
ts, and the ab-
se types would
eduction in the
a whole.
confessed, has
of proportion
in developing
She has never
putting all her
and neglecting
without which
less blind, grop-
iath. Since the
tates has auth-
cruisers, where-
eriod, has pro-
y becomes still
t is remembered
riod the United
re than twice as
rival.
ld an adequate
vessels imposes
the American
ace, and would
r of grave con-
r. As the three
am class, com-
obsolete, and as
scouts building

under the 1916 programme is still uncompleted, the fleet at this moment does not dispose of a single fast cruising ship, and is therefore dependent for reconnaissance duties on its destroyers, which have neither the fuel-endurance nor the seaworthiness to perform such work efficiently.

Japan, on the other hand, is reaping the fruits of a wiser policy. Irrespective of certain older ships, which are too slow to work with a modern fleet at sea, she has 10 fast cruisers completed, 4 building, and 12 about to be laid down under the eight-eight scheme. From these figures it may be inferred that she attributes to the fast scouting cruiser an importance secondary only to that of the capital ship, and the experience of the World War suggests that she is right. That conflict had not been in progress a month before the principal naval belligerents discovered the urgent need of fast cruisers, and forthwith proceeded to build them in large numbers. Between the outbreak of war and the Armistice Great Britain had laid down no less than 40; and Germany's effort in the same direction was limited only by the exigencies of her huge submarine programme. It was one more case of history repeating itself; for Nelson a century earlier was always calling out for 'more frigates,' and finding himself hampered at every turn by the lack of speedy scouts to keep in touch with, and bring intelligence of, the enemy. Under modern conditions the functions of the light cruiser have expanded, and although certain of her duties may in future devolve upon aircraft, she is, and will remain for many years to come, a most necessary adjunct to the battle-fleet.

III

After their wonderful records of service accomplished during the World

Digitized by Google

War, it would be superfluous to emphasize the unique value, in their different spheres, of the destroyer and the submarine. There are some critics who hold that neither type would find in a Pacific campaign so many opportunities for useful work as they found in the late struggle, which was fought, for the most part, in narrow seas and within easy reach of fuel stations. This holds good so far as the destroyer is concerned. For the rough-and-tumble work of patrol, submarine-hunting, and convoy escort, the medium-type destroyer of 1000 tons or thereabouts proved adequate for all practical purposes, and was therefore rapidly multiplied by nearly all the belligerents. America, in particular, created a record in mass-production by building 270 destroyers to a standard design; and thanks to this sudden spurt, is now amply provided with destroyers of a staunch, fast, and well-armed type. She can muster, in round numbers, 300 boats, all of modern design. The Japanese total is barely one third of this at present, but it will rise to 150 when the eight-eight programme is complete, not counting half a hundred older boats that are still good for many years of subsidiary service. Japan, however, has not adopted the system of standardization in building up her destroyer flotilla. Her method is to build boats in groups of 10 to 20, each group an improvement on its predecessor, with the result that her latest classes are larger, more heavily armed, and have a wider range of action than the American 'flush-deckers.' In effect they are small but very fast cruisers, of 2000 tons or more, steaming 36 knots at full speed, and mounting a battery of five 4.7-inch guns. Twenty boats of this design are known to be under construction, and in all probability a certain number of the 40 new destroyers for which funds have been voted will prove to be even larger and more heavily armed. On the
therefore, the American margi
periority in destroyers is less
bare figures seem to indicate.

The relative position in sub
is less easy to define, owing t
tense secrecy in which the
naval authorities have always s
this branch of their service
doubtful whether anyone out
Tokyo Navy Department know
the exact number of underwa
that Japan has available at the
moment or how many she ha
building slips. All that can be s
certainty is that most of the
and other data relating to the
submarine flotilla which appea
eign naval textbooks are unreli
withstanding the fact that t
derived in some cases from
sources in Japan. The eig
scheme provides for an estab
of 80 submarines, all of which
ready for service by the end
but this total includes only 'f
boats of the latest design and
dimensions. By the date in
Japan will probably have an a
50 or 60 boats of older and
types, which would, however,
effective for short-range operat
coast defense. A careful ana
information that has reached t
from a well-informed quarte
Japan to have ordered from 9
submarines of all types since
1903. At least 45 of these bo
been completed, leaving ab
same number still under con
or contracted for. To these
added an unknown number
boats to be built under the eig
programme. By far the major
tion of the boats built or order
past five years are of the oce
type, planned with a view to
tance cruising.

In deciding the character

Digitized by Google

arines the Japanese
rs have been influ-
gn of the surrendered
particularly those of
uiser class. Of the 10
9 (numbers 27 to 36),
0 tons, and will have
17 knots. Cruising at
they will be able to
f 11,000 knots with-
their oil-tanks. A
50 tons, armed with
d-fire gun and four
s begun last year; but
eclipsed by the huge
rted to have been or-
current year — with
er 2000 tons, a speed
a battery of two 5.5-
torpedo tubes. The
ne is anxious to in-
arine programme to
e in service by 1926;
e has not yet gained
ction for this scheme.
t the Japanese indus-
able of producing so
arines by the date in
s it is, the Govern-
mpelled to place con-
ets of submarine en-
an firms.

ubmarine flotilla now
sels, only 63 of which
d as ocean-going, the
coastal' boats, with
g endurance up to
many of them could
that distance on one
erto American naval
l from the Japanese
omarines a rôle that
ve, underwater craft
rded more as instru-
fense than as vessels
rate on the high seas,
tly or in coöperation
et. There is, however,
that this view has lately been modified, and that most, if not all, of the new American submarines will be found equal to foreign contemporaries in cruising range, seaworthiness, and other essential qualities. Their studies of the strategic problems of the Pacific have apparently convinced American naval officers that a very extensive cruising radius is absolutely indispensable in the case of every type of vessel liable to be employed on war service in that ocean. Acceptance of this proposition naturally involves a substantial increase in size, which applies as much to the submarine as to the battleship. While, therefore, the coastal boats that constitute so large a percentage of the American submarine flotilla might prove valuable enough for the defense of continental and oversea harbors, they would count for little in an offensive campaign, which is generally admitted to be the only form of strategy open to the United States in the event of war with Japan.

No one can predict the part that air-power is destined to play in future naval wars, and least of all in a war waged in the Pacific, where so much would depend upon circumstances impossible to foresee with any clearness. If, for instance, the Philippines and her other insular possessions in the Western Pacific remained in America's hands, she could employ her air-power against Japan with possibly decisive results. It is, however, a somewhat formidable 'if,' as will become manifest when we turn to the strategical outlook. So far as *matériel* is concerned, American resources for the conduct of aerial warfare at sea are far superior to those of Japan. Without entering into detailed comparisons, it is enough to say that the United States has more than twice as many efficient naval aircraft as Japan; and, if military machines are included, the American preponderance becomes as three to one.

Digitized by Google

Japan has not yet succeeded in producing a counterpart of the remarkable NC flying boats of the United States navy; and, in fact, there is positive evidence that her aviation services, both naval and military, are in a backward state. The 1918 programme made provision for 140 new naval airplanes, all of which were to be ready for use in five years' time. Since, in their present stage of development, even the largest airplanes have a relatively limited radius of action, it is clear that they could not participate to any marked extent in a Pacific campaign unless supported by aircraft-carriers. This, however, is a type of vessel in which both navies are sadly deficient. The United States will shortly have two such ships, the Langley and the Wright; but as their speed is not more than 15 knots, they would be too slow to accompany the battle-fleet, and might prove more of a hindrance than a help if attached to it. Japan is even worse off, possessing as she does only one old and slow ship of limited carrying capacity; but the Hosho, a new aircraft-carrier of high speed, is under construction and will join the fleet next year.

IV

The personnel factor, it need hardly be said, is of supreme importance in relation to naval efficiency. Only the test of war could determine which navy has the most highly trained and efficient officers and men; but there is no reason to suppose that any marked difference exists between American and Japanese seamen in respect of *morale* and professional keenness. Both services have an unbroken record of victorious warfare, and both are imbued with the glorious traditions that inspire men with an iron 'will to win.' Japan is in a particularly advantageous position by virtue of her large establishment of trained personnel. She has officers and men to provide a plement for every vessel that mobilized in case of war, and tion, a reserve force numerou to man every new warship and that could be placed in co This means that the whole of tive strength of the Japan could be mobilized swiftly and and dispatched to the war zon a week's delay.

The American navy, on hand, is hampered by the chro age of personnel. Judging fr experience, the first hint of w flood the recruiting bureaus a training camps to overflowing fact remains that competent ficers and bluejackets canno provised. Two years is a ver estimate of the time required t a civilian into a useful rating a modern man-of-war. Wha tion of the United States ac could put to sea on the outbre fully manned with trained of men, is a secret known only to Department; but external suggests that the figure woul siderably below the total pape of the United States navy.

In the Pacific, as in other theatres of war, strategy is n handmaid of policy. Previou war with Spain the United S no commitments in the Pacifi her own territorial waters, consequently under no nec maintain a powerful naval for ocean; for geography had im superable barriers between her littoral and a would-be inva the East. But with the ac of the Philippines and other lands formerly held by Spain, tion underwent a fundamenta The frontiers of America we forward many thousands of n

Digitized by Google

ng them by sea-power, imple, developed into nplexity of which does n to have been com-. If it were possible islands, the American supremely confident position. But no one American temper ever Philippines would be ed to the Japanese or ader. Their retention compel America to aval effort in the West-e she does not as yet first-class naval base, ight a decisive action early 7000 miles from She has one asset of the Isthmian Canal, able her to transfer the Atlantic to the inimum of delay; but be set a host of disad-itions, which cannot unless the student has rge-scale map of the

with Japan to be a future, three proposi-vanced without much ion. (1) The Western United States is abso-serious hostile attack, vasion would be a sheer) In the event of war, re practically certain pan unless a powerful rrives in the Western ortnight after the dec-3) No such fleet could was sure of finding a a submarine-proof an-nt stocks of fuel and upplies, and facilities epairs, including those heavy damage sus-If these propositions th the aid of a good map, they will be found to contain in a nutshell the strategical problems which the American naval command would be called upon to solve in case of war in the Pacific.

Distance and base-power are the dominant factors in the situation. It is nearly 7000 miles from the American coast to the Philippines, and no fleet dare venture so far in war-time without being assured of finding ample supplies of fuel when it reaches its destination. A few years hence, provided that the plans of the Navy Department are allowed to mature, a well-defended base will have been established at Guam. It will then be feasible for the American battle-fleet to steam across the Pacific and undertake warlike operations against an Asiatic power, using Guam as its advanced base. There is some talk, also, of extending the dockyard at Cavite; but professional opinion is rather averse to this plan, holding, as it does, that the Philippines, exposed as they are to successful invasion by the Japanese, should not be reckoned among the assets upon which the American navy could rely in the event of war. The development of Guam, though apparently now determined upon after many years of hesitation, will be a task of several years' duration, and until it is completed, the American fleet will be practically debarred from waging warfare in the Western Pacific.

Unless they are far less intelligent than we have any right to suppose, Japanese naval officers must clearly perceive the immense strategic importance of Guam; and, this being so, it is reasonable to assume that they would make strenuous attempts to seize the island in the very first stage of a conflict with America. With Guam in their hands, they would have the Philippines at their mercy. Whether under these circumstances the American battle-fleet would advance into the Western

Digitized by Google

Pacific would depend far more on considerations of policy than of strategy. From the latter point of view it would be courting disaster to leave the nearest friendly base (Hawaii) nearly 5000 miles behind and venture into an area teeming with enemy submarines, where there would be no harbor of refuge for a damaged ship, no means of replenishing depleted bunkers, and scarcely any possibility of striking an effective blow at the enemy. A cruise of this nature would be a more desperate adventure than the voyage of the Russian Baltic Fleet, and we may be sure that it would not be countenanced by any responsible American strategist.

The Japanese themselves have never disguised their confidence in the impregnability of their position *vis-à-vis* the United States. A war with that country, they predict, would begin with her expulsion from the Philippines and the summary destruction of such American naval forces as were present in the Western Pacific. Japan, having seized the Philippines, would revert to the defensive and calmly await developments. If her opponent so far flouted the rudiments of strategy as to dispatch a fleet to the war zone, relying on a 5000-mile line of communications with Hawaii, the Japanese would resort to a war of attrition by means of submarines and mine-layers working from numerous bases in the South Sea Islands and off the coast of Japan. Then, when at length the American fleet, harassed and weakened by incessant submarine attacks and with its stock of fuel reduced to a low ebb, proposed to return home, the Japanese battle-fleet in full strength would sally forth at the psychological moment and repeat the triu Tsushima on a magnified scale at least, is the sanguine expect those who would control the J forces in time of war.

But it is usually in war-time unexpected happens, and the wi tory of the recent world-wide constitutes a warning against too much for granted. The plans took cognizance of every able circumstance, and by all t of logic they were assured of yet it was precisely because of stances that were not and coul foreseen that the plans were br shipwreck. On the surface of t war with Japan in the near futur confront the American naval with a problem so difficult as to nigh incapable of solution. Th however, several alternatives more obvious line of American indicated above; and the very f Japan, while professing so mu fidence in her present naval pos feverishly building new fightin and coastal defenses, suggests t is not altogether easy in her mi the issue of a conflict with the States. The risks and uncertai war are potent factors conducin maintenance of peace, in the P elsewhere. With the terrible les the world struggle still fresh in m it is inconceivable that any would go to war except in defen most vital interests. There is no tendency in responsible qua exaggerate the differences now between America and Japan, a tainly no suggestion that they ar enough to justify a resort to ar

Digitized by Google

D-CARRIAGE

bringing it over
You know that it
u can hear the
e horse's hoofs as
rd cement road;
of the wheels
hey turn in the
d thud of hoofs
as the carriage
comes to a stop
ide the well. To
ean horse droops
d crops, crops,
ned grass, takes
nunching a deli-
urns to look at
When a cow does
rses are very dif-

, for those who
e by chance for-
ions of using a
u back the horse
the front wheel
can step up be-
raise your foot
little corrugated
p, and feel the
ı, and are a little
horse will start
. A second later,
tablished on the
No procedure on
a more charac-
that of settling
The rough tex-
xhales the leath-
w clean, smell of
nd harness; the
in spite of the
arefully avoided

in stepping over the wheels; and when you have unknotted the reins from the whip-handle, and arranged them in parallel lines along the horse's back, and flapped them once and clucked a little, the horse starts forward, straining to gain impetus up the grassy slope; and the wheels grit on the gravel and then run smartly out on the macadam road behind the metallic click of the horse's shoes as he settles into a trot. There is a feeling of soul in the motion, because a horse has breathing power which cannot be expressed in a chemical formula and a muffler cut-out. He steps briskly along, *trot*-trot, *trot*-trot, shaking his mane from time to time and indulging in those ecstatic little horse-heaves and whiskings of tail that cut the coarse horsehairs across your face.

There does not seem to be much room for a simple horse-and-carriage on the double-plated, reënforced edition-de-luxe expanse of state highway. It is annoying to jolt off and on the high little margin-edge, in order to make room for the touring-cars and motor-trucks charging to and fro. There is a country road ahead on the left, and you aim toward it, steering carefully in, ploughing through a sandy curve at a slow walk, and on up over a rise to a soft dirt road which is dark underfoot in shady spots and white with dust for long sunny spaces. *Trot*-trot, *trot*-trot, *trot*-trot — the delicious smells of the countryside are all around you, delicate trailing of wild grapevines, the tang of meadows where daisies and Queen Anne's Lace run riot, intervals of hay *couchant* and buckwheat *rampant*, with serried rows of corn-banners filing rank on rank between stone-wall divisions.

Digitized by Google

tion — revealing mother to me intimately, personally, as I saw her upstairs.

You who have never had far-away artist mothers can never know the long lonesome days that glide into each other endlessly. You can never know how ravenously I watched and listened and smelled during these fragrant, spicy hours.

After the fire-building came great bowls from the pantry; and together mother and I searched the dark, damp cellar for apples and jars of fruit. I clung to her hand and felt well-nigh to bursting as I thought how brave my pretty mother must be; for, while I was peering furtively at the dark places for spiders and black, crawly things, mother walked lightly and assuredly, clasping her hand firmly over mine when she felt me start. How I loved her for that!

When we came back laden with apples and jars of fruit, I always climbed up on cook's huge, old chair right next to the tables — something I never dared to do on other days, even when cook was in her most engaging mood. I watched mother empty jars swiftly; plums and pears and peaches splashing gayly into saucepans. It seemed to me mother's hands never looked daintier or more beautiful than when she took a pinch of this brown spice or a pinch of that yellow, softer stuff from the spice-jars. She hesitated and studied about each pinch. One would think she was hesitating over the browns in one of her great pictures.

Soon the saucepans were bubbling merrily on the stove, sending out cinnamons and spices from Araby, and mother was in the most delicious part of the pie-making — mixing the crust! I never asked to help roll. I did not want to miss one fraction of a minute watching the delightful process in mother's hands.

Gradually the whole room, the whole world, seemed to be a
Back and forth it rolle
fully, squeezing out
rolling-pin, farther an
the table. The whol
suddenly to have beco
ing mother. The fi
noisily, and the saucep
bubbling to a gentle sim
watching mother and
humming snatches of t
and gently thumping a
less pie-crust into delic
Once in a while, she w
would smile happily, d
squirmed restlessly the
with a pang that to-m
be my far-away mothe

I watched her pou
full of spicy fruit into
crusts. I watched her
over the pies, closin
fruit into a prison of ju
watched her — oh, endl
to me I never could w
on these rare, gloriou
really owned a real mo

As the brown crusty
crust mingled with the
and filled the air with
grance, my mother ga
her arms. She drew up
er, and we traveled b
other days, when mo
back to a tiny house in
where there were sister
sisters, and nobody e
and mother's face grew
gay; gay, wet curls fell
she told about the gra
the work to be finishe
was called a day; as
spankings and great
laughed recklessly! Th
artist-mother of mine
tender. How I loved
longed for all days to
large juicy pies and
mother!

Digitized by Google

THE CONTRIBUTORS' COLUMN

um leading a mob up
l Frank Tannenbaum
tinction from Columbia
tracted diverse expres-
Ve quote an interesting
New York *Globe*.

nture of the poor boy who
outdone by Frank Tannen-
tter's career has hardly be-
n got into the public eye in
an orderly little mob into
ention to the pitiable con-
yed. The method he used
ly to those who look upon
worship, but it opened the
nd the hearts of a few. As
und lodging on Blackwell's
history since then throws
ring one of the most event-
nals. In 1914 most news-
ly considered him a dan-
gh in that golden pre-war
eet, instead of going into
d in a superior and rather
e antics of the little band

nnenbaum was working in
to stir his fellow workers to
nteract the ravages of the
wo years after that, he was
is patriotic zeal had earned
year later he had resumed
bia University; and this
ating with 'highest honors
ics,' a Phi Beta Kappa key
lliant record in his studies,
ch will enable him to take

oral in this story than the
a 'radical' to 'liberalism.'
thusiasm, and a degree of
make a youngster a noisy
r to the existing order may
dmirable qualities and the
ably Mr. Tannenbaum has
world is to be made better,
prolonged hard work and
on; but probably he does
e this was quite so clear to
ntlet blindly in the face of
tice and a cruel indifference

* * *

Palmer, Professor Emer-
has for nearly two gen-
erations been a famous teacher at Harvard University. Discussing popular fallacies about the Puritans, he writes not uncharacteristically: 'We should remember that something like ten per cent of mankind are constitutionally sour. How unfair it is to pick out that ten per cent of Puritans and make them representative!' **Vicente Blasco Ibañez** first attracted to himself the attention of Spain by a political sonnet which won him applause and imprisonment. More than thirty years later, though long since famous in his native country, he attracted the attention of the world by his *Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse*. Born in Valencia, of Aragonese parents, he is now living in Paris. Editorial writer, printer, investigator, and practical philosopher, **Arthur Pound** lives in Flint, Michigan, where the Buick, Chevrolet, and other familiar types of cars are made, and where there is detailed opportunity to study the effect of automotive machinery on human character.

* * *

Wilbur C. Abbott has been a member of the History Department of Dartmouth, University of Michigan, University of Kansas, University of Chicago, Yale, and now, Harvard. He is a professor among professors — and something more. **DuBose Heyward,** a poet of North Carolina, makes his first appearance in the *Atlantic*. **William Beebe** is a household word in the *Atlantic* Dictionary. **Emma Lawrence** (Mrs. John S. Lawrence) is a Bostonian whose first story appeared in the *Atlantic* two months ago.

* * *

Rufus M. Jones, the author of many valuable studies of the Quaker faith, is Professor of Philosophy at Haverford College, and editor of the *Friends' Review*. **Edward Carrington Venable,** a member of the Flying Corps during the war, lives in Baltimore. **Anne Winslow** (Mrs. E. E. Winslow) is a contributor new to the *Atlantic*.

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant-Colonel Charles à Court Repington saw early and brilliant service in India, Afghanistan, Burma, the Sudan, and other British outposts of Empire. Subsequently he was Military Attaché at Brussels and The Hague. After leaving the army, he became military critic of the London *Times*, where his articles (we quote from his most bitter critic) 'are almost models of their kind; clear, sprightly, telling — almost classical journalism.' Leaving the *Times* under dramatic circumstances, he joined the *Morning Post*. Every reader who has followed the war is familiar with his subsequent record, and all students with his *Diaries of the First World-War*. To all interested in Colonel Repington's adventurous and dramatic life, we recommend his autobiography, published under the title of *Vestigia*. His competence to discuss the present subject will not be called in question. **Walter B. Pitkin**, who has devoted much time to the study of the Far East, writes in the belief that 'American readers have heard too much about the Open Door in China and too little about soy beans in Manchuria, coal in Shensi, cotton in South China, and a hundred other concrete matters that cannot be disposed of by fine generalities.'

* * *

J. O. P. Bland knows China, if anybody does. For years he was Secretary to the Municipality for the Foreign Settlements in Shanghai, and representative in China of the British and Chinese Corporation. More recently, he has served as a distinguished correspondent of the London *Times*. A world-traveler and carefully trained observer, Mr. Bland may be definitely classed as a realist in his discussions of political and social questions. **E. Alexander Powell** has corresponded for the papers round the world and back again. A veteran in the service, he has devoted a great deal of time to investigating the questions centring on the western shores of the Pacific. **Herbert Sidebotham**, who succeeded to the post left vacant by Colonel Repington, under dramatic circumstances, as military critic of the London *Times*, has just severed his connection with that paper. **Hector C. Bywater** is a British naval critic, of recogni
At the *Atlantic's* request, he
cious and important compa
tive strength of the Americ
navies. Admiral Sims gi
column, a highly interesting
Bywater's views.

* * *

News from Russia is m
than authentic. Our reade
ested in this record of th
ences of a Russian lady, w
prudence' sake, we do not

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

We are alive, but our existe
called living. We are buried a
the outside world, no new book
azines. 'They' have their ow
which they can lie to their h
never read them.

We suffered from hunger and
the winters of 1919 and 1920.
but am better now. This last
less, but our life is still hard to
on rations which are distribut
sist of black bread of inferio
herring which I cannot swallow
and sometimes meat; also a l
few apples; no genuine tea, co
depend mostly on porridge (
other things such as we can bu
is illegal to trade, almost even
We cannot keep servants, and
I don't find that so very har
to witness Russia's complete
is painful, indeed. A country
dead.

You would not recognize Pet
populated. The former million
hundreds! No traffic in the
zhiks; most of the horses have
few wretched conveyances, wh
that an old woman like myself
to use them.

We live in a wild country, ar
rule by terror. Lies, devastat
tagious diseases, and privation
common.

They are not organizers, bu
greater part of the forests hav
but still we have no wood to
great many wooden houses have
and hardly a summer home ren
will be a desert soon. It is imp
the misery we have suffered.
the midst of it to understand.
the Tsars was nothing in comp
move, we cannot go anywhere
to obtain leave is well-nigh imp
negotiate for weeks, and even m
ent the railways can hardly be

Digitized by Google

n satisfactorily. (Les
annihilés; ils sont de-
ition catastrophique.)
have been able to buy
wear. Nothing is ob-
needles. I am old and
I have may last me
people are almost des-
incroyable. Every-
n our country-house,
had been collecting
trees in the park on
down; everything has
ut we only share the

allowed to see much,
of the time, and saw
w him. He may have
rom Pavlof [the well-
gy, who received the

ignorance as to what
, 1919, and 1920.
—— as Professor is
th, the money has no
rous. An egg costs a
bread three thousand,
een thousand, and a
d and more.
ut our higher schools,
institutions: they are
nly shadows of their
w students, and those
with any degree of
e not heated, and it is
emperature of six de-
. There is neither wa-
ries.
re. In such conditions
life was possible!

*

that the names of
d should not suffer
g to the following
gue of Abbreviation

ague of Abbreviation
rrespondence with a
lways signed himself
L.' It took me a good
B.L. really meant.
uly,
FRANK DURANT.

ile, too.

*

refully kept. Note

dirondack Mountains,
bin and went in to in-

vestigate. I found in a crevice a magazine. Judge my surprise when I discovered it to be an *Atlantic Monthly* published in 1867, two years after the Civil War. Although the cabin is almost a ruin, the print is in first-class condition and also the paper, although it has lain here for fifty-four years. I think it is a unique find, and if you are interested, write to

PATRICK H. FOESSLER.

* * *

'Our Street,' we agree, is open to further discussion, and to friendly traffic of every sort. For this little thoroughfare, not less than 'Main Street' and 'The Drive,' is found on the road-map of every American town. And for some of us it is the familiar road toward home.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Never before have I wished to usurp the editorial prerogative — but why could n't there have been more of 'Our Street'? Why could n't the *Atlantic* have sent it back with a request for a little more detail, a little wider vista, perhaps for a larger, more comprehensive canvas? For there is more of it, a great deal more of it, in spite of Masters and Mencken and Sinclair Lewis.

Let me confess that for me 'Our Street' is making the most effective assault possible upon the so-called realists — it is so real, and at the same time so permanent, like Truth and Progress and Human Charity. Its reality and its fine permanency speak to me every day through all my windows and my open doors, with the wafted odors of my neighbor's baking and the strong young voices of her children. We are plain people, working-people all, with barely a college degree to go around. But there are no fences between our houses; our green corn and our new biscuits find their way to more than one table; when one of us gets to hear Rachmaninoff, he brings the programme home for the rest to see. We exchange paper patterns and opera records and *Atlantics;* for how could one have all these things at once? And quite often we go shopping for a new dining-room rug and come home with books.

Periodically, usually in the spring, some of us wonder if we should n't try to find a house on the Drive — for the children's sake, you know. But somehow we never do. The soil seems to suit us, here on Our Street, and moving might very well destroy in us something native and natural to that homely environment.

I have heard, somewhere, the story of a Quaker who overtook a man traveling with a van-load of household goods.

'Is thee moving, Robert?' asked the Quaker.

'Yes, and I'm glad to get away from that town,' the man replied. 'Those people are a poor lot; not a decent soul among them.'

'Friend,' said the Quaker, '*thee* will find the same wherever *thee* goes!'

Digitized by Google

Very likely for some folk heaven itself would have its Main Street.

Yours sincerely,

ELAINE GOULD.

* * *

These rumors of Archæology in the Back-yard make us long unseasonably to spade the garden.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Upon my return to-day to the little khaki tent on a big New Mexican ranch which constitutes my temporary home, I had the exhilarating experience of reading Mr. Moorehead's article in your September issue. May I be allowed a comment or two?

I, too, am an archæologist, and one of the younger school that went 'West, South, or abroad.' Each one of us, when he reached the parting of the ways, chose that American culture which interested him most, as the subject for his life-work. The entire New World is roughly divided into large geographical areas, each of which was once the home of some distinct civilization. In nearly every case, these old civilizations differ one from the other as widely as ancient Egypt from Babylon in its prime. Each archæologist, in attacking the many and varied problems in his own area, soon becomes a specialist, and, as such, becomes incompetent to judge of the detailed problems of other areas. However, all of us have a sufficient knowledge of the general problems of American archæology to appreciate those of another area. When all is said and done, we are one in our desire to extend the history of the American Indian backward in the realm of time.

Mr. Moorehead has mentioned public interest in archæology. I quite agree with him that this interest should start at home. If, however, the antiquities of one area of our country have received a modicum of attention in excess of another, the men working in that area are to be congratulated. Even at its best, the interest our public takes in the history and archæology of its own country is discouragingly small. It is our great dream that some day the public as a whole will awaken to the great fund of romance and history that now lies hidden in the ruins, not only in one area, but in all parts of the country. The slogan 'See American First' should be changed to 'Know America First,' in all that the change of the verb implies. A better knowledge of Indian history, and also of the remnants of that race still living, would certainly do much more good than harm.

These few sentences are not to be construed as a criticism in any way. They are simply in the form of a footnote. I congratulate my friend, Mr. Moorehead, and also the *Atlantic*, upon this article, which gives promise of a better, saner interest on the part of the public in our work, because it is a serious article, put before the right kind of a public.

Sincerely yours,

CARL E. GUTHE.

Here is a note which wil
liophiles — and bibliophilis

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

I had an experience in one
that may interest Mr. Newto
Frank Stockton's *The Lady, o*
salesman replied, 'I am sorry,
have *neither*.'

Yours sincerely,

E

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA.

* * *

The following inquiry su
corporate octopus may stil
tional tentacle or two.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Will you please advise me c
sibility of my having a poem
Atlantic Monthly Company?
from companies or from indivi
dividuals, would you ignore th
known writer?

Very truly you

By way of defining the po
azine, we may state that,
company poems should ever
we should doubtless accept t
quiring too curiously into t

* * *

This question is a poser, b
Apex wins.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Here's a new situation, and
swer this all-important questio

This morning's mail brought
which I am always anxious to
ily washing had to be done. T
'Duty before pleasure' again
changed it.

Descending into the laundr
washing, surmounted by the *A*
my labors and then, while t
Washing-Machine chug-chugge
snowy whiteness, I laughed
Newton's 'Twenty-five Hours

Here is the question: Would
tion be a better 'Ad' for the *Atl*
Apex Electric Washing-Machin

You tell!

Sincerely,

HELEN D

* * *

Will any *Atlantic* reader i
letters from the distinguish
bott H. Thayer, be so good
cate with Mrs. Abbott H. T
nock, New Hampshire. All
carefully returned.

Digitized by Google

ATLANTIC SHOP-TALK

A TEXT can be found for any sermon. The exhortation, 'Whenever a new book comes out, read an old one,' is not, on the face of it, a fruitful theme for the publisher of new books. Neither is Emerson's counsel, 'Never read a book that is not a year old.' Yet the publisher of books which are expected to live more than a single year may well take substantial comfort in these sayings. We have usually talked in these papers, shoppily enough, about our newest publications. But even the authors of those most beguiling — they have even been called immoral — productions, the seed-catalogues, do not spend all their energies on the 'annuals'; certain pages are always reserved for the 'perennials.'

It is indeed an article of our publishing creed that nearly every annual ought to grow into a perennial — a transformation to which we believe the horticulturalist rarely aspires. It takes more than one year to be sure that an annual has really become a perennial, and the Atlantic Monthly Press has been issuing books hardly long enough to warrant many generalizations. It is, nevertheless, an encouraging fact that the *Atlantic Classics*, of which the first series appeared in 1916, and *Essays and Essay-Writing*, published in 1917, — to name only two of our educational books, — have firmly established themselves as objects of constant demand. **Mr. Newton's** first book, *The Amenities of Book-Collecting*, now in its third large edition, was published in 1918, and **Mrs. Parker's** biographical study of her husband, *An American Idyll*, appeared in 1919 and is now in its eighth edition. Further examples might be cited, but these will serve to suggest that the march toward the perennial has definitely begun.

* * *

We should immediately resign all pretensions to prophecy if we felt any hesitation in affirming our belief that the *Letters of William James*, published last November, falls into the category of the books we have been discussing. The grounds for this confidence are abundant and need not be enumerated. It happens that we have just been looking through a packet of clippings of the English criticisms of this book. One of them was adorned with a heading, 'A Professor with a Punch,' which served no particular purpose beyond illustrating the growing resemblance between British and American journalism. Congratulations may be bestowed 'according to taste.' In other clippings we came upon two passages which really seemed to throw light upon the enduring quality of the book. One of them defined William James as 'perhaps the only great philosopher with an active sense of humour'— the spelling of quotations must be preserved! The other made the sweeping declaration that 'in the whole of these two volumes there is not a selfish, a cruel, a priggish, or a dull sentence.' It is because this is the essential truth that this biography, so largely an autobiography, is precisely what it is — one of the books that are just as new and just as vital in the second, third, or tenth year of their existence as in the first.

* * *

The *Letters of William James* have fallen into many hands, both here and in England, where the book was published soon after its appearance in America, and it is bound, in the nature of the case, to fall into many more. Another book of letters which we published a year ago — *A Scholar's Letters to a Young Lady: Passages from the Later Correspondence of Francis James Child* — has another history, and another future. It was brought out only in a limited edition, and was not distributed to the reviewers of books. What a recent editorial writer in the New York *Times* has called 'the sly Chaucerian humor' of Professor Child and his letters was one of the qualities of the book which, like its peculiarly personal flavor, made us feel a year ago that its appeal would be to the few, and that the many might reasonably be expected to pass it by. But, in proportion to the limited numbers of copies that were printed, the few have become the many, or, to put it differently, it is now only the really few who can hope to secure copies of the book before the edition is quite exhausted. This, we believe, is preëminently a perennial — not in sales, for there will soon be no more to sell, but in the pleasure it will yield to its fortunate possessors.

* * *

We have yet to issue a special catalogue of perennials, a list of productions not primarily related to the demands of an impending Christmas book-season, yet by no means out of date. Were we doing so at this time, we should place near its head *The Founding of New England*, by **James Truslow Adams.** This book was published in May of the present year, and in the course of the summer, when the eyes of the country were fixed upon Plymouth, was recognized as a valuable and permanent contribution to early New England history. The truest test of the merit of any such book is probably to be found in the opinions it draws

Digitized by Google

forth from scholars in the field to which it relates. These do not, as a rule, appear immediately upon the publication of a new book substantial and scholarly in character. But in the case of Mr. Adams's book they are beginning to accumulate, and it is a comforting fact that they confirm the impression the book made upon us through all the stages of its production. Professor Andrews, of Yale, for example, describes it in the 'Literary Review,' of the New York *Evening Post* as 'the best treatise on the history of New England in the seventeenth century that has been written at any time for the scholar and general reader alike.' Professor A. B. Hart, of Harvard, writing in the *Outlook*, declares that 'as respects the New Plymouth colonists, no book has appeared which so clearly and sympathetically follows their origin, adventures, and success.' And in the *Nation* Professor MacDonald, of Brown, has written, 'No other history of New England of equal compass is now any longer worth reading, and all the larger histories must be corrected by this one.' Here, we cannot help whispering to ourselves, is the stuff of which perennials are made.

* * *

Everyday Adventures, by **Samuel Scoville, Jr.**, the Philadelphian who shows the city-dweller how easily and profitably nature can be explored even by commuters, is another of those Atlantic books which, if the gods had made us poetical, we should be tempted to call 'bright shoots of everlastingness.' This one has been within the reach of readers for little more than a year, but it has a sort of perpetual timeliness, though it really ought to be read before the author's next book, a collection of animal stories, is issued by the Atlantic Monthly Press in the course of 1922. A second book is vastly better for having read a first!

* * *

So much of our talk this month has had to do with the books of previous seasons that the casual reader may wonder whether our new books are not worth talking about. If he is also a regular reader he will remember that in recent months we have had a great deal to say about them. It is not yet time to report the good opinions they have won from others than ourselves, as we have just been doing in relation to other books. The James Letters appeared so late last year that it was hardly a Christmas book at all. *The Founding of New England* has just entered its first autumn season, and the reasons for counting other books among the Christmas possibilities of 1921 are abundant. But the new books — such as *A Magnificent Farce*, *The Life and Letters of Henry Lee Higginson*, *The Great Quest*, *Wild Brother*, *The Seven Ages of Man*, *Many Children*, *Zodiac Town*, and *The Little Garden* — well, our advertising pages speak for our own belief in these; and in future months we shall doubtless have many reports to make upon the reception they are meeting from readers who have not se in manuscript and proof.

* * *

And since we are not of those who sub the motto, Do your Christmas shopping on the morning of December 24, this se very best time to mention the fact that th mas Prints which we have published years are now increased in number by t commonly attractive additions. The first is a little pamphlet, *Merry Christmas from* written by **Miss Frances Lester Wa** the *Atlantic* staff, author of *Pilgrim Tr* illustrated by **Mr. Maurice Day,** whose c for *The Firelight Fairy Book* and that v perennial, *Christmas Eve on Beacon H* tributed so much to their success. T Christmas keepsake has an authentic, if ous, flavor of history which gives it far m a local appeal. Of the remaining two, a re 'A Visit from St. Nicholas,' and a Cl message, 'The Best Wishes of the Seaso perhaps enough to say at this moment t Bruce Rogers is responsible for the physi of the one, and Mr. Updike, of the Merr Press, for that of the other. What these mean to those who recognize the very b ducts of the printing art, it would be sup to say.

* * *

It is only a year since a rival claimant authorship of 'A Visit from St. Nichola presented to the reading public, and the tion of the long-acknowledged author, C **C. Moore,** was requested. We have beer fast to Moore, as our new reprint of the A Christmas classic will testify. But lo, Richmond in the field! A New York which shall be nameless, — we all live houses, and who shall say where an error beginning? — announced in September: " lantic Monthly Press will publish next mo Visit from St. Nicholas," by Bliss Perr typographical treatment by Bruce Roger

Bliss Perry! Why, of course — the Vis St. Nicholas for which he will be responsi year is symbolized by a copy of his *Life a ters of Henry Lee Higginson!* It does not happen that such things are so easily ex by an obvious association of ideas.

* * *

This is the kind of thing they will ad editors: —

I sent thee late a manuscript,
Not so much honoring thee,
As giving it a hope — at last —
That it might published be.
But thou thereon didst only smile,
And sent'st it back to me;
Since when, I swear, its fate was du
Not to itself but thee!

Digitized by Google

E ATLANTIC MONTHLY

DECEMBER, 1921

POOLED SELF-ESTEEM

BY A. CLUTTON-BROCK

I

onfess, astonished at the sity which even psycholo- ey more than most men, ut the most familiar, yet ing, facts of the human have their formulæ, as an mind is unconsciously ct to the sexual instinct; rmulæ, while they make asier for those who accept fail to explain the most most surprising facts.

for instance, self-esteem, – we have no precise scien- r it; if we go by our own seems to be far more pow- stant than the sexual in- re difficult to control, and ublesome. The sexual in- much of its power from or self-esteem, and would le without it; but self- many of us, unmanageable. press it, but still it is our to happiness or any kind ; and, however strong or may be in us, we never thers we dislike it intense- ess intensely in ourselves ome aware of it; and, if a it in a passion for some- hen we admire that self- surrender above all things. In spite of the psychologists, we know that the sexual instinct is not the tyrant or the chief source of those delusions to which we are all subject. It is because we are in love with ourselves, not because we are in love with other people, that we make such a mess of our lives.

Now, what we ask of psychology, if it is to be a true science, is that it shall help us to manage ourselves so that we may achieve our deepest, most permanent desires. Between us and those desires there is always this obstacle of self-esteem, and if psychology will help us to get rid of that, then, indeed, we will take it seriously, more seriously than politics, or machinery, or drains, or any other science. For all of these, however necessary, are subsidiary to the management of the self; and all would be a thousand times better managed by a race of beings who knew how to manage themselves. There is not a science, or an art, that is not hampered by the self-esteem of those who practise it; for it blinds us both to truth and to beauty, and most of us are far more unconscious of its workings than we are of the workings of our sexual instinct. The Greeks were right when they said, 'Know thyself'; but we have not tried

Digitized by Google

to follow their advice. The self, in spite of all our attempts to analyze it away in physical terms, remains unknown, uncontrolled, and seldom the object of scientific curiosity or observation.

In the past, the great masters of religion were well aware of self-esteem; and our deepest and most practical psychology comes from them, though we do not call it psychology. For them the problem was to turn self-esteem into esteem for something else; and to that all other human problems were subsidiary. By God they meant that in which man can utterly forget himself; and they believed in God because the self can sometimes utterly forget and lose itself in something which cannot be seen or touched but which does cause self-forgetfulness. They were sure that the self could not so forget itself except in something more real than itself. 'With thy calling and shouting,' says St. Augustine, 'my deafness is broken; with thy glittering and shining, my blindness is put to flight. At the scent of thee I draw in my breath and I pant for thee; I have tasted and I hunger and thirst; thou hast touched me and I am on fire for thy peace.' Augustine had, no doubt, an exorbitant self, which tormented him; and he was far more aware of his self-esteem and its workings than most men are, even to-day. He was concerned with a real, psychological fact, and his *Confessions* are still interesting to us because of that concern. And the Sermon on the Mount itself is also practical and psychological, concerned with the satisfaction of the self in something else, so that we are still interested in it, however little we may obey it. But still, from this supreme object of self-control, we turn to other tasks and sciences, at best only subsidiary.

We might begin by asking, if once our curiosity were aroused — Why are we born with this exorbitant self? It seems to have no biological purpose; it does not help us in the struggle any more than in the arts and or in conduct, to be always es admiring, and relishing the s products of our egotism, open pressed, are useless and unval very word vanity expresses our of them. But what a vast par selves is just vanity — far vas the part that is instinct or a The demands of appetites cease time, with their satisfaction, demands of vanity never. C for instance, how your whole o any man is affected by the fact has wounded or flattered your va he does either unconsciously, th on your opinion of him, on you feeling toward him, is all the for your vanity knows that unc homage or contempt is the most

The greatest villain in literatu acts from vanity. He did not we may not know it as we read t but Shakespeare knew it by inst saw the possibilities of his own in that of Iago, saw that it was the grave, and developed it in h edy of vanity. Those satanic c who seduce and murder woma woman are not sex-maniacs, but maniacs, and their conquests fe vanity more than their lust. T imprisoned in the self, enslave And the great masters of relig tensely aware of this tyrannica themselves, fear to be enslaved t cry to God for freedom. That they are almost morbidly, as it s us, concerned with sin. Sin m them this exorbitant self, this that may draw a man into an strous and purposeless villainy *will* not allow the analysis of other and more harmless things analysis of righteousness int things less lovely. For them the problem — to be free of the sel vanity, to be aware of that wh

Digitized by Google

hich shouts and calls to itself and be at peace. ss, deafness, captivity it is turned in upon sness is its peace and t is aware of that su- y call God.

them wrong in theory, ey are right; they are he real human difficul- that which all human eply and constantly de- of life is this riddle of lf, which somehow or tisfied, but can be sat- it forgets itself in a I say *satisfied*, because self-sacrifice, as it is rstood, is no solution You can almost kill the nterest; but if you do ot satisfy it and, in y, its egotism will still mischief in you.

ften the worst egotists bout nothing but their ch means their own life of inner conquest which is all artificial . Their interest, be- e it to external reality, nsely concentrated on r very God, to whom pray, is but an idol within the temple of no likeness to the real one. Or it is like a me- ling articles of a news- em what they wish to suading them that it is ems to come from out- the time it is really the self echoed back. ls we can attain to no we attain to no self- ntrol or satisfaction.

erned purely with psy- m all biological or oth- ne may conjecture that the self comes into life with all kinds of capacities or faculties itching to be exercised, and that the problem of life, for some reason a very hard one, is to find a scope for their exercise. We are born with all these faculties and capacities, but we are not born with a technique that will enable us to exercise them. And, if we never acquire it, then the self remains exorbitant, because they all, as it were, fester and seethe within it. It is as exorbitant as when we have an abscess at the root of a tooth and can think of nothing else. Any thwarting of a faculty, capacity, or appetite produces this exorbitance and tyranny of the self, but, since the satisfaction of faculties and capacities is, for most people, much harder than the satisfaction of appetites, the exorbitance of the self is more often caused by the thwarting of the former than of the latter. The problem of the satisfaction of appetities is comparatively simple, for it does not even need a technique of the mind. We can eat without learning to eat; we can make love, even, without learning to make love; but when it comes to turning the mind outward and away from itself, then it is the mind itself that has to learn, has to realize and discover its external interests by means of a technique painfully acquired.

Civilization means the acquirement of all the techniques needed for the full exercise of faculties and capacities, and, thereby, the release of the self from its own tyranny. Where men are vainest, there they are least civilized; and no amount of mechanical efficiency or complication will deliver them from the suppression of faculties and the tyranny of the self, or will give them civilization. But at present we are not aware how we are kept back in barbarism by the suppression of our faculties and the tyranny of our exorbitant selves. We shall discover that clearly and fully only when psychology becomes really psychology; when it concerns itself with the practi-

Digitized by Google

cal problems which most need solving; when it no longer tries to satisfy us with dogmas and formulæ taken from other sciences.

II

And now I come to the practical part of this article. I, like everyone else, am aware that we are kept back in barbarism and cheated of civilization by war; but behind war there is something in the mind of man that consents to war, in spite of the fact that both conscience and self-interest are against it; and it seems to me that a real, a practical science of psychology would concern itself with this something, just as the science of medicine concerns itself with pestilence. And a real, a practical science of psychology would not be content to talk about the herd-instinct, which is not a psychological, but a biological hypothesis, and only a hypothesis. It would not say, 'Man is a herd animal; therefore it is natural for herds of men to fight each other.' In the first place, it would remember that herds of animals do not necessarily fight other herds; in the second, that we do not know that man, in his remote animal past, was a herd animal; and, in the third place, that, as psychology, it is concerned with the mind of man as it is, not with what other sciences may conjecture about the past history of man.

Now, if psychology asks itself what it is in the present mind of man, of the peoples we call civilized, that consents to war, it will at once have its attention drawn to the fact that wars occur between nations, and that men have a curious habit of thinking of nations apart from the individuals who compose them; and of believing all good of their own nation and all evil of any other which may, at the moment, be opposed to it. This is commonplace, of course; but, having stated the commonplace, I wish to discover the reason of it. And I cannot content myself with the formula that man is a herd animal, not only proved, but also because ise of a remedy in it. thing in me, in all m against this blind belie in my nation, and evi and what I desire is so firm and strengthen this we can explain the bas ourselves, then it begin er over us; but the h herd-instinct is not an says, merely, that we very nature of things, w ful or altogether true. doubt, but we wish not possible for us to perce discern the causes of it, discernment to detach o to make it no longer a p but something from whi fered and begin to rec as if we had stimulated tal phagocytes against infected the mind from longer submit ourselve as if it were health; bu be disease, we begin to

The habit of believin own nation and all evi kind of national egotism symptoms and absurdi of personal egotism, or it does not seem to us t cause the object of our to be, not ourselves, but t of us have no convictio such as we have about o nor does boasting of ou to us vulgar, like boasti Yet we do boast about our country, and we feel tion of its virtues which about the virtues of any But, when we boast and this conviction, we sep from the idea of the cou boasting and warmth m us egotistical; we persua

Digitized by Google

our feeling for our country is noble and disinterested, although the peculiar delight we take in admiring it could not be if it were not our country. Thus we get the best of both worlds, the pleasures of egotism without any sense of its vulgarity, the mental intoxication without the mental headaches.

But I will give an example of the process which, I hope, will convince better than any description of it. Most Englishmen and, no doubt, most Americans, would sooner die than boast of their own goods. Yet, if someone says — some Englishman in an English newspaper — that the English are a handsome race, unlike the Germans, who are plain, an Englishman, reading it, will say to himself, 'That is true,' and will be gratified by his conviction that it is true. He will not rush into the street uttering the syllogism: 'The English are a handsome race; I am an Englishman; therefore I am handsome'; but, unconsciously and unexpressed, the syllogism will complete itself in his mind; and, though he says nothing of his good looks even to himself, he will *feel* handsomer. Then, if he sees a plain German, he will say to himself, or will feel without saying it, 'That poor German belongs to a plain race, whereas I belong to a handsome one.' Americans may be different, but I doubt it.

So, if we read the accounts of our great feats of arms in the past, we ourselves feel braver and more victorious. We teach children in our schools about these feats, and that they are characteristic of Englishmen, or Americans, or Portuguese, as the case may be; and we never warn them, because we never warn ourselves, that there is egotism in their pride and in their belief that such braveries are peculiarly characteristic of their own country. Yet every country feels the same pride and delight in its own peculiar virtues and its own preëminence; and it is not possible that every country should be superior to all others.

Further, we see the absurdity of the claims of any other country clearly enough, and the vulgarity of its boasting. Look at the comic papers of another country and their patriotic cartoons; as Americans, look at *Punch*, and especially at the cartoons in which it expresses its sense of the peculiar virtues, the sturdy wisdom, the bluff honesty, of John Bull, or the lofty aims and ideal beauty of Britannia; or those other, less frequent, cartoons, in which it criticizes or patronizes the behavior of Jonathan and the ideals of Columbia. Does it not seem to you incredible, as Americans, that any Englishmen should be so stupid as to be tickled by such gross flattery, or so ignorant as to be deceived by such glaring misrepresentations? Have you never itched to write something sarcastic to the editor of *Punch*, something that would convince even him that he was talking nonsense? Well, Englishmen have just the same feelings about the cartoons in American papers; and just the same blindness about their own. Disraeli said that everyone likes flattery, but with royalty you lay it on with a trowel; and nations are like royalty, only more so: they will swallow anything about themselves while wondering at the credulity of other nations.

What is the cause of this blindness? You and I, as individuals, have learned at least to conceal our self-esteem; we are made uneasy by gross flattery; we are like the Duke of Wellington, who, when grossly flattered by Samuel Warren, said to him: 'I am glad there is nobody here to hear you say that.'

'Why, your Grace?' asked Warren.

'Because,' answered the duke, 'they might think I was damned fool enough to believe you.'

But when our country is flattered, and by one of our countrymen, we do not feel this uneasiness; at least, such flattery is a matter of course in the newspapers and at public meetings in all coun-

Digitized by Google

tries; there is such a large and constant supply of it, that there must be an equally large and constant demand. Yet no one can doubt that it is absurd and dangerous, if not in his own country, in others. Believe, if you will, that all the praises of your own country are deserved, and all the more, because of that belief, you will see that the praises of other countries are not deserved. If America is superior to all other countries in all essential virtues, then, clearly, all the other countries cannot be superior; and there must be some cause for their blind belief in their superiority. Englishmen, for instance, however bad their manners, do not proclaim, or even believe, that they are individually superior to all other men — indeed, you hold that the bad manners of Englishmen come from their belief, not in their individual superiority, but in the superiority of England; if they could be rid of that, they might be almost as well-mannered as yourselves. It is a national vanity, a national blindness, that makes fools of them.

But what is the cause of a folly so empty of either moral, or æsthetic, or even biological value, so dangerous indeed, not only to the rest of the world, but even to themselves? For the danger of this folly, its biological uselessness, has been proved to us in the most signal and fearful manner lately by the Germans. They cultivated national vanity until it became madness; and we are all aware of the results. But, if we suppose that they behaved so because they were Germans and therefore born mad or wicked, we shall learn nothing from their disaster. They were, like ourselves, human beings. There, but for the grace of God, goes England, goes America even; and whence comes this madness from which the Grace of God may not always save us? Because it exists everywhere, and is not only tolerated but encouraged, it must satisfy some need of the mind, however dangerously and perversely. Where there is a great demand for dangerous drugs, it is not enough to talk indignantly of the drug-habit. That habit is but a symptom of some deeper evil, something wrong with the lives of the drug-takers, for which the drug is their mistaken remedy; and the right remedy must be found if the habit is to be extirpated.

National egotism, I believe, is a kind of mental drug, which we take because of some unsatisfied need of our minds; and we shall not cure ourselves of it until we discover what causes our craving for national flattery and also our dislike and contempt of other countries. Somewhere, as in the case of all drug-taking, there is suppression of some kind; and the suppression, I suggest, is of individual egotism. We are trained by the manners and conventions of what we call our civilization to suppress our egotism; good manners consist, for the most part, in the suppression of it. However much we should like to talk of ourselves, our own achievements and deserts, we do not wish to hear others talking about theirs. The open egotist is shunned as a bore by all of us; and only the man who, for some reason, is unable to suppress his egotism, remains an open egotist and a bore, persists in the I — I — I of childhood, and provokes the impatience caused by the persistence of all childish habits in the grown-up.

But this suppression of egotism is not necessarily the destruction of it, any more than the suppression of the sexual instinct is the destruction of that. And, in fact, our modern society is full of people whose egotism is all the more exorbitant and unconsciously troublesome to themselves, because it is suppressed. Their hunger for praise is starved, but not removed; for they dare not even praise themselves. Ask yourself, for instance, whether you have ever been praised as much as you would like to be? Are you not aware of a profound

Digitized by Google

desert in yourself which no one, even in your own family has ever fully recognized? True, you have your faults, but, unlike the faults of so many other people, they are the defects of your qualities. And then there is in you a sensitiveness, a delicacy of perception, a baffled creative faculty even, in fact, an unrealized genius, which might any day realize itself to the surprise of a stupid world. Of all this you never speak; and in that you are like everyone else in the stupid world; for all mankind shares with you, dumbly, this sense of their own profound desert and unexpressed genius; and if, by some ring of Solomon or other talisman, we were suddenly forced to speak out the truth, we should all proclaim our genius without listening to each other.

I, for my part, believe in it, believe that it does exist, not only in myself, but in all men, and the men of acknowledged genius are those who have found a technique for realizing it. I say *realizing*, because, until it is expressed in some kind of action, it does not fully exist; and the egos of most of us are exorbitant, however much we may suppress their outward manifestations, because they do not succeed in getting themselves born. The word in us is never made flesh; we stammer and bluster with it, we seethe and simmer within; and, though we may submit to a life of routine and suppression, the submission is not of the whole self: it is imposed on us by the struggle for life and for business purposes: and, unknown to ourselves, the exorbitant, because unexpressed, unsatisfied ego finds a vent somehow and somewhere.

III

Self-esteem is the consolation we offer to the self because it cannot, by full expression, win esteem from others. Each one of us is to the self like a fond mother to her least gifted son: we make up to it for the indifference of the world; but not consciously, for in conscious self-esteem there is no consolation. If I said to myself, 'No one else esteems me; therefore I will practise self-esteem, — the very statement would make the practice impossible. It must be done unconsciously and indirectly, if it is to be done at all and to give us any satisfaction. Most of us have now enough psychology to detect ourselves in the practice of self-esteem, unless it is very cunningly disguised: and, what is more, we are quick to detect each other. It is, indeed, a convention of our society, and a point of good manners, to conceal our self-esteem from others, and even from ourselves, by a number of instinctive devices. One of the chief of these is our humor, much of which consists of self-depreciation, expressed or implied; and *we* delight in it in spite of the subtle warning of Doctor Johnson, who said, 'Never believe a man when he runs himself down; he only does it to show how much he has to spare.'

By all these devices we persuade ourselves that we have got rid of the exorbitant ego, that we live in a happy, free, civilized, de-egotized world. We are not troubled by the contrast between our personal modesty and our national boasting, because we are not aware of the connection between them. But the connection, I believe, exists; the national boasting proves that we have not got rid of our self-esteem, but only pooled it, so that we may still enjoy and express it, if only in an indirect and not fully satisfying manner. The pooling is a *pis-aller*, like the floating of a limited company when you have not enough capital to finance some enterprise of your own; but it is the best we can do with an egotism that is only suppressed and disguised, not transmuted.

If I have an exorbitant opinion of myself, it is continually criticized and thwarted by external criticism; I learn, therefore, not to express it, and even

Digitized by Google

that I have it; but all the while I am seeking, unconsciously, for some means by which I can give it satisfaction. It becomes impossible for me to believe that I am a wonder in the face of surrounding incredulity; so I seek for something, seeming not to be myself, that I can believe to be a wonder, without arousing criticism or incredulity; in fact, something which others also believe to be a wonder, because it seems to them not to be themselves.

There are many such things, but the largest, the most convincing, and the most generally believed in, is Our Country. A man may, to some extent, pool his self-esteem in his family; but the moment he goes out into the world, he is subject to external criticism and incredulity. Or he may pool it in his town; but, as I have heard, the Bostonian-born is subject to the criticism and incredulity of the inhabitants of other towns. What, therefore, we need, and what we get, is a something which at the same time distinguishes us from a great part of the human race, and yet is shared by nearly all those with whom we come in contact. That we find in our country; and in our country we do most successfully and unconsciously pool our self-esteem. True, there are other countries also pooling their self-esteem in the same way, and apt to criticize us and to question our preëminence; but they are far away and we can think of them as an absurd, degenerate horde or rabble; we can look at their newspapers and cartoons in our own atmosphere, and laugh at them securely. They have, indeed, a useful function in the heightening of our own pooled self-esteem; for we are able, from a distance, to compare ourselves, *en masse*, with them, and to feel how fortunate we are, with a kind of hereditary merit, to be born different from them —

> When Britain first, at Heaven's command,
> Arose from out the asure main, —

then also it was the command of Heaven that we should in due course be born Britons, and share in the glory of the mariners of England who guard our native seas; and there is not one of us who, crossing from Dover to Calais for the first time, does not feel that he is more at home on his native seas than any seasick Frenchman.

All this is amusing enough to Americans in an Englishman, or to Englishmen in an American; but it is also very dangerous. In fact, it is the chief danger that threatens our civilization, that prevents it from being civilized, and so, secure. We are all aware of private vices, even of individual self-esteem and its dangers; but this great common vice, this pooled self-esteem, we still consider a virtue and encourage it by all means in our power. And this we do because we are not aware of its true nature and causes. We think that it is disinterested, when it is only the starved ego, consoling itself with a *pis-aller;* we suppose that it is necessary to the national existence, when the Germans have just proved to us that it may ruin a most prosperous nation. Still we confuse it with real patriotism, which is love of something not ourselves, of our own people and city and our native fields, and which, being love, does not in the least insist that that which is loved is superior to other things, or people, unloved because unknown. We know that where there is real affection, there is not this rivalry or enmity; no man, because he loves his wife, makes domestically patriotic songs about her, proclaiming that she is superior to all other wives; nor does he hate or despise the wives of other men. In true love there is no self-esteem, pooled or latent, but rather it increases the capacity for love; it makes the loving husband see the good in all women; and he would as soon boast of his own wife as a religious man would boast of his God.

Digitized by Google

So the true love of country may be clearly distinguished from the patriotism that is pooled self-esteem, by many symptoms. For the patriotism that is pooled self-esteem, though it make a man boast of his country, does not make him love his countrymen. Germans, for instance, before the war, showed no great love of other Germans, however much they might sing 'Deutschland über Alles'; and in England, the extreme Jingoes, or nationalists, are always reviling their countrymen for not making themselves enough of a nuisance to the rest of the world. To them the British Empire is an abstraction, something to be boasted about and intrigued for; but real, living Englishmen are, for the most part, unworthy of it. Their patriotism, because it is pooled self-esteem, manifests itself in hatred rather than in love; just because it cannot declare itself for what it is, because it is suppressed and diverted, its symptoms are always negative rather than positive. For, being suppressed and diverted, it can never find full satisfaction like the positive passion of love. So it turns from one object of hate to another, and from one destructive aim to another. Germany was the enemy and Germany is vanquished; another enemy must be found, another danger scented; and there are always enough patriots in every country, suffering from pooled self-esteem, to hail each other as enemies, and to play the game of mutual provocation.

So no league of nations, no polite speeches of kings and presidents, prime ministers and ambassadors, will keep us from hating each other and feeling good when we do so, unless we can attain to enough self-knowledge to understand why it is that we hate each other, and to see that this mutual hate and boasting are but a suppressed and far more dangerous form of that vanity which we have learned, at least, not to betray in our personal relations. In fact, the only thing that can end war is psychology applied to its proper purpose of self-knowledge and self-control. If once it can convince us that, when we boast of our country, we are suffering from pooled self-esteem, then we shall think it as vulgar and dangerous to boast of our country as to boast of ourselves. And, further, we shall be ashamed of such boasting, as a symptom of failure in ourselves. For pooled self-esteem is self-esteem afraid to declare itself, and it exists because the self has not found a scope for the exercise of its own faculties.

Why did the Germans suffer so much from pooled self-esteem before the war? Because they were a suppressed and thwarted people. The ordinary German was wounded in his personal self-esteem by all the social conventions of his country; he was born and bred to a life of submission; and, though consciously he consented to it, unconsciously his self-esteem sought a vent and found it in the belief that, being a German, he was in all things superior to those who were not Germans. The more submissive he was as a human being, the more arrogant he became as a German; and, with unconscious cunning, his rulers reconciled him to a life of inferiority by encouraging him in his collective pride. So, even while he behaved as if he were the member of an inferior, almost conquered, race, to his military caste, he told himself that this was the price he gladly paid for national preëminence.

Before and during the war the Germans were always saying that they had found a new way of freedom through discipline and obedience; unlike the vulgar, anarchical, democracies of the West, they stooped to conquer; and, since they did it willingly, it was freedom, not servitude. But their psychology was as primitive as it was dangerous. That willingness of theirs was but making the best of a bad job. If only they had known

Digitized by Google

it, they were not content with their submission; no people so intelligent in some things, so industrious and so self-conscious, could be content. There was in them a dangerous, unsatisfied stock of self-esteem, which, since they dared not express it in their ordinary behavior, found expression at last in a collective national madness. It seems to us now that the German people suffered from persecution mania; but that mania was the vent by which every German eased his sense of individual wrong and soothed his wounded personal pride. By a kind of substitution, he took revenge for the sins of his own Junkers upon all rival nations; and hence the outbreak which seemed to us incredible even while it was happening.

I speak of this now only because it is a lesson to all of us, Americans and English. We too are thwarted, not so systematically as the Germans, but still constantly, in our self-esteem; and we too are constantly tempted to console ourselves by pooling it. In all industrial societies, the vast majority never find a scope for the full exercise of their faculties, and are aware of their inferiority to the successful few. This inferiority may not be expressed politically or in social conventions; in America, and even in England, the successful may have the wit not to insist in any open or offensive manner upon their success; but, all the same, it gives them a power, freedom, and celebrity which others lack. And this difference is felt far more than in the past, because now the poor live more in cities and know better what the rich are doing. Unconsciously, they are wounded in their self-esteem by all that they read in the papers of the doings of the rich; they have become spectators of an endless feast, which they do not share, with the result that they pool their wounded self-esteem either in revolutionary exasperation or in national pride. But, since national pride seems far less dangerous to the rich and successful than revolutionary exasperation, with the profound, unconscious cunning of instinct, they encourage national pride by all means in their power.

There, I think, they are wrong. I believe that national pride, and the hatred of other nations, is a more dangerous vent for pooled self-esteem even than revolutionary exasperation; for, sooner or later, it will, as in Russia, produce a revolutionary exasperation all the more desperate because it has been deferred and deceived. If we have another world war, — and we shall have one unless we discover and prevent the causes of war in our own minds, — there will be revolutionary exasperation everywhere; and it will be vain to tell starving mobs that it is all the fault of the enemy. The chauvinism of the disinherited mob is but a drug, which increases the evil it pretends to heal. Behind revolutionary exasperation, and behind chauvinism, there is the same evil at work, namely, the thwarting of faculties, the sense of inferiority, the disappointed ego; and we must clearly understand the disease if we are to find the remedy.

The remedy, of course, is a society in which faculties will no longer be suppressed, in which men will cure themselves of their self-esteem, not by pooling it, but by caring for something not themselves more than for themselves. To dream of such a society is as easy as to accomplish it is difficult; but we shall have taken the first step toward the accomplishment of it when we see clearly that we have no alternative except a relapse into barbarism. Suppression, good manners, discipline, will never rid us of our self-esteem; still it will find a vent in some collective, and so more dangerous, form, unless we can, as the psychologists say, sublimate it into a passion for something not ourselves. If we believe that our country is not ourselves, we deceive ourselves; we

Digitized by Google

may give our lives for it, but it is still the idol in which we pool our self-esteem; and the only way to escape from the worship of idols is to find the true God.

I am not now talking religion; I am talking psychology, though I am forced to use religious terms. The true God is to be found by every man only through the discovery of his deepest, most permanent desires; and these he can discover only through the exercise of his highest faculties. So that is the problem for all of us, and, as we now know, it is a collective problem, one which we can solve only all together. So long as other men are thwarted in the exercise of their highest faculties, you are thwarted also; you are kept always from happiness by the unhappiness of others.

You may be rich, brilliant, and a lover of peace; but, so long as the mass of men can do nothing with their self-esteem but pool it, you will live in a world of wars and rumors of wars. You may be an artist, a philosopher, a man of science; but, so long as the mass of men are set by division of labor to tasks in which they cannot satisfy the higher demands of the self, any demagogue may tempt them to destroy all that you value. Until they also enjoy and so value it, it is not secure for you or for the world.

In the past religion has failed because the problem of release from self-esteem has been for it a private and personal one. That is where psychology can now come to its aid. When once we understand that our self-esteem, if suppressed, is pooled, not destroyed, and that we can escape from it only by the exercise of our higher faculties, we shall see also that the problem of release is collective. We are, indeed, all members one of another, as the masters of religion have always said; but only now is it possible for us to see the full truth of their saying. In the past there often seemed to be some incompatibility between religion and civilization; but now we are learning that they are one, and have the same enemy. Once men sought for God alone, and in the wilderness; now we may be sure that they will not find Him unless they search all together. Salvation itself is not a private making of our peace with God: it is a common making of our peace with each other; and that we shall never do until, by self-knowledge, we remove the causes of war from our own minds.

All that I have said in this article is vague, loose, and amateurish; and I have fallen into religious language now and again because there was no other that I could use. But the science that we all need, if we are all together to be saved, does not yet exist. I have written to point out our bitter need of it, and in the hope that the demand will produce the supply.

Digitized by Google

CONSOLATION

BY ALBION FELLOWS BACON

I

THE door-bell rang in the night. It was toward morning, and cold. We sat up and listened.

It rang again.

The children were asleep across the hall. Their father went downstairs quietly and opened the door.

Leaning over the rail, I heard him talking to a messenger. Then he came back upstairs, shaking violently, as with a heavy chill, and handed me a telegram.

It read, 'Margaret is very ill. Come at once.'

We looked at each other in terror and bewilderment. She had gone away, a few days before, so radiant, and seemingly in perfect health. We had letters telling of her happy visit, and the plans for the wedding at which she was to be bridesmaid. In her letters there was no hint of illness or weakness. It seemed impossible that in such a short time she could be seriously ill. Had there been an accident? Could there be a mistake?

I wondered and reasoned, unable to accept the message, but weighed down with dread forebodings. Her father could say nothing, but he looked gray and broken, as if the telegram had brought news of her death. He told me, afterward, that he was convinced that was what it meant.

'Let us pray for her to be well,' I said, after we had turned the heart-breaking puzzle over and over. 'That is all we can do. We have always prayed, and the children always get well. Perhaps we may get another telegram by morning, saying she is better.'

And so I actually hoped; and, at last, praying, fell asleep. But her father could not sleep. I think he lay awake till morning, when, in the chill, early gray dawn, we made his preparations, and he left to take the first train.

Later, I woke the children and told them what had happened. They were distressed with vague fears, watching me with anxious little faces.

I went about in a strange, unhappy daze, feeling a cold hand clutching my heart, imagining her in pain, in fever, wondering what the physicians were doing for her, longing, in an agony of desire and grief, to be with her. I was hoping every minute for a telegram that would say she was better.

After some hours a telegram came. It announced her death.

Holding it with trembling fingers, I reread it with blurred vision, doubting my sight. It brought no conviction, simply more bewilderment. It was impossible. It was unthinkable. *She* to die! I did not believe it. I had never known anyone so vividly alive. Her lithe, slender body, her face, alight and radiant with thought, seemed to be only an expression of her spirit. 'Spirit, fire, and dew' — so I had often thought of her.

I sat and stared at the telegram, stupidly, as one might look at a heavy club that had smitten one on the head.

Digitized by Google

I know now that the effect it had was that of a physical blow. I could not think coherently, but one idea kept rising insistently. There was some mistake. It might be a trance. I sent a hasty telegram by telephone, and then another, more explicit and urgent. I waited in a state of suspended life. At last the answer came back: —

'There was no mistake. Five physicians were called.'

There was no mistake. Then —

I could not frame the thought. It was like another, heavier blow. My brain reeled. Thought seemed to stagger, to faint, to rouse and fall, exactly as it does when recovering from an anæsthetic or a blow. I recalled the feeling of the surgeon's knife, the stabs of pain, dulled and then sharp, as consciousness returns.

That impression of the anæsthetic persisted for days — the feeling of dull stupor, with sudden sharp stabs of pain, as realization came at times. It is a merciful result of such a blow that the stupor prevails.

Then, all at once, a clear thought came to me: 'Now she is with God. Now she *knows* what we two have so often wondered about.'

I was overpowered by the wonder, the beauty, and the glory of that thought. I rose and stood by the inner door. Suddenly, it seemed to me that Margaret was with me. She seemed to take my hand and draw me up, a step higher, while she stood close to me, a little higher, still holding my hand.

Then it seemed as if, while we stood thus together, a great brilliant sun rose from the horizon, with rays spreading to the zenith, while an ineffable glory spread over the world.

I do not know how long we stood. It was so wonderful that I found myself smiling, though I stood there, at last, alone.

'She is not dead,' I said to myself. 'She is more vitally, strongly alive than ever before, and she is with God. She is happy.'

The beauty and glory of that experience stayed with me. It left an exaltation that lasted for months. It left, too, a deep conviction that Margaret was in a realm of love and happiness and beauty, infinitely transcending ours.

Because I am not a spiritualist, and would not seek or credit any of their 'communications,' I want to make it plain that there was no appearance, no voice, no touch, no thrill of contact. There was no illusion. The experience did not seem in the least supernatural, but most natural. It seemed to be of the texture of thought, as if I had a strong thought of her being with me. It was a manifestation of her love, I feel sure. It gave me unspeakable comfort and assurance.

II

'When she comes home,' I thought, with throbbing heart,
That danced a measure to my mind's refrain.
Again from out the door I leaned and looked,
Where she should come along the leafy lane.
And then she came — I heard the measured sound
Of slow, oncoming feet, whose heavy tread
Seemed trampling out my life. I saw her face.
Then through my brain a sudden numbness spread.
The earth seemed spun away, the sun was gone,
And time, and place, and thought. There was nothing
In all the universe, save one who lay
So still and cold and white, unanswering,
Save by a graven smile, my broken moan.
She had come home, yet there I knelt *alone*.

Years ago I had written that poem, after reading Riley's 'When she comes Home.' Was it a prophecy?

It was some days before they brought her home from that distant state. It seemed like months. I must not dwell on the agony of those days, or anything they held for all of us.

And then she came — I heard the measured sound
Of slow, oncoming feet —

Digitized by Google

I had looked forward, with a great eagerness, to seeing her again. I went into the room. There, amid a bower of flowers, dressed in glistening, delicate white, lay a beautiful girl. 'So still and cold and white, unanswering' —

I felt a distinct shock of disappointment. This was not Margaret. There was some mistake, after all. But the clear-cut, cameo features were the same, the hair, the hands. I touched them. Who can forget that icy cold! It was marble. It was not Margaret.

I stood, disappointed and puzzled. She was not lying there. I was sure of it. She was alive, and was both with me and in heaven. The flood of triumphant conviction swept over me again. I looked about the room, in a kind of wonder at the funeral flowers — for her, who was not dead! There were pallid white roses. But among them were some splendid rich red roses, full of life and vigor. Yes, they were suitable. And there were her favorite pink ones. Then my eye caught a great wreath of sweet peas, white, rose-pink, and lavender. It seemed to express my thought of her present life and surroundings. I caught it up and laid it over the feet of the beautiful, still figure.

Later in the day someone came and spoke to me about a dress — a black dress. The thought filled me with horror. Black! They wear black for the dead. She was not dead. To wear black would seem to proclaim her dead. I showed them the wreath. 'If it were possible, I should like to wear white, embroidered with rose and lavender, and threads of gold, like light,' I said. 'That is the glorious way I think of her.' But I felt that no one could understand.

They spoke of cards, black-edged, and of kerchiefs, black-edged. It seemed childish to me, even though one were dead. How be, to express o all black, would seem to say tha not bear it, and

Another day tiful form lay need not tell a enced it, what grief-stricken h

Then the tim on the hillside, fell, beside the seemed true, th Dazed, in bew pain, I saw th over the grave. ily away, I kn with us.

As we entere there came th thought that back, as she ha alive. She was been on the visi at school. Far near. I was sur going to her.

From that t ward to that m wait.

It was a com feel that she w those others we us all at such t pecially at nig instinctive fea darkness and c have gone from in a tiny boat, they frightened they cold? We in terms of th ture ourselves thoughts. We hands of helpfu

Digitized by Google

we realize with relief that others, like them, can touch and help them, when we cannot.

The thought makes the flesh seem unreal. It makes God seem more real. We are turned back on the thought of God, and of his promises. The Twenty-third Psalm is a refuge. We sink into the comfort of the thought, 'Underneath are the Everlasting Arms.' We hold to the promise of Christ, 'Lo, I am with you always.' It is unspeakably comforting to realize that 'If I take the wings of the morning and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea, even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me.'

Why, they could not be away from Him *anywhere* in the universe. They could not grope a single step in darkness or bewilderment.

Then I began to realize that we are just as entirely dependent on God in the flesh, as we are after we leave it. How helpless are mortals, before the power of the aroused elements, in flood or fire, earthquake or hurricane! How helpless in pestilence! How little human hands can do to protect us! And we are as helpless to provide for our needs, if provision is not made first by Nature.

I realize how God's care anticipates our human needs, provides light for the eye, sound for the ear, adjusts our physical frame to the pressure of the atmosphere, maintains the thermo-equilibrium of the body these and thousands of other provisions. And does He not provide as generously for our souls, even while they are imprisoned in the flesh? In how many ways does He minister to the soul — through the eye, the ear, the intellect, and by spiritual communion.

The study, not only of the human body and mind, but also of physical nature, convinces one of open heart of the care of God.

'Consider the lilies of the field.' 'Behold the fowls of the air. . . . Your heavenly Father feedeth them.'

Many a time, since then, have I stood, as the golden sunset deepened into twilight, and listened to the robins singing their happy vespers among the orchard trees. As it sank to a soft twitter, blending with the contented hum of insects, and the far-off, peaceful sounds of flock and herd, there has swept over me an overwhelming consciousness of the care of the All-Father for his creatures.

Something of this came to me that first night, and I prayed for her who had gone out into what seemed at first to be the great Darkness. It was not that she needed my prayers, for her faith was as deep as mine; but that seemed the only way I could bear her company. Gradually the darkness became luminous, and the horror of cold and loneliness melted away in the warm consciousness of the love and light of God.

The next day a friend brought me a copy of the beautiful prayer that his church uses. It was so comforting that I want to give it to others.

'O God, the God of the spirits of all flesh, in whose embrace all creatures live, in whatsoever world or condition they be; I beseech Thee for her whose name and dwelling-place and every need Thou knowest.

'Lord, vouchsafe her light and rest, peace and refreshment, joy and consolation, in Paradise, in the companionship of saints, in the presence of Christ, in the ample folds of thy great love. Grant that her life (so troubled here) may unfold itself in thy sight and find a sweet employment in the spacious fields of eternity. If she hath ever been hurt or maimed by any unhappy word or deed of mine, I pray Thee, of thy great pity, to heal and restore her, that she may serve Thee without hindrance.

'Tell her, O gracious Lord, if it may

Digitized by Google

be, how much I love her and miss her and long to see her again; and, if there be ways in which she may come, vouchsafe her to me as a guide and guard, and grant us a sense of her nearness, in such degree as thy laws permit.

'If in aught I can minister to her peace, be pleased, of thy love, to let this be; and mercifully keep me from every act which may deprive me of the sight of her as soon as our trial time is over, or mar the fullness of our joy when the end of the days hath come.

'Pardon, O gracious Lord and Father, whatsoever is amiss in this my prayer, and let thy will be done; for my will is blind and erring, but thine is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think; through Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.'

'Light and rest, peace and refreshment, joy and consolation.' What could I pray for her that she would not have? I prayed God to give her all these, and some special, shining joy, because of her mother's prayer. I prayed for Him to give her my love, and to tell her how deeply we missed her; for, though I lifted my thought to her constantly, I felt that she was more sure to receive the message in that way. I prayed, too, that I might have communion with her, and that my thought might go to her. I feel now that it does. And then I taught the children to pray, 'Please, God, give her our love.' But most of all I prayed that she might be kept as close to Christ as possible. That means all safety, all care, all beatitude.

IV

The pink roses left in the home breathed of her. While they lasted they gave me a kind of faint happiness. When they were gone, I brought more to put by her picture and in her room. She seemed to be there, in a way. But

when I went ba
felt that she was
no satisfaction i
flowers. It seem
in her room, as

Her room, all
had been closed
took it for mine,
to her. Standin
thought how oft
the clear perfec
seemed as if she n
mirrored door,
shoulder. The
she would be ret

Our lives and
much interwover
common. It seer
a peculiar way, I
her eyes. As I
gowns she wore,
ing, 'How coars
must seem to h
glorious raiment
fashion now.'
thought, almost
ments, not wove
of a flower-petal.
fabric is, compar

Putting away
what childish to
her now, compare
heaven. But I la
with reverent ca
I had, and ine
thought was satis
quieting, for it l
sion of her exalte
seem more attun

I felt this, too
denly the unus
minor strains on
them, and they a
to be peculiarly
sorrow. Now the
gratingly as a di
this was not th
Margaret was h
happy and trium

Digitized by Google

I saw the grime and dirt of the city with new vision, and with an overpowering thought of the immaculate purity of those streets, 'like unto molten glass,' and of the incorruptible beauty of that fair country, that real 'Place' that Christ promised to prepare for us. It was good to think of her there.

When someone laid before me that beautiful sonnet of Richard Watson Gilder, 'Call me not Dead,' it came to me with new meaning: —

Call me not dead when I, indeed, have gone
Into the company of the ever-living
High and most glorious poets. Let thanksgiving
Rather be made. Say: 'He at last hath won
Rest and release, converse supreme and wise,
Music and song and light of immortal faces;
To-day, perhaps, wandering in starry places,
He hath met Keats, and known him by his eyes.
To-morrow (who can say?) Shakespeare may pass,
And our lost friend just catch one syllable
Of that three-centuried wit that kept so well;
Or Milton; or Dante, looking on the grass
Thinking of Beatrice, and listening still
To chanted hymns that sound from the heavenly hill.

I had thought of her meeting others. Perhaps she, too, had met Keats and others of those beautiful spirits gone from us, whose books she had loved to read, those masters of music and painting that she enjoyed most. It was a comfort to know that she had always delighted in new places and in making new friends. I pictured her amid groups and companies, amid love and light and harmonies of wonderful music. I could see her conversing, with her bright sparkle and vivacity, with these new friends. How she would enjoy them; and, I could not help thinking, how they would enjoy her!

Then I began to think of her, with a most persistent imagining, as moving in some free, swift, happy motion, almost as if swept along by light clouds, or by electric currents. Not with the old idea of wings! As I saw her, in thought, she was always smiling, almost always laughing, with that light, joyous laugh of hers. And whenever I lifted my eyes, it seemed that, framed among the trees, wreathed in rainbow colors, there was a vanishing vision of her smiling face.

It took nothing from my comfort to think that memory and imagination each had its part in this strong new visualizing. Accustomed to analyze thought, I was aware of a new, strong element, which I believed to be divine.

Many things about the home have helped to make her, not a memory, but a living part of our daily lives. She seems immanent in all beauty, as a living part of it — in sunset or moonlight, in garden walks or woodland paths. And in all holy communion, being nearer to God, I feel nearer to her who is with God.

Most of all, the thought of her comes at sunrise, in the beauty of the quiet dawn, with the words of her best-loved hymn. The air is Mendelssohn's, but there always awakens at the same time the unearthly music of Grieg's 'Morning,' which she often played. It, too, has in it the faint, growing light of the dawn and the stir of awakening birds.

Still, still with Thee, when purple morning breaketh,
When the bird waketh, and the shadows flee;
Fairer than morning, lovelier than daylight,
Dawns the sweet consciousness — I am with Thee.

So shall it be at last, in that bright morning
When the soul waketh, and life's shadows flee;
O in that hour, fairer than daylight dawning,
Shall rise the glorious thought — I am with Thee.

To that dawning I lift my eyes.

Digitized by Google

SHELL-SHOCKED — AND AFTE

BY AN AMERICAN SOLDIER

I

HEADQUARTERS, ——DIVISION,
——, FRANCE,
November 1, 1918.

COLONEL —— ——
General Staff, —

You will proceed to Ceuilly Woods at once, ascertain the conditions existing upon that front, and report the result of your observations by the quickest available means.

By command of
MAJOR GENERAL ——,
Colonel, General Staff,
Chief of Staff.

I received the above order within half an hour after reporting for duty as liaison officer for the ——th Division, A.E.F. Brief, to the point, apparently simple of execution, it was the cause of months of the most perfect and unmitigated hell to me.

My automobile, a beautiful Cadillac limousine, was waiting on the street, below the general's office. I climbed aboard, directing my chauffeur to drive toward the front — we were then about ten miles behind the infantry lines. On the way, I stopped to pick up two Salvation Army girls, walking laboriously through the mud to their advanced station. About three miles back of the lines, we came to the field artillery, and were met in the road by a sentinel, who told me that that was the limit for automobiles. I sent the car back to Division Headquarters, grabbed a side-car, and went on. It was an active sector, and things became interesting very soon. We went on, however, until we reached a camouflaged road. driver to wait for me him on my map, a gathering up a lieut familiar with that s

We walked along ing it at an opening through which ran a narrow-gauge railr this railroad, pickin while listening inter al Boche shells that to drop on our bell told us the shells w vals we were jolted fire, as the seventy some irritating batt

Soon we reached infantry. I stoppe regiment, asked the ditions, and went o doned Boche railro woods, and the rail road to travel. Shel now and than we w our legs would wilt, the crash, get up a shelling became hea dropped and heard I got up and looke was without a helm lant boy, not as bl by the shelling.

I looked to the f as I did so, I heard thing I had ever he loud, malicious scre believe that there c

Digitized by Google

utterly terrifying than that sound. It is wicked, awful; it makes one feel cold and sick when it is loud. These shells carry with them a warning of death in an awful form, from which there is no escape unless God is good to you and you are quick enough to get close to the ground before the spray of splintered steel flies in all directions. This shell was louder than any I had ever heard — it seemed to be right in front of my face; it called its message with a fluttering, whimpering scream that froze me, nauseated me, weakened my legs, made me breathe a most devout, heartfelt prayer: 'O my God, don't let that hit me!'

I dropped. I crumpled up. I simply collapsed on the ground. But I did not get there fast enough. As I was falling, the whole world blew up. It is indescribable, that crash of sound, so loud one cannot hear it. It stuns, it seems to hit you all over at once — things seem to stop going altogether. Perhaps I was knocked out; I don't know. I remember getting to my feet, my head throbbing, my ears banging, my legs wobbling a bit as I tried to get my balance and stay up. I put my hand to my head in a dazed way, to wipe away from my mind the fogginess that seemed to surround it.

Another crash came and knocked me down. Again I got up. The blue layers of smoke were lying all about me, layer on layer, quiet and still, with the trees showing in between. I turned around, and still I saw those horizontal layers of blue smoke. I could n't think, or move away from where I stood.

Then, as if it had just happened, I heard a man screaming. He was holding his body with both hands, kneeling on the ground, and screaming in agony. Another and another were lying quietly on the track. Then my eyes rested on what was left of the boy who had laughed at me, the blood pumping out of his body like red water from an overturned bucket. Then I realized that the shelling was still going on — heavy, continuous crashes, following closely one after another, many at a time, a perfect din of sound. I fell to the ground, and rolled over and over, off the track into the woods on the side, into a shell-hole, and lay there. My head hurt, my face hurt, my ears and eyes — I hurt all over. I put my hand to my face where it seemed to burn, and found it was covered with blood. I thought how messy it would make my trench-coat, and wondered whether a dry cleaner could get blood out of a fur collar. I lay there in that hole until the barrage lifted a bit — it was a six-inch barrage: the Boche was covering our approaches, which he knew all too well, since we had just pushed him out of that same area the day before. He knew that track very well, and exactly where it was.

I went on to the front, slowly feeling my way, until I got to the lines. There were no trenches, our men were lying on their bellies in the grass, hugging the ground until they went forward a few yards more, only to hug the ground again. At a field-telephone, a bit later, I telephoned back what information I had, and started to return. It took me all the rest of the day to get back to a dressing-station, where I was sewed up. That night I investigated the rest of that immediate sector, found my sidecar, and went back to the division, hugging the right of the road, with no lights of any kind, meeting ammunition-trains lumbering up on the other side, big spectres in the night, noisily making their way to the lines with their load of the iron ration. At times a shell would whinney and flutter — and crash to our right or left. It was a wild ride. Early in the morning we reached headquarters, and I breakfasted with the general and his staff. Jokes were cracked at my hurt face, and I was congratulated on having won a wound-stripe.

Digitized by Google

II

The Armistice came along in a few days, and I was assigned to command a field-artillery regiment that was to march into Germany. I was glad, as I wanted to make that historic trip. But I wished to high heaven that my head would quit aching. We got ready for the march in, gathering horses here and there, resting our men, sprucing up all we could under the circumstances, hating the quiet and inactivity of it all, wishing we could go home for a week or so, talking about the past already. And still I wished to high heaven that my head would stop its ache, its throb, its feeling as if it were in a vise.

Then our orders came, and in we went. Through miles of horribly devastated France, past miles on miles of barbed-wire entanglements, over roads full of shell-holes, past utterly ruined towns. And then into beautiful Luxemburg, with fields of grain, wonderful forests; through quaint towns, and then to Luxemburg City, where, as I rode at the head of my regiment, the children ran along and threw flowers under my horse's feet — flags waving from the windows, people cheering, until my heart came into my throat and tears to my eyes, and I realized that never in my life again would I feel as I did then. And always my head ached and throbbed, always I wished to high heaven it would some time stop.

The regimental surgeon began to dope me. Every night he would stick something into me, or give me something to drink, feel my pulse, chat a while. Next morning he would stop in and ask how I slept, and sometimes how I ate. I did n't sleep, I could n't eat. And always the ache. And then that dream! It would wake me up in a sweat. Every now and then I would hear that fluttering, whimpering squeal, — and then I would see myself lying on the ground with
the blood pumpi
pieces of the boy
me. I would wake
more. Then break
— and always that
throb, and the vis
head.

Food became m
tation was not ade
moving fast, and
him. My horses h
grazing in gassed
front; they had no
ishment, and were
very weary. One ti
the next day's m
miles. It almost
make the regimen
and march those f
Horses died, men w
hospitals, and bet
that night we stagg
almost all in. An
ed that day — wh
horses! I love hors
that hill, I though
drafted men knew
team up a hill with
the top. So I stop
ment out so that
between the carria
drove every gun-c
turn. There were o
regiment who kne
horses in draft aro
The two majors kne
er, the other an ol
first sergeant. I w
took six hours to
regiment over the t
got there, though.

Across the river
I do remember th
laughter, the wav
py children strewin
burg, into Germany
many. The women
the children clung

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

skirts, and stared, or scampered into the house, looking backward as they ran. How quiet it all was! How sullenly antagonistic! My men joked and kidded each other about the way the girls turned their backs, and comments were made on how that would all change when the Q.M. furnished us with new uniforms. It did change, too, almost overnight, as if it had been ordered from the German Great Headquarters. Then we were treated well, almost as guests. The sullenness vanished, to be replaced by a welcoming hand and offers of food and shelter if we did not have enough. My orderly came to me and said, 'Colonel, we 've been fighting the wrong people!' It shocked me for a moment and made me think, and has made me think a good deal since — that remark. I began to learn how many of my men spoke German, how many had been born in Germany, or were of German parentage.

I was made military governor of an area, was treated well by my host, the mayor of the town where I made my headquarters. I remember how delicious his Frau's outing-flannel sheets felt to me at night, after the variety I had been accustomed to at the front. But I could not sleep well at all, nor could I eat well. The doctor began to talk of my taking a rest, a few days in the hospital, and so forth, to ease up a bit. And there was more dope in my arm, or something to drink. But the throb in my head kept on — and so did the dream. For about three months that continued; my nerves were getting bad, I was becoming more and more irritable. I was ill, but did not quite know it. I was sent to the hospital, was transferred to another, fainted once, was put to bed. And then things began to fade away at times. They were kind to me there, very kind. I shall always remember the kindness of those nurses and doctors.

The next thing I remember I was at Saint-Nazaire, waiting in the hospital for a transport to take me home, with a lot of wounded and sick men. They told me afterward that I acted all right; but the five weeks intervening between the hospital in Germany and Saint-Nazaire are a blank — I simply remember nothing at all.

The trip across was fine — did me lots of good. I was looking forward with a great deal of happiness to meeting some dear friends on this side, and subconsciously waiting for the kind welcome they would give me, and the rest and peace that I would have. A wireless came to me from a girl who had written to me a good deal. If only my head would have let up a bit, — and the nausea have stopped, — I could have been quite happy.

III

We were met in New York by a reception committee, and handed newspapers. Officers came to me, saying that the men were angry at something and wanted my opinion. I happened to be the senior officer on board and, although on sick-report, was, nevertheless, asked about this thing that bothered the men. After hearing it out, I put it up to the men themselves, and they voted to a man that they did not want to be received by a committee headed by a New York newspaper man whom they considered worse than a Boche. The Boche at least would fight — this man stayed home and did all he could to mess up our work apparently. So I told the committee that the men wanted no reception from them, and they departed. How odd it seemed to me that we should be met by a pro-German at such a time! As I look back, I remember this as the first of the disappointments which my country had in store for its men from overseas.

Digitized by Google

I was feeling a bit rocky, and dodged the good people who met us. The surgeon, who had been sleeping in the same room with me on the way across, took me to a receiving hospital in New York City. A friend of mine, an officer who had been shell-shocked, was missing, and I asked for him. The surgeon said that he had jumped overboard. Then it dawned upon me why the doctor had slept in my room.

I want to give all credit to the wonderful staff of the hospital. The nurses and doctors were all one could want. They were kindness itself, thoughtful, and most considerate. At times in the months to follow there were other bright lights of happiness that shine forth as I look back; but, in the main, the year that followed was dominated by misery, physical pain, and mental anguish. If I knew that I was doomed to go through that period again, I would not face it.

For some reason I shrank from meeting my friends — and the girl. But after a bit I was allowed to go out, and I called on her. She was apparently glad to see me, and for a while I enjoyed her company; but some intuition made me feel uncomfortable — why, I could not tell. Gradually this began to become clearer to me, however, as I came to realize how far apart we were, how different her sheltered life had been on this side, and how utterly impossible it was for her to appreciate how I felt. I closed up like an oyster, finding it out of the question to tell what wanted to be told. I tried to a few times, only to catch the look of conscious interest — and again shut up.

This was my second disappointment. It surprised me — it hurt me. The longer I remained in this country, the more it hurt, until, finally, I became callous to the fact; for I realized, much against my will, that my friends, my country, spoke a different language!

That thought ra
in the long month
in my own coun
friends, among sc
meant everything
back at all. I kn
peating a thing th
times, but the big
quick abandonme
overseas men by
is an indictment a
not soon to be fo
uniform from the
burns in the mind
men who at this
ing their broken
jails, insane asylu
wandering, hopel
I wanted relaxat
take my mind a
wanted to see m
light books; I wan
These were diffic
however. My bes
heavier plays —
Nazimova writhe
stage; they wante
exquisite music, o
Exquisite music,
to feed to a man w
something vastly

I had friends w
who were interes
worth; but they c
in the human terr

In New York
musicians of inter
of letters, of trav
ing to most people
to me, normally;
Back my mind wa
now and then th
back, and I saw th
from the ripped,
who had laughed a
nervous as sleep
lost its interest.

A party of us
and spent a few h

Digitized by Google

Mater, to me the most beautiful spot in America, from which have come so many of our most famous men: the school, founded by George Washington, which gave us Grant, Lee, Sheridan, Sherman, Taylor, Pershing, and many others of international fame in civil as well as military life. There is something about that school that holds its graduates with a loyalty that exceeds anything I have seen.

The Corps! Bare-headed, salute it!
With eyes up, thanking our God
That we of the Corps are treading
Where they of the Corps have trod.
We sons of to-day salute you,
You sons of its earlier day;
We follow close order behind you,
Where you have pointed the way.
The long gray line of us stretches
Through the years of a century told,
And the last man feels to his marrow
The grip of your far-off hold.

It was good to be back, but those with whom I was did not understand. They had no realization of the value of such a school to the nation. Somebody remarked that West Point was a place where men were taught to kill Germans who had done us no harm. That grated on me, and I replied that, if I knew anyone who was pro-German at the time, I would most certainly report him to the authorities.

'Would you report me?' asked an American woman in the party.

'I most certainly would,' I answered.

'Well,' she replied, 'you know my friend Fritz —— is a German, and I have a great deal of sympathy for Germany.'

My comments were a bit sharp, I am afraid, and were apparently distasteful to another member of the party, who said that I was a coward if I were willing to report to the Secret Service such a friend as the other woman was to me. Things grew disagreeable, but we drove back to New York in peace, though I was worried and tired out. I retired that night exhausted in mind and body, and could not sleep, though the doctor gave me an opiate. That element of pro-Germanism at that time was extremely distasteful to me — I had seen too much, had felt too much, to be kindly disposed. Besides, it was a distinct shock to learn that my own friends felt so friendly toward those people with respect to whom I felt quite the opposite, because of things I had seen and been through myself. I learned later that that feeling was very prevalent among people calling themselves good Americans.

After a bit I was assigned to duty with the General Staff in Washington. My duties began at once — getting ready for another war. Another war! I used to sit at my desk in the War Department, thinking it over. Another war — God, what a thought! How under high heaven it could be that we should prepare for another war was beyond my powers of comprehension. I could not keep my mind on my work, I thought of other things, fumbled with my papers, dreamed and took walks during office-hours, trying to get my mind clear and get away from that damnable ache in my head. I would go to sleep at my desk, making up for the night before. To the Department I was practically useless.

Occasionally I went to New York, but had best have stayed away. I met an editor of a newspaper which had as its object the uplift of people; but I never got to know exactly what he wanted — he seemed a bit vague himself on that score. I listened to many conversations on the subject of the improvement of the condition of this and that. Then came Germany and the indemnity, and how awful it all was to make poor Germany pay. I went to hear a preacher of the gospel, and was disgusted with his ideas. I heard him address a meeting in Madison Square, at-

Digitized by Google

tended by hundreds of men and women. As I looked around, I saw not one face that I took to be American; and as this American preacher remarked that the Bolsheviki must succeed, he was cheered to the echo, hats were thrown in the air — the crowd went mad. I told my companions that I would not stay in such a place in an American uniform — and left. They came, too, not because they did not sympathize with the speaker, but because they would not stay alone, without the protecting influence of that same uniform.

The drive home started in silence, but became a nightmare memory to me. Two women, one an American, one a foreigner of aristocratic birth, began to talk — and such talk! Again were my eyes opened very wide, and I was stunned and shocked by the opinions expressed. I was told that America should never have entered the war at all; that we should have accepted things peacefully; that, even if the Germans came over here, they would make themselves so hated that they would soon depart whence they came! I was informed that I should be ashamed of myself for ever going to the front; that my decorations were a disgrace to wear, as being tokens given to me for killing Germans! It was a disgrace to be a soldier at all, killing helpless women and children! I was a liar when I said that American troops were not accustomed to doing such things. And this too from well-bred women — intellectuals, so-called.

This was the beginning of the end of my association with these people, of whom I had been very fond before I sailed overseas. I reported them to the Secret Service in Washington, and believe that their pernicious activities ceased. The foreigner had taken refuge on our shores from the violence and anarchy which reigned in her own country; had for three years accepted all that we had to give pitality, music and a which meant most t conversation with holding her aristocra loudly proclaimed was what was needed try's ills! Some thing prehension, beyond man understanding.

IV

Back in Washingt on war, preparing f did my best, but one I was sitting at my realized that there w cally wrong. I got to and feeling silly. circles chasing each o eyes. They came slo nowhere and tumble scurrying along one as I looked after ther always from left to r head — and still the over, those soft, roun out of nothing and f turned my head to s hurrying. I grew te Then I began to play rolled along from le just a little ahead of them — and laughed play. I turned my he on, always just a bi around myself, grabl nably elusive thing mock me in this gam ed for them, I laug delightedly.

In the middle of there came a noise ou me up sharp. I stopp everything was very Then a car-bell rang low; then came step side, and the subdue

Digitized by Google

in the next room in a conference. I felt a chill of fear grip me. I locked myself in, sat down, and held on to my desk as things got gray and the ache in my head gave way to a hum, a low chanting hum, like the one that comes when one is just going under an anæsthetic. It required all my will-power to keep conscious then. Many times afterward I used my will to keep control of myself; but I remember that as the first time, and it left me tired physically, hot all over, and shaking with an intangible fear of a thing not understood.

Then a thought came to me, slowly, in a vague sort of way — I was losing my mind! Dear God, I was losing my mind! I grabbed my head in my hands, closed my eyes to keep away those fooling, fluffy, flying things that came out of nowhere and tumbled off into nowhere again. Things became quiet, I got control, picked up my cap, unlocked the door, and started to leave the office. My secretary met me at the door and laughingly asked me why I had locked her out — that she had been knocking. I said I would not be back that afternoon.

I went as straight as I could go to the attending surgeon, an old friend. In the seclusion of his office I told him my story, and went all to pieces and sobbed like a woman. Pretty soon we were in my car, and he was driving me to the Walter Reed Hospital, talking to me quietly on the way. Then followed those interminable examinations, day after day, — blood-tests, eye-tests, ear-tests, balance-tests, every test apparently that could be devised. I was thankful for my shoulder-straps, which gave me a room to myself.

There came interviews with a famous nerve specialist, a man whose grasp of human nature was wonderful; but he did not know the answer. He advised one thing and then another; he was kindness itself, and his understanding was remarkable. A man nationally famous, he had given up his practice to help the army in its time of need — but he had not been 'over there,' and he did not know. It was this man, whose opinion I valued so highly, whose keen perception was always a source of wonder to me, whose training was all along the line that would lead to a real understanding of my case, who first showed me how utterly alone I was to be in the year that followed.

I had been more or less alone before, because everyone seemed to be so incapable of seeing things as I saw them, but my previous feeling was but little, compared to what followed. I wish that I could properly describe that feeling of utter loneliness in the world. I wish I could in some way convey to those who had their men on the other side how perfectly damnable that solitude is to some of those men. I wish more still that I could in some way get it into the minds of all Americans who have not been through it, how dreadfully alone a shell-shocked man can be, even though surrounded by those who love him most.

After some weeks I was given more liberty and would drive out to see friends — but with what result? Always I met with the same thing, that lack of interest, — either assumed or real, I do not know, — and would go back to the hospital and lie on my bed and lose all control of myself, and cry like a baby. Sleep did not come when I seemed most to need it, and food was positively repulsive a great deal of the time.

There is no use in going into the details of what followed in the hospital, except that one day three doctors came in to see me. They seemed to have something on their minds, but took some time to get it off. Finally, with the greatest consideration, calmly and with expressions of regret, I was informed that it was their opinion that I

Digitized by Google

had best get my affairs in shape as I would probably not live for more than a month, or at best would be permanently insane.

Angry? When I had heard them out, I was more than that. I seemed to have an insane desire to hurt those men. I called them all the names I could think of; damned them with as much abuse as I could command. I wanted to break the furniture, to smash anything that came near me. They must have thought me crazy; perhaps I was, but it was the craziness of a wild rage at anybody who was such a fool as to think I was ready to die. Die? Why, I would not have died to please those doctors — and I did n't.

The thought has come to me since, that perhaps those specialists told me that with a purpose. I don't know — I have never asked; but it has occurred to me that perhaps they told me that to bring out all the fight there was in me. If that was their object, I will grant them a hundred per cent of success. That interview was the turning-point in my illness. From that minute I was obsessed with the idea that I would not die — I was damned if I would die! The whole object of my life was to show those men what fools they were to think that I was going to die. I remember how I screamed at them in that room, and how they stood there listening to me, watching me, and saying nothing. I screamed and cursed those men until I cried, and slung myself down on my bed, and wore myself out trying to control the hysterical sobs that seemed to shake me all to pieces.

I locked my nurse out, but she got in and was good to me and gave me an opiate. She was a sweet girl, the daughter of a great man, giving her time and earnest effort to doing good. I knew her brother, who, himself a shell-shock case, had killed himself after returning from overseas.

V

At my own request I was soon allowed to leave the hospital on a long sick leave, to do whatever I wished. Apparently the doctors had done all they could — it was up to me.

I was mad all through, fighting mad. I was simply possessed with the idea that I would not die, that I would show those doctors what fools they were. In the year that followed, I exhausted everything I could think of that would help me to get well, to get back to where I had been two years before. My constant thought was that I was going to win in some way. It would be tedious to tell it, except in the most general way, but I want to remind anyone who may read this that that period of continual, continuous scrap lasted for a year, and in that time there was but one person who spoke my language. With this one exception, I was as alone as if I had been in a deserted world.

I went to one friend after another, searching for help, suggestions that would assist me; but it was like searching for the pot of gold at the rainbow's end — it simply was not there. There were those who were sympathetic in thought and in deed, but apparently they did not know how to do anything practical.

The one person who knew was the military attaché at the French Embassy, a young captain of the French Army. We were chatting in his apartments one day, talking over the past, when it dawned upon us both that we had been through the same terrible thing. It was like finding some precious possession, long mourned as lost, for us to find each other. We clung to each other like blind men left alone. He spoke English — I spoke French — we both spoke the language of the Front, and we both spoke the language that needs no words, which exists between

Digitized by Google

two men who have experienced shell-fire and suffered the misery of exhausted, shattered nerves known to the world as shell-shock. In the Somme offensive with the battery, he had been filling a sand-bag, when a shell of large calibre struck within a few feet of him. He had been peppered with splinters, but not badly hurt. He had been caught running back and forth behind the front, muttering to himself, and had been for months in hospital until his mind began to clear. Being of a prominent family in France, he had been sent to the United States to get him away from the war, and was going through the same thing I was, fighting it out alone. What long talks we had! We drove about in the country, lay on the grass in the woods, and talked and talked, searching together for the spark in the empty dark that would be a hint of the life to come.

I went to an old friend, a teacher who kept a school for the daughters of rich parents. She was a graduate of Vassar, and I thought she could help me. And the disappointment that followed! I thought that she was human, but she was n't. She had developed into the same sort that I have found elsewhere since then — the type of neurotic weaklings who hide away from reality and live in a comfortable fog of voluntary ignorance. While the war was in progress, she had refused to read about it, on the ground that it was all too horrible. She had purchased Liberty Bonds, in order to be able to tell her clientèle how patriotic she was. She had 'closed her door on the war,' as she dramatically told me.

'Close your door on the war?' I said; 'how can you close your door on the biggest event since the coming of Christ?'

She was shocked, horrified at my blasphemy. She folded her hands, closed her eyes, and said that I must seek solitude, weeks of solitude — and read *Pilgrim's Progress!*

It is so useless to go through the list of people to whom I went looking for help. To their credit be it said that many of them wanted to do something; but they never did it, because they could not, since they did not have the understanding to do it. So I left them, one after another, and went my way — alone, always alone.

My head continued to ache and throb, I continued to be nauseated, I still could not sleep. An insane desire to kill myself, as four other friends had done, took possession of me. I would toy with my automatic, and think how best to do it. I would lock myself in my room when attacks came that I had to fight, attacks that made me tense all over, that made me want to scream, break the furniture, pull my clothes to pieces. I would lean against the wall, tears running down my face, and scratch at the plaster, and sob and gag, and end by throwing myself on my bed, utterly exhausted by the effort to regain control. I would lock my windows before retiring for the night, lock my door and throw the key through the transom, to prevent my doing some insane thing before morning. I would go to sleep late, and wake at about half-past three in the morning, and stare at the dark, trying to think out the meaning of this thing.

I read New Thought, studied Christian Science, read the Bible, became a regular attendant at church. I got a copy of that great piece of logical thought, Burke's 'Conciliation with the American Colonies,' and read it carefully, searching it for his great ideas on how to cure an ill by removing the cause. What was the cause of this thing? That was what I searched for in my own case. The thing to do was to remove the cause — but what was the cause?

My mother came and stayed with

Digitized by Google

me. Never in my life before had I known what a mother could be. I believe that very few men really appreciate their mothers. I know I never appreciated mine until then. I have never seen such utter unselfishness, such obliviousness to her own desires, her own interests, as in my mother's loving thought, her anxiety to help her son.

But it was too much — I could not stand her anxiety. I could not have her coming to my room in the middle of the night, and sitting with me hour after hour, listening to my raving. So I got a nurse and traveled for months on end. I took a ship and sailed off on a cruise through the Southern Seas. I stopped at an island in the south, took a house near the sea, and spent a month or more there. It was wonderful in that quiet and peace. I lay in a hammock, looking out over the beautiful blue Caribbean, listening to the pounding of the waves on the rocks, with the limpid azure of the sky, and its fleecy, scattered clouds overhead.

I breathed in the balm of the fronded palms in the hush of the moonlit nights, until a wonderful thing came to me. The shadows broke, the night of that hideous fight was gone, and the first faint dawn of another day of my life came to me, in the knowledge that I was winning. Then the light came truly bursting in upon my consciousness. I was winning! I was getting well again! I was sleeping better — I could eat — the pains in my head were lessening — my periods of depression were coming at lengthening intervals. I was getting well!

The knowledge that I was coming back came to me suddenly, all at once, and gave me a strength that I thought I could never have again. But once it came, the months that were to come were easy indeed, compared with the ones that had gone before. It was still a struggle, it still required all my will-power to keep goi could win. Before trying to find out thing.

Nearly two yea order that sent m of the Front, I left ed to civil life. I g again away from r months. I was ne this change helpe rapidly I return Periods of ache a short, and few ar lieve the last one was several mon writing on a typ pipe. The pipe su teeth, my finger muscles tightened out of my mouth fingers out straig took my hat, and out into the cou fighting for myse lighted my pipe There was no m fingers were again I had won. That Since then I have tion that I had a r where. That was the thing that ha for so long.

My work brou United States. I papers Articles o soldiers not cared work, in insane as ing the streets. I ter and found that upon thousands o ened circumstance were more thousa pital attention, wh There was trouble the means to care ernmental bureau

Digitized by Google

the buck to each other — and still nothing seemed to be accomplished. What was the matter with my country? Was it really ungrateful? Was it true that the public had tired of this responsibility? Statements were made to me that magazines would no longer accept war-stories, and that publishers would no longer print anything pertaining to the war, or the men who had fought in it. I found that these statements could be easily disproved, but, nevertheless, it was disheartening, when I kept learning for myself how these men were suffering.

I was walking down Broadway, and my walking-stick accidentally struck against a man. I apologized perfunctorily, but upon looking at him, I saw a poorly dressed man who looked familiar. Then he spoke. 'Colonel,' he said, 'can you do me a favor?'

I was astonished — did not know him. But he knew me — he had been in my regiment overseas. He wanted money — two hundred dollars to start a cigar-stand. We went to the bank and he left me happy. Some day I shall hear from that man, who drove a lead pair on the march into silent, sullen Germany. He will win some day. All he needed was a little help, practical help to start again; not emotional sentimentality, but help — practical, substantial help.

How many others there are just like him, who need just a little help. Are we going to give it? I believe we shall, if we but realize the truth; if we will but see, and not 'close our door on the war.'

There has come a thought to me that I wish the American people would ponder over when they grow tired of the war, which they felt so very, very little. When they damn the men who bother them for jobs, who pester them for help, they should search their own hearts first.

> Judge not!
> The workings of his heart and of his mind
> *Thou* canst not see.
> What in our dull brain may seem a stain,
> In God's pure light may only be a scar,
> Brought from some well-fought field,
> Where thou wouldst only faint and yield.

Shall we help back those thousands of humble men who trod the rocky pathway of the Front in France? Shall we give them the little boost that they need, to come back? And what of those other men who have suffered, whose minds are gone? Shall we be but ghosts for those unburied dead — who did not die?

Digitized by Google

THE ROUND-FACED BEAUT

A STORY OF THE CHINESE COU

BY L. ADAMS BECK

In the city of Chang-an music filled the palaces, and the festivities of the Emperor were measured by its beat. Night, and the full moon swimming like a gold-fish in the garden lakes, gave the signal for the Feather Jacket and Rainbow Skirt dances. Morning, with the rising sun, summoned the court again to the feast and wine-cup in the floating gardens.

The Emperor Chung Tsu favored this city before all others. The Yen Tower soaring heavenward, the Drum Towers, the Pearl Pagoda, were the only fit surroundings of his magnificence; and in the Pavilion of Tranquil Learning were held those discussions which enlightened the world and spread the fame of the Jade Emperor far and wide. In all respects he adorned the Dragon Throne — in all but one; for Nature, bestowing so much, withheld one gift, and the Imperial heart, as precious as jade, was also as hard, and he eschewed utterly the company of the Hidden Palace Flowers.

Yet the Inner Chambers were filled with ladies chosen from all parts of the Celestial Empire — ladies of the most exquisite and torturing beauty, moons of loveliness, moving coquettishly on little feet, with all the grace of willow branches in a light breeze. They were sprinkled with perfumes, adorned with jewels, robed in silks woven with gold and embroidered with designs of flowers and birds. Their faces were painted and their eyebrows form perfect arches whe might well slip t breath of sweet wherever she move have been the Em kingdom; but thou the Son of Heaven their charms, — es new blossom was rial bouquet, — he from his august languished in a negl the Great Cold Pa were not more emp They remained und the Princess of Ha the Emperor, know considered the com and macaws more own. Nor had he a press, and it was e some miracle, such of the Municipal throne could be ho

Yet the Emperc bered his imprison crossed the Imperia these inferior crea such interest as m gambols of trained sects of no natural

Accordingly, he c subject last discus should be transfe Chambers, and it w ladies should also

Digitized by Google

opinions be engraved on ivory, bound together with red silk and tassels, and thus presented at the Dragon feet. The subject chosen was the following: —

Describe the Qualities of the Ideal Man

Now when this command was laid before the August Aunt, the guardian of the Inner Chambers, she was much perturbed in mind, for such a thing was unheard of in all the annals of the Empire. Recovering herself, she ventured to say that the discussion of such a question might raise very disquieting thoughts in the minds of the ladies, who could not be supposed to have any opinions at all on such a subject. Nor was it desirable that they should have. To every woman her husband and no other is and must be the Ideal Man. So it was always in the past; so it must ever be. There are certain things which it is dangerous to question or discuss, and how can ladies who have never spoken with any other man than a parent or a brother judge such matters?

'How, indeed,' asked this lady of exalted merit, 'can the bat form an idea of the sunlight, or the carp of the motion of wings? If his Celestial Majesty had commanded a discussion on the Superior Woman and the virtues which should adorn her, some sentiments not wholly unworthy might have been offered. But this is a calamity. They come unexpectedly, springing up like mushrooms, and this one is probably due to the lack of virtue of the inelegant and unintellectual person who is now speaking.'

This she uttered in the presence of the principal beauties of the Inner Chambers. They sat or reclined about her in attitudes of perfect loveliness. Two, embroidering silver pheasants, paused with their needles suspended above the stretched silk, to hear the August Aunt. One, threading beads of jewel jade, permitted them to slip from the string and so distended the rose of her mouth in surprise that the small pearl-shells were visible within. The Lady Tortoise, caressing a scarlet and azure macaw, in her agitation so twitched the feathers that the bird, shrieking, bit her finger. The Lady Golden Bells blushed deeply at the thought of what was required of them; and the little Lady Summer Dress, youngest of all the assembled beauties, was so alarmed at the prospect that she began to sob aloud, until she met the eye of the August Aunt and abruptly ceased.

'It is not, however, to be supposed,' said the August Aunt, opening her snuff-bottle of painted crystal, 'that the minds of our deplorable and unattractive sex are wholly incapable of forming opinions. But speech is a grave matter for women, naturally slow-witted and feeble-minded as they are. This unenlightened person recalls the Odes as saying: —

> 'A flaw in a piece of white jade
> May be ground away,
> But when a woman has spoken foolishly
> Nothing can be done —

a consideration which should make every lady here and throughout the world think anxiously before speech.'

So anxiously did the assembled beauties think, that all remained mute as fish in a pool, and the August Aunt continued: —

'Let Tsŭ-ssŭ be summoned. It is my intention to suggest to the Dragon Emperor that the virtues of women be the subject of our discourse, and I will myself open and conclude the discussion.'

Tsŭ-ssŭ was not long in kotowing before the August Aunt, who dispatched her message with the proper ceremonial due to its Imperial destination; and meanwhile, in much agitation, the beauties could but twitter and whisper in each other's ears, and await the

Digitized by Google

response like condemned prisoners who yet hope for a reprieve.

Scarce an hour had dripped away on the water-clock when an Imperial Missive bound with yellow silk arrived, and the August Aunt, rising, kotowed nine times before she received it in her jeweled hand with its delicate and lengthy nails ensheathed in pure gold set with gems of the first water. She then read it aloud, the ladies prostrating themselves.

To the Princess of Han, the August Aunt, the Lady of the Nine Superior Virtues:—

Having deeply reflected on the wisdom submitted, We thus reply. Women should not be the judges of their own virtues, since these exist only in relation to men. Let Our Command therefore be executed, and tablets presented before us seven days hence, with the name of each lady appended to her tablet.

It was indeed pitiable to see the anxiety of the ladies! A sacrifice to Kwan-Yin, the Goddess of Mercy, of a jewel from each, with intercession for aid, was proposed by the Lustrous Lady; but the majority shook their heads sadly. The August Aunt, tossing her head, declared that, as the Son of Heaven had made no comment on her proposal of opening and closing the discussion, she should take no part other than safeguarding the interests of propriety. This much increased the alarm, and, kneeling at her feet, the swan-like beauties, Deep Snow and Winter Moon, implored her aid and compassion. But, rising indignantly, the August Aunt sought her own apartments, and for the first time the inmates of the Pepper Chamber saw with regret the golden dragons embroidered on her back.

It was then that the Round-Faced Beauty ventured a remark. This maiden, having been born in the far-off province of Ssuch-uan, v
tic by the distingui
Palace and, therefo
en unless decorum
her detractors were
the charms that
name. Her face ha
of the pearl, and lik
plum was the purit
upon which the d
brows resembled tw
ed to flutter above
eyes — eyes which
Aunt had commen
of unsurpassed var
been compared to
her waist was like a
discretion in habiti
that even the Lus
Lady Tortoise dre
the splendors of he
however, a general
she spoke.

'Paragons of bea
and opaque-witted
should speak?'

'What, indeed!'
Sister. 'This entir
person cannot even

A distressing pau
which many whispe
Lustrous Lady bro

'It is true that t
tal Round-Faced B
come, yet even the
assist the Dragon;
of alarm, what is
tiger behind one,
Book of Rites and
elegance?'

'The high-born
member the Rites!'
tial Sister. 'Have
August Aunt obser
derstand do not
speak do not under

The Round-Face
her courage.

'Doubtless this i

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

wise do not speak, who should instruct us? The August Aunt herself would be silent.'

All were confounded by this dilemma, and the little Lady Summer-Dress, still weeping, entreated that the Round-Faced Beauty might be heard. The Heavenly Blossoms then prepared to listen and assumed attitudes of attention, which so disconcerted the Round-Faced Beauty that she blushed like a spring tulip in speaking.

'Beautiful ladies, our Lord, who is unknown to us all, has issued an august command. It cannot be disputed, for the whisper of disobedience is heard as thunder in the Imperial Presence. Should we not aid each other? If any lady has formed a dream in her soul of the Ideal Man, might not such a picture aid us all? Let us not be "say-nothing-do-nothing," but act!'

They hung their heads and smiled, but none would allow that she had formed such an image. The little Lady Tortoise, laughing behind her fan of sandalwood, said roguishly: 'The Ideal Man should be handsome, liberal in giving, and assuredly he should appreciate the beauty of his wives. But this we cannot say to the Divine Emperor.'

A sigh rustled through the Pepper Chamber. The Celestial Sister looked angrily at the speaker. 'This is the talk of children,' she said. 'Does no one remember Kung-fu-tse's [Confucius] description of the Superior Man?'

Unfortunately none did — not even the Celestial Sister herself.

'Is it not probable,' asked the Round-Faced Beauty, 'that the Divine Emperor remembers it himself and wishes — '

But the Celestial Sister, yawning audibly, summoned the attendants to bring rose-leaves in honey, and would hear no more.

The Round-Faced Beauty therefore wandered forth among the mossy rocks and drooping willows of the Imperial Garden, deeply considering the matter. She ascended the bow-curved bridge of marble which crossed the Pool of Clear Weather, and from the top idly observed the reflection of her rose-and-gold coat in the water while, with her taper fingers, she crumbled cake for the fortunate gold-fish that dwelt in it. And, so doing, she remarked one fish, four-tailed among the six-tailed, and in no way distinguished by elegance, which secured by far the largest share of the crumbs dropped into the pool. Bending lower, she observed this singular fish and its methods.

The others crowded about the spot where the crumbs fell, all herded together. In their eagerness and stupidity they remained like a cloud of gold in one spot, slowly waving their tails. But this fish, concealing itself behind a miniature rock, waited, looking upward, until the crumbs were falling, and then, rushing forth with the speed of an arrow, scattered the stupid mass of fish, and bore off the crumbs to its shelter, where it instantly devoured them.

'This is notable,' said the Round-Faced Beauty. 'Observation enlightens the mind. To be apart — to be distinguished — secures notice!' And she plunged into thought again, wandering, herself a flower, among the gorgeous tree pæonias.

On the following day the August Aunt commanded that a writer among the palace attendants should, with brush and ink, be summoned to transcribe the wisdom of the ladies. She requested that each would give three days to thought, relating the following anecdote. 'There was a man who, taking a piece of ivory, carved it into a mulberry leaf, spending three years on the task. When finished it could not be told from the original, and was a gift suitable for the Brother of the Sun and Moon. Do likewise!'

'But yet, O Augustness!' said the

Digitized by Google

Celestial Sister, 'if the Lord of Heaven took as long with each leaf, there would be few leaves on the trees, and if —'

The August Aunt immediately commanded silence and retired. On the third day she seated herself in her chair of carved ebony, while the attendant placed himself by her feet and prepared to record her words.

'This insignificant person has decided,' began her Augustness, looking round and unscrewing the amber top of her snuff-bottle, 'to take an unintelligent part in these proceedings. An example should be set. Attendant, write!'

She then dictated as follows: 'The Ideal Man is he who now decorates the Imperial Throne, or he who in all humility ventures to resemble the incomparable Emperor. Though he may not hope to attain, his endeavor is his merit. No further description is needed.' With complacence she inhaled the perfumed snuff, as the writer appended the elegant characters of her Imperial name.

If it be permissible to say that the faces of the beauties lengthened visibly, it should now be said. For it had been the intention of every lady to make an allusion to the Celestial Emperor and depict him as the Ideal Man. Nor had they expected that the August Aunt would take any part in the matter.

'Oh, but it was the intention of this commonplace and undignified person to say this very thing!' cried the Lustrous Lady, with tears in the jewels of her eyes. 'I thought no other high-minded and distinguished lady would for a moment think of it!'

'And it was my intention also!' fluttered the little Lady Tortoise, wringing her hands! 'What now shall this most unlucky and unendurable person do? For three nights has sleep forsaken my unattractive eyelids, and, tossing and turning on a couch deprived of all comfort, I could only repeat, "The Ideal Man is the Divine Dragon Emperor!"'

'May one of er
attainments make
assemblage of sci
beauty?' inquired
'My superficial opi
be well to prepare
which all names sl
stating that His Ma
Divinity comprises
sacred Person.'

'Let those words
the August Aunt. 'W
lady of discretion a
this Palace of Vir
all is consecrated to
though he deigns r
other thought dare
any lady ventured
a limit? If so, let

All shook their he
Aunt proceeded: 'I
this as the opinion
Imperial Household
be separately apper

Had any desired t
to confront the Aug
ently no beauty so d
nights' sleepless m
thought than this h

Accordingly, the
lady to lady and, u
of the August Au
following: 'The Ide
ly likeness of the Di
should it be other
this sentence wrote
lovely one in succe
were then placed in
of the August Aunt

By the decree of
the Round-Faced
he became an ance
scholar of distinctio
at the age of seven
position commend
Examiner. Having
to give his daughter
mind, and had pre
sole jewel of his f

Digitized by Google

large as a bean. Such was her sole dower, but the accomplished Ant may excel the indolent Prince.

Yet, before the thought in her mind, she hesitated and trembled, recalling the lesson of the gold-fish; and it was with anxiety that paled her roseate lips that, on a certain day, she had sought the Willow Bridge Pavilion. There had awaited her a palace attendant skilled with the brush, and there in secrecy and dire affright, hearing the footstep of the August Aunt in every rustle of leafage, and her voice in the call of every crow, did the Round-Faced Beauty dictate the following composition: —

'Though the sky rain pearls, it cannot equal the beneficence of the Son of Heaven. Though the sky rain jade, it cannot equal his magnificence. He has commanded his slave to describe the qualities of the Ideal Man. How should I, a mere woman, do this? I, who have not seen the Divine Emperor, how should I know what is virtue? I, who have not seen the glory of his countenance, how should I know what is beauty? Report speaks of his excellences, but I who live in the dark know not. But to the Ideal Woman, the very vices of her husband are virtues. Should he exalt another, this is a mark of his superior taste. Should he dismiss his slave, this is justice. To the Ideal Woman there is but one Ideal Man — and that is her lord. From the day she crosses his threshold, to the day when they clothe her in the garments of Immortality, this is her sole opinion. Yet would that she might receive instruction of what only are beauty and virtue in his adorable presence.'

This being written, she presented her one pearl to the attendant and fled, not looking behind her, as quickly as her delicate feet would permit. On the seventh day the compositions, engraved on ivory and bound with red silk and tassels, were presented to the Emperor, and for seven days more he forgot their existence. On the eighth the High Chamberlain ventured to recall them to the Imperial memory, and the Emperor glancing slightly at one after another, threw them aside, yawning as he did so. Finally, one arrested his eyes, and reading it more than once, he laid it before him and meditated. An hour passed in this way while the forgotten Lord Chamberlain continued to kneel. The Son of Heaven, then raising his head, pronounced these words: 'In the society of the Ideal Woman, she to whom jealousy is unknown, tranquillity might possibly be obtained. Let prayer be made before the Ancestors with the customary offerings, for this is a matter deserving attention.'

A few days passed, and an Imperial attendant, escorted by two mandarins of the peacock-feather and crystal-button rank, desired an audience of the August Aunt, and, speaking before the curtain, informed her that his Imperial Majesty would pay a visit that evening to the Hall of Tranquil Longevity. Such was her agitation at this honor that she immediately swooned; but, reviving, summoned all the attendants and gave orders for a banquet and musicians.

Lanterns painted with pheasants and exquisite landscapes were hung on all the pavilions. Tapestries of rose, decorated with the Five-Clawed Dragons, adorned the chambers; and upon the High Seat was placed a robe of yellow satin embroidered with pearls. All was hurry and excitement. The Blossoms of the Palace were so exquisitely decked that one grain more of powder would have made them too lily-like, and one touch more of rouge, too rose-cheeked. It was indeed perfection, and, like lotuses upon a lake, or Asian birds, gorgeous of plumage, they stood ranged in the outer chamber while the Celestial Emperor took his seat.

The Round-Faced Beauty wore no

Digitized by Google

jewels, having bartered her pearl for her opportunity; but her long coat of jade-green, embroidered with golden willows, and her trousers of palest rose left nothing to be desired. In her hair two golden pæonias were fastened with pins of kingfisher work. The Son of Heaven was seated upon the throne as the ladies approached, marshaled by the August Aunt. He was attired in the Yellow Robe with the Flying Dragons, and upon the Imperial Head was the Cap, ornamented with one hundred and forty-four priceless gems. From it hung the twelve pendants of strings of pearls, partly concealing the august eyes of the Jade Emperor. No greater splendor can strike awe into the soul of man.

At his command the August Aunt took her seat upon a lesser chair at the Celestial Feet. Her mien was majestic, and struck awe into the assembled beauties, whose names she spoke aloud as each approached and prostrated herself. She then pronounced these words: 'Beautiful ones, the Emperor, having considered the opinions submitted by you on the subject of the Superior Man, is pleased to express his august commendation. Dismiss, therefore, anxiety from your minds, and prepare to assist at the humble concert of music we have prepared for his Divine pleasure.'

Slightly raising himself in his chair, the Son of Heaven looked down upon that Garden of Beauty, holding in his hand an ivory tablet bound with red silk.

'Lovely ladies,' he began, in a voice that assuaged fear, 'who among you was it that laid before our feet a composition beginning thus — "Though the sky rain pearls"?'

The August Aunt immediately rose. 'Imperial Majesty, none! These eyes supervised every composition. No impropriety was permitted.'

The Son of Heaven resumed: 'Let that Lady stand forth.'

The words were few
Trembling in every li
Faced Beauty separat
her companions and p
amid the breathless ar
Blossoms of the Palace.
upon her as she knelt
carved in ivory, but lo
of Chang-su. He turne
Aunt. 'Princess of Ha
Aunt, I would speak
alone.'

Decorum itself and
Palaces could not conc
tion of the August Aun
retired, driving the ladi
a shepherd drives his s

The Hall of Tranqu
ing now empty, the
extended his hand an
Round-Faced Beauty
This she did, hanging
flower surcharged with
ing gracefully as a wine
on the lowest step of th

'Loveliest One,' said
have read your compo
know the truth. Did an
spoke it? Was it the
own heart?'

'None aided, Divine
most fainting with fear
the thought of this illit
sumed with an unwarra
trollable passion.'

'And have you in tru
your Lord?'

'As a prisoner in a
the light, so was it wit
son.'

'And having seen?'

'Augustness, the du
slave are blinded with l

She laid her head bef

'Yet you have depict
Man, but the Ideal Wo
not the Celestial comm
this?'

'Because, O versatile

Digitized by Google

Emperor, the blind cannot behold the sunlight, and it is only the Ideal Woman who is worthy to comprehend and worship the Ideal Man. For this alone is she created.'

A smile began to illumine the Imperial Countenance. 'And how, O Round-Faced Beauty, did you evade the vigilance of the August Aunt?'

She hung her head lower, speaking almost in a whisper. 'With her one pearl did this person buy the secrecy of the writer; and when the August Aunt slept, did I conceal the paper in her sleeve with the rest, and her own Imperial hand gave it to the engraver of ivory.'

She veiled her face with two jade-white hands that trembled excessively. On hearing this statement the Celestial Emperor broke at once into a very great laughter, and he laughed loud and long as a tiller of wheat. The Round-Faced Beauty heard it demurely until, catching the Imperial eye, decorum was forgotten and she too laughed uncontrollably. So they continued, and finally the Emperor leaned back, drying the tears in his eyes with his august sleeve, and the lady, resuming her gravity, hid her face in her hands, yet regarded him through her fingers.

When the August Aunt returned at the end of an hour with the ladies, surrounded by the attendants with their instruments of music, the Round-Faced Beauty was seated in the chair that she herself had occupied, and on the whiteness of her brow was hung the chain of pearls, which had formed the frontal of the Cap of the Emperor.

It is recorded that, advancing from honor to honor, the Round-Faced Beauty was eventually chosen Empress and became the mother of the Imperial Prince. The celestial purity of her mind and the absence of all flaws of jealousy and anger warranted this distinction. But it is also recorded that, after her elevation, no other lady was ever exalted in the Imperial favor or received the slightest notice from the Emperor. For the Empress, now well acquainted with the Ideal Man, judged it better that his experiences of the Ideal Woman should be drawn from herself alone. And as she decreed, so it was done. Doubtless Her Majesty did well.

It is known that the Emperor departed to the Ancestral Spirits at an early age, seeking, as the August Aunt observed, that repose which on earth could never more be his. But no one has asserted that *this* lady's disposition was free from the ordinary blemishes of humanity.

As for the Celestial Empress (who survives in history as one of the most astute rulers who ever adorned the Dragon Throne), she continued to rule her son and the Empire, surrounded by the respectful admiration of all.

Digitized by Google

CRISIS

BY MARGARET WIDDEMER

I THINK there are two aprons at home that I can
I can put a frill of lace for edge to one of them;
I will have blue ribbon to tie it, and to sew
Just above the pocket in a flaring bow;
And I can sit quite quiet, as if nothing had been
Except the needle's in and out and out and in —
(*Every sorrow ends — every horror ends —*
Every terror ends that we have to face or do —
These hours will end, too.)

Back where I live there still are green things to se
Lilacs and a rose-bush and a tall old apple tree;
Everything is quiet there — everything will stay
Steady till I come to it as when I went away.
I must remember them, think hard of them, my fl
And village folks not caring, and the yellow morni
(*Everything ends that begins beneath the sun —*
There will be kind hours after these hours are done —
How slow, how slow they run!)

All of it will surely stop to-night at least by ten,
And I may be too numb to feel a while before ther
And maybe, if I seem too tired or too like to weep,
They'll give me something merciful to let me get t
And drop inert and shut my eyes and count, as I li
Sheep slipping through a gap and running down a
(*Lord, once you saw it through, the waiting and the fr*
And being brave for them to see, as if it all was right
Send me quick — send quick to-night!)

STANFORD LIBRARIES

Digitized by Google

A VOICE FROM THE JURY

BY ANNE C. E. ALLINSON

My friend and I were discussing the story called 'The Jury,' published in the *Atlantic Monthly* for October. It will be remembered that the author leaves with a group of women the problem of whether their old friend, Violet, shall be freely and fully received by them if she accepts the invitation of her husband, Harry, to return to him and to their children, after spending several 'crimson years' with Cyril.

My friend is a business woman, trained in the office and the market-place. I am a professional woman, trained in schools and universities. She chose not to marry. I chose to marry. We have become friends somewhat far along the road, after passing various sorts of milestones. Diverse discipline, work, experiences, and acquaintances have shaped our characters and opinions. Yet these opinions, on matters connected with 'life,' practically always coincide.

So it proved to be when we imagined ourselves parts of the jury in the case of Violet *versus* Society. We began by swiftly agreeing that we had the right to decide in favor of a woman once our friend without feeling too sombrely that this decision would be equivalent to a public statement of our own principles. Friendship, once assumed, entails certain obligations; and we claimed the right to stand by a friend without thereby being understood to regard either her action or her character as models for other women. In this matter of Violet it seemed to us clear that, if her husband and daughters wanted her to come back, and if she wanted to come, it was not for us to create obstacles or to omit the ordinary interchanges of social life with a family that had united in a desire to 'begin again.'

To be sure, we felt that Tina Metcalfe was visionary in thinking that things socially could really be as they were before, and that Harry was tragically mistaken in thinking that his or his children's happiness would bloom again under the given conditions. Violet was to return as arrogantly as she went, still maintaining that her right to a happy life had been superior to theirs. We smiled somewhat cynically over her concern for the *social* status of her daughters, whose every other need she had so readily disregarded. The crimson years had evidently not modified her cold egotism. We anticipated no great success for her in reassuming the rôles of wife and mother, friend and hostess. But that was not our affair. As far as we were concerned, Tina might cable as unanimous a 'come' as she chose.

The thing that alienated us was Violet's own willingness to come. We were both shocked by the cowardice of a woman who could not abide by either choice, by either marriage or free love. Violet was as unsatisfactory as Helena in the recent novel called *Invisible Tides*. Both 'heroines,' without even a decent regret, abandoned their husbands as long as men more agreeable to them lived. Then, when death intervened (in time to save the men from disillusionment), instead of standing alone, as many an unmarried or widowed

Digitized by Google

woman stands alone, they made use of the love and chivalry of their former victims to return to the comfortable safeties of a conventional life. By this materialistic meanness Violet stripped from her life any pretense of bravery.

We went on to discuss her earlier vagrancy, her original action which, at least, had rejected conventions for the sake of an emotion. But we could not be stampeded by any such show of 'idealism.' The emotion had been one which is glorious only when it submits to be secondary. And with the rejection of certain unessentials went the rejection of priceless treasures that a woman of large mind and large heart would refuse to sacrifice to an isolating passion. Passion harnessed to all the other powers of a generous nature is a mighty dynamo. Divorced from them it shrivels despicably. No, my friend and I knew that Violet, hiding herself with Cyril, had revealed the cheapness of her fibre. She had shown it, too, in the easy frivolity with which she disregarded obligations still scrupulously observed by the other members of a common undertaking. Accustomed to taking seriously business and professional contracts, we were disgusted by the way she tossed aside her spoken contract with Harry — whose only fault was that she liked Cyril better — and shattered brutally the tacit contract made with her children when she forced life upon them.

In our conversation we had not yet reached the profounder expression of our ethical judgment. There was, of course, a stark question of public right and wrong, which must perplex even Harry in relation to his daughters. But ultimately we judged Violet's action, not as it broke a law of church or state, but as it offended against moral principles which support more external prohibitions. The love of man and woman is not a thing apart, a fleshly accident set loose from the domain of spiritual law. Two human wills can unite to preserve married love by observing the laws which ensure the health of all love. Of these, the first and the last are that love dies in self-seeking and is renewed in every act of self-forgetfulness. 'It's not an exhortation, but an axiom,' I said to my friend as we touched upon the subject.

But we were growing tired of Violet, and the world about us was very beautiful. The October sun was laying a sheet of pure flame behind the trunks of the maple trees on the edge of the wide pasture. There were ardent touches of red on the sumach between the straight green savins. The young moon was silvering above the red and gold of the sunset. In the silence, my friend's thoughts roamed I know not where. My own circled and alighted on the magnificent lover in Meredith's *Tragic Comedians*. The silver moon invited him and Clotilde, on the passion-swept night of their first meeting, to go quite mad. But his brilliant mind refused to be eclipsed — 'the handsome face of the orb that lights us would be well enough were it only a gallop between us two. Dearest, the orb that lights us two for a lifetime must be taken all round, and I have been on the wrong side of the moon. I know the other face of it — a visage scored with regrets, dead dreams, burned passions, bald illusions, and the like, the like, the like! — sunless, waterless, without a flower.'

How stupid to mistake this evening's moon for to-morrow's sun! How stupid to mistake the crimson slash on the sumach for the whole broad upland!

Digitized by Google

CUNJUR AND 'SUASION

PLANTATION CHRONICLES

BY ELEANOR C. GIBBS

I

TOOMBER KAMID! What a name! Well, she was a woman, a negro woman, tall, black, brawny. About her there was something that attracted me by its singularity; yet with this attraction there was a something indescribable that was almost awe-inspiring to a child like me. When I asked her where she got such a queer name, she told me that it was her grandmammy's grandmammy's name. Her grandmammy, she said, was a Mollie Gloskie (Madagascar) negro; and she had been told that *her* grandmammy remembered all about being in Africa, and had told of many strange customs there, where children never wore clothes until they were as tall as their mothers. Then they were sent to the straw-fields to make long aprons for themselves. She said the mothers had to do something to help them to know their own children from the children of other negroes, so they took a sharp knife, made of a shell, and scratched up and down the children's faces, and up and down their arms and legs. As I listened to her, I saw that she was trying to describe tattooing. She told, too, of the rings she used to wear — gold rings, she said: two in her nose, and four or five around her ears, where holes had been pierced for them.

She said she had been told that her grandmammy's grandmammy was a queen in Africa. But one day a big ship came sailing up, and the captain had pretty red calico and gold bracelets and looking-glasses in the ship. She and a crowd of other negroes 'scrouged' along and went on the ship, and the captain gave them some good fire-water, and they got sleepy and went to sleep; and when they woke up, they were 'way off, 'way out in the sea, and the 'maremaids' were swimming all around them.

When I expressed doubts about the 'maremaids,' she said, 'Dey sho is maremaids, kaze my own mammy seed 'em in de 'Tomac ribber. I hyeard her tell 'bout de maremaids times 'pon top uv times. She sho did see 'em wid her eyes — in de 'Tomac ribber. You doan' know 'bout maremaids, but niggers knows 'bout 'em kaze dey seed 'em deyselves. Now Gord knows dat 's de trufe.'

All these stories were as fascinating to me as 'Cinderella' and 'Jack and the Beanstalk' were to other children. I listened with eager interest to stories of the negroes in Africa who were 'cunjur niggers.' 'All uv em wuz cunjur niggers. Dey knowed how to walk on behind anybody an' pick up de tracks and put 'em in a cunjur bag with poisonous spiders and toad-frogs and tree-frogs and devils' horses — great big old grasshoppers wid red-an'-black

Digitized by Google

wings. Den doodle-bugs and grub-worms and measuring worms would be put in, and cats' fur, and a piece of leather-wing bat's wing, and thousand-legged worms, and lizards' tails, and scorapins.'

When the cunjur bag was completed, it was buried under the eaves of the house where the victim of the cunjurer lived. The 'tarrifyin' pains' would soon make themselves manifest, and in the veins, the stomach, and the bowels of the unfortunate cunjured person these 'varmints an' insecks' would hold high carnival. The victim was doomed. No doctor could relieve him. Only by propitiating the cunjurer was there any hope. This could sometimes be done by giving presents to the cunjurer. The poor cunjured wretch was avoided by all his acquaintances. People did not like to walk on the side of the road where the doomed one lived. When the 'cunjur' was getting off, the 'varmints an' insecks' would sometimes be heard jumping out and falling down flop on the ground.

Filled with interest and curiosity, I asked Toomber if she could tell me anything about conjuring.

'Yes,' she replied, 'cunjurin' sho is true fac'. I bin had de cunjur on me, an' I knows 'bout it. I sho do. One Sunday, when I gwine 'long ter meetin', I seed a cunjur 'oman pickin' up my tracks. Dat was Sunday; den on Monday dat 'oman done put de cunjur on me. I knowed she gwine do dat, kaze I seed her at her devilment, stoopin' down on de san' an' pickin' my tracks right outen de san', an' puttin' 'em in her pocket. I peeped roun' de corner uv my eye an' seed her. I knowed she gwine do devilment. I knowed she a dang'ous 'oman. 'Fore Gord, ef you ever git de cunjur on you, you sho' will know 'bout cunjur. Dat 'oman pick up my tracks on Sunday, an Monday 'bout daybreak de cunjur 'peared. I could n' git out de bed, kaze de misery was in my laig, an' my foots, an' my side, an' my head. I des sot propped up on de side uv de bed an' I moan an' groan. I skeered ter tell 'bout what dat dang'ous 'oman done ter me, kaze hit mought make de cunjur worse an' worse. Den I crope out de bed, an' tuck a knife an' dug up some poke-root an' biled it an' rubbed my swol'd-up laig wid dat, an' rubbed hit wid karosene. But de cunjur did n' leave my cistern. My cistern wuz all discomfused. Hit so full of cunjur I did n' know what ter do.

'Dat night ole squint-eye Sary Jane come ter see my misery, an' she say I mus' fix up a big plate full uv good vittles, an' put two dimes in de plate, an' sen' de plate to de cunjur 'oman wid my love an' complimen's. Gord knows I did n' want dat dang'ous 'oman ter hab dat plate full uv good vittles, but I so skyeurd uv dat 'oman I was mos' crazy. De cunjur kep a-goin' on, an' I kep' sayin', "O Gord! O Gord! O Gord! I'ze cunjured mighty bad. De misery's wuckin' all th'oo my cistern. O Gord! O Gord!" Squint-eye Sary Jane say she'll tote de plate ter de cunjur 'oman ef I can han' out a nice ashcake to her, kaze her belly wuz a growlin' an' groanin' for vittles. Cunjur kin strike you mighty bad when your belly is moanin'. I han' out some taters an' some cushaw an' some lye hominy to Sary Jane, an' she smack'd her mouf an grin' her toofs. Den she toted dat plate uv vittles ter de dang'ous 'oman an' gin her de money. Den de misery got ter 'swagin' down. Den Sary Jane say she pertects herse'f 'ginst cunjur. She totes de lef' hin' foot uv a grabeyard rabbit in her pocket day in an' day out. I gwine get me one. Den cunjur'l lemme 'lone. I sho is gwine ter pertec' myse'f f'om cunjur. I got 'nuf uv cunjur.

'Dem Cincinnati niggers is gittin' so dey likes ter hear 'bout cunjur an' witches an' grabeyard rabbits. Dem

Digitized by Google

niggers is mighty ign'an'. Dey doan' know nuthin' 'bout de bref uv heaven. I flings my wooden winder-shutters open an' de bref uv heaven goes a sweepin' th'oo my cabin. Dey got glass winders all shut up tight, an' ain' got no great big fireplace. I feels like I wuz sufflicate when I goes in de chu'ch dar. I wants to be back on de plantation whar I kin git de bref uv heaven. I gwine back dar soon's ole Mistiss comes ridin' back f'om Culpeper Cote House.

'I doan' want ter stay in Cincinnati an' be a free nigger. I doan' want two things — I'ze sot 'ginst bein' a free nigger or bein' po' white trash. Niggers 'spises po' white trash an po' white trash 'spises niggers. I bin uster quality white folks. Dey sets heap uv sto' by niggers, an' niggers sets sto' by dem. Dey sho do like one anurr. I gwine back to Kanawha County an' live out all my born days wid quality folks.

'Dem dar Cincinnati niggers got so now dey lis'ns when my tongue 'gins ter run. One uv dem little Ohio niggers wuz layin' up on de bed groanin' wid de headache. She tol' me she dunno what make her head ache so. I say, "Chile, I'll tell you. Sho's you born, you bin th'owed a stran' uv yo' hyar out de winder, an' a bird done tuck hit up in a tree. Cose den eb'ry time de win' blows yo' head 'bleeged to ache. You all so ign'an' up here, you 'bleeged ter be painified." I tell you I knows a heap. I knows when bad luck is comin' 'long, lickity-split, lickity-split. Scritch-owl tells me 'bout dat. He dess scritches an' scritches when he knows bad luck's comin'. Dat he do. One time a ole scritch-owl sot on de ridge-pole uv my cabin un' mos' split his th'oat scritchin'. I settin' down in de cabin, waitin' for my old man ter come home wid de ox-team. De scritch-owl kep' on scritchin'. I th'owed my apurn up ober my face an' sot dar an' shivered an' trimbled. De scritch-owl done got in good chune den, an' he kep' on scritchin'. My ole man nuvar did come home. He done drownded in de creek, cedar creek, one mile f'om de cabin.

'I bin livin' nigh on to a hunderd years, an' I done fin' out how knowin' scritch-owls is. Dey's knowin' in Al'bama an' dey's knowin' in de Mis'sippy bottoms. Whippoorwills is bad-luck birds, too, but scritch-owls kin beat whippoorwills. When I hears a scritch-owl I runs ter de fire, an' sticks a shovel in de fire. Sometimes dat 'pears ter do some good. Sometimes hit doan' do no good. I tries all de ways I hears tell 'bout ter shoo bad luck off. Ef a chunk uv fire rolls down, I puckers up my mouf in a hurry an' spits down, spang on hit. Den when I spittin' I wishes a good-luck wish. Dat's a good way to do. Des say, "Stay dere, ole chunk, an' hev 'memb'ance ter bring good luck!" I spits three times, spang! spang! spang! Den I sets down an' sings a little.

'I likes ter sing. All de plantation niggers likes ter sing. Dem Cincinnati niggers so smart dey say dey sings outen a book, *do, re, mi*, like white folks. I say, Gord teached de plantation niggers an' de mockin' birds how ter sing. I spec' de debble teached de jay birds. I dunno 'bout dat.

'I sho does wish ole Mistiss would git up on her prancin' sorrel horse an' ride back home. I tired bein' chamber-maid on de steamboat. Dey got cuyous vittles on dat steamboat, an' I'ze tired eatin' dem things whar I ain' bin uster eatin' on de plantation. I wants some possum, I does, possum wid sweet 'taters all ranged roun' hit, wid good possum gravy. Plantation niggers knows what good vittles is soon's dey sets dey eyes on hit. 'Pear like I cyarn' go back ter de plantation now; but I know whar I kin go when de right time comes: I kin sho' go ter de promis' lan' up de right road ter glory. I'll go when

Digitized by Google

Marse Jesus calls. When de angels comes, I sho will wrastle wid 'em, an' dey'll be a flutterin' an' a flyin' roun' worser 'n a chicken wid his head cut off. I ain' 'feard uv angels. I des 'feared uv cunjur an' hants. I gwine ter glory, dat whar I gwine!'

Then her wild voice rang out, —

'Some uv dese mornin's bright an' fair
I'll hitch on my wings an' try de air!'

II

'O Gord! O Gord! Lord 'a' massey on me! Poor me! Dat's bad as a scritch-owl, dess as bad. I looked out my doah an' seed a hog, a ole razor-back red sow, des a-runnin' up an' down de pastur' wid a shuck in her mouf. I knowed she tellin' me den 'bout bad luck. Poor me! I knowed bad luck was comin', kaze las' night I dreamt 'bout muddy water. Den to-day I drapped ter sleep in my split-bottom chair an' dreamt 'bout snakes. Dat a mighty bad sign. Secret enemies gwine ter 'pear when you dreams 'bout snakes. Poor me! Poor me! I 'members de fus time I dreamt 'bout hog runnin' roun' wid shuck in his mouf. I wuz livin' 'way down in Mis'sippy den, on Marse Jeems's lower plantation. Dey did n' hab de same ways down dar dat dey got on dis plantation. Dey gin out a tas' [task] ter ebry nigger on de place. Not a hard big tas', des a tas' 'bout de right size. Atter dat tas' done did, all you got ter do is ter work 'long, an' all you makes Marse Jeems 's gwine buy f'om you.

'I wuz a sassy little gal when I live down in Mis'sippy on Marse Jeems's place. Marse Jeems nuvar did speak discontempshus ter me but one time. I done hyeard 'im tell Mistiss dat I got gifty-gab. I so uppity I traipsed up ter de house, an' pick up de bunch uv peacock feathers ter keep off de flies. I waved dem peacock feathers an' I waved 'em. Den I say, "Marse Jeems, please, suh, splainify 'bout what you say I got — 'bout gifty-gab." Marse Jeems th'owed back his head an' laffed an' laffed. Den I say agin, "Marse Jeems, suh, please splainify 'bout gifty-gab." Den he say, "When you fus' begin comin' up ter de house ter set on de bottom step an' play wid my chillern, I tuck noticemen' dat you nuvar stop talkin', talkin'. You kep' up yo' clack all de time. When folks doan' nuvar stop talkin' I 'clares dat dey sho got gifty-gab. Talk, talk, talk." Den Marse Jeems th'owed back his head agin. He sho did. I ain' stop gifty-gab yit. I spec' I'll keep up gifty-gab 'tel dey hauls me ter de grabeyard. I doan' see no use uv havin' a tongue ef hit gwine ter be closed up 'tween yo teef, day in an' day out. My mammy say I talks in my sleep. I dunno, I ain' nuvar 'mained wake ter see 'bout dat. Dey say de gifty-gab runs day an' night.

'I did n' like ter stay down on Marse Jeems's plantation. Too many ole alligators down dar. My mammy tell me ter stay up on de hill. She say she hyeard dat alligators would bite off little nigger chillern's laigs. Dey nuvar bit my laigs. I got many laigs now as I uver had in all my born days. Dat's de trufe — dat's Gord's trufe.

'Marse Jeems wa'n't like ole Marster hyeah on dis plantation. Marster 's a dignity man. Sometimes Marse Jeems wuz a dignity man — des' sometimes. Den sometimes he so chock full of fun an' devilment, de dignity des' banished. I mos' laffed tell my ribs rattle when I 'members how Marse Jeems punish Nepchune. Dat nigger wuz de lazies' nigger on Marse Jeems's plantation down in Mis'sippy. But he sorter smart nigger, an' he fooled Marse Jeems tel he 'sidered Nepchune a induschus nigger. Den Marse Jeems 'pinted Nepchune for foreman. He tol' 'im ter go an' look at de diff'unt fiel's an' lay off de wuck for hisse'f an' for de gang.

Digitized by Google

'Nepchune sho did lay off de wuck for hisse'f. All he laid off for hisse'f was ter do nothin' an' res' in de shade. He knowed how ter do. One day Marse Jeems an' Nepchune wuz out in de House gyarden. Marse Jeems 'splained ter Nepchune 'bout plantin' de seed, radish-seed, and turnip-seed, an' all sorts uv little pinhead seed like mustard-seed. Nepchune say he got de understannin' 'bout how ter do. When he went up ter de house an' tol' Marse Jeems he done plant all de seed, Marse Jeems say Nepchune bin mighty smart, an' he gin 'im a present. He gin 'im a whole plug uv 'bacco.

'Nex' day Marse Jeems wuz walkin' in de gyarden, an' unbeknownst he kicked up a brick layin' out dar. Gord 'a' massey! Marse Jeems foun' all de papers uv little pinhead seeds onder dat brick. Marse Jeems a mighty cussin' man when he wuz mad. I hyear 'im say, "Dat infernal rascal! I'll punish im sho as I a born man. I sho gwine punish Nepchune."

'I kep on studyin' 'bout what Marse Jeems gwine ter do ter Nepchune. I foun' out. Ha, ha, ha! Ha, ha, ha! Marse Jeems's place most jined on ter Merid'an. One day a Merid'an man comed ter de plantation an' 'swaded Marse Jeems ter buy a great, big, long red hammock. Dat man swung dat hammock up on Marse Jeems's gallery an' lef'. Marse Jeems kep' on studyin' 'bout how Nepchune plant dem seed. I knowed what wuz in his min'. He studyin' an' studyin' 'bout punishin' Nepchune. I sho thought he gwine whip Nepchune bad. Dat I did. No, suh, Marse Jeems mighty notionate man. He got heap uv devilment 'bout 'im, an' heap uv fun. He call Nepchune up ter de gallery an' say:—

'"Nepchune, I mighty sorry you had to work so hard plantin' de gyarden. I knows you tired mos' ter def, poor nigger. I gwine give you some res'. Yo' Marse Jeems ain' gwine ter let you work yo'se'f 'tel yo' tongue mos' hangin' out yo' mouf. He sho ain' gwine ter do dat. Come hyeah, Nepchune, an' teck a li'l' res'. Poor fellow, yo' Marse Jeems sorry for you, he sorry for induschus nigger like you, Nepchune. You needs a res', nigger. Come hyeah."

'Nepchune stepped up on de gallery, an' Marse Jeems say, "Now, Nepchune, git up in dis big red hammock an' stretch yo'se'f out long as you kin."

'Nepchune sorter swunk back. Den Marse Jeems say, "Is you work so hard you got deaf? Poor devil, you sho needs a good res'.

'Nepchune 'bleeged ter git in de hammock an' stretch out. He 'peared mighty sorrowful like. Marse Jeems mighty dignity dat day; talk mighty onnateral, so gently an' sweetified, Nepchune did n' know what wuz de 'casion uv dat soft-soap talkin' to a nigger. When Nepchune done stretch out good, kaze he skyeard not to do dat, Marse Jeems sot hisse'f down by de red hammock. He done tied a twine string ter de hammock. He sot in a big split-bottom chair an' pull dat string, an' made it swing an' swing.

'Presen'ly Nepchune say, "Marse Jeems, I'ze mightily res' up; I wants ter go out in de fiel', suh."

'"No, no, Nepchune. No, no, poor fellow. I gwine ter let you hab a good ole res'."

'Den Marse Jeems swinged Nepchune an' swinged 'im, an' swinged 'im. Eb'ry now an' den some uv de niggers comed up ter de house, 'tendin' dey 'bleeged ter come on business. Dey kep' on comin', an' laffin', an' sayin', "Nepchune, you sho gittin' a good res'. Dat you is." Nepchune nuvar 'sponded nuthin'. Marse Jeems kep' on swingin' dat nigger, an' lookin' like he walkin' 'hind a hearse ter de grabeyard down by de ribber. I wuz des' shakin' my

Digitized by Google

ribs lookin' at Nepchune restin' in de long red hammock. 'Pear like Marse Jeems could n' git tired swingin' Nepchune. He swinged an' he swinged.

"'Pear like all de niggers on de plantation got business in de house-yard dat day. Mos'ly dey did n' say nuthin'. Sometimes dey step up close ter de gallery an' look devilish an' call out, "Nepchune, is you gittin' a good res'? You ain' nuvar be tired again, I 'spec'."

'Nepchune nuvar said nuthin'. He did n' even grin. Mos'ly Nepchune wuz a mighty grinnin' nigger. He did n' 'pear so grinny de day he wuz restin' in de hammock. He des' 'peared discomfused, mightily discomfused wid all de niggers laffin' at 'im. I seed Nepchune wuz mad. But Marse Jeems — Marse Jeems got mealy-moufed an sweet-spoken more an' more, more an' more. He sho did hab a injoicin' time seein' dat induschus nigger restin' in de red hammock. Dat wuz a good fun day on Marse Jeems's plantation. 'Pear like Marse Jeems mighty induschus, pullin' dat twine string an' swingin' Nepchune.

'Mos' all de niggers on de place, tendin' dis an' tendin' dat, traipsed 'long th'ough de house-yard while Nepchune wuz gittin' his res'. 'Pear like dey could n' keep deyse'ves 'way f'om seein' dat sight. Nepchune mos' daid he so mad wid dem niggers. Dey so consarned 'bout poor, tired Nepchune. Ha, ha, ha! Ha, ha, ha! 'Pear like de sun could n' set. Pear like hit got hitched in a crotch uv de tree while Marse Jeems wuz swingin' de poor tired nigger. Ha, ha, ha! Ha, ha, ha! Dat nigger would n' nuvar git tired agin. Ha, ha, ha! Ha, ha, ha!

'Atter while de sun did drap. Den I hyeah Marse Jeems say, "Nepchune, nex' time you gits tired, I gwine gib you a long res' agin. I gwine dig a hole six foot deep for you to res' in. Den when you res'n' dar, you won't hear when Gabriel blows his horn."

'All de niggers done flock roun' de gallery den, an' Marse Jeems call out, "Boys, is any of you tired?" Dey all 'spond, "No, Marse Jeems, we doan' need no res'. We ain' tired." Den Marse Jeems say, "Hurrah for you, boys, hurrah!"'

III

'I doan' know but five Injin words. Dey's Choctaw Injin words. Marse Jeems's plantation wuz close to whar dem Choctaw Injins lived in Mis'sippy. Dem Injins say dey's de frienlies' Injins uv all de Injins. Dey sho did count mighty cuyous. "Onarby, tosharby, tuckaloo, toochany": one, two, three, four, five. Dey helt dey fingers out when dey count dem words. Dem Choctaw Injins sho did meck pretty willer baskets. Dey dug up some sort uv roots, or sumpin,' an' dyed de willer. Red willer, yaller willer, black willer, all sorts of culled willer. Den dey made de baskets: little baskets for de gal chillern at Marse Jeems's house ter put hick'y nuts in; baskets for Marse Jeems's wife ter tote her keys in; great big roun' baskets ter hol' de fold-up work whar gwine ter be sewed on; cuyous baskets, one on each side runnin' down ter a p'int: forks goes down in one side, knifes in t'other. Den dey made a monst'ous big basket to put dey puscooses [pappooses] in. Dem baskets got a long strop ter go roun' de haid. Dem little puscooses looked comf'able wid dey heads stickin' out dem baskets.

'Eb'ry year, 'bout time chinkapins an' ches'nuts an' muscadines gits ripe, dem Injins sho ter come. De Injin men come ridin' on Injin ponies. Dey sho ter be tottin' some blow-guns. I doan' know whar dey git dem big ole canes. Dey gits 'em somewhar, an' tecks out all de pith. Den dey mecks Injins arrers, sharp at one eend, an' feathers on t'other eend. Jes' blow in one dem blow-

Digitized by Google

guns an' dem arrers goes flyin' out. You can kill a jay bird dat way, or a sparrer. 'Cose nobody ain' gwine kill a robin dat way. Dey wait for de robin ter fly up in a Chiny tree an' git drunk. Eb'ry chile on de plantation thinks he 'bleeged ter hab a blow-gun when dem Choctaw Injins comes ridin' in. Jay birds better watch out den. Folks say Choctaw Injins ain' smart as Cher'kee Injins. I doan' know 'bout dat. Dey sho mecks pretty baskets an' blow-guns. But dey doan' know nuthin' 'bout alphabits like Cher'kee Injins does.

'Marse Jeems wuz a mighty smart man. I sot my min' an' cotch heaps uv smartness f'om Marse Jeems on his lower plantation down in Mis'sippy. Dat I did. I 'stonish de Al'bama niggers wid my smartness when I went back to de Black Belt. Dat sho is a Black Belt. Dat ole prairie mud's black as a tar-ball — an' sticky! Gord knows hit's sticky! Des' walk 'long a little way an' de mud sticks so fast to de soles uv yo' foots you cyarn' sca'cely lif' em up. I likes sandy town myse'f, like Livi'ston an' Selma.

'Bless Gord! I knows I is got gifty-gab, like Marse Jeems say. I mos' forgot how skyeard I wuz 'bout bad luck. Mighty bad luck for bird ter come flyin' in yo' house. Bird come flyin' in my house one day. I druv dat bird out. Nex' mornin' dar wuz dat same bird flatted 'ginst my winder-shutter. I so 'stressed I des th'owed myse'f down on de flo' an' put my apurn up over my haid. I tryin' ter fool dat bird. But I could n' fool 'im. He knowed me, an' dat very day de bad luck struck me. I fell down an' broke my laig, my poor old laig wid de rheumatiz pain mos' killin' me. I could n' skyear de bad luck away. Hit done come, an' 'pear like hit gwine ter stay. Poor me!

'Here I is gifty-gabbin' an' forgittin' all de teachmen's my mammy tol' me 'bout huccome niggers han's, an' down side uv dey han's, is white, an' de bottoms uv dey foots. Mammy say Gord A'mighty made all de folks white when he fus' started out ter make 'em. Den he got plum tired lookin' at all dem white folks. Den he 'cided he 'd paint 'em diff'unt colors. He made some red folks like Injins, an' some yaller folks, an' some brown folks. Den he studied 'bout what he gwine do nex'. He 'cided he 'd meck some black folks. Den he tol' some de white folks ter git down on all fours, kaze he gwine paint 'em black. He paint dem folks black while dey down on all fours. 'Cose de bottom uv dey han's an' dey foots did n' git painted black. Dat 's de trufe, sho 's I 'ze a born nigger. My mammy had heaps uv knowin's. White folks doan' know how much knowin's niggers got.

'One day I wuz out in de pastur' gittin' poke-weed. I hyeard ole crook-hand Sal singin' an' singin'. I cotch de words. Dey wuz hitched on ter a chune. Mighty easy ter ketch de words ef dey 's hitched on ter a chune. She kep' on a-singin': —

'Yonder go de bell cow.
Ketch her by de tail.
Turn her in de pastur',
Milk hit in de pail.
Milk hit in de pail,
An' strain hit in de gourd.
Set hit in de cornder,
And kiver wid a board.

'I sung dat over in my min' 'tel I cotched hit good.

'Dat wuz de day a nigger man comed ter Marse Jeems's place f'om Merid'an. He think he mighty smart kaze he bin livin' in Merid'an. He seed me, an' wave his ole black paw at me. Den he hollered out, "Howdy, sweetie!" He all dress up mighty fine in white clo'es. Fus' I would n' look at 'im. Den he holler out agin, "Howdy, sweetie. How is you to-day?" I say, "I worse off on 'casion uv seein' you. Sho 's I born, you look des' like a black snake in a bowl uv cream." Dat smarty-jack

Digitized by Google

nigger f'om Merid'an 'pear like he discomfused den. He riz up agin' an' hollered out, "You look mighty peart today, sweetie!" Den I 'spond, "Keep yo' sweetnin' for yo'se'f, ole black snake." I sho did discomfuse dat nigger. But he kep' on wavin' his black paw at me. He did n' come back f'om Merid'an no more ter call me sweetie.

'One nice white lady comed f'om Merid'an one time ter see Marse Jeems's wife. She comed f'om de Norf an' she mighty ign'an' lady. She seed me settin' on de tip-top uv de high ten-rail fence, staked an' ridered, an' she say she so 'feared I gwine fall down. I say I doan' see no use in tumblin' down. I mighty com'fable up hyeah. Den I 'menced callin' out, "Cur rench! Cur rench! Cur rench!" She ax me what for I keep sayin' "Cur rench" so much. I tell her she ain' got un'erstannin' ter know what I talkin' 'bout. De cows an' de bulls got un'erstannin'. Look at 'em. Marse Jeems say cows got jography an' 'rithmetic in dey haids. Ef dey long way f'om de cuppen [cow-pen] dey starts home soon. Ef dey short way off, dar dey lays 'tel dey see me puttin' down de bars. Dey got heap uv sense.

'One time, I wuz a little gal den, I layin' down on de flo' kickin' up my heels an' cryin'. Mammy say, "Wha' de matter wid you, chile?" I tol' her my haid wuz splittin' open wid headache. She 'spond, "Chile, I spec' you got de hollow horn like de ole red bull got." Den I got ter laffin' an' laffin'. Den de headache des upped an' went off somewhat.

'When I comed back from Marse Jeems's place, I met ole black Jubiter. I bin gone seb'ral years. When I went dar, de wool on my haid wuz black. Wool on my mammy's haid bin white 'long time. Ole black Jubiter hollered out to me, "Hi! hi! hi! Is you come back ter Al'bama? I mos' did n' know you. You heap more like yo' mammy dan yo'se'f. Dat's a sho fac'."

'I stannin' by de car track den. I axed Jubiter ef de trains wuz regilar in runnin'. He 'spond, "Dey's mighty regilar in bein' onregilar." He sho did tell de trufe dat time — dat one time. Mos'ly Jubiter wuz a big lie-teller. He 'joyed tellin' lies. He had 'joymen' f'om sunup ter sundown dat way.

'I bin havin' 'joymen' all dis day des studyin' 'bout buckwheat cakes. 'Fore Christmus come, on Marse Jeems's plantation, 'peared like ebrybody was busy makin' bags. Bags 'pon top uv bags wuz piled up on de shelves in de house. I knowed what dem bags was for. Ebry Christmus dem bags wuz' piled up dar. 'Bleeged ter hab a high-up pile uv bags for de 'casion. Den de Mistiss had a pile uv dimes an' picayunes in her trunk. She knowed what she gwine do wid all dat silver money. I knowed, too, kaze I bin on Marse Jeems's place 'fore dat time. I knowed dem wuz Chris'mus bags for buckwheat. Niggers nuvar seed buckwheat but one time eb'ry year. Dat wuz Christmus mornin'. All de niggers got up 'fore sunrise dat day. Eb'rybody had big fire in dey big fireplace by time de sun riz. Den all uv 'em went flockin' up ter de house, ter jump out sudden, an' holler out, "Christmus gif'! Christmus gif'! Christmus gif', marster! Christmus gif', mistiss." Dem niggers got Christmus gif's, eb'rybody down ter de suckin' babies. Eb'rybody wuz laffin' an' whoopin' an' hurrahin'. Eb'rybody got Christmus in dey bones.

'Den eb'ry nigger gits a bag, an' back dey troops ter dey cabin. Dey snatches up dey sifters an' 'mence siftin', siftin', siftin'. Dey knowed dimes an' picayunes wuz in dem buckwheat bags. Dey 'termined ter sif' out de money. All de chillern des' scrouges one anurr, an' gits up close ter de sifter ter see if dey kin git a dime or a picayune wid a

Digitized by Google

hole in it. Dey likes ter hang picayunes an' dimes roun' dey neck, an' strut roun' proud as a ole peacock. Dat what dey wants ter do on Christmus mornin' on Marse Jeems's plantation.

'Some uv de marsters in Mis'sippy does dat away like Marse Jeems. Some doan' do dat away. Dey fix up some sorter way for Christmus fun. Marse Jeems got a big ole barrel uv whiskey in his smoke-house. He sho gits a barrel uv dat once eb'ry year f'om Mobile. He got a 'mission merchan' in Mobile ter sell his cotton. Dat 'mission merchan' buys de sugar an' de flour an' de whiskey an' de rice an' all sort o' groceries down in Mobile. He puts 'em on de steamboat an dey's fotch up ter de landin' at Moscow. Den de wagons goes down dar an' hauls 'em up. Dat's de time we sees oranges an' lemons. Dat's de onlies' time. We's mos' crazy when de wagons comes back. Eb'rybody on de place 'pears ter be plum crazy den. All de chillern in special, white chillern an' nigger chillern. All dey moufs is waterin' an' drippin'. Eb'rybody is hollerin' out, "Yonder comes de wagons!"

'When dey does come, Gord A'mighty! eb'rybody sho is crazy den. De men lif's out a great big hogshead of rice. Dey knocks out de head an' 'mences divin' down in de rice an' pullin' out tin buckets an' tin pans an' sifters, an' I dunno what, all packed in de rice. Sometimes out comes a tin plate wid letters all roun' de edge, big *a*, little *a*, big *b*, little *b*. We knows de house-'oman — one uv de house-'omans — gwine git dat tin plate. Certain sho, she gwine git dat. Dey keeps a-divin' down an' divin' down in dat rice, an' pres'n'ly out comes some doll-heads. All de chillern 'gins ter dance an' laf an' holler. Dey knows Mistiss gwine cut out doll-bodies an' stuff 'em wid cotton. Den up in de seamster's room de seamsters gwine ter sew de doll-heads on de doll-bodies.

'All de chillern stannin' roun' eb'rywhar dances roun' an' hurrahs an' hollers, 'tel Marse Jeems step out an' say, "Too much noise! Too much noise! Ef you cyarn' be quiet, you mus' go back ter yo' cabins." Hit gits so quiet den 'pears like somebody's dyin'. But in a minute dey gins ter 'spond, "Yes, suh, Marse Jeems, yes, suh! We gwine be still as a church mouse. Yes, suh, Marse Jeems, yes, suh!"

'I gits ter studyin' 'bout dem days sometimes 'tel hit 'pears like dem days is right here agin. 'T wuz a injoicin' time eb'ry year when de wagons come back f'om Moscow. Sometimes Marse Jeems would han' out some drams ter de niggers. De house-servants done had egg-nog when dey runned up Christmus gif'ing. Marse Jeems had a bung-hole in de whiskey barrel, an' he'd teck a mighty cuyous vial, solid heavy at de bottom, an' let it down th'ough de bung-hole an' draw up de whiskey. Dat vial too little ter draw much whiskey. Nobody did n' get none but special house-niggers. Dey did n' git much.

'All de whiskey Marse Jeems ever drunk was one mint julep once a day. I hyeard him say one day, "Mint is de grass dat grows on de graves uv all good Virginians." Dat's what I hyeard Marse Jeems say. Dat what he tol' his comp'ny settin' up dar on de gallery. Once eb'ry day Marse Jeems tuck one mint julep. All his chillern runned to him den, an' he gin each one a teaspoonful of dat good julep.

'Somehow I keeps on studyin' an' studyin' 'bout dem ole days. 'Pears like I kin set down in Jerushy's cabin an' see de fiddler fiddlin'. He sot up on a high stool on top uv a table. He de one dat called out de figgirs uv de dance. 'Fore dat, one o' de niggers would step out an' cut de pigeon wing, an' one would give a double shuffle. All de niggers would clap an' rap den, an' somebody would holler out, "Play 'Chicken

Digitized by Google

in de bread tray,' play 'Ole Firginny nuvar tire,' play 'Susanna gal.'"

'De fiddler did n' pay no 'tention ter all dem callin's-out. He de one gwine call out. Den he'd stan' up a minute an' holler, "Time's a-flyin'. Choose yo' pardners! Bow perlitely! Dat de way! S'lute yo' pardners! Swing corners! Cyarn' yo' hear de fiddle talkin'? Hail, Columbia! Halleloo! Hol' yo' han's up highfilutin'! Look permiskus! Dat 's de way! Dat's de way! Keep on dancin'!" An' dey sho did dance an' promenade, tel de bref mos' gin out.

'Den de fiddler sho ter put his fiddle down an' call out, "I knows what you wants. You wants some banjo music." When de banjo started up, de niggers 'peared plum 'stracted. Dat's de music for niggers. Dey kin fling a souple toe when de banjo talkin' ter 'em. But I got rheumatiz in my laig, an' I doan' dance dese days. I'd be skyeard ter dance too, kaze I mought cross my foots, an' den de debble'd cotch me. I 'members de song: "He! Hi! Mr. Debble! I knows you'ze at de doah. I knows you'ze grabblin' grabble wid yo' ole sharp toe."

'Here I is studyin' so much 'bout de debble I mos' los' 'membrance uv all de good Christmus vittles. Up at de house de table sho' did look scrumshus; a whole roas' pig at one eend uf de 'hogany table, wid a lemon in his mouf an' red ribbon on his tail. Dey had turkeys too 'pon top uv turkeys, tame turkeys an' wil' turkeys, an' roas' ducks, an' fried chickens, an' baked hams, an' mutton saddles, an' venison, an' — O Gord 'a' massey! dey had so much good vittles dat I ain' got de 'membrance uv one half uv all dat. Eb'rybody sho did git a fill-up wid good vittles. Den come de de'sert: drop-cakes, an' hole-in-de-middle cakes, an' snowball cakes, an' jelly, an' ice-cream, an' apples, an' blackberry cordial, an' pork wine. All de house-niggers got so much leavin's on de white folks' plates dat dey was stuffed full as a egg.

'Eb'rybody down on Marse Jeems's plantation say dey'd like ter have Christmus all de year, 'stid uv des' one week. All dat Christmus day you could n' sca'cely hear yo'se'f talk. Eb'rybody wuz tryin' to see how much noise dey could meck. De white folks, up an' down de plantation, wuz firin' off Christmus guns f'om sunup ter sundown. Dey'd teck a big hick'nut tree wid a nachul hollow in hit, or dey'd meck a hollow. Den dey'd fill dat hollow plum-full uv gunpowder an' plug hit up. When de match wuz tetched ter de powder, you sho did hear noise. Sometimes dey'd fill up bottles an' canisters wid gunpowder an' put 'em onder barrels an' hogsheads an' set a match to 'em. Eb'rybody'd holler, an' hurrah, an' whoop eb'ry time de 'sploshun come. Dat de way 't wuz all day long.

'I nuvar did go down ter de cow-house Christmus night, but I hear tell 'bout what gwine-ons dey wuz down dar. Out in de fiel's, an' down in de cow-house, an' out in de stables, all de cattle knowed when midnight come. Des' like roosters knows when ter crow. When midnight come, all de cattle fell down on dey knees wid dey faces turned ter de eas'. Dar dey 'mained, clean till daylight. I sorry I did n' go down dar ter de cow-house an' see de cattle prayin', an' prayin', an' prayin'. Beastes got a heap uv sense. Dat dey is. I b'leeve all de beastes is gwine ter heab'n. I sho do. Hit sho'd be mighty lonely up dar bedout any beastes.

'Folks doan' know how ter hab good Christmus times now like dey knowed on Marse Jeems's plantation down in Mis'sippy. Dem sho wuz good ole Christmus times, mun! Dey doan' know 'bout good Christmus times up hyeah in Livi'ston. Dey ain' nuvar live down in Mis'sippy on Marse Jeems's plantation.'

Digitized by Google

SOME TRAITS IN THE CHINESE CHARACTER

BY BERTRAND RUSSELL

I

THERE is a theory among Occidentals that the Chinaman is inscrutable, full of secret thoughts, and impossible for us to understand. It may be that a greater experience of China would have brought me to share this opinion; but I could see nothing to support it during the time when I was working in that country. I talked to the Chinese as I should have talked to English people, and they answered me much as English people would have answered a Chinese whom they considered educated and not wholly unintelligent. I do not believe in the myth of the 'subtle Oriental': I am convinced that in a game of mutual deception an Englishman or American can beat a Chinese nine times out of ten. But as many comparatively poor Chinese have dealings with rich white men, the game is often played only on one side. Then, no doubt, the white man is deceived and swindled; but not more than a Chinese mandarin would be in London.

One of the most remarkable things about the Chinese is their power of securing the affection of foreigners. Almost all Europeans like China, both those who come only as tourists and those who live there for many years. In spite of the Anglo-Japanese alliance, I cannot recall a single Englishman in the Far East who liked the Japanese as much as the Chinese. Those who have lived long among them tend to acquire their outlook and their standards. New arrivals are struck by obvious evils: the beggars, the terrible poverty, the prevalence of disease, the anarchy and corruption in politics. Every energetic Westerner feels at first a strong desire to reform these evils, and of course they ought to be reformed.

But the Chinese, even those who are the victims of preventable misfortunes, show a vast passive indifference to the excitement of the foreigners; they wait for it to go off, like the effervescence of soda-water. And gradually strange doubts creep into the mind of the bewildered traveler: after a period of indignation, he begins to doubt all the maxims that he has hitherto accepted without question. Is it really wise to be always guarding against future misfortune? Is it prudent to lose all enjoyment of the present through thinking of the disasters that may come at some future date? Should our lives be passed in building a mansion that we shall never have leisure to inhabit?

The Chinaman answers these questions in the negative, and therefore has to put up with poverty, disease, and anarchy. But, to compensate for these evils, he has retained, as industrial nations have not, the capacity for civilized enjoyment, for leisure and laughter, for pleasure in sunshine and philosophical discourse. The Chinaman, of all classes, is more laughter-loving than any other race with which I am acquainted; he finds amusement in everything, and a dispute can always be softened by a joke.

Digitized by Google

I remember one hot day, when a party of us were crossing the hills in chairs. The way was rough and very steep, the work for the coolies very severe. At the highest point of our journey, we stopped for ten minutes to let the men rest. Instantly they all sat in a row, brought out their pipes, and began to laugh among themselves as if they had not a care in the world. In any country that had learned the virtue of forethought, they would have devoted the moments to complaining of the heat, in order to increase their tip. We, being Europeans, spent the time worrying whether the automobile would be waiting for us at the right place. Well-to-do Chinese would have started a discussion as to whether the universe moves in cycles or progresses by a rectilinear motion; or they might have set to work to consider whether the truly virtuous man shows *complete* self-abnegation, or may, on occasion, consider his own interest.

One comes across white men occasionally who suffer under the delusion that China is not a civilized country. Such men have quite forgotten what constitutes civilization. It is true that there are no trams in Peking, and that the electric light is poor. It is true that there are places full of beauty, which Europeans itch to make hideous by digging up coal. It is true that the educated Chinaman is better at writing poetry than at remembering the sort of facts which can be looked up in *Whitaker's Almanac*. A European, in recommending a place of residence, will tell you that it has a good train-service; the best quality he can conceive in any place is that it should be easy to get away from. But a Chinaman will tell you nothing about the trains; if you ask, he will tell you wrong. What he tells you is that there is a palace built by an ancient emperor, and a retreat in a lake for scholars weary of the world, founded by a famous poet of the Tang dynasty. It is this outlook that strikes the Westerner as barbaric.

The Chinese, from the highest to the lowest, have an imperturbable quiet dignity, which is usually not destroyed, even by a European education. They are not self-assertive, either individually or nationally; their pride is too profound for self-assertion. They admit China's military weakness in comparison with foreign powers, but they do not consider efficiency in homicide the most important quality in a man or a nation. I think that at bottom they almost all believe that China is the greatest nation in the world, and has the finest civilization. A Westerner cannot be expected to accept this view, because it is based on traditions utterly different from his own. But gradually one comes to feel that it is, at any rate, not an absurd view; that it is, in fact, the logical outcome of a self-consistent standard of values. The typical Westerner wishes to be the cause of as many changes as possible in his environment; the typical Chinaman wishes to enjoy as much and as delicately as possible. This difference is at the bottom of most of the contrast between China and the English-speaking world.

We in the West make a fetish of 'progress,' which is the ethical camouflage of the desire to be the cause of changes. If we are asked, for instance, whether machinery has really improved the world, the question strikes us as foolish: it has brought great changes, and therefore great 'progress.' What we believe to be a love of progress is really, in nine cases out of ten, a love of power, an enjoyment of the feeling that by our fiat we can make things different. For the sake of this pleasure, a young American will work so hard that, by the time he has acquired his millions, he has become a victim of dyspepsia, compelled to live on toast and water, and to

Digitized by Google

be a mere spectator of the feasts that he offers to his guests. But he consoles himself with the thought that he can control politics, and provoke or prevent wars as may suit his investments. It is this temperament that makes Western nations 'progressive.'

II

There are, of course, ambitious men in China, but they are less common than among ourselves. And their ambition takes a different form — not a better form, but one produced by the preference of enjoyment to power. It is a natural result of this preference that avarice is a widespread failing of the Chinese. Money brings the means of enjoyment, therefore money is passionately desired. With us, money is desired chiefly as a means to power; politicians, who can acquire power without much money, are often content to remain poor. In China, the *tuchuns* (military governors), who have the real power, almost always use it for the sole purpose of amassing a fortune. Their object is to escape to Japan at a suitable moment, with sufficient plunder to enable them to enjoy life quietly for the rest of their days. The fact that in escaping they lose power does not trouble them in the least. It is, of course, obvious that such politicians, who spread only devastation in the provinces committed to their care, are far less harmful to the world than our own, who ruin whole continents in order to win an election campaign.

The corruption and anarchy in Chinese politics do much less harm than one would be inclined to expect. But for the predatory desires of the Great Powers, — especially Japan, — the harm would be much less than is done by our own 'efficient' governments. Nine tenths of the activities of a modern government are harmful; therefore, the worse they are performed, the better. In China, where the government is lazy, corrupt, and stupid, there is a degree of individual liberty which has been wholly lost in the rest of the world.

The laws are just as bad as elsewhere: occasionally, under foreign pressure, a man is imprisoned for Bolshevist propaganda, just as he might be in England or America. But this is quite exceptional; as a rule, in practice, there is very little interference with free speech and a free press. The individual does not feel obliged to follow the herd, as he has in Europe since 1914, and in America since 1917. Men still think for themselves, and are not afraid to announce the conclusions at which they arrive. Individualism has perished in the West, but in China it survives, for good as well as for evil. Self-respect and personal dignity are possible for every coolie in China, to a degree which is, among ourselves, possible only for a few leading financiers.

The business of 'saving face,' which often strikes foreigners in China as ludicrous, is only the carrying out of respect for personal dignity in the sphere of social manners. Everybody has 'face,' even the humblest beggar; there are humiliations that you must not inflict upon him, if you are not to outrage the Chinese ethical code. If you speak to a Chinaman in a way that transgresses the code, he will laugh, because your words must be taken as spoken in jest if they are not to constitute an offense.

Once I thought that the students to whom I was lecturing were not as industrious as they might be, and I told them so in just the same words that I should have used to English students in the same circumstances. But I soon found I was making a mistake. They all laughed uneasily, which surprised me until I saw the reason. Chinese life, even among the most modernized, is

Digitized by Google

far more polite than anything to which we are accustomed. This, of course, interferes with efficiency, and also (what is more serious) with sincerity and truth in personal relations. If I were Chinese, I should wish to see it mitigated. But to those who suffer from the brutalities of the West, Chinese urbanity is very restful. Whether on the balance it is better or worse than our frankness, I shall not venture to decide.

The Chinese remind one of the English in their love of compromise and in their habit of bowing to public opinion. Seldom is a conflict pushed to its ultimate brutal issue. The treatment of the Manchu Emperor may be taken as a case in point. When a Western country becomes a republic, it is customary to cut off the head of the deposed monarch, or at least to cause him to flee the country. But the Chinese have left the Emperor his title, his beautiful palace, his troops of eunuchs, and an income of several million dollars a year. He is a boy of fourteen, living peaceably in the Forbidden City. Once, in the course of a civil war, he was nominally restored to power for a few weeks; but he was deposed again, without being in any way punished for the use to which he had been put.

Public opinion is a very real force in China, when it can be roused. It was, by all accounts, mainly responsible for the downfall of the An Fu party in the summer of 1920. This party was pro-Japanese, and was accepting loans from Japan. Hatred of Japan is the strongest and most widespread of political passions in China, and it was stirred up by the students in fiery orations. The An Fu party had, at first, a great preponderance of military strength; but their soldiers walked away when they came to understand the cause for which they were expected to fight. In the end, the opponents of the An Fu party were able to enter Peking and change the government almost without firing a shot.

The same influence of public opinion was decisive in the teachers' strike, which was on the point of being settled when I left Peking. The Government, which is always impecunious, owing to corruption, had left its teachers unpaid for many months. At last, they struck to enforce payment, and went on a peaceful deputation to the Government, accompanied by many students. There was a clash with the soldiers and police, and many teachers and students were more or less severely wounded. This led to a terrific outcry, because the love of education in China is profound and widespread. The newspapers clamored for revolution. The Government had just spent nine million dollars in corrupt payments to three teachers who had descended upon the capital to extort blackmail. It could not find any colorable pretext for refusing the few hundred thousands required by the teachers, and it capitulated in panic. I do not think there is any Anglo-Saxon country where the interests of teachers would have roused the same degree of public feeling.

Nothing astonishes a European more in the Chinese than their patience. The educated Chinese are well aware of the foreign menace. They realize acutely what the Japanese have done in Manchuria and Shantung. They are aware that the English in Hong Kong are doing their utmost to bring to naught the Canton attempt to introduce good government in the South. They know that all the great powers, without exception, look with greedy eyes upon the undeveloped resources of their country, especially its coal and iron. They have before them the example of Japan, which, by developing a brutal militarism, a cast-iron discipline, and a new reactionary religion, has succeeded in holding at bay the [illegible]

Digitized by Google

lusts of 'civilized' industrialists. Yet they neither copy Japan nor submit tamely to foreign domination. They think, not in decades, but in centuries. They have been conquered before, first by the Tartars and then by the Manchus. But in both cases they absorbed their conquerors. Chinese civilization persisted, unchanged; and after a few generations the invaders became more Chinese than their subjects.

Manchuria is a rather empty country, with abundant room for colonization. The Japanese assert that they need colonies for their surplus population, yet the Chinese immigrants into Manchuria exceed the Japanese a hundredfold. Whatever may be the temporary political status of Manchuria, it will remain a part of Chinese civilization, and can be recovered whenever Japan happens to be in difficulties. The Chinese derive such strength from their four hundred millions, the toughness of their national customs, their power of passive resistance, and their unrivaled national cohesiveness, — in spite of the civil wars, which merely ruffle the surface, — that they can afford to despise military methods, and to wait till the feverish energy of their oppressors shall have exhausted itself in internecine combats.

China is much less a political entity than a civilization — the only one that has survived from ancient times. Since the days of Confucius, the Egyptian, Babylonian, Persian, Macedonian, and Roman empires have perished; but China has persisted through a continuous evolution. There have been foreign influences — first Buddhism, and now Western science. But Buddhism did not turn the Chinese into Indians, and Western science will not turn them into Europeans. I have met men in China who knew as much of Western learning as any professor among ourselves; yet they had not been thrown off their balance, or lost touch with their own people. What is bad in the West — its brutality, its restlessness, its readiness to oppress the weak, its preoccupation with purely material aims — they see to be bad, and do not wish to adopt. What is good, especially its science, they do wish to adopt.

The old indigenous culture of China has become rather dead; its art and literature are not what they were, and Confucius does not satisfy the spiritual needs of a modern man, even if he is Chinese. The Chinese who have had a European or American education realize that a new element is needed to vitalize native traditions, and they look to our civilization to supply it. But they do not wish to construct a civilization just like ours; and it is precisely in this that the best hope lies. If they are not goaded into militarism, they may produce a genuinely new civilization, better than any that we in the West have been able to create.

III

So far, I have spoken chiefly of the good sides of the Chinese character; but, of course, China, like every other nation, has its bad sides also. It is disagreeable to me to speak of these, as I experienced so much courtesy and real kindness from the Chinese, that I should prefer to say only nice things about them. But for the sake of China, as well as for the sake of truth, it would be a mistake to conceal what is less admirable. I will only ask the reader to remember that, in the balance, I think the Chinese one of the best nations I have come across, and am prepared to draw up a graver indictment against every one of the great powers.

Shortly before I left China, an eminent Chinese writer pressed me to say what I considered the chief defects of the Chinese. With some reluctance, I

Digitized by Google

mentioned three: avarice, cowardice, and callousness. Strange to say, my interlocutor, instead of getting angry, admitted the justice of my criticism, and proceeded to discuss possible remedies. This is a sample of the intellectual integrity which is one of China's greatest virtues.

The callousness of the Chinese is bound to strike every Anglo-Saxon. They have none of that humanitarian impulse which leads us to devote one per cent of our energy to mitigating the evils wrought by the other ninety-nine per cent. For instance, we have been forbidding the Austrians to join with Germany, to emigrate, or to obtain the raw materials of industry. Therefore the Viennese have starved, except those whom it has pleased us to keep alive, from philanthropy. The Chinese would not have had the energy to starve the Viennese, or the philanthropy to keep some of them alive. While I was in China, millions were dying of famine; men sold their children into slavery for a few dollars, and killed them if this sum was unobtainable. Much was done by white men to relieve the famine, but very little by the Chinese, and that little vitiated by corruption. It must be said, however, that the efforts of the white men were more effective in soothing their own consciences than in helping the Chinese. So long as the present birth-rate and the present methods of agriculture persist, famines are bound to occur periodically; and those whom philanthropy keeps alive through one famine are only too likely to perish in the next.

Famines in China can be permanently cured only by better methods of agriculture combined with emigration or birth-control on a large scale. Educated Chinese realize this, and it makes them indifferent to efforts to keep the present victims alive. A great deal of Chinese callousness has a similar explanation, and is due to perception of the vastness of the problems involved. But there remains a residue which cannot be so explained. If a dog is run over by an automobile and seriously hurt, nine out of ten passers-by will stop to laugh at the poor brute's howls. The spectacle of suffering does not of itself rouse any sympathetic pain in the average Chinaman; in fact, he seems to find it mildly agreeable. Their history, and their penal code before the revolution of 1911, show that they are by no means destitute of the impulse of active cruelty; but of this I did not myself come across any instances. And it must be said that active cruelty is practised by all the great nations, to an extent concealed from us only by our hypocrisy.

Cowardice is *prima facie* a fault of the Chinese; but I am not sure that they are really lacking in courage. It is true that, in battles between rival tuchuns, both sides run away, and victory rests with the side that first discovers the flight of the other. But this proves only that the Chinese soldier is a rational man. No cause of any importance is involved, and the armies consist of mere mercenaries. When there is a serious issue, as, for instance, in the Tai-Ping rebellion, the Chinese are said to fight well, particularly if they have good officers. Nevertheless, I do not think that, in comparison with the Anglo-Saxons, the French, or the Germans, the Chinese can be considered a courageous people, except in the matter of passive endurance. They will endure torture, and even death, for motives which men of more pugnacious races would find insufficient — for example, to conceal the hiding-place of stolen plunder. In spite of their comparative lack of *active* courage, they have less fear of death than we have, as is shown by their readiness to commit suicide.

Avarice is, I should say, the gravest defect of the Chinese. Life is hard, and

Digitized by Google

money is not easily obtained. For the sake of money, all except a very few foreign-educated Chinese will be guilty of corruption. For the sake of a few pence, almost any coolie will run an imminent risk of death. The difficulty of combating Japan has arisen mainly from the fact that hardly any Chinese politician can resist Japanese bribes. I think this defect is probably due to the fact that, for many ages, an honest living has been hard to get; in which case it will be lessened as economic conditions improve. I doubt if it is any worse now in China than it was in Europe in the eighteenth century. I have not heard of any Chinese general more corrupt than Marlborough, or of any politician more corrupt than Cardinal Dubois. It is, therefore, quite likely that changed industrial conditions will make the Chinese as honest as we are — which is not saying much.

I have been speaking of the Chinese as they are in ordinary life, when they appear as men of active and skeptical intelligence, but of somewhat sluggish passions. There is, however, another side to them: they are capable of wild excitement, often of a collective kind. I saw little of this myself, but there can be no doubt of the fact. The Boxer rising was a case in point, and one which particularly affected Europeans. But their history is full of more or less analogous disturbances. It is this element in their character that makes them incalculable, and makes it impossible even to guess at their future. One can imagine a section of them becoming fanatically Bolshevist, or anti-Japanese, or Christian, or devoted to some leader who would ultimately declare himself Emperor. I suppose it is this element in their character that makes them, in spite of their habitual caution, the most reckless gamblers in the world. And many emperors have lost their thrones through the force of romantic love, although romantic love is far more despised than it is in the West.

To sum up the Chinese character is not easy. Much of what strikes the foreigner is due merely to the fact that they have preserved an ancient civilization which is not industrial. All this is likely to pass away, under the pressure of Japanese, European, and American financiers. Their art is already perishing, and being replaced by crude imitations of second-rate European pictures. Most of the Chinese who have had a European education are quite incapable of seeing any beauty in native painting, and merely observe contemptuously that it does not obey the laws of perspective.

The obvious charm which the tourist finds in China cannot be preserved; it must perish at the touch of industrialism. But perhaps something may be preserved, something of the ethical qualities in which China is supreme, and which the modern world most desperately needs. Among these qualities I place first the pacific temper, which seeks to settle disputes on grounds of justice rather than by force. It remains to be seen whether the West will allow this temper to persist, or will force it to give place, in self-defense, to a frantic militarism like that to which Japan has been driven.

Digitized by Google

THE LETTERS IN SHAKESPEARE'S PLAYS

BY ELLEN TERRY

SOME years ago, when I was asked to lecture on Shakespeare's heroines in the light of the knowledge which I had gained of their character through impersonating them on the stage, I wondered if it were possible to find anything to say that had not been said before. 'If nothing is, that has not been before, how are our brains beguiled!' However, I found out, when I applied myself to the task, that even Shakespeare, about whom hundreds of books have been written, has a little of the unknown. For years it was my trade to find out, not what he had been to others, but what he was to *me*, and to make that visible in my acting. It was easier to describe what I saw through my own medium, than through one for which I have had no training; but I am glad that I tried, because it meant more study of the plays, and so, more delightful experiences.

In the course of this study for my lectures on the women in Shakespeare, I was struck by the fact that the letters in his plays have never had their due. Little volumes of the songs have been published; jewels of wit and wisdom have been taken out of their setting and reset in birthday books, calendars, and the rest; but, so far as I know, there is no separate collection of the letters. I found, when I read them aloud, that they were wonderful letters, and worth talking about on their merits. 'I should like to talk about them as well as the heroines,' I said. 'But there are so few,' the friend, to whom I suggested them as a subject for a *causerie*, objected. 'I can't remember any myself beyond those in *The Merchant of Venice*, and *As You Like It*.' 'That's splendid!' I thought. 'If you, who are not at all ignorant, can't do better than that, there must be hundreds to whom it will be a surprise to learn that there are thirty letters, and all good ones!'

There is all the more reason for giving them our attention because they are the only letters written by Shakespeare that have survived. I doubt whether, as a man, he was a good correspondent. He crowded his great life's work, which has made England more honored throughout the world than the achievements of her great soldiers, sailors, and statesmen, into a score of years. He did not begin his career as a youthful prodigy, and he died when he was fifty-two. What with adapting plays, creating them, retouching them at rehearsal, writing sonnets, acting, managing companies of actors, and having a good time with his friends, he could not have had much leisure for pouring out his soul in letters. The man who does that is, as a rule, an idle man, and Shakespeare, I feel sure, was always busy.

People often say we have no authority for talking about Shakespeare as a man at all. What do we know for certain about his life? But I quite agree with Georg Brandes (my favorite Shakespearean scholar) that, given the possession of forty-five important works by any man, it is entirely our own fault if we know nothing about him. But perhaps these works are not by Shake-

Digitized by Google

speare, but by a syndicate, or by some fellow who took his name! Why should we pursue these tiresome theories? I wish we had just one authentic letter of Shakespeare's to put a stop to it. Otherwise, I should be glad that he left none behind for posterity to thumb. I don't like reading the private letters of a great man. Print is so merciless. Many things pass in hand-writing, which print 'shows up.' Print is so impertinent — flinging open the door of a little room, where, perhaps, two lovers are communing, and saying to the public, 'Have a look at them — these great people in love! You see they are just as silly as little people.' The Browning letters — ought they ever to have been published? The *Sonnets from the Portuguese* gave us the picture of a great love. The letters were like an anatomical dissection of it.

Now these letters in Shakespeare's plays were meant for the public ear — invented to please it; so we can examine them with a clear conscience. Yet they are true to life. We can learn from them how the man of action writes a letter, and how the poet writes a letter. We can learn that, when people are in love, they all use the same language. Whether they are stupid or clever, they employ the same phrases. 'I love you,' writes the man of genius — and 'I love you,' writes the fool. Hamlet begins his letter to Ophelia in the conventional rhymes which were fashionable with Elizabethan gallants:—

'To the celestial and my soul's idol, the most beautified Ophelia' — 'In her excellent white bosom, these,' and so on.

'Doubt thou the stars are fire,
Doubt that the sun doth move,
Doubt truth to be a liar,
But never doubt I love.'

So far he writes in his character of 'the glass of fashion.' But he does not like the artificial style and soon abandons it for simple, earnest prose: —

O DEAR OPHELIA, I am ill at these numbers. I have not art to reckon my groans; but that I love thee best, O most best, believe it. Adieu.

Thine evermore, most dear lady,
Whilst this machine is to him,
HAMLET.

Is this a sincere love-letter? Was Hamlet ever in love with Ophelia? I think he was, and found it hard to put her out of his life. At the very moment when the revelation of his mother's infidelity had made him cynical about woman's virtue, this girl acts in a way that fills him with suspicion. She hands his letters to her father, allows herself to be made a tool. His conclusion is: 'You are like my mother; you could act as she did.' But he loved her all the same.

I loved Ophelia. Forty thousand brothers
Could not, with all their quantity of love,
Make up my sum.

Proteus, in *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*, is one of those professional lovers who are never in love and never out of it. I can imagine him reeling off love-letters with consummate ease, not caring much to whom they were addressed so long as they contained enough beautiful epithets to satisfy *him!* Of his letter to Julia we hear only fragments: 'Kind Julia'; 'love-wounded Proteus'; 'poor forlorn Proteus'; 'passionate Proteus' — more of Proteus than of Julia, you see! — for Julia, like many another woman, has, for the sake of her self-respect, torn up the letter that she is burning to read! She pieces the torn bits together, but these incoherent exclamations are all that her pride has left legible. Proteus's letter to Silvia we hear complete. It is in the fashionable rhyme, affected, insincere, but quite pretty.

My thoughts do harbour with my Silvia nightly,
And slaves they are to me that send them flying:
O, could their master come and go as lightly,
Himself would lodge where senseless they are lying!

Digitized by Google

My herald thoughts in thy pure bosom rest them,
While I, their King, that hither them importune,
Do curse the grace that with such grace hath blessed them,
Because myself do want my servants' fortune.
I curse myself, for they are sent by me,
That they should harbour where their lord would be.
. . . . . .
Silvia, this night I will enfranchise thee.

How this letter-writer enjoyed playing with words! And how different this skill at pat-ball from the profound feeling in the letter from Antonio to Bassanio in *The Merchant of Venice!* Hear how a man, deeply moved, writes to the friend he loves.

SWEET BASSANIO, — My ships have all miscarried, my creditors grow cruel, my estate is very low, my bond to the Jew is forfeit, and since in paying it, it is impossible I should live, all debts are cleared between you and I, if I might but see you at my death. Notwithstanding, use your pleasure. If your love do not persuade you to come, let not my letter.

To my mind, in this letter human love at its greatest finds expression. This love has all the tenderness of a woman's love: 'Sweet Bassanio!' the trustfulness of a child's 'I have only to tell him and he will help me'; the generosity and manliness of a true friend's 'Don't feel that you owe me anything. It's all right, but I would like to see you and grasp your hand'; the unselfishness with which wives and mothers love: 'You must n't think of coming all the same, if it puts you out.' Of all the letters in the plays, this one of Antonio's is my favorite.

Our manner of expression is determined by the age in which we live, but in this letter it is the thing expressed that seems to have changed. It is impossible to study Shakespeare's plays closely without noticing that to him friendship was perhaps the most sacred of all human relations. Valentine offers to sacrifice Silvia to Proteus. Bassanio says that his wife matters less to him than the life of his friend. To an Elizabethan audience this exaltation of friendship did not seem strange. Two of Shakespeare's comrades, Beaumont and Fletcher, lived together 'on the Bankside, not far from the playhouse,' and had the same 'clothes and cloak between them'; and there were many such all-sufficing friendships. That attractive old sinner, John Falstaff, was cut to the heart when his friend Prince Hal publicly denounced him. His affection for young Harry is a lovable trait in his character; and who does not feel sorry for him, worthless old waster as he is, when the Prince answers his, 'God save thee my sweet boy,' with 'I know thee not, old man; fall to thy prayers'? But when Falstaff wrote the following letter, Harry was still unreformed and friendly: —

Sir John Falstaff, knight, to the son of the King nearest his father, HARRY PRINCE OF WALES, greeting: —

I will imitate the honourable Romans in brevity. I commend me to thee, I commend thee, and I leave thee. Be not too familiar with Poins; for he misuses thy favours so much, that he swears thou art to marry his sister Nell. Repent at idle times as thou mayest; and so, farewell.

Thine by yea and no, which is as much as to say, as thou usest him, JACK FALSTAFF with my familiars, JOHN with my brothers and sisters, and SIR JOHN with all Europe.

When we meet Sir John again in *The Merry Wives of Windsor,* — in which play Shakespeare had to bring him out of his grave, 'by request,' because he was so popular in the theatre that audiences wanted to see him in another play, — his wit is not quite so bright, but his epistolary style is much the same. You may remember that he writes two love-letters, word for word the same, to two women living in the same town, who, as he must have known, met often and exchanged confidences. This alone

Digitized by Google

shows that the Falstaff of the *Merry Wives* is not quite the man he was in *Henry IV* — does not carry his sack as well, perhaps!

Ask me no reason why I love you; for though Love use Reason for his physician, he admits him not for his counsellor. You are not young, no more am I; go to then, there's sympathy. You are merry, so am I; ha, ha! then there's more sympathy. You love sack, and so do I; would you desire better sympathy? Let it suffice thee, Mistress Page, — at the least, if the love of a soldier can suffice, — that I love thee. I will not say, pity me; 't is not a soldier-like phrase; but I say, love me. By me,

Thine own true knight,
By day or night,
Or any kind of light,
With all his might
For thee to fight,

JOHN FALSTAFF.

This letter may not be very funny in print; but when it is read aloud on the stage, it provokes much laughter. Sometimes one thinks that a joke is the thing most affected by the time-spirit. Remove it from its place in time, and it ceases to exist as a joke. Our sense of what is tragic remains the same through the centuries; but our sense of humor — that changes. It is hard to believe that some Elizabethan comedies were ever amusing. In nothing does Shakespeare show himself 'above the law' more clearly than in his fun. It is not always 'nice,' but it is mirth-provoking, that is, if it is not treated academically. If a modern audience does not laugh at Shakespeare's jokes, blame the actors! The letter that Maria, in *Twelfth Night*, palms off on Malvolio as Olivia's has all the material for making us laugh; but I have seen Malvolios who so handled the material as to justify the opinion that Shakespeare's comedy is no longer comic. Here again it is the situation that makes the letter good fun on the stage. It begins in verse of rather poor quality: —

Jove knows I love;
But who?
Lips, do not move;
No man must know.
I may command where I adore;
But silence, like a Lucrece knife,
With bloodless stroke my heart doth gore.
M, O, A, I, doth sway my life!

Maria was not much of a poet, but when she takes to prose, she shines.

If this fall into thy hand, revolve. In my stars I am above thee, but be not afraid of greatness. Some are born great, some achieve greatness, and some have greatness thrust upon 'em. Thy Fates open their hands, let thy blood and spirit embrace them; and, to inure thyself to what thou art like to be, cast thy humble slough and appear fresh. Be opposite with a kinsman, surly with servants; let thy tongue tang arguments of state; put thyself into the trick of singularity: she thus advises thee that sighs for thee. Remember who commended thy yellow stockings, and wished to see thee ever cross-gartered. I say, remember. Go to, thou art made, if thou desirest to be so; if not, let me see thee a steward still, the fellow of servants, and not worthy to touch Fortune's fingers. Farewell. She that would alter services with thee,

THE FORTUNATE UNHAPPY.

Then follows the postscript; and Maria had reserved her great coup for the postscript (the only one, by the way, that is written in full in the plays): —

If thou entertainest my love, let it appear in thy smiling. Thy smiles become thee well; therefore in my presence still smile, dear my sweet, I prithee!

Shakespeare was no Puritan. He probably enjoyed bear-baiting, and yet, unlike many of his contemporaries, felt sorry for the bear. So after writing this scene, in which Malvolio is baited, and deluded, and made to look a fool, he is able to write another in which our sympathies are roused with the victim of Maria's 'sport royal.' Malvolio's letter to Olivia makes us see that the sport had its cruel side.

Digitized by Google

By the Lord, madam, you wrong me, and the world shall know it. Though you have put me into darkness and given your drunken cousin rule over me, yet have I the benefit of my senses as well as your ladyship. I have your own letter that induced me to the semblance I put on; with the which I doubt not but to do myself much right, or you much shame. Think of me as you please. I leave my duty a little unthought of and speak out of my injury.

THE MADLY-USED MALVOLIO.

Although written in circumstances calculated to make the best servant 'a little forget his duty,' this letter is full of the dignity of service, and a just rebuke to those who hold their 'inferiors' up to ridicule.

From a letter from a steward in a gold chain, preserving his dignity in an undignified position, I turn to one from a groom. A plain fellow this. I see him sitting down, laboriously scratching out a few illegible sentences. But they are straight to the point, and they have their dramatic value in adding a touch to the portrait of Cardinal Wolsey in *Henry VIII.*

MY LORD, — The horses your lordship sent for, with all the care I had, I saw well chosen, ridden, and furnished. They were young and handsome, and of the best breed in the north. When they were ready to set out for London, a man of my Lord Cardinal's, by commission and main power, took 'em from me, with this reason: His master would be served before a subject, if not before the King; which stopped our mouths, sir.

There is a tedious, pedantic letter in *Love's Labour's Lost*, which may have amused Shakespeare's contemporaries because it satirizes the affectations of their day. Armado's style in this letter is only a slight exaggeration of that in which people wrote to Queen Elizabeth. They used six long words when one short one would have conveyed their meaning, and racked their brains for pretentious and extravagant compliments. I used to read this letter in one of my lectures, and oh, what a job it was to get any fun out of it! Here is a sample of its humor: —

The magnanimous and most illustrate king Cophetua set eye upon the pernicious and indubitate beggar, Zenelophon; and he it was that might rightly say, *Veni, vidi, vici;* which to annothanize in the vulgar, — O base and obscure vulgar! — videlicet, He came, saw, and overcame: he came, one; saw, two; overcame, three. Who came? The king. Why did he come? To see. Why did he see? To overcome. To whom came he? To the beggar. What saw he? The beggar. Who overcame he? The beggar. The conclusion is victory; on whose side? The king's. The captive is enriched; on whose side? The beggar's. The catastrophe is a nuptial; on whose side? The king's; no, on both in one, or one in both.

And so forth.

But, of course, when the audience has seen the popinjay Armado and knows that this high-flown stuff is written to an illiterate peasant-girl, the letter makes a different impression, especially if Boyet, who has to read it, is a good actor! But if he is a wise one, he will probably beg for the effusion to be 'cut.'

'I say she never did invent this letter,' exclaims Rosalind, after hearing the rhymed jingle that Phebe sends her under the impression that she is a handsome young man. This lets us into a little secret about these rhymed letters. They could be bought in many English villages, from the professional letter-writer of the parish. And this was the sort of letter that he turned out: —

If the scorn of your bright eyne
Have power to raise such love in mine,
Alack, in me what strange effect
Would they work in mild aspect!
Whiles you chid me, I did love;
How then might your prayers move?
He that brings this love to thee
Little knows this love in me;

Digitized by Google

And by him seal up thy minds,
Whether that thy youth and kind
Will the faithful offer take
Of me, and all that I can make;
Or else by him my love deny,
And then I 'll study how to die.

In *All's Well that Ends Well*, we find that women of property commanded the services of their stewards when they wanted a letter written. Bertram's mother in this play instructs her steward, Rinaldo, to write to her son for her: —

Write, write, Rinaldo,
To this unworthy husband of his wife.
Let every word weigh heavy of her worth
That he does weigh too light. My greatest grief,
Though little he do feel it, set down sharply.

Rinaldo evidently obeyed this instruction faithfully, for we hear later on that the letter 'stings Bertram's nature,' and that on the reading of it 'he changed almost into another man.' Bertram ends his letter to his mother with 'My duty to you.' He is not on good terms with her, but he does not forget to be externally filial and polite. An odious young man, yet Helena, whom he treats so outrageously, is annoyingly fond of him.

Thus, Indian-like,
Religious in mine error, I adore
The sun, that looks upon his worshipper,
But knows of him no more.

My next letter-writer, Leonatus in *Cymbeline*, plays his wife a dirty trick. But in all ages a man whose jealousy is roused is forgiven much. Leonatus is devoted to Imogen, yet he can make her chastity the subject of a wager with a man who scoffs at the idea of any woman being chaste.

He writes and asks her to welcome this man of whom he has every reason to think ill. He goes so far as to describe Iachimo to her as 'one of the noblest note, to whose kindnesses I am most infinitely tied. Reflect upon him accordingly, as you value your trust — ' 'So far I read aloud,' says Imogen; and adds that the rest of the letter warms 'the very middle of my heart' — a letter written by a husband who cannot believe in her without proof, and has sent a comparative stranger to make an assault on her virtue!

It is not surprising that, when Iachimo returns with his catalogue of all the furniture in Imogen's room, and a careful description of the mole on her left breast, 'cinque-spotted, like the crimson drops i' the bottom of a cowslip,' Leonatus should 'see red'; but there is really no excuse for his sitting down and writing a base falsehood to lure his wife to her death. How differently Imogen behaves when Iachimo traduces Leonatus to her! She is not only indignant; she is reasonable and sensible. When he urges her to be revenged, she says that, if it were true, — but she will not let her heart be abused in haste by her ears, — revenge would not help her. And what wisdom there is in her reply to Iachimo: —

If thou wert honourable,
Thou wouldst have told this tale for virtue, not
For such an end thou seek'st.

She sees through this man, but naturally does not see through this letter from Leonatus.

Justice, and your father's wrath, should he take me in his dominion, could not be so cruel to me, as you, O the dearest of creatures, would even renew me with your eyes. Take notice that I am in Cambria, at Milford-Haven; what your own love will out of this advise you, follow. So he wishes you all happiness, that remains loyal to his vow, and your increasing in love

LEONATUS POSTHUMUS.

I never could read it on the stage without believing in its sincerity. A woman would have to be very suspicious to take it as 'a trap.' Imogen's love was so great that she forgave the man who wrote it to make her death sure. Did Shakespeare himself hold the opinion that a woman's love and a

Digitized by Google

man's love have no common denominator? Leonatus shows his love by planning to kill his wife, when he is convinced that she is unfaithful. When he finds that he has been deceived, he calls himself 'a credulous fool,' and other harsh names. But Imogen refrains from petty reproaches. The worst she says is: —

Why did you throw your wedded lady from you?
Think that you are upon a rock, and now
Throw me again.

To love when all goes well — that is easy. To love when the loved one behaves like Leonatus — that requires a self-abnegation which is apparently considered impossible except to women!

Macbeth's letter to his wife is interesting, not only because it is one of those rare tributes that a man sometimes pays to the share his wife has had in the making of his career, but because of the light it throws on the visionary element in Macbeth's character. The goal of his ambition is a material thing, — an earthly crown, — but he believes in the supernatural nature of his 'call.'

They met me in the day of success; and I have learned by the perfectest report, they have more in them than mortal knowledge. When I burned in desire to question them further, they made themselves air, into which they vanished. Whiles I stood rapt in the wonder of it, came missives from the King, who all-hailed me 'Thane of Cawdor'; by which title, before, these weird sisters saluted me, and referred me to the coming on of time, with 'Hail, King that shalt be!' This have I thought good to deliver thee, my dearest partner of greatness, that thou mightest not lose the dues of rejoicing, by being ignorant of what greatness is promised thee. Lay it to thy heart, and farewell.

'My dearest partner of greatness!' Is not that a wonderful revelation of the relationship between this husband and his wife? Is not the whole letter a wonderful revelation of the man's character? a man who was driven by dreams into a common and cruel crime.

We could not have a better example than this of Shakespeare's use of the letter in his plays. Dramatists now condemn them, with soliloquies, as a clumsy expedient for letting the audience 'know things.' But Shakespeare employs both letters and soliloquies with a skill that strikes one more when one sees his plays in action than when one reads them. Bellario's letter to the Duke in *The Merchant of Venice*, besides being a model of what a letter should be, is a masterly preparation for Portia's entrance in the Court scene, and an instruction as to how the actress ought to handle that scene. She is not to behave with feminine inconsequence, and provoke laughter by her ignorance of legal procedure, but to conduct herself like a trained advocate. The letter makes Portia's eloquence and intelligence convincing to the audience.

Your Grace shall understand that at the receipt of your letter I am very sick; but in the instant that your messenger came, in loving visitation was with me a young doctor of Rome. His name is Balthazar. I acquainted him with the cause in controversy between the Jew and Antonio the merchant. We turned o'er many books together. He is furnished with my opinion; which, bettered with his own learning, the greatness whereof I cannot enough commend, comes with him, at my importunity, to fill up your Grace's request in my stead. I beseech you, let his lack of years be no impediment to let him lack a reverend estimation; for I never knew so young a body with so old a head. I leave him to your gracious acceptance, whose trial shall better publish his commendation.

What a lot of things there are to think over in this letter! And what pictures it conjures up! No Italian painter could make us see more clearly the learned Bellario receiving his young visitor and instructing her how to conduct her case. With the instinct of genius, the dramatist absorbed the

Digitized by Google

spirit of the Renaissance in this play, as in *Julius Cæsar* he absorbed the spirit of ancient Rome. If Shakespeare knew 'small Latin and less Greek,' he was able to make this letter of warning to Cæsar typically Latin in its conciseness: —

Cæsar, beware of Brutus; take heed of Cassius; come not near Casca; have an eye to Cinna; trust not Trebonius; mark well Metellus Cimber; Decius Brutus loves thee not; thou hast wronged Caius Ligarius. There is but one mind in all these men, and it is bent against Cæsar. If thou beest not immortal, look about you; security gives way to conspiracy. The mighty gods defend thee! Thy lover,

ARTEMODORUS.

The whole plot of the play, and the guiding motive of each character, can be found in these short sentences.

If we compare this letter with the long-winded effusion from Armado to the King in *Love's Labour's Lost* (which I am not going to quote here, because it is so terribly long), we get a good idea of the infinite variety of style that the dramatist had at his command, and of his insight into the characteristics of different races at different times. He knew that the Romans were masters of brevity. And he knew that the affected Elizabethan courtier was a master of verbosity. Both he can imitate to the life.

In *Henry IV* Hotspur reads a letter, and this time it is the man who reads it, not the man who writes it, on whom our attention is concentrated. You see a quick-witted, courageous fellow, impatient of cautious people who see both sides of a question and are afraid of going too far. You see the 'extremist,' with all his good points and his bad ones.

He could be contented; why is he not, then? In respect of the love he bears our house: he shows in this, he loves his own barn better than he loves our house. . . . 'The purpose you undertake is dangerous'; — why that's certain. 'T is dangerous to take a cold, to sleep, to drink; but I tell you, my lord fool, out of this nettle, danger, we pluck this flower, safety. 'The purpose you undertake is dangerous; . . . the friends you have named uncertain; and your whole plot too light for the counterpoise of so great an opposition.' Say you so, say you so? I say unto you again, you are a shallow, cowardly hind, and you lie. What a lack-brain is this! By the Lord, our plot is a good plot as ever was laid; our friends true and constant: a good plot, good friends, and full of expectation; an excellent plot, very good friends. What a frosty-spirited rogue is this! Why, my Lord of York commends the plot and the general course of the action. 'Zounds, an I were now by this rascal, I could brain him with his lady's fan.

There is real 'vinegar and pepper' in this outburst of Hotspur's. Compare it with the 'vinegar and pepper' of Sir Andrew Aguecheek's fiery challenge to Viola in *Twelfth Night*. Sir Andrew is, as you know, a very devil of a fellow. He is quite sure that this letter is bold enough to strike terror into the heart of the most confident enemy: —

Youth, whatsoever thou art, thou art but a scurvy fellow. Wonder not, nor admire not in thy mind, why I do call thee so, for I will show thee no reason for 't. Thou com'st to the lady Olivia, and in my sight she uses thee kindly. But thou liest in thy throat; that is not the matter I challenge thee for. I will waylay thee going home; where if it be thy chance to kill me, thou killest me like a rogue and a villain. Fare thee well, and God have mercy upon one of our souls! He may have mercy upon mine; but my hope is better, and so look to thyself.

Thy friend, as thou usest him, and thy sworn enemy, ANDREW AGUECHEEK.

Besides Hamlet's letter to Ophelia, there are two other letters from him in the play which are often omitted in acting versions. The first is to Horatio, and it has its bright side in the complete confidence he places in his friend: —

Digitized by Google

Horatio, when thou shalt have overlooked this, give these fellows some means to the King; they have letters for him. Ere we were two days old at sea, a pirate of very warlike appointment gave us chase. Finding ourselves too slow of sail, we put on a compelled valour. In the grapple I boarded them. On the instant they got clear of our ship, so I alone became their prisoner. They have dealt with me like thieves of mercy, but they knew what they did: I am to do a good turn for them. Let the King have the letters I have sent, and repair thou to me with as much speed as thou wouldst fly death. I have words to speak in your ear will make thee dumb, yet are they much too light for the bore of the matter. These good fellows will bring thee where I am. Rosencrantz and Guildenstern hold their course for England; of them I have much to tell thee. Farewell.

He that thou knowest thine,

HAMLET.

The wording of the second letter, to the King, is simple and direct enough, yet it has a sinister and malevolent sound — its very civility is calculated to terrify the guilty conscience of the King: —

High and mighty, You shall know I am set naked on your kingdom. To-morrow shall I beg leave to see your kingly eyes, when I shall, first asking your pardon thereunto, recount the occasions of my sudden and more strange return.

HAMLET.

'And in a postscript here,' says the King, who reads the letter, 'he says, "alone."'

In *Antony and Cleopatra*, Shakespeare adopts the method of making someone give the substance of a letter, instead of reading the actual words of the writer. Twice Octavius Cæsar enters 'reading a letter,' and twice we have to trust to his honor that he is reporting it fairly. The first, which brings news of Antony, is obviously colored by Octavius's jealousy of his great 'competitor.'

From Alexandria
This is the news: he fishes, drinks, and wastes
The lamps of night in revel; is not more manlike
Than Cleopatra; nor the Queen of Ptolemy
More womanly than he; hardly gave audience, or
Vouchsafed to think he had partners. You shall find there
A man who is the abstract of all faults
That all men follow.

You feel at once that Octavius reads this as a stroke of diplomacy. He wants to justify himself in the eyes of the world for hating Antony, and he does not trouble to be accurate. Half a truth is always more damning than a lie.

Antony was, as he is represented here, a pleasure-seeker; he had that reckless determination to enjoy the moment, which is not an uncommon attribute of great rulers and great artists. But he was, as well, a fine soldier, one who was at his best in defeat and misfortune. He loved luxury, but he could at times renounce all comfort for the sake of keeping up the courage of his men. But with Roman fortitude he had neither Roman restraint nor Roman simplicity. He loves striking an attitude. Twice he challenges Octavius to single combat, and in language so vainglorious that Octavius exclaims: 'He calls me boy' (this time he is too angry to misrepresent Antony, and we may take it that his version of the challenge is true): —

He calls me boy; and chides as he had power
To beat me out of Egypt. My messenger
He hath whipped with rods; dares me to personal combat,
Cæsar to Antony. Let the old ruffian know
I have many other ways to die.

Timon of Athens's last message to the world is melancholy reading! Its fierce and savage cynicism shows our gentle Shakespeare in a new light. Timon makes his grave on the 'beached verge of the salt flood,' and erects his own tomb, —

Entombed upon the very hem o' the sea.

Digitized by Google

A soldier takes an impression in wax of the inscription scratched on it, and brings it to Alcibiades: —

Here lies a wretched corse, of wretched soul bereft.
Seek not my name: a plague consume you wicked caitiffs left!
Here lie I, Timon, who, alive, all living men did hate.
Pass by and curse thy fill, but pass and stay not here thy gait.

Alcibiades, with a generosity that we should imitate, finds the noble element in this last effort after consistency of a consistent hater of men: —

These well express in thee thy latter spirits:
Though thou abhorr'dst in us our human griefs,
Scorn'dst our brain's flow and those our droplets which
From niggard nature fall, yet rich conceit
Taught thee to make vast Neptune weep for aye
On thy low grave, on faults forgiven.

Those are good words with which to bring this little study of a corner of the great world of Shakespeare's mind to an end!

THE IRON MAN AND WAGES

BY ARTHUR POUND

I

OPERATING an automatic machine requires no more than average manual dexterity and ordinary intelligence. In some cases, where the materials in process are heavy, it requires considerable strength and, where several machines are grouped in one man's care, considerable agility. If the operative is willing to trust the company to figure his pay, without checking up in his own interest, no book knowledge is necessary. Simple arithmetic and ability to sign one's name are the top intellectual requirements. Most manufacturers, however, prefer to have their employees read, write, and understand English, though this knowledge is by no means necessary. Consequently, many companies provide instruction in English for immigrants. In general, the ordinary public-school instruction, up to and including the eighth grade, gives a youth all the mental furnishing he needs to function efficiently in automatic production. Considered strictly as an economic being, he could get along with less. When we come to the salaried workers, the so-called white-collar group, we find public education reinforcing the leveling tendency in those branches, just as automatic machinery does in the mills.

Thus far we have considered the automatic machine as leveling wages and distributing labor between farm and factory, home and the mill. In much the same way, the spreading use of automatic machinery tends to level wages in all plants so equipped, though hindered at many points by special conditions and special labor contracts. Certain automatic machines are widely scattered, and can be found in every industrial centre. Many others present family likenesses. Even the greenest of green

Digitized by Google

workers needs but short tutelage at his assigned machine; while the man who knows how much — or rather how little — is expected of him, can shake down quickly into efficient production. As was said in an earlier article, the per capita cost of labor turnover on the 1920 basis of pay ranged from $25 to $100 per man in the more efficiently organized automobile plants, this cost including the pay of the novitiate and his teacher, the overhead on machine, and allowance for spoiled work. This verifies the evidence presented by a survey of certain large allied plants, to the effect that 70 per cent of the employees could be fitted into their jobs in three days or less. This means that a worker can shift from one line of production to another without grave loss of time. He may be a woodcutter or harvest-hand this month, and a producer of automobile parts the next. If of a roving disposition, in a single year he may can salmon on the Pacific coast, pour cement on an irrigation dam in Idaho, mill flour in Minnesota, cut pearl buttons in Iowa, mould iron in Ohio, weave silk in Jersey, or make rubber tires in New England. The outcome of such easy transitions must be a highly efficient distribution of labor-power on the one hand, and, on the other, a progressive leveling of wages as among all automatized industries. 'The old trade demarcations,' says Mr. E. F. Lloyd, 'have largely ceased to exist, and with their passing the old differences of pay have correspondingly declined.'

This leveling tendency, moreover, is no respecter of sex. Since women can tend many automatic tools as well as men, it follows that the wages of the two sexes must draw together. They may never reach uniformity, because many women view jobs as temporary stopgaps on the road to marriage, and this handicaps them as yet in the eyes of many employers. This, and kindred non-economic considerations, may affect the result; but they cannot stop the drift toward equality of wage. It is no unusual thing, even now, to find a young wife earning as much as, or more than, her husband. As time goes on, this will become too common to command notice.

Likewise, automatic machinery tends to break down the former disparity of wage as between age and youth. Children of twelve can tend many automatic machines as competently as adults. Youths, in fact, approach their highest wage during the very years in which the boys of a generation ago were earning less than living wages as apprentices. The years from eighteen to twenty-five are the most gainful for the 'machinate mammal.'

The leveling proceeds with ruthless disregard for race or nationality. While a knowledge of the native tongue may be desirable, it is by no means essential. Witness the widespread employment on automatic machines of our newly arrived immigrants, their earning on a parity with native-born products of our public schools. Notwithstanding that the color line rarely gives the negro a chance at automatics, the black populations of our northern industrial cities increased faster than the white populations from 1910 to 1920. Bringing black labor north became a highly organized enterprise. The pay of negroes, generally speaking, maintained a parity with white labor on the same kind of work; and while blacks are not often put on machines, there is no doubt that many blacks can fill the requirements of machine attendance. Whether they can stand the steady grind as well as whites, or whether the color line is justifiably drawn at the machine, are moot points, reserved for future discussion. But the general effect of the automatizing process has been to bring the average wages of the two races closer together, not only in the industrial

Digitized by Google

cities, but to an even greater extent in those sections where the black does most of the field-work. Increased cotton-picking costs and increased wheat-growing costs both resulted from the drain that automatic production put upon rural labor-supplies.

Automatic machines in offices affect the white-collar group in industry precisely as shop-workers are affected. With adding machines and other mechanisms, and standardized office system, need for special skill is decreasing among office-workers. The old-fashioned bookkeeper, the aristocrat of *fin-de-siècle* offices, is fast becoming as obsolete a type as the old-fashioned mechanic, the one-time aristocrat of the shops. Stenographic skill is subject to the competition of the phonograph; the typist is entering into competition with the duplicating typewriter. Meanwhile, public schools and business colleges are producing an abundance of persons sufficiently educated for the simplified office tasks. In addition, the higher social status enjoyed by such workers can be depended upon to furnish surplus labor for such activities in ordinary times, with the result that we pay practically the same rate to washerwomen and typists; also to cooks and stenographers, when board-and-lodging costs are considered. These influences tended to bring office-work down to the wage-level of factory-work before the war; as office-workers began to go over into the ranks of factory-workers, owing to war-wage rates in the factories, office wages began to rise. From this on, owing to the fact that labor can flow from one group to the other more easily than ever before, disparity of wage between the two groups will tend to correct itself promptly.

Transferring the vital function of production from the operative to the machine involves the taking away of skill from the rank and file and concentrating it in the directing and organizing end of industry. The heats of competition, playing through machine improvements, evaporate skill from the lower reaches of industry, and distill it in the upper reaches. Fewer producers need skill; but those few require much longer training and more highly intensified mental powers. It is up to them, not only to design, build, place, and adapt machines to involved tasks, but also to work out systems under which the production of those machines can be coördinated and the produce distributed.

II

To fit an automatic machine for its production-cycle requires high skill in tool-designing and making. Head and hand must work together; jigs and dies must be of the utmost precision. The number of skilled workmen required for this task is small compared to the whole number of industrial employees; but the group is of key importance. In the past, these men were trained under the apprentice system; but that system being in decline, industrial executives are greatly concerned for the future supply of such craftsmen. They look to public education to guard against a famine of skilled artisans; and such is their influence that they are not likely to look in vain. The call of industry has been answered already by the establishment of technical high schools and colleges in many industrial cities, as well as by the erection of private trade-schools. In desperation some employers have established their own trade-schools; but the outlook is that public education, thus challenged, will take up the burden of providing industry with skilled mechanics. Once adequate facilities are provided, we may look with assurance for the greater mental interest attaching to that work to provide candidates in abundance, and so in-

Digitized by Google

crease the number of qualified men to the point where the pay will approach that of the machine-tender — always being enough more, presumably, to make up for the time and cost of training.

The next layer in the skill compartment contains technical experts, shop-organizers, and salesmen. The third layer includes the executives. It is in these two layers that the thought-processes of modern industry centre; and the demands for special knowledge are such that the personnel must be far better equipped than their predecessors in the old régime. In the swift expansion of automatized industry they have been forced further and further afield for labor and materials on the one hand, and for markets on the other hand. They have been required to finance, not only the inflow of men and machines, but also the outflow of goods; a task so vast and compelling that it has brought into being a distinct adaptation of the banking function to industrial needs. In a very real sense bankers are the aristocrats of modern industry, sitting apart from the actual processes of production and distribution, but furnishing the lifeblood of capital, and through that power exercising a genuine, and usually salutary, control. How are these thought-men of industry going to be affected by these leveling forces at work in modern society? Are they going to be leveled economically by the same forces which brought them such large rewards? Of late years, in the era of industrial expansion, they have commanded large salaries. What is likely to happen to them now that the wheels of industry are slowing down?

So far as the technical experts — chiefly chemists and engineers — are concerned, the situation is fairly clear. They are being turned out in such numbers by colleges and universities that, except in sudden bursts of industrial expansion, the supply tends to outrun the demand. There is no wide rift between the pay of a Bachelor of Science, just out of college, and the pay of a factory operative. A city engineering department can hire draughtsmen about as cheaply as common laborers. All institutions of higher learning are growing in attendance, particularly in the technical branches. Also, the training tends to become more thorough, hence more productive of men fitted to move in the highest circles of industrial production. From all indications, universities and colleges are as apt to flood the market with engineers and chemists as the mothers of the country are to flood it with unskilled labor. Public education, therefore, tends to level toward the general average the pay for such service.

Salesmanship is similarly affected. The personal element does not play the large part it did in disposing of goods. The influence of advertising is to create a market condition in which the salesman becomes more and more an 'order-taker,' disposing of standardized, guaranteed goods at prices and on terms set by his superiors in the organization. As dickering is thrust out of the sales equation, the personal shrewdness of the salesman counts for less and less. His efficiency comes to depend less upon native traits and more upon what can be taught him. Salesmen of the old school were born, not made; but salesmen of the new school can be made out of any normally aggressive public-school product. Schools for salesmanship, established here and there, are likely to succeed. In general, the process of distributing goods tends to become more scientific and less personal; and as that change proceeds, the humbler members of the sales-organization become less important, and more candidates are available. The net result is that the salesman's wage tends toward the common wage-level. The retail

Digitized by Google

sales-clerk, male or female, earns no more than he or she could earn in a factory. The small retail grocer, whose chief function is that of taking orders, complains because he is being run out of business by a chain store, whose manager is frankly an order-taker, and earns, usually, no more than the average wage of the community. His employer, safeguarded by the cash register and an office system imposing a close check, finds it unnecessary to pay a bonus for character and honesty. The traveling salesman is not the bold, free man of other days; he covers more territory than the 'drummer' of twenty years ago, but he does not have equal responsibility. The tendency, all along the line, is for salesmen's wages to keep in closer touch with the wage-level in the producing end of the business.

III

The situation as respects employers is even more difficult to analyze, because executive ability is so largely applied native force, energy, will-power. Executives, up to date, have been largely self-trained. However, of late, the universities and colleges, recognizing that industrial executives are the most powerful figures in an industrial civilization, have taken steps to train men for these posts. Hence their schools of finance and commerce; hence their courses in business practice; hence the announcements that the universities must train 'for life.' If the educational system makes good on this programme, it is evident that executive salaries must fall. They have always been higher here than abroad. Foreign managers are content with less pay and more prestige. Already the trend is downward. In practically every industrial receivership, the receiver's first step has been to reduce executive salaries. This leveling down is matched by an equally significant recent leveling up in the salaries of minor executives, who were left behind in the war raises for the rank and file, by means of which the laborer, in many cases, came to earn more than the man from whom he took his orders directly. The Pennsylvania Railroad, for example, some months ago raised all its operating officials below the grade of superintendent, while the salaries of the higher executives were not raised.

Consideration of executive salaries, from this standpoint of wage-leveling, is complicated by the fact that many executives play a dual rôle in industry. They are heavy stockholders as well as managers of other persons' capital. Some managers, in fact, own majority interests in the corporations they captain; the corporation, then, is actually the lengthened shadow of the man — and none too lengthened at that. In such cases, managers draw as salaries part of the profits which otherwise would be apportioned as dividends, since competition for leadership does not enter into the equation. This practice has been accelerated by the excess-profits tax.

This dual relationship of the executive to his job seems, however, to be a passing phase. As business institutions age and expand, they tend to divide the functions of management and ownership. Personal enthusiasm and vigor start business projects, but they proceed toward coöperation under the corporate form, with increasing stress upon order and system. Those which survive several generations usually are found operating under other leadership than that of the owners. Accident of birth may produce owners; but it cannot be depended upon to produce those leaders who must be found if the property is to flourish under competition. Few of our younger captains of industry own dominant

Digitized by Google

holdings in the corporations they manage; some own no stock at all. There is no reason why they should; they hold their positions by reason of their personal powers, their industrial statesmanship. They are better able to hold the balance true as against the demands of labor, capital, and the market — their workers, their stockholders and bondholders, and their customers — than they would be if strong financial interest pulled them to one side.

Homer Ferguson, President of the Newport News Shipbuilding Company, calls himself a 'plain hired man,' owning no part of the property he manages; he has elaborated the reasons why that aloofness from ownership strengthens him in his work. He may earn less money in his present job than he would earn running a business of his own; on the other hand, he has more prestige, greater opportunity. Judge Gary dominates United States Steel, not by stock-ownership or stock-jobbing, but by the power of a wise and courageous mind. In his case, too, the chief reward lies in doing a big work and winning the applause of the public, not in his salary check. You cannot picture either man, or any industrial leader worthy of rank alongside them, as quitting his job in the face of a salary-cut, or as higgling over the price of his preferment in the first instance.

In the future, industrial leaders will tend more and more to be picked men, not owners in any important sense. Their salaries will depend upon the number of qualified men in the market, and the existing demand for their services. The lure of such positions and the determined efforts being made to educate for business leadership are sure to increase the number of qualified candidates. The demand is, of course, uncertain; but the chances are that it will not maintain itself relatively to supply, now that education, both public and private, has set itself to increase the supply. In that case, the present high level of executive salaries cannot be maintained. All indications point to the executives of the future carrying their loads of responsibility less because of the money reward and more because of personal pride and public spirit. Business leadership seems likely to become a profession, with professional standards and standing, as well as professional limitations as to its pay.

The learned professions, so called for tradition's sake, are easier to dispose of because, in each case, the leveling tendency is reinforced by an established professional ethic. Teachers, preachers, writers, and artists generally, for centuries have regarded their wages, not as pay, but as their living, their real rewards being service to their ideals and humanity, established social position, and the regard of their fellow men. These non-economic lures attract human nature so strongly that the rewards in these lines sometimes fall below those of unskilled labor. Poets have starved in garrets; ministers are notoriously underpaid, and of late years comparison of the pinched professor and the silk-shirted yokel has led to 'Feed the Prof.' campaigns. Law and medicine, because they work more directly upon life, have been more affected by the industrial swirl; but they, too, are bound to swim out of the commercial current to the high ethical shore. Even now, though physicians may talk about their business, they respond to many humanitarian demands; and there exist some lawyers, if not many, who put the eternal cry for justice ahead of fees. So the leveling influences of automatic machinery are bound to be reinforced and strengthened by the example of professional men, no less than by the teaching of those among them who see service as the high goal of human endeavor.

Digitized by Google

IV

Thus far we have considered the leveling of labor, as dictated by the automatic tool, solely from the standpoint of production. That is its direct action. Automatic machinery works indirectly toward the same end, however, through the market — through consumption. As the total cost of the product is the total cost of the brain- and hand-labor involved, an immediate effect of production through automatic machines is to reduce the cost of the units produced. The economic advantage of such machinery is so manifest that there can be no stopping its progress short of the point where productive power will so far outrange the world's market ability to consume, that further multiplication of man-power will not be worth while. No one can foresee whether that point is centuries removed or merely decades. Theoretically, the capacity of the human race to consume goods is infinite; but actually it is at all times in competition with the universal human demand for leisure. No matter how cheap goods become, there is a point of accumulation beyond which some men will say, 'Let's knock off and have some fun.' The ranks of labor developed plenty of such cases in 1919.

Short of that point, however, the market repays intensive cultivation. The cheaper goods become, the more of them can be sold, provided the purchasing power does not drop coincidentally with prices. It follows that, with increasing automatization in production, competition among sellers of goods on the one hand and buyers of labor-time on the other must push prices and wages toward a point where maximum production and maximum consumption tend to concur. Such is the diversity of human nature and the insistence of human desire that they may never reach absolute concurrence; but the prospects are that they will approach one another with lessening fluctuations. In this country, mass-buying makes the market for most commodities. A broad division of the proceeds of industry stimulates buying far more than a narrow one; hence, influences flowing from the sales-end of industry will tend to strengthen that leveling of labor which is predetermined by competition among buyers of labor-power for use on automatic machines.

It must be borne in mind that, under competition, some degree of wage-variation always will exist, from causes lying within the individual, as, for example, the varying wages of operatives under piece rates. 'For while the automatic tool works within a fixed cycle, it is not the precise counterpart of the ancient treadmill.' Within narrow and unimportant limits, its productiveness varies somewhat with variations of personal energy and attentiveness. Likewise, there are sure to be variations in different parts of the country, due largely to uneven supply of labor-power resulting from differing local birth-rates and non-economic hindrances to economic shifts of base. Home and family ties, love of one's native environment, stock-ownership by employees, and personal loyalties in work-relations, probably always will influence human beings considerably, and deter them from following the main chance absolutely. Barometric pressure always tends to uniformity, yet is never uniform. 'The wind blowing where it listeth has its counterpart in the now fluid movement of labor in search of employment, higher pay, or, perhaps, escape from monotony.' Enough men and women can be depended upon to follow the main chance to effect a fairly even displacement of labor-power, and to enforce by economic law a fairly even wage-scale over the entire country.

Digitized by Google

Not the least interesting part of this leveling tendency is that it runs directly toward that socialist dream — equality of income. Yet it proceeds without any assistance from the Socialists, solely as the result of capitalists installing automatic machinery. The tendency itself is strictly economic, and conceivably might work out to its ultimate conclusion without calling forth political action, amending the institution of private property, or changing the present relations between employer and employee. Nothing so simple is to be expected; not so easily does humanity accept revolutionary changes in its methods of sustaining life. Farmer-labor parties in the United States and Canada, recently formed, may be taken as evidence of belated appreciation of the economic solidarity of town and country labor under the new conditions of industry. Woman suffrage gained influence in direct proportion as women became engaged in industrial production. The automatic tool will be the force back of most of our legislation for the next fifty years, just as it will be the mainspring of our educational programme, once its significance is understood by educators still fumbling for the key to modern life. To lads who come as beardless boys into their greatest purchasing power, something must be taught, other than has been taught, if they are ever to use their leisure and their economic power aright. The army of homeless, wifeless men and footloose women is growing; the automatic tool has cut marriage-knots as well as steel bands. Let all who think in terms of public recreation, domestic relations, charity, religion, morals, child-welfare, and social science ponder those reactions of the automatic tool that daily proceed under their eyes.

In other parts of the world classes are wrestling bloodily for the control of machinery. They are of breeds to whom compromise is difficult. It is our boast that we, as inheritors of the Anglo-Saxon tradition, can settle peaceably clashes of interest over which other humans fight. But we shall never be able to settle peaceably and creditably all the problems arising out of the common use of the automatic tool in industrial production unless we grasp the social and political possibilities of its evolution. America gave the automatic tool its chance. Its blessings are evident; but unless controlled by social conscience, it may develop curses equally potent. America's high duty is to guide the continuing evolution of the Iron Man intelligently. For the economic forces which he releases are of such intense reality and abundant vitality that they will break governments which blindly oppose them just as quickly as they will undermine societies which yield too supinely to machine dictation. Governments now stake their existences upon controlling men; in the dawning age, the acid test of sovereignty may be control of machines. Through such control the leveling tendency, inherent in automatic production and reinforced by popular education, may be directed toward the goal of true democracy; whereas, undirected, it may push the human race into a new slavery, or stampede it into a new anarchy.

Digitized by Google

A PROUD CHOICE OF INFLUENCES

BY MARGARET WILSON LEES

FOR that is what it really was. But away back in another century, when Patricia was eight and I was six, I didn't know what made her different from the rest of us, and I wondered how she walked safely over pitfalls that engulfed me.

There was the disgraceful episode of the kiss, to take one small instance. How did she know the right thing to do, *in time?* I knew well enough afterward. Oh yes, often enough, afterward, I lived through the scene in imagination, and acted my part in it as it should have been acted. One could n't turn the clock back by any agony of wishing; one could only provide against catastrophe ahead. To find a rule that would fit every possible emergency? The formula at last arrived at had nothing in it about 'a decided and proud choice,' or 'repelling interference.' It was, simply, Watch Patricia and do as she does.

There was a party going on in the drawing-room on the second story; the sound of carpet-balls came up to us in our nursery on the third story — a rumble like thunder in the distance, then the click of balls as they touched. When there was a party, Patricia and I, being the eldest, were allowed to go down to the drawing-room and say good-night before we went to bed.

The nurse looked us over to see that our dresses did n't sag at one shoulder, that our stockings lay smoothly under the crossed elastic of our slippers — that we were altogether 'fit to be seen.' Then we took hands and went downstairs. Sally watched us go, with eyes that seemed to ask an unkind universe why they too might not have a glimpse of the gods at play; but Robin continued to shorten the stirrups of the saddle on his rocking-horse, and envied nobody.

We stood hand in hand at the door of the long drawing-room and looked in. The sight was different from anything one could find anywhere in the world to-day. So were the sounds. If we had been greeted by the clack of tongues that you will hear at your next afternoon tea, I do believe we should have turned and fled. Patricia and I had never heard anything so unlovely. Fortunate ears of the sixties — spared so many of the stridencies to come! Can one imagine now a city with no harsher bird-note than the twitter of the purple martens in the marten-house above the brewery? Not a city sparrow in all the length and breadth of the land; not a motor-horn! Little wonder if the voices in that drawing-room were soft and low-pitched.

I tugged at Patricia's hand to hold her back. It was so very beautiful — I wanted time to look. The game was over. The balls lay quiet at the end of the room where a visiting-card was pinned to the carpet; the players were standing about in groups, 'having conversation,' as I whispered to Patricia — a different matter from plain talking. There was a delightful variety of bright, pretty colors; as the groups broke up and formed new groups, it was like looking into a big kaleidoscope. The ladies were 'in low neck and short sleeves,' like ourselves. The thermometer out-

Digitized by Google

doors probably stood somewhere about zero at the time, and the big house was heated solely by wood stoves; drawing-room and library, with folding doors between, depended for warmth upon what was called a dumb stove, a kind of enlargement of the stovepipe from my father's office below. Sometimes, when we sat at our lessons in the library, — low-necked and short-sleeved even then, — I would hear my mother on the other side of the folding doors tapping on the dumb stove with her thimble as a signal for more fire; then, studying my arms with interested curiosity, I would discover myself the proud possessor of goose-flesh. Yet that night the bare arms, as I remember them, were warmly smooth and white against the gay dresses. Not mere wisps of color, these, like the evening dresses of to-day, but satisfying, cushiony eyefuls.

I saw nothing amiss with the setting of the scene. The carpet with its big geometrical pattern, the black horsehair furniture, the what-not of seashells, the shade of wax flowers — it was all as inevitable and right as the blue of the sky and the green of the grass. It had always been there. Just now it was softened by candlelight, and glorified by those radiant beings floating about in pink and blue and corn-color and mauve and Nile green.

One in the new color, magenta, was rolling a ball to illustrate some question that had been raised about the game just over. Her stiff silk skirt made a fine 'cheese' as she stooped. By whirling very fast and then squatting, a little girl could make a cheese, but not one like this and not with that fine air of unconcern. When I was grown up, I would wear skirts that ballooned of their own accord. I saw myself in half a dozen situations that called for stooping. Most alluring of the visions was one of my grown-up self at the pantry table, now on a level with my chin, busy — oh, happy me! — at the now forbidden task of skimming the cream from a pan of milk. A bouquet in its silver holder dangled from my wrist. I spoke in the fascinating manner of the young lady in magenta, barely opening my lips.

Patricia let go of my hand and we entered the room. That is to say, Patricia entered. Even at eight she *entered* a room — the whole of her; no astral half left dragging along uncertainly behind. Yes, Patricia was different from other children. Something in the way she was greeted as she passed from group to group — a quick look of interest and admiration — confirmed me in the belief. I followed her, pleasurably excited, but with the gone feeling about the pit of the stomach that came always with that letting go of the hand. In proportion as Patricia's clasp was an assurance that all was right with the world, the loosing of it abandoned one to a path of lonely peril.

A little fuss was made over both of us. Here were the friends and acquaintances of every day, some of them nursery intimates, but all changed, somehow, by being at a party; our own mother looked not so approachable as when in 'high neck and long sleeves.' Here was even our doctor. Being a favorite with him, I had to wait to be taken upon his knee and have my cheeks rubbed into rosiness, and in this way I got behind Patricia in our progress around the room.

When I caught up to her, I saw at once that something had happened.

There she stood, that little maiden of the sixties, the unmoved centre of a teacup tempest. I can see her yet, — her slimness, her straightness, her pretty color, her willfully curved lips, — above all, her evident indifference to the exclamations that were pelting her from every side like a flurry of soft March snow.

Digitized by Google

'What! Won't kiss Mr. Fitzhugh! O Patricia! Oh, poor Mr. Fitzhugh!'

I looked at Mr. Fitzhugh. He made me think of our dough-men before they were put into the oven. I did n't wonder that she would n't kiss him. His mouth was — well, not the kind one wants to kiss. But he was lame, and were not lame people good? In the story-books, where they abounded plentifully, they were all, all good, and only the wicked were unkind to them.

I looked at Patricia. *Was n't* it wicked to be unkind to lame people? But already she had lost interest in Mr. Fitzhugh — her choice had been made. She had shaken hands with him; she had wiped the impression unobtrusively off upon her skirt; now her eyes were turned to the piano, where the young lady in magenta was beginning to play 'La Cracovienne' with the soft pedal down. Her eyes rested upon the left hand of the player, and from a certain hint of brooding in their expression, I knew that the bass was all wrong.

'Never mind. Here comes Janie. She will give me a kiss, I know. A nice sweet kiss; maybe two, three, four.' He made the sound of four kisses. 'Janie and I are good friends. Are n't we, Janie?'

'Ye-es.' (To myself, 'He 's lame.') 'But if you don't mind, I think I 'd rather just shake hands.' ('I *can't* kiss him.')

Another chorus of 'What! Not kiss Mr. Fitzhugh! Oh, poor Mr. Fitzhugh!' Always, please remember, in the soft voices of eighteen-sixty-one.

('Can I kiss him? No, I can't. But he 's lame.')

'You too, Janie! Who would have believed you could be so cruel! Look at poor Mr. Fitzhugh! Only see how sad he looks!'

Yes, there was no doubt about it. He was looking sad. And he was lame. To be cruel to the lame!

('Now, if you shut your eyes and hurry up, perhaps you can do it. Now, *now*.')

It was done.

It was hard to do. Had n't a little girl some reason to expect approval? But that beautiful, rainbow-colored group had led her on to her undoing, only to turn upon her now with looks and exclamations more shocked than before.

'Janie! Janie! You little coquette! Coming down from the nursery with your kisses all made up, and then pretending to be too coy to give them! Pretending you would n't, when all the time you meant to!'

I turned to Mr. Fitzhugh. He was grinning — an odious grin.

Down dropped my head upon the sofa; hot, shut eyes pressed close against the slippery coolness of its horsehair.

I could feel a fluttering of the air like a flock of butterflies closing in upon me; there was a soft humming, half pity, half mocking laughter. Then the iambic of a lame footstep. At that I straightened up and stood at bay.

I must have breathed Patricia's name, for she stopped trying to reconcile the bass and treble of 'La Cracovienne' and came to me. I wish I could describe how she did it. Straight as the dart of a sailboat — and the circle closing me in parted as naturally as the water at the bow. It was an instinctive movement, altogether free from aggressiveness, but — nobody touched me.

'We can't stay any longer, Janie. Mother 's beckoning to us.'

For once the signal was welcome. As our parents kissed us good-night, their cheerfulness impressed me as a strange thing. If they knew how their child had been disgraced!

I crept up the dimly lighted stairs beside Patricia, crushed and silent. Her hold of my hand was the only comfort she tried to give. Pity would have

Digitized by Google

come amiss just then. I wanted nothing more to do with pity, my own or another's. It was a mistake. If I had refused to listen to its appeal, like Patricia, I might now have been walking with my head held up like hers.

Only once she spoke.

'If I were you, I would n't pay any attention to what young ladies say. They 're like that — in society. Society's silly.'

And then we were back in the dear, safe nursery, where treachery was unknown. And Robin had just finished shortening his second stirrup, so I knew that hours and days could not have passed since we left him busy with the first.

STRAYED SYMPATHIES

BY AGNES REPPLIER

I

It is probably more instructive to entertain a sneaking kindness for any unpopular person than to give way to perfect raptures of moral indignation against his abstract vices. — ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON.

IT is not only more instructive — it is more enlivening. The conventionalities of criticism (moral, not literary, criticism) pass from mouth to mouth and from pen to pen, until the iterations of the press are crystallized in encyclopædias and biographical dictionaries. And from such verdicts there is no appeal. Their labored impartiality, their systematic adjustments, their careful avoidance of intuition, produce in the public mind a level sameness of misunderstanding. Many sensible people think this a good result. Even a man who did his own thinking, and maintained his own intellectual freehold, like Mr. Bagehot, knew and upheld the value of ruts. He was well aware how far a little intelligence can be made to go, unless it aspires to originality. Therefore he grumbled at the paradoxes which were somewhat of a novelty in his day, but which are outworn in ours, at the making over of virtue into vice, and of vice into something more inspiriting than virtue. 'We have palliations of Tiberius, eulogies on Henry the Eighth, devotional exercises to Cromwell, and fulsome adulations of the first Napoleon.'

That was a half-century ago. To-day, Tiberius is not so much out of favor as out of mind; Mr. Froude was the last man really interested in the moral status of Henry the Eighth; Mr. Wells has given us his word for it that Napoleon was a very ordinary person; and the English people have erected a statue of Cromwell close to the Houses of Parliament, by way of reminding him (in his appointed place) of the survival of representative government. The twentieth century does not lean to extravagant partialities. Its trend is to disparagement, to searchlights, to that lavish candor which no man's reputation can survive.

Digitized by Google

When Mr. Lytton Strachey reversed Mr. Stevenson's suggestion, and chose, as subject-matter of a book, four people of whom the world had heard little but good, who had been praised and reverenced beyond their deserts, but for whom he cherished a secret and cold hostility, he experimented successfully with the latent uncharitableness of men's minds. The brilliancy with which the four essays were written, the keenness of each assault, the charm and persuasiveness of the style, delighted even the uncensorious. The business of a biographer, said the author in a very engaging preface, is to maintain his own freedom of spirit, and lay bare the facts as he understands them, 'dispassionately, impartially, and without ulterior intentions.'

It sounds fair and square; but the fact remains that Mr. Strachey disliked Manning, despised Arnold, had little sympathy with Gordon, and no great fancy for Florence Nightingale. It must be remembered also that in three cases out of four he was dealing with persons of stubborn character and compelling will, as far removed from irreproachable excellence as from criminality. Of such, much criticism may be offered; but the only way to keep an open outlook is to ask, 'What was their life's job?' 'How well did they do it?' Men and women who have a pressing job on hand (Florence Nightingale was *all* job) cannot afford to cultivate the minor virtues. They move with an irresistible impulse to their goal. It is a curious fact that Mr. Strachey is never so illuminating as when he turns his back upon these forceful and disconcerting personages, and dallies with their more amenable contemporaries. What he writes about Gordon we should be glad to forget; what he writes about Sir Evelyn Baring and Lord Hartington we hope to remember while we live.

The popularity of *Eminent Victorians* inspired a host of followers. Critics began to look about them for other vulnerable reputations. Mr. J. A. Strahan, stepping back from Victoria to Anne, made the happy discovery that Addison had been systematically overpraised, and that every side of his character was open to assault. The result of this perspicuity is a damning denunciation of a man whom his contemporaries liked and esteemed, and concerning whom we have been content to take the word of those who knew him. He may have been, as Mr. Strahan asserts, a sot, a time-server, a toad-eater, a bad official, and a worse friend; but he managed to give a different impression. The just man falls seven times a day. Take sufficient account of all these falls, and he eclipses Lucifer. Addison's friends and neighbors found him a modest, honorable, sweet-tempered gentleman; and Steele, whom he had affronted, wrote these generous words: 'You can seldom get him to the tavern; but when once he is arrived to his pint, and begins to look about him, you admire a thousand things in him which before lay buried.'

This seems to me a singularly pleasant thing to say about anybody. Were I coveting praise, this is the form I'd like the praise to take.

The pressure of disparagement, which is one result of the cooling of our blood after the fever-heat of war, is lowering our enthusiasms, thinning our sympathies, and giving us nothing very dazzling in the way of enlightenment. Americans are less critical than Englishmen, who so value their birthright of free speech that censure of public men has become a habit, a game of hazard (pulling planks out of the ship of state), at which long practice has made them perfect. 'The editor of the *Morning Post*,' observes Mr. Maurice Hewlett wearily, 'begins his day by wondering whom he shall denounce'; and opposing

Digitized by Google

editors, as nimble at the fray, match outcry against outcry, and malice against malignity.

I doubt if any other than an Englishman could have written *The Mirrors of Downing Street*, and I am sure that, were an American able to write such a book (which is problematic), it would never occur to him to think of it, or to brag of it, as a duty. We grumble at our high officials, and expect our full share of impossibilities; but as task-masters we are not in it with the British. The difficulties surmounted by Mr. Lloyd George make the labors of Hercules look like a picnic; and to begrudge him an hour in his arm-chair, with his young daughter and a friend, seems to us like begrudging an engine-driver his sleep. There was a time when it was thought that an engine-driver could sleep less, and lamentable results ensued.

The public actions of public men are open to discussion; but Mr. Balfour's personal selfishness, his parsimony, his indifference to his domestics, are not matters of general moment. To gossip about these things is to gossip with tradesmen and servants. To deny to Lord Kitchener 'greatness of mind, greatness of character, and greatness of heart,' is harsh speaking of the dead; but to tell a gaping world that the woman 'whom he loved hungrily and doggedly, and to whom he proposed several times, could never bring herself to marry him,' is a personality which *Town Topics* would scorn. *The Mirrors of Downing Street* aspires to a moral purpose; but taste is the guardian of morality. Its delicate and severe dictates define the terms upon which we may improve the world at the expense of our neighbor's character.

The sneaking kindness recommended by Mr. Stevenson is much harder to come by than the 'raptures of moral indignation,' of which he heard more than he wanted, and which are reverberating through the world to-day. The pages of history are heavy with moral indignation. We teach it in our schools, and there are historians like Macaulay who thunder it rapturously, with never a moment of misgiving. But here and there, as we step apprehensively into historic by-paths, we are cheered by patches of sunshine, straight glimpses into truths which put a more credible, because a more merciful, construction upon men's actions, and lighten our burden of dispraise.

I have often wondered why, with Philippe de Commines as an avenue of approach, all writers except Scott should deal with Louis the Eleventh as with a moral monstrosity. Commines is no apologist. He has a natural desire to speak well of his master; but he reviews every side of Louis's character with dispassionate sincerity.

First, as a Catholic: 'The king was very liberal to the Church, and, in some respects, more so than was necessary, for he robbed the poor to give to the rich. But in this world no one can arrive at perfection.'

Next, as a husband: 'As for ladies, he never meddled with them in my time; for when I came to his court, he lost a son, at whose death he was greatly afflicted; and he made a vow to God in my presence never to have intercourse with any other woman than the queen. And though this was no more than he was bound to do by the canons of the Church, yet it was much that he should have such self-command as to persevere firmly in his resolution, considering that the queen (though an excellent lady in other respects) was not a princess in whom a man could take any great delight.'

Finally, as a ruler: 'The king was naturally kind and indulgent to persons of mean estate, and hostile to all great men who had no need of him. . . . But this I say boldly in his commendation,

Digitized by Google

that in my whole life I never knew any man so wise in his misfortunes.'

To be brave in misfortune is to be worthy of manhood; to be wise in misfortune is to conquer fate. We cannot easily or advantageously regard Louis with affection; but when Commines epitomizes history in an ejaculation, 'Our good master, Louis, whom God pardon!' it rests our souls to say, 'Amen!'

We cannot easily love Swift. The great 'professional hater' frightens us out of the timid regard which we should like — in honor of English literature — to cherish for his memory. But there is a noble sentence of Thackeray's which, if it does not soften our hearts, cannot fail to clarify our minds, to free us from the stupid, clogging misapprehension which we confuse with moral distaste. 'Through the storms and tempests of his [Swift's] furious mind the stars of religion and love break out in the blue, shining serenely, though hidden by the driving clouds and maddening hurricane of his life.' One clear and penetrating note ('Childe Roland to the Dark Tower came') is worth much careful auditing of accounts.

The picture of John Wilkes drawn by Sir George Otto Trevelyan in his *Early History of Charles James Fox*, and the picture of Aaron Burr drawn by Mr. Albert J. Beveridge in his *Life of John Marshall* are happy illustrations of unpopular subjects treated with illuminating kindness. Wilkes was a demagogue and Burr a trouble-maker (the terms are not necessarily synonymous), and neither of them is a man whose history is widely or accurately known. Both historians are swayed by their political passions. An historian without political passions is as rare as a wasp without a sting. To Trevelyan all Conservatives were in fault, and all Liberals in the right. Opposition to George the Third is the acid test he applies, to separate gold from dross. Mr. Beveridge regards the Federalists as the strength and the Republicans as the weakness of the young nation. Thomas Jefferson is *his* test, and a man hated and hounded by Jefferson necessarily wins his support.

Nevertheless, Wilkes and Burr are presented to us by their sympathizers in a cold north light, which softens and conceals nothing. Men of positive quality, they look best when clearly seen. 'Research and fact are ever in collision with fancy and legend,' observes Mr. Beveridge soberly; and it is to research and fact that he trusts, to rescue his accomplished filibuster from those unproved charges which live by virtue of their vagueness. American school histories, remembering the duty of moral indignation, have played havoc with the reputation of Aaron Burr; and American school-children, if they know him at all, know him as a duelist and a traitor. They are sure about the duel (it was one of the few facts firmly established in my own mind after a severe struggle with American history); but concerning the treason, they are at least as ill informed as their elders.

British children do better, perhaps, with John Wilkes. Little Londoners can gaze at the obelisk which commemorates his mayoralty, and think of him as a catless Whittington. The slogan 'Wilkes and Liberty' has an attractive ring to all who are not of Madame Roland's way of thinking. No man ever gave his partisans more to defend, or his opponents better chances to attack; and friends and foes rose repeatedly and fervently to their opportunities. A century later, Sir George Trevelyan, a friend well worth the having, reviews the case with wise sincerity, undaunted confidence, a careful art in the arrangement of his high lights, and a niceness of touch which wins half-way all readers who love the English language. Wilkes was as naturally and inevitably in debt

Digitized by Google

as was William Godwin, and Wilkes's debts were as naturally and inevitably paid by someone else as were Godwin's; but when Trevelyan alludes softly to his 'unambitious standard of solvency,' this sordid detail becomes unexpectedly pleasurable. So easily are transgressions pardoned, if they provoke the shadow of a smile.

Lord Rosebery's *Napoleon: the Last Phase* is a work nobly conceived and admirably executed; but its impelling motive is an austere resolve to make what amends a single Englishman can make for an ungenerous episode in English history. Its sympathy for a fallen foe bears no likeness to the sympathy which impelled Théodore de Banville, broken in health and hope by the siege of Paris, to write a lyric in memory of a young Prussian officer, a mere boy, who was found dead on the field, with a blood-stained volume of Pindar in his tunic. Lord Rosebery's book is written with a proud sadness, a stern indignation, eminently fitted to its subject; but he is not so much kind as just. Napoleon is too vast a figure to be approached with benevolence. It is true, as Mr. Wells asserts, that, had he been unselfish and conscientious, he would never have conquered Europe; but only Mr. Wells is prepared to say that a lack of these qualities won him renown. He shares the lack with Wilhelm the Second, who has had neither an Austerlitz nor a Waterloo.

II

There is a wide assortment of unpopular characters whose company it would be very instructive to keep. They belong to all ages, countries, and creeds. Spain alone offers us three splendid examples — the Duke of Alva, Cardinal Ximenez, and Philip the Second. Alva, like the Corsair, possessed one virtue, which was a more valuable virtue than the Corsair's, but brings him in less credit, because the object of his unswerving loyalty and devotion was not a guileless lady, but a sovereign, less popular, if possible, than himself. Cardinal Ximenez, soldier, statesman, scholar, priest, ascetic, author, and educator, was also Grand Inquisitor, and this fact alone seems to linger in the minds of men. That, for his day, he was a moderate, avails him little. That he made a point of protecting scholars and professors from the troublesome interference of the Inquisition ought to avail him a great deal. It might were it better known. There is a play of Sardou's in which he is represented as concentrating all the deadly powers of his office against the knowledge which he most esteemed. This is the way the drama educates.

And Philip? It would be a big piece of work to win for Philip even a partial recognition of his moderate merits. The hand of history has dealt heavily with him, and romance has preyed upon his vitals. In fact, history and romance are undistinguishable when they give free play to the moral indignation he inspires. It is not enough to accuse him of the murder of the son whom he hated (though not more heartily than George the Second hated the Prince of Wales): they would have us understand that he probably poisoned the brother whom he loved. 'Don John's ambitions had become troublesome, and he ceased to live at an opportune moment for Philip's peace of mind,' is the fashion in which Gayarré insinuates his suspicions; and Gayarré's narrative — very popular in my youth — was recommended to the American public by Bancroft, who, I am convinced, never read it. Had he penetrated to the eleventh page, where Philip is alluded to as the Christian Tiberius, or to the twentieth, where he is compared to an Indian idol, he would have known that, whatever the book might be, it was not history, and that,

Digitized by Google

as an historian, it ill became him to tell innocent Americans to read it.

But how were they to be better informed? Motley will not even allow that Philip's fanatical devotion to his church was a sincere devotion. He accuses him of hypocrisy, which is like accusing Cromwell of levity, or Burke of Jacobinism. Prescott has a fashion of turning the King's few amiabilities, as, for example, his tenderness for his third wife, Isabella of France, into a suggestion of reproach. 'Well would it be for the memory of Philip, could the historian find no heavier sin to lay to his charge than his treatment of Isabella.' Well would it be for all of us, could the recording angel lay no heavier charge to our account than our legitimate affections. The Prince of Orange, it is true, charged Philip with murdering both wife and son; but that was merely a political argument. He would as soon have charged him with the murder of his father, had the Emperor not been safely isolated at Yuste; and Philip, in return, banned the Prince of Orange — a brave and wise ruler — as 'an enemy of the human race.'

Twenty-four years ago, an Englishman who was by nature distrustful of popular verdicts, and who had made careful studies of certain epochs of Spanish history, ventured to paint Philip in fresh colors. Mr. Martin Hume's monograph shows us a cultivated gentleman, with a correct taste in architecture and art, sober, abstemious, kind to petitioners, loyal and affectionate to his friends, generous to his soldiers and sailors — a man beloved by his own household, and reverenced by his subjects, to whom he brought nothing but misfortune. The book makes melancholy reading because Philip's political sins were also political blunders, his mad intolerance was a distortion, rather than a rejection, of conscience, and his inconceivable rigidity left him helpless to face the essential readjustments of life. 'I could not do otherwise than I have done,' he said with piercing sincerity, 'though the world should fall in ruins around me.'

Now what befell Mr. Hume, who wrote history in this fashion, with no more liking for Philip than for Elizabeth or the Prince of Orange, but with a natural desire to get within the purlieus of truth? Certain empty honors were conferred upon him: a degree from Cambridge, membership in a few societies, the privilege of having some letters printed after his name. But the University of Glasgow and the University of Liverpool stoutly refused to give him the chairs of history and Spanish. He might know more than most men on these subjects, but they did not want their students exposed to new impressions. The good old way for them. Mr. Hume, being a reader, may have recalled in bitterness of spirit the words of the acute and unemotional Sully, who had scant regard for Catholicism (though the Huguenots tried him sorely), and none at all for Spain; but who said, in his balanced, impersonal way, that Philip's finer qualities, his patience, piety, fortitude, and single-mindedness, were all alike 'lost on the vulgar.'

Lucrezia Borgia is less available for our purpose, because the imaginary Lucrezia, though not precisely beloved, is more popular in her way than the real Lucrezia could ever hope to be. 'In the matter of pleasantness,' says Lucian, 'truth is far surpassed by falsehood'; and never has it been more agreeably overshadowed than in this fragment of Italian history. We really could not bear to lose the Lucrezia of romance. She has done fatigue duty along every line of iniquity. She has specialized in all of the seven deadly sins. On Rossetti's canvas, in Donizetti's opera, in Victor Hugo's play, in countless poems and stories and novels, she has erred

Digitized by Google

exhaustively for our entertainment. The idea of an attractive young woman poisoning her supper guests is one which the world will not lightly let go.

And what is offered in return? Only the dull statements of people who chanced to know the lady, and who considered her a model wife and duchess, a little over-anxious about the education of her numerous children, but kind to the poor, generous to artists, and pitiful to Jews. 'She is graceful, modest, lovable, decorous, and devout,' wrote Johannes Lucas from Rome to Ercole, the old Duke of Ferrara. 'She is beautiful and good, gentle and amiable,' echoed the Chevalier Bayard years later. Were we less avid for thrills, we might like to think of this young creature, snatched at twenty-one from the maelstrom of Rome, where she had been a pawn in the game of politics, and placed in a secure and splendid home. The Lucrezia of romance would have found the court of Ferrara intolerably dull. The Lucrezia of history took to dullness as a duck to water. She was a sensible, rather than a brilliant woman, fully alive to the duties and dignities of her position, and well aware that respectability is a strong card to play in a vastly disreputable world.

There was a time when Robespierre and Marat made a high bid for unpopularity. Even those who clearly understood the rehabilitation of man in the French Revolution found little to say for its chosen instruments, whose purposes were high, but whose methods were open to reproach. Of late, however, a certain weariness has been observable in men's minds when these reformers are in question, a reluctance to expand with any emotion where they are concerned. M. Lauzanne is, indeed, by way of thinking that the elemental Clemenceau closely resembles the elemental Robespierre; but this is not a serious valuation; it is letting picturesqueness run away with reason — a habit incidental to editorship.

The thoroughly modern point of view is that Robespierre and Marat were ineffective — not without ability in their respective lines, but unfitted for the parts they played. Marat's turn of mind was scientific (our own Benjamin Franklin found him full of promise). Robespierre's turn of mind was legal; he would have made an acute and successful lawyer. The Revolution came along and ruined both these lives, for which we are expected to be sorry. M. Lauzanne does not go so far as to say that the great war ruined Clemenceau's life. The 'Tiger' was seventy-three when the Germans marched into Belgium. Had he been content to spend all his years teaching in a girls' school, he might (though I am none too sure of it) have been a gentler and a better man. But France was surely worth the price he paid. A lifeboat is not expected to have the graceful lines of a gondola.

'Almost everybody,' says Stevenson, 'can understand and sympathize with an admiral, or a prize-fighter'; which genial sentiment is less contagious now than when it was uttered, thirty years ago. A new type of admiral has presented itself to the troubled consciousness of men, a type unknown to Nelson, unsuspected by Farragut, unsung by Newbolt. In robbing the word of its ancient glory, Tirpitz has robbed us of an emotion we can ill afford to lose. 'The traditions of sailors,' says Mr. Shane Leslie, 'have been untouched by the lowering of ideals which has invaded every other class and profession.' The truth of his words was brought home to readers by the behavior of the British merchant marine, peaceful, poorly paid men, who in the years of peril went out unflinchingly, and as a matter of course, to meet 'their duty and their death.' Many and varied are the transgressions

Digitized by Google

of seafaring men; but we have hitherto been able to believe them sound in their nobler parts. We should like to cherish this simple faith, and, though alienated from prize-fighters by the narrowness of our civic and social code, to retain our sympathy for admirals. It cannot be that their fair fame will be forever smirched by the tactics of a man who ruined the government he served.

The function of criticism is presumably to clear our mental horizon, to get us within close range of the criticized. It recognizes moral as well as intellectual issues; but it differentiates them. When Emerson said, 'Goethe can never be dear to men. His is not even the devotion to pure truth, but to truth for the sake of culture,' he implied that truth, besides being a better thing than culture, was also a more lovable thing, which is not the case. It takes temerity to love Goethe; but there are always men—young, keen, speculative, beauty-loving men, — to whom he is inexpressibly dear because of the vistas he opens, the thoughts he releases, the 'inward freedom' which is all he claimed to give. It takes no less temerity to love Emerson, and he meant that it should be so, that we should climb high to reach him. He is not lovable as Lamb is lovable, and he would not have wanted to be. A man who all his life repelled unwelcome intimacies had no desire to surrender his memory to the affection of every idle reader.

It is such a sure thing to appeal from intelligence to conscience, from the trouble involved in understanding to the ease with which judgment is passed, that critics may be pardoned their frequent transcursions. Yet problems of conduct are just as puzzling as problems of intellect. That is why Mr. Stevenson pronounced a sneaking kindness to be 'instructive.' He offered it as a road to knowledge rather than as a means of enjoyment. Not that he was unaware of the pleasures which follow in its wake. He knew the world up and down well enough to be thankful that he had never lost his taste for bad company.

SOLILOQUY FOR A THIRD ACT

BY CHRISTOPHER MORLEY

WHAT is this sullen curious interval
Between the happy Thought, the languid Act?
What is this dull paralysis of Will
That lets the fatal days drift by like dreams?
Of the mind's dozing splendors what remains?
What is this *Now* I utter to you here?

This Now, for great men dead, is golden Future;
For happier souls to come, conjectured Past.

Digitized by Google

Men love and praise the Past — the only thing
In all the great commodity of life
That grows and grows, shining and heaping up
And endlessly compounds beneath their hands:
Richer we are in Time with every hour,
But in nought else. — The Past! I love the Past —
Stand off, O Future, keep away from me!

Yet some there are, great thoughtless active souls,
Can use the volvant circle of the year
Like a child's hoop, and flog it gleefully
Along the downward slope of busy days;
But some, less lucky.
What wretch invented Time and calendars
To torture his weak wits, to probe himself
As a man tongues a tender concave tooth?
See, all men bear this secret cicatrix,
This navel mark where we were ligatured
To great Eternity; and so they have
This knot of Time-sense in their angry hearts.

So must I die, and pass to Timeless nothing?
It will not, shall not, cannot, must not be!
I'll print such absolute identity
Upon these troubled words, that finding them
In some old broken book (long, long away),
The startled reader cries, Here was a Voice
That had a meaning, and outrode the years!

Digitized by Google

SEQUELS

BY WILLIAM BEEBE

I

TROPICAL midges of sorts live less than a day — sequoias have felt their sap quicken with the warmth of three thousand springs. Somewhere between these extremes, we open our eyes, look about us for a time, and close them again. Modern political geography and shift of government give us Methusalistic feelings; but a glance at rocks or stars sends us shuddering among the other motes, which glisten for a moment in the sunlight and then vanish.

We who strive for a little insight into evolution, and the meaning of things as they are, forever long for a glimpse of things as they were. Here at my British Guiana laboratory I wonder what the land was like before the dense mat of vegetation covered every rock and grain of sand; or how the rivers looked when first their waters trickled to the sea.

All our stories are of the middles of things — without beginning or end; we scientists are plunged suddenly upon a cosmos in the full uproar of æons of precedent, unable to look ahead, while to look backward we must look down.

Exactly a year ago I spent two hours in a clearing in the jungle back of Kartabo laboratory, and let my eyes and ears have full swing.[1] Now, in August of the succeeding year, I came again to this clearing, and found it no more a clearing. Indeed, so changed was it, that for weeks I had passed close by without a thought of the jungle meadow of the previous year; and now what finally turned me aside from my usual trail was a sound. Twelve months ago I wrote: 'From the monotone of underworld sounds a strange little rasping detached itself, a reiterated, subdued scraping or picking. It carried my mind instantly to the throbbing theme of the Nibelungs, onomatopoetic of the little hammers forever busy at their underground work. I circled a small bush at my side, and found that the sound came from one of the branches near the top; so with my glasses I began a systematic search.' This was as far as I ever got; for a flock of parrakeets exploded close at hand and blew the lesser sound out of mind. If I had stopped to guess, I should probably have considered the author a longicorn beetle or some fiddling orthopter.

Now, a year later, I suddenly stopped twenty yards away; for at the end of the silvery cadence of a wood-hewer, I heard the low, measured, toneless rhythm which instantly revived in my mind every detail of the clearing. I was headed toward a distant palm-frond, beneath whose tip was a nest of Rufous Hermits; for I wished to see the two atoms of hummingbirds at the moment when they rolled from their *petit-pois* egg-shells. I gave this up for the day, and turned up the hill, where, fifty feet away, were the stump and bush near which I had sat and watched. Three times I went past the place before I could be certain; and even at the last I

[1] See 'A Jungle Clearing,' in the *Atlantic* for January, 1920.

Digitized by Google

identified it only by the relative position of the giant tauroneero tree, in which I had shot many cotingas. The stump was there, a bit lower and more worn at the crevices, leaking sawdust like an over-loved doll; but the low shrub had become a tall sapling, the weeds — vervain, boneset, velvet-leaf — all had been topped and killed off by dense-foliaged bushes and shrubs, which a year before had not raised a leaf above the meadow-level. The old vistas were gone, the landscape had closed in, the wilderness was shutting down. Nature herself was 'letting in the jungle.' I felt like Rip Van Winkle, or even more alien, as if the passing of time had been accelerated and my longed-for leap had been accomplished, beyond the usual ken of mankind's earthly lease of senses.

All these astounding changes had come to pass through the unceasing heat and moisture of a tropical year; and under deliberate scientific calculation there was nothing unusual in the alteration. I remembered the remarkable growth of one of the laboratory bamboo shoots during the rainy season — twelve and a half feet in sixteen days; but that was a single stem, like a blade of grass, whereas here the whole landscape was altered — new birds, new insects, branches, foliage, flowers, where, twelve short months past, was open sky above low weeds.

In the hollow root on the beach, my band of crane-flies had danced for a thousand hours; but here was a sound which had apparently never ceased for more than a year — perhaps five thousand hours of daylight. It was a low, penetrating, abruptly reiterated beat, occurring about once every second and a half, and distinctly audible a hundred feet away. The 'low bush,' from which it proceeded last year, was now a respectable sapling, and the source far out of reach overhead. I discovered a roundish mass among the leaves; and the first stroke of the axe sent the rhythm up to once a second, but did not alter the *timbre*. A few blows, and the small trunk gave way, and I fled for my life. But there was no angry buzzing, and I came close. After a cessation of ten or fifteen seconds the sound began again, weaker but steady. The foliage was alive with small Axteca ants; but these were tenants of several small nests near by and at the catastrophe overran everything.

The largest structure was the smooth carton nest of a wasp — a beautiful species, pale yellowish-red with wine-colored wings. Only once did an individual make an attempt to sting, and, even when my head was within six inches, the wasps rested quietly on the broken combs. By careful watching, I observed that many of the insects jerked the abdomen sharply downward, hitting the comb, or shell, of smooth paper a forceful blow, and producing a very distinct noise. I could not at first see the mass of wasps that were giving forth the major rhythm, as they were hidden deep in the nest, but the fifty-odd wasps in sight kept perfect time; or occasionally an individual skipped one or two beats, coming in regularly on every alternate or every third beat. Where they were two or three deep, the uppermost wasps struck the insects below them with their abdomens in perfect rhythm with the next beat. For half an hour the sound continued, then died down, and was not heard again. The wasps dispersed during the night, and the nest was deserted.

It reminded me of the telegraphing ants, which I have often heard in Borneo — a remarkable sweeping roll, caused by the host of insects striking the leaves with their heads, and produced only when they are disturbed. It appeared to be of the nature of a warning signal, giving me opportunity to back away from the stinging legions

Digitized by Google

that filled the thicket against which I pushed.

The rhythm of these wasps was very different. They were peaceable, not even resenting the devastation of their home; but always and always must the inexplicable beat, beat, beat be kept up, serving some purpose quite hidden from me. During succeeding months I found two more nests, with similar habits of sound-vibrations that led to their discovery. From one small nest, which fairly shook with the strength of their beats, I extracted a single wasp and placed him in a glass-topped metal box. For three minutes he kept up the rhythmic beat. Then I began a more rapid tattoo on the bottom of the box, and the changed tempo confused him, so that he stopped at once, and would not tap again.

A few little Mazaruni daisies lived on here and there, blossoming bravely, trying to believe that the shade was lessening and not daily becoming more dense. But their leaves were losing heart and paling in the scant light. Another six months, and dead leaves and moss would obliterate them, and the zone of brilliant flowers and gorgeous butterflies and birds would shift many feet into the air, with the tops of the trees as a new level.

As long as I remained by my stump, my visitors were of the jungle. A yellow-bellied trogon came quite close, and sat, as trogons do, very straight and stiff, like a poorly mounted bird, watching passing flycatchers and me and the glimpses of sky. At first he rolled his little cuckoo-like notes, and his brown mate swooped up, saw me, shifted a few feet farther off, and perched, full of curiosity, craning her neck and looking first with one eye, then the other. Now the male began a content song. With all possible variations of his few and simple tones, on a low and very sweet timbre, he belied his oscine perch in the tree of bird-life and sang to himself. Now and then he was drowned out by the shrilling of cicadas; but it was a delightful serenade, and he seemed to enjoy it as much as I did. A few days before, I had made a careful study of the syrinx of this bird, whom we may call, rather euphoniously, *Trogonurus curucui*, and had been struck by the simplicity of both muscles and bones. Now, he having summoned his mate in regular accents, there followed this unexpected whisper song. It recalled similar melodies sung by pheasants and Himalayan partridges, usually after they had gone to roost.

Once the female swooped after an insect; and in the midst of one of the sweetest passages of the male trogon, a green grasshopper shifted his position. He was only two inches away from the singer, and all this time had been hidden by his chlorophyll-hued veil. And now the trogon fairly fell off the branch, seizing the insect almost before the tone died away. Swallowing it with considerable difficulty, the harmony was taken up again, a bit throaty for a few notes. Then the pair talked together in usual trogon fashion, and the sudden shadow of a passing vulture drew forth discordant cat-calls, as both birds dashed from sight, to avoid the fancied hawk.

A few minutes later the vocal seal of the jungle was uttered by a quadrille bird. When the notes of this wren are heard, I can never imagine open blazing sunshine, or unobstructed blue sky. Like the call of the wood pewee, the wren's radiates coolness and shadowy quiet. No matter how tropic or breathless the jungle, when the flute-like notes arise, they bring a feeling of freshness, they start up a mental breeze, which cools one's thoughts; and although there may be no water for miles, yet we can fairly hear the drip of cool drops falling from thick moss to pools below. First

Digitized by Google

an octave of two notes of purest silver; then a varying strain of eight or ten notes, so sweet and powerful, so individual and meaningful, that it might stand for some wonderful *motif* in a great opera. I shut my eyes, and I was deaf to all other sounds while the wren sang. And as it dwelt on the last note of its phrase, a cicada took it up on the exact tone, and blended the two final notes into a slow vibration, beginning gently, and rising with the crescendo of which only an insect, and especially a cicada, is master.

Here was the eternal, hypnotic tom-tom rhythm of the East, grafted upon supreme Western opera. For a time my changed clearing became merely a sounding-box for the most thrilling of jungle songs. I called the wren as well as I could, and he came nearer and nearer. The music rang out only a few yards away. Then he became suspicious, and after that each phrase was prefaced by typical wren-scolding. He could not help but voice his emotions, and the harsh notes told plainly what he thought of my poor imitation. Then another feeling would dominate, and out of the maelstrom of harshness, of tumbled, volcanic vocalization, would rise the pure silver stream of single notes.

III

The wren slipped away through the masses of fragrant Davilla blossoms, but his songs remained and are with me to this moment. And now I leaned back, lost my balance, and grasping the old stump for support, loosened a big piece of soft, mealy wood. In the hollow beneath, I saw a rainbow in the heart of the dead tree.

This rainbow was caused by a bug; and when we stop to think of it, we realize how little there is in a name. For when we say bug, — or, for that matter, bogy or bug-bear, — we are garbling the sound which our very, very forefathers uttered when they saw a spectre or hobgoblin. They called it *bugge*, or even *bug;* but then, they were more afraid of spectres in those days than we are, who imprison will-o'-the-wisps in Very lights, and rub fox-fire on our watch-faces. At any rate, here was a bug who seemed to ill-deserve his name; although, if the Nibelungs could fashion the Rheingold, why could not a bug conceive a rainbow?

Whenever a human, and especially a house-human, thinks of bugs, she thinks unpleasantly and in superlatives. And it chances that evolution, or natural selection, or life's mechanism, or fate, or a creator, has wrought them into form and function also in superlatives. Cicadas are supreme in longevity and noise: one of our northern species sucks in silent darkness for seventeen years, and then, for a single summer, breaks all American long-distance records for insect's voices. To another group, known as Fulgorids, gigantic heads and streamers of wax have been allotted. Those possessing the former rejoice in the name of lantern flies, but they are at present unfaithful-vestal bugs; indeed, it is extremely doubtful if their wicks were ever trimmed or lighted. To see a big wax-bug flying with trailing ribbons slowly from tree to tree in the jungle is to recall the streaming trains of a flock of peacocks on the wing.

The Membracids most of all deserve the name of *bugges*, for no elf or hobgoblin was ever more bizarre. Their legs and heads and bodies are small and aphid-like; but aloft there spring minarets and handles and towers and thorns and groups of hairy balls, out of all reason and sense. Only Stegosaurus and Triceratops bear comparison. Another group of five-sided bugs are the skunks and civet-cats among insects, guarding themselves from danger by an aura of obnoxious distillation.

Digitized by Google

Not the least strange of all this assemblage is the author of our rainbow in the stump. My awkwardness had broken into a hollow, which opened to the light on the other side of the rotten bole. A vine had tendriled its way into the crevice, where the little weaver of rainbows had found board and lodging. We may call him toad-hopper or spittle-bug — or, as Fabre says, 'Contentons-nous de Cicadelle, qui respecte le tympan.' Like all its kindred, the bubble-bug finds Nirvana in a sappy green stem. It has neither strong flight nor sticky wax, thorny armature nor gas-barrage, so it proceeds to weave an armor of bubbles, a cuirass of liquid film. This, in brief, was the rainbow which caught my eye when I broke open the stump. Up to that moment no rainbow had existed — only a little light sifting through from the vine-clad side. But now a ray of sun shattered itself on the pile of bubbles, and sprayed out into a curved glory.

Bubble-bugs blow their froth only when immature, and their bodies are a distillery, or home-brew, of sorts. No matter what the color, or viscosity, or chemical properties of sap, regardless of whether it flows in liana, shrub, or vine, the bug's artesian product is clear, tasteless, and wholly without the possibility of being blown into bubbles. When a large drop has collected, the tip of the abdomen encloses a retort of air, inserts this in the drop, and forces it out. In some way an imponderable amount of oil or dissolved wax is extruded and mixed with the drop — an invisible shellac, which toughens the bubble and gives it an astounding glutinous endurance. As long as the abdominal air-pump can be extended into the atmosphere, so long does the pile of bubbles grow until the insect is deep buried, and to penetrate this is as unpleasant an achievement for small marauders as to force a cobweb entanglement. I have draped a big pile of bubbles around the beak of an insect-eating bird, and watched it shake its head and wipe its beak in evident disgust at the clinging oily films. In the north we have the bits of fine white foam which we characteristically call frog-spittle; but these tropic relatives have bigger bellows, and their covering is like the interfering mass of film that emerges from the soap-bubble bowl when a pipe is thrust beneath the surface and that delicious gurgling sound is produced.

The most marvelous part of the whole thing is that the undistilled well that the bubble-bug taps would often overwhelm it in an instant, either by the burning acidity of its composition, or by the rubber coating of death into which it hardens in the air. Yet from this current of lava or vitriol our bug does three wonderful things: it distills sweet water for its present protective cell of bubbles; it draws purest nourishment for continual energy to run its bellows and pump; and simultaneously it fills its blood and tissues with a pungent flavor, which in the future will be a safeguard against the attacks of birds and lizards. Little by little its wings swell to full spread and strength; muscles are fashioned in its hind-legs, which, in time, will shoot it through great distances of space; and pigment of the most brilliant yellow and black forms on its wing-covers. When, at last, it shuts down its little still and creeps forth through the filmy veil, it is immature no longer, but a brilliant frog-hopper, sitting on the most conspicuous leaves, trusting, by pigmental warning, to advertise its inedibility, and watchful for a mate, so that the future may hold no dearth of bubble-bugs.

IV

On my first tramp each season in the tropical jungle, I see the legionary army

Digitized by Google

ants hastening on their way to battle, and the leaf-cutters plodding along, with chlorophyll hods over their shoulders, exactly as they did last year, and the year preceding, and probably a hundred thousand years before that. The Colony Egos of army and leaf-cutters may quite reasonably be classified, at least according to kingdom. The former, with carnivorous, voracious, nervous, vitally active members, seems an intangible, animal-like organism; while the stolid, unemotional, weather-swung Attas resemble the flowing sap of the food on which they subsist — vegetable.

Yet, whatever the simile, in the case of both of these colonies of ants, the net of unconscious precedent is too closely drawn, the mesh of instinct is too fine, to hope for any initiative. This was manifested by the most significant and spectacular occurrence I have ever observed in the world of insects. Some two years or more ago I studied, and reported upon, a nest of Ecitons, or Army Ants.[1] Eighteen months later, apparently the same army appeared and made a similar nest of their own bodies, in the identical spot above the door of the out-house, where I had found them before. Again we had to break up the temporary resting-place of these nomads, and killed about three quarters of the colony with various deadly chemicals.

In spite of the tremendous slaughter, the Ecitons, in late afternoon, raided a small colony of Wasps-of-the-Painted-Nest. These little chaps construct a round, sub-leaf carton-home, as large as a golf-ball, which carries out all the requirements of counter-shading and ruptive markings. The flattened, shadowed under-surface was white, and most of the sloping walls dark brown, down which extended eight white lines, following the veins of the leaf overhead. The side close to the stem of the leaf, and consequently always in deep shadow, was pure white. The eaves, catching high lights, were black.

All this marvelous merging with leaf-tones went for naught when once an advance Eciton scout located the nest. As the deadly mob approached, the wasplets themselves seemed to realize the futility of offering battle, and the entire colony of forty-four gathered in a forlorn group on a neighboring leaf, while their little castle was rifled — larvæ and pupæ torn from their cells, and rushed down the stems to the chaos that was raging in the Ecitons' own home. The wasps could guard against optical discovery, but the blind Army Ants had senses which transcended vision, if not even scent.

Late that night, our lanterns showed the remnants of the Eciton army wandering aimlessly about, making near approach impossible, but apparently lacking any definite concerted action.

At six o'clock the next morning I was starting for a swim, when, at the foot of the laboratory steps, I saw a swiftly moving, broad line of Army Ants on safari, passing through the compound to the beach. I traced them back under the servants' quarters, through two clumps of bamboos, to the out-house. Later, I followed along the column down to the river sand, through a dense mass of underbrush, through a hollow log, up the bank, back through light jungle — to the out-house again; and on a large fallen log, a few feet beyond the spot where their nest had been, the ends of the circle *actually came together*. It was the most astonishing thing, and I had to verify it again and again before I could believe the evidence of my eyes. It was a strong column, six lines wide in many places, and the ants fully believed that they were on their way to a new home; for most were carrying eggs or larvæ, although many had food, including the

[1] See the *Atlantic* for October, 1919.

Digitized by Google

larvæ of the Painted-Nest wasplets. For an hour at noon, during heavy rain, the column weakened and almost disappeared; but when the sun returned, the lines rejoined, and the revolution of the vicious circle continued.

There were several places which made excellent points of observation, and here we watched and marveled. Careful measurement of the great circle showed a circumference of twelve hundred feet. We timed the laden Ecitons, and found that they averaged two to two and three quarters inches a second. So a given individual would complete the round in about two hours and a half. Many guests were plodding along with the ants — mostly staphylinids, of which we secured five species: a brown Histerid beetle, a tiny Chalcid, and several Phorid flies, one of which was winged.

The fat Histerid beetle was most amusing, getting out of breath every few feet, and abruptly stopping to rest, turning around in its tracks, standing almost on its head, and allowing the swarm of ants to run up over it and jump off. Then on it would go again, keeping up the terrific speed of two and a half inches a second, for another yard. Its color was identical with the Ecitons' armor, and when it folded up, nothing could harm it. Once a worker stopped and antennæd it suspiciously; but aside from this, it was accepted as one of the line of marchers.

All the afternoon the insane circle revolved; at midnight, the hosts were still moving; the second morning many had weakened and dropped their burdens and the general pace had very appreciably slackened. But still the blind grip of instinct held them. On, on, on they must go! Always before in their nomadic life there had been a goal — a sanctuary of hollow tree, snug heart of bamboos; surely this terrible grind must end somehow. In this crisis, even the Spirit of the Army was helpless. Along the normal paths of Eciton life he could inspire endless enthusiasm, illimitable energy; but here his material units were bound upon the wheel of their perfection of instinct. Through sun and cloud, day and night, hour after hour, there was found no Eciton with individual initiative enough to turn aside an ant's breadth from the circle that he had traversed perhaps fifteen times.

Fewer and fewer now came along the well-worn path; burdens littered the line of march, like the arms and accoutrements thrown down by a retreating army. At last, a scanty single line struggled past — tired, hopeless, bewildered, idiotic, and thoughtless to the last. Then some half-dead Eciton straggled from the circle along the beach, and threw the line behind him into confusion. The desperation of total exhaustion had accomplished what necessity and opportunity and normal life could not. Several others followed his scent instead of that leading back toward the out-house; and as an amœba gradually flows into one of its own pseudopodia, so the forlorn hope of the great Eciton army passed slowly down the beach and on into the jungle. Would they die singly and in bewildered groups, or would the remnant draw together, and, again guided by the supermind of its Mentor, lay the foundation of another army, and again come to nest in my out-house?

Thus was the ending still unfinished, the finale buried in the future — and in this we find the fascination of Nature and of Science. Who can be bored for a moment in the short existence vouchsafed us here, with dramatic beginnings barely hidden in the dust, with the excitement of every moment of the present, and with all of cosmic possibility lying just concealed in the future, whether of Betelgeuse, of Amœba, or — of ourselves? *Vogue la galère!*

Digitized by Google

ning on their way to battle,
leaf-cutters plodding along,
ophyll hods over their shoul-
tly as they did last year, and
preceding, and probably a
housand years before that.
y *Egos* of army and leaf-cut-
quite reasonably be classified,
ccording to kingdom. The
ith carnivorous, voracious,
itally active members, seems
ible, animal-like organism;
tolid, unemotional, weather-
as resemble the flowing sap
d on which they subsist —

atever the simile, in the case
these colonies of ants, the net
ious precedent is too closely
mesh of instinct is too fine,
or any initiative. This was
by the most significant and
r occurrence I have ever ob-
ne world of insects. Some two
ro ago I studied, and reported
st of Ecitons, or Army Ants.[1]
months later, apparently the
appeared and made a sim-
f their own bodies, in the
ot above the door of the out-
re I had found them before.
ad to break up the tempo-
g-place of these nomads, and
t three quarters of the colony
is deadly chemicals.
of the tremendous slaughter,
s, in late afternoon, raided
lony of Wasps-of-the-Paint-
These little chaps construct
ib-leaf carton-home, as large
all, which carries out all the
its of counter-shading and
rkings. The flattened, shad-
er-surface was white, and
e sloping walls dark brown,
h extended eight white lines,
he veins of the leaf overhead.
lose to the stem of the leaf.

[1] *Atlantic* for October, 1919.

and consequently
ow, was [illegible] where
ing high lights.

All this ma
leaf-tones went
an advance F
nest. As the
the wasplets
realize the fi
and the ent
gathered in a
boring leaf, s
rifled — larv
their cells, a
to the cha
Ecitons' ov
guard aga
the blind .
transcend

Late th
the remn
dering a
approacl
lacking

At si
startin
of the
movin
safari,
to the
der th
clum
Late
dow
mas
log
jun
on
yo
th
ge
th
a
(
(

Digitized by Google

year. Not a bad bunch, not half a bad bunch, mused their teacher, while waiting for the meeting to come fully to order and life.

'To-night we 'll sing no hymns. I want to talk. What I say Suzuki here will translate. All right?'

Suzuki blushed and everybody laughed, Addison loudest. Then, remembering his solemn duty, he resolutely banished his smile and summoned again the difficult frown.

'Fellows,' he began threateningly (his manner had been much admired in similar meetings at home), and thumping his closed hymn-book, 'awfully sorry, and all that, but you and I have got to go to the mat now on at least two counts.'

He glared round on all present, and the boys, who knew him in private life as a being not wholly impossible to propitiate, and also as a corking good baseball pitcher, registered appropriate and sympathetic solemnity, without understanding one word. *Sotto voce:* 'Shoot 'em that, Suzuki!'

Suzuki, politely, deprecatingly, in Japanese: 'Honorable everyone! Pardon me, but the Sensei says we're going to the jiu-jitsu room to meet two counts.'

Interested surprise manifested everywhere, but gravity still maintained, since the occasion and the Sensei's face seemed to demand it.

'Number one,' holding up a long forefinger, 'hereafter we've got to cut out all late hours.'

Suzuki, hesitating: 'The first count says we must operate on ourselves. That is' — uncertainly — 'so the Sensei says.'

Puzzlement on part of audience; but foreigners *are* funny creatures anyhow — even Sensei.

Addison, warming up: 'That's right, that's right, Suzuki; give it to 'em straight, give it to 'em straight!'

Then, fixing a baleful eye on trembling twelve-year-old Eisan Koyama, he shouted in a voice of thunder, —

'MEN — '

'Males,' courteously murmured the faithful Suzuki.

'MEN, things can't go on here as they are at present. The Antis in school already say you can tell a Christian dormitory boy by his sleepy face!'

Suzuki: 'Males, in school (in America?) there are kind aunts who give a present to every Christian boy who has a sleepy face.' Then, hurriedly, in the same tone of voice, with unnecessary anxiety lest Addison discover any linguistic blunder: 'So he says, but perhaps I'm not getting all this.'

Addison (in his best manner, with infinite and scathing contempt): 'Such a condition, men, turns your stomach and fills you with disgust.'

Suzuki: 'Such a condition, males, turns your stomach over and fills it with dust.'

Addison held up another accusing finger beside the first: 'Count two.'

'The second count.'

(Recrudescence of interest on the part of the audience.)

'This count is of even greater importance.'

'This count is of even higher rank.'

'MEN, we are losing our vitality in getting across our propaganda.'

Here, Suzuki was forced into surrender and begged for further enlightenment. A conference ensued, and he interpreted: —

'In spreading our propaganda we are losing our lives.'

(Visible consternation on every face except that of Inouye, who was by this time asleep.)

'Pep, *pep*, PEP! We must show more pep. To win out we've got to get a wiggle on. (No, Suzuki, afraid you can't make that one — get a *move* on, I mean.) In a school of eight hundred

Digitized by Google

boys we ought to rope in more than fifty!' And so on, the translation of his remarks illustrating anew what always happens when enterprising young Westerners try to hustle the East.

He drew for them, he thought, a picture of what the dormitory was and of what it ought to be. He told them, in racy Yankee, what, if they worked, it surely would become. He closed with a forceful appeal, begging them thenceforth to toil like yeomen (though that was not his word), like fishers tugging at the nets, and con*strain*, *con*strain members to come in.

It was a splendid effort. But perhaps, after all, it was just as well that the boys did n't understand it quite — especially the forceful example at the end; because, except for Fujimura San, all of them hailed from the mountainous country of Tamba, in whose rapid rivers custom dictated that *gentlemen* should not fish at all, but lie in canopied boats at pillowed ease and merely watch other men wield the nets.

'Now, fellows,' he said in his ordinary voice, taking the silence for approbation and permanently dropping his frown, 'now, fellows, as a sign of our turning over a new leaf, I suggest that we all go to the Heian Church to-night for the midweek service. We have n't been there for months. It'll mean a fine hike, some good words from Mr. Nishio, and an early snooze.'

What Suzuki made of this, I leave you to puzzle out. But they were going somewhere, that they knew, and they guessed it was to church.

'Banzai!' shouted Jusan wildly, 'Banzai! We're going to church to meet some counts!' And everyone — Inouye San being roused — agreed that it was a far more suitable place than the jiu-jitsu room for receiving two such prominent persons.

To one who knew his Dickens — and who in this dark world and wide does not! — the Reverend Mr. Nishio at once recalled and expressed three illustrious characters: he was as good as Pickwick, as unctuous as Pecksniff, as hopeful as Micawber — and stouter than any of the three. And so, figuratively, if not literally, — being a Japanese, — he welcomed Addison and his nimble flock with open arms. He smiled, and winked his Jusan-like eyes, and rubbed his dimpled hands. Indeed, there was much bowing and intaking of breath on both sides.

They were just in time, it seemed; for, as they entered the main room of the church, a young lady in spectacles and dun-colored kimono had just begun an attack on an asthmatic organ. They sat in a row on the front bench, and even in their wriggling silence lent the otherwise middle-aged and demure congregation the vividness of youth. They made even the minister and organist feel their grateful aura, and turned what had begun as a very drowsy prayer-meeting into something akin to life.

'He is taking Sensei's text,' whispered Suzuki to Addison, when Mr. Nishio, rubbing his hands, and winking and smiling more heartily than ever, began his little talk. And, as it went on, though Addison could grasp scarcely a word, in the voice, the gestures, the rising passion of the preacher, most of all in the open-eyed attention of all the boys, including even sleepy Inouye, he realized what was being said.

The old, old story of Galilee — he breathed it all. The blueness of the cloudless sky and untroubled turquoise water he felt, and saw the two rough fishermen with their ragged nets, listening rapt to the words of the tall, white-robed One whose sandals made purer the stainless sand: —

> Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.
>
> And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after

Digitized by Google

me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.

Now, as everyone in Kyōto knows, at the junction of Ōmiya and Shijo streets, where one takes the car for cherry-famed Arashiyama, there is a little store which, from the diversity and seasonableness of its wares, merits the name, Jack-of-all-Shops. In winter, it sells fried sweet potatoes to children (who gobble them hot out of the sack); in summer, vegetables; in fall, persimmons. At the time I am speaking of — in spring — its specialty was goldfish.

Addison and his troop, returning from church about nine o'clock, shot round the corner upon it, in full cry, so to speak.

They stopped — as who would n't? Goldfish, goldfish everywhere! In crystal globes on stands, on shelves, globes within globes; in pails, in tubs, in artificial ponds spanned by tiny bridges; of all bulks, from minnows to full-sized carp, the magic creatures swam, twinkling and blazing under the powerful electric light.

Beside one pond in the centre — the largest and most populous of all — lay displayed miniature bamboo rods, with black threads for lines, and microscopic filament-like hooks; while overhead, in Chinese characters, ran the explanatory legend: 'Buy a pole and take home your own catch. Fish as long as you like — *only two sen.*'

'Oh-h-h-h!' shouted the younger contingent; and plunged recklessly between the rows of glass globes for the sport to be had inside.

Addison was not the last, be it said to his credit, to cast in a line. But fishing for goldfish with a hook many sizes smaller than a pin has its own technique. Goldfish are slippery as catfish, and must be caught gently under the belly or gills, and jerked quickly into a waiting pail of water without contact with the fingers, if they are to be taken home alive and unhurt. Time and time again he raised one to the surface of the water only to have it, by a sudden flirt of its lithe body, wriggle away again; and on a dozen occasions he let one flop loose when already in the air.

'Well,' he said disgustedly at the hundredth mishap, 'I quit. I'm going home — have some work to prepare anyway.' To a questioning look of Suzuki's: 'All right, fellows — hang round a bit, if you care to. But don't forget — not too late.'

'*Sayonara*, Sensei!' sang the two or three others who remembered that he existed.

Next morning, Addison opened his eyes, yawned, rose on one arm, noted that the sun already stood high in the heavens, and conscientiously got out of bed. The dormitory was unusually still. Throwing on a few clothes, he slipped down to the common washroom. There, too, unwonted silence reigned. Only the old woman cook could be heard puttering about in the adjoining kitchen.

He plunged his face into a basin of cold water and came to full consciousness. On the floor stood a tub, not a small one, bubbling with panting goldfish. Their scales shone in the morning sun, though here and there a paler upturned belly showed where some weaker warrior had given up the crowded fight.

He poured fresh water into the tub from a pail standing by, and watched it give new ease and life.

'By George, there must be a thousand of them!' he cried.

'Seven hundred and fifty-three,' yawned a voice.

He whipped round to find Suzuki standing at his elbow rubbing sleep-filled eyes.

'Seven hundred and fifty-three ex-

Digitized by Google

actly. Oh, the man he is angry — bery, bery angry. But we stay and stay and stay, and of course pay no attention to heem. "As long as you weesh," we remind heem that he hab said. "We *weesh* to stay longer." *And* we stay until all are catched — *all*. *And*, Sensei, eef you go there to-day you will find that the advertisement which we saw to-morrow night is no longer there. Twenty leettle sen for ten leettle poles and seven hundred fifty-three pretty leettle feesh. *Also*, you will find bery, bery angry man — *bery* angry man!'

Dazed, hurt, and not a little angry himself, Addison sternly climbed the stairs, Suzuki close behind him.

At the top he turned on the boy accusingly.

'Suzuki, when did you fellows turn in last night?'

'Pardon, dear Sensei, early' — shamefacedly — 'this morning. One o'crock.'

Addison consulted his watch.

'Heck, only ten minutes till the first bell! No breakfast, no preparation, no anything! O Suzuki!'

Snores wafted softly down on them from six open transoms.

His voice trembled: 'Suzuki, how could you?'

'Sensei, do not trouble. I will awoke them before your stomach turn himself over once!'

The student touched his teacher's arm affectionately.

'Sensei, do not trouble. All right. Everyshing is all right. I will awoke them. Sh-h-h-h, listen to them, so brave, so innocent! I will awoke them at once. I am coming to awoke you, my boys!'

Then turning away, reverently, with upraised Nishio-like face and finger to lips: 'Last night, feeshers in feesh. To-day, who know, feeshers in men!'

ENGLAND'S NAVY AND DISARMAMENT

BY SIR ARTHUR HUNGERFORD POLLEN

I

From the point of view of the average educated Englishman, the naval situation to-day is the most extraordinary imaginable. If he is a middle-aged man, he will remember that, barely a generation and a half ago, all the powers combined spent less upon their navies than a single power does to-day. Then England and France spent more than the rest of the world together, and compared in capital ships as three to two. Together they owned more than half of all the battleships afloat, yet between them they spent far less than twenty millions sterling a year. The most expensive ship that either nation had, built or building, cost less than £700,000. To-day, although we are at peace with all the world, our navy is costing ninety millions sterling a year, and we are outbuilt, not by one, but by two powers.

The great change came before the war. Two men are primarily responsi-

Digitized by Google

ble for the new emphasis given to naval forces during the forty years preceding 1914 — two men whose minds and characters differed fundamentally. The American Mahan had been a midshipman in the Civil War, but had seen no other fighting, and was a student by nature. The Englishman Fisher saw, so far as one is apt to remember, no sea-fighting at all, his solitary experience of warships used in war being the bombardment of Alexandria. He, unlike Mahan, was no student. He was, indeed, proud of his ignorance of history and of his contempt for the so-called scientific doctrines of war. These are common failings of men who believe themselves to be practical, and have a native insight into the possibilities of physical science. Fisher was, in these respects, preëminent. His faith in what the inventors and manufacturers could do was unlimited. His impatience with the old-fashioned and the obsolescent was monumental. Like Mahan's, his memory ran back to the Civil War, and he was apt to think of the sea-war of the future in terms of big guns and thick armor, and the revolution in material of which he had seen so much. It was Fisher who, in the early eighties, started the late Mr. Stead in his journalistic campaign on the 'Truth about the Navy.' It roused England. But it did more. It roused the whole of Europe to a sudden realization that England was England only when her navy was supreme. And this agitation had hardly got well under way when Mahan's first book appeared. The world was now doubly awakened to the function of sea-power in history. Here was Great Britain agitated from end to end in her effort to put her naval house in order; and here was Mahan seemingly giving away the secret of English greatness!

In little more than a generation the sea-aspect of the world had changed completely. Whereas in 1885 Great Britain was spending only eleven millions and a half on her navy, in 1914 she had voted over fifty millions; whereas in 1884 she had no naval competitor but France, in 1914 the Russian, German, Austrian, and Italian fleets would have been greatly superior to her, could they have combined. Germany alone, which had no fleet at all at the first date, had capital ships in number and in power equal to nearly seventy-five per cent of the British force. So much for Europe. The war with Spain had resulted in America's having a very considerable navy; the war with Russia had done the same for Japan.

Yet on the eve of the World War, Great Britain had, built and building, forty-four dreadnought battleships and battle-cruisers, the United States had fourteen, and Japan seven. In other words, a brief seven years ago, Great Britain compared, in capital ships, with America as three to one, and with Japan as six to one. She was rather more than twice as strong as the two put together. Russia and France were allies, Italy was neutral, the Austrian and Turkish fleets could not combine with the German, and war was declared before Turkey could get the two battleships building for her in England. With no rivals outside Europe, and with allies in Europe, Great Britain had a comfortable superiority over the neighbor that shortly was to be her enemy.

But great as was the contrast between the situation of 1914 and that of forty years ago, the contrast between 1914 and 1921 is more striking still.

Since the engagement that took place off the Danish coast on the thirty-first of May, 1916, commonly — and erroneously — talked of as the 'Battle of Jutland,' Great Britain has laid down and completed one battle-cruiser only — the Hood. She has built no other capital ships at all. To be strictly accurate, she has built other ships, bigger

Digitized by Google

than any battleships, but they were insane freaks, the offspring of fantastic and unwarlike notions, whose fabulous cost and complete futility would have excited angry comment — except that the blunder of building them was submerged in other and more costly, more futile blunders still. The Hood, then, is the only ship we can show that can be said to embody any war experience at all. At Jutland, it will be remembered, the British battle-fleet did not get into action; it was the battle-cruisers that forced the fighting and suffered in the fighting. And the only ship we have completed is a battle-cruiser, and the only change we have made from the old design has been to eliminate the defects shown in action to be fatal in the other ships. Our only modern warship, therefore, is not a vessel of the most formidable fighting value, nor was she built after a full and mature examination of war experience.

Indeed, this experience was not available until after the surrender of the German fleet — it would, perhaps, be more correct to say, until we obtained from Germany, early in 1919, more or less complete data of what the German fleet had suffered from the attentions of Lord Beatty and his captains. But this information was shared with the Associated and Allied powers, and it was they, and not Great Britain, who made use of it. Thus, if the battleship is the most powerful of naval units, and if digested war experience is the best guide to building the best battleships, then it is the simple fact that the British fleet to-day does not possess a single unit that incorporates the lessons of the war. America and Japan, on the other hand, have either completed, or have due for completion within a year or two, sixteen battleships and battle-cruisers apiece, all of which have been put in hand since the Hood was laid down, and most of which have, in one way or another, benefited by the fuller knowledge of the action off Jutland. And nothing that Great Britain can do can alter this state of things, for the next four or five years at least. During this period the British fleet will, in the strongest fighting units, compare with either the American or the Japanese fleet, as a fraction of one to sixteen!

II

Now neither of the two following propositions can be doubted. Battleship strength is the foundation of all sea-power. Without it decisive victory at sea is inconceivable. These are doctrines laid down by the Board of Admiralty over which Lord Beatty presides, and we must remember that they have been endorsed, without qualification, by the General Board of the United States Navy. They were, of course, equally true in 1914. They have been true throughout the history of naval war. It is the most powerful ships that ultimately prevail, if they exist in adequate numbers, and are employed according to right principles.

But these are doctrines which have always been subject to qualification, and it seems to be indisputable that there are factors actually existing and growing in importance to-day that must qualify these principles still further. First, there has been a development of other forms of sea-force, and these make the effective employment of a battle-fleet an infinitely more difficult matter than it was in 1914. There has been a continuous progress, not only in the range and power, but in the accuracy of the torpedo. It is now feasible to employ it from aircraft as well as from seacraft, surface and submerged. And aircraft and submerged seacraft have gained in range, in certainty of action, and in speed, to a most marvelous degree. Again, the

Digitized by Google

means of communication at sea by wireless telegraphy and telephony have changed so greatly that the tactics for leading up to action or for avoiding it have been greatly facilitated; while the high perfection to which the hydrophone has been brought has made it possible to gain news, not only of submarines, but of surface craft, at far greater distances than was once thought possible, and with far greater precision. These things not only expose the huge and costly units of a battle-fleet to forms of attack undreamed of before the World War, — so that there is a precariousness about battleship strength actually more real than the most sanguine believer in the German attrition theory supposed in pre-war days, — but, what is probably more important, they increase the facility with which a weaker force can tire out a superior force by the successful evasion of action.

Again, each of the new factors I have mentioned is manifestly capable of increases in efficiency. Nor is it less manifest that to these factors new elements can at any moment be added, as invention, scientific research, and experiment bring new devices and new weapons into play. Putting these things together, two things become obvious: first, that a supreme battle-fleet will need a degree of anxious protection that will be both costly to prepare and embarrassing to use; and that, apart from this, the whole problem of employing a battle-fleet to get its designed and desired effect will have been made incalculably more complicated and, therefore, more difficult.

The British Navy has actually had more experience of the novel factors in sea-war than has any other power; and it is natural to suppose — should it have to go to war again — that in this respect it must, for some years, enjoy a great advantage. If, then, it is true that there exist to-day forms of attack on battleship strength that have not existed heretofore, we ought to have something, at least, to set against our crushing material inferiority in fighting-ships of the most modern kind. So that the actual threat to Great Britain of a battle-fleet more formidable than she possesses, viewed as a material problem alone, is very far from being what it was seven years ago.

But this, of course, is far from being the only technical difference between the situation in 1914 and that in 1921. Then our most formidable sea rival was geographically cornered. The mass of our island lay straight across his path to the open sea. He was free to go into the Baltic and free to go into the North Sea. But the first liberty was of little value to him until he gained the Russian seaports by land conquest. He had nothing to gain in the early stages by an action with the Russian Navy; for, although that fleet was small in numbers, it was formidable in power, and more formidable in view of its excellent war-trained officer personnel. And if he had little scope in the Baltic, he had apparently less in the North Sea. For here he could do nothing with effect unless he could force a very superior fleet into action and defeat it decisively. To a great extent, therefore, the German fleet was neutralized by the disadvantages of its situation. If it had been a superior fleet, the situation would not have been wholly reversed. It could have denied British access to the North Sea until it was itself defeated; but if it could not force the British fleet to action, it would be compelled to contain it before it could itself proceed to close our southern and western ports.

The neutralization of an inferior British fleet would have presented problems to a superior German fleet wholly different from those which we had to envisage. The point is simple. When

Digitized by Google

the threat of the British battle-fleet compelled the Germans to keep to their harbors, or limited them to a very restricted area beyond them, the whole menace of German sea-power was gone. The seas were free to British cruisers and British trade. The German lighter ships, — von Spee's armored cruisers, Emden, Königsberg, Dresden, and the converted merchantmen, — these were all mopped up in a few months. There was nothing between any British ship and her home ports. But with the situation reversed this would not have been so. A British battleship force 'in being,' unhurt, at Scapa in the north, and other forces at Plymouth in the south, could have issued from their harbors and stopped all German sea-borne services, and have harried the German cruisers that attempted to attack our own trade. Nor could the German fleet have left the British fleet on its flank and gone to the open sea to protect its cruisers. So great, in short, was the handicap of the geographical position, that Germany, to counteract it, would have had to possess a fleet twice as strong as ours, merely to win a naval equality.

The present naval situation is, of course, altogether and entirely different. A superior battle-fleet, based on the Atlantic seaports, seems free from the handicap imposed upon the German fleet; for, clearly, a stronger battle-fleet could not be confined to its harbors by a weaker force; and at first sight it would seem as if, with free access to the Atlantic, such a fleet would constitute the most formidable of all threats to Great Britain. But there a new principle affects the situation.

Modern ships have certain vast advantages over the wooden vessels of our forefathers. They have gained incalculably in power and in speed. They have gained still more in the facility with which they are free of every point of the compass. But they have lost in sea endurance, and they are far more dependent upon prompt and frequent access to their bases. And, being vastly more complicated, they need something more at their bases than provisions, ropes, spars, and sails. A modern naval base, to be of the slightest value to a battle-fleet, must be equipped with productive facilities of an engineering order, ample enough to constitute a manufacturing town of very respectable proportions. It must have all the advantages on which the manufacturing town depends for a constant supply of fuel, material, and labor. So vast, indeed, are the necessities of a modern arsenal, that it is practically impossible for one to exist if severed from the mainland of the country that owns it. No country in the world has so many coaling and other naval stations as has Great Britain; but outside Great Britain itself there is not one naval base that could support and supply a battle-fleet in war. Both the American and the Japanese navies, then, suffer — I am discussing this from the point of view of their being a menace to Great Britain — from this severe disability.

Thus, altogether apart from the difficulties that have accumulated during the past few years in employing a battle-fleet at all, British-sea power derives certain advantages from this factor of the distance that separates our bases and the focal points of our trade from the fleets materially superior to ours. In the light of these things, the fact that Great Britain no longer has a predominant fighting fleet has a meaning radically different from mere naval inferiority to a European power: it suggests that the difference is one, not of degree at all, but actually of kind.

Yet, when every allowance has been made, it remains a fact that, for the first time in modern history, Great Britain is not the putative mistress of

Digitized by Google

the seas. The topsy-turvydom of the World War has brought us no surprise comparable to this. Time out of mind, the invincibility of the British fleet has been a fundamental doctrine of our national policy. What England owes to the sea is a commonplace of everyday knowledge. That England, cut off from the sea, must perish instantly and utterly, is a commonplace of military science. That for two hundred and fifty years Great Britain has never, so far as material provision could prevent, been in danger of sea-defeat, is a simple historical fact. And when I say 'in danger,' I understate the fact. I mean that never, in all this period, was there a time when Great Britain could not face the sea-world in arms: indeed, at one period she actually did so, and with success.

III

Now, we shall not understand why it is that Great Britain no longer has the strongest fleet, unless we understand why for so long she had. It has been assumed that our greatness at sea arose originally — and naturally and inevitably — out of our greatness as a seafaring people, and to our owning and using a larger merchant-shipping than did other nations. And, again, it has been assumed that, as Great Britain was by far the wealthiest country in the world, her maintaining a greater navy was a natural and inevitable function of her wealth. But it is, of course, simply untrue that fighting navies derive from merchant navies by some preordained and unescapable process; and equally untrue that naval strength is, or ever has been, proportionate to a country's wealth.

I shall not attempt to justify these statements by any complete summary of the historical facts that prove them. But there are a few instances in point that will suffice for my purpose. As to the first proposition, let me quote from Mahan's *Naval Strategy:* —

> There is a further conclusion to be drawn from the war between Japan and Russia, which contradicts a previous general impression that I myself have shared, and possibly in some degree have contributed to diffuse. That impression is, that navies depend upon maritime commerce as the cause and justification of their existence. To a certain extent, of course, this is true; and, just because true to a certain extent, the conclusion is more misleading. Because partly true, it is accepted as unqualifiedly true. Russia has little maritime commerce, at least in her own bottoms; her merchant flag is rarely seen; she has a very defective seacoast; can in no sense be called a maritime nation. Yet the Russian navy had the decisive part to play in the late war; and the war was unsuccessful, not because the navy was not large enough, but because it was improperly handled. Probably, it also was intrinsically insufficient — bad in quality; poor troops as well as poor generalship. The disastrous result does not contravene the truth that Russia, though with little maritime shipping, was imperatively in need of a navy.

Here, then, is a case where a navy was essential, though there was virtually no merchant-shipping at all out of which it could germinate. That there have been great merchant marines without navies is, of course, equally true. Norway, with no navy at all, has a singularly high ratio of tonnage to population; and the huge leap in German merchant-tonnage between 1890 and 1909 is a not less striking instance in point. For until 1909 Germany had not even the rudiments of a fleet that could have been formidable at sea.

And as to navies being functions of wealth, this surely is not in the least degree tenable. People do not build fleets and ships because they can afford them as a luxury. Still less do they build them as an investment, trusting to their conquests or their loot to pay

Digitized by Google

the bill. They build them only because they are a grim necessity. At least, this is certainly the explanation of Great Britain's two centuries and a half of sea-supremacy.

IV

England, after all, is one of the European nations. Until quite recently she was as inferior in population to one and another of her neighbors as she was in area. It was only toward the end of the eighteenth century that she became the wealthiest country in Europe; and although always dependent for a large portion of her wealth on the freest possible access to the sea, it was not primarily her sea trade, but the fact that she was the first of the world's people to become a manufacturing nation, that explained why, for a century and half, hers was the richest people in the world. But, of course, she could not have become so without free access to the sea; and of all the nations that have ever been, she had the greatest interest in preserving this freedom. And she needed a free sea, not only to develop her trade, but for another purpose. Indeed, her trade itself arose out of that purpose.

The end of the fifteenth century, and the beginning of the sixteenth, was the age of the great sea-adventurers. But, of all the countries, England alone maintained the spirit that had first sent her sons afloat. Sometimes they went as colonists — to get a freer religious or political atmosphere than they could get at home; sometimes they went in search of wealth; sometimes, apparently, for the sheer fun of the thing. But, whatever the motive, the spirit of sea-adventuring, the desire for, and a determination to get, free use of the sea, became the mark of the Anglo-Saxon race. It is to this spirit that the northern continent of America, from the Mexican border to the North Pole, owes its control by the descendants of Englishmen; that half of Africa is under the flag of Britain; that India is a British dependency; that Australia is one of His Majesty's Dominions; that China has been opened up to European trade.

Few, if any, of the statesmen of England visualized the enormous scale of national expansion that Destiny had in store for the British people. But they have never failed in the instinct that this people had to be free to expand. At every stage they perceived that there was only one thing that could prevent the English being masters of their Fate: it was that the sea should be closed against them. They saw that there was but one contingency that could so close the sea: it was that the other powers of Europe should combine to do it. There never was a possibility that such a combination would be a spontaneous and voluntary movement; but it was a danger, nevertheless.

The ambition to govern the whole world is an infirmity that has obsessed the minds — noble and otherwise — of many emperors and kings. But the collapse of the Roman Empire, the barbarian invasion of Europe, the slow reconstruction of a new civilization to replace the old, the arrest of the world trade that had existed while the Roman Empire still stood — these and other causes made the business of world-conquest slumber, until Louis the Great emerged from his minority in the seventeenth century and found the whole power and wealth of France concentrated in his hands. His ambitions taught the English the lesson they needed; and when, a century and a quarter after Louis's failure, his political and spiritual heir, Napoleon Bonaparte, came into the same heritage, his military genius seemed to promise success where Louis had failed. But long

Digitized by Google

pondering on what she had escaped under Louis had prepared England for the emergency. It was during this period that the sea-doctrine of Great Britain had been formulated and had become fundamental.

The 'Balance of Power' had become the target of every modern carper at the old régime. But the adhesion of England to it arose from no insane militarism, nor from any blind devotion to an old-world and corrupt diplomacy. If for more than two hundred years we stood in the way of any one power in Europe dominating the rest, it was not because we were slaves to the pursuit of glory, not because we coveted the wealth of others, not because we reveled in the shameless chicanery of intrigue, but simply because we knew that it was all up with us if we did not. And the only way we could prevent France or any other country from dominating Europe was to keep the command of the seas in our hands.

In time of peace it is usual to talk of national forces, whether they are land-forces or sea-forces, as implements of national 'defense.' In war, of course, there is only one use of force, and that is for an attack upon the enemy. If you wish to defend your territory you will, if you are wise, attack and destroy the force that threatens it. At sea there are no territories, and the traditions of sea-war are not, therefore, confused by the military jargon of offensive and defensive strategy. The function of a fleet is to destroy, or neutralize the possible action of, the enemy's fleet. But its function begins and ends with this. To be sure, if either of these ends is achieved, the way is open for the other arm. But the work proper of the fleet is over when the enemy's fleet is rendered innocuous.

Thus, viewed politically, a navy is not an instrument of conquest. It does not threaten its neighbors — except indirectly — because it opens the way to military conquest. It was this truth that safeguarded the position of England in Europe. As it was our set policy to prevent the domination of any single power, it necessarily followed that, when the disposition to conquer showed itself in any one nation, we were always sure of allies, because it was we alone who could give effective help to those who were in danger of aggression. Thus the compulsion of national security drove us literally to make a virtue of necessity. It became our rôle to stand for liberty and right-dealing on the continent.

In the very nature of things, therefore, we could not follow our destiny without being a great sea-power, and our greatness at sea made us the arbiter and the judge among our neighbors in Europe. But this does not exhaust the advantages that sea-power gave us. From the earliest times sea-war has been the only form of war that has been regulated by international law. This, of course, is a very large subject, which I cannot pursue. Let it suffice to remind the reader that right into the nineteenth century the progress of armies was still marked by unchecked looting and the rape, murder, and torture of the non-combatant population. But, for a century before that, sea-war had been governed by the most rigid rules; and anyone — even an enemy — who suffered in his property or in his person, had access to an Admiralty court, where, if he had right on his side, he was sure of justice. The thing followed inevitably, of course, from the fact that the sea is a common highway, on which, except that they may not help an enemy, neutrals have equal rights with the combatants. But the point is that men fighting at sea, having first to respect the rights of noncombatant neutrals, — who, of course, did not figure in land-war at all, — were then compelled to recognize the personal rights of a noncombatant enemy. It is,

Digitized by Google

I think, an interesting historical fact that the English, necessarily the great exponents of maritime law, and those best trained in its spirit, were almost the first to insist on a similarly disciplined humanity on land. It was the Duke of Wellington, in the Crimea, and afterward in France, who, by his practice, laid the foundation of all these rules for the protection of noncombatants, which much later on were embodied in the agreements of Geneva and The Hague.

Thus sea-war had a double influence on the national character. It made the English the protagonists of political justice and right dealing, and it trained the nation in the higher humanity that insists that the horrors of war shall be limited by the observance of civilized regulations. Nor was either influence limited to the European sphere. To my mind there is nothing fanciful in the idea that the successive abolitions, first of the slave-trade all over the world, and next of slave-owning in British possessions, were very largely due to the compulsory education that the British people received from seamen. I need hardly remind American readers of the influence of this example on the conduct of their forebears. And it is certainly an historical fact that when, after the Congress of Vienna, the old monarchies of Europe exhibited a deplorable reaction toward absolutism, — against which the popular elements in the South American colonies of Spain and Portugal rebelled, — it was at the instance of the British Prime Minister that President Monroe announced the famous doctrine ever since associated with his name. And it was certainly because of British sea-power that, at that most critical time, the doctrine was respected.

All these things are vaguely in the Englishman's mind when he looks at the present naval situation and sees how lamentably Great Britain has fallen from her great estate. But he will be wholly wrong to blame his government for allowing this thing to be. The deeper and saner interpretation of our sea-supremacy, while it lasted, is not that it corresponded with some such innate national pride as is echoed in 'Britannia rules the waves'; not that it was a luxury which our old overwhelming wealth gave us, and our present poverty cannot afford; not that it was a natural outcome of our merchant-shipping, which, when all is said and done, is as dominant to-day as it was before the war: Great Britain maintained a sea-force superior to that of all other combinations of sea-force for just so long as her security as a nation made it imperative and — this is the point — for no longer. If our navy lasted long enough to defeat the German effort, and if that defeat left us without an enemy or a threat against us in any part of the world, then the British Navy had done its work. Whether America or Japan or any other country with whom we had coöperated to win had a larger fleet than that which we had inherited from pre-war conditions was, so to speak, a matter of indifference. Surprising as the man in the street has found the present naval situation to be, it has, of course, been no surprise at all to those who follow public events closely and who have attempted to understand the causes behind them.

That the American and Japanese fleets do not threaten Great Britain — and here I drop the technical argument and confine myself to the political situation — is certainly clear enough to-day. We have no differences that we know of with either country. We have an offensive and defensive alliance with Japan, against the world, except the United States; and we have a treaty of arbitration with the United States which, as both nations respect their plighted word, is no scrap of paper, but a bond.

Digitized by Google

It has happened in the history of nations that an unsuspected conflict of economic interests, an outburst of local passion, in which foreign nations suffer, or a sudden conflict of national interest in a third country has induced such violent words and feelings, that governments have been powerless to stem them. Any tension of this sort between Great Britain and the United States is, of course, very improbable. But should it arise, the treaty safeguards the position. Most of us think — and we are certainly right in so thinking — that the real reason why the treaty exists is because it is wholly unnecessary. There could, of course, be no better explanation of a written agreement. The Americans and the British would arbitrate in any event. Be this as it may, the treaty is there; and other things being as they are now. I repeat, neither the American nor the Japanese fleet seems to us a menace to any vital interest.

It, therefore, summarizes my argument to this point to say that the reason why Great Britain maintained a supreme fleet in former days is so obvious, that all who run may read. The mother nation and that league of free nations which is called the British Empire would have been at the mercy of aggression had it not been so. It bears repeating, that this is the sole and only reason why our fleet was maintained at its old relative strength. It is not so maintained to-day — again, for one reason only: the Empire is not threatened by aggression.

V

A final point must be made clear before I leave this part of the argument. If the British Navy, while it was supreme, was not a natural outgrowth of British wealth, while that also was supreme, so, too, the fact that, in the costlier and more powerful units, the British fleet has fallen to the third place is not in the least attributable to the fact that our wealth is not absolutely or relatively what it was. If I am right in saying that the supreme fleet arose from a supreme national emergency, — because without it the nation could not be secure in its possessions, or in its destiny, — then, certainly, I am right in going further and saying that, were these possessions or this destiny again threatened, the fleet would be made supreme again. There is no conceivable sacrifice that would limit it. We have a heavy war-debt, a legacy of heavy post-war extravagances. But from the day when the late hostilities began to the day they ended, it never occurred to a soul in these islands to say that we could not afford the sacrifices involved. No one did suggest, nor could anyone suggest, that five thousand millions, or eight or ten thousand millions, was the limit we could spend. So long as the war lasted, the nation was in peril. The rate of sacrifice had to be maintained until that peril was removed. The principle on which we acted was the principle on which we should act again, if, in time of peace, the threat of war reappeared.

It is important that this truth should be fully grasped, for otherwise we shall not get the Conference issues clearly in our minds. The Conference is commonly spoken of as if its immediate purpose were to bring about a tripartite agreement for the limitation of naval armaments. In other criticisms of mine I have given my reasons for saying that I do not think an agreement on this point is feasible. This doubt is a corollary of the theory I have just put forward. Armaments of all kinds, whether naval or military, either are a necessity of national safety or they manifest an intention to commit some unprovoked aggression on others. Or, of course, they may be the outcome of mere megalo-

Digitized by Google

mania and vanity. If a nation fears no other nations, and yet maintains great armies or fleets, then, unquestionably, that nation's conduct is inconsequent — unless it has itself a plan of conquest in mind. And if it fears aggression, it will assuredly maintain its force at the safety limit. No example of, and no pressure from, other nations — short of successful war — will be regarded as binding, if that nation believes that the circumstances in which the agreement was made have changed to its disadvantage. The law of preservation clearly admits no exception, and no nation can contract itself out of its obligations.

Even should such perfect accord be reached as to make each of our three countries willing to execute a contract by which none should build or maintain a navy above a stated strength, there would surely be very great difficulties in drawing up the schedule. Naval force is about the most unsettled thing there is. No one can say to-day how a navy will be composed ten years hence. And even to-day you really want a different navy for different wars. It is to me very hard to picture any unanimity, if each country is to have so many battleships, so many cruisers, so many destroyers, and so on. No type is of constant value; the ratio of types will vary as values vary; new types will come into being. Nor is the money limitation a much happier expedient. We can, after all, see and count ships; but once there is an obligation not to spend above a certain sum, be sure the busybodies and spy-hunters will be at work — and that one or the other of us is spending more than we avow will be a constant rumor. I may be wrong. But I see no hope of a binding treaty that shall specify either the scale and kind of navy that is permitted or the amount that may be spent. Let us not forget how Stein defeated Napoleon on the limitation of Prussia's army after Jena.

It seems to me, therefore, that we cannot look to the Washington Conference to result in an immediate agreement for disarmament. But there is no reason at all why immediate disarmament should not be the result of the Conference. For if armament is the outcome of fear, and the Conference can remove that fear, the end we have in view is automatically attained. While I submit that it is no use to tell Japan that she cannot afford, being a poor country, to spend a fabulous proportion of her revenue on her navy, it is of the utmost use that, in an open and public Conference, we should all be able to tell Japan that her possessions and the destinies of her people are in no danger. If we can convince her of this, her people will see to it that they are not taxed for unnecessary armaments.

VI

The work before the Conference, then, is simple. I do not mean that to succeed in getting the work done will prove to be a simple affair. For it is far from easy for the spokesman of a country to be perfectly candid in a statement of national aims; and even if that were easy, it is not a simple business to make that candor intelligible and convincing to others. But, if the Conference is to succeed, it is precisely this that each country, through its delegates, must do.

The Senate has paid me the compliment of including in the report of its proceedings an article on the American Navy, written when the 1916 programme was under discussion; and if I refer to it now, it is because I can appeal to a question asked six years ago as one upon the reply to which the success of the November meeting depends. I had discussed the composition of the proposed new American fleet, and had pointed out that the ratio of battleships

Digitized by Google

to cruisers and destroyers differed materially from the British ratio before the war, and suggested that war had shown the English ratio to be too high. From this I passed on to the question, what the strength of the American fleet should be. It was obviously not a point to which I could suggest the answer, and I had to be content with saying that the answer was to be found when the Americans had found a reply to the further question: from which country did they expect trouble? Now, if the proceedings at Washington could begin with frank statements from Japan and the United States and Great Britain as to what their world-policies are, we should, I submit, attain a definite result with very little delay. Either it will be found that each country can agree that the policies of the others are harmless to it, or we shall be faced by a certainty of conflict which no debate can remove.

To an Englishman it seems inconceivable that this historic meeting can break up without achieving its desired end. One simply cannot believe that the United States of America really fears any people, or can have so departed from the traditions of its past history as to plan the conquest of any territory, or the defeat of any nation, for the sake of glory. If the 'open door' in Asia is a principle of policy as fundamental as is the Monroe Doctrine to America, then it is a principle to which all Europe and Japan are already pledged; for it figures among the provisions of the Treaty of Versailles. And, again, it is inconceivable that Japan can have any avowed policy which America is pledged to thwart; for the problems involved in the desire of Asiatics to settle in countries predominantly European are obviously not such as to lead to war.

Measured, then, by the true test of armaments, — national security, — there seems no reason at all why, after a candid interchange of views, America and Japan should not find it easy, if not to abandon the completion of their present programme, at least not to add to their forces for some years to come; nor, during those years, to maintain those forces fully armed, manned, and ready for action. After all, should they so agree, they will only be acting on a principle that Great Britain has already accepted as a guide to conduct. If we have built but one fighting ship of the first class in the last six years, and no ship of any class in the last three years, we have forborne for one reason and one reason only — there is no enemy for such ships to meet. If Great Britain can sanely abandon a doctrine she has held sacred for more than twice as long as America has held the Monroe Doctrine sacred, and has done so because the occasion for maintaining it no longer exists, then there is at least one occasion less for other nations to crave great strength at sea.

Digitized by Google

FRANCE, HER POLITICIANS, AND THE WASHINGTON CONFERENCE

BY SISLEY HUDDLESTON

I

NEVER would I consent to write about France's present-day politicians without making it clear that the politicians are not the French people. For it is impossible, with the utmost indulgence, for anyone who has honestly regarded them at work to refrain from some criticism of them. Unfortunately, there has grown up a fallacy that, in speaking without flattery of a country's accidental and temporary leaders, one is in some way attacking the country. It is not so: for my part, I think France is relatively sound. The French people have superb qualities; they deserve all the eulogies that have been or could be written of them, though naturally they have not escaped the contagion of the world-sickness. They have shown a solid sense, a rooted stability, a laboriousness, that are beyond praise. If France has ever shown signs of revolutionary tendencies, — as she did during one period at least, — it has been because she was misguided; and she quickly recovered herself. No country in the world is less likely to break loose, to run into excesses, whether of Militarism or of Socialism. Always does the restraining force of the people keep the wilder spirits — whether those wilder spirits are Nationalist ministers or Communist agitators — in check.

Whenever I wish to know the true sentiments of ordinary folk, I make a little tour of the cabarets of Paris. In the revues there presented I am perpetually surprised at the healthy reaction against Bolshevism on the one hand and against flamboyant and fire-eating patriotism on the other hand (though it must be confessed that every *chansonnier* has his couplet against England). Anyone who supposes that the people liked the call-up of Class 19 of the army, the demobilization, the remobilization, and the demobilization again of young Frenchmen; anyone who supposes that the French people love to indulge in flourishes and menaces toward Germany, threats of occupation, of dislocation, vauntings of victory and vainglorious strutting, need only listen intelligently to the skits on drum-beating in the *spirituel* shows of Paris, which are applauded vociferously. Ministers and Muscovites are good game: they are not angrily railed at, they are wittily satirized; they are for the most part tolerated as inevitable and not particularly important. I have heard nearly every politician of note twitted, with the full approbation of the audience. To tell the truth, throughout the history of the Republic, Parliament and Cabinet have been held in little esteem, while President after President has been mercilessly mocked. There is, in short, a curious separation of people and rulers; and the rulers do not always adequately represent the sentiments of the people. For my part, I do not know any country in which this division is more marked.

Digitized by Google

Nor, oddly enough, do the journals which are read by everybody reflect, in their politics, the spirit of the people: they reflect the particular view of the Quai d'Orsay and of other government offices, from which, by an elaborate system, they receive the *mot d'ordre*. Less and less am I inclined to form my appreciation of public opinion from a reading of the French newspapers. Public opinion, in the sense in which the term is now employed, is merely the passing opinion of a passing minister, transmitted through 'inspired' journalists. Many misconceptions about the French may be avoided if it is remembered how deliberate is the present method of doping the journals. As for the foreign pressmen, it is unhappily true that the red ribbon which indicates the Legion of Honor exercises a hypnotic effect on many of them. I know some who lose no opportunity of writing comfortable things, of placing themselves at the disposition of the propaganda service which has been openly set up — and of submitting their claims to be decorated at due intervals.

The very word propaganda, since the war, has become obnoxious. It is not, of course, a peculiarly French institution: all governments now advertise, like automobile manufacturers or soap-makers, and have brought the art of suppression, of distortion, of extravagant praise, to a point where it slops over into the grotesque. American visitors to France, of any degree of note, are particularly fêted, and columns of the newspapers are devoted to the tours of American associations. It is probably the French rather than the American organization which is responsible for this fantastic fanfaronnade. I submit that, while we should try to know each other, the present methods of propaganda do not help us to know each other. On the contrary, they serve to rouse suspicion; and extravagant laudation and obviously official representations of facts provoke only a smile, or even an exclamation of disgust. As an organ for propaganda the press is becoming played out: it has been overworked.

This is not, of course, to suggest that the present French politicians do not possess admirable qualities. They are nearly all intensely patriotic; though patriotism is a virtue that may easily become a vice if pushed to extremes. They have considerable parliamentary ability; though this again is a merit that was better suited to the pre-war days, when the problems were not of a vast, universal character. It is when one judges them by the great international standard of world needs that one regrets to see no truly big figure emerging.

But, then, in what country does the world-man emerge? Where is the statesman who sees, what so many thinkers now see, that what the times call for is someone who can lift himself above frontiers, who can escape the limiting moment, whose vision can embrace the future and go round the globe? It is heartbreaking, when superior intellect, superior emotion, are needed as never before, to subordinate the smaller craft of national parliamentarianism to the bigger task of announcing and realizing the interdependence of the peoples, that more than ever we should be all working in our watertight compartments, doing our partial, uncoördinated jobs. It may be that the machinery of civilization has outgrown the capacity of its mechanicians. What was good enough before the war is not good enough now; and the pre-war mind is incapable of grappling with post-war problems. The terms of those problems have changed: they are not affairs of State, but affairs of the world. It is extraordinary that the peace has thrown up no new men. This is true of all

Digitized by Google

countries (excepting Russia, where the new men have indulged in a disastrous experiment). It is particularly true of France, where practically all the men worth mentioning are the old, tried men.

As I write, I cannot forecast what will be done at Washington; I can only anticipate that the American delegates will be purely American, the British purely British, and the French purely French; each concerned to defend the narrow interests of his own country, when it is a generous coöperation of all countries that is called for. There are some questions, such as general disarmament, such as a general economic and financial settlement, that nobody seems big enough to tackle seriously and honestly; nobody seems big enough even to approach them, except with the desire to show that his own nation is in an exceptional position and cannot conform to any suggested world-order. Most of the ills from which we suffer are not national: they cannot be settled by national statesmen, but only by men with the international mind, men with an outlook as broad as mankind. There are no sectional cures: there are only radical remedies.

H. G. Wells, in his *Outline of History*, says of the politicians of a certain Roman epoch that they only demonstrate how clever and cunning men may be, how subtle in contention, how brilliant in pretense, and how utterly wanting in wisdom and grace of spirit. It seems to me, as it seems to Mr. Wells, that this is a true description of most of the politicians of all countries to-day. It must not be supposed that France is in this respect different from other nations. I am bound to say this much; but, having said it, I must take another measure and paint the French politicians for what they are. They do not, any more than do the men in power in other countries, reach ideal dimensions: they must be judged on their plane.

II

It is a somewhat extraordinary fact that three, at least, of the little group of men who are most conspicuous in French politics, who have climbed to the heights of power, began their career as Socialists. Robert Louis Stevenson, I remember, suggests somewhere that most of us begin as revolutionaries and end up, somewhere about middle age, as conservatives. Certainly it would be difficult to find better examples of this inevitable evolution in the human spirit than are furnished by that trio, Alexandre Millerand, Aristide Briand, and René Viviani. Of course, it is foolish to make a charge of inconsistency. No man can be judged by his youth. It is to their credit that, before they acquired the reticences of later years, before they learned that progress is slow and must be orderly, these distinguished Frenchmen were aflame with the passion of putting the world to rights. However violently, in certain cases, aspirations toward a better order of things were expressed; however incandescent were their sympathies with the downtrodden; however excessive were sometimes their remedies, it does honor to them that they were moved by essentially noble impulses. He is, indeed, a poor man who has never felt wild yearnings, has never been guided rather by the heart than by the head.

When I look round the political field in France, I am invariably surprised with the recurring discovery that not only these three, but nearly all prominent publicists and politicians, have passed through this stage of ardent, if unruly, enthusiasm. They have not entered the arena coldly, calculatingly. They became gladiators because of their generous emotions. They have been shaped into what they are to-day by experience. This is excellent, and is entirely in their favor. It may be that

Digitized by Google

instances could be discovered where the ensuing disillusionment has induced cynicism. But, on the whole, such a beginning is a proof of sincerity.

On the other hand, they are naturally open to the attacks of the Communists of to-day, who frequently quote against them their speeches of other days and show that they now oppose that which they aforetime promoted. For example, M. Millerand, in 1896, in a famous discourse, proclaimed the right to strike; and in 1920, following a strike, he instituted proceedings against the Confédération Générale du Travail, which have helped to bring this association of trade-unions to its present position of impotence. He was, again, a foremost figure in anti-clerical movements and liquidated the congregations, while during his premiership last year he commenced the negotiations for reëstablishing relations with Rome. It is, however, a peculiarly little mind that would make these apparent reversals of policy a reproach. There was a moment when it was important, above all, to assert the right to strike. There was another moment when the superior interests of the country demanded the suppression of dangerous agitation. There was a moment when the priesthood had become mischievous in France and menaced the Republic. And there was another moment when diplomatic reasons urged the appeasement of the old religious quarrel. Those abstract politicians who forget that circumstances are of more importance than doctrines are open to criticism. Whatever M. Millerand has done, it should never be forgotten that, when he entered the cabinet of Waldeck-Rousseau as the first Socialist minister, he initiated many remarkable social reforms. To him are due pensions, a weekly rest-day for workers, and the shortening of hours for women and children employed in industry.

Most of his ministerial work has been in connection with internal affairs. He has been an able organizer; he is a hard worker of the dogged rather than the brilliant kind. Certainly he is tenacious. When he became Prime Minister after the defeat of M. Clemenceau, who had expected to become President of the Republic, French opinion was just beginning to turn against the authors of the treaty, and was beginning to proclaim that England (to employ a French expression) had taken most of the blanket for herself. Mr. Lloyd George, regarded as too clever by half, was beginning to be cordially detested in France; and it was not long before M. Clemenceau was accused of having given way on almost every point to the British Premier. The old Tiger, who had been placed upon a higher pedestal than any statesman of the Third Republic, now discovered that the Tarpeian Rock was near to the Capitol. There were even clamors for his trial in the High Court of Justice, for having sacrificed French interests in favor of his friends, the English.

The task of M. Millerand, following this amazing fall of M. Clemenceau from the heights of popularity to the depths of unpopularity, was difficult. It was his function to resist Mr. Lloyd George. With his shrewd sense, however, he was aware that a compromise with Germany was inevitable and desirable. But behind him was the clamorous Bloc National, refusing, even in the name of a policy of realism, any further concessions to Germany in respect of reparations, and declining to take any practical step which might be construed as a concession to British views. There began a long-drawn-out fight between France and England. The attempt to get away from the sentimentalism of the Versailles Treaty, with its grotesquely impossible demands on Germany, was rendered hard

Digitized by Google

by the suspicions of Parliament. While dislike of England grew, anger against Germany grew; and every time that Germany's debt was defined (still in unreasonable terms), M. Millerand was in danger of being overthrown.

More time was needed for the truth to dawn on the politicians, not only of France, but of the Allies generally — the truth that there are limits, easily reached, to the transfer of wealth from one country to another; that, speaking broadly, wealth can be transferred only in the shape of goods which it is against the industrial and commercial interests of the receiving country to accept. This truth has also its application to America, who can be paid what is owing to her by the Allies only in the form of goods which she puts up tariff barriers to keep out.

Gradually the world is awakening to the fact that the only rational policy is one which consists in canceling, not of necessity nominally, but virtually, the bulk of international debts, German or Allied, and in resuming as quickly as possible normal trade-relations. This does not mean, of course, that Germany should make no reparations. She should be made to pay all that it is possible for her to pay; but chiefly she should be obliged to help in the rebuilding of the ruined North, as now, at long last, she promises to do under the Loucheur-Rathenau accord, which makes hay of the treaty and of the London Agreement, and of the principle of collective negotiations and action against Germany. France has, I think, reached a point where the more or less willing coöperation of victor and vanquished is seen to be necessary. But when M. Millerand was in power, he was unable to carry out such a policy. At Spa, where he consented to meet the Germans, matters only became worse. It was assuredly not his fault. Events could not be hurried. It will still take some years before Europe can get far on the right lines. But it must be said of M. Millerand that he did at Spa adumbrate the possibility of voluntary arrangements.

M. Millerand would not be human if he did not sometimes give way to sudden impulses. There was in this atmosphere of opposition between France and England every excuse for his desire to demonstrate the independence of France — not to be forever subordinate to England. There were several incidents that appeared to be inspired by a determination to break the supposed hegemony of England. The Entente is not to be lightly thrown away; but some of the consequences of the Entente, when they run counter to French policy, must be destroyed. M. Millerand may be looked upon as a friend of the Entente, but an enemy of British domination. Thus, he revolted against the British tolerance of Germany's non-fulfillment of her obligations, by marching on Frankfort. Then, against the express advice of England, he recognized Wrangel, that anti-Bolshevist adventurer whose moment of glory soon passed. Then he took Poland's part when Poland had foolishly provoked a war with Russia, and England counseled conciliation — sending General Weygand to save Warsaw. It was precisely this lucky stroke which secured for him the Presidency of the Republic. It seemed hopeless to think of beating back the Bolsheviki from before Warsaw — but the miracle happened. He soared into popularity, and as, at that time, M. Deschanel, the President, had fallen ill and was compelled to resign, he was carried triumphantly to the Élysée.

It may be taken that, as President, M. Millerand exercises more authority than most of his predecessors have exercised. He is extremely strong-willed, and on his acceptance of his seven-year

Digitized by Google

post, declared that he intended that the premiers he would call should carry out his policy. In France it is not as in America: the President has, constitutionally, little power. The executive chief is the Premier, who is responsible to Parliament and whom Parliament can make or break. Nevertheless, a man like M. Millerand, if he is surrounded by influential supporters and has really the favor of Parliament, can become supreme. It is only when he is faced by a Premier who is backed up by Parliament, and whose policy is in opposition to that of the President, that he must submit, on pain of being broken, as was President MacMahon. M. Poincaré has recently shown that against M. Clemenceau — then at the height of the power derived from Parliament and people — he could do nothing, even though he was strenuously against the provisions of the treaty. The president may be indeed nothing in France, and the Élysée may be a prison. There are those who assert that M. Poincaré, who now enjoys much backing, would have been earlier called to the premiership had not M. Millerand passed him over, just as M. Poincaré for a long time passed over M. Clemenceau. However that may be, M. Leygues, who succeeded M. Millerand as Premier, was little more than the nominee of M. Millerand, carrying out his instructions. M. Briand presently succeeded M. Leygues, and although M. Briand is far from being colorless, Premier and President have worked amicably together, and M. Millerand may be considered to be still in the ascendant, still the supreme authority in France, in fact as in name.

III

M. Aristide Briand, more than any other French politician, has won the reputation of being shrewd and skillful in emergencies. If one wishes for confirmation of this opinion, it is necessary to see him in a tight corner. He knows how to get out of tight corners better than anyone. It may sometimes be thought that he might have avoided getting into tight corners.

Now M. Briand is a fine manœuvrer: it is exhilarating to watch him placing his opponents, when they are most cocksure, in an impossible situation. His method of speech-making is a lesson in Parliamentary strategy. It is odd that, in a country so renowned for its eloquence, the written speech is so common. Often have I seen an orator who has gained great fame take out of his pocket his typewritten reply to a simple expression of thanks for attending a luncheon, and proceed to read formal or flowery phrases. It is somewhat disconcerting to the Anglo-Saxon who is used to impromptu speeches — the substance of which is doubtless well prepared, but of which the words are left largely to the inspiration of the moment. It is with us regarded as a confession of weakness, a sign of artificiality, to hold in one's hands the evidence of careful study. We have at least to pretend to spontaneity. The form is thus sacrificed, but the appearance of sincerity is saved. But with the French the form counts for much. Out comes the written document, and only its forceful delivery preserves for it its effect of directness.

But M. Briand is not one of those French orators who not only rehearse but write their speeches. On the contrary, his efforts are nearly always impromptu. This is essentially characteristic of the man. He is the improviser *par excellence*. He is an amazing virtuoso. In France they say that he 'plays the violoncello.' He plays it without the music before him. He plays it precisely as the occasion suggests. He would, perhaps, be singularly

Digitized by Google

embarrassed were he called upon to play a set piece. He loves to embroider, to compose as he goes along, to await the inspiration of the moment and the call of circumstance. This is true of his speeches — but it is also true, in a larger sense, of his politics.

It may indeed be taken as a parable and illustration of the man — this habit of his to search in his audience the words, the ideas, which he utters. There are times when one might pardonably suppose M. Briand to be tired, indifferent; not to put too fine a point upon it — lazy. But this impression is altogether wrong. M. Briand is like Mr. Lloyd George inasmuch as he relies largely on his intuition, his immediate judgments, his ever-ready resources. He comes into the Chamber apparently without anything particular to say. He reads an official statement in a dull voice. He seems to be bored, and so does the Chamber. There is an atmosphere of hostility. One wonders what will be his fate.

And then, discarding the official statement, without notes, without (so far as one knows) any preparation, he begins one of his wonderful discourses. At first he feels his way cautiously. His voice takes on a new animation. There is an interruption. Somebody in the Chamber reveals the ground of antagonism. This is what M. Briand is waiting for. He applies himself to that point; he develops his theme. He vanquishes this particular opposition, only, perhaps, to arouse opposition from the other side of the house. This gives him a fresh start. He seems to seek to penetrate the minds of his opponents in order to demolish their objections. Now he pits the Right against the Left, and now he rouses the Left to enthusiasm. It is the most beautiful balancing of views it is possible to conceive.

Speeches, it is sometimes said, never change a vote in parliamentary assemblies. This may be true of parliaments like the British, where two, or, at the most, three parties sit on their benches with their minds made up, ready to obey their party whip. But it is not true of M. Briand in the French Parliament, where there are many groups and where the possibilities of combination are as numerous as the combinations of a pack of cards. He knows, as few men know, how to shuffle them — how to lead this card and then that. In his way he is certainly the most masterly parliamentarian who has ever been known in France. If proof were necessary, it would be found in the fact that seven times has he been called upon to govern; and this year, in spite of his reputation of belonging to the Left, he has performed the extraordinary feat of governing largely with the support of the Right. For that matter, he belongs, in the formal sense, neither to the Right nor to the Left. He has no party. He has, strictly speaking, no following. He remains, when he is not in office, alone and apart. Well does he know that, when the situation becomes unmanageable, when the Parliamentary team is difficult to drive, his day will again come.

Most of the French politicians — M. Poincaré and M. Viviani are notable instances — combine their rôle of politician with the rôle of journalist, and, when they are not responsible for the government, become the most powerful critics of the government in the press. Such has been the life of M. Clemenceau. Sometimes he has been premier, and at other times he has been a formidable antagonist of the premier, thundering against him, not from the tribune, but from the newspaper that he directed. Now, although M. Briand, like most other French politicians, began his career as journalist, he never takes up the pen in the intervals of office. He does hardly any lobbying; he rarely

Digitized by Google

commits himself in any way. He sits silent until his hour shall again strike. Always is he something of an enigma. Always does he allow the Left to suppose he is their man, and the Right to believe that he is not against them. In the clash and confusion of rival ambitions, it is Briand, the man who makes no useless efforts, the man who knows how to keep a still tongue although he possesses a winning tongue, who is chosen. The speeches that he makes when he is assailed, and the position has become difficult, are the most persuasive speeches that may be heard; but when I read them at length the next day, I generally find that they are full of repetitions and even of contradictions. That is because he addresses himself, now to this side, then to that side. To know the true Briand, it is not sufficient to hear or to read his speeches. One has to remember whom he is addressing, and what is his immediate purpose. One has to be able to distinguish between what is meant for one party, what for another party; what is meant for France and what is meant for Germany; what is meant for England and what is meant for other countries.

I trust that this portrait does not suggest a mere opportunist, in the worst sense of the term. M. Briand certainly is an opportunist, in that he makes use of the varying views of his auditors, in that he stresses now one point and then another point. It was M. Briand who spoke of the occupation of the Ruhr, and it was M. Briand who condemned such a policy as inept. The occasion has always to be considered. But he is an opportunist only as a sailor is an opportunist. When the wind blows from the west, he must spread his sails accordingly; but when the wind veers to the north, he must trim his sails anew. But the sailor knows where he is going and keeps his course. M. Briand has a policy, and he sticks to his policy in spite of apparent and momentary contradictions. He has to reconcile many opinions, and he has to bring the Ship of State safely toward the land that he sees ahead.

There are, of course, different kinds of opportunists, and to use the word without discrimination as a term of opprobrium is altogether wrong. In my opinion, for example, Mr. Lloyd George, who is undoubtedly the greatest opportunist of our century, has, in spite of all kinds of concessions, all kinds of seeming stultifications of his judgment, kept along exactly the same path in international affairs that he indicated to me and to others in March, 1919. When he has seen rocks in the way, he has gone round them. It is so with M. Briand, whose points of resemblance with him could be multiplied. Perhaps it is only the fool who steers straight ahead. One of the chief grievances of a certain section of French politicians is that M. Briand, in calling up Class 19 for the occupation of the Ruhr, did so to discredit that policy and to make its repetition impossible. As to this I will express no opinion; but it will readily be conceived that a politician may appear to do the opposite of that which he intends to do. M. Briand is not a native of Brittany for nothing. It is from Brittany that France recruits most of her sailors. M. Briand is an expert sailor.

The truth is that M. Briand is essentially a man of liberal views. I do not purpose either to defend or to attack him: I wish merely wish to state the facts as I see them; and it is in this spirit that I record my impression, which is corroborated by conversations of a more or less private character that have come to me from friends — conversations in which he has expressed himself with surprising moderation. He is far from being the implacable taskmaster of Germany that he has been

Digitized by Google

represented to be on account of certain episodes. No one knows better than does M. Briand the true need of France — the need of a policy that will reconcile old enemies and establish some measure of economic coöperation in Europe. No one realizes more the need for a reduction of armaments, which is possible only if better relations exist in Europe.

France at this moment has an army that is big enough to conquer the Continent. France is not, strictly speaking, obliged to take heed of the opinion of anyone. She can adopt any coercive methods she pleases, and there is no country that can effectively say her nay. But that would be a fatal course. Not only would it be folly to fly in the face of the world's opinion, but France would certainly not obtain any satisfaction in the shape of additional reparations. The army, whether it is put at 800,000 men or at 700,000, is a tremendous burden for a country in economic difficulties, and all sensible men must desire its reduction. It is a burden on the finances of the country, but it is also a burden on the individual Frenchman, who has to spend what should be the most vital preparatory years of his life in idleness and the demoralizing *milieu* of the barracks. There are those who urge, with justice, that, in the economic struggle, Germany will enjoy a great advantage over France by reason of the fact that she is compelled to keep her army at a negligible number, while France has to support a huge body of non-producers. How could any sane person wish to maintain the army at anything like its present level?

But, on the other hand, so long as national safety is secured, no matter what sacrifice must be made, no matter what handicap must be borne, M. Briand, I believe, is all in favor of making such amicable arrangements with Germany as will enable France to forget this terrible preoccupation of her security. Doubtless he, like all other French statesmen, would prefer that America and England, as promised at the Peace Conference, should come into a tripartite military pact. But he is not, as I understand, an advocate of what amounts to perpetual occupation, or of detachment of the Rhineland from the Reich, as are M. Poincaré, M. Tardieu, and M. Maurice Barrès. The most significant thing that was done under his ministry was the signing of the Loucheur-Rathenau accord, which envisages the collaboration of France and Germany, which (provided Germany remains a non-militaristic republic) presages some sort of friendship between the two countries that, in spite of their hereditary hatreds, intensified since the Armistice, have to live side by side. They can be blood-foes with the certainty of another war, or they can compose their age-long differences. There is no middle course.

IV

This brings me to M. Louis Loucheur — easily, in my opinion, the most remarkable figure in French political life. I said just now that there were no new men. I must modify that statement. M. Loucheur is a new man. He has new methods. He is not a politician, although he is in politics. He is the business man. In France the politicians have become what might, not disrespectfully, be called an 'old gang.' M. Loucheur was not even a deputy when he became minister. He brings a fresh mind to the public problems. He has no prejudices, no traditions, no long training along political lines. He is accustomed to see things as they are. He does not idealize them; he is not a sentimentalist, dealing in abstractions, hypnotized by catch-phrases, as are politicians generally. For me he represents

Digitized by Google

an immense force. He towers over all the rest.

It would be foolish to prophecy, and therefore I shall not assert dogmatically that M. Loucheur will, for the next ten — if not twenty — years, be the real power behind French politics. All I will venture to say is that, at the present moment, he is the man who matters most, and that he should be looked upon, not in his ministerial capacity, but as a man. That is to say, that he will probably continue to occupy a nominally subordinate post. It is extremely unlikely, in my judgment, that he will form a cabinet and put himself at the head of French politics. He is far more likely to remain in the background. But it would be folly to regard him as a supernumerary. He has brains; he has ability; he has energy; he is used to dealing in realities, and he thinks in terms of realities. I do not know whether it has been remarked how unreal politics tend to become, and in what an imaginary world politicians walk. Into this unreal world came M. Loucheur; but he was not corrupted by his environment. He had the advantage of not serving an apprenticeship to politics. He passed through none of the intermediary stages. During the war he controlled numerous companies, and is reputed to be extremely rich, to have made a vast fortune.

It was M. Clemenceau who appealed to him to lend a hand. It was felt that the practical man was the kind of man who was needed to help in the winning of the war and the elaboration of the peace. Only rarely does a non-politician, who has not been elected by the people, find himself called to take up a ministerial office; but in the case of M. Loucheur the experiment was amply justified. I am not blind to the possible disadvantages of thus bringing rich business men into the government. The door is obviously opened to certain abuses. Nor do I consider that the good business man will necessarily make a good minister. Probably the chances are that he will not. But exceptional times call for exceptional men, and M. Loucheur is unquestionably an exceptional man. Afterward, of course, his situation was regularized by his election. He has remained minister through several administrations, and in one capacity or another his services will continue to be enlisted.

It was M. Loucheur who initiated the policy of direct negotiations with Germany, and who oriented France toward the idea of reparations in kind. Had it been possible to impose upon Germany, three years ago, the essential task of repairing the ruined regions of France, there is little doubt that by this time France would have been largely restored; and the speedy restoration would have been worth far more than the nebulous milliards. The two countries would already have settled down on terms of decent neighborliness. Unhappily, everybody was mesmerized by the glittering promise of immense sums hitherto unheard of — sums that could be expressed only in astronomical figures. The consequences might have been foreseen — but they were not, except by the economists. The consequences are the collapse of Germany and the collapse of the treaty. Everybody now realizes that, unless something is done in time, Germany is doomed to bankruptcy. Now, Germany is necessary to Europe, just as Carthage was necessary to ancient Rome. The foolish destruction of Carthage by the Romans deprived them of a base for the Eastern Mediterranean sea-routes. It is easy to look back and make these criticisms. What is of more importance is to look forward, and to appreciate the fact that, if Germany did not exist, it would be necessary to invent her. Nothing more stupid than that policy which would

Digitized by Google

erase Germany from the map of Europe could, I think, be conceived.

Presently, in view of the impending bankruptcy of Germany, it will be necessary to decide between her destruction and her salvation. Should this nation be broken up into fragments; should there be dislocation, economic anarchy, political chaos? Or should there be an abandonment of the system of coercion, of financial squeezing, and such a collaboration be substituted as would enable all countries to draw specific advantages from the continued existence of a Germany that may work with hope? This is the terrific question that must soon be answered in one sense or another. The decision will be determined by the stress that French opinion lays upon certain things. So-called security would seem to suggest the break-up of Germany, politically and economically. This security, however, would be fallacious. In a military sense, France would undoubtedly be secure; but there are also economic considerations. One bankruptcy will entrain another, and no man can foresee the end of the happenings in Europe.

On the other hand, it is dreadfully hard to reconcile one's self to foregoing claims that have been made and promises that have been held out. The choice is, or would appear to be, between two evils. But perhaps the second would turn out to be not an evil at all. I must content myself with posing the problem in an objective manner.

Now, the Loucheur-Rathenau accord is of tremendous import. It is pretended that it supplements, and does not supplant, the London Agreement for the payment by Germany of 132,000,000,000 gold marks, made in virtue of the treaty. In reality, however long the pretense is kept up, it must be taken as an entirely new system. The London Agreement asks for impossible sums spread over an impossible period of years, and is already breaking down, since Germany simply cannot go on meeting her obligations. The Loucheur Agreement stipulates that Germany shall pay in goods, in *matériel*, a limited amount for the next five years, not to the Allies in general, but to France in particular. This means that common bargaining is abandoned. It means that France, preparing for the crash, is endeavoring to secure for herself, as she has in equity an undoubted right to do, a certain portion of her credits on Germany, and is anxious at least to have the North repaired. It is possible that, when Germany ceases to pay everyone else, she will continue to pay France in kind. She can hardly do both, and it seems to me that France is contracting out of the London Agreement. France is coming to a voluntary arrangement with Germany. As France for the next five years may be paid more than is due to her under the London Agreement, she might be satisfied, and might not resort, in exasperation, to methods of coercion and of sanctions. France, be it noted, is the only country which could or would resort to serious coercion and sanctions.

This policy of M. Loucheur, then, is intensely realist, and denotes a complete change in the manner of regarding the Franco-German problem. It foreshadows a very much wider system of coöperation. It may be the turning-point in European affairs. Its bearing upon the possibility of land-disarmament is obvious.

V

It would be foolish to be too optimistic. Not all French statesmen think on these lines. There is M. Raymond Poincaré, the ex-President of the Republic, who will, in all probability, be called at an early date to the premiership, controlling the destinies of France. I think I am betraying no secret when I say that the ultimate policy of M. Poincaré

Digitized by Google

is to move toward the same system of collaboration with Germany. But he reserves that policy for the future. For the present, to judge him by his writing, — and he is the most prolific journalist in France, contributing regularly to the *Revue des Deux Mondes*, the *Temps*, and the *Matin*, — he believes in turning the screw on Germany as tightly as it may be turned. He was thrust aside by M. Clemenceau in the peacemaking. Although President, he was reduced to silence. He had no effective way of protesting, but he has put on record, in a memorandum addressed to M. Clemenceau, his strong opinion that the limitation of the period of occupation of Germany to fifteen years was disastrous for France. He would have the occupation extended to such time as it will take Germany to fulfill all the monetary obligations of the treaty — which, being interpreted, means forever.

M. Tardieu, the chief assistant of M. Clemenceau, argues that this right is actually conferred by the treaty itself; but M. Tardieu's arguments will not bear examination.

M. Poincaré, in addition, has always shown himself to be one of those ardent, patriotic Frenchmen who believe that the contemporaneous existence of a strong Germany and a prosperous, secure France is impossible. After he retired from the Presidency, he was made Chairman of the Reparations Commission. He resigned because the Reparations Commission showed a tendency to reduce the German debt to more manageable proportions. At each successive abandonment of some French right, he has fulminated against the Premier in office. One can only suppose that, when he becomes Premier himself, he will carry out his policy of no concessions. No concessions, now that the original demands are shown to be, however justified, inexecutable, spells the final ruin of Germany, and, as most people think, the greater embarrassment of France. It is perhaps wrong to suppose that a statesman in office will behave as a statesman out of office writes. He is bound to modify his conceptions in accordance with changing circumstances and proved facts. Nevertheless, one must take M. Poincaré to be what he paints himself to be.

I should certainly describe him as the most formidable of the politicians proper in France. He has a tremendous force. He has been peculiarly consistent in his attitude toward Germany, from the days when he was raised, as a *bon Lorrain*, to the Presidency in the year before the war. His prestige is enormous. There are living at this moment no fewer than four former Presidents of the Republic. As the term of office is seven years, this is a somewhat remarkable fact. But whoever hears of Émile Loubet, or of Armand Fallières? They have gone to trim their vines or to live quietly in complete obscurity. After their occupation of the Élysée, there was no place for them in public life. M. Deschanel, it is true, is a member of the Senate, but he is only nominally in politics. M. Poincaré is made in another mould. Still comparatively young, with an alert mind, full of ambition unsatiated, believing that he is the strong man that his country needs, he declines to be buried alive, and is taking a notable revenge for his impotence during the latter years at the Élysée. He is the indefatigable critic.

VI

I regret that my space will not permit me to treat of other French politicians so fully, but these men are, after all, the really representative men of French politics. M. René Viviani is a highly successful lawyer, gifted with the most amazing flow of language that it has ever been my lot to listen to. The

Digitized by Google

words simply pour out. He has been Premier, and during the early part of the war performed good service. He has been sent to America on missions not clearly defined — the vague kind of mission that is meant to awaken sympathy, and, indeed, does so. It was hoped that he might influence Washington with regard to the cancellation of debts; but as it was afterward found an inopportune moment to broach this delicate subject, he came out with a denunciation of those who made such proposals, on the ground that Germany might also ask for the cancellation of her debts.

M. Barthou is an impetuous patriot, a somewhat fiery man, conspicuous as a supporter of the Three Years' Military Service Law. He has written, with rather more intimacy than some of us think justifiable, of the private affairs of Sainte-Beuve and Victor Hugo.

My own favorite French statesman — a man whom I consider to be the finest, the noblest, of our time — is M. Léon Bourgeois, the colleague of M. Viviani on the French delegation to the League of Nations. His has been a well-filled life, singularly free from intrigue, singularly free from ambition (he might have aspired to any post, including the Presidency), devoted solely to the furtherance of the idea of the League. Before Mr. Wilson had ever made the suggestion of such an organization, he was already old in its service. He took the leading part in the deliberations of The Hague. I know him well and am happy to pay a tribute to his kindliness, his simplicity, his unselfishness, and his generous thought for humanity. There are not many Bourgeois in the world, so hard-working, so self-sacrificing, so single-minded.

Among the younger men, M. André Tardieu is undoubtedly the ablest, with the best-stored mind. He is inclined to a sort of priggishness, of superiority, that makes him unpopular, but he will probably come into his own again.

There are two officials who will, unless something unexpected happens, play extremely important parts, whether at Washington or at Paris.

Of M. Jules Jusserand it is necessary to say only that he is respected as the most adequate ambassador that France possesses. He is too well known in America to need my eulogy. England has long envied America his possession. He is tactful, active, and has a unique knowledge — an altogether indispensable man. He occupies far too strong a position ever to be displaced. If he is left in charge of part of the proceedings at Washington, France will be represented by a judicious, sagacious, likable man, not likely to make any mistake from the diplomatic standpoint.

At the head of the permanent staff at the Quai d'Orsay is Philippe Berthelot. Berthèlot has a memory that is an encyclopædia of foreign affairs. There are archives at the Quai d'Orsay, but the real archives are under the cranium of Philippe Berthelot. In France ministries change frequently. Often no record — or an insufficient record — is kept of negotiations engaged in by the predecessors of the ministries in power. But Philippe Berthelot knows. He can supply the information. He is sometimes the only man who can supply it. It may be urged that it is bad business to give one man the extraordinary power that is thus given to M. Berthelot; but he is sound and shrewd, and whenever he is directly responsible for policy, his judgments are excellent. He is the son of the famous chemist who instituted and developed research work in the properties of coal. M. Berthelot in his early days explored and studied China, and is an authority on Asiatic matters. Ministers may come and ministers may go, but Philippe Berthelot remains.

Digitized by Google

THE DISSOLUTION OF PETROGRAD

BY JEAN SOKOLOFF [1]

DEAR MARGARET, —

Cut off, as I have been since the spring of 1918, from all my friends in England and Scotland, I must seem to you now as one who has returned from the Land of the Dead. And truly I feel, since my release from the terrors of Soviet Russia, that I have escaped from an existence hardly better than death. Of all my dreadful experiences in Petrograd I cannot write, but I must tell you of some which, here in far-off America, still haunt me like awful nightmares.

After the Revolution of February, 1917, and particularly after the fall of Kerensky, eight or nine months later, the position of the moneyed classes became rapidly desperate, and I soon found myself in a precarious situation. What a change had come over my fortunes! Here I was, the elderly widow of a Russian naval officer, British by birth but Russian by marriage. My husband had left me at his death with an ample income from several investments which seemed perfectly secure. In my long years of residence in Petrograd I had come to love the beautiful city, and I had no intention of leaving it. Why should I? In Petrograd I had friends, possessions, money, servants, and heart's ease but for my husband's death. I could look forward to declining years of comfortable leisure.

Then came the Revolution and Bolshevist rule, and my prospects melted like mist in the sun. My investments became worthless, my chattels were nationalized. I dismissed my last servant, and soon I was suffering privations and hardships I had never dreamed of, and living amid horrors that I had never seen in my wildest delirium.

Of the political and social changes that took place in Russia, and of the ruin into which the poor country rapidly sank, you have read much in recent months, for the Bolsheviki could not conceal these changes forever. I will tell you, therefore, of only some of the things I saw and some of the hardships I suffered in Petrograd. This account I have taken pains to make simple and unvarnished. As I look back now upon my experiences, I do so without spite or resentment against the misguided people who were the cause of so much sorrow. Perhaps my sufferings have made me apathetic; but it seems to me now as if I and the Jean Sokoloff of the last two or three years in Russia were not the same person.

At the beginning everybody spoke of the Revolution as bloodless, and so it was — at first; but, later, dreadful tragedies were enacted. All police officers and government officials who showed loyalty to the Tsar were immediately shot. Not far from my house nine were executed on the second day of the Revolution. For a long time it was quite unsafe to go out into the streets, as there was a great deal of shooting; quick-firing guns were mounted on high buildings, and no one knew when there might be a rain of bullets. In the Nevsky Prospect and other principal streets motor-lorries, bristling with rifles and

[1] This letter recounts, of course, authentic personal experiences. — THE EDITORS.

Digitized by Google

quick-firing guns and packed with students and other revolutionists, caused excitement and terrorized the people.

The opening of the prisons and the release of all criminals made both life and property very unsafe, especially since there were no police officers. Robberies were frequent, and after dark pedestrians were often stripped of their boots and their upper garments. One lady whom I knew was coming home one evening wearing a long coat of black Persian lamb. Two men stopped her and asked her if she wished to buy a fur coat. She replied that she did not require to, as she had the one she was wearing. 'Why,' they said, 'that is the very one we mean'; and as she did not have the money to redeem it, they took it from her. At length the people took matters into their own hands, and when they caught a robber, they lynched him straight away, and threw his body into a canal. A decree was issued that everybody over sixteen was to take his turn as night-watchman. That is, if a house was rented in seven flats, let us say, each flat had to provide a watch for one night in the week.

I shall never forget my first experience as watchman. Imagine me, an elderly lady with no bloodthirsty ideas whatever, sitting at the great gate which led to the inner court, with a loaded gun across my knees! My watch was from 11 P.M. to 4 A.M., and I was under instructions to shoot if anybody refused to give his name or to tell why he wished admission. I was far more afraid of the gun than I was of any robber who might appear; and taking pity on me, our old house-porter hung up a battered tea-tray near me, and, giving me a stick, told me to bang on the tray if I needed help. Fortunately, I did not have to make use of either the gun or the tray.

On another occasion, the good old porter did me an even more valuable service. A decree was issued that no one renting a house could claim for himself more than two rooms at most; the rest of the house, furnished and with the use of the kitchen, must be given to whoever from the working class might want to use it. Soon there appeared at my door a workingwoman, dirty and unkempt, but arrogant, who demanded that I give up a certain number of rooms to her. The house-porter told the woman and the Bolshevist official who supported her in her demand, that I had a male lodger; I showed them some of my husband's clothes and a man's hat and walking-stick which I had laid out in one of the rooms, and the porter exhibited a false entry which he had made in the house-book. The invaders were satisfied and departed.

Some time after this experience I was obliged to give up my home and rent a room in the dwelling of a friend. As my investments had become worthless, I had applied, many months before my removal, for permission to sell my furniture; as all property had become nationalized, I could not sell my own chattels without a permit. This was finally granted to me on the ground that I was a widow. Shortly after I had moved to my friend's house, we experienced our first armed raid. We were roused from our beds at about two in the morning by five armed men and two women, who said they had come to search for firearms. They nosed into every corner and examined all photographs. My husband's photograph in naval uniform they left, after I had told them that he was dead; but the photographs of King George and King Edward and the Tsar they tore into bits and stamped under foot. Some money and jewelry I had hidden behind pictures and among the tea in the tea-caddy. These valuables they did not discover, and, strange to say, they examined all my boxes excepting the one in which I had packed what table silver

Digitized by Google

I had not yet sold. After an hour and a half they left. Everything was turned upside-down: bedding, pillows, books, clothing — all were heaped in the middle of the floor.

In a few weeks we had a second midnight raid; but this time they were searching for incriminating documents and did not disturb any of our personal belongings. In November, 1919, we experienced the worst raid of all. Every letter or scrap of written matter my friend and I possessed was taken from us, and we were also relieved of whatever personal effects appealed to the invaders. From me they took all my husband's medals and decorations. I begged them to allow me to keep the crosses of Saint Anna and of Stanislav as a remembrance of him, but they refused saying, 'No one has orders now, and we need the gold.' After searching for nearly two hours, they ordered my friend to get on some clothes, as she must go with them. They took her away at four o'clock in the morning, and she was kept in prison for three months. At the end of that time she was released; but she was never given the satisfaction of knowing why she was arrested.

I was most fortunate, as I was arrested only once and was not then sent to prison. When I came home one day, a soldier arrested me at my door and marched me off to a hall where there were several other prisoners. There we were detained for eight hours, and then released without any explanation as to the cause of our arrest.

One did not have to be in prison to know what hunger means. Those of us who were not imprisoned learned the lesson only too well. Lack of food became more and more acute, and the prices were such that it was impossible to earn enough in one day to buy even a pound of black bread. Milk cost 250 rubles a bottle, and was well watered at that. Potatoes were 200 rubles a pound, and were often half-frozen. Tea and coffee cost thousands of rubles the pound. For a time I drank an infusion of black-currant leaves and also of cranberry leaves, which would have been quite pleasant if I could have had any sugar. The Bolsheviki opened soup-kitchens, for which each person received a monthly ticket on application to a certain department of the Soviet. Often I have stood for a long, long time in a queue, waiting with a pitcher to receive a portion of soup, which was simply water, with some cabbage-leaves or pieces of frozen potato floating in it. For this the charge was eight rubles. Hunger made me glad to eat this soup, but there were days when it smelled so bad, especially when they had added herring heads to it, that I gave it to someone in the queue, or poured it out.

The members of the working class received a special ticket and got a second dish, perhaps some potatoes or a salt herring; but these extras were denied to the Intelligentsia, who suffered far more than did the workers. Sometimes, when it was impossible to procure bread, many of us used to buy turnips and eat them raw as a substitute. You will be surprised that we did not boil them, but we found them more satisfying when raw. As they were very dear, we could not afford to buy more than a few. Some who were hungry even made soup of fresh green grass. This I never tried, but soup made of rhubarb leaves I found could be eaten. At first, when we still had coffee, we used to mix a little flour with the coffee-grounds, and make cookies; but I must say that I could eat these only when I was very hungry. The Intelligentsia could receive on their bread-cards only two ounces per day; and when it was possible to buy any extra, the price was exorbitant. The working class was allowed much more. Any extra bread

Digitized by Google

could be bought only by chance on the street, from peasants, or in the open market, and often there was more sawdust and minced straw in it than flour. Frequently, when the Bolsheviki ran out of flour, so that they were unable to give us bread on our bread-cards, they substituted oats; but the amount was so meagre that, when we ground it down, very little flour came out.

All stores and shops were closed, and one could buy only in the open markets. Butter in 1919 sold at 2800 rubles per pound, and bacon at 3000. Peasants brought in milk and produce from the country and bartered it for clothing. They did not want money, as they said there was nothing to buy with it. It was sad to see ladies standing in the market, bartering or selling their beautiful dresses and linen to get money for food. As long as they had things to sell, they got good prices; but what was to be done, once they had parted with all their belongings? It was no uncommon thing to see peasant women wearing beautiful fur coats and exquisite evening dresses and also jewelry, probably received in exchange for food.

Some ladies, friends of mine, who were formerly well to do, had to sell flowers and newspapers in the street, to earn a livelihood. All women under fifty years of age had to take their turn at sweeping the snow on the streets, breaking up the ice, and emptying the dust-bins.

There were so many sick that the hospitals were over-crowded. The lack of even the most necessary medicines was great. In former times Germany provided great quantities of the medicaments used. Doctors were scarce, as so many had been sent to the front. Typhus, of course, was raging and claimed many victims. A friend of mine, who went to one of the hospitals to identify a relative who had died, told me that, in the mortuary, the bodies were stacked from floor to ceiling, like logs of wood, and many of them much decomposed. The difficulty was to get a sufficient supply of coffins. Two bodies were placed in each coffin, which was merely a few boards of wood roughly nailed together. One could often see carts piled up with these coffins, which were taken outside of the city, where the bodies were put into a pit and the coffins brought back to be used for the bodies of other victims. Those whose friends died at home had to convey the coffins themselves to the cemetery, either on a sledge or otherwise.

The funeral of a Bolshevik was a very grand affair. The coffin was always covered with bright-red cloth, the hearse also being draped in red, and with wreaths from which scarlet ribbons were suspended. There was always a band, and a procession with many red banners flying. Processions bearing red banners, eulogizing Communism or Bolshevism and denouncing the old régime, were a common sight.

The suffering of poor animals was also terrible, and horses dropped dead on the street from starvation. The fodder was so bad that horses that were starving would turn away from it. Behind the house where I lived the Bolsheviki had a number of horses stabled. Every week I saw several dead ones carried out; and one of the soldiers who cared for the animals told me that there was not a scrap of woodwork left within reach of the horses, because they had gnawed it all away in their hunger. If a dead horse were left in the street at night, by the next day nothing would be left of it but the ribs and perhaps the head, upon which some gaunt dog would be gnawing. People had come in the night and taken away all other parts of the carcass for food. Many ate cats and dogs, and said the flesh tasted good.

Many a night I was not able to sleep for hunger. But lack of food was not my

Digitized by Google

only privation. Before the Revolution I had never known what it was to be cold indoors; wood, which was used for fuel in Petrograd, was plentiful and cheap. During my last two winters there, there was great suffering caused by lack of fuel. In Finland and parts of Russia there was plenty of wood, cut and ready to be sent to the cities; but the transportation system had broken down completely. This want of wood became more and more acute; many wooden dwelling-houses were pulled down, and all wooden fencing around gardens and wooden walks was utilized for fuel. More than once I was thankful when I could buy an old beam, tie a rope around my waist, and drag it home to be sawed up into short pieces. We were permitted to buy only a small quantity each month and had to show the paper with the date of the preceding purchase, which was compared with the entry in the official books. Often I have left the house in pitch darkness (no lights in the streets), at four o'clock on a winter's morning, to get my place in the queue at the wood-store, so as to be one of the first to be attended to when the office opened at ten o'clock. It was no joke to wait six hours with the temperature below zero. Sometimes the soldiers who were on duty would admit us to a room they had and permit us to warm ourselves for a few minutes. By ten o'clock there were hundreds in line, and when you reached the window you were given only a piece of paper which entitled you to receive the wood on a specified day. Think of what this meant to poor mothers who had to leave young children at home for hours! One poor woman in the queue one morning had a sick baby which she could not leave at home; it died in her arms before she reached the window.

The shortage of food and the other privations all helped to make us more sympathetic toward one another, and we did all in our power to help one another. One of my pupils (for I was trying to keep body and soul together by teaching English) was a Russian naval officer; he used to bring me occasionally a small piece of bread which he had left over. He was serving under the Bolsheviki — under compulsion, like so many others. It was his plan to learn to speak English and then to try to escape from Russia. To my great sorrow, for he was my favorite pupil and could converse fairly well in English, he was arrested by his masters and sent away to Cologda. I never could find out the reason for his arrest or hear anything further about him. He once told me that, if he were arrested, he would take his own life; and I often wonder if he is still alive.

I was deeply touched one day by a workingwoman's bringing me a teaspoonful of dry tea. This was a wonderful present, as she had only a very small quantity, which had been given to her, and tea was at a premium. I did not wish to accept it, but she insisted, because sometimes I had helped her and her children with a little food, and had once procured a situation for her.

So in such ways we tried to cheer one another. Often, when one did show a little kindness, one was repaid fourfold or more. I remember that once, when crossing the Nicholas Bridge, I came upon an elderly lady struggling to carry a very heavy bag. I asked her in what direction she was going, and as it was not very far from my own destination, I carried the bag home for her. When she thanked me at parting, she said, 'I hope that, if ever you have to carry something that is too heavy for you, you also will meet some kind person to help you.' A few days later I had to bring to my home some wood which was very heavy. I tried to carry it on my back, but found it beyond my strength to do so, as my house was quite

Digitized by Google

a good distance away. Just as I was sitting on a doorstep wondering whatever I should do, a soldier came along, and I summoned up my courage to ask if he would help me, even for a short distance. He immediately picked up the wood, slung it on his back, and asked me where I lived. When I told him, he said, 'I can easily go by that street.' He took me right to the door of my house, and when I offered him money, he refused. 'I was only too glad to help you,' he said; 'I should not like to see my mother carry such a load.' The old lady's wish for me was not long in being realized.

On the streets one seldom encountered an old person, all having died from malnutrition. Some elderly people, unable to work and add to their small incomes, suffered terribly, as food prices were impossible. In the homes for old men and women, where, under the old régime, they were well fed, many deaths from starvation took place every week.

One thing the Bolsheviki tried to do was to feed the children. They had no use for old people and even said openly that they ought to die; but they had to think of the rising generation, for the future of the country. At the schools, children received a free dinner, which consisted of soup and a good piece of black bread, or often some cooked cereal. Of course, there was no fat in the food and little nourishment for growing children. Then the Bolsheviki tried to nationalize the children, asking the parents to give them up at a certain age, that they might be brought up and educated in colonies and trained in all the principles of Bolshevism. When I left, in 1920, they were trying to carry this out; but the parents objected, so I do not know what success they met with later. One mother said to me, 'Where is the joy of motherhood if I must give up my child whenever his infancy is over?'

With all my suffering I cannot but feel that God dealt mercifully with me. I will give you one instance of this. On Christmas Eve, 1918, I was alone and without a scrap of food in the house. As I thought back over my past happy life and the loved ones who had gone from me, I naturally felt much depressed. How I could manage to live to the New Year, I could not imagine. Before retiring to rest that night, I asked God to send me some food. The next morning, at eight o'clock, the back-door bell rang; and when I opened the door, I saw standing there an old servant who had served me faithfully for seventeen years, but whom I had had to dismiss several months previously because of my inability to feed her. Her people were farmers in Poland. She said that she had come to spend Christmas with me and that she had brought with her some provisions, such as black bread, flour, and a little bacon, and some sugar and potatoes. Truly, this was an answer to prayer. In those trying times we learned to live by the day and to rest on the promise, 'As thy days, so shall thy strength be.'

Many whom I knew, who were serving under the Bolsheviki, were merely doing so to earn a livelihood, and it was indeed hard for them to serve such masters. In fact, many were at the point of starvation when they accepted positions under the Soviet. As one put it, 'To all appearances we are Red, but we are just like red radishes; scratch us but a little and we are white underneath.'

Of course, you know that in Russia the custom of giving tips (or, as it is called there, tea-money) was carried to great lengths. If you dined with friends, or paid a call, you were expected to tip the servant who removed your overcoat or wrap. At Christmas and Easter the *dvoriks*, postmen, chimney-sweeps, and men who polished your floors, all called upon you, to receive their tea-

Digitized by Google

money. I heard a very good story relative to this habit of tipping. After the Revolution, everyone was supposed to be on the same level — no distinction of class. The working class was delighted with this equality. An officer who frequently visited at the house of some friends, had been in the habit of giving the house-porter a liberal tip each time. On his first visit after the Revolution, the porter met him with the greeting, 'Well, comrade, how are you?' and shook him by the hand. The officer, returning the handshake, answered, 'Thank you, comrade, I am well.' At the conclusion of the visit, when the porter opened the door for the officer, the latter held out his hand and said, 'Good-bye. Of course, now we are comrades, it is impossible for me to offer you a tip.' The man was so taken aback that his hand dropped to his side and his jaw fell with astonishment. In this case, he did not appreciate the equality.

In 1919 quite a number of British and other subjects escaped without passes from the Bolsheviki, who had forbidden anyone to leave Petrograd. Those who escaped did so by the back door, as it was called in Russia, that is, illegally, through Finland. There was a secret society which, for large sums of money, arranged these escapes, taking the fugitives across the ice. It was a hazardous journey, and no one could undertake it with children, as they had long distances to walk, and often had to crawl on their hands and knees, or lie flat in a bog, while the Bolsheviki were throwing searchlights on the frontier. All fugitives had to wear some covering of white over their clothes, so as to be less liable to be seen on the white snow. I met one lady in Finland who had thus escaped. Her experiences had been so terrible that her eyeballs stuck out, from the nervous strain she had undergone.

Many and strange were the subterfuges employed to get out of Russia. A Scotch friend of mine, who had married a Russian and thus become a Russian subject, got permission to leave with her three little children, by going before the Soviet with her husband. There they asked to be divorced. A few questions were asked them, one of which was, if the mother wished the children. She answered 'Yes,' and a paper was written out, for which they paid the small sum of ten rubles, according them the divorce, and giving back to my friend her British nationality, so that she was able to leave the country with her three little ones in April, 1920. The husband, of course, had to remain behind; but it was easier for a man to get along alone, than if he had a wife and children to feed.

In the early part of 1920, when I saw different parties of British refugees finally being permitted to leave Russia while I was detained as a Russian subject because of my marriage, I lost all hope of ever getting away. By this time my health was much impaired; my feet and legs, and often my face, were badly swollen, and at times I felt so giddy that it was hard for me to get along. Owing to physical weakness, I suppose, I became quite apathetic and did not seem to care what became of me, although I realized that I could not live through another such winter as the last, since I had already parted with nearly all my belongings and would have nothing to supplement my earnings. Early in April we were told that the Bolsheviki were considering the advisability of allowing the British-born widows of Russian subjects to leave the country, and a few days later a decree was published according this permission. In five days we must leave with some other refugees. Permits and passes had to be obtained. No books or written matter of any kind could be taken with us, and I even had to get the Soviet stamp put

Digitized by Google

on my Bible, and on some photographs that I wished to take with me.

I cannot tell you all the details of my journey out of Russia, for it is a long story. About two in the afternoon of April 13, we finally approached the point near the frontier where persons and luggage were to be examined. The examination was very thorough: all the women were undressed, their shoes and stockings taken off, and even their hair taken down. Even so, many managed to smuggle their diamonds through, and I was able to slip into my box an old glove containing a pair of large solitaire diamond earrings belonging to a friend. I was fortunate in being one of the last to be examined, and so I was allowed to pass more easily.

After the examination we were taken by a train a little farther, to the frontier line, which is determined by a swift and narrow running stream. It is utterly impossible to describe our feelings as we stepped from the bridge on the other side and stood once again on free soil. Many hearts were full of thankfulness to God, who had delivered us from the power and tyranny of the Bolsheviki. It was difficult to realize the fact that now they could no longer harm us, and we need have no more fears, or nights of terror when sleep forsook our eyes from the dread of arrest. When we crossed the frontier, we were greeted by members of the British Red Cross, who congratulated us warmly on our escape. With them were some British and Irish officers who had just been released from prisons in Moscow. One of their number, belonging to a Highland regiment, wore tartan; and when I saw this bit of transplanted Scotland, my eyes filled with tears and my weak knees grew weaker with emotion. I doubt if the pipes of Lucknow created greater emotion in any breast than did that plaid in mine.

I turned to Janet MacDonald, who had come out of Russia with me after much suffering and imprisonment. The tears were rolling down her cheeks. She buried her face on my shoulder and sobbed out in a transport of joy, 'O Jean, Jean, the tartan breeks, the tartan breeks!'

There is little more to tell. From the frontier we were taken to Terioki on the Gulf of Finland, where we were all examined by a doctor and detained in quarantine for a month. At the end of the month we were taken to Helsingfors, the seaport of Finland, and there embarked on the transport Dongola for Southampton.

Just outside of London was a home for Russian refugees. To this home we were all taken, and here I remained for some weeks until I could inquire about my Scottish relatives and friends. I had not heard from them for years, and undoubtedly some of the letters they wrote to me were among the thousands that were stacked in a huge pile in the courtyard of the General Post Office in Petrograd and eventually burned. A small box contained all my earthly possessions, and, as I looked at it, I came more and more to realize the uncertainty of riches and the need of setting our affections on things above. After several months I finally received my naturalization papers and was again a British subject; and in January, 1921, I left England for America, to visit my only brother in far-off Montana.

Here, amid the changing majesty of these mountains, my mind often turns back to dear Russia, and the tears fill my eyes. I spent many years there in a happy home; and the soil in which I laid my loved ones to rest will ever be sacred. Now the newspapers are bringing tales of more suffering and more famine in that unhappy country. May the good God save Russia, and guide the hearts and hands that would rescue her and bring her out of her distress!

Digitized by Google

A SUGGESTION ON COAL

BY WALTER L. BALLOU

In his article 'What Shall We Do About Coal?' in the September *Atlantic*, Arthur E. Suffern has suggested a remedy through gradual extension of government control over the waste in natural resources and man-power which present mining methods entail. It is to be doubted whether many who are conversant with the industry will quarrel with his premise; there is every reason to know that there are many who, having the best interest of the industry at heart, will quarrel with his suggested remedy. Nor is the quarrel prompted exclusively by selfish motives — past experience has convinced many of the inadequate costliness of the Government's attempt to control the industry.

It is a truism that the history of American development has been the history of wasted natural resources. Man seldom thinks of conservation until the approach of total consumption of a natural resource prompts him to do so. This is true of forests, agricultural resources, and mines. It is true of man-power and the potential possibilities of man-power, to such an extent, that it has been said that in its treatment of men America is to-day wasting her greatest natural resource.

Conservation is out of the question without the moral support of the public that consumes the product to be conserved. As long as an industry dealing with a natural resource is operated on a competitive basis, so long must waste be the key-note of operation. One mine-operator is forced, for instance, to mine the cream of his potential output, in order to meet the competition from another operator who is doing the same thing. He cannot mine 'clean,' because the cost of such mining will not permit him to meet the competition of the producer who does not mine clean.

The result is to be found in England, where to-day the pits have been worked far back, and each year sees an added cost of production, making more difficult the competition that the British producer has to meet. It is true that, if present mining methods continue in this country unchecked, America will eventually have to face the same problem.

There is no question as to the overproduction of coal in the country, caused by an over-development of mines. That, too, is the result of the basis of open competition that obtains. Good years in the industry call forth the opening of new mines, or the reopening of old ones that have been idle during dull years. What control, other than through government ownership, can the Government exercise, which will check the natural effort of one man to make money in a market where others are making it?

Admitting the evil, we believe there is a solution which, while at the further end of the social pole, will come nearer to being a solution than that proposed by Mr. Suffern. Let us first consider some of the evils which might be expected to accompany government control, and then state the suggestion.

During the 'tight' coal market of the summer of 1920, various attempts at control were made by the Government,

Digitized by Google

directed chiefly toward forcing lower prices. These were attempted through regulation of the car-supply by priority orders favoring coal-movements. One priority order alone, however, which in effect permitted the abrogation of contracts with dock operators in the northwest, — if, in fact, it did not force that abrogation, — resulted in adding approximately $13,000,000 to the fuel-bill of that section, without getting a pound more coal moved into the territory than would have moved without the orders. Other priority orders, intended to make possible greater production, resulted in a dispersion of available equipment to an extent which militated against the object in view.

As to control by the Government in other industries, the railroads and the merchant marine are eloquent of what waste is possible and actual under such direction. Not only was there an actual loss of millions of dollars during federal operation of the roads, but the loyalty of the railroad men was squandered to an almost irremediable extent. Recent figures given out by the present head of the Shipping Board show that the loss in that venture alone ran higher than $1,000,000 daily during the last fiscal year of operation.

Nor is this condition one that is due to questionable motives or willful intent. Government control lacks that personal interest which nature has decreed must underlie conservation. There is a lack of centralization of responsibility that no idealism of good intent can offset. Delegation of authority and responsibility carries with it a cost which prohibits conservation as it fosters waste. In New Zealand, where government operation of mining in the coal-industry has been tried, it has been found that production costs were higher and labor troubles greater and more frequent than under private operation. The experiment has resulted in less, rather than more, conservation of both money and good-will.

That control is necessary before conservation can be accomplished is evident, since conservation means control. May we suggest that that control can best be effected by increasing industry control, rather than lessening it through the introduction of government control? Railroad heads to-day are confronted by the evils of divided authority as the result of a paternalistic attitude on the part of Government. They are much in the state in which Browning's Saul found himself, — 'death gone, life not come,' — unable to put into effect those economies that are essential if railroad transportation is to recover from its present chaotic condition. Is it not reasonable to believe that an extension of control over coal to government agencies would have a similar result in this industry?

The history of what is commonly called 'big business' has been marked by a degree of conservation that has not been found in other forms of industrial arrangement. Whether we take the packing industry, the steel industry, or the petroleum industry, the gathering of control into a few hands has made possible a saving and elimination of waste that never could have existed, and did not exist, under open competition between hundreds and thousands of small firms and individuals. 'Big business' not only has adopted modern methods of production, accounting, marketing, and 'labor-adjusting,' but has developed raw natural resources to the highest degree, bringing forth by-products in profusion out of what under former management had been waste. Through maximum production, which this control fostered, prices have been frequently lowered as compared with prices under competitive conditions. Monopoly, with all it is frequently said to imply, has been a benefactor

Digitized by Google

to the public as well as to the industry in which it is born.

In the coal-mining industry such a monopoly would have even greater possibilities for good than in most other industries. Present overdevelopment in coal lands has resulted in wasteful dispersion of railroad equipment, increasing the cost of transportation of fuel, and, in times of emergency, cutting down the potential haulage of the roads. Were the coal lands of the country in the hands of a comparatively few well-financed corporations, new lands would be held in reserve while old ones were being developed along modern scientific lines. Without the struggle that now is frequently necessary in the attempt to meet necessary overhead expenses, it would be possible to install permanent equipment needed for economic mining; the operator would know that he could depreciate that equipment on a producing-time, rather than on a largely idle-time, basis, and would not feel the necessity to recover his investment in a year or two.

Such control would also tend to minimize the waste in man-power that accompanies present methods. Introduction of modern machinery would be one factor; but the elimination of hundreds of mines from operation would in itself release thousands of men from the industry for other employment, and at the same time tend to increase the annual working time of those who remained. Conservation would be accomplished also in the selling end of the industry, since duplication of merchandizing forces would be unnecessary.

It is true that, as in other industries, such concentration in a small circle of control of the vast coal resources of the country would carry with it possibilities of evils and dangers; but it is to be doubted whether these would be as great, from the public's standpoint, as would the waste and inadequacy of government control. The public has not forgotten that heatless days and lightless nights were never known outside of federal control of coal, and that they happened then even after war-inconveniences were past. It may have forgotten that it was government interference that gave the union miners a wage-rate which is largely responsible for the present high price of fuel; and that it was government operation of the railroads which brought about freight-rates on coal that are the other real factor in present coal prices. It finds it possible under monopolistic conditions in the petroleum field to buy gasoline at a satisfactory price and with satisfactory service. It has voiced its sentiments in favor of private control of private business, and it stands ready, we believe, to back that expression, if need be, by revoking its presidential choice of 1920 if the present administration fails to deliver on its pledge.

The Government has been far more successful in coping with the evils of private monopolistic tendencies than it has been in attempts at direct control of an industry. In those fields where a few well-financed firms have gained control of the output, — as in Franklin County, Illinois, for instance, — a stability of policy tending toward efficiency is to be noted, as well as a stability of price in what may be called runaway markets. Is it not reasonable to suggest that an expansion of this control, rather than that of Government, may in the end prove the solution of the problem, and result in a real conservation of coal?

Digitized by Google

THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

MY WIFE'S ADDRESS-BOOK

I WONDER whether other women's address-books are like Cynthia's. Hers defies definition: it cannot be indexed or codified, but must be interpreted by its amazing creator. To give an idea of the system by which it has been compiled I must quote a specific instance.

The other day a lady who was calling on my wife inquired whether she could recommend a good laundress.

'Oh, certainly!' cried the practical Cynthia, 'I always keep the names and addresses of everyone who can possibly be useful to anyone. Algernon,' she called out to me as I was trying to read the paper in the next room, 'just look in my book of Social and Domestic Emergencies and tell me Nora Mahoney's address. It is something River Street.'

Obediently I took up the little red book with its alphabetical pages, and turning to the M's, ran my finger down the list, encountering on the way an alien group of P's who had somehow strayed into the wrong fold. There was no Mahoney among them. But I knew some of my wife's mental processes, and, nothing daunted, I turned to the N's, remembering that Cynthia had once dropped the remark that very few of the people she had ever employed seemed to have last names. There was no Nora among the Nightwatchmen, the Nurses, the Nellys, and the Neds. 'Is your name M or N?' I murmured as I abandoned both initials and turned to L for Laundress. Again I was thwarted, but my hunting-blood was stirred, and I feverishly, but vainly, sought the needle of a Nora in the haystack of Hired Help.

'Don't you find it, dear?' inquired Cynthia with a note of gentle surprise. 'Perhaps you had better let me look. You can never seem to learn my system of registration.'

When the mystic volume was in her hands, she appeared to go into a trance, and with eyes closed muttered, 'Let me see now, would it be under W for Washerwoman? No. Perhaps it might be under G for General Housework — don't you remember, Algernon, how cleverly Nora was always able to do things that we did n't want her to do? Here are the G's, — let me see, — Gasman, Gymnasium teacher, Mrs. Gordon, Glove Cleansing, Miss Grant, Oh, here we are! General Housework! Oh, no, that is n't Housework, it's General Houston — don't you remember that delightful man with the military moustache we met in Virginia? He gave me his card, and I just jotted his name down in my address-book. I put him among the G's because I knew that though I might forget his name, I should never forget that he was a General; so here he is, just where he belongs — only, where is Nora?'

She knit her brow for an instant and then unraveled it hastily. 'Now I remember! How stupid of me to forget the workings of my own mind! I always used to think that Nora's name was Agnes, — it's so exactly the same kind of a name, — and I probably put her down under A, thinking that is where I should look for her. Oh, yes, here she is!' she called to her patiently waiting friend. 'She leads off the A's, like Abou Ben Adhem. Nora Mahoney, 18 Brook Street — just what I told you, except that I thought it was River [illegible]'

Digitized by Google

A few days after this episode I tried to get Cynthia really to explain her address-book to me so that I might be able to assist others, or myself, in some domestic crisis, if she were away or ill; but she found me very literal and thick-witted.

'You see,' she interpreted, 'if a person has a very marked characteristic that distinguishes him more than his name, of course I put him down under the initial of his idiosyncrasy. For instance, there's that deaf old upholsterer that Aunt Eliza told me about, who comes to the house and does n't hear the awful noise he makes when he hammers. He is entered under D for Deaf Upholsterer, because the image that is flashed into my mind when the chairs need recovering is of a deaf man — the fact that his name is Rosenburg is of minor importance.'

'But you have such a confusing way of mixing names and profession,' I objected. 'For instance, those delightful English people who were so good to us in London, Sir James and Lady Taylor, would be flattered if they could see that right on the heels of Lady Taylor follows, "Ladies' Tailor, seventy-five dollars and not very good!" Then here under M is Mason, A. P., such and such a street. That of course is our old friend Miss Anna, but right under her name is Mason, A, with some business address following.'

'Oh, but A is n't an initial in that case,' cried Cynthia. 'A is just A, you know, *a mason* whose name I don't remember but who was highly recommended by the carpenter that time when the bricks fell out of the chimney! Really, Algernon, you don't seem to be using your mind.'

I was still doggedly turning over the pages, and hardly listened to her. 'Now look here,' I triumphantly exclaimed, 'can you give me any logical reason why under the letter F, I should find Mrs. Charles B. Redmond, 32 Pineland Road?'

'Why, of course I can!' Cynthia informed me without an instant's hesitation. 'Mrs. Charles Redmond was Fanny Flemming before she was married, and people always speak of her by her maiden name, on account of the alliteration, so I put her down under the initial that brings her to my mind, but of course using the names she is called by. Don't you see?'

I saw, but there were still unplumbed depths of mystery.

'Can you tell me, please,' I asked humbly, 'why there should be flowery beds of E's among the O's, and why a little oasis of blossoms beginning with B should be blooming among the weedy W's? I'm sure there is some perfectly good feminine reason, but —'

'Ah, *there* there is some excuse for you!' Cynthia acknowledged; 'but surely even you must always associate certain letters together for no apparent reason. For instance, perhaps you may have forgotten a name, but you are certain that it begins with a T. Later you remember the name and find that it does n't begin with a T at all, but with an L. Of course, there is some psychological reason why those two letters are associated together in your mind. Now to me, B and W are practically interchangeable, so I have put Mrs. Blake and the Burlingtons and old Miss Bosworth in with the W's, and the Wilkinsons and the Warners are among the B's. It really helps me very much to have them like that, but I can see that it would be confusing to people who had different group associations.'

I closed the little red volume abruptly. 'Oh, well, if your address-book is simply an Intelligence Test — 'I began.

But Cynthia interrupted me. 'It is n't an Intelligence Test, it 's an Intelligence Office,' she gently explained.

'Well, it 's no use, I can't understand

Digitized by Google

it,' I confessed. 'Your addresses are as safe from me as if they were written in Sanscrit instead of ciphers, and were locked into a safety deposit vault. I have no key that fits, and I don't know the combination.'

'That 's because you 're a man,' my wife pityingly explained. 'There is n't a woman of my acquaintance who does n't do her address-book-keeping on this general plan, but the word that opens the combination is one that no man will ever understand.'

'Thank Heaven there are still the Telephone Book and the Social Register,' I cried, stung by the tone of superiority in Cynthia's voice.

But her last word was yet to be spoken. 'If ever you want to look up your own name in my address-book,' she said very sweetly, 'remember the Parable of the Deaf Upholsterer, and look under S.'

FAMILY PRAYERS

If, as one of the younger generation has remarked, 'Religion is the spiritual stream in which we are all floating or swimming or struggling or sinking,' I can only observe that the temperature of the stream is pleasantly tepid in these days, and that it wanders languidly through a flat and uneventful country. It has come a long way from the icy mountain streams and blue lakes that were its source. Back in my boyhood days, in Brierly, it flowed more swiftly, and the water was colder. Some courage was required to plunge into it, and some agility and skill to keep one's head above the current.

I am reminded of a recent statement made, one Sunday morning, by my sister Tryphena, to the effect that in her youth little boys did not play marbles on the Sabbath; and of the crisp note in the voice of my brother Edward's youngest son — aged seven — as he stood on tiptoe to reach his bag of marbles from the playroom shelf, and answered: 'Well, Aunt Tryphena, you see things have changed.'

True. Things have changed. Edward is a good, Christian father, and he goes to church every Sunday morning, when it is too warm or too cold or too wet on the links. He does his duty by his children, but I can't imagine him kneeling down by Jack and praying, with tears in his eyes, for light and strength and guidance for them both, and then supplementing prayer with a hickory switch, the way father did when John, who was twelve at the time, and a member of the church, profaned the Sabbath and outraged all Brierly traditions by wearing his new baseball suit on Sunday morning.

Of course, it was a particularly vivid suit. The trousers were red-and-white striped, and the jacket blue with white stars. And John, who knew only too well the result if he were caught in such a costume on the seventh day, climbed out of the window of his room and down over the woodshed roof, to show himself to Frances and Caroline, who were washing breakfast dishes in the kitchen. But one of the neighbors saw him, and strolled over to the front gate to chat with father; and father appeared at the woodshed door — an avenging Nemesis, with the hickory switch in his hand —

Yes, things have changed. There is still plenty of religion abroad in the land, but the faith that most of us hold nowadays is a milder, more comfortable variety than the sort that permeated Brierly when we were growing up. It seems to consist mainly of a vague optimism, combined with a gentle tolerance of all differing creeds that might be mistaken, by a skeptic, for indifference.

We were n't gently tolerant of other

Digitized by Google

creeds in Brierly. The details of salvation were desperately vital. Baptism and confirmation were ordeals of tremendous significance. Frances ran away when she was seven years old, to attend a Methodist revival, and was converted. On reaching home, she lay awake all night, from joy that her sins were forgiven; and though the older boys and girls, who had just joined our church, felt this to be an unparalleled piece of uppishness on her part, and father and mother insisted on her attending worship with her own family, no one questioned the depth or reality of her experience.

Things have changed, indeed; and who can doubt that they are changing for the better? Yet there was much beauty and sweetness in the religious life of those days, and many memories dear to us older ones that the present generation will never know. Edward's children are being brought up much as we were, with this difference: their badness is transformed into goodness because they love their parents and fear punishment, while our lives were regulated by the fact that we loved God and feared the devil — a very different thing in reality, although it seems to bring about much the same result.

Not that we had any lack of love for our parents. They stood as a firm bulwark between us and the devil, and as intermediaries between us and God. Father made public intercession for us with the Almighty every morning at prayers, and three times daily at grace before meals; and I know that mother's private devotions were unceasing. I never heard her pray aloud except once, when a visiting minister called on her unexpectedly to lead the Wednesday evening service, in prayer. That night she rose, said simply, 'God bless this meeting,' and quietly resumed her seat. I always felt that her silent petitions went fully as far as father's; but he was the nominal head of the family in matters religious. Every morning, directly after breakfast, he gathered us together in the parlor for family prayers.

We came from the laughter and fun of the breakfast-table into another atmosphere. Father, usually the merriest of us all, was suddenly grave and silent as he took the big family Bible in his hands. The hush that fell over us was accentuated by our being in the parlor; for we lived and played and studied in the 'sitting-room,' and the parlor was reserved for occasions of state. There was, moreover, a constraint born of our uncertainty whether our record for the past twenty-four hours would bear the sight of heaven and the family.

First, each child had to repeat a verse from the Bible. Next, father read aloud from the Scriptures, and then led us in prayer, each of us kneeling before the chair he had previously occupied. Mine was a small carved rosewood one, with a hard haircloth seat. I shut my eyes tight and laid my cheek against it, and tried not to see Edward snuggling into his green tufted cushion.

Father's prayers were really wonderful. In all the time we lived at Brierly, I am sure I never heard him say the same thing twice. And there was more to recommend them than their versatility. They were simple, direct, eloquent. He began by thanking God for the blessings of the day and night that had passed. Next he prayed for the conversion of the Jews, and for the ten tribes of Israel. These duties disposed of, he entered upon the real business of the day. One by one, he took his children by the hand, and led them before the throne of Grace. Our little triumphs were mentioned and our virtues extolled, — though this was always done guardedly, and accompanied by a petition that we might remain free from pride; — and our secret shortcomings were brought unflinchingly to the light.

Digitized by Google

Frances once told me that she knew the Bible meant father when it said, 'There is nothing hidden that shall not be revealed'; and I remember thinking that she was the only one of us who would have dared to say it. But it was with mingled emotions of reverence and relief that we rose from our knees at the close of father's long prayer, and gathered around mother at the piano.

The music was best of all — partly because we all loved it, and partly because it came as a relaxation to minds and muscles after the prayer. On week-days we were limited to one hymn, on account of time; but on Sundays we frequently stood around the piano for an hour, while one 'Gospel Carol' followed another. Sometimes we selected our hymns from mixed motives. Once, after John had been sent upstairs to make his hands fit to be seen, Caroline chose to sing 'Wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow'; and on the morning after the twins were born, my irrepressible Frances suggested: 'More and more, More and more, Still there's more to follow'; but was silenced, for once, by a look from father. Each of us had his favorite, and to this day certain tunes bring back those Sunday mornings with startling clearness, and the singing faces of those boys and girls.

'Pull for the shore, Sailor,' — and I see Gerald and Charlie, one on each side of the piano-stool. 'Stand up, stand up, for Jesus!' — John and Arthur, with their heads close together, singing bass and doing their best to ignore the other parts. 'Rock of Ages,' and Tryphena's face shines out of my memory, sweetly serious, and framed in smooth brown braids. 'Count your blessings' means Caroline's laughing blue eyes and clear soprano, with Edward trying to sing alto and not quite doing it; and whenever, in a Methodist church, I hear 'There is a fountain filled with blood,' I see Frances, true to the creed of her adoption, singing with all her might. 'Onward, Christian Soldiers' is father, with the baby on his left arm, beating time with his right hand; and whenever I hear

'O happy band of pilgrims, if onward ye would tread,
With Jesus as your fellow, to Jesus as your head,'

I see the light shining through the east window, across the old square piano, upon mother's face.

The more I think of it, the surer I am that Edward's children are missing something.

THE CHRISTMAS SPIRIT

We talk glibly about the greed of profiteers; but there is a sheep-like streak in the human race, which makes us rather enjoy being exploited. How otherwise can one account for the rapidly increasing commercialization of every phase of human affection and sentiment? For instance, the artful and seductive advertiser has so trained us, that the first thing we think on hearing of a friend's engagement is: 'Good Heavens! What shall I give them for a wedding present?' Half-a-dozen weddings in a family are a serious tax on all but its most opulent members; and though something may be said in favor of the habit of receiving wedding presents, the middle-aged bachelor of either sex can find but few kind words for the custom of giving them.

And when the most beautiful festivals of the Church are exploited by the manufacturers and shopkeepers, it is time to call a halt. What idea of the Christian religion would the hypothetical visitor from Mars gain by strolling through the shopping district of any American town shortly before Easter? Easter bonnets, Easter bunnies, Easter eggs are bad enough; but by the time he came to 'Easter corsets,' it would be hard to convince him that Easter was

Digitized by Google

not as secular and frivolous a date as April Fool's Day.

Christmas has been even more thoroughly commercialized and desecrated, the better to fill money-bags that are already bursting open. Unfortunately, the money-bags have as their firmest allies the well-meaning folk who indulge in orgies of sentiment over what they sobbingly speak of as the 'Christmas spirit.' The scoffers who go on about sun-myths and Druid ceremonies and such-like entertainments will never hurt the spirit of Christmas; it is so human a quality that, like the rest of us, it can be hurt only by its friends. They who bring the Christmas spirit into disrepute are those admirable monsters of forethought who start during the January sales laying in the stock of their nefarious trade; who during December fill the house with reams of white tissue-paper and miles of red ribbon; who positively exude Christmas stickers and seals and tags and labels; who 'remember' everyone with at least a Christmas card; and whose deepest humiliation it is to be remembered by someone they had themselves forgotten. Their preparations endure up to Christmas Eve, their frenzy increasing as the hour approaches. Yet, when the long-expected day dawns at last, does anyone suppose that these virtuous souls can sit back and enjoy life? Far from it! By that time they are completely submerged in the return avalanche; for, to paraphrase the words of Scripture, to him that giveth shall be given; so the rest of the month is spent in writing and receiving unmeaning letters of hollow thanks.

What a horrid parody of what Christmas should be, might still be, if the admirable self-restraint and self-abnegation and sense of humor of my New Year's friend were more widely followed! I can see my New Year's friend in my mind's eye; not her features, — they are unfortunately rather vague and undefined, — but her delightfully whimsical and kindly expression, her look of gentle seriousness breaking into a delicious twinkle. She is generous, sensitive, reserved, humorous, and romantic, and it shows in her face. Though I know her so well, I fear that, in a court of law, this description of her would not be admitted as evidence. To tell the truth, all I actually know of my New Year's friend is that for the past four years I have received on that propitious date, either by an unknown messenger or by the minions of the late Mr. Burleson, a New Year's card accompanying a golden eagle or its paper equivalent, together with an admonition that it is to be spent solely on myself. The envelope is addressed in an unfamiliar hand and bears no stationer's stamp, nor is there any other clue to follow up. I spend the enclosure religiously on some useless and beguiling article, which I should otherwise never think of indulging in.

No other present has ever afforded me the pleasure, amusement, and interest of this anonymous gift; and I am convinced that the giver gets almost as much fun out of it as I do. She cannot fail to do so; for, though her gift does not coincide with Christmas, she has the real Christmas spirit, giving with no possibility of thanks, no hope of return. I am glad at last to be able to tell her a little of the pleasure she has given me. Luckily there is no doubt that she will see this, for a person of her unusual qualities of head and heart must be a confirmed reader of the *Atlantic!*

Now, having won the war, and made the world safe for democracy and the cider-mill and unsafe for the League of Nations and the purchaser of wood-alcohol, why cannot we turn to with a will and save Christmas for our descendants by following the methods of my New Year's friend? Our gifts need not take the form of hard cash, and

Digitized by Google

some of them might even be given at Christmas; but at least let them be anonymous and appropriate, let none be given to get rid of an obligation, or, still worse, of a last year's white elephant. We should give and receive fewer presents, but they would come radiant with the sheer joy of giving. We should be spared the agony of writing mendacious notes of thanks, and the horrible and demoralizing phrase, 'Suitable for Christmas gifts,' would disappear forever from the advertising columns of the daily press.

It is high time we remembered that the Christmas spirit has nothing in common with the gains of profiteers or with crowded shops and overworked saleswomen; still less with the giving of perfunctory and awkward thanks for perfunctory and undesired 'remembrances.' It should be as free as air, as spontaneous as a child's smile; and the gifts it inspires should be as anonymous as the other good things of life.

While we are about it, we might also rescue Easter from the clutches of the milliner, florist, and stationer, the Fourth of July from the exploitation of the gunpowder and fireworks manufacturer. These may seem very minor reforms, but a moment's reflection will show us that the commercialization of our pleasures and social instincts is one of the dangers of the world to-day, and that the reaction to this dimly perceived peril was a strong factor in the passing of the Eighteenth Amendment. Let us leave the Constitution alone in future, and reform ourselves. It can be done: my New Year's friend has shown the way.

WINTER MORNING

In winter-time we go to school;
And every day the motor-bus
Stops at the gate, and waits for us,
All full of children that we know,
Sitting inside, row after row.

It stops and gets them, one by one,
And brings them home when school is done.

Then there is ice upon the pool
Where lilies grow. The leafless trees
Stand shivering in the winter breeze,
Except where here and there is seen
A cheerful, warm-clad evergreen.

There 's one I always like to see.
It stands alone upon a hill
Just like some giant's Christmas tree.
I'd like to see the giant fill
It full of giant toys and light
Big candles on it Christmas night.

But when the world is deep in snow
That sparkles coldly in the sun,
And motor-buses cannot run;
They send a pung with runners wide
And two long seats for us inside.

That is the way I like to go.
The horses prance, and ting-a-ling
The bells upon their harness ring.
The driver cracks his whip, and blows
Steam, like a dragon, through his nose.

The birds look lonely as they fly
Across the solemn winter sky.
I wish they were just half as gay
As happy children in a sleigh.

Digitized by Google

THE CONTRIBUTORS' COLUMN

A. Clutton-Brock, critic of art and lover of gardens, has at the *Atlantic's* request contributed a number of papers on modern dangers and difficulties, varied in their subject, but alike in ascribing to religion the real hope of the future. The secret which brought her consolation at a time of anguish many years ago, and which has ever since been the constant companion of her thoughts, **Mrs. Albion Fellows Bacon** now feels it right to share with others. The record is, of course, faithful to the last detail. The writer of 'Shell-Shocked — and After,' for manifest reasons, prefers to remain unknown. After many actual pilgrimages to the Orient, **L. Adams Beck** now makes an imaginary one into the heart of the Chinese Empire of other days.

* * *

Margaret Widdemer is a well-known poet of the younger generation. **Anne C. E. Allinson,** author of 'Roads from Rome' and (with her husband) 'Greek Lands and Letters,' was formerly dean of the Women's College in Brown University. From her girlhood experiences upon her father's Southern plantation, **Eleanor C. Gibbs** recalls these memories of old-time slaves. Her forebears were kinsmen of another Virginia planter, George Washington. **Bertrand Russell,** long famous as a mathematician and philosopher, is a grandson of Lord John Russell, the eminent British statesman. Mr. Russell has just returned to London from a winter's stay in China, where he has been teaching at the Government University in Peking.

* * *

This interpretative reading of Shakespeare's letters brings **Miss Ellen Terry** back for one more curtain call. It is characteristic of her discrimination to find in the Shakespearean field a topic quite unworn. During the war **Arthur Pound** edited a confidential weekly bulletin of trade and commodity information, issued by the Chief Cable Censor, U.S.N., for the guidance of American naval censors in handling business cable and radio messages. Traces of this training in international trade-practices are evident now and then in the 'Iron Man' papers. **Margaret Wilson Lees** is a Canadian essayist.

* * *

We wonder how many readers will remember **Agnes Repplier's** first two contributions to the *Atlantic,* on 'Children, Past and Present,' and 'On the Benefits of Superstition.' They marked the beginning of the long and delightful series, different in quality and kind from anything else America has to show. **Christopher Morley,** whose 'Bowling Green' is the sportive element of the New York *Evening Post,* advocates newspaper work because it 'keeps one in such a ferment of annoyance, haste, interruption, and misery, that, occasionally, one gets jolted far enough from the normal to commit something worth while.' **William Beebe's** new book, 'Edge of the Jungle,' is reviewed in this month's *Atlantic.* **Harrison Collins,** at present a member of the faculty in one of the Imperial Normal Colleges in Japan, bases his story on an actual experience with Japanese goldfish and fishermen.

* * *

Sir Arthur H. Pollen is, perhaps, the best-known naval critic in the United Kingdom. Our attention was originally called to **Sisley Huddleston** through the warm recommendation of Mr. Arnold Bennett. Throughout the Paris Conference, his journalistic work seemed to us of the highest importance. Since then *Atlantic* readers have had opportunities to judge it through a number of articles which, once read, are not easily forgotten. **Jean Sokoloff,** the Scotch widow of a Russian officer, after her recent escape from Petrograd, made a flying visit to American cousins, and has returned to her home in Glasgow. **Walter L. Ballou** is the associate editor of *The Black Diamond,* the official organ of the Coal Industry.

* * *

At Mr. Pound's request, we are glad to publish the following acknowledgment.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

The receipt of the October number, containing the first of my articles on 'The Iron Man,' brought forcibly to my mind the absorption with which I must have been vacationing when you wrote me

Digitized by Google

in August of your decision to run the 'Education' and 'International Politics' articles ahead of the 'War.' Otherwise, I am sure I should not have failed, at the outset, to acknowledge gratefully my indebtedness to an unusual man for valuable material.

Mutual friends, knowing my absorption in industrial problems, brought me into touch a year ago with Ernest F. Lloyd of Ann Arbor, Michigan. After some thirty years as a manufacturer of gas-making machinery, and as a public-utility operator supplying gas to several towns, Mr. Lloyd had acquired, as he says philosophically, 'sufficient worldly credit to forego business with decency untainted by affluence.' He took up his residence at Ann Arbor, entering the University of Michigan as a special student in economics. Thereby he reversed the usual educational process, and was able to check theory by practice, and *vice versa*. Starting from the firm base of experience, he studied acutely the problems of capital and labor, especially those underlying economic principles affecting the organization of employers and wage-workers, their bargaining powers and limitations of reward, the historical development of these relations, the influences of modern machinery thereon, and the status of the corporation as the modern industrial employer. These researches ultimately may be published for textbook use in colleges; some have already appeared in academic journals.

Meanwhile Mr. Lloyd kindly gave me free use of his manuscripts, and I have based the economic aspects of 'The Iron Man' largely upon them. On the political, psychological, biological, and educational aspects of the case, my friend will admit no more than a friendly interest, though his keen criticism has been invaluable even there. However, in his special field our articles are really collaborations, in which my observations in the field have been tested in the Lloyd crucible before being passed on to the public *via* the *Atlantic*. Sincerely yours,

ARTHUR POUND.

* * *

Mrs. Cannon's frank expression of misgiving regarding the organization of present-day charity has been seriously debated all over the United States. The Associated Charities of several cities have made it the subject of discussion at stated meetings; and letters from charitable workers, both in support and in attack, have poured in on us. We are sorry to find room for only a few.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Mrs. Cannon's article contains many wise and helpful suggestions, but contains also a pretty serious indictment against the philanthrophy of the past thirty years. The author characterizes it as short-sighted and unintelligent, reluctant to coöperate, and apt to be too superficial and selfish to seek the real good of the community, when that implies self-effacement.

He would be a bold man who should affirm that there are no so-called philanthropists whose work is open to these charges, but are they the representative men and women of this calling? If you have charges to make against the medical profession, for instance, you would not select the tyros, the quacks, or the practitioners before the time of Lister, to illustrate your point. A profession has a right to be judged by its best — its great men and the humble but earnest followers who are striving to live up to their ideals.

The philanthrophy of the last thirty years means Jane Addams, Josephine Shaw Lowell, and the thousands of men and women who are spending their lives, like them, in the struggle to bring scientific methods and the profoundest teachings of modern philosophy into the study of human betterment. To private philanthropy we owe to-day most of the public work in that direction. Evening schools, vacation schools, supervised play, the fight against tuberculosis — all these movements and many others were tried out in philanthropic laboratories, and handed over to the city or state after their value and practicability had been proved. Surely 'tenderness and pity' are not incompatible with 'reasoning intelligence'! Sincerely yours,

HELEN CABOT ALMY.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Please permit one of your readers to pay his respects to 'Philanthropic Doubts,' the leading article in your September number. Naturally, as the work of an accomplished thinker and writer, it is delightful reading; probably no less delightful that one finds, instead of 'doubts,' a confident argument in support of quite definite views. This, perhaps, opens the way to an expression of some doubts touching those views. For example:

1. How will this strike the philanthropists?

2. Are reformed philanthropists the key to improved government and the ideal social condition?

3. Assuming that, when shown the error of their ways, they will refrain from further contributions and aid to charitable undertakings, will the philanthropists pour their charity funds into the coffers of the State, and devote to the State their energies hitherto given to philanthropic undertakings?

4. How does it stand with sound principles of government to attempt to make of the State — the community in its corporate, governmental capacity — a universal providence? N.B. Russia under Bolshevism.

5. Can there be an ideal social condition without ideal human beings?

6. Does democratic government seem to be in a fair way to become the perfect, final form of government, and a hopeful agency for bringing the millennium? RUTHERFORD H. PLATT.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Social workers have no quarrel with the person who wishes to lift himself by his boot-straps and who refuses a friendly boost by the philanthropist. Such people rarely sit in a Charity office, and if they do, their visit is only an occasional one. Social workers merely supply the knowledge and incentive for self-fulfillment to those people who, through poverty, have grown stolid, hopeless,

Digitized by Google

and indifferent. Rarely is pressure brought to bear upon a man in order to make him docile to the wishes or caprice of the philanthropist. Health decisions are practically the only ones ever forced, and these, for the most part, only when the welfare of a child is at stake. As to the philanthropist's influence upon the people with whom he deals, that is impossible to measure. Perhaps, as Mrs. Cannon says, the majority of our clients 'act upon our advice if they must, they disregard it if they can, but they preserve untouched the inner citadel of their personality.' This, however, is no indictment against the philanthropist, but against human nature. God forbid that any of us should fling wide to all comers the inner gates of our personality!

Yours sincerely,
FLORENCE SYTE.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Perhaps I may be permitted to speak a word for the Settlements, which are included in the alleged 'perfect orgy of charitable activity' in which philanthropists are said to have indulged for the past thirty years. The Settlements have consistently endeavored to avoid the dangers of philanthropic work against which the author rightly inveighs. From the very first they have tried to become an integral part of their neighborhood. An attitude of condescension is as abhorrent to them as to Mrs. Cannon. A cardinal principle of settlement work has been to seek the coöperation of their neighbors in improving local conditions. Their aim, as it was put long ago, I believe by Jane Addams, has been to work *with* and not *for* people. I think it can safely be said that they are not hampered by the 'philanthropists' first handicap' — that of making their 'human contacts on the basis of infirmities, poverty, ignorance, sin, never on the basis of any mutual interest or responsibility.' It is precisely on the basis of mutual interest and responsibility that they seek to make their contacts with their neighbors. Again, the Settlements have all along been trying to pass over to the tax-payers such of their experiments in the promotion of social welfare as have proved of permanent value. Mrs. Cannon concedes that certain 'social pioneers' have done essential work, and that, 'in so far as charitable societies catch the spirit of these adventures and hold the ideal of their own labor as pioneering, they do a vital work, and in the future as in the past, will be essential to social progress.' Without, I trust, assuming too much, Settlement residents may take heart from this admission, for they have thought (modestly, I hope) that such pioneering was an important part of their work, and they believe that the time is not yet come for them to shut up shop. As a matter of fact, modern social workers, like the members of the medical profession, are really intent upon putting themselves out of business, but, like the doctors again, they have not yet achieved this desirable end. Let us not neglect the extension and improvement of public-welfare agencies, while, for the present at least, we maintain such private philanthropies as are serving the community. Very truly yours,

GAYLORD S. WHITE.

Oh, the crimes of the Intellect!

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

The popularity of the *Atlantic* with wide-ranging peoples was demonstrated recently, when our house was entered in the night-time, and, along with food-stuffs, safety-razor, flash-light, and sundry kitchen vessels, the August and September *Atlantics* were taken, *with a reading-glass*.

Respectfully yours, HENRY A. BLAKE.

* * *

Our readers seem to think, since there is a woman in the case, that twelve hundred, and not twelve, is the requisite number for a jury. From the full panel we have selected one for the body of the magazine, and here is another for the Column.

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

Your story 'The Jury' intrigues me. It recalls by its unannounced verdict *The Lady or the Tiger?*

It is not easy to determine the exact nature of the plea. There is no prosecution and there is not a suggestion of a defense. It is not quite a petition for pardon with restoration of civil rights. The guilty person — I beg her pardon, the heroine — is not a petitioner of any sort; only, as always, a recipient of unrequited favors. The question seems to be: shall other benefactors rush in to fill a temporary vacancy, her late 'protector' having been removed by death?

The principal speaker's status is not quite clear. Is it that of the *amicus curiæ* of the civil, or of the *advocatus diaboli* of the ecclesiastical court, or just 'your orator' of the old court of equity? She herself is, however, sufficiently convincing. And how admirable are her accessories! The first cigarette that she lights seems to dispel all illusions as to old-fashioned social conventions. The second seems to symbolize the weakened will-power that over-indulgence produces. And then the bridge table! It seems symbolic of the ennui of the unoccupied time of the 'idle rich.'

Surely there can be no question as to the verdict. One seems to hear the unanimous cry: 'Tell Violet Osborne to return. The seventh commandment is out of date. No one can expect a rich woman to care for her children. We take no stock in this talk about "much being required from those to whom much has been given."'

But might not the whole company be persuaded to join Violet Osborne 'abroad,' and make room here for a few more who want to vindicate for America a moral supremacy in meeting the needs of a world wrecked by selfishness and self-indulgence? Very truly yours,

ETHELBERT D. WARFIELD.

* * *

The clergy of the old school kept their sermons in barrels. But now — ?

DEAR ATLANTIC, —

You are always glad, I know, to hear how useful you are. Even your wrappers are of use — for sermon-covers. I'm sure the sermons acquire a literary quality they might not otherwise possess.

Digitized by Google

Practical, too; for each manuscript bears my name and address; you can appreciate the importance of that. One, which I had left by mistake in a strange pulpit, I had returned to me the other day by mail. Sincerely yours,

A. D. Swively.

* * *

In the September number of the *Atlantic*, Mr. Newton, discussing his delightful Old Lady, London, made something of a whipping-post of old Thomas Carlyle. The editor, who has loved the cantankerousness of Teufelsdröch for forty years, gladly prints this letter from an indignant disciple.

Dear Atlantic, —

In the September *Atlantic* the author of the *Amenities of Book-Collecting* slipped from amenities in interrupting his tale of love for 'My Old Lady, London' to express some misinformation about Carlyle.

Our amenitor was treading in Carlyle's footsteps in searching out the Gough Square house: and if he proceeds, he may find other points of agreement. His specific charge is this: 'Carlyle! who never had a good or kindly word to say of any man or thing.' Carlyle has lain in his grave for forty years. When Johnson had lain in his grave for forty-seven years, Carlyle wrote of him: 'Johnson does not whine over his existence, but manfully makes the most and best of it. . . . He is animated by the spirit of the true *workman*, resolute to do his work well; and he *does* his work well; all his work, that of writing, that of living. . . . Loving friends are there! Listeners, even Answerers: the fruit of his long labors lies round him in fair legible writings, of Philosophy, Eloquence, Morality, Philology: some excellent, all worthy and genuine Works: for which too, a deep, earnest murmur of thanks reaches him from all ends of his Fatherland. Nay, there are works of Goodness, of undying Mercy, which even he has possessed the power to do: "What I gave I have; what I spent I had!" . . . How to hold firm to the last the fragments of old Belief, and with earnest eye still discern some glimpses of a true path, and go forward thereon, "in a world where there is much to be done and little to be known"! This is what Samuel Johnson, by act and word, taught his Nation; what his Nation received and learned of him, more than of any other. . . . If England has escaped the blood-bath of a French Revolution, and may yet, in virtue of this delay and of the experience it has given, work out her deliverance calmly into a new Era, let Samuel Johnson, beyond all contemporary or succeeding men, have the praise of it. . . . Since the time of John Milton, no braver heart had beat in any English bosom than Samuel Johnson now bore.'

Better or kindlier words concerning Sam Johnson it will tax the *Amenities of Book-Collecting* to discover.

But enough. Good and kindly words; great, affectionate thoughts Carlyle had for Scott, for Sterling, for Irving, for Elliott, the Corn-Law Rhymer, for Allan Cunningham, for Dickens, for Tennyson, for Emerson, and had their sincere and lasting love — contemporaries all; and the list might be extended indefinitely.

Merritt Starr.

* * *

Into each life some rain must fall. The poems penned in wet weather have not infrequently a certain melancholy appeal.

Dear Atlantic, —

I submit herewith an 'Il Penseroso' for that 'L'Allegro' entitled 'Joy' in the October number of your revered publication. Shall we call it

SADNESS

When I am sad
There seems to be
A big Dreadnaught
Inside of me.

It sags, and drags
Down to my feet;
And yet I lose
No chance to eat.

From my sub-con-
Scious mind doth come
(Down in my ep-
I-gas-tri-um)

A 'What care I,
Though there should be
A *fleet* of woe
Inside of me?

For may I not
Of such a toy
At once disarm,
And so find joy?

Very truly yours,
Kate E. Parker.

* * *

We always did like a pessimist. He has a way of looking the world right in the eye. But the editor's family is too considerable to admit of his accepting the following proposal.

Dear Atlantic, —

Am wondering whether you will be interested in a 3000-word article on 'Must Human Propagation Continue?' In a thorough discussion of the subject I suggest the thought that the numerous troubles in the world will cease, and its great problems be solved, only by a cessation of multiplication, sorrow and death be at an end, and the earth itself be better off without human beings. Very truly yours, ——— ———.

The same mail brings us a contribution entitled 'The Horrors of Matrimony'; but that — as we might have guessed, even if the note-paper had not told us so — is by a member of the League for the Preservation of Wild Life.

Digitized by Google

ATLANTIC SHOP-TALK

If in all the world there had never been a printed page about Christmas, where, forsooth, would Christmas be to-day? Not inscribed, for one thing, on all the calendars of Christendom as the 25th of December, nor written down, for another, in whole libraries of books, as the universal festival of affection, of thoughts and words of kindness translated into deeds of kindness.

Christmas and books are thus, in the very nature of things, inseparable, and books have come to stand, with toys for the youngest and flowers for certain older friends, as the most natural medium for the expression of Christmas feeling. Therefore it is almost impossible, in this month of the year, to talk of shop without drifting into the realm of sentiment.

It is frankly shop to say that, as Christmas approached, we found our supply of the facsimile reprint of the first edition of **Dickens's** *Christmas Carol* so nearly exhausted that we have made a second printing of this Christmas book *par excellence*. The American counterpart of the English classic of Christmas is **Clement C. Moore's** *A Visit from St. Nicholas*, this year, for the first time, included in our list of Christmas publications. There has been no attempt to reproduce the typography of the poem as it originally appeared; but **Mr. Bruce Rogers** has clothed the little book in a dress of type and binding that imparts a true 'period' flavor, and, more than that, has taken the text, which has suffered various transmutations in its many reprintings, literally from the original (1837) edition. Whether you want to put your undiluted Christmas sentiment into an English or an American form, here are the classics by which either inclination may be gratified.

* * *

Puritanism was a pretty poor friend to Christmas, yet, according to Professor Palmer, in his article on 'The Puritan Home' in the November *Atlantic*, 'it set great store on intellectual vigor and filled its homes with books.' That is certainly to be counted to the credit of the Puritans, and we may now indulge a little pity for them because there were no Christmas books to swell their libraries. In **Miss Frances Lester Warner's** Atlantic pamphlet, *Merry Christmas from Boston*, there is a lively reminder of the Puritan temper toward Christmas, drawn from that thesaurus of Puritanism, the diary of Judge Samuel Sewell. The judge had a Church of England neighbor, one General Nicholson, who went to church on Christmas Day, a Saturday, and on the Sunday that followed 'was this Lord's Day Rummaging and Chittering with Wheelbarrows etc. to get aboard at Long Wharf, and Firing Guns and Setting Sail.' We are no advocates of Rummaging and Chittering on the Lord's Day ourselves, but the general who kept Christmas rather appeals to us, and we believe he would have liked the pamphlet in which he is brought to light again, and especially Mr. Maurice Day's sketch of him — is he Chittering or Rummaging, or both, at the moment on which the artist has seized?

Since Mr. Day made his characteristic drawings for Miss Warner's *Merry Christmas*, by the way, a Committee of Awards, appointed by the American Institute of Graphic Arts, has awarded him a first prize of $1000 in a competition for cover-designs. Mr. Day's drawings for our little pamphlet are no better than they were before this honor was bestowed upon him; but the award constitutes a sort of *imprimatur*, in which we cannot help taking pleasure.

* * *

It is, indeed, always an agreeable pursuit to record the honors that befall our friends. One of the most notable of these has been the recent award of the 'George Robert White Medal of Honor' by the Massachusetts Horticultural Society, 'for eminent service in horticulture,' to **Mrs. Francis King**, of Alma, Michigan, the author of our recently published book, *The Little Garden*. This is the highest horticultural honor in the United States, and has been bestowed in the past upon the baker's dozen of men in America and Europe whose names represent the most distinguished work in the field of horticulture, Professor Charles S. Sargent, Sir Harry James Veitch, and others. It has never before been awarded to a woman. It places on Mrs. King's writing a seal of authority which cannot often be associated with so much of charm as she imparts to her work.

One reader of *The Little Garden*, himself an enlightened enthusiast in gardening, writing from Manitoba, calls it 'the most inspiring and, withal, the most practical book on gardening I have ever read'; declaring further that 'everyone who reads it must become an amateur landscape architect, or be immune to the force of suggestion altogether,' and that '*The Little Garden* should be in millions of ordinary homes all over America.' An Arkansas editor, preaching the gospel of loveliness and order, which are sadly lacking in the land, exclaims, 'I wish I could afford to distribute

Digitized by Google

10,000 copies.' We share his wish, and are hopeful enough to believe that, through a healthy division of labor, it is quite possible to achieve the end this generous editor has in view, and to achieve it even while the book is celebrating its first Christmas; for it is a book which at least 10,000 amateur gardeners might profitably begin to study and enjoy before the January thaw.

* * *

But there are still other honors to chronicle. *The Mutineers*, by **Mr. Charles Boardman Hawes**, has been chosen for printing in 'embossed type' by the Perkins Institution for the Blind. Those who see have discovered in Mr. Hawes's second story, *The Great Quest*, another remarkable addition to the shelf of marine adventure. In quite another field, another writer on our list, **Alice Van Leer Carrick**, author of *Collector's Luck*, has received a gratifying 'recognition' in her appointment as consulting editor of a new magazine, *Antiques*, which is intended to provide for Americans what the London *Connoisseur* gives to English readers. The collector who has not yet had the luck to collect *Collector's Luck*, the young in heart to whom Mr. Hawes's books are still unknown, should certainly not be overlooked at this time.

* * *

How many readers of these pages are aware of our preparedness to forward any books on our list to any address they may specify? A special card, with a yawning blank to be filled with the Christmas giver's name, inscribed in our best handwriting, stands ready for use. It is not nearly so bad as such things can be.

* * *

Then there are the Atlantic Christmas cards and prints. It is about as hard to describe these to any purpose as it is to write intelligible directions for tying a knot — and the phrasing of instructions for the production of a clove hitch has recently been proposed as a crucial test of one's command over the English language. We can only ask our readers who cannot examine these prints for themselves to believe that our discretion in such matters is matched by our ability to tie a clove hitch — and in that we have long been proficient.

* * *

Was it not Lowell who called the more sumptuous volumes on his shelves 'editions of looks'? A whole essay might be written, especially at Christmas time, on the relations between *luxe* and *looks*, the intrinsic and the skin-deep, the 'good' and the 'cheap.' The skeleton is easy enough to articulate. We shall clothe it with flesh only to the extent of saying that, in our limited edition of **Bliss Perry's** *Life and Letters of Henry Lee Higginson*, we feel that the beautiful surface and the sound core have a single quality that is far from common. It w only tantalizing to talk about the limited of *A Magnificent Farce*, for the collectors spoken all the copies of it long before publ Large-paper copies of the *Letters of James*, published a year ago at the sam with the regular edition, are still availa too, are copies of the *Scholar's Letters to a Lady*, published only in a limited edition, has now been almost wholly absorbed b knowing readers who do not want to find selves without the single existing book d entirely to the unique personality of Prof Child of Harvard. As for *luxe* and *looks*, was never a shrewder discriminator be them than he.

* * *

We should be doing ourselves, and the pri and binders who have done so well by us thr the recent months of tribulation, a grave i tice, if we should give the impression, thr talking about 'large-paper editions,' that have any misgivings with regard to the app ance of the 'trade editions' of our books with suits of clothing, and of those others which only one, and that of the homespun sort. A ago, when the *Letters of William James* appe the *New Republic*, commenting upon its out form in the 'regular' edition, spoke of the slim volumes which are a credit to Ame book-making, and which would have delig the eyes of their fastidious author.' This im sion was not produced by accident, and it i by accident that the trade editions of **Mr. N** ton's new book, *A Magnificent Farce*, and fessor **Perry's** *Life and Letters of Henry Lee ginson*, are also greeted as good examples o book-maker's art. **Mr. Underwood's** bear of *Wild Brother*, **Mrs. Van Rensselaer's** *Children*, **Miss Turner's** *Zodiac Town* may f be mentioned as typical products of the care has gone into the making of all our new b We have always admired the restraint of th vertiser who simply announces that his ware good wares. If we have yielded to the mor temptation to 'blow up the trumpet in the moon,' let us do penance, and make the ba nouncement that Atlantic Books are Good B

* * *

All this while we may have seemed to be ing rather far from the Christmas sentim with which we began these rambling rem With the slightest consciousness of transitio drift back to them, and venture to expre hope that all Christmas stockings cap enough to accommodate Atlantic books m well filled with them, and that those who and those who receive may experience in th cess one of the genuine pleasures of Christ

Digitized by Google

The Farmers' Problems, by Bernard M. Baruch

JUL 25 1921
Bindery.

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY

JULY  1921

The Secret Door . . . . . SIR PAUL DUKES 1
Education for Authority . . . . . DALLAS LORE SHARP 13
Movies . . . . . KATHARINE FULLERTON GEROULD 22
Exile and Steamer . . . . . JEAN KENYON MACKENZIE 31
At Night. *A Poem* . . . . . LAURA SPENCER PORTOR 36
The Interpreter. I. *A Romance of the East* . . . . . L. ADAMS BECK 37
The Attas—A Jungle Labor Union . . . . . WILLIAM BEEBE 51
What Do Boys Know? . . . . . ALFRED G. ROLFE 59
The Christening of the Bell . . . . . BELLE SKINNER 62
For Instance—Paul Zonbor . . . . . HARRY HUBERT FIELD 66
The New Road to Equality . . . . . GROVER CLARK 74
Only a Matter of Time. *A Poem* . . . . . CHRISTOPHER MORLEY 79
Why is he a General? . . . . . NICHOLAI VELIMIROVIC 80
World without End. *A Story* . . . . . GERTRUDE HENDERSON 82
Mastering the Arts of Life . . . . . THEODORE M. KNAPPEN 87
As Exemplified in a New School
The Feeling of Irritation . . . . . FRANCES LESTER WARNER 96

The New World

The Assimilation of Israel . . . . . PAUL SCOTT MOWRER 101
Some Aspects of the Farmers' Problems . . . . . BERNARD M. BARUCH 111
A Project of Naval Disarmament . . . . . HERBERT SIDEBOTHAM 120
The World from Corsica . . . . . ANNE O'HARE McCORMICK 127

The Contributors' Club 131
Shell-Shock in a Shoeshop.—The High Cost of Talking.—New Lights on Broadway.—Astronomy.—A Queer Thing.—John.

The Contributors' Column 140
Methods of Americanization.—Situations Wanted.—A Very Recent Citizen.—Captains of Israel.—A Human Problem.—The Reason Why.—The New Schools.—Street-Car English.—What Teachers Know.

The Atlantic's Bookshelf will be found toward the beginning of the front advertising section.

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY COMPANY
PUBLICATION OFFICE: RUMFORD BUILDING, CONCORD, N.H.
Editorial and General Offices: 8 ARLINGTON ST., BOSTON 17, MASS.

Published monthly. Entered at Post Offices, Concord, N.H., and Ottawa, Canada, as second-class matter
Copyright, 1921, by The Atlantic Monthly Company
40 cents a copy *Foreign Postage $1.00, Canadian Postage 50 cents, additional* $5.00 a year

Digitized by Google



"COME AND GET IT"

On an outing nothing goes so well with breakfast, luncheon or dinner as

Baker's Cocoa

It is very nutritious, has a delicious flavor and a delightful aroma that appeals mightily to the healthy appetites engendered by the open spaces, fresh air and exercise. It satisfies and sustains.



Be sure that you get the genuine with the trade-mark on the package. Made only by

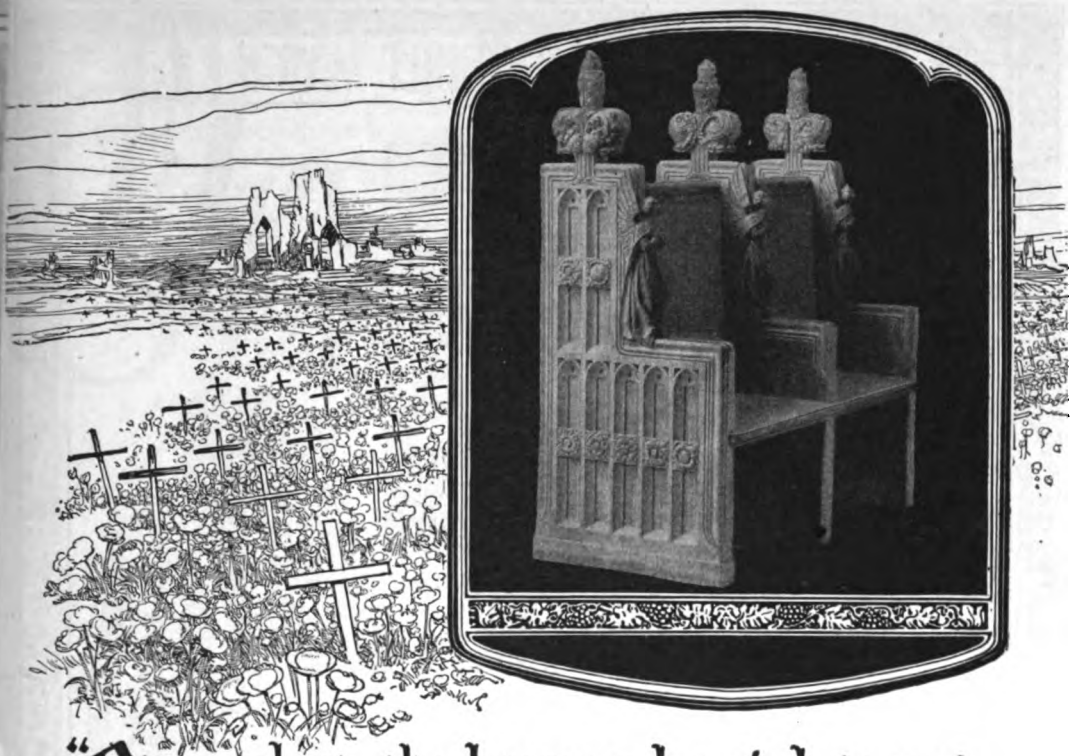
WALTER BAKER & CO. LTD.

Established 1780. DORCHESTER, MASS.

REG. U.S. PAT. OFF.

BOOKLET OF CHOICE RECIPES SENT FREE ON REQUEST

Digitized by Google



"How sleep the brave who sink to rest
By all their country's wishes blest"

THIS end may have come aboard transport or in some front-line trench—in a base hospital or a training camp at home. It matters not where or how—remains simply the fact that he died for his country.

Simply to mark in cold and stately marble the unresponsive sod is not enough. The memory of his supreme sacrifice should be a heritage for the ages. It is more fitting, more consoling, far, to give his spirit and soul enduring memorial where congregate those he regretted so to leave.

What place among the haunts of men more fitting to erect such a memorial to the departed than within the sacred walls of the House of God, where spirit speaks to spirit in many an expressive and symbolic form and where the ideals and sacrifices of the dead live on to inspire and quicken the living.

You owe his memory such a memorial in his or your own favorite church. It is never "too late" for such a tribute. Perhaps but a simple hymn-board, or, on the other hand, a chancel and altar complete, a console for the organ, the pews, a communion table, or a baptismal font.

Every piece has embodied in it the genius of our chief artist and sculptor, Alois Lang, one of the most renowned of living wood sculptors. He is a member of the famous Oberammergau family of Langs, whose art and skill as wood carvers has been traditional for centuries.

To those who desire to perpetuate the name and memory of someone near and dear, we offer the service of our Ecclesiastical Department. A request will bring, without obligation, a beautifully illustrated booklet and complete information.

ECCLESIASTICAL DEPARTMENT

American Seating Company

Address General Offices

NEW YORK CHICAGO BOSTON

2 East Jackson Boulevard

It will assist us greatly if you will give us the name of the church you have in mind.

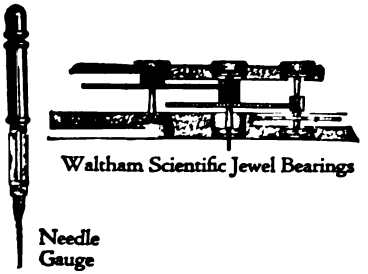
Digitized by Google

THE SCIENTIFICALLY BUILT WATCH



E. A. MARSH
A Pioneer Inventor of Waltham Watchmaking Machinery

ACCURACY



Waltham Scientific Jewel Bearings

Needle Gauge



This Special Waltham, 7½ Ligne
$2,000
(Onyx, diamonds and platinum)
The movement is smaller than a dime in diameter

The Jeweled Bearing Holes in a Waltham Watch Measure Only Six and One-Half Thousandths of a Centimeter

SPLIT a human hair into two equal parts using one of these wee strands as the size of a diamond drill (for nothing but a diamond will drill a diamond) to make a hole in a pure sapphire or ruby jewel.

Then, to perfect the bearing surface of this hole, polish it out with diamond dust until it is the size of a hair.

We have related here one of the tasks that Waltham accuracy is able to perform due to machine-made tools and marvelous gauges (such as the gauge illustrated).

It is owing to this extraordinary standardization of parts and workmanship that Waltham has produced the most accurate small watch made in the world.

The foreign-made watch lacks this standardization. If you had the opportunity to compare under a powerful magnifying glass the material and workmanship in one of these fine Waltham Watches, with the crude and rough hand-made units in many of the foreign watches, there would never be any question what your choice would be, at any price.

This story is continued in a beautiful booklet in which you will find a liberal watch education. Sent free upon request to the Waltham Watch Company, Waltham, Mass.

Makers of the famous Waltham air friction quality Speedometers and Automobile Time-pieces used on the world's leading cars

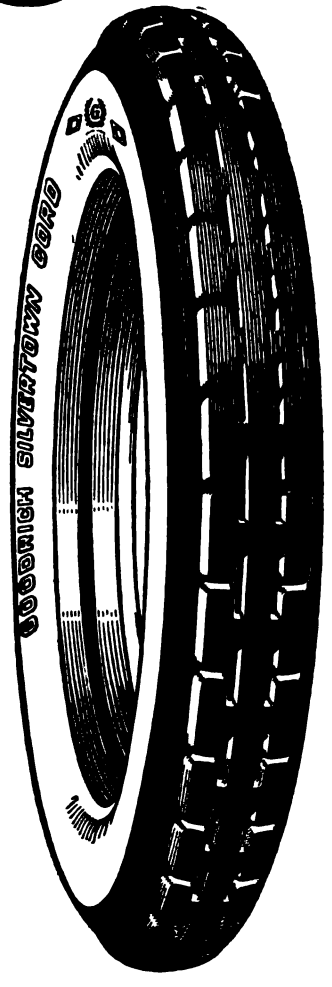
WALTHAM

THE WORLD'S WATCH OVER TIME

Where you see this sign they sell Waltham Watches

Digitized by Google

Yes— Silvertown Cords are included in the 20% Goodrich Tire *Price Reduction*



The anti-skid safety tread Silvertown Cord

Among tires SILVERTOWN is the name that instantly conveys the thought of the highest known quality.

Motor car manufacturers and dealers are quick to emphasize to their prospects that their cars are equipped with Silvertowns—knowing that neither explanation nor argument is necessary.

The genuine value of Silvertowns has given them first place in the esteem of motorists. Their jet black anti-skid safety treads and creamy white sides give them the air of distinction that is expected in a product which is the highest art of tire craftsmanship.

The full name—"Goodrich Silvertown Cord"—appears on each tire. Look for it, and get the genuine.

THE B. F. GOODRICH RUBBER COMPANY
Akron, Ohio

Your dealer will supply you with Goodrich Silvertown Cords, Goodrich Fabrics and Goodrich Red and Gray Tubes at the 20% price reduction.



"Good Morning!" Every Morning

To jump out of bed every morning thoroughly rested, infused with buoyant spirits, impatient to tackle the work and enjoy the pleasures of the day—is the endowment of vigorous health that comes only with an internally clean body which functions properly.

What you eat and drink is of less importance than how well your body digests the food and eliminates the waste. The daily use of

ENO's FRUIT SALT
(Derivative Compound)

assures a good digestion and regular, natural functioning of the intestinal tract.

A little ENO, in a glass of water, makes a sparkling, pleasant, clean-tasting health drink which sweetens a "sour" stomach. A larger amount serves as an efficient aperient and laxative, cleansing gently but thoroughly the organs of elimination. For over half a century ENO has been used by young and old—the strong and weak — with equally beneficial results.

At all druggists, $1.25 a large bottle

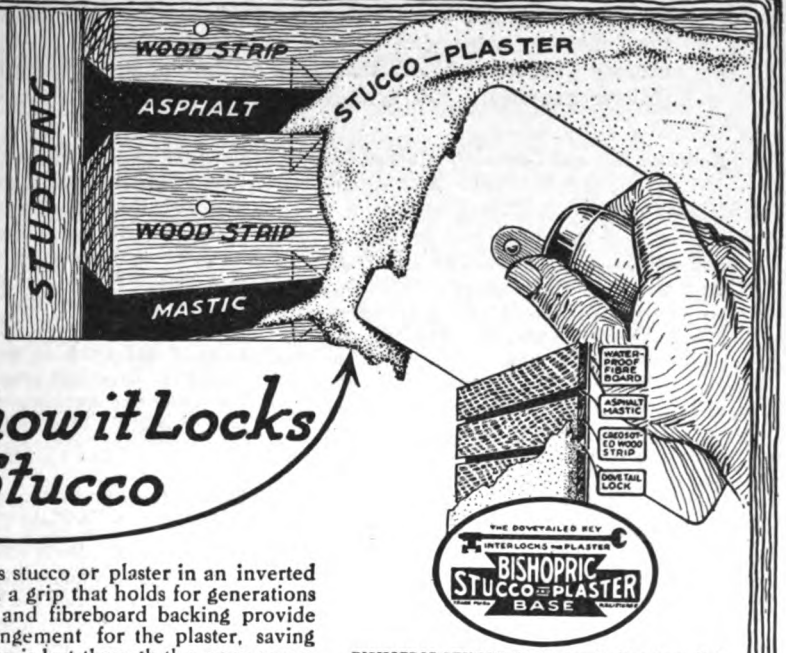


Prepared only by
J. C. ENO, Ltd., London, S.E., England
Sales Agents: HAROLD F. RITCHIE & Co., Inc.
New York—Toronto—Sydney



Digitized by Google

Bishopric for all Time and Clime



See how it Locks the Stucco

BISHOPRIC locks stucco or plaster in an inverted wedge clasp with a grip that holds for generations and the asphalt and fibreboard backing provide a better working arrangement for the plaster, saving the plaster that usually is lost through the open spaces in other forms of lath. Moreover, 25 per cent less plaster is required on account of the dovetail key construction and the plasterer does his work in less time.

Bishopric Stucco and Plaster Base is so rigid and strong that buildings, before the stucco has been applied, have been lifted from their foundations by storms without getting out of plumb or without a single wood strip being broken.

BISHOPRIC STUCCO BASE—Interlocking dovetailed key, insulating and waterproofing unit; creosote treated and not treated; for exterior Applied direct to the studding or over BISHOPRIC sheathing.

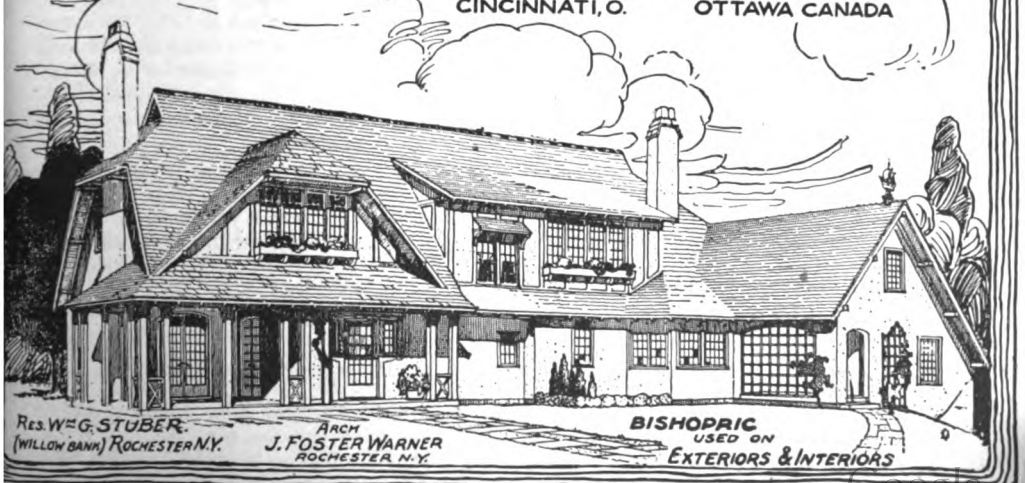
BISHOPRIC PLASTER BASE—Interlocking dovetailed key, insulating, moisture proofing and sound-deadening unit; for interior plaster walls and ceilings.

While BISHOPRIC was designed first for superiority, actual practice has proved that a BISHOPRIC built house costs decidedly less than stucco and frame houses built by other methods—also reduces repairs, depreciation, insurance and fuel costs to a minimum, in consequence it is the most economical construction for the cottage as well as for the mansion.

Let us send you our beautifully illustrated booklet. Ask us any questions you wish about building problems, big or little—our Staff of Experts will gladly give you complete advice at no obligation to you. You are sure to get some valuable and practical suggestions.

The Bishopric Mfg Co.
550 Este Ave Cincinnati, O.

FACTORIES
CINCINNATI, O. OTTAWA CANADA



RES. W. G. STUBER. (WILLOW BANK) ROCHESTER N.Y.
ARCH J. FOSTER WARNER ROCHESTER N.Y.
BISHOPRIC USED ON EXTERIORS & INTERIORS

Digitized by Google

THE ATLANTIC'S BOOKSHELF

These reviews of recent books of unusual value are based upon lists furnished through the courteous coöperation of such trained judges as the following: American Library Association Book List, Wisconsin Free Library Commission, and the staffs of the public libraries in Springfield (Massachusetts), Newark, Cleveland, Kansas City, and St. Louis.

Notes on Life and Letters, by Joseph Conrad. Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday, Page and Co. 1921. 12mo, x+262 pp. $1.90.

EVERYONE likes to have a favorite novelist confess himself. This is the charm of Lockhart's Scott and of the Autobiography of Trollope. The book before us is indeed hardly an autobiography; but Mr. Conrad informs us that it 'is as near as I shall ever come to *déshabillé* in public,' and he says further, with justice, that these 'pieces of writing, whatever be the comment on their display, appertain to the character of the man.' The literary essays of Howells and James are interesting in themselves, but far more so as coming from skilled and exquisite practitioners of the art discussed. It takes us, as it were, into the inner chamber of Mr. Conrad's artistic consciousness when he writes: 'I have in my time told some stories which are (I hate false modesty) both true and lovely. Yet no little girl ever wrote to me in kindly terms. And why? Simply because I am not enough of a Vagabond.'

The whole tone of these Notes is singularly modern. Not only are the subjects recent, — James, Daudet, Maupassant, Anatole France, the great war, above all, Poland and contemporary matters of the sea, — but the thoughts are of to-day, the vivid reflection of a soul which does not live in the past but is intensely and constantly preoccupied with the present. Hardly a single great literary or historical name is introduced for leisurely comparison with the busy, crowding pressure of the immediate hour.

In the literary studies there is a curious subtlety and remoteness, which indicate strongly the influence of James, with his endless shades and distinctions. There is much that is suggestive, much that tends to draw one into the author's own vein of exhaustive analysis. But some of the comment is rather fine-spun for ordinary mortals, as when he writes of Maupassant: 'His sensibility is really very great; and it is impossible to be sensible, unless one thinks vividly; unless one thinks correctly, starting from intelligible premises to an unsophisticated conclusion.'

On the other hand, when Mr. Conrad gets into his familiar world of action, what a difference, what life, what energy, what movement, what color! He revisits his native Cracow at the outbreak of the war, and every street, every house, every stone speaks, to him and to the reader. He touches the sea, and instantly becomes the huge, ever-shifting presence that the readers of his stories know so well: 'a gray, hoary thing ...ing like an old ogre uncertain of its prey.'

...ost of all, these Notes are winning in that ... reveal the sincere, wholesome attitude toward life which readers of the stories love. Mr. Conrad abhors pessimism: 'What one feels so hopelessly barren in declared pessimism is just its arrogance.' He appreciates the value of humility: 'We are inclined to forget that the way of excellence is in the intellectual, as distinguished from emotional, humility.' And he understands the secret of hope, which alone can save life and thought and art from spiritual death: 'To be hopeful in an artistic sense it is not necessary to think that the world is good. It is enough to believe that there is no impossibility of its being made so.' GAMALIEL BRADFORD.

Mystic Isles of the South Seas, by Frederick O'Brien. New York: The Century Co. 1921. 8vo, 534 pp. Illustrated. $5.00.

EVERY generation, someone has said, must interpret anew for itself the history, the hopes, and the dreams of human kind; and it has apparently fallen to the lot of Mr. Frederick O'Brien to fashion for our learned, violent, and unlovely age a current version of the dream of the South Sea paradise. Gone are Melville's epical adventurers, with their shipwrecks, their forays, and their loves; vanished are Stevenson's urbane brown chieftains, with their too, too Hieland air; yet the rack of the dream is as full of fascination as ever were its cloud-capped towers.

That such a result has been achieved is evidently the triumph, not of Mr. O'Brien's style, but of his personality. A sometime sailor, he has an eye for the characters and realities of the seas that the casual though highly trained observer never attains; a sometime newspaper-man, he has the journalist's instinct for the interesting thing and the interesting human being, the latter in particular; a man of the world through and through, he is tolerant, prepared for all things, and as guiltless of the Puritan attitude as a cultivated Frenchman. We thus hear of people and things whom the romancer Melville would have passed by, and Stevenson was too artificial to mention. In fact, a humorous and good-natured interest in human beings, in wandering sailors, petty officials, hotel-keepers, hard-drinking traders, runaway artists, and Tahitian light-o'-loves is the secret of the book.

It is rather a pity that Mr. O'Brien gives so few photographs of those whom he mentions, and restricts himself, for the most part, to a 'travel-book' gallery. The majority of readers, for instance, would far rather see a picture of Kelly, the island labor agitator, than the very much posed photograph of an unknown Tahitian belle which faces page 144, above the intriguing caption, 'made of love and sunshine.'

"Here are the facts!"—Colonel House

What Really Happened at Paris

The Story of the Peace Conference by the American Delegates

EDITED BY COLONEL HOUSE AND DR. CHARLES SEYMOUR

"This volume stands out as the most informative and authoritative work yet printed about the Conference."—*N. Y. Times.*

"No greater service to the cause of straight thinking in America could be rendered than by giving to this book the widest circulation attainable."—Simeon Strunsky, in the *N. Y. Evening Post.*

"By far the most important contribution to the literature of the great events at Paris yet made."—*N. Y. Herald.*

With Maps, $4.50

Is America Safe for Democracy?

By WILLIAM McDOUGALL

Professor of Psychology in Harvard University, and author of "Body and Mind," etc.

This study of racial conditions, especially in the United States, by one of the leaders of the world in philosophical and psychological thought, is a sharp warning to Americans. He finds that our condition closely resembles that which characterized great nations in the past when decay had begun and downfall was predestined, and seeks to learn the causes for decay, that it may perhaps be averted. $1.75

The Direction of Human Evolution

By EDWIN GRANT CONKLIN

Professor of Biology, Princeton University

An attempt to infer from certain definite conclusions of science regarding the evolution of man, the probable future of the human race. $2.50

Human Behavior

By STEWART PATON

Lecturer in Neuro-biology at Princeton, in Psychiatry at Columbia, Trustee of Carnegie Institute, Washington

"Dr. Paton's book is a suggestive summary of a mode of thought that cannot be ignored by any lawmaker, educator or sociologist."—*Springfield Republican.* $6.00

China, Japan and Korea

By J. O. P. BLAND

Author of "Men, Manners and Morals in South America," etc.

An entertaining and informative work on the Far East by a distinguished writer who has spent more than thirty years of his life in China. *Illustrated.* $5.00

The New Stone Age in Northern Europe

By JOHN M. TYLER

Emeritus Professor of Biology at Amherst College

"A happy, wholesome, progressive, vigorous time . . . Prof. Tyler describes it with delightful simplicity and clarity and with such zest in all his own adventures therein that the reader can hardly fail to appreciate and share his interest."—*N. Y. Times. Illustrated.* $3.00

Great American Issues

By JOHN HAYS HAMMOND

Former President of the American Institute of Mining Engineers and

JEREMIAH W. JENKS

Research Professor of Government and Public Administration at New York University

"If the man who reads this book has any intelligence at all, he will not be able to put it down without thinking, with greater seriousness, on problems that need thinking of."—*Boston Transcript.* $2.00

Quicksands of Youth

By FRANKLIN CHASE HOYT

Presiding Justice of the Children's Court of New York

"The dramatic statement, the vivid, glowing language, place this book of sketches among the kind of thing done by Jacob Riis."—*Survey.* $1.75

Camp-Fires and Guide-Posts

By HENRY VAN DYKE

A collection of essays which presents the very richest expression of Henry van Dyke's art. The volume includes such essays as "Moving Day," "Japonica," "Suicidal Tendencies in Democracy," "Human Culture and the German Mind," and "The Pathless Profession" (authorship). *Illustrations in color.* $2.00

The Life of Whitelaw Reid

By ROYAL CORTISSOZ

"No adequate history of the United States in the last quarter of the nineteenth century and the first quarter of the twentieth century can now be written without reference to it. . . . Mr. Cortissoz has told a story of extraordinary grip and movement."—*Chicago Tribune.*

2 Vols. with two photogravure portraits, $10.00

The Senate of the United States and Other Essays and Addresses, Historical and Literary

By HENRY CABOT LODGE

Chairman of Foreign Relations Committee in United States Senate and Author of "Early Memories," etc.

A discussion of the relation of the United States Senate to our general political fabric, and other political, historical, and literary essays and addresses. $2.50

The Art of Letters

By ROBERT LYND

Author of "Old and New Masters," "The Passion of Labor," etc.

"Mr Lynd's book is an advent in literary criticism for it has increased by one the small number of genuinely interpretative critical volumes. In a series of miniatures the author reveals an unusual insight into the characteristics of some of the diverse and complex personalities in English literature."—*New York Herald.* $3.75

How to Appreciate Prints

By FRANK WEITENKAMPF

Chief of the Art and Print Division of the New York Public Library

Here is a book written in colloquial, simple style that gives all the facts necessary to enable one to select prints with judgment and knowledge.

With many illustrations. $3.00

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS, PUBLISHERS

FIFTH AVENUE AT 48TH STREET, NEW YORK

Digitized by Google

But, pictures or not, the dream is here in this entertaining and decidedly readable book — the dream in its present-day reality, even as the twentieth century would see it and hear of it. For, intensely gullible over realities, to-day's world is suspicious of dreams. In its own language, it 'wants to be shown.' Taking the spirit of the time at its word, Mr. O'Brien produces, not a vision, but a kind of super-journalist's photograph of an actual, inhabitable fragment of the Earthly Paradise, which continues something of a paradise in spite of the attempts of our so-called Western civilization to modify it.

Mystic Isles is a book to put on a handy shelf in the bookcase; it is the sort of thing one takes down every once in a while, and reads, not for edification, not for knowledge, not for the pleasure distilled of literary art, but for the refreshment born of contact with a new revelation of the boundless richness and variety of life.

HENRY BESTON.

The Emperor Jones, Diff'rent, The Straw, by Eugene G. O'Neill. New York: Boni and Liveright. 1921. 12mo, x+285 pp. $2.00.

THE real significance of this volume lies in its demonstration of the range and versatility of Mr. O'Neill's power as a dramatist, and in a lesser degree in the fact that it contributes to American dramatic literature three plays of unique quality, one of which is now familiar to a large theatre-going audience.

To the reader of plays who belongs to the generation of theatre-goers and play-lovers now passing, this volume brings comfort and assurance. There is something here of the past — perhaps the only, certainly the best, inheritance from the drama of yesterday. Of how much of this Mr. O'Neill is conscious is uncertain, but there is something here lacking in much of the dramatic work of to-day. A sturdiness of structure, a sureness of touch and sense of values give these plays a feeling of bone and tissue hopelessly lacking in the flabby writing of many of the 'moderns.' The reader having theatrical memories wonders if the stalwart figure, sonorous voice, and studied technique of the author's father may not have cast a beneficent and restraining shadow over the work of his brilliant son.

The three plays presented offer contrasts. The subtly woven maze of human passion and weakness, the cross-currents of little lives sprung from generations of the past but getting nowhere in a world of petty inhibitions, so deftly presented in *The Straw*, are not of the same solar system as the Emperor Jones mumbling his incantations born of centuries of fear and superstitions in the tropic jungle. This play is now public property, and, through the interpretation of Mr. Gilpen, has made a lasting impression. *The Straw* is the first of Mr. O'Neill's plays to appear in covers before its stage production; and for this reason the impression it makes upon the reader is probably a surer guide to the quality of the work than its reading were colored and enlivened by the illection of a stage reproduction.

Here we have Mr. O'Neill dealing with less elemental and less tumultuous material than in either *The Emperor Jones* or *Diff'rent;* but a study of this play, pitched in lower key and slower tempo than the others, reveals the quality of workmanship that characterizes all three. 'The Straw' gives us a chance to see the care for structure — either instinctive or studied, it matters not — that makes these plays what they are, a quality easily overlooked in the tumult and clash of incident or emotion in the others; but it is there, else these plays could not carry as they do.

Yes, they are 'modern' plays, but modern only in the sense that they are stripped clean of the theatrical, and conceived and wrought in terms of drama.

Of Mr. O'Neill's precision of characterization, skill in dialogue, and mastery of innuendo, it is idle to speak; the most careless reader can see and feel them. The real trouble with most modern dramatic writing is that it is not dramatic. Here we find a man who is writing plays — how great or how lasting cannot be known; but they are plays. A dramatic writer writing drama — what more could be desired?

MACGREGOR JENKINS.

Mary Stuart, A Play, by John Drinkwater. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Co. 1921. 12mo, 73 pp. $1.25.

AFTER Lincoln, Mary Stuart gives the effect of a *non sequitur*. Why the Queen of Scots, next? Yet the juxtaposition immediately becomes suggestive: two great lovers, an antithesis, perhaps — the man dominating opportunity: the woman betrayed by impulse; the man moulding history; the woman railing at fate; the man lost to self; the hungry, self-ridden woman. Obvious enough, when we set it down; but was it what the poet meant? Is he not celebrating 'This Mary's best magnificence of the great lover's mind'? Is he not comparing her to 'the sun of heaven, the beauty of the world'? Is he not insisting, in phrases of light, that she does 'not love unworthily'?

For this is Mary Stuart's defense of herself, that reiterated defense which she has been making from generation to generation through her poets: Schiller, Scott, Swinburne, Hewlett, and the lesser men, each with his own interpretation of the mystery of her conduct and the mystery of her charm, by his own reading of the facts; and now John Drinkwater with his 'tragedy of all such women who are unlucky in their men.' So he explains her.

Curious it is to see her still betraying her lovers after nigh on four hundred years; unless there is a subtler something at work here than we suspect, and Mr. Drinkwater is not cursing where he meant to bless, but is consciously portraying this brilliant Mary of arrogant reproaches, who wavers between self-pity and self-disgust, and imperiously sidesteps the blame. 'Hungry for peace — for the man who can establish my heart. — What man is there with authority? Where is

Digitized by Google

ALFRED A. KNOPF  220 W. 42 St., New York

YOUR VACATION READING

Should give more than entertainment. A well-balanced list will include the best American novels (such as Zell[1] *and* Moon-Calf[2]*); the best foreign translations (such as* Growth of the Soil[3]*,* Hunger[4]*,* Jenny[5]*,* The Sworn Brothers[6]*,* In the Claws of the Dragon[7]*, and* Grim[8]*); the best lighter fiction (such as* The Wine of Life[9]*,* The Chestermarke Instinct[10] *or* Old Fighting Days[11]*); the best drama and poetry (such as* The Green Goddess[12] *and* The Mystic Warrior[13]*); the best works of a more serious character (such as* Psychoanalysis, Sleep and Dreams[14]*, and* American English[15]*). And for the children, you can't get—at any price or in any language—more delightful books than the beautiful Dorothy P. Lathrop editions of* A Little Boy Lost[16] *and* The Three Mulla-Mulgars[17].

[1]ZELL By Henry G. Aikman

The American novel of the year—the story of an average American. "Zell" is thoroughly human and entertaining. 4th printing. $2.50

[2]MOON-CALF By Floyd Dell

Felix Fay, the hero of this fine novel, has come to typify a phase in the youth of this country. The most brilliantly successful first novel of many years—and deservedly so. 9th printing. $2.50

[3]GROWTH OF THE SOIL
By Knut Hamsun

This great work is winning high praise from critics and is being read and talked about by people everywhere. It is an Epic of the Earth—a novel on monumental lines. 4th printing. 2 volumes, boxed. $5.00

[4]HUNGER
By Knut Hamsun

Hamsun's great autobiographical novel. "This very unusual and notable book. . . . So real, so vivid, so moving, so compelling."—*New York Times.* 6th printing. $2.50

[5]JENNY
By Sigrid Undset

The story of a modern woman, by the most popular of the younger Norwegian woman writers of to-day. $2.50

[6]THE SWORN BROTHERS
By Gunnar Gunnarsson

A story of adventure and love by the greatest of Icelandic writers—a Saga told by a descendant of the race of Saga writers. $2.50

[7]IN THE CLAWS OF THE DRAGON
By George Soulie de Morant

A humorous, colorful, and dramatic story, whose theme is an international marriage in China between a French lady and an aristocratic Chinese gentleman. $2.50

[8]GRIM: The Story of a Pike
By Svend Fleuron
Illustrated by Dorothy P. Lathrop

Svend Fleuron is a Danish cousin to Ernest Thompson Seton and Henri Fabre. He here gives an exciting tale of the life of a great fish. $2.00

[9]THE WINE OF LIFE
By Arthur Stringer

Against New York's Bohemia or art and the stage, Mr. Stringer has painted a stirring novel of passion. "An unusual story. . . . Colorful, interesting and fairly quivering with life."—*New York Tribune.* $2.00

[10]THE CHESTERMARKE INSTINCT
By J. S. Fletcher

A mystery story by the author of the famous "The Middle-Temple Murder." $2.00

[11]OLD FIGHTING DAYS
By E. R. Punshon

An exciting story of the old ring days in England, of the Napoleonic invasion and of young Harry Holme, a likeable hero. $2.00

[12]THE GREEN GODDESS
By William Archer

The famous play in which George Arliss is scoring one of the season's biggest successes at the Booth Theatre, N. Y. "The work of a craftsman."—"Q. R." in *The Christian Science Monitor.* $2.00

[13]THE MYSTIC WARRIOR
By James Oppenheim

A remarkable story in "prose rhythms" which many place on a par with Whitman's "Leaves of Grass." *First edition limited to 500 numbered copies.* $5.00

[14]PSYCHOANALYSIS, SLEEP AND DREAMS By André Tridon

Presents for the layman thoroughly and lucidly such subjects as sleep, sleeplessness, nightmares, nervousness, the psychology of dreams, dream study, why we sleep, etc. "Tridon writes simply and clearly."—*H. L. Mencken.* $2.00

[15]AMERICAN ENGLISH
By Gilbert M. Tucker

"An interesting and valuable work, critical and well informed. Ought to be made required reading for English novelists who have American characters in their stories."—*The Weekly Review.* $3.50

[16]A LITTLE BOY LOST
By W. H. Hudson
Illustrated by Dorothy P. Lathrop

A classic for children of all ages in an unusually beautiful edition. The chronicle of a little lad's dream-wanderings across leagues of hill, jungle, and tawny pampas to the sea. Illustrated in full color and black and white; end papers; title page; chapter headings; etc. Boxed, $4.00

[17]THE THREE MULLA-MULGARS
By Walter de la Mare
Illustrated by Dorothy P. Lathrop

Any child would delight in this exquisite and charming story of the three monkey brothers, princes of the royal blood, who went forth in search of the gleaming Wonder-stone. Miss Lathrop's illustrations, in full color and black and white, are—like all her work—really delightful. Boxed, $4.00

Check the above list and mail to your bookseller or the Publisher

he who shall measure me'? — 'It's wrong, though, that so slight a man as Darnley should be able to hurt me even so much.' — 'If I could find peace, if there were but a man to match me, my power should work.'

Her love was magnificent, her poet tells us, and shows her drenching her ribald husband with a pitcher of wine, calling the murdered Riccio a fantastic nothing, yielding to the importunate Bothwell though she knows 'it is but one step farther into the darkness, the last.'

Was this the real Mary? No one knows. Is it Mr. Drinkwater's vision of Mary, 'who could have made the greatest greater'? He seems to say so; but how strangely! for the lady mocks him out of his own lines — those flashing, rapier-edged lines, piercing so delicately; yet that's in character. And she lives. We see her loveliness, we sway to her charm, to the lovely charm of her poet's words. Whether she is the Mary of history or of Drinkwater, she has come alive for him, quite tremendously, a bright falling star across his pages, 'a woman of great wit.' But, the prologue and the epilogue to the contrary notwithstanding, she does not solve the problem of free love in the twentieth century.

FLORENCE CONVERSE.

Dust, by Mr. and Mrs. Haldeman-Julius. New York: Brentano's. 1921. 12mo, vi+251 pp. $1.75.

Not often does a novel excite in a reader both admiration and exasperation, as does this work by Mr. and Mrs. Haldeman-Julius. His admiration goes out to them unconditionally for their mastery of their theme and for the artistic compression of their treatment. They are of the new school of Middle-Western realists; they have a sound grasp of the principles of their craft and of the substance of the life which they undertake to represent. Martin Wade's career, as described by them, illustrates vividly the inflexible purpose of the pioneer of the prairies, and the thrift and patient and intelligent effort by which the pioneer creates prosperous farms and achieves material success. Doubtless the subordination of all other considerations to that of material success, which characterizes Martin Wade, has been characteristic of many pioneers, though one may be of the opinion that the motive has been overworked in fiction, and that the reputation of the pioneer has suffered unjustly in consequence. However that may be, it is impossible to withhold admiration for the writers' thorough knowledge of the life that they describe and for the vividness of their description.

There is revealed in the book talent of a finer sort than that for picturesque description; and the very fact that it is there makes the sense of exasperation, even of anger, that must be the reader's predominant reaction to the story all the more blazing. The writers portray with truth and poignancy some of the tenderest human emotions. The characterization of Rose, Martin's wife, is sympathetic; specially touching is the description of her relations with her little son.

A book in which there is a portrait of such feminine sweetness and charm should not be dedicated to making the spirit of selfishness, inhumanity, and hatred triumphant. The story is the record of Martin Wade's unceasing, unreasoning persecution of his wife and his child — a record that piles agony and tragedy upon agony and tragedy, and causes to reader to writhe as he reads and to read on animated mainly by a desire to ascertain in what way so hateful a character will ultimately be punished.

Tragedy that is unrelieved, as the tragedy of *Dust* is, must have majesty and beauty of thought and expression; otherwise it simply exasperates. Strip *Tess of the D'Urbervilles* of the majesty of thought and expression with which Hardy has clothed the theme, and there would be only a sordid, unwholesome, repulsive chronicle. In *Dust* we have a sordid, unwholesome, repulsive chronicle, with convincing indications of ability on the part of the writers to produce something of the larger and better sort.

A. S. PIER.

The Truth about the Treaty, by André Tardieu. Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company. 1921. 8vo, xx+473 pp. $4.00.

What Really Happened at Paris, by American Delegates, edited by Edward Mandell House and Charles Seymour. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons. 1921. 8vo, xiii+528 pp. $4.50.

M. TARDIEU's book is prefaced by a thirteen-page introduction by M. Clemenceau, and both volumes bear short forewords by Colonel House. *What Really Happened at Paris* has an excellent index, *The Truth about the Treaty* has none. This observation is not intended to be invidious, but in a way it characterizes the two books. M. Tardieu has written a very able brief for Clemenceau and France, reviewing the evidence, but always with an eye to his argument. At times he is oratorical and almost impassioned; but he misses that, let us say, academic balance which distinguishes the contributions of the American delegates. The latter have given us a matter-of-fact account of the treaty, which escapes suggesting an official compendium mainly by being cast in the form of public addresses. Both are very valuable contributions to the history of the Peace Conference. They have no quality of finality, because the history of the Conference is still in the making, both in Europe and in the whole world; and what is happening now, and will happen hereafter, is destined to modify the interpretation of almost every act performed at Paris and Versailles. But it is well for our present guidance, and for the cause of truth in times to come, that these books should appear; and it is fortunate that they have been published almost simultaneously, for they check and offset each other.

Since M. Tardieu writes as much under the motion as of logic, and needs every aid

Digitized by Google

If You Live in a Dull Town, Buy Two of These This Week

orothy Canfield's

"The Brimming Cup"

4th large printing — $2.00
(Already the second best selling book in America)

Alice Brown Says:
"It's a big book — not 'highbrow,' not for the few, but for us all, alive with splendid characters, vitalized by a warm human interest. It has a reality entirely unlike the rough carpentry commonly called 'realism.' Its men and women are full of human frailties, human longings and therefore — greatest test of all — you can't forget them. The children are marvels of sweet naturalness. Especially does she know New England, the look of the fields and woods, the feel of the air. The New England drama in it is inevitable and really great."

inclair Lewis's

"Main Street"

21st large printing — $2.00
(The best selling book in America)

The most talked-about book of the present day is this remarkably well-written tale of small town life.

ytton Strachey's

"Queen Victoria"

Author of "Eminent Victorians." Octavo, illustrated. $5.00 *net.*

"A book which we place high above **Eminent Victorians.**"— *London Times.*

"Will become a classic in English literature."— *The New Republic.*

J. Wasserman's

"The World's Illusion"

Translated by Ludwig Lewisohn. (European Library.) *2nd printing. 2 vols.*—787 *pages.*—$5.00

"It is a human comedy in the great sense, a comedy of over-ripe civilization, which no modern can afford not to hear."—H. W. Boynton in *The Weekly Review.*

"The triumph of this long-sustained technique is remarkable. . . . The creative insight of the translator has succeeded in making 'The World's Illusion' not only a translation, but a living work for English readers."—*London Times.*

Pierre Hamp's

"People"

Translated by James Whitall. Introduction by Elizabeth Shepley Sergeant. (European Library.) $2.00

Keen studies of "people" from the underworld of France by one of the most significant writers of our time, himself a French working-man who understands the soul of the worker.

☐ **Hope Farm Notes.** By H. W. Collingwood, Editor, *The Rural New Yorker.* $1.50.

☐ **Musical Portraits.** By Paul Rosenfeld. Interprets 20 modern composers. $2.50.

☐ **Margaret Fuller:** A psychological biography. By Katharine Anthony. $2.00.

☐ **A Guide to Russian Literature.** By M. J. Olgin. Covers some 60 writers from 1825 to 1917. $3.00.

☐ **Antiques, Genuine and Spurious.** By Frederick Litchfield. An invaluable guide. 100 illustrations. $10.00.

☐ **An Outline of Psycho-Analysis.** By Barbara Low. The Freudian theory and methods of treatment. Introduction by Ernest Jones, M.D. $1.60.

☐ **Darkwater.** By W. E. B. Du Bois, author of "Souls of Black Folk." $2.25.

☐ **How to Look at Pictures.** By R. C. Witt, of National and Tate Galleries. With chapter on how to hang pictures. Illustrated. $2.50.

☐ **Collected Papers.** By O. W. Holmes. All Justice Holmes' essays and addresses since 1880. $4.00.

☐ **Freedom of Speech.** By Z. Chafee, of Harvard Law School. A calm, scholarly, readable and sane exposition of recent history. $3.50.

☐ **Smoke and Steel.** By Carl Sandburg. "A fulfillment of all the glorious promise of this Chicago poet's first two volumes."—*Chicago Daily News.* $2.00.

☐ **Modern British Poetry.** Collected by Louis Untermeyer. From Henley to Masefield and Drinkwater. 3rd printing. $2.00.

☐ **Modern Drama in Europe.** By Storm Jameson. Surveys the whole of European drama of last half century. $3.00.

☐ **The New Society.** By Walter Rathenau. $1.60.

☐ **Denmark: A Coöperative Commonwealth.** By Frederic C. Howe. $2.00.

☐ **The Aesthetic Attitude.** By H. S. Langfeld, Assistant Professor of Psychology, Harvard. Illustrated. $3.50.

☐ **Father Allan's Island.** By Amy Murray. Introduction by Padraic Colum. Includes folk songs with music. $2.50.

☐ **Profits, Wages and Prices.** By David Friday. $2.00.

☐ **A Short History of the American Labor Movement.** By Mary Beard. 3rd printing. $1.50.

HARCOURT, BRACE and COMPANY, 1 W. 47th St., New York

Digitized by Google

of literary style and shading, it is unfortunate that what he has to say is not set forth quite so perfectly in English as in his native tongue. Much of his argument is already more or less familiar through his articles in *L'Illustration* and elsewhere. The editing — at least, the proof-reading — is not impeccable. Furthermore, ever since M. Clemenceau's retirement, M, Tardieu has been in the dust of the arena, defending his former chief against French political adversaries. For him the relative importance of issues is somewhat different from what it is for those who have stood aloof from this combat. Especially is the argument often a trifle out of focus for Americans unfamiliar with recent French politics, in spite of many pages addressed expressly to them.

Notwithstanding these disadvantages, M. Tardieu has done several things in this book better than any other man could do them. He has told his story as an eye-witness who fought in the war, who shared the most intimate experiences and confidences of the Paris Conference, and who, since the Conference, has been constantly in active public life, dealing with the conditions and problems which the war created. He does not treat us to sensations, but he has put things that we might learn from other sources in a setting possible only for a man who has a complete background of knowledge from which to work. He describes in three introductory chapters pre-war conditions in Europe, the war and the Armistice, and the incidents of the Peace Conference. Then he discusses through ten chapters — nearly three fourths of his book — the continuing issues in Europe proper which affect France. Everything that does not relate directly to France and Germany is omitted. Austria-Hungary, Russia, Italy, Turkey, the Balkans, freedom of the seas, colonies and mandates, and, for the most part, the League of Nations, enter only incidentally.

In view of a recent remark by our ambassador to England, M. Tardieu's declaration that the United States entered the war 'For purely American reasons' will invite attention. He says, 'Without the United States the Allies could not have conquered.' He disputes the assertion of Otto Kahn and others, that the help we can give Europe is mainly economic, and insists that it must be primarily political.

Turning to the volume of Philadelphia addresses, — for what the American delegates tell has already been given to the public as a course of lectures in that city and as a series of syndicated press articles, — we are in a different atmosphere. The reader is conscious of a release of tension in changing from one book to the other. It is slightly like leaving a court-room, during a dramatic murder trial, for a board-room during a directors' meeting.

The American volume covers a much wider range of topics, though a briefer period of time. It opens with Professor Mezes's account of the organization of the 'Inquiry' to gather information for our peace negotiators, in the autumn of 1917, and concludes with 'The Versailles Peace in Retrospect,' by Colonel House. In addition to the eighteen chapters there are seventeen appendices, consisting of stenographic notes of the questions and answers at the end of each lecture.

Though such a collection of papers has some unavoidable defects, in respect to unity and completeness, it possesses the advantage of giving several different personal impressions of the work of the Conference. Each chapter is by a specialist. It is impossible in our space even to enumerate titles and authors. All have done their work respectably, and some even brilliantly. There are several refreshing criticisms, showing reasonable independence of judgment, but no petulant assertions of private opinion. Mr. Lamont's appraisal of President Wilson at Paris has lasting value: 'I never saw a man more considerate of those of his coadjutors who were working with him, or more ready to give them credit. . . . The failure to delegate more of his work was not due to any inherent distrust that he has of men, — and certainly not to any desire to "run the whole show" himself, — but simply to his lack of facility in knowing how to delegate work on a large scale.'

Mr. Hoover, whose account of economic administration during the Armistice is a model of clearness and conciseness, makes the only adequate reference in the two volumes to the continuance of the blockade against Germany after the Armistice. In attributing this to the military authorities, he does not mention that Marshal Foch, according to recent French disclosures, asked for a blockade of only twenty-five days — the time required for the German evacuation, — and that its extension was due to the political Supreme War Council at Versailles.

Already a veil of unreality draws over the labors of the Paris conferences. The current of events sweeps the world irresistibly beyond many of its settlements and solutions. M. Tardieu still believes France will hold the Rhine frontier. He exclaims, 'No treaties of guaranty, no evacuation in 1935.' General Bliss says that, unless we discover a better safeguard for nations than military force, we shall have killed the giant of Prussian militarism 'only to set up five more in its place.'

We are still in the midst of the debate. Nothing is settled. These volumes are Hansards of the last session, still pertinent and indispensable, but rapidly becoming records of history, though written as reports of current business.

VICTOR S. CLARK.

In response to requests from many librarians, the reviews printed each month in this department of the magazine will be reprinted separately in pamphlet form. Copies may be had by any librarian, without charge, on application to the Atlantic Monthly, 8 Arlington St., Boston.

Digitized by Google

Ready in June

—for Love, Roses and Romance

—and every month will be June to you—to HER! —if you—if SHE!—but read, recall and play the plot of life, prompted by "Beauty and Nick."

SIR PHILIP GIBBS'

BEST WORK

BEAUTY AND NICK

The manuscript of BEAUTY AND NICK came to us through the friendship of a prominent English clergyman—himself a man of letters. He wrote: "There are some strong situations in this excellent work; if you think them too strong Mr. Gibbs will not object to a few editorial changes."

Not a sentence—not a word was changed.

Preachy? Not a single or married line of it.

Problem stuff? Not a bit of it. How can there be anything problematical or mathematical in a love, jilt-lured but straight from the heart and soul of an honest, husband-reared youth like Nick?

And how can there be anything worth a chalked cipher in the scattered affections of a woman, brainy, brilliant, beautiful as Beauty, but minus of soul as a mummy and with a heart that shifts and softens only to the love whispers of a trousered check book.

BEAUTY AND NICK

$2.00 net—$2.10 postpaid. Bookstores or

THE DEVIN-ADAIR CO., Publishers, 437 Fifth Ave., New York

Digitized by Google

THE BOOK HUNTERS

A Dramatic Interlude

CHARACTERS

The Piper: *A Book Fancier:*

Mrs. S.: *A Lady in search of information.*

Mr. S.: *Husband of the lady in search of information.*

Wu Fu Fan: *Dog of the lady in search of information.*



SCENE

Library of the Piper. Books, books and more books. In the interstices, a few old prints. About a table, littered with papers and smoking material, are sprinkled a few faded armchairs. A generous fireplace filled with pine boughs completes the furnishings.

Mrs. S. Oh, it was a wonderfully appointed house. Quite everything one could wish. Or at least I thought so until I prepared to retire. My head was simply whirling with all the gaiety of the evening, and the bright idea swooped on me of reading myself to sleep. No books were visible but I prowled about and finally unearthed—guess!

The Piper. Really, I am nowhere when it comes to riddles.

Mrs. S. A Dream Book, a New Testament in Greek, and a Dotty Dimples minus the cover.

Mr. S. What more could you ask, if all you want of books is to send you to sleep?

Mrs. S. Lots. I want gay books, whimsical books, delightful books,—books that will give me pleasant dreams for the night and a smile to begin the morning. And that, dear Piper, is what has led us on this pilgrimage today. Next week we trek. Our summer home awaits only ourselves—and books. And because I want books that will reflect credit on ourselves and that will help make Point Scallop a place of pleasant memories and no regrets for our guests, you find us here, a small but inquisitive band, disturbing your quiet and awaiting your advice.

The Piper. One of the few pleasures of age is the giving of advice which, by the way, I find is usually followed in inverse proportion to its goodness. On this table is a convenient pad and pencil for making notes. Listen well, for what I say will be gospel. . . . First of all don't try to think up a books-for-all-taste collection for each guest room. Just buy the best of current books and scatter them around. I'd recommend good light fiction as meeting the widest diversity of tastes. There's a new romance of the French Revolution with a fascinating duellist-hero leaping like a panther through its pages that just fills the bill. SCARAMOUCHE it's called, and the author is Rafael Sabatini.

Mr. S. I know him. He wrote a stunning book about Borgias. Put him down.

The Piper. A fine foil for our first choice would be a couple of Western novels. Oh, you can wrinkle up your delightful nose if you want, I used to myself (my own nose I mean, of course) until I tried Raine's GUNSIGHT PASS in the intolerable tedium of a railway waiting-room. I found then that it is possible to write a romance of the West that is brimming with excitement and still is not an insult to one's intelligence. And I found the same thing since, when I read STEPSONS OF LIGHT by Eugene M. Rhodes, an author who has had twenty-five years' actual experience as a cowboy behind him to add verisimilitude to his colorful pictures of the cattle country.

Mrs. S. Upon my word, could one have imagined the Piper reaching new peaks of eloquence over light fiction.

The Piper. It is precisely the fond conception of myself as too dry-as-dust for light fiction that has spurred my eloquence up these dizzy heights. No person of intelligence is too highbrow to enjoy an unpretentious and perfectly efficient light novel. And while we're on the subject let me tip you off, as I believe the phrase is, to a new British writer, Denis Mackail. His first novel, WHAT NEXT, is the story of an extravagant young sprig of the aristocracy who goes into business with his Pelmanistic valet—and with the most entertaining results. By all means put it down.

Mrs. S. But you poor man, you must picture me as suffering from a deluge of guests whose tastes run exclusively to light fiction. Have you nothing else to offer?

The Piper. For you and your more sophisticated guests, I recommend first of all Ethel M. Kelley's BEAUTY AND MARY BLAIR, an extraordinarily fine and fascinating study of a young American girl of the present day who skirts the verge of the abyss in her naïve quest for beauty amid the hurly-burly of New York.

Mrs. S. It *is* good. I 've read it.

The Piper. There are too many new novels swarming in my mind to elaborate on each. ELLEN LEVIS, another, and a very absorbing Pennsylvania story by Elsie Singmaster, the author of BASIL EVERMAN, you must be

Digitized by Google

sure to get. Likewise, as soon as it is out, THREE LOVING LADIES by the Hon. Mrs. Dowdall of whose talent as a novelist I have lately read so much in the British magazines. Now throw in for lovers of sentiment, Eleanor H. Porter's posthumous and (I am told) really delightful SISTER SUE, and your fictional cocktail is ready to shake up and serve.

Mr. S. (*Feebly waggish.*) Is there a kick in it?

Mrs. S. There's none *against* it anyway. It sounds delicious. (*Briskly to the Piper.*) And now for a more substantial diet.

The Piper. Exactly. Having gulped down our appetizer we skip the soup and plunge directly into our main course which naturally for a summer menu is outdoor sport and travel books. As Point Scallop is situated on Cape Cod you must, of course, have the four best books on that sandy and picturesque land. Thoreau's CAPE COD, Mary Rogers Bangs' delightful history OLD CAPE COD, CAPE CODDITIES by Dennis and Marion Chatham, and that invaluable guide and bedside companion, Agnes Edwards' CAPE COD, NEW AND OLD. While I think of it, by the way, let me suggest that you make a note of Miss Edwards' last book, THE OLD COAST ROAD FROM BOSTON TO PLYMOUTH. And now to make a clean sweep of the new travel books just put down SAILING SOUTH, Philip S. Marden's entrancing odyssey of a pilgrimage over the wine-dark seas to Cuba and adjacent points in the surrounding wetness, Richard H. Dana's HOSPITABLE ENGLAND IN THE SEVENTIES, and the picturesque sketches of hunting in the Santee River country that Archibald Rutledge has just written under the title PLANTATION GAME TRAILS. And next the essays.

Mrs. S. The entrées.

Mr. S. (*Muttering from the depths of his armchair.*) And a fine bill the waiter will bring.

Mrs. S. Grumble away if you like, but I assure you my dear I sometimes wish *you* had been brought up on so wholesome a diet.

The Piper. (*Hastily.*) Put down John Burroughs' last book, ACCEPTING THE UNIVERSE, and for brisk and brilliant collections of essays in a lighter vein, J. Edgar Park's THE BAD RESULTS OF GOOD HABITS, and Dr. Crothers' DAME SCHOOL OF EXPERIENCE. For your guests who care to plunge deeper into the Pierian Springs, add Paul Elmer More's A NEW ENGLAND GROUP AND OTHERS. Ian Hay's delectable THE LIGHTER SIDE OF SCHOOL LIFE deserves a place in every house, as does also BIBLIOPHILY: OR BOOK-LOVE, a little dissertation on books, as attractive in appearance as in contents.

Mrs. S. Poetry, I imagine, to carry on our so appetizing symbolism would be metamorphosed into dessert, and our magnificent and inviting centrepiece will, of course, be LEGENDS. Oh, I am a long-time admirer of Amy Lowell and already the possessor of three copies of her latest volume.

The Piper. For the country home I particularly recommend anthologies. Let's start with Mrs. Waldo Richards' STAR-POINTS, HIGH TIDE, and, of course, her garden anthology THE MELODY OF EARTH. Then you must have Jessie Rittenhouse's three standard anthologies, and Robert Frothingham's so popular collections of verse (red-blooded, I believe is the qualifying adjective the publishers use) SONGS OF MEN, SONGS OF HORSES, and SONGS OF DOGS.

Wu Fu Fan. (*Aroused from a light nap by the approach from beneath the bookcase of a colossal spider.*) Woof, Woof, Woof! (*He retreats panic stricken to the shelter of his mistress's chair.*)

Mrs. S. (Estatically, snatching him up.) Oh, you clever, clever beast. (*To Mr. S.*) You see he really *can* understand what we say. (To Wu Fu Fan.) Of course my darling shall have the book, as many as he likes, and ums own loving mummy read it to him every night.

The Piper. (*Politely, somewhat perturbed by this outburst.*) Shall we go on?

Mrs. S. Please do.

The Piper. I think one of the most popular books of verse for your guests would be Arthur Chapman's entertaining sketches of life in an Arizona town, CACTUS CENTER. And certainly one of the most appreciated by those of more aesthetic tendencies would be THE GARDEN OF BRIGHT WATERS, another sensuous and flame-coloured collection of Asiatic poetry by the compiler of COLOURED STARS. Speaking, by the way, of poetry, let me urge you to put down the new life of PAUL VERLAINE, by Harold Nicolson, which I have read with infinite pleasure. The drama you can cover with CHIEF CONTEMPORARY DRAMATISTS, First and Second Series, as the thirty-eight plays include pretty much all the worthwhile drama of the present day, both European and American.

Mrs. S. (*Clapping her hands languidly.*) Admirable, admirable! And now I suppose I'll have to put in a few children's books. The Browns, I believe, are to bring their whole tribe. Make it something that will keep them quiet. Poor Wu Fu Fan was nearly driven into hysterics the last time they came.

The Piper. Do you by any chance remember their ages?

Mrs. S. Oh yes, they run in multiples. Five, ten, and fifteen, and the sexes alternate, beginning with male. *So* thoughtful of the Browns!

Digitized by Google

The Piper. We'd better call it three books apiece. For the oldest boy INJUN AND WHITEY STRIKE OUT FOR THEMSELVES by William S. Hart, THE WAR-TRAIL FORT by James Willard Schultz, himself an old-time Indian fighter, and Elsie Singmaster's JOHN BARING'S HOUSE. For the girl I should select the latest volume of Lucy Fitch Perkins' Twin Series, THE ITALIAN TWINS, also the effervescent CORNELIA by the same author, and NUOVA, a story of life in a bee-hive by Vernon Kellogg. And for the little boy, Sara Cone Bryant's THE BEST STORIES TO TELL TO CHILDREN, Miss Clara Whitehill Hunt's ABOUT HARRIET, and Robert Livingston's THE LAND OF THE GREAT OUT-OF-DOORS. (*He rises.*) That, I believe, is the whole story, the complete how-to-furnish-your-country-home-library manual boiled down and compressed (if you will permit me to change the metaphor) almost I fear, to the point of being inedible.

Mrs. S. (*Also rising.*) Quite the contrary. Instruction not only painless but positively pleasant. Really I feel as though dusky slaves should be summoned by a clap of the hand, bearing platters of pearls and shimmering rubies as a fee.

The Piper. Oh, I assure you the thought of a fee has been hovering in the back of my mind and spurring on my imagination throughout our interview, but the fee I demand shall be, I think, a week end at Point Scallop.

Mrs. S. (*Picking up Wu Fu Fan.*) Agreed—and make it soon. I have theories for the arrangement of books by color on which I should like your advice.

Mr. S. (*Rising briskly from his chair and doing an unexpected* pas seul *on the hearth rug.*) Hippitty-hop to the bookseller's shop!

Wu Fu Fan. (*Excitedly.*) Woof! Woof!

Exeunt Mr. and Mrs. S. and Wu Fu Fan.

The Piper, alone, sinks into a chair, picks up the second volume of A CYCLE OF ADAMS' LETTERS, and losing himself with a sigh of satisfaction in the narrative, fumbles vaguely about the disturbed table for his pipe.

FINIS

HERE ARE THE BOOKS THE PIPER RECOMMENDS

FICTION

Beauty and Mary Blair, Ethel M. Kelley. $2.00.
Ellen Levis, Elsie Singmaster. $2.00.
Gunsight Pass, William MacLeod Raine. $2.00.
Scaramouche, Rafael Sabatini. $2.00.
Three Loving Ladies, Hon. Mrs. Dowdall. $2.00.
What Next? Denis Mackail. $2.00.

TRAVEL

Cape Cod, Henry D. Thoreau. Illus. $1.75.
Cape Cod, New and Old. Agnes Edwards. Illus. $3.00.
Hospitable England in the Seventies. Richard H. Dana. Illus. $5.00.
Old Cape Cod, Mary Rogers Bangs. Illus. $3.50.
Old Coast Road from Boston to Plymouth, The, Agnes Edwards. Illus. $3.00.
Plantation Game Trails, Archibald Rutledge. Illus. $3.50.
Sailing South, Philip S. Marden. Illus. $3.50.

ESSAYS

Accepting the Universe, John Burroughs. Frontispiece. $2.00.
Bad Results of Good Habits, The, J. Edgar Park. $1.50.
Bibliophily: or Booklove, James F. Willis. $1.00.
Dame School of Experience, The, Samuel McChord Crothers. $2.00.
Lighter Side of School Life, The, Ian Hay Beith. $1.75.
New England Group and Others, The, Paul Elmer More. (Shelburne Essays.) $2.00.

POETRY AND DRAMA

Cactus Center, Arthur Chapman. Illus. $1.50.
Chief Contemporary Dramatists, Thomas H. Dickinson. First series, $4.00. Second series, $4.50.
Garden of Bright Waters, The, E. Powys Mathers. $2.00.
High Tide. Songs of Joy and Vision from the Present-Day Poets. Mrs. Waldo Richards. $1.75. Lea. $3.00.
Legends, Amy Lowell. $2.00.
Little Book of American Poets, The, Jessie B. Rittenhouse. $1.75. Lea. $2.75.
Little Book of Modern Verse, The, Jessie B. Rittenhouse. $1.50. Lea. $2.50.
Melody of Earth, The. An Anthology of Garden and Nature Poems from the Present-Day Poets. Mrs Waldo Richards. $1.75. Lea. $3.00.
Second Book of Modern Verse, The, Jessie B. Rittenhouse. $1.50. Lea. $2.50.
Songs of Dogs, compiled by Robert Frothingham. $1.65. Lea. $3.00.
Songs of Horses, compiled by Robert Frothingham. $1.65. Lea. $3.00.
Songs of Men, compiled by Robert Frothingham. $1.65. Lea. $3.00.
Star-Points. Songs of Joy, Faith and Promise from the Present-Day Poets. Mrs. Waldo Richards. $1.75. Lea. $3.00.
Verlaine, Paul, Harold Nicholson. Photogravure frontispiece. $5.00.

JUVENILE

About Harriet, Clara Whitehill Hunt. Illus. in color. $2.00.
Best Stories to Tell Children, The, Sara Cone Bryant. Illus. in color. $2.50.
Cornelia, Lucy Fitch Perkins. Illus. $1.65.
Injun and Whitey Strike Out for Themselves, William S. Hart. Illus. $1.75.
Italian Twins, The, Lucy Fitch Perkins. Illus. $1.75.
John Baring's House, Elsie Singmaster. Illus. $1.50.
Land of the Great Out-of-Doors, The, Robert Livingston. Illus. in color. $1.75.
Nuova, The New Bee. Vernon Kellogg. Illus. in color by Milo Winter. $2.25.
War-Trail Fort, The, James Willard Schultz. Illus. $1.75.

FOR HIMSELF

A Cycle of Adams Letters. Letters of Charles Francis Adams, Charles Francis Adams, Jr., and Henry Adams. 1861–1865. 2 vols. Illus. $10.00.

Check the titles desired, sign and mail this page to your bookseller or to Houghton Mifflin Company, 4 Park Street, Boston Canadian orders to Thomas Allen, 366 Adelaid St. West, Toronto, Ont.

Name..... *Address*.....

Digitized by Google

CANNIBALS and DINNER-COATS

IF you were the manager of a plantation in the South Sea Islands and ved alone with your dusky ervants not far from where nere existed in the jungle real race of cannibals, ould you always put on dinner-jacket for your nely meal?

When *Martin Johnson*, notion-picture explorer and dventurer, first went to he South Seas, he was isposed to regard the punc-iliousness in dress of the solated British planter as an ffectation. Now he recognizes he dinner-coat as a symbol. It s the man's declaration that e has a firm hold on himself. Frenchman on the Islands can go alf-clothed and ungoverned by con-ention and still maintain his dignity. But an Englishman must hold fast to n ordered existence or the Islands ill "get" him.

Johnson unearthed not only much nformation about the wild men he aw, but recounts as well many lelightful and human observations of imself and other white men in a can-ibal atmosphere. In the July ASIA, *'Wild Men of the New Hebrides.*"



Martin Johnson, himself, and some of his "wild men" who seem completely tamed

H. G. WELLS AND STRINDBERG—

Not Shakespeare and Dickens—Young China's Choice

Thus do the students of China throw off the yoke of tradition. In one school they suggested that their foreign teacher of literature take a vacation—go home and catch up—because he used Shakespeare and Dickens. They wanted Hardy, Wells, Kropotkin, Shaw, Ibsen and Maeterlinck. He had become too "chinafied and conservative."

This is a small straw that shows which way the Oriental winds are blowing. *Professor John Dewey*, the distinguished American educator now lecturing in Oriental universities, discusses the issues of the New East. His article, "*New Culture in China*," has the elements of historical importance and rich, human interest.

JUMP THE HEDGE OF CONVENTION

Put yourself in her place!

An American woman made a pilgrimage to a sacred mountain in Japan. She stayed overnight at a Buddhist Monastery. The temple master led her to the bath-house and invited her to bathe while he stood by as any courteous host would. Later he and a young disciple went to her room to converse with the interesting "foreign" traveler. Fearing she was weary they asked, kindly, "Why don't you go to bed?"

What would *you* have answered? This and other delicate situations were cleverly and entertainingly met by *Lucy F. Brown* in her article "*A Summer Pilgrimage to Sacred Koya-San.*"

The second installment of "My Chinese Marriage," the true life story of an American girl who married a Chinese student and went with him to dwell in China.

Other articles and stories of absorbing interest to the lover of the Orient in the July

ASIA

The American MAGAZINE on the Ori

Art Insert of 8 pages—More than 60 illustrati

SPECIAL OFFER

Five Months for $1.00

OPEN TO NEW READERS ONLY

ASIA is on sale at all news-stands at 35c per copy. We will mail you the next five issues for the special sum of $1.00 —a small price for an exceptionally large dollar's worth.

Mail the coupon Now

ASIA PUBLISHING CO., 627 Lexington Avenue, New York
Send the next five issues of ASIA, the American Magazine on the Orient, beginning with the current number.
I enclose $1.00.
Name .....
Address .....
Business or Profession .....
Canada, $1.20
Foreign, $1.40
A.M. 7-21

Digitized by Google



SUMMER—
and New Clothes

CLOTHES for travel, motoring, boating—for tennis, golf, informal dances—you need more *different* kinds of clothes in summer than at any other time of the year! . . . And you need not do without a single one this summer. For now you, yourself, can make lovelier clothes than ever before—clothes that will have real Parisian *chic*—and save actually *more* than ever, through a wonderful new picture-guide,

THE DELTOR

That Saves You 50c to $10.00

This wonderful new aid to home-sewing tells you, by means of pictures so simple that you follow them almost by instinct—*at once*—

1 *How to Save 50c to $10.00 on materials*

The *Deltor* gives you a "picture-layout," worked out by Butterick experts for *your own* individual pattern, in your exact size, for *every* width of suitable material, that saves you anywhere from ¼ to 1⅛ yards of goods.

2 *How to achieve that coveted Parisian charm*

Stitch by stitch, as your needle flies in and out, basting, then stitching, just as the *Deltor's* pictures show, something more than a correctly draped frock grows beneath your fingers. All unconsciously, you have sewn Paris' own distinction into your gown!

3 *How to finish like the cleverest French modiste*

The *Deltor* will tell you the French modiste's own answer to every perplexing question of finishing or adornment—all those important little things that make the difference between "just a dress" and a "creation from Paris."

Each new Butterick pattern is now accompanied by its own individual Deltor. *Ask for "Butterick pattern with* Deltor" *and experience the joy not only of creating the loveliest summer clothes you ever wore, but the* added *joy of having saved on each garment more than you ever did before!*

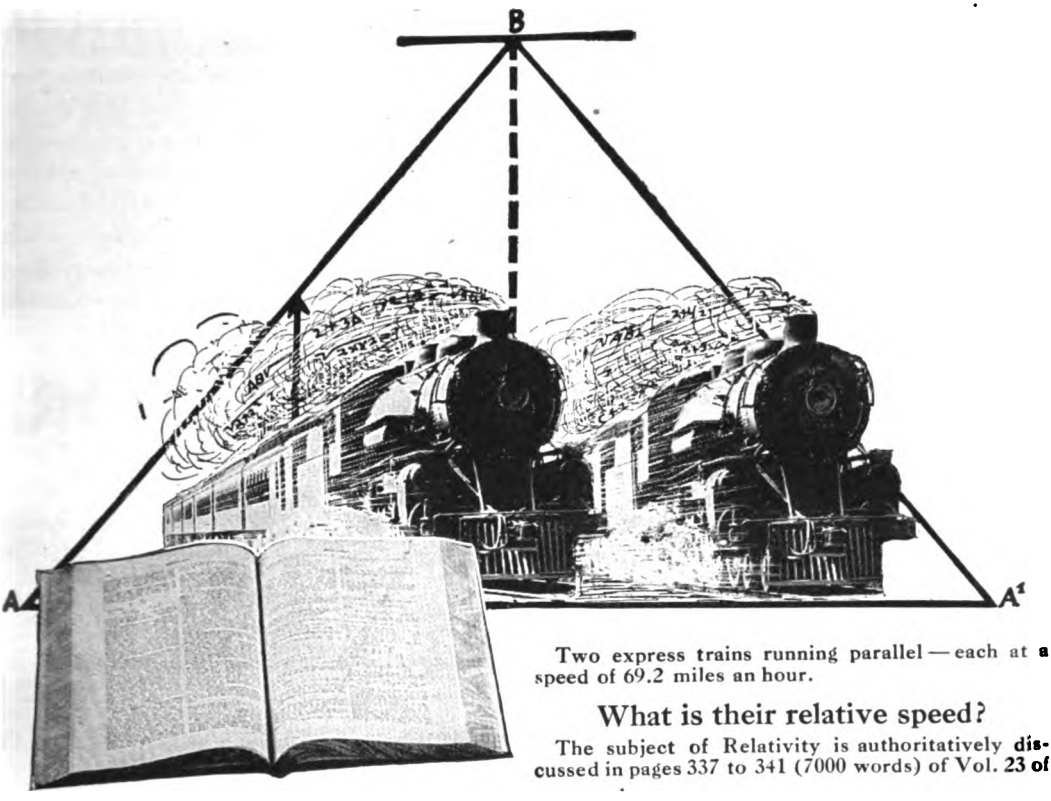
BUTTERICK

Style Leaders of the World

Just get The Delineator

Digitized by Google

What Is Einstein's Theory?



Two express trains running parallel — each at a speed of 69.2 miles an hour.

What is their relative speed?

The subject of Relativity is authoritatively discussed in pages 337 to 341 (7000 words) of Vol. 23 of

What Is Relativity?

Light travels at the rate of 186,000 miles a second. If you were projected from the earth at that speed, and you could still see the earth through some super-telescope as you traveled, you would turn the clock of history back.

You would see Lee surrendering to Grant at Appomattox, Columbus discovering America, Cleopatra luring Antony to his doom in Egypt.

If you could regulate your speed, you could see the same historic event as long as you pleased.

Time and speed are purely relative, as you see. That is one great truth that Einstein has laid down. There are other truths. Light has weight, like a stone, for example. Your height may be six feet on the earth, but it is not the same somewhere else in space.

Can you talk about Einstein's theory intelligently? His is the greatest contribution to human thought since Newton discovered the laws of gravitation.

The Encyclopedia AMERICANA

Just as America leads the world in reconstruction, wealth, invention, manufacture—so the AMERICANA (copyright 1920) has established itself as

The Leading Reference Work of the World

The revolutions in thought and progress, brought about by the World War, made all pre-war encyclopedias obsolete. A restatement of the world's knowledge thus became imperative.

The AMERICANA gives a wide view of the world as it is today — not as it was ten years ago. The AMERICANA will put the knowledge of the world at your elbow.

Encyclopedia Americana Corporation
27 William St., New York, N. Y.
People's Gas Bldg., Chicago, Ill.

Please send me *free of charge* a reprint of the article on RELATIVITY as it appears in The ENCYCLOPEDIA AMERICANA. *At. 7-21*

Name .....

Address .....

Digitized by Google

In new edition—

the books that qualified critics have pronounced a contribution to permanent literature.

By Joseph S. Auerbach

ESSAYS AND MISCELLANIES

Here you will find that flavor so rare in literature of today—that manner you loved in the older essayists of saying vital things in the most casual way. Here are subtle whimsies telling great truths, about a variety of subjects bearing closely on your own life as an individual and as a citizen. There is an introduction by the late Joseph H. Choate. *2 vols. $5.00*

THE BIBLE AND MODERN LIFE

This discussion in Mr. Auerbach's finished style will show you how the Bible can be a guide to forceful and graceful speech and writing. And you will find it an index to the wisdom and inspiration, to the spiritual and literary treasures to be found in this Book of Books, from which so much of the fabric of English literature has been woven. *$1.75*

A CLUB

"A charming tribute to comradeship." *$1.50*

At all Bookstores

Harper & Brothers **Publishers**

Collector's Luck

By Alice van Leer Carrick

"As soon as I had read 'Collector's Luck' I began to search for my hat and my little flat pocketbook. For it is not an abundance of wealth that one needs—only a collecting spirit and a few dollars. I had the few dollars, not more, and Mrs. Carrick's book filled me with a collecting spirit and a desire to add charm to my home surroundings."

* * * * *

For lovers and collectors of antiques, as well as beginners in this delightful hobby, it would be hard to find a more entertaining and helpful book. There are chapters on stencilled furniture, glassware, lustre pitchers and teacups, old lights and lamps, fireplaces and kitchen utensils. The book is most attractively bound in French marbled covers and contains an illustration on practically every other page.

$2.50 postpaid

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS
8 Arlington Street
Boston (17), Mass.

THE YALE REVIEW

announces for July

H. G. WELLS

"A Postscript" to his "Outline of History"

The first published statement concerning his own work, from the author of one of the most famous books of the times, will be eagerly welcomed by his American readers.

SPECIAL OFFER: The July *Yale Review* containing this article (and many others of unusual interest) will be sent FREE with a new year's subscription for $3.00.

"The Outline of History" ($10.50) and *The Yale Review* for one year will be sent to any address for $12.00.

THE YALE REVIEW, 120 High Street, New Haven, Connecticut

Published Quarterly: October—January—April—July

Cut off and mail this order blank

THE YALE REVIEW, New Haven, Connecticut.

Sirs: For the enclosed $.....send me

(check which) ☐ *The Yale Review* for one year and the July number FREE $3.

☐ "The Outline of History" ($10.50) and *The Yale Review* for one year beginning with the July number $12.

Name.....*Street*.....

City.....*State*.....

Digitized by Google

NOTE:—This announcement answers two questions that big employers repeatedly ask, viz: (1) What makes LaSalle men so practical? (2) Why don't more men train with LaSalle for the high pay positions in business?

The LaSalle Problem Method

—and how it successfully condenses a lifetime of experience into a few months of study

A question has blocked action on the part of many thoughtful men who were and are sincere in their desire to qualify in high salary fields. They have asked themselves whether training gained at home by correspondence might not prove to be mere "book-learning"—impractical—unmarketable.

We have no fault to find with this question—it is a natural one. The burden of our criticism rests on the man who permits the question to be its own answer, and to block and stop him in his upward climb without seeking further enlightenment.

For, when over a quarter of a million men have trained with LaSalle and found bigger, better things thru this training there must be sound reasons for their success.

There *are* reasons. They lie in the LaSalle Problem Method of imparting—not "book-learning"—but real, practical, usable business experience.

A knowledge of principles is one thing. The ability to apply and use principles—actually do the work at hand, is another—and the gap between the two is bridged by one factor and one only—*Experience.*

That's why business men place such a premium on experience—it safeguards them against costly experiments.

Suppose you decided to take up as your life work—accountancy, say.

Now stretch your imagination a trifle. Suppose that through the offices of an influential friend, arrangements were made for you to step in and immediately occupy the position you intended training to fill—right in the organization of a big corporation—with a complete department under your orders.



The LaSalle Problem Method gives you self-confidence—practical, usable knowledge—because it makes you an experienced man.

Say that by your side were placed, as your instructors and guides, several high grade accountants—men of national reputation—their sole duty being to train and equip you.

With these men instructing you in proper principles—then, you yourself exercising your own judgment in handling transactions and solving problems as they arose in your daily work—do you get the idea? You would be acquiring *experience* right along with the bed-rock fundamentals of the profession.

Sitting in the chair of authority—dealing with actual business—learning by applying what you learned—with experts correcting your errors, commending good work, guiding you aright through the ramifications, routine and emergency situations of the entire accounting field and making you make good every step of the way—mind—not in a class-room, but right in a business office where you would be actually doing the work you were training for—

—wouldn't you, at the end of a year or so in *this* situation be much farther ahead than men who had spent years seeking the same knowledge in the old, hard, "find-out-for-yourself" way?

You can answer these questions—your good sense tells you that the situation described would make you a practical man—sure, certain and confident—able and capable of holding down any situation the accounting field offered.

And that is why the LaSalle Problem Method makes practical men. Simply because the procedure outlined above is followed—exactly.

True you do your work at home. True, the experts who help you are located here in Chicago.

Nevertheless, under the LaSalle Problem Method you are actually occupying the position you are training to fill, whether it be in the accountancy field, or traffic or business management, or law, or correspondence—irrespective of what you are studying, you are acquiring principles and applying them in actual business under the watchful eyes and helpful guidance of men big in your chosen field.

And when you have completed your LaSalle work, you can truthfully say that you are not only a thoroly trained man, but an *experienced* man—you know the bed-rock principles and you have *used* them all—they are familiar tools in your hands.

A LaSalle man can walk in anywhere with confidence. He does not feel the uncertainty and fear that arise when one faces the new and unknown. Under the Problem Method he has explored his chosen field on his own feet—the questions, the problems, the difficulties—he has met, faced and conquered them all.

His experience makes him know that altho he may be assuming a new position at higher pay, the duties of that position are an old, familiar story.

Experience is cash capital in business.

There are only two ways to get it.

One is the old, slow, uncertain way. The man who chooses to learn a branch of business by picking it up bit by bit as he goes along, finds the years slip by faster than he thought and sometimes his progress not as sure as he had anticipated. For all the "bits of knowledge" he sought may not have come his way.

The other road is short, sure and certain. It lies through the Problem Method, exclusive with LaSalle Extension University. This way condenses into months experience which it takes most men a lifetime to gain.

J. H. Chamberlain

President LaSalle Extension University, of Chicago, Illinois

LaSalle Extension University

The Largest Business Training Institution in the World

If you are in earnest when you say to yourself that you must do something to permanently increase your earning capacity—then—check the coupon below in the square opposite that training which appeals most to you. It is a step you will never regret. And it is a step that is one hundred times as hard to make tomorrow as it is to take today. Where's that pen—never mind—a pencil will do just as well.

LASALLE EXTENSION UNIVERSITY Dept. 759-R CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

Please send me catalog and full information regarding the course and service I have marked with an X below. Also a copy of your book, "Ten Years' Promotion in One," all without obligation to me.

- ☐ **HIGHER ACCOUNTANCY:** Training for positions as Auditor, Comptroller, Public Accountant, Cost Accountant, etc.
- ☐ **BANKING AND FINANCE:** Training for executive positions in Banks and Financial Institutions.
- ☐ **EXPERT BOOKKEEPING:** Training for position as Head Bookkeeper.
- ☐ **COMMERCIAL SPANISH:** Training for positions as Foreign Correspondent with Spanish-speaking countries.
- ☐ **COMMERCIAL LAW:** Reading, References and Consultation Service for Business Men.
- ☐ **C. P. A. COACHING FOR ADVANCED ACCOUNTANTS:** In preparation for State Board and Institute Examinations.
- ☐ **BUSINESS MANAGEMENT:** Training for Official, Managerial, Sales and Executive positions.
- ☐ **BUSINESS LETTER WRITING:** Training for positions as Correspondent, Mail Sales Director and executive letter-writing positions.
- ☐ **PERSONNEL AND EMPLOYMENT MANAGEMENT:** Training for Employers, Employment Managers, Executives, Industrial Engineers.
- ☐ **INDUSTRIAL MANAGEMENT EFFICIENCY:** Training for Production Managers, Department Heads, and all those desiring training in the 48 factors of efficiency.
- ☐ **TRAFFIC MANAGEMENT—FOREIGN AND DOMESTIC:** Training for positions as Railroad and Industrial Traffic Manager, etc.
- ☐ **LAW:** Training for Bar; LL. B. Degree.
- ☐ **BUSINESS ENGLISH:** Training for Business Correspondents and Copy Writers.
- ☐ **EFFECTIVE SPEAKING:** Training in the art of forceful, effective speech for Ministers, Salesmen, Fraternal Leaders, Politicians, Clubmen, etc.
- ☐ **MODERN FOREMANSHIP:** Training in the direction and handling of industrial forces—for Foremen, Sub-Foremen, Contractors, Shop Superintendents, etc.

Name..... Present Position..... Address.....

Digitized by Google



New Atlantic Books



The Founding of New England
By JAMES TRUSLOW ADAMS

There is a keen interest in the historic celebrations occurring throughout New England in this year of the Pilgrim Tercentenary, and many desire a modern, readable book on early New England. New and valuable material is combined with novel and entertaining workmanship in this history which is not only sound in scholarship, but skilful in narrative and readable in style. It is a book for 1921 and many years thereafter. *Illustrated with facsimile documents and maps, blue silk cloth binding, gold stamping, 482 pages.* *$4.00 postpaid*

Text, Type, and Style
***A Compendium of Atlantic Usage,* By GEORGE B. IVES**

A practical guide to the best usage in matters of punctuation, spelling, syllabification, and other technical points in the making of books. Clearly written, concise, and authoritative. *$2.00*

The Little Garden
By MRS. FRANCIS KING

This attractive and practical handbook for amateur gardeners is written by the President of the Women's National Farm and Garden Association. Equipped with instructive tables and illustrated with photographs of flowers, it should prove useful to all who own gardens and an inspiration to would-be gardeners. *$1.75*

Pilgrim Trails. A Plymouth-to-Provincetown Sketchbook
By FRANCES LESTER WARNER. *Illustrated by* E. Scott White

Miss Warner takes you with her on a most delightful journey through the Pilgrim country, and the illustrations by E. Scott White will make you wish to linger in every place portrayed. The host of pilgrims who will visit Plymouth and Cape Cod this summer will find this book a wise and charming guide, revealing many interesting things to be found in unexpected places, and relating amusing and little-known anecdotes about famous men and women of olden days. *$1.75*

Shackled Youth
By EDWARD YEOMANS

In ten brief chapters charged with feeling, Mr. Yeomans, a Chicago manufacturer, shows for the benefit of teachers, parents, and readers in general, something of what he thinks the schools of today should be doing. No one interested in education from any standpoint can afford to miss this book. *$1.60*

Youth and the New World
By RALPH P. BOAS

Taken from the *Atlantic Monthly*, this collection of personal treatments of economic, social, educational, and religious problems, challenges attention and arouses a quickening interest. *$1.50*

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC. A.M. 7-21
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

Gentlemen:

Enclosed find.....and mail, postpaid, books checked above.

Name.....*Street*.....

City.....*State*.....

Digitized by Google

Your reading problem solved by Dr. Eliot of Harvard

HOW can you gain, in just a few delightful minutes' reading each day, that knowledge of a few truly great books which will distinguish you always as a well-read man or woman? How can you, by reading, acquire a deep and true conception of human nature and human affairs? How are you to become well-versed in those niceties no less than in those fundamentals of life which you can know only by carefully selected reading, never by random reading?

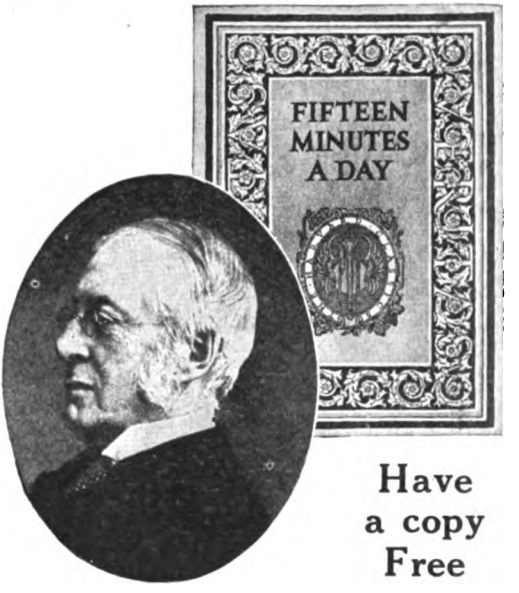
It is that question, of so much importance to you as it is to every thinking person, that you will find answered in the booklet describing

DR. ELIOT'S FIVE-FOOT SHELF OF BOOKS

It tells you what few great books—biographies, histories, novels, dramas, poems, books of science and travel, philosophy and religion—picture the progress of civilization, and as Dr. Eliot says, "enrich, refine, and fertilize the mind."

Every well-informed man and woman should at least know something about this famous library.

The free booklet tells about it—how Dr. Eliot has put into his Five-Foot Shelf "the books essential to the Twentieth Century idea of a cultivated person"; how he has so arranged these books that even fifteen minutes a day is enough; how, in these pleasant moments of



spare time, by using the reading courses Dr. Eliot has provided, you can get the knowledge of literature and life, the culture, the broad viewpoint that progress in every walk of life demands to-day.

"For me," wrote one man, "your little free book meant a big step forward, and it showed me, besides, the way to a vast new world of pleasure."

Every reader of *Atlantic Monthly* is invited to have free a copy of this handsome and entertaining little book which is being distributed to acquaint people with Dr. Eliot's Five-Foot Shelf of Books. Merely mail the coupon to-day.

Have a copy Free

P. F. COLLIER & SON COMPANY, A.M. 7-21
416 W. 13th St., N. Y.

By mail, absolutely free and without obligation, please send me the little guide-book to the most famous books in the world, describing Dr. Eliot's Five-Foot Shelf of Books, and containing the plan of reading recommended by Dr. Eliot of Harvard.

Name .....

Address .....

.....

Digitized by Google

How Metropolitan Chooses Its Fiction

SOME one referred to METROPOLITAN'S stories as "real life fiction." We like that description. It describes best our aims. Through fine fiction and a strong purpose in national politics METROPOLITAN has endeavored to attract the largest possible number of intelligent readers. We believe this policy makes the firmest basis for a general magazine. We believe almost as great an influence can be exerted by our fiction as by our authoritative articles.

Fiction's Purpose

Good fiction ought to do two things — it ought to entertain, *also* it ought to contain a contribution to life that will stay with you after you have laid the magazine aside. To change human lives by telling a story is sometimes easier than by preaching a sermon.

We seldom get out of ourselves and see ourselves as we are. But fiction which is "living at the expense of others" shows us others' lives — and we make comparisons with our own and see ourselves as we are.

Famous Contributors

There is hardly a great writer in the world who has not appeared in the METROPOLITAN. Kipling, Galsworthy, Maurice Hewlett, Joseph Conrad, John Masefield, Sir Gilbert Parker, Richard Harding Davis, Gouverneur Morris, Larry Evans, Compton MacKenzie, Henry Kitchell Webster, Rupert Hughes and Booth Tarkington are only a few of the names which make our list of contributors read like the hall of fame.

In dealing with each one of these contributors our policy has been to ask from them the sincerest and most human work; no sex stuff, no jazz novels; none of the tommyrot about high life, the wicked vices of the rich and the saintly virtues of the poor, which can be dished up in such a way as to sell magazines very easily, has found its way into the METROPOLITAN.

We never asked our writers to produce that sort of fiction. If you don't ask them, or to put it more explicitly, if you don't contract with them for so much a word to write that kind of twaddle, then they don't do it, because certainly none of them want to.

The Helping Hand

It is also a part of our history that we have held out a very helping hand to young and unknown writers. Some of the best things we print comes from unknown writers. We don't believe in the contract system, we don't believe in tying up a writer for so many stories or so many novels a year. We take our fiction where we find it because we believe in it, not because we have ordered it and have got to pay for it and publish it whether we like it or not.

How to get it

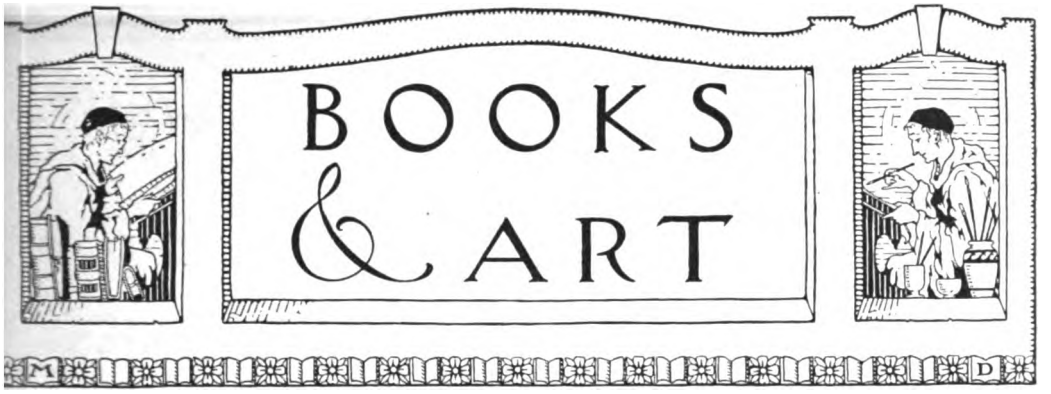
The August issue of METROPOLITAN is always the big fiction magazine of Summer. Vacation time is the time for concentrated enjoyment. We believe the ten big fiction features in August METROPOLITAN will give you the maximum of live, entertaining, worth-while fiction. 25 cts. per copy at your newsstand. $3.00 per year.

Metropolitan

H. J. Whigham, Publisher

432 Fourth Ave. *New York City*

Digitized by Google



The Art of Story Writing

PROFESSOR WALTER B. PITKIN of the School of Journalism, Columbia University, will accept a limited number of writers for instruction by mail in short-story writing. The teaching is adapted to individual needs. Manuscripts will be prepared for the magazines and a sound grasp of the principles of technique insisted upon. Writers of serious purpose are invited to write for full particulars.

PROFESSOR WALTER B. PITKIN
SUB-STATION 84 NEW YORK

AUTOGRAPHS

interested, send 2c. stamp for our Catalogue o. 140, containing 1764 titles of Autograph Letters ıd Documents:—Washington, Lincoln, Grant, oosevelt, Napoleon, Bismarck, Von Moltke, Scott, Dickens, Thackeray, Meredith, Stevenson, etc.

oodspeed's Book Shop, Boston, Mass.

Real HARRIS, LEWIS and SHETLAND HOMESPUNS

DIRECT FROM THE MAKERS
The Aristocrat of Tweed for Golf and All Sports Wear
Price $2.50 per yard, postage paid
S. A. NEWALL & SONS, Dept. A. M., Stornoway, Scotland.
Patterns on request, state shade desired, if for lady or gentleman.

SPEAKERS, WRITERS, CLUB MEMBERS: We assist in preparing special articles, papers, speeches, ebates. Expert scholarly service. Revision of manuscripts, tory and books. Authors Research Bureau, Room 43, 00 Fifth Avenue, New York.

WHAT MAKES THE HOUSE BEAUTIFUL

Edited by HENRIETTA C. PEABODY

A very practical and valuable book for those who are building or remodeling. A collection of excellent illustrations and carefully made measured drawings of architectural details, accompanied by explanatory text. *$3.00*

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.
8 Arlington Street Boston (17), Mass.

YOU ARE A WRITER. Don't you ever need help in marketing your work?

I am a literary adviser. For years I read for Macmillan, then for Doran, and then I became consulting specialist to them and to Holt, Stokes, Lippincott, Harcourt and others, for most of whom I have also done expert editing, helping authors to make their work salable.

Let me help YOU. I am closely in touch with the market for books, short stories, articles, and verses, and I have a special department for plays and scenarios.

Send for my circular.

THE WRITERS' WORKSHOP
849 LEXINGTON AVE.
NEW YORK CITY

Matilde Weil

PICTURES IN FULL COLOR FOR YOUR HOME
Send twenty-five cents (stamps) for illustrated catalogue of
The Medici Prints
Reproductions in direct color-collotype of
GREAT PAINTINGS BY GREAT MASTERS
in the world's art galleries and private collections
Your dealer will show you the Medici Prints or will order them for you
THE MEDICI SOCIETY - *Publishers*
753 Boylston Street, Boston

GENEALOGIST

LAWRENCE BRAINERD
9 Ashburton Place BOSTON, MASS.
Research for Authoritative records of all American families. TERMS MODERATE.

ALEXANDER VAN RENSSELAER
Authors' Representative and Manuscript Broker
450 Fourth Avenue, New York City
Write today for rates and full particulars

AN OPPORTUNITY is offered to limited number of students to take a practical course in the technique of the short story that aims to meet the commercial requirements without the sacrifice of literary ideals. Instructor is a lady with experience as critic, instructor and writer. MSS., prose and verse, constructively criticized, also typewriting at literary rates. Address BOX B.B., care of *Atlantic Monthly*, Boston, Mass.

STERNHEIM DR. EMANUEL LECTURES

Sociological, Educational, Moral and Literary Themes. Dates, terms, etc. ANNE GULBRANSEN, Secretary, 851 Beacon St., Boston, Mass.

ADVENTURES IN INDIGENCE

By LAURA SPENCER PORTOR
Fourteen of the author's most notable essays, quaintly bound.
$1.50
THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, Inc.
8 Arlington Street Boston (17), Mass.

Digitized by Google

THE GROWING GENERATION OF TODAY

must fill the ranks of the Entomologists and Ornithologists of tomorrow. To make these subjects appealing and attractive to young children and to train them to appreciate and observe intelligently the wonders of insect and bird life, we offer the following books by an accomplished naturalist:

LITTLE GATEWAYS TO SCIENCE SERIES

By DR. EDITH M. PATCH
Entomologist of the University of Maine

First Book: HEXAPOD STORIES ***School edition, 90 cents***
For first, second and third grades

Second Book: BIRD STORIES ***School edition, $1.00***
For third, fourth and fifth grades

HEXAPOD STORIES is rapidly finding its place in the schools. It has just been placed on the Ohio State List, the Oregon State List, and on the Washington, D.C., List. It is also being used and enjoyed in many other public and private schools.

BIRD STORIES will prove of great value to teachers who have Junior Audubon Societies in their schools. The ornithological name of each bird is given in the ample notes which accompany the various chapters. In addition to inculcating the conservation of our birds, the book has another important function—its ethical lessons are not likely to go by unheeded. Within the first week that "Bird Stories" was off the press, introductory orders were received from Worcester State Normal School, Worcester, Massachusetts, and from Latrobe Public Schools, Latrobe, Pennsylvania.

Another elementary book of unusual charm and with a real out-of-doors flavor is

UNCLE ZEB AND HIS FRIENDS

School edition, 90 cents

The Board of Education, Springfield, Massachusetts, has recently ordered 300 copies of "Uncle Zeb" for use in the third, fourth and fifth grades. The Supervisor of Nature Study work in Springfield wrote us that when the book came, she was so delighted with it that she sat down and read it from cover to cover.

Liberal discounts allowed on all orders for class use.

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.

8 Arlington Street  **Boston (17), Mass.**



EDUCATIONAL DIRECTORY



Arkansas

RESCENT COLLEGE FOR GIRLS

Standardized, Accredited, *Junior College. In the Ozarks.* Limited to 100. Students from 20 states. Address for Catalogue and View-Book, Crescent College, Box Q, Eureka Springs, Ark.

California

THE BISHOP'S SCHOOL

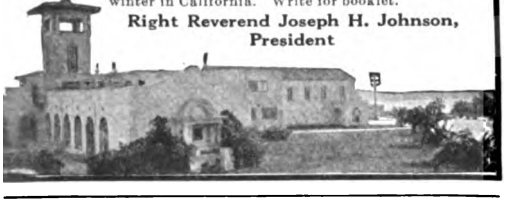
Upon the Scripps Foundation

FOR GIRLS LA JOLLA, CALIFORNIA

Upper and Lower Schools

EDUCATIONAL and social training equal to that of Eastern Schools. A faculty representative of Eastern and Western Colleges. The advantages of the healthiest climate in the world. The pupil goes to school in perpetual sunshine—sleeps, plays, exercises (at tennis, basket-ball, riding, swimming, etc.) and studies out-of-doors the year round. Sixteen miles from Hotel del Coronado. Convenient for parents wishing to spend the winter in California. Write for booklet.

Right Reverend Joseph H. Johnson, President





Cumnock School

OF EXPRESSION

Beautiful high location with sweeping view of mountains, city and distant sea. College courses in Literature, Art, Languages, Journalism, Story-Telling, Oral and Dramatic Expression. Academy (accredited High School), Junior School (all grades). Musical department. Resident students over 14. For catalog address

HELEN A. BROOKS, A.M., Director

Cumnock Hall Box 200 Los Angeles, Cal.

THE WESTLAKE SCHOOL FOR GIRLS

Residence and Day School

Location of great beauty and charm. New Buildings. Excellent faculty. All Departments. Tennis Courts and Swimming Pool. Catalogue sent upon request. California, Los Angeles.

CALIFORNIA — (Continued)

The Marlborough School For Girls Los Angeles

A Private High School for Boarding and Day Pupils. Unexcelled opportunities for study, recreation and health in delightful climate. Beautiful new buildings. Schoolrooms and bedrooms instantly convertible into open air rooms. Gymnasium, basket-ball, tennis, horseback riding, out-of-door study the year round. Special cultural and musical courses. Model flat for domestic art and science. Thorough college preparation with full certificate rights to all colleges. 33rd year opens September 28. For catalogue address

THE SECRETARY, Marlborough School

5043 West 3rd Street Los Angeles, California



Girls' Collegiate School

Adams and Hoover Streets

Los Angeles, California

Thirtieth year opens September twenty-ninth. General, College,—Preparatory, Advanced Courses.

Illustrated Catalogue

MISS PARSONS and MISS DENNEN, Principals.

The Santa Barbara Girls' School

Resident and day pupils. Eleven acres. Country life and sports. Sleeping porches. Open air schoolrooms. Riding, swimming year round. Basis of work, clear thinking. MARIAN L. CHAMBERLAIN, A.M., *Principal.* P. O. Box 506, Santa Barbara, California.

Connecticut

The Curtis School for Young Boys Has grown forty-six years and is still under the active direction of its founder. Entering age nine to thirteen. $1000. FREDERICK S. CURTIS, Principal

GERALD B. CURTIS, Assistant Principal

Brookfield Center, Connecticut.

RUMSEY HALL

Cornwall, Connecticut

A school for boys under 15

Yearly rate $1200

L. R. SANFORD, Principal LOUIS H. SCHUTTE, M.A., Headmaster

Digitized by Google

ROXBURY~*A School for the Individual*



Roxbury maintains an enviable record of success. Forty-nine of each fifty candidates from our winter and summer school passed the college entrance examinations. Roxbury students entered eight Eastern universities and colleges.

Our efficiency is based on small classes, hard work, no forms and personal supervision of mental and physical activities.

A series of psychological tests determine exactly the course of study needed to fit a boy for college in a given time. His classes contain from two to five boys of like ability and temperament. Hard work and concentration required. Healthful athletic and outdoor activity is a part of his regular day.

Roxbury is ideally located in a New England village. Sickness is very rare in school. 200 acres of farm and campus. Large stable of saddle horses. Expert athletic coaches. High salaried instructors. Students may enter whenever vacancies occur. 95 boys accepted, none under 14. Write for catalogue.

ROXBURY SCHOOL, INC., Cheshire, CONNECTICUT

W. L. Ferris, A.B., Headmaster



EASTFORD *The School for a Boy*

For the development of manly boys into good citizens—leaders of men, by a rational system of training mind, morals and body. Work, self-responsibility, a clean, healthy body and a vigorous, well-balanced mind belong to Eastford boys. College preparation or vocational training. Catalogue.

Stanley Kelley, Director, Pomfret, Conn.

Miss Howe and Miss Marot's School

Thompson, Connecticut

A COUNTRY boarding school for girls. College preparation. Advanced courses. Special attention to outdoor life.

MARY LOUISE MAROT, *Principal*

COLLEGE PREPARATION

Vassar, Bryn Mawr, Wellesley, Smith, Mt. Holyoke, Radcliffe, etc.

HOLMEWOOD SCHOOL

NEW CANAAN, CONN. 40 miles from New York. Classes limited to 5.

MARTHA B. COLLEN, Dean, Lenox 1725. 1391 Madison Ave., New York City

THE GATEWAY

A School for Girls. Four buildings. Athletic field. Horse back riding. Domestic Arts. College preparatory, general and special courses which include stenography and typewriting.

MISS ALICE E. REYNOLDS, Principal, St. Ronan Terrace, NEW HAVEN, CONN.



HILLSIDE SCHOOL FOR GIRLS

Norwalk, Connecticut

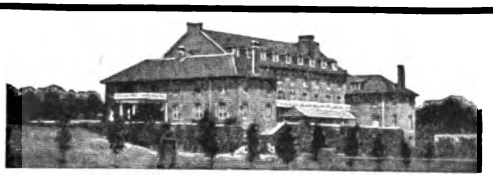
College preparatory and special courses. Normal living in right environment. Every comfort. All healthful activities. Gymnasium. Catalog.

Margaret R. Brendlinger, A.B. Vassar. Vida Hunt Francis, A.B. Smith

Principals

Digitized by Google

CONNECTICUT — (Continued)



The Ely School for Girls
ELY COURT
GREENWICH CONNECTICUT

In the country, one hour from New York City. Twenty-five acres, modern equipment. College Preparatory, General, Secretarial and Post-Graduate Courses. Music. Household arts. Daily work in the studio. Horseback riding and all summer and winter sports. Sleeping Porch.

WYKEHAM RISE, Washington, Conn.
A Country School for Girls. FANNY E. DAVIES, L.L.A., *Principal.* Boston representative, MABEL E. BOWMAN, A.B., *Vice-Principal,* Cohasset, Mass.

ST. MARGARET'S SCHOOL
15th year. College preparatory. General Courses. Household arts and crafts. Gymnasium. Basket-ball. Swimming. Fifty-acre school farm for outdoor life. MISS EMILY GARDNER MUNRO, A.M., Principal, Waterbury, Connecticut

Delaware

THE MISSES HEBB'S SCHOOL
Wilmington, Delaware.
A Day and Resident School for Girls.
Principal, MISS LILLIE JAMES, A.B., Bryn Mawr.

District of Columbia

NATIONAL CATHEDRAL SCHOOL
A Boarding and Day School for Girls. Fireproof buildings in Cathedral Close of 40 acres. College Preparatory. Advanced and Special Courses. Music and Art.
THE BISHOP OF WASHINGTON, President of the Board of Trustees.
Mount St. Alban, Washington, D. C.

Miss Madeira's School
A resident and day school for Girls.
LUCY MADEIRA WING, A.B., Headmistress.
(Mrs. David L. Wing)
1328 19th Street, Washington, D. C.

MARTHA WASHINGTON SEMINARY
For young women. Two Years' Course for High School Graduates. Normal and General Courses in Domestic Science. Secretarial branches. Music, French, Spanish. Outdoor sports. EDWARD W. THOMPSON, Principal. District of Columbia, Washington.

Florida

THE CATHEDRAL SCHOOL
Of Florida
Episcopal. A homelike school for girls. College preparatory and general course. Delightful winter climate.
LILIAS S. BILL, *Principal,* Orlando, Florida.

Illinois

THE CHICAGO DAILY NEWS
School and College Bureau

Offers You Its Specialized Services in Choosing a School

Last year the School and College Bureau of The Chicago Daily News saved many busy parents and questioning boys and girls both time and worry by sending them prompt, reliable information about just the kind of school they wanted—personal requirements as to location and tuition charges being considered in each individual case.

This year many young people will again be perplexed by the problem of finding the right school. Why not let us help you?

The Chicago Daily News maintains this service absolutely free of charge to you. No need to hurriedly select a school on mere hearsay when expert advice can be obtained by telephoning writing, or calling for a personal interview at

THE CHICAGO DAILY NEWS
School and College Bureau
CHICAGO ILLINOIS

MISS HAIRE'S SCHOOL
The University School for Girls, Chicago. Boarding and Day School. Fireproof building overlooking Lake Michigan. College preparatory and graduate courses. Outdoor sports. Annual charges, $1,500.
MISS ANNA R. HAIRE, A.B., Principal,
1106 Lake Shore Drive, Chicago, Illinois.

MONTICELLO SEMINARY
JUNIOR COLLEGE AND ACADEMY
GODFREY, Madison County, ILLINOIS
Historic school of Mississippi Valley. 84th year begins Sept. 19th, 1921. Standard Junior College, graduates entering leading universities as Juniors without examination. Academy prepares for Entrance Examinations of Eastern Colleges. Special work in Music, Art, Domestic Science, Physical Education. Extensive and modern equipment. 300 acres of land. Write for catalogue and view book. HARRIET RICE CONGDON, *Principal.*

SAINT MARY'S SCHOOL, Knoxville, Illinois
A superior school for girls; under the auspices of the Episcopal Church. Fifty-fourth year. College Preparatory and High School work. A separate department for younger girls. Special advantages in Music, Expression and Domestic Science. Secretarial Course. Athletics. Home Life. REV. F. L. CARRINGTON, LL.D., Rector.

Indiana

HOWE SCHOOL
(ENDOWED)
SMALL CLASSES INDIVIDUAL ATTENTION
Every Boy Recites Every Lesson Every Day
BOYS TAUGHT HOW TO STUDY
Careful Selection and Personal Supervision
Thorough Preparation For College
Military Drill Junior R.O.T.C.
Graduates admitted to leading colleges on certificate. Campus of forty acres. Nine fine buildings. Thorough sanitation. Healthful country life. Beautiful lakes nearby. All athletic sports. Summer school with attractive courses.
Separate School for Younger Boys
For illustrated catalogue address
Rev. CHARLES HERBERT YOUNG, M.A., *Rector*
Box 210, HOWE, INDIANA

INDIANA — (Continued)

"STAMMERING
Its Cause and Cure"

You can be quickly cured if you stammer. Send 10 cents, coin or stamps, for 288 page cloth bound book on Stammering and Stuttering. It tells how I cured myself after Stammering and Stuttering for 20 years. BENJAMIN N. BOGUE
4513 Bogue Building, 1147 N. Ill. St. Indianapolis

Maine

FARMINGTON MAINE

Abbott School

"The boy at Abbott lives"

Athletics on a field that would be a credit to any college. Hiking, camping, snowshoeing, skiing.

Small classes insure rapid and thorough work. Prepares for business but emphasizes college preparation.

Modern methods with old-fashioned thoroughness.

Fall term opens September 28th.

Catalog on request

MOSES BRADSTREET PERKINS, Headmaster

Maryland

TOME SCHOOL
NATIONAL BOARDING SCHOOL FOR BOYS
Rates, $1000. New 75-foot Swimming Pool.
MURRAY PEABODY BRUSH, Ph. D., Director.
Maryland, Port Deposit

Michigan

Why continue to **STAMMER?**

Send for (free) illustrated 200-page book. It tells how Stammering and Stuttering can be quickly cured by the most Advanced Scientific Method in the world. Those who are unable to attend our Resident School may obtain our Standard Course for **Home Study.** Your inquiry will be kept confidential.
THE LEWIS SCHOOL, 94 Adelaide St., Detroit, Mich.

Missouri

LENOX HALL "A real Eastern School in the Heart of the Middle West." College Preparatory and Special Courses. Athletics. Limited enrollment. Tuition $950. Catalogue. Address President, MISS M. LOUISE THOMAS, Box 1000, University City, Mo.

Massachusetts

ABBOT ACADEMY

...eol for Girls. ANDOVER, MASS. Founded 1828.
...s from Boston. College preparation. Strong course for High graduates. Outdoor sports.
Address M... THA BAILEY, Principal.

MASSACHUSETTS — (Continued)

CUSHING ACADEMY

For boys and girls who desire best at moderate cost. Preparatory for college, scientific schools and business. Fine equipment. Healthful location. Address H. S. Cowell, Pd. D., Principal, Ashburnham, Mass.

THE
Garland School
of Homemaking

A special school which qualifies girls to preside over and maintain well-ordered homes. One-and two-year homemaking courses under specialist teachers include Child Study, the Family and Social Problems, Food and its Preparation, Income and Cost of Living, Furnishings, Clothing, Serving of Meals, Stories and Hand Work for Children and many other vital home subjects. Also shorter elective courses. Resident students direct the Home-Houses (city and suburban) under supervision, putting into practice principles taught. Catalog on request. Address

Mrs. MARGARET J. STANNARD, Director
2 Chestnut Street, Boston, Mass.

BOSTON, MASS. 46th year begins Oct. 3rd

SCHOOL OF THE MUSEUM OF FINE ARTS

Instructors: Drawing and Painting — Philip L. Hale, F. A. Bosley, W. James, L. P. Thompson, R. McLellan, A. K. Cross: *Modeling* — Charles Grafly, F. W. Allen; *Design* — Henry Hunt Clark, A. J. Morse, G. J. Hunt. *Scholarships and Traveling Scholarships.* For circular, address

A. F. BROOKS, Manager

STAMMERERS

FOR 54 YEARS we have successfully corrected stammering by our simple and natural method. Individual instruction only. SAMUEL R. ROBBINS, Director
Boston Stammerers' Institute
246 Huntington Avenue Boston 17, Mass.

THE CHAMBERLAYNE SCHOOL

General, special and college preparatory courses. Household arts. Music. Languages—native teachers. Out-of-door sports.

THE FENWAY, 28. BOSTON, MASS.

MASSACHUSETTS, Boston. 555 Boylston St. (Copley Sq.)

CHAUNCY HALL SCHOOL

Established 1828. Prepares boys exclusively for MASSACHUSETTS INSTITUTE OF TECHNOLOGY and other scientific schools. Every teacher a specialist.
FRANKLIN T. KURT, Principal

THE ERSKINE SCHOOL

Practical, Business and Vocational Training for Women. *Catalogue.* EUPHEMIA E. MCCLINTOCK, M. A., *Principal*
4 Chestnut Street, Boston, Mass.

MISS McCLINTOCK'S SCHOOL FOR GIRLS

MISS MARY LAW MCCLINTOCK, Principal,
4 Arlington Street,
Boston, Mass.

Sea Pines School of Personality for Girls

REV. THOMAS BICKFORD, A.M., *Founder.* For grammar and high school students. Three terms, fall, spring and summer. Mid-winter vacation. Pine groves. Seashore. Happy outdoor life for ... self-discovery and self-development. MISS FAITH ... ADDIE BICKFORD, *Directors,* Box N, ...

New England CONSERVATORY OF MUSIC

George W. Chadwick
Director

Boston, Mass.

Year Opens
September 15, 1921

Located in the Music Center of America

It affords pupils the environment and atmosphere so necessary to a musical education. Its complete organization, and splendid equipment, offer exceptional facilities for students.

Complete Curriculum

Courses in every branch of Music, applied and theoretical.

Owing to the Practical Training

In our Normal Department, graduates are much in demand as teachers.

The Free Privileges

Of lectures, concerts and recitals, the opportunities of ensemble practice and appearing before audiences, and the daily associations are invaluable advantages to the music students.

A Complete Orchestra

Offers advanced pupils in piano-forte, voice, organ and violin experience in rehearsal and public appearance with orchestral accompaniment.

Dramatic Department

Practical training in acting.

Address RALPH L. FLANDERS, General Manager

MASSACHUSETTS, Bradford.

Bradford Academy for Young Women

18th year. Thirty miles from Boston.
Address the Principal.
168 Main Street. MISS MARION COATS, A.M.

JUNIOR BRADFORD

A Preparatory School for Bradford Academy

Directed study and play. Arts and crafts. All advantages of Bradford Academy equipment. For booklets address THE REGISTRAR, 139 Main Street, Bradford, Mass.

THE SHADY HILL SCHOOL

Cambridge, Massachusetts

A day school for boys and girls. Classes from sub-primary through first year high school. "Open-air" buildings, glass enclosed and heated in severe weather. Near the great collections and museums of Harvard University which are available for study purposes. Coöperatively financed. Managed by parents through Board of Overseers.

The Shady Hill School, Scott St., Cambridge, Mass.

THE BROWNE AND NICHOLS SCHOOL

List for 1921-22 Now Open.

GEORGE H. BROWNE, A.M., WILLARD REED, A.M.
Telephone 57170, CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS

CAMBRIDGE-HASKELL A college preparatory school for girls. Tutoring. Rapid advancement. Training in self-direction. Modern equipment. Gymnasium. Eurythmics. Sports. Advantages of Cambridge and Boston in music, lectures, and museums.

MARY E. HASKELL, Principal.
36-40 Concord Ave., Cambridge (38), Mass.

The Sargent School for Physical Education

Established 1881.
Address for booklet
Dr. D. A. SARGENT, Cambridge, Mass.

The School *of* Domestic Architecture *and* Landscape Architecture *for* Women

Summer and Winter Terms *Limited Registration*
4 Brattle Street, Cambridge, Massachusetts

WILLISTON A SCHOOL FOR BOYS

Preparatory for college or scientific school. Directed work and play. Junior school for boys from 10 to 14. A distinct school in its own building. Separate faculty. Address
ARCHIBALD V. GALBRAITH, Principal, Box C, Easthampton, Mass.

DEAN ACADEMY, Franklin, Mass.

55th Year. Young men and young women find here a homelike atmosphere, thorough and efficient training in every department of a broad culture, loyal and helpful school spirit. Liberal endowment permits liberal terms, $400. to $500. per year. Special course in domestic science. For catalogue and information address, ARTHUR W. PEIRCE, Litt.D., Principal.

ROGERS HALL SCHOOL FOR GIRLS

Lowell, Massachusetts. 38 Minutes from Boston.
Country Sports. *Gymnasium and swimming pool.*
For catalogue and views, address
Miss OLIVE SEWALL PARSONS, B. A., Prin.



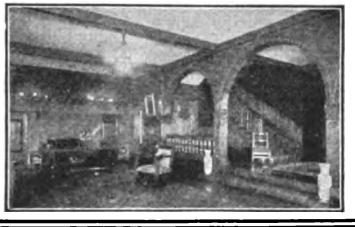
Choate School

1600 Beacon Street, Brookline, Massachusetts

40th year. Home and Day School for Girls. Preparation for college. General course offering Household Management, Literature, Languages, Art, and Music with the best Boston teachers. Athletic sports on school playground. Gymnasium and well-equipped bowling alley. Horseback riding.

Social life of school the special care of resident teachers of experience. Opportunities to attend Boston Symphony and other concerts, as well as lectures and the theatre, also to visit the museum and other places of interest.

Augusta Choate, Vassar A.B., A.M., Principal



Powder Point School

Will Understand Your Boy

—and help him to understand himself. Thorough instruction. Clean, snappy athletics for every boy. Clearest understanding between boys and masters. Prepares for college and gives strong general course. Ages 10 to 19. Number limited to sixty. Boys must furnish evidence of good character. Unique location on seashore. Convenient to Boston. Address





RALPH K. BEARCE, A.M.
Headmaster
31 King Caesar Road
Duxbury, Mass.

LOWTHORPE

A School of Landscape Architecture for Women

40 miles from Boston. Intensive training for a delightful and profitable profession for women. Courses in Landscape Architecture, Horticulture and Planting Design.

AMY L. COGSWELL, Principal
Groton, Mass.

MONSON ACADEMY for Boys.

...les from Springfield. 117th year. An up-to-date college prepara... school. Aim: to develop manly boys by the practical personal ... Athletics carefully supervised. Fund for boys of proven worth. ... Booklet. JOSEPH M. SANDERSON, A.B. (Harvard) Principal. ... Street, Monson, Mass.

WALNUT HILL SCHOOL

17 Highland Street, Natick, Mass.

A College Preparatory School for Girls. 17 miles from Boston. ... Acres. Skating Pond. Athletic Fields. 6 Buildings. Gymnasium. ...

Miss Conant, Miss Bigelow, Principals.

THE BURNHAM SCHOOL FOR GIRLS

NORTHAMPTON, MASSACHUSETTS

Founded by Mary A. Burnham in 1877

Opposite Smith College Campus

MISS HELEN E. THOMPSON, Headmistress

Miss Hall's

SCHOOL FOR GIRLS

In the Berkshire Hills, on the Holmes Road to Lenox. Forty-five acres. One thousand feet above the sea level.

Miss MIRA H. HALL, Prinicpal
Pittsfield, Massachusetts

DUMMER ACADEMY

A preparatory school for a limited number of selected boys. Ideal country location. Moderate fees. International reputation. 159th year opens Sept. 20. SOUTH BYFIELD, MASS.

WALTHAM SCHOOL FOR GIRLS

Boarding and Day School

From primary grades through college preparatory. School building. Gymnasium. Three residences. Ample opportunity for outdoor l... 62nd year. Address MISS MARTHA MASON, *Principal*, Waltham, Mass.

Fathers!

Before your son enters business, a profession or any other life work, have him spend a year at the BABSON INSTITUTE. Men who are destined to inherit property or responsibility select this institution. For detailed catalogue, address

Sidney A. Linnekin, *General Manager*

BABSON INSTITUTE

102 Washington Street Wellesley Hills, 82, Mass.

The Institute also operates Extension Courses by correspondence for executives and employes, and catalogue of the Correspondence Division may be had on request.

Wilbraham Academy

Serious work, wholesome play. Ideal location and environment. Prepares for college and scientific schools. 350 acres. 8 ... buildings. Athletic fields. Modern equipment. Limited enrollment. Moderate rate.

GAYLORD W. DOUGLASS, Headmaster.
Wilbraham, Mass.

Digitized by Google

MASSACHUSETTS — (Continued)



Allen Military School

A country, college preparatory school, 9 miles from Boston. The group system prevails. Gymnasium, swimming pool, concrete rink, and three athletic fields. Upper and Lower Schools.

THOMAS CHALMERS, A.B., D.D., Director
Portsmouth Military School Under Same Management
439 WALTHAM ST., WEST NEWTON, MASS.

THE MISSES ALLEN SCHOOL

Life in the open. Athletics. Household Arts. College and general courses.

Each girl's personality observed and developed. Write for booklet. Telephone W. N. 131. WEST NEWTON, Mass.

250 Boys 22 Teachers
$800,000 Equipment
88th year opens September 20th

WORCESTER ACADEMY

WORCESTER MASSACHUSETTS

Rates: $1000 single
$850 double

Junior School for young boys

For catalog address the
Registrar, G. D. Church, M.A.

SAMUEL F. HOLMES, M.A., Principal

GRAY GABLES

45 Cedar Street
WORCESTER : MASS.

Boarding Department of the Bancroft School

A Home School for fifteen girls of high school age. Life and Study in a well-ordered Home. Large, Sunny House, friendly and helpful supervision.

College Preparation, Small Classes, Individual Attention, Gymnasium, Swimming, Riding, Athletic Field, Attendance at Concerts and Lectures of a Modern Community, as far as is consistent with the regular School schedule. *Illustrated Catalogues and Booklets on request.* MIRIAM TITCOMB, B.L., Principal.

New Hampshire

KIMBALL UNION ACADEMY

A high grade preparatory school with a moderate tuition. 100th year opens Sept. 14th. High elevation. Eight buildings. 100 acres. Farm. Separate dormitories for girls and boys. New gymnasium. Playing fields. Outing club for winter sports.

Address CHARLES ALDEN TRACY, *Headmaster*, Meriden, N. H.

STEARNS SCHOOL

A school in the country for boys. Tutoring for leading secondary schools, college, and scientific schools. Stimulating air, outdoor sports, modern homelike buildings.

ARTHUR F. STEARNS, Mt. Vernon, N. H.

COLBY ACADEMY

An endowed school for boys and girls. In the New Hampshire hills. 99% of graduates succeed in college. Self-reliance taught thru student government and athletics. Boston office, Tremont Temple. Booklets.

G. H. BARRETT, *Headmaster*, New London, New Hampshire.

NEW HAMPSHIRE — (Continued)

HOLDERNESS SCHOOL FOR BOYS

Five buildings. 20 acres. Prepares for Colleges and Technical Schools. Ranks with highest grade schools of New England. Endowment makes tuition moderate. Modern gymnasium. Skating. Winter sports. 42nd year. REV. LORIN WEBSTER, L.H.D., Rector, Plymouth, N. H.

New Jersey

CENTENARY COLLEGIATE INSTITUTE

A girls' school in beautiful country near New York. 48th year. 5 modern buildings; 50 acres; $600,000 equipment; athletics, swimming pool, etc. Sensible regulation and dress. College preparatory certificates. General and special courses. Catalog on request.

Dr. Robert J. Trevorrow, Pres. Box 71, Hackettstown, N. J.

Miss Beard's School
FOR GIRLS Orange, New Jersey

Thirty minutes from New York City. College preparatory and special courses. Music, Art, Domestic Arts and Sciences. Outdoor classes. Skating, Riding, Tennis, Hockey and Basket-ball. Four buildings. Booklet on request.

MISS LUCIE C. BEARD, Principal



Princeton Preparatory School

College preparatory school for boys. Rapid progress. Limited number of pupils and freedom from rigid class organization. Excellent equipment and facilities. Special attention given to athletics and moral welfare. 47th year.

J. B. FINE, Headmaster, Princeton, New Jersey.

KENT PLACE

SUMMIT, N. J.
20 miles from New York

A COUNTRY SCHOOL FOR GIRLS.
College Preparatory and Academic Courses.

MRS. SARAH WOODMAN PAUL
MISS ANNA S. WOODMAN
} *Principals.*

New York

Montemare
SCHOOL FOR GIRLS
Adirondacks Florida

OUT-OF-DOOR LIFE all seasons. Horseback riding, tennis, skiing, skating, golf, swimming, field sports. College preparatory and academic courses. Usual school term, September to June. Summer session, preparation for college examinations or to make up class work, July to September. Unique plan of study. Entrance at any time. Address

ANNA A. RYAN, A.B., *Headmistress*,
Lake Placid Club, New York.

ST. AGNES SCHOOL FOR GIRLS

Founded in 1870

College preparatory and special courses. Lower School for younger girls.

Miss Matilda Gray, *Principal* Albany, New York

Digitized by Google

NEW YORK — (Continued)

BRIARCLIFF
Mrs. Dow's School for Girls
Mrs. EDITH COOPER HARTMAN, B. S.-Principal
BRIARCLIFF MANOR - NEW YORK

Music Department
Mr. Ossip Gabrilowitsch, Artistic Adviser
Mrs. Florence Mosher Stevens, Director
Art Department
Mr. George W. Bellows, N.A., Director
Junior School and
Post-graduate Department
For Illustrated Circular "A"
Apply to Mrs. Dow's School

THE KNOX SCHOOL FOR GIRLS
Formerly at Tarrytown-on-Hudson, now on Otsego Lake, Cooperstown, New York. For catalog and views, address
MRS. RUSSELL HOUGHTON, Box 20, Cooperstown, N. Y.

St. John's School Manlius
Among the hills, 11 miles from Syracuse. Complete equipment. Essentially a college prep. school with military régime for habits of discipline, orderliness and promptness. Happy school life with well-ordered recreations and athletics. Business prep. course. Junior School and Summer Camp. 33 years under management of
GENERAL WILLIAM VERBECK, President. Box 197, Manlius, N. Y.

AMERICAN ACADEMY OF DRAMATIC ARTS
Founded in 1884
FRANKLIN H. SARGENT, President
The leading institution for Dramatic and Expressional Training in America.
Connected with Charles Frohman's Empire Theatre and Companies.
For information apply to
SECRETARY
255 Carnegie Hall, New York, N. Y.

JUSTINE WARD METHOD OF TEACHING MUSIC
SUMMER NORMAL COURSES
Two sessions, three weeks each—July 11th to 30th, and August 1st to 20th.
GREGORIAN CHANT
Course by Dom Eudine, O.S.B. Monk of Solesmes, July 11th to 30th.
For further information apply to
PIUS X CHAIR OF LITURGICAL MUSIC,
College of the Sacred Heart, 133rd Street and Convent Avenue, New York City. *Telephone*, Morningside 5469.

Institute of Musical Art Frank Damrosch Director
Endowed school. Provides a thorough and comprehensive musical tion in all branches, and is equipped to give highest advantages to exceptional talents. Address Secretary
120 Claremont Ave., New York City.

NEW YORK — (Continued)

Horace Mann School OF COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY
An unusually complete Day School. College Preparation. Household and Fine Arts. Gymnasium and swimming pool. Six-year High School Course for Girls. Six-year Elementary Course for Boys and Girls. Catalog upon request.
HENRY CARR PEARSON, Principal,
Broadway at 120th Street, New York City

David Mannes Music School
157 East 74th St., New York City



Stamford Military Academy
A preparatory school that pursues sound educational methods and provides a thorough training for mind and body. Located at Ossining, overlooking the Hudson, convenient to New York, the situation is ideal. Classes are purposely small and students are assured individual consideration from every teacher. The locality permits every kind of outdoor sport and the gymnasium is well equipped for all indoor exercise. Summer Camp. For catalog address
WALTER D. GERKEN, A.M., Principal
OSSINING, NEW YORK



Miss Mason's School for Girls
A school in the Westchester hills overlooking the Hudson, 45 minutes from New York. Graduate, preparatory, special and vocational departments. Separate school for little girls. Also Summer School emphasizing vocational training. For either catalog address MISS C. E. MASON, LL.M.,
Box 956 Tarrytown-on-Hudson, N. Y.



Russell Sage College
Founded by Mrs. Russell Sage in connection with Emma Willard School
A School of Practical Arts
Designed for the higher education of women, particularly on vocational and professional lines. Secretarial Work and Household Economics. B.A. and B.S. degrees.
Address Secretary
RUSSELL SAGE COLLEGE, TROY, NEW YORK

Digitized by Google

NEW YORK — (Continued)

NEW YORK, DONGAN HILLS, STATEN ISLAND

DONGAN HALL

A Boarding and Country Day School for Girls

300 feet elevation. College Preparatory and General Courses. Art, Music, Domestic Economy, Athletics, Riding.

ADA S. BLAKE, A.B., Radcliffe, *Principal.*

SAINT FAITH'S

For a limited number of ambitious girls. College preparatory, also Home Science, Music, Vocational Guidance. Invigorating climate. Modern equipment. Non-sectarian patronage. Country location. Outdoor life. New Recreation Hall. Catalog. REV. H. C. PLUM, A.B., Principal, Box 356 A, Saratoga Springs, N. Y.

Pennsylvania

Summer Course in Horticulture

The School of Horticulture for Women, Ambler, Pa. (18 miles from Philadelphia), offers an August Course in Floriculture, Vegetable Gardening, Fruit Growing and Canning and Preserving. Practical work out-of-doors forms a large part of the schedule. Teachers will be especially interested in this course. Circular upon application. ELIZABETH LEIGHTON LEE, Director.

THE BALDWIN SCHOOL

Bryn Mawr, Pennsylvania.

A Country School for Girls.

ELIZABETH FORREST JOHNSON, A.B., Head of School.

The Harcum School FOR GIRLS

Bryn Mawr, Pa.

For Girls desiring college preparation, a thorough course is offered.

For Girls not going to college, the school offers special opportunities to pursue studies suited to their tastes and needs.

For Girls wishing to specialize in Music or Art, there are well-known artists as instructors.

In Bryn Mawr, the beautiful college town, ten miles from Philadelphia. New stone building, sunny rooms with private bath, home life, large grounds. Hockey, tennis, basket-ball, riding. *Write for Illustrated Catalog.*

Mrs. EDITH HATCHER HARCUM, B.L.
(Pupil of Leschetizky), Head of the School
Mrs. L. MAY WILLIS, B.P., Academic Head.

The Misses Kirk's College Preparatory School

Offers unique opportunities for individual work in all college preparatory subjects, combined with the advantages of school life. Prepares especially for Bryn Mawr. Limited number. Faculty of eight teachers. Gymnastics, Tennis, Basket-ball.

P. O. Box 805, Bryn Mawr, Pa.

PENNSYLVANIA, Bryn Mawr.

THE SHIPLEY SCHOOL Preparatory to Bryn Mawr College. Situation opposite Bryn Mawr College gives special educational and social advantages. College Preparatory and Academic Courses. Supervised athletics. Well-equipped gymnasium. Address "Box N."
THE PRINCIPALS, ALICE G. HOWLAND, ELEANOR O. BROWNELL

THE SANATORIUM SCHOOL, Lansdowne, Pa. A Select School and Sanatorium combined for the treatment and instruction of children who through illness have fallen behind others of their age in development and studies. Speech defects corrected. Cerebral hemorrhage treated. Ages 2 to 14 years. No feeble-minded. *Booklet.* CLAUDIA MINOR REDD.

PENNSYLVANIA — (Continued)

HIGHLAND HALL

School for Girls

Founded 1867

In old residential Hollidaysburg, located in the most beautiful and healthful section of the Allegheny Mountains, six miles by electric and steam trains from Altoona on the Main Line of Penna. Railroad.

College Preparatory, General and Post-Graduate Courses. Address

MISS ELLEN C. KEATES, A.B., Principal
Hollidaysburg, Pa.

Mercersburg Academy Offers a thorough physical, mental and moral training for college or business. Under Christian masters from the great universities. Located in the Cumberland Valley, one of the most picturesque spots of America. New gymnasium. Equipment modern. Write for catalog. Address Box 164.

William Mann Irvine, LL.D., Headmaster, Mercersburg, Pa.

OGONTZ SCHOOL

Founded 1850. A school for girls occupying an estate on the summit of Rydal Hills, 25 minutes from Phila. Illustrated booklet describing new building mailed on request. Rydal, Junior Department. Miss ABBY A. SUTHERLAND, *Principal*, Pennsylvania, Montgomery County.

Miss Mills School at Mount Airy First out-of-door School for well children.

15th year. Boarding and day school for girls from 6 to 16 years. Class work in open bungalows with glass protection. Central stone school building. Modern methods. Residence (Cresheim). Specialized individual care and training. Riding, archery, all sports. 10 acres.
ELLEN STANNEY MILLS, Box A, Mount Airy, Phila., Pa.

The Mary Lyon School A Country School in a College Town. College Preparatory. Certificate privileges. General and Finishing Courses. Opportunity for advanced study. Open-air classrooms. *SEVEN GABLES, our Junior School for Girls 6 to 14.* H. M. Crist, A.B., Frances L. Crist, A.B., Principals, Box 1536, Swarthmore, Pa.

Rhode Island

MOSES BROWN SCHOOL

UPPER SCHOOL — Unique record for college entrance preparation and for success of graduates in college. Individual Supervision. Studio, manual training, athletics, gymnasium, swimming pool.
LOWER SCHOOL — Special home care and training of younger boys. Separate room for every grade. Outdoor sports. Catalog.
SETH K. GIFFORD, Ph.D., Principal, Providence, R. I.

The Mary C. Wheeler School

PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND

A Town and Country School. College preparatory and General Course. Advanced studio classes. Music. Secretarial Course. Farm home for girls 10 to 14 years.

Virginia

MARY BALDWIN SEMINARY For Young Ladies.

Established 1842. Term begins September 8th. In historic Shenandoah Valley. Students from 33 states. Courses: Collegiate (3 years), Preparatory (4 years). Music, Art, Expression and Domestic Science. Athletics, gymnasium. Catalog. STAUNTON, VA.

VIRGINIA — (Continued)

Hollins College

for WOMEN

Founded 1842. Standard College courses for Bachelor of Arts and Bachelor of Music degrees. Admission by certificate and examination. 290 students. Healthful location in mountains of Va.

For catalogue and views address

MATTY L. COCKE, President, Box 360, Hollins, Va.

SWEET BRIAR COLLEGE, Sweet Briar, Va.

STANDARD COLLEGE

Students received on certificate and by examination. Unexcelled climate, out-of-door sports all year. EMILIE WATTS MCVEA, A.M., Litt.D., President. For catalogue and views address the Registrar, Box 30.



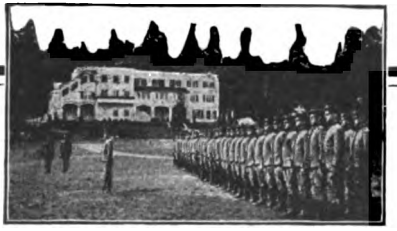
Warrenton Country School

FOR YOUNG GIRLS

Beautifully situated in the foothills of Virginia near Washington. College preparatory and special courses. French, the language of the house. The school is planned to teach girls to study, to bring them nearer nature and to inculcate habits of order and economy.

Mlle. Léa M. Bouligny, Box 41, Warrenton, Va.

Washington



Send your boy to the

Great Northwest

enter him in

The Moran School

Located near Seattle, on Puget Sound. Most healthful climate in America! School in primeval forest, on salt water beach, amid superlative Far Western scenery. Association with Western boys broadens vision and builds virile men.

Distinctive boarding school for character building. Gives that "something more" in education. Ten instructors, 60 boys. Uniforms, but not military. Graduates have all entered college, standing out in scholarship and as leaders in Harvard, Yale, Brown, Amherst, Penn, etc.

Ten carefully selected boys accepted for FALL OPENING, SEPT. 15. Tuition $1200.00. (Junior school: Moran-Lakeside, Tuition, $900.00.) For details write or wire

FRANK G. MORAN, M.A., Headmaster
Moran Schools Seattle, Washington

West Virginia

ST. HILDA'S HALL, Charles Town. W. Va.

...he Chevron School for Girls. Episcopal. ... Valley.
...llege Preparatory. Elective courses. ...letics.
... air classes. Individual instruction.
...M PENDLETON DUVAL, Principal. (

Summer Schools

Summer School

June, July and August

50 miles from New York City, elevation 1,000 feet, in the Ramapo Mountains, on Lake Walton. Sound instruction in all school and college work, with outdoor life and all land and water sports. MACKENZIE SCHOOL, Monroe, N. Y.

Teachers' Agencies

The Pratt Teachers' Agency

70 Fifth Avenue, New York

Recommends teachers to colleges, public and private schools in all parts of the country.

Advises parents about schools. **WM. O. PRATT, Mgr.**

Harlan P. French, *Pres.* **Willard W. Andrews, *Sec.***

Albany Teachers' Agency, Inc.

Has good positions for good teachers at good salaries. Calls coming every day. **Now is the time to register.** Send for circulars.

81 Chapel Street, Albany, New York

School Information FREE

Catalogs of all Boarding Schools (*or camps*) in U. S. Expert advice and relative standing free. State kind fully. 15th year. Maintained by American Schools' Association. No fees.

Write 1101 Times Bldg., New York, or 1515 Masonic Temple, Chicago

Correspondence Schools

Training for Authorship



How to write, what to write, and where to sell.

Cultivate your mind. Develop your literary gifts. Master the art of self-expression. Make your spare time profitable. Turn your ideas into dollars.

Courses in Short-Story Writing, Versification, Journalism, Play Writing, Photoplay Writing, etc., taught personally by Dr. J. Berg Esenwein, for many years editor of Lippincott's Magazine, and a staff of literary experts. Constructive criticism. Frank, honest, helpful advice. *Real teaching.*

Dr. Esenwein

One pupil has received over $5,000 for stories and articles written mostly in spare time — "play work," he calls it. Another pupil received over $1,000 before completing her first course. Another, a busy wife and mother, is averaging over $75 a week from photoplay writing alone.

There is no other institution or agency doing so much for writers, young or old. The universities recognize this, for over one hundred members of the English faculties of higher institutions are studying in our Literary Department. The editors recognize it, for they are constantly recommending our courses.

We publish *The Writer's Library*, 13 volumes; descriptive booklet free. We also publish *The Writer's Monthly*, the leading magazine for literary workers; sample copy 20c, annual subscription $2.00. Besides our teaching service, we offer a manuscript criticism service.

150-page illustrated catalogue free.

Please address—

The Home Correspondence School

Dept. 126, Springfield, Mass.

ESTABLISHED 1897 INCORPORATED 1904

Digitized by Google

Camps

SARGENT CAMPS Peterboro, N. H.
The Athletic Camps for Girls.
Expert direction in all athletic and outdoor sports combined with camp life. Homecraft for little girls in Junior Camp.
Address: *Secretary*, Everett Street, Cambridge, Mass.

ALOHA CAMPS Fairlee, Vermont. For Girls. 17th season.
3 camps—ages 7 to 30. Fun, Frolic, Friendships. Vigilance for health and safety. Booklet.
Mrs. E. L. Gulick, 280 Addington Rd., Brookline, Mass.

SONGS OF LIBERTY
Sacred and Secular. Specially adapted for
BOYS' and GIRLS' CAMPS and COMMUNITY CHORUSES
This book also includes the well-known melodies of the South. Attractively bound in cloth.
$25.00 per hundred. 30c per single copy
THE BIGLOW & MAIN COMPANY, 156 5th Ave., New York City

CULTURED ENGLISH WOMAN
Understanding boys and girls, seeks position as Governess or Chaperon.
Address BOX N, THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY.

Cape Breton Tales

By HARRY JAMES SMITH
Author of "The Tailor-Made Man," "Mrs. Bumpstead Leigh," etc.

TO read this charming volume of "Cape Breton Tales" is to live and feel the spirit of the delightful little village of Arichat.

It makes one wish to start at once for this quaint land where the old French influence is still strong—its simple folk—its blue sky and sea. Mr. Smith loved this country and it was here that he went for recreation and inspiration. He writes easily of that which was near his heart. His friend, Mr. Wiard, has supplemented Mr. Smith's work with delightful pencil sketches which are beautifully reproduced in photogravure.

The book is bound in boards with Italian Fabriano paper 5½" x 7¾". Price $2.00.

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

FOR THE MANY EARNEST STUDENTS IN

Summer Schools
and
Extension Courses

who need, more than anything else, discipline and drill in writing clear, attractive, vigorous, expressive English, we recommend

WRITING THROUGH READING

By ROBERT M. GAY
Professor of English Simmons College, Boston

Price, 90 cents



THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

Digitized by Google

It was the inventive genius of Daniel Baird Wesson, who founded this business in 1853, that made possible the superior revolver of today.

SMITH & WESSON

Manufacturers of Superior Revolvers

SPRINGFIELD
MASSACHUSETTS

Catalogue sent on request
Address Department B

Digitized by Google

This quickness at home is just great,
You don't catch me getting in late,
For this is my inning, and Campbell's is winning—
You'll never beat me to the plate.





Right for the home plate

It's good to get home when you know that right there waiting for you is a plate of delicious hot soup, to take the tiredness out of your hunger and start you naturally on the quiet enjoyment of your meal.

Campbell's Tomato Soup

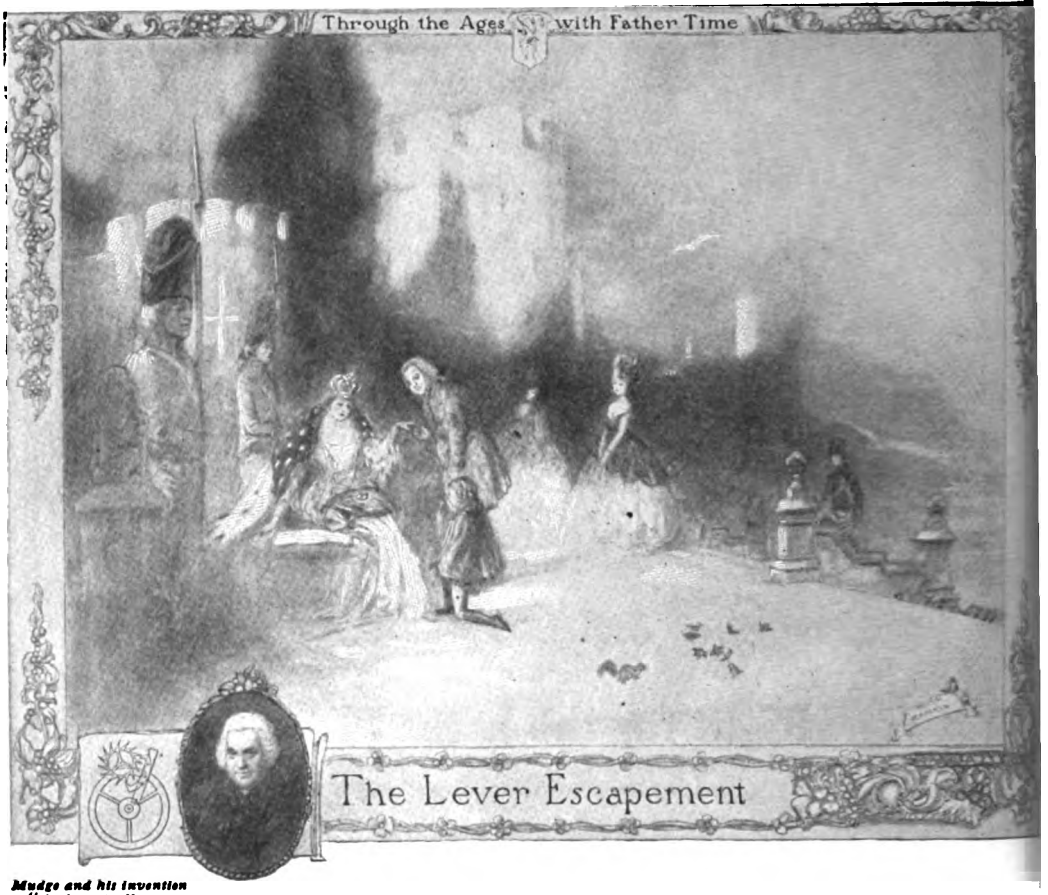
Gets its wonderful flavor and tonic properties from vine-ripened tomatoes of a selected variety, and from the way they are blended with creamery butter, pure granulated sugar and other appetizing ingredients. Serve it regularly and often. Keep a supply always on hand.

Price reduced to 12c a can

Campbell's Soups

LOOK FOR THE RED AND WHITE LABEL

Digitized by Google



Mudge and his invention — "the best of all escapements," Britten calls it— the device which gives to the balance wheel the impulse that keeps it in vibration ✱ ✱ ✱ ✱

QUEEN Charlotte of England, historians say, "was fonder of watches and jewelry than the queen of France—and of snuff than the king of Prussia!" To this royal jewel-lover, Thomas Mudge presented the first Lever Escapement watch.

This was in 1765, when George III, almost as deeply impressed with the value of Time as Alfred the Great before him, was dating all his letters with the hour and minute of writing.

In Mudge's master hands, watch movements took on more modern form, though the advantages of his Lever Escapement were long overlooked. Mudge himself used it in but two of his watches. Yet it was the direct ancestor of the double-roller escapement found in those matchless timepieces of our day—



The Corrican ✱ ✱ *$25 in green and white gold* ✱ ✱ *Double-roller Escapement* ✱ ✱ *Three-fifths actual size—an unretouched photograph*



Elgin Watches

Digitized by Google

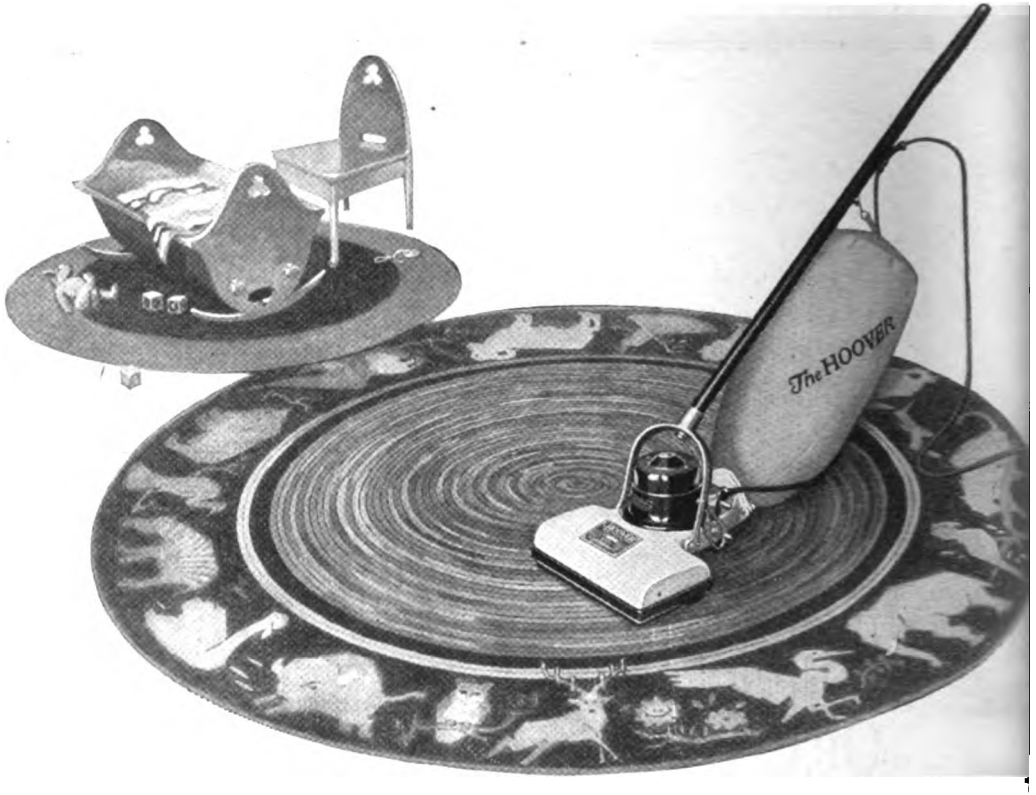
TIFFANY & CO.

NOTED FOR DESIGN QUALITY AND WORKMANSHIP

ILLUSTRATIONS WITH PRICES
OF JEWELRY AND SILVERWARE
SENT UPON REQUEST

FIFTH AVENUE & 37TH STREET
NEW YORK

Digitized by Google



Upon the fresh and lovely surfaces of rugs kept immaculate by The Hoover, your children may play in safety. In the home kept free of dangerously insanitary dust by the dustless but thorough cleaning of The Hoover, there is health protection for all the family. Surely these safeguards have appreciable value. And yet solely through the longer life of beauty that it bestows upon floor coverings, this efficient cleaner repeatedly earns its moderate cost. To save, invest in a Hoover, the one electric cleaner that gently beats out all germ-laden, nap-cutting grit from the hidden depths of rugs, as it electrically sweeps up stubbornest litter, lifts matted nap, freshens colors and suction cleans.

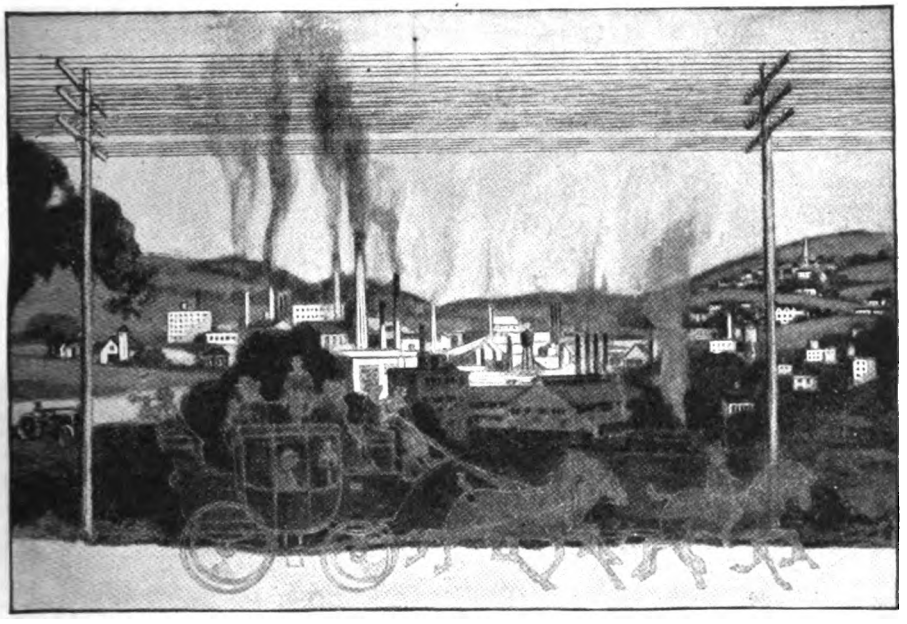
The HOOVER

It Beats — as it Sweeps — as it Cleans

Write for booklet, "How to Judge an Electric Cleaner," and names of Authorized Dealers licensed to sell and service Hoovers bearing our guarantee

THE HOOVER SUCTION SWEEPER COMPANY, FACTORIES AT NORTH CANTON, OHIO, AND HAMILTON, ONTARIO

The Hoover lifts the rug from the floor, like this — gently beats out its embedded grit, and so prolongs its life



. . . places far apart are brought together, to the present convenience and advantage f the Public and to the certain destruction, in time, of a host of petty jealousies, lindnesses and prejudices, by which the Public alone have always been the sufferers."
From Charles Dickens' Preface to Pickwick Papers.

The Advance of Understanding

Even romance of sixty brief years ago could not imagine the great advance heralded by the passing of the stage coach. The railway and telegraph were coming into their own; but the telephone had not been so much as dreamed about.

Yet the wise men of that day saw the imperative need. They saw the value of every step which brought people into closer communication with each other. They knew this to be the one way to increase understanding; and to eliminate the "host of petty jealousies, blindnesses and prejudices, by which the Public alone have always been the sufferers."

Then came the telephone. And with its coming time and distance are swept away and a hundred million people are made neighbors.

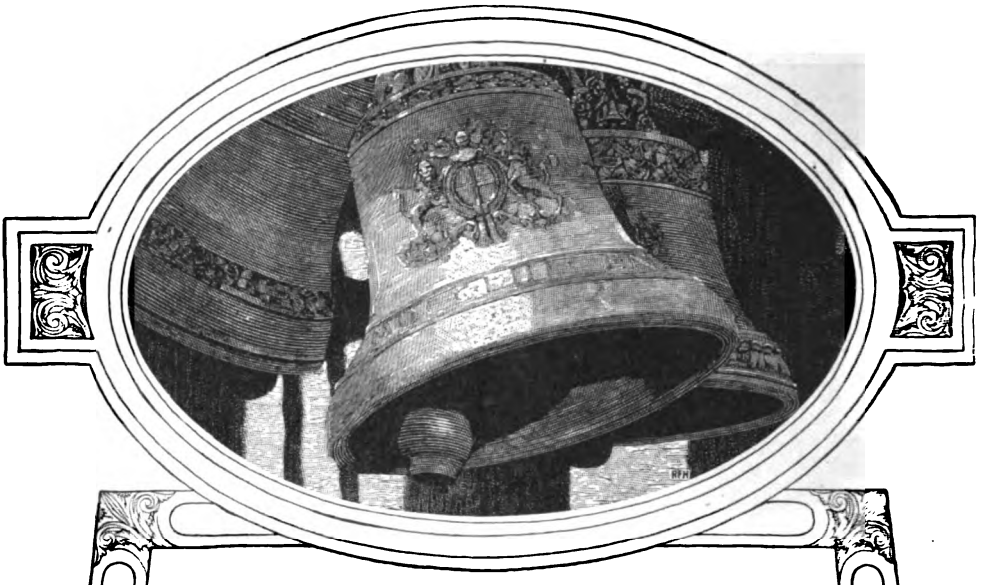
Places far apart are brought together by 34,000,000 conversations a day over the Bell System.

"BELL SYSTEM"

AMERICAN TELEPHONE AND TELEGRAPH COMPANY
AND ASSOCIATED COMPANIES

One Policy, One System, Universal Service, and all directed toward Better Service

Digitized by Google



One peal of a great bell is as much like another as is one print

of the Mimeograph like its original. The finest of workmanship is the Mimeograph's habitual product. But one can no more get neat work from a slovenly and badly aligned typewriter than one can get excellent duplicates from a dirty and mismanaged Mimeograph. No finer reproductions of letters, forms, blanks, charts, diagrams, etc., can be made than the Mimeograph will deliver under ordinary care. But trained skill is not an essential. Five thousand exact duplicates the Mimeograph delivers an hour—and at almost negligible cost. Every day it is saving huge sums for industrial and educational institutions throughout the world. Let us show you how it will save for you. Get our interesting booklet "Q-6"—from A. B. Dick Company, Chicago—and New York.

MIMEOGRAPH

Digitized by Google

Hamilton Watch

"The Watch of Railroad Accuracy"

On Time

You buy a watch to tell you accurate time. Nowhere are watches more carefully checked up for accuracy than in railroad service.

We show here Conductor G. W. Valentine and Engineer W. S. Robinson of the Pennsylvania Eastern Lines comparing their Hamiltons. They run the Manhattan Limited between Harrisburg, Pa., and Manhattan Transfer Station—right outside of New York City—an important run. Engineer Robinson recently received the following letter:

PENNSYLVANIA RAILROAD
Eastern Lines
Office of Superintendent Philadelphia Division
Harrisburg, Pa.

Mr. W. S. Robinson,
Passenger Engineman

Dear Sir:

I am pleased to note the fact that you have made a perfect record during the month of March, 1920, as all trains you were in charge of made schedule time or better than schedule time, and I desire in this manner to commend you for this excellent performance.

(signed) E. J. Cleave, Superintendent

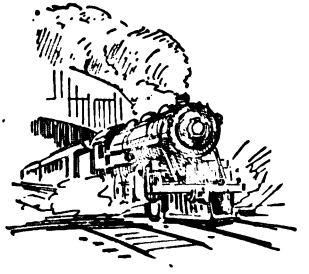
This splendid record was achieved by men who run their trains by the Hamilton Watches they hold in their hands.

Hamilton Watches are the favorite timekeepers of American railroad men. When you buy, select a watch that has accuracy as well as looks.

For women as well as men, there are many beautiful Hamilton models. Prices range from $40 to $200; movements alone, $22 (in Canada $25) and up. Send for "The Timekeeper," an interesting booklet about the manufacture and care of fine watches. The different Hamiltons are illustrated, and prices given.

HAMILTON WATCH COMPANY







Digitized by Google



Crane shower bath equipment is supplied in types and sizes to suit the precise requirements of every installation.

Crane Equipment for Country Clubs

THE country club, with its carefully developed system of bathrooms, showers and extra lavatories, its up-to-the-minute kitchen plumbing fixtures, its special provisions for drinking water, its extensive heating, refrigerating and vacuum cleaning installations, offers **the architect and building committee an exceptional opportunity to profit by Crane Service.**

All of the equipment mentioned can be supplied by Crane Co. on a basis of uniform quality, reliability and appropriateness. The task of selection is simplified, harmony is obtained—complete and lasting satisfaction is assured.



Crane "Vitroware" Drinking Fountain

We are manufacturers of about 20,000 articles, including valves, pipe fittings and steam specialties, made of brass, iron, ferrosteel, cast steel and forged steel, in all sizes, for all pressures and all purposes, and are distributors of pipe, heating and plumbing materials.

THERE IS A NEARBY CRANE BRANCH TO GIVE YOU CRANE SERVICE

CRANE CO.

836 S. MICHIGAN AVE. CHICAGO

VALVES-PIPE FITTINGS-SANITARY FIXTURES

CRANE EXHIBIT ROOMS

23 W 44TH ST. AND 22 W. 45TH ST. NEW YORK CITY — 1105-1107 BOARD WALK ATLANTIC CITY

To which the Public is cordially invited

Works: CHICAGO: BRIDGEPORT: BIRMINGHAM

BOSTON, SPRINGFIELD, BRIDGEPORT, HARTFORD, ROCHESTER, NEW YORK, HARLEM, BROOKLYN, ALBANY, PHILADELPHIA, READING, NEWARK, CAMDEN, BALTIMORE, WASHINGTON, SYRACUSE, BUFFALO, SAVANNAH, ATLANTA, KNOXVILLE, BIRMINGHAM, MEMPHIS, LITTLE ROCK, MUSKOGEE, TULSA, OKLAHOMA CITY, WICHITA, ST. LOUIS, KANSAS CITY, TERRE HAUTE, CINCINNATI, INDIANAPOLIS, DETROIT, CHICAGO, ROCKFORD, OSHKOSH, GRAND RAPIDS, DAVENPORT, DES MOINES, OMAHA, SIOUX CITY, ST. PAUL, MINNEAPOLIS, WINONA, DULUTH, FARGO, WATERTOWN, ABERDEEN, GREAT FALLS, BILLINGS, SPOKANE, SEATTLE, TACOMA, PORTLAND, POCATELLO, SALT LAKE CITY, OGDEN, SACRAMENTO, OAKLAND, SAN FRANCISCO, LOS ANGELES

CRANE EXPORT CORPORATION
10-25 WEST 44TH ST., NEW YORK
201 BRANNAN ST., SAN FRANCISCO, CAL
36 AVE. DE L'OPÉRA, PARIS, FRANCE

CRANE LIMITED } MONTREAL (HEAD OFFICE AND WORKS); TORONTO, VANCOUVER, WINNIPEG, SYDNEY, N. S. W., QUEBEC, HALIFAX, OTTAWA, REGINA, CALGARY

CRANE-BENNETT LTD., 45-51 LEMAN ST., LONDON, E.C.1

Digitized by Google



Have *You* Seen

How this test beautifies the teeth?

Millions of people have accepted this offer—have made this ten-day test. They have found a way to whiter, cleaner, safer teeth.

We urge you to do likewise. Watch how your teeth improve. Learn what this new method means to you and yours.

Remove the film

Teeth are tarnished by a film. By that viscous film you feel. It clings to teeth, gets between the teeth and stays. Old ways of brushing do not end it.

Film absorbs stains, making the teeth look dingy. It mars the beauty of millions. But it also is the cause of most tooth troubles.

Film is the basis of tartar. It holds food substance which ferments and forms acid. It holds the acid in contact with the teeth to cause decay.

It forms a breeding place for germs. They, with tartar, are the chief cause of pyorrhea. Very few people who brush teeth daily escape these film-caused troubles.

How to fight it

Dental science, after long research, has found ways to fight that film. Authorities have amply proved those methods. Leading dentists everywhere now advise their daily use.

They are embodied in a dentifrice called Pepsodent. And other most important factors are included with them.

New protections

Pepsodent combats the film in two effective ways. It also aids Nature in ways considered essential.

It stimulates the salivary flow—Nature's great tooth-protecting agent. It multiplies the starch digestant in the saliva, to digest starch deposits that cling. It multiplies the alkalinity of the saliva, to neutralize the acids which cause tooth decay.

Twice a day, Pepsodent is bringing millions these much-desired effects.

The test is free

Simply mail the coupon for a 10-Day Tube. Note how clean the teeth feel after using. Mark the absence of the viscous film. See how teeth whiten as the film-coats disappear. Watch the other good effects.

You will realize then that this way means a new era in teeth cleaning. And we think you will adopt it. Send coupon now.

Pepsodent PAT. OFF. REG. U. S.

The New-Day Dentifrice

A scientific film combatant, whose every application brings five desired effects. Approved by highest authorities, and now advised by leading dentists everywhere. All druggists supply the large tubes.

10-Day Tube Free 649

THE PEPSODENT COMPANY,
Dept. 810, 1104 S. Wabash Ave., Chicago, Ill.
Mail 10-Day Tube of Pepsodent to

.....

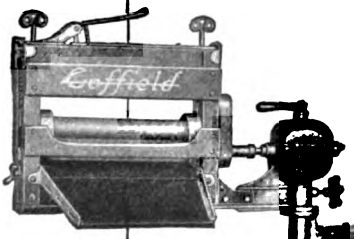
.....

.....

Only one tube to a family

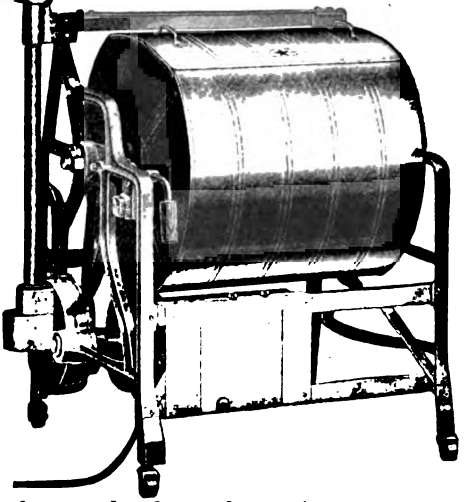
Digitized by Google

"BUILT-IN" QUALITY INSURES FAITHFUL SERVICE



Your wringer works three times to your washer's once.

Touch o' thumb Water Shutter permits you instantly to shift the direction of the wringing—no awkward sliding chutes to stick and bind.



As a result of the patented Water Shutter the Coffield has fixed 'drain boards that are always in proper position—no adjusting necessary.





The Washer rocks for a few minutes—and its job is done. The clothes are clean without wear.

But the Wringer swings, first to the *rinse*—then to the *blue water*—and finally the *basket*. It handles the clothes three times during the washing.

No wonder knowing folks are so particular about their Wringer. No wonder they select the Coffield!

Shall we send you the name of your Coffield dealer—the "Washday Smile Shop" nearest you—who will be glad to show the many refinements of the Coffield?

THE COFFIELD WASHER COMPANY
DAYTON, OHIO
"Producers of Wash-Day Smiles" for Seventeen Years
THE COFFIELD WASHER COMPANY OF CANADA, LTD.,
HAMILTON, ONTARIO

Coffield

'ASHES THE DAINTY AS WELL AS THE DURABLE

Digitized by Google



Reproduction from a painting in oil of the beautiful estate of Charles L. Tiffany, Oyster Bay, Long Island, New York

Among prominent persons and places served by Davey Tree Surgeons are:

MRS. A. M. BOOTH
E. T. BEDFORD
H. P. McCULLOUGH
WM. COOPER PROCTOR
COL. H. S. BORDEN
EDWARD F. SWIFT
QUAKER RIDGE GOLF CLUB
MERCERSBURG ACADEMY



JOHN DAVEY
Father of Tree Surgery

WHEN druids worshipped in the dim groves of "the oaks of God," men said that trees had souls. Today science has revealed to us a new wonder in trees as *living* things—organisms that breathe, assimilate food, grow, reproduce, suffer from disease, hunger and thirst. If you do not protect them from their enemies, they die prematurely. Most tree troubles can be corrected by real Tree Surgeons—if taken in time.

That is why to neglect your trees, to "put off" having them examined and treated where necessary, is to invite their ruin. Decay is insidious, and eats forward with grim progressiveness. It is frequently unapparent to the untrained eye. So with smothered roots, exhausted food supply, lack of water, insect enemies, external diseases, structural weaknesses,—to neglect them is generally fatal.

That, too, is why trees must be treated by men thoroughly schooled in the science of saving trees as living things; why real Tree Surgery is an exacting science of the highest order.

Davey Tree Surgeons are trained with rigid thoroughness. They have an accurate scientific knowledge, great practical skill, and a love of trees. Back of them is an organization of established stability, a generation of ripe experience, and a fine tradition of conscientious service. They will, by appointment, make a careful examination of your trees. Illustrated booklet sent upon request.

THE DAVEY TREE EXPERT CO. INC.,

908 Elm Street, Kent, Ohio

Branch offices with telephone connections: New York City, Astor Court Bldg.; Chicago, Westminster Bldg.; Philadelphia, Land Title Bldg.; Boston, 19 Pearl St., Wakefield; Baltimore, American Bldg.; St. Louis, Central National Bank Bldg. Write nearest office.

Permanent representatives available in districts surrounding Boston, Springfield, Lenox, Newport, Hartford, Stamford, Albany, Poughkeepsie, White Plains, Jamaica, L. I., Montclair, New York, Philadelphia, Harrisburg, Baltimore, Washington, Richmond, Buffalo, Toronto, Pittsburgh, Cleveland, Detroit, Cincinnati, Kansas City, Louisville, Indianapolis, Chicago, Milwaukee, St. Louis. Canadian address, 252 Laugauchitere West, Montreal.

DAVEY TREE SURGEONS

Digitized by Google

Every real Davey Tree Surgeon is in the employ of The Davey Tree Expert Co., Inc., and the public is cautioned against those falsely

Whether in the City or the Country



the seashore or the mountains, your home this summer will be pleasanter if the right books are there. Adventure story, nature story, biography, or amusing essay — here are books to browse through in hours of holiday leisure.



Everyday Adventures

By Samuel Scoville, Jr.

"People who like the woods and the wood creatures, and who enjoy reading about them in a pleasant, leisurely, happy-hearted book, will find 'Everyday Adventures' wholly delightful."—*N. Y. Herald.* Illustrated by photographs. $3.00

The Amenities of Book-Collecting

By A. Edward Newton

We ramble with the author through auction rooms and bookstores of London, New York and Philadelphia, meet noted booksellers, and learn much of the process, ethics and delights of book-collecting. Illustrated from Mr. Newton's remarkable collection. *Third large edition.* $4.00

The Letters of William James

Edited by his son, Henry James

"Biography and autobiography appear tame when compared to the informal and intimate utterances uncovered in these personal letters. They form as great a tribute to his life and work as anything which might be written."—*N. Y. Tribune.* Two volumes, illustrated. $10.00

The Mutineers

By Charles Boardman Hawes

A lively sea story of the days when sailing vessels made fortunes carrying cargoes between Salem, Mass., and Canton. Avowedly written for boys, but whoever can read "Treasure Island" or "Midshipman Easy" with pleasure will revel in these adventures. Illustrated. $2.00

An American Idyll

By Cornelia Stratton Parker

"If you admire 'strong men and true,' if you enjoy biography, if you like love stories, if naïveté appeals to you, if a tale of happiness well told brings you pleasure, then this book belongs on your reading list."

Seventh large impression. $1.75

The Story of a Fortunate Youth

Chapters from the Biography of an Elderly Gentleman

By Jean Kenyon Mackenzie

It is most interestingly written by his daughter and with all the charm and sympathy of a young and buoyant writer. A piece of "Americanization" to be read with pleasure by young and old. $1.25

For the Children

Little Gateways to Science

By Edith M. Patch

HEXAPOD STORIES

Fascinating stories about six-footed insects cleverly illustrated. $1.25

BIRD STORIES

"True stories that read like fairy tales." Illustrated by Robert J. Sim. $1.25

Uncle Zeb and His Friends

By Edward W. Frentz

Out-of-door tales, containing bits of natural history, childhood adventure, fellowship with animals, and information about a multitude of interesting matters. Illustrated. $1.50

The Firelight Fairy Book

By Henry B. Beston

Delightful fairy incidents and the doings of the Queen of Lantern Land are recorded in this book, with attractive pictures in color by Maurice Day. $3.00

Jane, Joseph, and John

By Ralph Bergengren

The rare appreciation of child nature displayed in these verses make it a book which must be seen and handled and read aloud to be fully appreciated. Illustrated in color by Maurice Day. $3.00

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

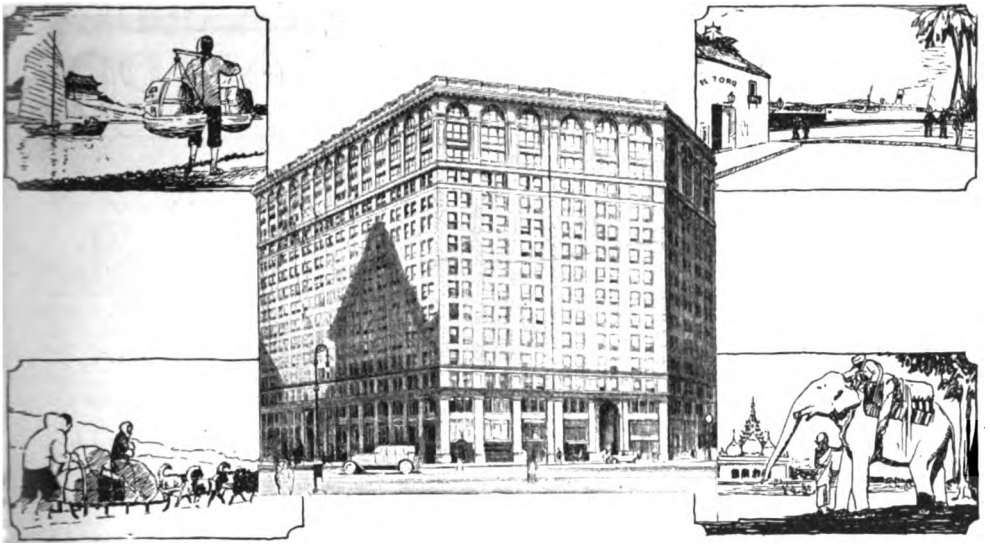
A.M. 7-21

Gentlemen: Enclosed find.....and mail, postpaid, books checked above.

Name..... *Street*.....

City..... *State*.....

Digitized by Google



From Four Corners to One

Columbus disproved the theory that the earth was flat. But the figure of speech, "from the four corners of the earth," earned, through its expressiveness, the right to survival.

It is natural that New York should draw trade from the four corners of the earth. And from everywhere between. The inbound trade currents converge on Fifth Avenue and Broadway.

Here is the logical center of business activity. And here is The Fifth Avenue Building. Broad-visioned corporation executives, quick to recognize the exclusive advantages of this building, sought offices and show-and-sales-rooms here, before construction began.

Only those in high commercial repute occupy suites in this building. Such concerns' activities extend afar. Their goods go everywhere. And from everywhere come merchant and buyer to see and purchase. Not only are commodities marketed here. Intangible things such as service and advice are dispensed, sought and found.

Tenants come from England, India, Japan. Buyers, even visitors, come from the earth's four corners to the corner of Broadway, Fifth Avenue and Twenty-third Street where stands

THE FIFTH AVENUE BUILDING

Broadway and Fifth Avenue, at Madison Square, New York.

"More than an office building."

Digitized by Google

Announcing a

Raymond-Whitcomb

Mediterranean Cruise



Sailing February 1922
on the steamship

"George Washington"

Raymond-Whitcomb Cruises mean luxurious ships, carefully chosen routes, pleasant traveling companions, delightful days at sea and visits to the most interesting ports.

Typical of their high standard is the securing under private charter of the ***"George Washington"*** for the Mediterranean Cruise. This famous ship, the largest and finest American liner, has just been completely refitted at an expense of $1,250,000.

Round the World

Comprehensive tours of six to eight months, leaving monthly from September to January.

South America, Japan-China, Europe, Pacific Northwest, Alaska

Send for booklet desired

Raymond & Whitcomb Co.
Raymond Building
Beacon & Park Streets, Boston, Mass.



ANCHOR POST

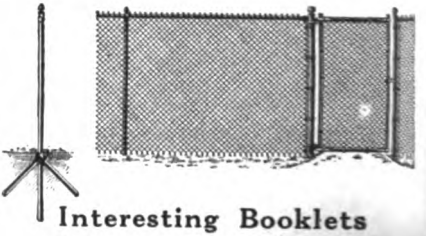


Fences

for lawns, flower gardens and other places where a serviceable, neat, and economical fence is desired, we recommend our chain link or woven wire fences in all heights from 3½ to 7 feet, complete with electric-weld gates.

Galvanized

Every part of an Anchor Post Wire Fence is heavily galvanized by the hot dip spelter process, the finest rust preventive known.



Interesting Booklets

Write or phone our nearest Sales Office for a copy of our "Residential Class A" book, illustrating and describing all our fences.

Anchor Post Iron Works

Hudson Terminal Bldg.]
52 Church St. New York, N.Y.

Sales and Erection Offices

Boston, 79 Milk St.
Mineola, L. I., N. Y., Jericho Turnpike
Cleveland, Guardian Building
Pittsburgh, Jenkins Arcade
Richmond, Va., 119 Mutual Building
Hartford, Conn., 902 Main St.
Philadelphia, Real Estate Trust Building
Chicago, 8 So. Dearborn St.
Rochester, 1006 Main St., E.

730-G

Digitized by Google





All-American express train



Native Chinese cart

Soya Beans loading for export at Dairen

Dairen

The Key to Manchuria

Imagine yourself in Dairen, the southern terminus of the South Manchuria Railway! Picture yourself in the roof-garden topping the Yamato Hotel! Look over the parapet. Take a quick view of this remarkable city.

Dairen, on the Yellow Sea, at the southern end of the Kwantung Leased Territory, was begun by the last Czar of Russia. Since the Russo-Japanese War its commercial development has been carried forward by the South Manchuria Railway. Where once there were but a few scattered fishing huts there now stands the most modern city in the Far East, with a population of 200,000, fine boulevards, clubs, parks, shops and hotels. It is bustling with commercial and industrial activity. Seaside resorts—Ogondai and Hoshigaura—but a stone's throw from the city itself, lend an additional attraction.

Dairen is a free port, with marvelous harbor development. The bulk of Manchuria's foreign trade is shipped through this port. The foreign trade of Dairen in 1909 was $32,000,000; in 1919 it was $360,000,000, a remarkable increase. Dairen is in direct steamer communication with the ports of the world, with regular service to Seattle and San Francisco. Rail communication may be made with Peking, Shanghai, Mukden, Seoul, etc. To Japan—by rail and steamer.



Obhiroba Plaza, Dairen

The South Manchuria Railway, running through Korea (Chosen) and Manchuria, is the only railway in the Orient with all-American equipment. It conducts a chain of hotels-de-luxe, travel bureaus, banks, and city and country clubs.

Your Host and Guide

SOUTH MANCHURIA RAILWAY

For all information and free travel literature, write Yozo Tamura, South Manchuria Railway Company, 111 Broadway, New York.

Digitized by Google



WHERE-TO-GO



HOTEL-RESORT and TRAVEL-DEPARTMENT

1907 1921

appears every month in the United States exclusively in

THE QUALITY GROUP MAGAZINES

ATLANTIC MONTHLY-CENTURY-HARPER'S-REVIEW of REVIEWS
SCRIBNER'S and WORLD'S WORK, In THE CANADIAN MAGAZINE in Canada

Send postage for advice where and how to go. The right hotel etc
For space and rates in our departments write to

THE WHERE-TO-GO BUREAU, Inc 8 Beacon St, Boston, Mass, U.S.A.

CALIFORNIA



All the year round-

YOSEMITE
National Park!
—in California—

Every month in the year, Yosemite National Park, in California, extends its welcome to all travelers to enjoy its motor tours, horseback rides, summer and winter recreations, seasonal trout fishing, mountain climbing with experienced guides—and the exceptional beauty and majesty of its world famous natural wonders.

The new three-day "Y T 5" tour of the Park, 156 miles by rail, and 230 miles by auto stage, offers a special attraction this year between June 1 and October 1, reaching all main points of interest including Merced River Canyon, Yosemite Valley, Hetch Hetchy Valley, Wawona Big Trees, and (after June 15) Glacier Point, at a cost of only $33.80 for round trip transportation from Merced, California, where all main line railroad tickets permit free stopover privilege.

See Yosemite this year. Write today for free Illustrated Descriptive Folder. Address

YOSEMITE NATIONAL PARK CO.
Dept. "A" Yosemite, Calif.

COMING TO CALIFORNIA ?

Send for free ILLUSTRATED FOLDERS
American Travel Bureau
517 South Spring, Los Angeles.

Fourth at Main **VAN NUYS HOTEL** Los Angeles
Centrally located. Excellent cafe in connection. The best of accommodations at moderate prices. Folder mailed on request

NEW JERSEY

WILDWOOD
By-the-Sea

Finest surf bathing in America on broad, safe beach. Excellent deep sea and still water fishing. Always cool. Five mile boardwalk. Refined amusements. Homelike hotels. Cottages and apartments furnished. For booklet and full details write **W. Courtright Smith, Sec. Bd. of Trade, Wildwood, N. J.**

MAINE



Now Open

Completed 1920. Modern in every detail. Overlooking boulevard & ocean. Midway between Boston and Portland. All summer recreations. Excellent 18-hole Golf at Country Club. Ideal for motor parties and permanent guests. Am. & Eur. plan. Write for booklet. GEO. R. SANFORD, Mgr.
(Formerly Manager Mayflower Inn, Plymouth, Mass.)

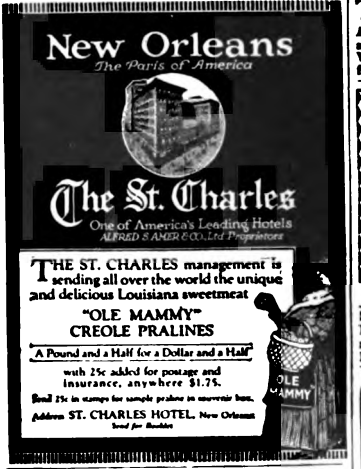
No Place Like
PORTLAND *State of Maine*
for your vacation. Always cool. Water sports. GOLF and every recreation. Beautiful scenery. Excellent hotels, boarding houses, cottages. **America's Sunrise Gateway.** Write for booklet to F. W. Cummings, Pub. Sec., Chamber of Commerce, Portland, Me.

York Beach Maine **HOTEL MITCHELL** On Ocean Boulevard
Combines Country & Seashore. Beach two hundred ft. away. Fishing. Tennis. Booklet.

DODGE POND CAMPS, Rangeley, Me.
Fine fishing and hunting, May to Nov. 1st. Open fires, baths, screened porches. Hikes. Lunches in the open. Golf near. 500-acre reservation. Booklet.

When writing to these advertisers will you please mention The Where-to-go Bureau.

NEW ORLEANS LA.



Where-to-go for August closes July

CANADA



ROYAL HOTEL **St. John, N. B.**
Leading Hotel, European Plan, Central Location
5 minutes from all boats and trains. 200 rooms, 75 with bath. Rates $2.25 and up. For Booklet apply to any Tourist Bureau, Hotel, Railway or Steamship Agency, or the Proprietors
The Raymond & Doherty Co., Ltd., St. John, N. B.

Have you considered
Quaint, Curious and Unrivalled
QUEBEC
and the celebrated
Lower St. Lawrence River Resorts
for your vacation this year?
Only one night from New York and Boston
If interested, write
QUEBEC CENTRAL RAILWAY
for information
G. D. Wadsworth, General Passenger Agent
Sherbrooke, Que.

NORTHERN ONTARIO
TEMAGAMI WABI-KON CAMP LAKE TEMAGAMI
A real North Woods Camp in heart of four million acres of virgin forest. 1,662 Lakes. Every Comfort. Wonderful fishing. One night from Toronto. Write for booklet. MISS ORR, Timagami P. O., Ont.

ON THE FAMOUS MUSKOKA LAKES
WINDERMERE HOUSE
Windermere Muskoka Canada
Modern improvements. Best of everything. Enchanting steamer trips through all our lakes bestudded with hundreds of wooded island gems. All water sports. Hay fever unknown.
GOLF Best in Muskoka. Tennis on concrete. Dancing. Write for illus. literature.

MISSISSIPPI
STAFFORD INN Vicksburg, Miss.
Is the Home of the famous Stafford Water known around the globe in the successful treatment of kidney & bladder trouble. Write Stafford Springs

RHODE ISLAND
GREEN INN
NARRAGANSETT PIER, RHODE ISLAND
A Place for Particular People
ON THE OCEAN FRONT
June to October (Henry C. T. Dutton, Prop.

WHERE-TO-GO

HOTEL-RESORT-&-TRAVEL-DEPARTMENT

CONCLUDED

TOURS

DELIGHTFUL AUTUMN TOURS
TO
EUROPE and the MEDITERRANEAN
Sailings Aug. 13 and Sept. 14
For details write
Bureau of University Travel
4 Boyd Street Newton, Mass.

TRAVEL IN EUROPE
Superb routes ART, LITERATURE
Splendid leaders HISTORY, FRENCH
Satisfactory prices SPANISH, ITALIAN
INTERCOLLEGIATE TOURS
65-B Franklin St. Boston, Mass.

NEW YORK

109-113 W. 45th St. **Hotel St. James** Times Sq. N. Y. City.
Midway between Fifth Avenue and Broadway. An hotel of quiet dignity, having the atmosphere and appointments of a well-conditioned home. Much favored by women traveling without escort. 3 minutes' walk to 40 theatres and all best shops. Rates and booklet on application. W. Johnson Quinn.

HOTEL HARGRAVE
West 72d Street, N. Y. 300 rooms, each with bath. Absolutely fireproof. One block to 72d St. entrance of Central Park. Comfort and refinement combined with moderate rates. Send for illustrated booklet.

Goldthwaite Inn, Bellport, L. I. on Great South Bay. Cool, comfortable, charming; sailing, bathing, tennis, golf. Table supplied from own farm Circular.

Niagara Falls and Buffalo One hour's ride from Woodcrest Beach Hotel on Lake Erie. Cottages, Tents, bathing, tennis, dancing, good table. Write J. B. Corcoran, Angola, N. Y., for Circular.

Where-to-go advertising covers N. America

MINNESOTA

The romantic, unspoiled lakeland of the Canadian border. Ideal facilities for lovers of the wilderness. Cottages, no hotels. Individual programs. *Deer Island, Ranier, Minn.*

ILLINOIS

The DRAKE
CHICAGO

Stands pre-eminent among the great hotels of America. Fronting Lake Michigan and on the famous Boulevard Link. Five minutes from the theatrical and shopping districts. An ideal place for your summer vacation. Rooms for two, $3.00 each person, & up. Single rooms, $5.00 and up. All rooms have bath. *Write for booklet.*

Chicago's "City Beautiful" Hotel
Lake Shore Drive
BLACKSTONE MANAGEMENT

ADIRONDACK MTS. N. Y.

PAUL SMITH'S HOTEL
Cap. 500. All rooms with bath. Am. & Eur. Service. Hotel, Casino, Cottage & House. keeping Camp Life on St. Regis & Osgood Chain of Lakes. Golf, Dancing. Fine Roads. Paul Smith's Hotel Co., Paul Smith's, N. Y.

FORGE HOUSE Old Forge, N. Y. On Fulton Chain Lakes. Excellent table, good rooms, reasonable rates. Capacity 200. Fresh milk.

MOHAWK *& Cottages* 4th Lake. Capacity 125. Latest equipment, electricity, running water every room. Garage. C. M. Longstaff, Old Forge, N. Y.

WYOMING



PLAN AN
Autumn Outing
in the BIG HORN COUNTRY

Invigorating ranch life that offers a complete rest and change. The famous H F Bar Ranch will receive guests from Sept. 1 to Dec. 1. Hunting, horseback riding, mountain grandeur bracing air, fine trout fishing, cattle roundups. Entire families can live in comfort. Steam-heated ranch house; bungalows with private bath, fireplace, and sleeping porches.

Hunting parties for big game—elk, moose, mountain sheep, bear—made up Sept. 15. References required. For particulars write **Frank O. Horton, H F Bar Ranch, Buffalo, Wyo.**

TOURS

EUROPE 1921
Parties enrolling now. Moderate prices. Most interesting routes. Great success 1920.
Temple Tours 65 B Franklin St. Boston, Mass.

This Department visits more than three-quarters of a million homes monthly, comprising the 650,000 persons in North America with incomes of $2,000 a year and over.

MASSACHUSETTS



HOTEL PURITAN
390 Commonwealth Ave, Boston
The Distinctive Boston House, called by globe trotters one of the most homelike and attractive hotels in the world. Modest rates. Our booklet has guide to historic Boston and vicinity.
Send to me for it A. P. Costello, Mgr.

THE COMFORTS OF HOME
THE PERFECT GENTLEMAN

By RALPH BERGENGREN

IF you want amusement and many a chuckle, here are two books brimful of humorous situations—excellent books to read aloud. Uniform in size and binding.

Each $1.00

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

Amelia Peabody Tileston
And Her Canteens for the Serbs

Edited by her mother, MARY W. TILESTON

THERE are certain qualities of character and soul which every New Englander prays may never perish from his stock. He will therefore read with deep joy and pride the story of this daughter of Massachusetts, the pioneer in canteen work among the Serbs. These letters, written by Miss Tileston to her family and friends, are edited with rare discrimination by her mother, author of the widely known "Daily Strength for Daily Needs." An interesting article concerning Serbia and the War prefaces the letters.

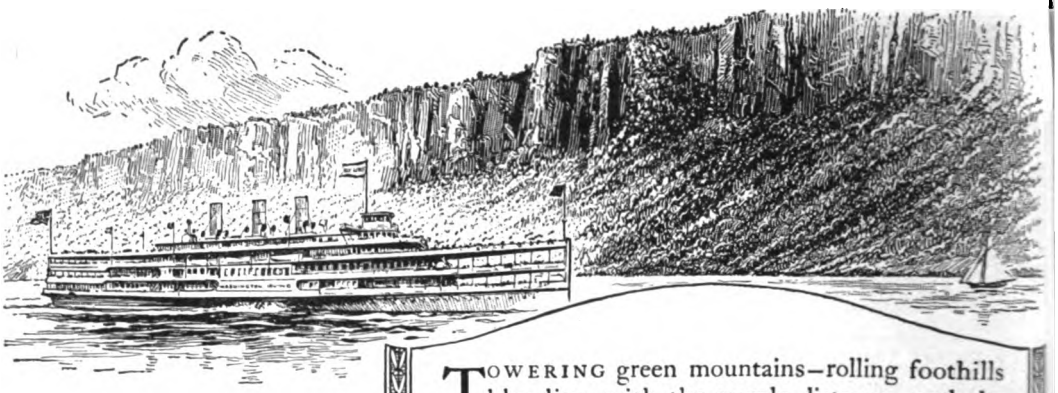
Dark green cloth binding, stamped in gold

Illustrated, $2.00 postpaid

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.
BOSTON (17), MASS.

The Prophy-lac-tic Tooth Brush
Ask your druggist for "the brush in the yellow box"—he knows

Digitized by Google



Hudson River by Daylight

TOWERING green mountains—rolling foothills blending with the purple distance—and the grim walls of the wonderful rock-ribbed Palisades—pictures of gripping interest that you will never forget. A trip rendered doubly enjoyable by the comforts of the

PALATIAL DAY LINE STEAMERS

"Washington Irving" "Hendrick Hudson" "Robert Fulton"
"Albany" and (Newest Flyer of the Fleet) "De Witt Clinton"

Season to October 23. Daily including Sundays

The ideal connecting link for points north. All through rail tickets between New York and Albany accepted. The wonders of this 150-mile sail, also delightful One-Day Outings, described in our literature, sent on receipt of 4c.

Hudson River Day Line
Desbrosses Street Pier, New York

High and cool in the Berkshire Hills on main line of motor travel

▽

June 18 to October 15



Golf, Tennis, Concerts and Dancing

▽

Desirable cottages with hotel service

▽

Winter Resort, Princess Hotel, Bermuda

HOTEL ASPINWALL

LENOX [illegible] CHUSETTS

Estate of 600 acres [illegible]le-riding in the country

[illegible]R, *Managers*

Digitized by Google



With a bold brush, the old lantern maker dashes on designs and body colors. You marvel at the fairy-like effects he obtains.

Every Day New Scenes that Fascinate



Everywhere, in the Orient, are wonderful kaleidoscopes of color and interest. Narrow streets teeming with people garbed in blue, purple, mauve and gray. Shops, brilliant with gilded scrolls and swinging, rose-tinted lanterns. Towering pagodas. A picturesque tea house on a tiny lake.

You *must* see it all while the customs and costumes of the old civilization remain.

Plan to travel over the new American Trans-Pacific Highway, the short route from Puget Sound to the Orient. Five modern, 21,000 ton, U.S. Shipping Board liners traverse this ocean highway providing frequent sailings and exceptionally fine service. Travelers are assured the same unexcelled service that has characterized The Admiral Line for over a decade.

SAILINGS FROM PUGET SOUND
Seattle-Tacoma, Wash., Victoria, B.C.

SS. Silver State	July 9	SS. Keystone State	Aug. 27
SS. Wenatchee	July 30	SS. Wenatchee	Sept. 17

For fares, reservations or detailed information, apply to any ticket or tourist agent or
TICKET OFFICES
NEW YORK CITY, 17 State St. — CHICAGO, ILL., 142 So. Clark St.
All Principal cities of the Pacific Coast and the Orient
E. G. McMICKEN, Pass. Traf. Mgr., Seattle, U.S.A. M. J. WRIGHT, Frt. Traf. Mgr.

ANYWHERE ON THE PACIFIC

The ADMIRAL LINE

H. F. ALEXANDER, PRESIDENT

PACIFIC STEAMSHIP COMPANY

AROUND THE WORLD

Tours de Luxe, perfect in every detail, will sail—westward—from Pacific Coast in August and October; eastward—from New York in October and November. Itineraries provide for visits to each country at the most desirable season; they include JAPAN—NORTH and SOUTH CHINA—PHILIPPINES—COCHIN-CHINA — JAVA — BURMA — INDIA — CEYLON and EGYPT. Optional extensions to THE NILE, PALESTINE, ALGERIA, TUNISIA.

Send for descriptive literature.



Other travel programs to
EUROPE, PACIFIC NORTHWEST—ALASKA—NATIONAL PARKS, JAPAN—CHINA, SOUTH AMERICA.

THOS. COOK & SON

New York Chicago Philadelphia
Boston San Francisco Los Angeles
Montreal Toronto Vancouver

TRAVEL COOK'S SERVICE



Hotel Puritan

390 Commonwealth Ave., Boston

This

Distinctive Boston House

is one of the most homelike and attractive hotels in the world. It provides quarters of any size with or without private sitting-room at wholly reasonable rates.

The Puritan is 100 yards west from the corner of Commonwealth and Massachusetts avenues, the meeting spot of motor roads entering and leaving Boston and near Massachusetts subway station which is 4 minutes from shops and theatres, 8 from the South and 11 from the North Stations.

Send to me for our booklet with its guide to Boston and its historic vicinity.

A. T. COSTELLO, Manager

Homey *and* Sociable

HOTEL SINTON



the hotel of character, in the city of character

CINCINNATI

THE Hotel Sinton, with its commodious lounging accommodations and sociable atmosphere, appeals to the traveller who appreciates comfort in luxurious surroundings.

The Hotel Sinton makes a special appeal to the women travelling alone. It is the kind of hotel to which you will want to send your wife or daughter. You know that here she will be provided with every possible convenience, attention and protection, as well as the association of people of culture and refinement.



New wing recently completed increases capacity to 700 Rooms. Private Bath and Servidor in every room.

MODERATE TARIFFS

Mail orders for the famous Hotel Sinton Louis XVI Candies filled promptly. Write for price-list.

Write for booklet describing and picturing the Hotel Sinton, and listing the many places of interest in and near Cincinnati. Also for booklet on Servidor Service. Address Dept. M-1

HOTEL SINTON J. L. Horgan, Mgr CINCINNATI

Digitized by Google



The Breeze of the Seven Seas

Perhaps you are not sailing any of the seven seas this Summer. No matter—the breeze that blows the traveler happily on his way is a land breeze also. It is money. Not so much in amount, as that it shall be convenient, safe against loss or theft, and good as gold anywhere.

American Express Travelers Cheques

Are the "insured money" of all nations

Sky-blue in color, about the size of a dollar bill, these cheques are issued in amounts of 10, 20, 50, 100 and 200 dollars. Sterling cheques in 5 and 10 £—French Franc cheques in 200 and 400 francs. They come in a neat leather wallet with perforated ends and cost 50c for each $100. You sign each cheque when bought. To cash them you sign your name a second time. These two signatures identify you as the rightful owner. No form of money is so absolutely safe—none so universally recognized the world over—for larger sums American Express Letters of Credit are desirable. They are easily changed into our Travelers Cheques without extra cost.

Holders of American Express Travelers Cheques or Letters of Credit command the services of the American Express Company's world organization. These offices and thousands of correspondents everywhere assure the traveler the most helpful advice and practical assistance.

Wherever you go this Summer, near or far, week-ends or a tour of the world, convert your money into American Express Travelers Cheques.

For all journeys secure your steamship tickets, hotel reservations and itineraries or plan your cruise or tour through the American Express Travel Department.



American Express Company
65 Broadway, New York

Digitized by Google



Sales Prestige

is no thing of mere accident. The article must be so superlatively good that all peoples of all tongues unanimously agree the manufacturer has placed quality FIRST.

GEORGE FROST CO., BOSTON, Makers of

Velvet Grip Hose Supporters

for All the Family



AS a symbol of respect and love, a Harrison Memorial of Barre granite will stand unchanged throughout the years.

Our 75 years' experience is an assurance of correct designing and careful construction.

Write for Booklet 1

HARRISON GRANITE CO.
200 FIFTH AVE. NEW YORK

807 Fine Arts Building, Chicago, Ill.
1501 Kresge Building, Detroit, Mich.
4927 Osage Avenue, Philadelphia, Pa.
Works: Barre, Vt.

Member of Memorial Crafts Institute

HARRISON MEMORIALS

21-1

DURAND
STEEL RACKS



DURAND Steel Racks are not simply bins and shelving.

They are an essential adjunct of system in handling stocks of goods, keeping perpetual inventory, etc.

They are not mere metal; they are a method—a method so flexible that it will meet the fluctuating needs of practically any stock room.

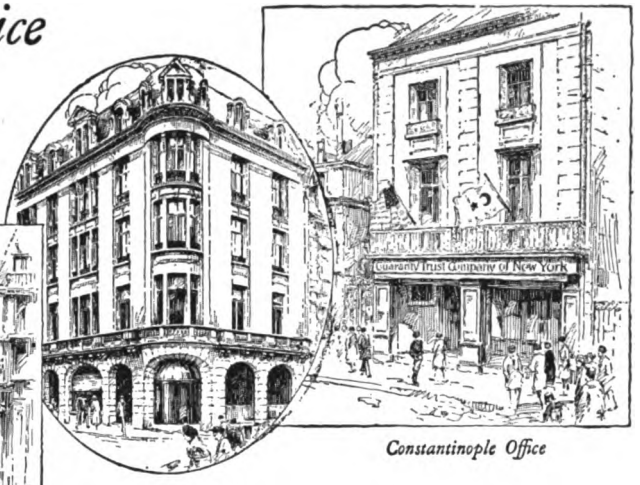
Send for catalog of Durand Steel Lockers, or of Durand Steel Racks and Shelving.

DURAND STEEL LOCKER CO.

1506 Ft. Dearborn Bank Bldg. Chicago — 506 Park Row Building New York

Digitized by Google

Guaranty Service to Travelers Abroad



Constantinople Office

Brussels Office



(*Above*) *Pall Mall Office, London*
(*Below*) *Paris Office*



AMERICANS abroad will find at all of our European Offices—which are distinctively American banks—not only unusually complete banking facilities, but also valuable personal service in solving numerous travel problems. This service is freely at the disposal of holders of *Guaranty Letters of Credit* and *Travelers Checks*.

Guaranty Letters of Credit enable you to draw large or small sums in the currency of the country in which you are traveling. Guaranty Travelers Checks, in convenient denominations, will complete your financial provisions. Both protect against loss.

They can be obtained at banks throughout the country or at our offices.

Send for booklet, "Guaranty Service to Travelers"

GUARANTY TRUST COMPANY OF NEW YORK

NEW YORK LONDON PARIS BRUSSELS LIVERPOOL HAVRE CONSTANTINOPLE

CAPITAL & SURPLUS $50,000,000 RESOURCES MORE THAN $800,000,000

5

Digitized by Google

A FINANCIAL MEETING PLACE

¶ In the pages immediately following, THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY groups the announcements of banks and bankers, with particular reference to those which offer a service in Commercial and Investment Banking. We believe it is to the interest of our readers to present such advertisements in this manner and, on our part, we undertake to accept, for this Department, only such announcements as, in our judgment, are submitted by firms and institutions which, through their character and experience, are worthy of the confidence of our readers.



What Bonds for YOU?

THE BOND that you would buy might not be the bond we would suggest to another investor with different plans in view.

Long or Short Term Bonds, or Acceptances for temporary investment, care should be taken in their selection.

At our nearest office, we will be glad to put before you a list of high-grade, thoughtfully selected securities which at [illegible] prices, yield a liberal return on the money invested.

Current Purchase Sheet mailed on request for A165.

THE NATIONAL CITY COMPANY
NATIONAL CITY BANK BUILDING
NEW YORK

The National City Company

National City Bank Building, New York

Offices in more than 50 cities

BONDS · PREFERRED STOCKS · ACCEPTANCES

BEFORE BUYING THE SECURITY OF A COMPANY DO YOU EVER ASK THESE QUESTIONS?

Is the demand for its product or its service such that periods of business depression can have but little effect on its earnings?

Have its dividends always been earned with a margin of safety?

Are the assets behind the company's bonds and stock not only sufficient, but in excess of the requirements for safety?

Upon request we shall be pleased to suggest investments meeting these requirements.

KIDDER, PEABODY & COMPANY

115 DEVONSHIRE STREET
BOSTON, MASS.

18 BROAD STREET
NEW YORK, N.Y.

CORRESPONDENTS OF

BARING BROTHERS & COMPANY, Ltd., LONDON

Digitized by Google

The Reinvestment of Funds

MORE than ordinary care and foresight are needed today to insure the proper reinvestment of your funds. The wide experience and helpful co-operation of this company are offered through its Bond Department to all classes of investors—individuals, fiduciaries, institutions and corporations.

The particular requirements of each case are first studied thoroughly and disinterestedly. Counsel is then given in the form of a list of recommended securities which is submitted for your consideration. Your purchases when made, large or small, are thereafter carefully "followed through" by means of an elaborate diary system. Our customers are duly apprised of all important developments pertaining to securities purchased through us.

Our Statistical Department and Financial Library complete the service rendered to investors by the Bond Department. Current information on financial and economic affairs the world over is available at all times. Data of immediate or prospective interest, including market quotations, will be readily supplied whenever requested.

In connection with the investment or reinvestment of funds, a modernly equipped trust company, by virtue of its specialized experience and facilities, is able to render exceptional and often invaluable services. Those of this institution are always at your disposal.

From time to time we publish circulars describing a number of carefully selected and especially attractive issues. May we send you our *July Investment List?* Please address Department A

OLD COLONY TRUST COMPANY
BOSTON

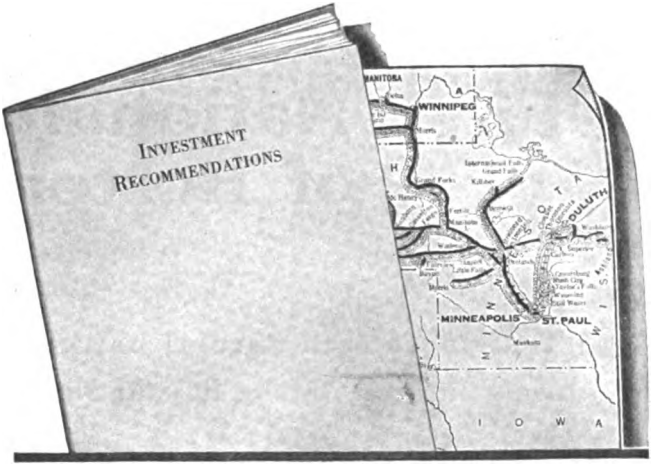
Member of the Federal Reserve System

Digitized by Google

A Country-Wide Investment Service

NEW YORK
140 Broadway
Fifth Ave. & 44th St.
Madison Ave. & 60th St.
268 Grand St.
ALBANY, N. Y.
ATLANTA, GA.
BALTIMORE, MD.
BOSTON, MASS.
BUFFALO, N. Y.
CHICAGO, ILL.
CINCINNATI, O.
CLEVELAND, O.
DETROIT, MICH.
ERIE, PA.
HARRISBURG, PA.
HARTFORD, CONN.
JAMESTOWN, N. Y.
JOHNSTOWN, PA.
KANSAS CITY, MO.
LOS ANGELES, CAL.
MINNEAPOLIS, MINN.
PHILADELPHIA, PA.
PITTSBURGH, PA.
PORTLAND, MAINE
PROVIDENCE, R. I.
READING, PA.
ROCHESTER, N. Y.
ST. LOUIS, MO.
SAN FRANCISCO, CAL.
SCRANTON, PA.
SEATTLE, WASH.
WASHINGTON, D. C.
WILKES-BARRE, PA.

Our nearest Office will serve you promptly



EACH month *Investment Recommendations* serves many investors as a guide in their purchase of securities. A request to our nearest office will bring this booklet to you.

Our broad service of financial information and advice is also at your disposal.

If you have any investment problem, or if you wish detailed data on particular issues or types of securities, an inquiry to our nearest office will place at your service the entire range of GUARANTY SERVICE TO INVESTORS.

We shall be pleased to send you a copy of *Investment Recommendations* or to assist you in any other way.

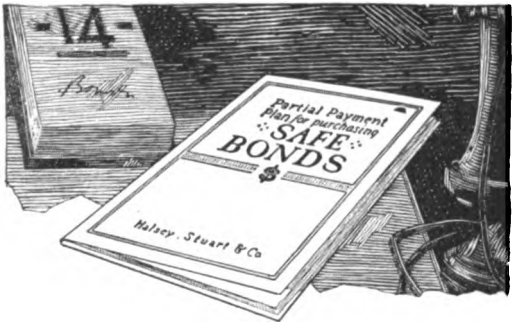
Guaranty Company of New York

Digitized by Google

The First National Bank of Boston

Transacts commercial banking business of every nature. Make it your New England Bank

Capital, Surplus and Profits $37,500,000



THE NEW WAY OF BUYING BONDS

BUY Bonds as you bought your Liberty Bonds—in partial payments. Our Partial Payment Plan permits purchase of our bonds in payments extending over a ten months' period with interest at 6% on all payments until completed.

Further details are contained in our booklet AM-5

HALSEY, STUART & CO.

Incorporated—Successors to N. W. Halsey & Co., Chicago

CHICAGO NEW YORK PHILADELPHIA BOSTON
DETROIT ST. LOUIS MINNEAPOLIS MILWAUKEE

Every Person with Dependents

Should secure and read a copy of "Safeguarding Your Family's Future," which may be obtained of a local Trust Company, or by addressing

TRUST COMPANY DIVISION
American Bankers Association
Five Nassau Street NEW YORK

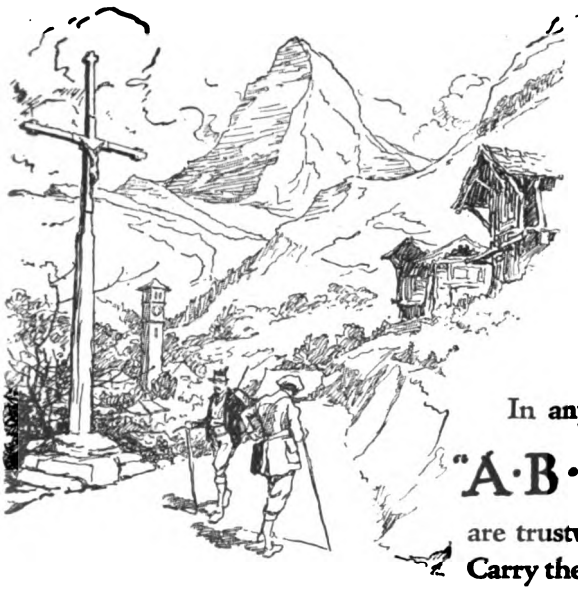
AMERICANS BY ADOPTION

By JOSEPH HUSBAND

"Biographical sketches they are, and biography is the most fascinating form of history, but in this book the author strikes down to the very foundations of man's desires and gives the sketches as an illustration of his theory."—*Seattle Post-Intelligencer.* "It is a trumpet call. Such things have been, they yet again may be."—*Boston Transcript.* Each chapter is illustrated by a portrait of its subject. $1.50

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

Digitized by Google



FRIENDS IN EVERY CLIME

from Switzerland to the Seashore

In any place, in any emergency

"A·B·A" - American Bankers Association Cheques

are trustworthy traveling companions.
Carry them for safety and convenience.



THEY are safe because you alone can cash them. Your countersignature in the presence of the acceptor identifies you. If lost or stolen they cannot be cashed. They are convenient because they are easy to carry and are accepted the world over.

Issued in denominations of $10, $20, $50, and $100, in convenient wallets—at almost any bank in the United States and Canada.

For full information write to

BANKERS TRUST COMPANY

New York City



Digitized by Google

Investors' Guide for July

Prestige developed through two-thirds of a century's investment experience, has firmly established the House of Greenebaum foremost in the minds of thousands of conservative investors in all parts of this country and abroad.

The Greenebaum Standard of Safety is nationally recognized as representing the maximum protection for investors.

Greenebaum First Mortgage Real Estate Bonds meet the safety requirements of the most exacting investor—individual, estate, corporation or institution. They comprise the most attractive form of investment, combining extreme safety of principal with liberal interest return.

For over 66 years, Greenebaum Bonds have successfully stood every test.

Ask for July Investors' Guide No. 407

For Convenience, Use Coupon Below

Greenebaum Sons Investment Company

66 Years' Proven Safety

Correspondents in Many Cities

The stockholders of Greenebaum Sons Investment Company are identical with the stockholders of Greenebaum Sons Bank and Trust Company

Oldest Banking House in Chicago

Greenebaum Sons Investment Company
S. E. Cor. La Salle and Madison Sts., Chicago

Send a copy of the Greenebaum Investors' Guide to

NAME.....

STREET.....

CITY.....

STATE.....407

RONALD Publications on Business

Making Your Business Control More Effective

Your effectiveness as a business executive depends largely upon two factors:

1. A working knowledge of sound, progressive methods of business analysis and direction, and the ability to apply that knowledge to specific problems.

2. Your understanding of the economic forces governing business activity and the part they play in determining current trends and practices.

ADMINISTRATION

The Journal of Business Analysis and Control

definitely supplements and broadens your powers in both these directions. It gets right down to the fundamental problems that face the men bearing responsibility in business.

Each issue of this distinctive new magazine presents actual, successful methods of executive control as developed in practice by business organizations. These plans are described by men whose standing and experience leave no doubt as to their knowledge of their subjects. The methods discussed are given in their original settings so that the reader can more readily adapt the procedures to his own use.

Special Departments of Unusual Value

In the Review Section, new business books are impartially described by business and technical experts. The Problem Section contains authoritative solutions to executive problems worked out by experienced business men. Another department is devoted to items of business progress.

Subscribe Now for This Magazine

and see for yourself its business value. Get each month its specific aids in your work. Build a permanent file of it for reference. Subscriptions will be taken at your bookstore, or send in the coupon below.

The Ronald Press Company

At Bookstores or *by Mail*

The Ronald Press Company
20 Vesey Street, New York

Enter my subscription to "*Administration—The Journal of Business Analysis and Control*" for one year (12 issues). Invoice for the amount of the year's subscription—$5.00 (Canadian $5.50; foreign $6.00)—will be sent me with the first issue.

Name.....

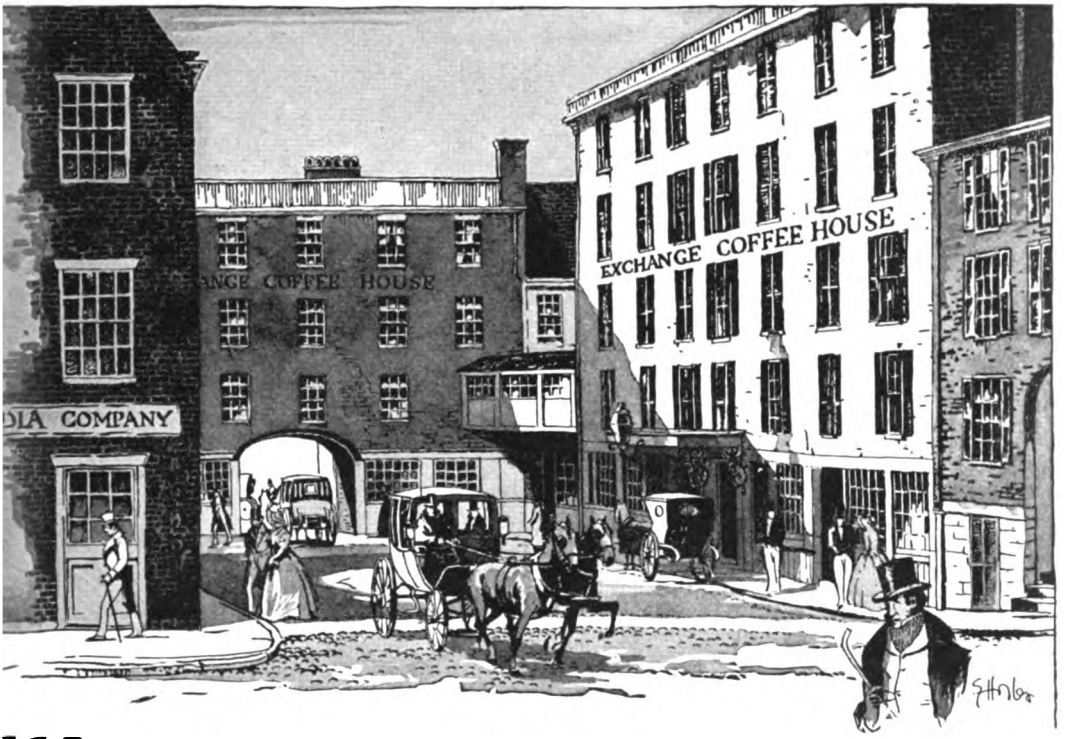
Address.....

Business Connection.....

(363)

For catalog of publications, check here. ☐

Digitized by Google



When BOSTON was a City of 80.000

THIS WAS IN 1836—the year when Benjamin T. Reed convened eleven leading Boston merchants and manufacturers in the famous Exchange Coffee House, to organize a bank.

With Mr. Reed as President and a $500,000 capital, *The Warren Bank* opened for business. A cashier, a teller, a bookkeeper and a messenger comprised the staff. The title was shortly changed to *The Shawmut Bank.* Through vision and faithful service the new bank thrived. In 1864 incorporation was secured as *The Shawmut National Bank.*

Following a reorganization in 1898, the present title—THE NATIONAL SHAWMUT BANK *of* BOSTON—was adopted. Since that year, the growth of the bank has been consistent. Deposits increased from $30,000,000 in 1899 to more than $140,000,000 at this date. The service organization now includes over 1600 branches and connections, giving this bank representation all over the world.

The policy of this 85-year old institution is very ably expressed in the words of a former Chairman of directors, " . . a large, strong, powerful bank, conducting a wise, conservative, but progressive business. It will not devote itself to any particular or exclusive line of the banking business. Its aim will be to accommodate all classes of business and all classes and kinds of people; to accommodate and do business with the small merchant as well as with the rich."



THE NATIONAL SHAWMUT BANK *of* BOSTON

Resources far exceed $200.000.000

Digitized by Google

Why Gamble?

The basic Law of Action-Reaction governs both speculative and investment markets. While it is impossible for any one to anticipate "day-to-day" ripples, the great major movements are regular almost as the tides themselves.

Babson's Reports

Based on fundamental statistics, Babson's reports carefully forecast these major movements. They enable you to find the real "buys" at low tide—to sell out as your holdings reach near the peak—and then to buy in again at close to bottom prices.

Report and Booklet on Request



A recent Babson Bulletin and booklet "Getting the Most from Your Money" will be sent to interested investors without charge.

Merely Ask for Bulletin G-22

Roger W. Babson's Statistical Organization
Wellesley Hills, 82, Mass.
(Suburb of Boston)
The Largest Organization of Its Character in the World

Clip Off Here

MEMO For Your Secretary

Write Roger W. Babson, founder of The Babson Statistical Organization Wellesley, Hills, 82, Mass., as follows: Please send a copy of Special Bulletin No. G-22 and Booklet, "*Getting the Most from Your Money*"—gratis.

Foreign Government Obligations

WE believe that the external loans of certain foreign governments offer the investor splendid opportunities for the safe and profitable investment of his funds.

"CASSATT OFFERINGS" lists a careful selection of these loans with a discussion of their advantages and safeguards.

KINDLY ASK FOR CIRCULAR A-7

CASSATT & CO.
Established 1872
PHILADELPHIA
NEW YORK BALTIMORE PITTSBURGH SCRANTON

Banking Service The World Around

In all matters of foreign trade or domestic banking you can rely on the strength, experience and facilities of

***The* CONTINENTAL *and* COMMERCIAL BANKS**
CHICAGO
Over $55,000,000 Invested Capital

PATRONS OF DEMOCRACY

By Dallas Lore Sharp

The substance of this little book, as it originally appeared in the *Atlantic Monthly*, resulted in the selling out of the entire edition of the magazine within a short time. In book form the article is considerably expanded. It is not only of interest to parents and teachers, but of value to all concerned in Americanization wor[k]

80 cents

TH[E ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.]
8 A[rlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.]

The Atlantic Year Book

Compiled by TERESA S. FITZPATRICK and ELIZABETH M. WATTS

A selection of thought from the prose and poetry philosophers of America. Containing some of the most valuable and splendid excerpts from the *Atlantic* since its foundation in 1857, this little volume is one in which every *Atlantic* reader will delight. $1.00

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

Digitized by Google

41 YEARS INVESTMENT EXPERIENCE SAFEGUARDS OUR CLIENTS' INTERESTS

A $27,000,000 Corporation

Guarantees payment of

Eight Per Cent!

First Mortgage Real Estate Gold Bonds

The Bonds will be secured by tangible real estate valued at approximately two times the entire bond issue and all the usual safeguards that feature the American Bond & Mortgage Company investments.

In addition there is an additional guarantee of prompt payment of principal and interest by a corporation with net assets of fifteen times the amount of this loan and income sufficient to pay over twenty times the interest charges.

The wide margin of actual and tangible real estate security, supplemented by the unconditional guarantee of one of the largest corporations in the United States, together with the unusually attractive interest rate and 4% of the Normal Tax paid, combine to make this one of the strongest investment issues we have ever been able to offer the investing public.

Maturities: 1 to 10 Years Denominations: $100 $500 $1000

Price: Par and Accrued Interest, Yielding 8 Per Cent

The above information, while not guaranteed, has been obtained from sources believed to be accurate. Bonds offered subject to prior sale, and when, as, and if issued and received by us.

AMERICAN BOND & MORTGAGE COMPANY

American Bond & Mortgage Bldg., 127 N. Dearborn St., Chicago

562 Fifth Avenue, New York City

Columbus, Ohio Davenport, Iowa Grand Rapids, Mich. Rockford, Illinois

Name.....Address.....

Fill out and mail this coupon for Booklet Q-17, illustrating and describing this investment and the remarkable enterprise which guarantees it

Digitized by Google

Pointed Questions for July Investors to Ask

INVESTORS are not likely to go wrong in buying securities if they investigate their dealer and the investments he offers them, on the basis of the following questions:

"Have your clients ever suffered loss? If so, why?

"Have these securities an absolutely clean record? If not, why not?"

We invite these questions from investors, and would be glad to have you inquire in this way of us. And perhaps you would be interested in our July booklet, "Common Sense in Investing Money". Write today. Ask for

BOOKLET G-1128

S. W. STRAUS & CO.

ESTABLISHED 1882 • INCORPORATED

NEW YORK • Straus Building
CHICAGO • Straus Building

OFFICES IN FIFTEEN PRINCIPAL CITIES

39 years without loss to any investor

Copyright 1921, by S. W. Straus & Co.

INVESTORS' LIBRARY

THE search for information on the part of individual investors is one of the encouraging signs of the times.

The *Atlantic Monthly*, in connection with its Financial Advertising Department, wishes to encourage this by the publication of the following list of booklets, which, it is believed, should prove useful to those readers who are concerned over the problems of the investment of their surplus funds.

It is recommended that readers write directly to the Investment Houses, making request for such booklets as seem most likely to be useful, or for such information as the booklets may suggest. Our banker friends will be glad to be of service to *Atlantic Monthly* readers.

"Investment Securities"; Kidder, Peabody & Co., 17 Wall St., New York, or 115 Devonshire St., Boston, Mass.

"Let's Choose Executors and Talk of Wills," a booklet on the fiduciary activities of a large bank; Bankers' Trust Co., 16 Wall St., New York.

"Shawmut Service," an interesting booklet setting forth the many-sided service rendered by a present-day big-city bank. Of much interest to business men. Offered by the National Shawmut Bank, Boston, Mass.

"Common Sense in Investing Money and Safety and 6%," well-prepared booklets explaining the investment of money in improved real estate, as developed by S. W. Straus & Co., specialists in 6% real estate mortgage bonds, Straus Buildings, New York and Chicago.

"Equipment Trust Securities," a form of securities arising out of the financing of railroads' locomotives and cars. This booklet gives individual investors an opportunity of learning how the securities are created and why they are desirable as investments. Offered by Cassatt & Co., Commercial Trust Building, Philadelphia, Pa.

"Getting the Most from Your Money." Investment involves method. Some follow one plan, some another. This booklet sets forth plans and suggestions useful to men and women who take more than ordinary interest in their investment problems. Offered by Babson's Statistical Organization, Wellesley Hills, Mass.

"The Safe Keeping Account." This booklet sets forth the need for greater care in the handling of investment securities after they have been bought. Offered by the Equitable Trust Company, 37 Wall Street, New York City.

"An Organization for Investment Service," a booklet describing interestingly the nation-wide facilities which are placed at the disposal of investors by the Guaranty Company, 140 Broadway, New York City.

"Choosing Your Investment Banker," a worth-while booklet for investors, giving them an idea of what to look for in their investment banker. Offered by Halsey, Stuart & Co., 209 So. La Salle St., Chicago, Ill.

"Systematic Savings Plan," a pamphlet which discusses the partial payment method of buying real estate mortgages. Offered by Greenebaum Sons Bank & Trust Company, La Salle and Madison Streets, Chicago, Ill.

"Concerning Trusts and Wills," a booklet outlining the advantages of a trust company over an individual in fiduciary capacities. Offered by the Old Colony Trust Company, Boston, Mass.

"Northern Pacific-Great Northern," a study of two great railroad systems in connection with the issue of $230,000,000 bonds popularly known as "Burlington Joints." Offered by Brown Brothers & Co., 59 Wall Street, New York City.

"Safeguarding Your Family's Future," a booklet of interest to men and women in the careful making of their wills and particularly to present the idea of a corporate executor as compared to the individual acting as executor. Offered by American Bankers' Association, Trust Company Division, 5 Nassau Street, New York City.

"Men and Bonds," an illustrated booklet describing in detail the work of a modern investment house in terms of the National City Company's scope and service. Of much interest to investors. Offered by National City Company, 55 Wall Street, New York City.

"Wool and Wool Manufacture," a booklet giving information of interest to investors in connection with one of our great industries. Offered by the First National Bank, Boston, Mass.

Digitized by Google



You're going to like this tooth paste

—it's made by the makers of Listerine

THE first time you try Listerine Tooth Paste you will note a delightfully fresh, clean, polished feeling about your teeth.

This means that your dentifrice has really done its work and that you have taken the proper precaution against dreaded pyorrhea.

Listerine Tooth Paste was perfected after years of study and experiment. Its finely powdered calcium phosphate proves an ideal cleanser. A small amount of mild fruit acid assures that adequate flow of saliva which is so essential.

Altogether you have here a tooth paste that is scientifically ideal for mouth and teeth. The makers of Listerine are proud to stand back of it.

LAMBERT PHARMACAL COMPANY SAINT LOUIS, U. S. A.

Digitized by Google

CALIFORNIA REDWOOD

Ask your Architect—

Perhaps he is himself a Redwood enthusiast, who delights to work in this exceptionally rich and flexible medium. At any rate he—or your building contractor or lumber dealer—can readily procure for you complete information about this most interesting of woods.

Because of its beauty and variety of tone and grain and its easy workability, a growing proportion of the redwood cut is going into interior trim—mantels, mouldings, etc. Redwood is also well known, however, for its unequalled resistance to rot and fire—hence its extensive use for exterior trim, siding and shingles, and for tanks and other wood structures exposed to the weather or to moist earth.

Given the freedom which is a necessity for any artist if he is to do good work, your architect can achieve an unusual variety of beautiful effects in redwood, without unusual expense. Go to him, or to your building contractor or lumber dealer—and ask *"What about Redwood?"*

Redwood has no equal for the special uses to which it is adapted, and for these uses the available supply is adequate for generations. Meanwhile, according to U. S. Forest Service Bulletin 38, merchantable second growth redwood is produced in less than 60 years by natural growth from the stump.

CALIFORNIA REDWOOD ASSOCIATION



Redwood takes a variety of stains and waxes exceptionally well, but most people prefer the natural beauty of the wood illustrated in this photograph.

Digitized by Google



The Car Complete

An Interpretation

Complete in beauty; with the graces of artistry that please the eye; complete in line, finish, trim, grace and charm; a car of such superior qualities and refinement as to please the most fastidious.

Complete in comfort; with highest grade upholstering materials, seat construction insuring both lounging comfort and durability, and the finest riding qualities; the result of scientific body and spring design.

Complete in conveniences; with many distinctive features in electrical equipment, and numerous appointments that will meet the ideals and expectations of the motorist when he visualizes the perfect car.

Complete in mechanical excellence; a car of smooth, velvety power — of such *abundant* power, and so sound mechanically, that it will give the owner the constant, satisfying service to which his investment entitles him.

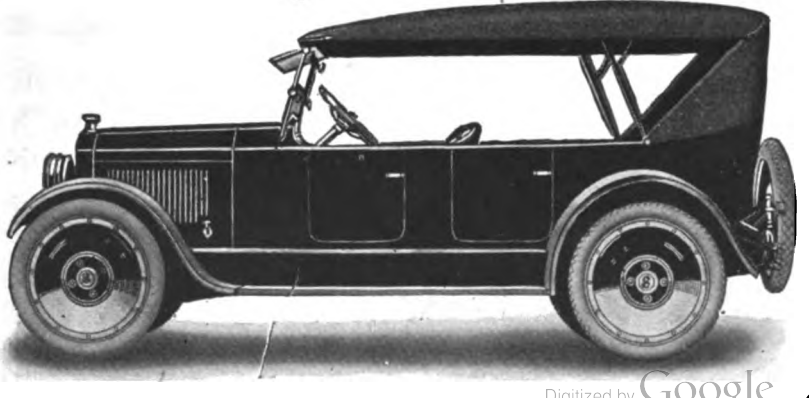
The proper application of every steel analysis required; latest developments in bearings and lubrication; mechanical perfections demanded in a car of unwavering reliability; a car of *character*—developed out of experience covering all the years of the motor car industry, without excessive cost.

The line consists of four and eight cylinder types, each having its open, roadster, coupe and sedan models.

ILLUSTRATED PORTFOLIO ON REQUEST

THE SHERIDAN MOTOR CAR COMPANY
MUNCIE — INDIANA

The Sheridan



Digitized by Google



Be good to your feet

They are good servants, yet they can cause a lot of pain. If they burn, ache or are blistered, bathe them in mild solution of

Absorbine, Jr.
THE ANTISEPTIC LINIMENT

This soothing liniment is cooling and reduces swelling. It is antiseptic and healing, prevents infection and invigorates tired, lame muscles.

Have a liniment and an antiseptic ready for emergency. Absorbine, Jr. is both and is especially effective. Being non-poisonous, it is safe to have around.

$1.25 a bottle at your druggist's or a liberal trial bottle sent for ten cents.

W. F. YOUNG, Inc.
302 Temple Street - Springfield, Mass.





Alabastine

INSTEAD OF KALSOMINE OR WALL PAPER

ALABASTINE beautifies your walls—modernizes your home, and conduces to the health of your family. Alabastine is durable, sanitary, economical; for interior surfaces, plaster, or wallboard—in full five-pound packages; directions on package; mixes with cold water. All Alabastine packages have cross and circle printed in red.

ALABASTINE CO., 481 Grandville Ave., Grand Rapids, Mich.



The Atlantic Monthly and Its Makers

By M. A. DeWolfe Howe

This little book, rich in biography and pleasing anecdote, is one in which every *Atlantic* reader will delight.

Illustrated, $1.00 postpaid

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, Inc.
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

Digitized by Google



Trade Mark Registered U. S. Pat. Off.

Sound sleep brings natural beauty

Haven't you noticed how wholesome you appear after a particularly good night's sleep? That's the way nature intends you to look at all times.

But you can't get the kind of rest you need on a lumpy, bumpy mattress that sags and seems lifeless.

If you would put an Ostermoor on your bed you would soon notice the difference. Its billowy layers of wonderful elasticity support the spine in a straight, restful position. And yet it is soft enough to pillow the body comfortably and coax you quickly into sound sleep.

This mattress is guaranteed not to mat, pack, get hard or lumpy. It is non-absorbent, dust-, moth-, and vermin-proof.

Look for the familiar Ostermoor label when you buy a mattress. That's your guarantee of sleep-comfort. Sold by good dealers everywhere. If your dealer cannot supply you, write us. Our 144-page catalog and samples of coverings mailed free on request.

Ostermoor Mattress

"Built–Not Stuffed"



OSTERMOOR & CO., 114 Elizabeth St., New York

Canadian Agency: Alaska Bedding of Montreal, Ltd., Montreal

Digitized by Google

THE HOUSE BEAUTIFUL

INVITES YOU TO A FEAST TO BE SPREAD IN THE AUGUST NUMBER



MENU

Appetizers
Articles on:
Furniture Gateways
Driveways Decorating

Entrées
A Hungarian Rhapsody
Colonial Doorways
Delightful Dining-Rooms

Main Courses
The Assembly House in Salem
Italian Gardens
Mediæval Architecture

Salads
Articles on:
Cool, green gardens
Water Lilies

Sweets
Speaking of Home

Stimulating Advertisements Decorations by leading artists

Covers will be printed for 50,000

R.S.V.P. Subscription for one copy, 35 cents

This Delightful Number Free With a Six Months' Subscription at $2.00
August and September Free — With a One Year Subscription at $4.00

Regular Rate — $4.00 a year Foreign Postage $1.00 extra; Canadian 50 Cents

Published Under the Same Management as the Atlantic Monthly

THE HOUSE BEAUTIFUL PUBLISHING CO., INC., 10 Depot St., Concord, N.H.; or A.M. 7-21
8 Arlington St., Boston (17), Mass.

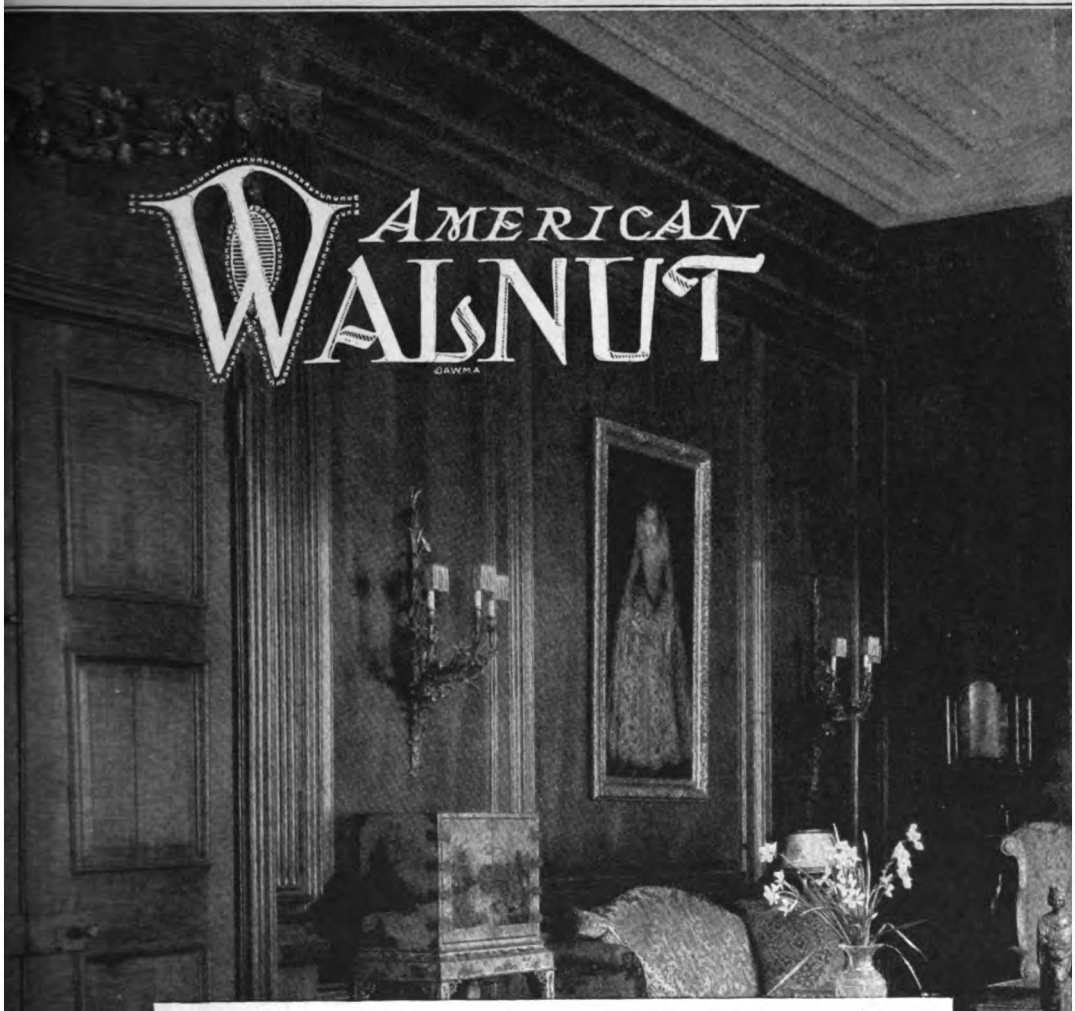
Gentlemen: Enclosed find $4.00, which entitles me to a 14 months' subscription — Or: $2.00, which entitles me to a 7-months' subscription — beginning with the July issue. (Two or more 12-months' subscriptions sent on same order, only $3.50 each.)

Name..... *Town*.....

Street..... *State*.....

Foreign postage, $1.00 extra per year, Canadian 50c.

Digitized by Google



"Genuine American Walnut Furniture Is True 'Heirloom' Furniture."

"Be Sure Your Walnut is Walnut"

FURNITURE made of any *brown-stained* wood has its uses. But the wise person when looking for American *Walnut* says to the dealer, "IS THIS *WALNUT* THROUGH AND THROUGH?"

Pieces of American Walnut furniture are something you will be proud to own today and your descendants will treasure in centuries to come.

Look for them in all the stores handling good furniture and buy with full confidence in their enduring worth.

"The Cabinet-wood of the Ages."

AMERICAN WALNUT MANUFACTURERS' ASSN.,
Room 1003, 616 South Michigan Boulevard Chicago

This page shows a glimpse of the American Walnut paneling and doors in residence of H. P. Davison, Esq., New York City. Messrs. Lenygon and Morant, decorators.

Digitized by Google

THAT DAINTY LITTLE GUEST HOUSE

IN A GARDEN OF HOLLYHOCKS AND ROSES

"Bossert" methods of better building construction are a revelation to home builders



"Bossert" buildings are manufactured at the mill and are merely erected at the site

LOUIS BOSSERT & SONS, Inc.

1336 GRAND ST. BROOKLYN, N. Y.

The "PIPING ROCK" model illustrated is but one of many charming little cottages that can be ready for guests almost "overnight" without the usual building difficulties and delays. Prices from $500 up

18 cents in *stamps* promptly brings catalog of over 50 suggestive designs

Founded — 1869



Krakauer

The Krakauer possesses the four golden attributes of tone—purity, volume, sweetness and delicacy. Permanence of these qualities is insured by Krakauer mechanical excellence. And a rich simplicity of case design places this instrument among one's treasured home furnishings.

Write for De Luxe Catalog with gravure illustrations of upright and grand pianos, players and reproducing pianos.

KRAKAUER BROS., 201 Cypress Ave., New York
N. Y. City Retail Warerooms, 116 W. 44th St.

A Half Century of Quality Production

The Sanitary Paper Cup



The CUP of Cleanliness

TULIP CUPS

Ask your jobber or dealer or write us
PAPER UTILITIES CORPORATION
111 Fifth Avenue, New York

"PM FROM BOSTON"

A Boston keepsake in the form of a pamphlet of drawings with descriptive text upon picturesque and significant objects in the New England city. *60 cents*

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.
8 Arlington Street Boston (17), Mass.

Digitized by Google

I DOUBLE DARE YOU!

Have you the heart of an adventurer? Do you long to see new places and to follow the trail around the curve that lies ahead? Have you the spirit of Youth that delights to seek out new experiences?

Perhaps you are tied to a dull task, in a narrow home, in a stupid town. Nothing interesting ever happens. Things are always plain, drab, common-place, and your life becomes more and more "stale, flat and unprofitable."

Don't do it. There's a way out by means of

Everyday Adventures*

Samuel Scoville, Jr., has written an unusual and delightful book of EVERYDAY ADVENTURES, telling how Everyday Folks may find the most charming sort of adventures close at home in the common sights and sounds of woods and fields. It has the charm of Robert Louis Stevenson's Essays with the careful, scientific accuracy of Thoreau. Get the book and

BECOME AN EVERYDAY ADVENTURER

For sale by your book-seller or by the publishers
Price $3.00

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, Inc.

8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

*This advertisement was awarded second prize in the Atlantic Monthly Press Amateur Advertisement Contest on EVERYDAY ADVENTURES. It was written by Warren F. Gibbons, Clark's Summit, Pa.

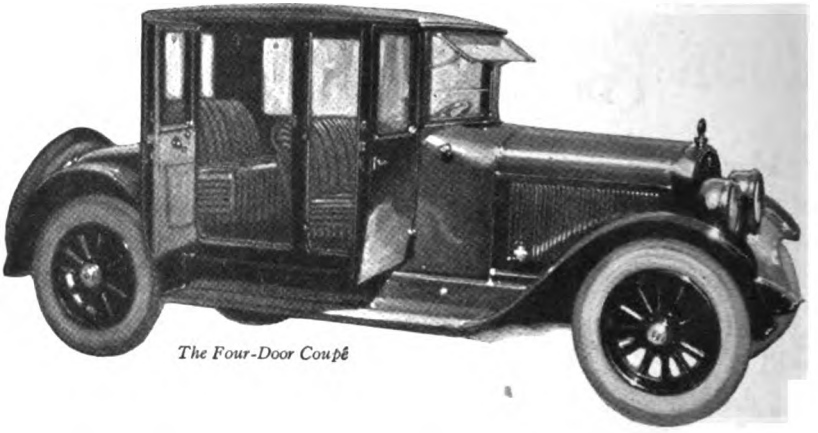
THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC. A.M. 7-21
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

Gentlemen: Enclosed find ..... for ..... copy / copies EVERYDAY ADVENTURES

Name ..... *Street* .....

City ..... *State* .....

Digitized by Google



The Four-Door Coupé

YOU HAVE ALWAYS KNOWN THERE WOULD BE SUCH A CAR

The best LAFAYETTE advertisements are never published in any magazine or newspaper.

They are the words of praise free-spoken by those who have driven this car.

After your first ride in a LAFAYETTE you yourself will say, "I always knew there would be such a car."

From the moment you take the wheel and release that abundant flood of power you will be wholly won.

Fleet, eager, tireless, it lures you on, careless of distance, ruler of a hundred horsepower.

You will give up the wheel with reluctance at parting with this splendid car.

And forever after, whenever you drive another, you will be impatient of its slightest fault.

After such a ride you will envy the LAFAYETTE owner the performance which is always his.

LAFAYETTE MOTORS COMPANY at *Mars Hill* INDIANAPOLIS

LAF[illegible]TTE



Digitized by Google

Pindery

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY

DECEMBER 1921



Pooled Self-Esteem. *The Disease of Nations* . . . . . A. CLUTTON-BROCK 721
Consolation. *A Spiritual Experience* . . . . . ALBION FELLOWS BACON 732
Shell-Shocked—and After . . . . . AN AMERICAN SOLDIER 738
The Round-faced Beauty. *A Story of the Chinese Court* . . . L. ADAMS BECK 750
Crisis. *A Poem* . . . . . MARGARET WIDDEMER 758
A Voice from the Jury . . . . . ANNE C. E. ALLINSON 759
Cunjur and 'Suasion. *Plantation Chronicles* . . . . . ELEANOR C. GIBBS 761
Some Traits in the Chinese Character . . . . . BERTRAND RUSSELL 771
The Letters in Shakespeare's Plays . . . . . ELLEN TERRY 778
The Iron Man and Wages . . . . . ARTHUR POUND 787
A Consideration of the Automatic Machine
A Proud Choice of Influences . . . . . MARGARET WILSON LEES 795
Strayed Sympathies . . . . . AGNES REPPLIER 798
Soliloquy for a Third Act. *A Poem* . . . . . CHRISTOPHER MORLEY 805
Sequels. *The Lore of the Jungle* . . . . . WILLIAM BEEBE 807
Erant Enim Piscatores. *A Story* . . . . . HARRISON COLLINS 814

The New World:

England's Navy and Disarmament . . SIR ARTHUR HUNGERFORD POLLEN 818
France, her Politicians, and the Conference . . . . SISLEY HUDDLESTON 830
The Dissolution of Petrograd. *A Personal Experience* . . . JEAN SOKOLOFF 843
A Suggestion on Coal . . . . . WALTER L. BALLOU 851

The Contributors' Club 854
My Wife's Address-Book. — Family Prayers. — The Christmas Spirit. — Winter Morning.

The Contributors' Column 861
Mr. Pound's Collaborator. — Organized Charity from Several Points of View. — Crimes of the Intellect. — Finding for the Prosecution. — A Use for Wrappers. — Carlyle Defended. — Il Penseroso. — Wild Life in the Home.

The Atlantic's Bookshelf . . . . . *Front Advertising Section*
Edge of the Jungle. — New Voices. — Modern American Poetry. — William Lloyd Garrison. — Three Soldiers. — Mr. Punch's History of Modern England. — The Thirteen Travellers. — The American Novel.

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY COMPANY

PUBLICATION OFFICE: RUMFORD BUILDING, CONCORD, N.H.
Editorial and General Offices: 8 ARLINGTON ST., BOSTON 17, MASS.

Published monthly. Entered at Post Offices, Concord, N.H., and Ottawa, Canada, as second-class matter

Copyright, 1921, by The Atlantic Monthly Company

40 cents a copy *Foreign Postage $1.00, Canadian Postage 50 cents, additional* $4.00 a year

Digitized by Google

Why are there 65 *prices* for business letter paper?

THE sixty-five different letter paper prices now existing imply sixty-five different grades, or sixty-five different opinions upon the proper paper for business stationery. These opinions are buyers' opinions in the main, and obviously based upon price. Paper has therefore been competitively made to meet widely varying price demands, and not purposefully made to cover the exact requirements of business stationery.

To determine these exact requirements and that you may better judge paper values for yourself, a booklet, "Your Business Letter-Paper," has been prepared, and is yours for the asking without obligation.

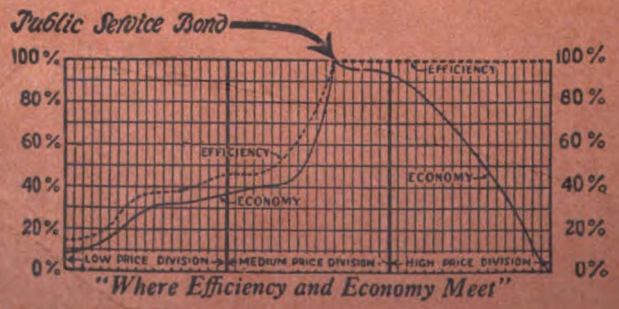
ASSOCIATION OF MASTER CRAFTSMEN — SERVICE

PUBLIC SERVICE BOND No. 24 White Vellum Finish is *guaranteed*. Unless your stationery on this paper is thoroughly satisfactory in appearance, it costs you nothing. Paper and printing are inseparable. One either helps or hinders the other. The Association of Master Craftsmen was formed upon this basis. Printers who are members are dependable. Their names will be furnished you, but your name will not be referred to them. This should not be taken as a reflection upon the work or service of non-members.

A request, preferably upon your business stationery, will bring a copy of "Your Business Letter-Paper," interesting samples of PUBLIC SERVICE BOND, and a roster of the Association of Master Craftsmen in your city or town. Inquiries held as confidential.

Taylor-Logan Co. Papermakers
HOLYOKE, MASSACHUSETTS.





"Where Efficiency and Economy Meet"

Public Service Bond

made for Business Stationery

Digitized by Google



EVERYBODY WANTS a private stock of good sweets over the holidays. Everybody's taste can be suited in the variety of Whitman packages of chocolates and confections.

Place your order with the near-by Whitman agency and double the value of your gift by selecting *an appropriate package.*

THE SAMPLER—chocolates and confections selected from ten leading Whitman's packages. The box is as quaint as the sweets are good.

A FUSSY PACKAGE—nut and hard center chocolates, beautifully boxed.

SUPER EXTRA chocolates and confections—the quality which first made Whitman's famous.

NUTS, CHOCOLATE COVERED—a rich, delicious assortment that enjoys wide popularity.

PLEASURE ISLAND chocolates in a pirate's chest that recalls the romance of R. L. S.

SALMAGUNDI PACKAGE—super-extra chocolates. Metal box lacquered in exquisite mosaic. A gift that is sure to charm.

LIBRARY PACKAGE—Shaped like a book. A new assortment of chocolates.

Hand painted round boxes and fancy bags, boxes and cases in great variety.

STEPHEN F. WHITMAN & SON, Inc., Philadelphia, U. S. A.

Digitized by Google

THE fact that the Smith & Wesson is the revolver selected by those who, through their knowledge, may justly be termed experts, is but added evidence of Smith & Wesson superiority.

SMITH & WESSON

Manufacturers of Superior Revolvers

SPRINGFIELD
MASSACHUSETTS

Catalogue sent on request
Address Department C

Digitized by Google

THE SCIENTIFICALLY BUILT WATCH



1325 Waltham Mirror Clock
Antique Gilt and Polychrome
8 day 7 Jewel movement
Plain Dial $110 Radium Dial $120



1201 Waltham Boudoir Clock
Mahogany Cross Band Case
8 day 7 Jewel movement
Plain Dial $35
Radium Dial $40



1256 Waltham Traveling Clock
$29 to $30 depending on
dial and movement



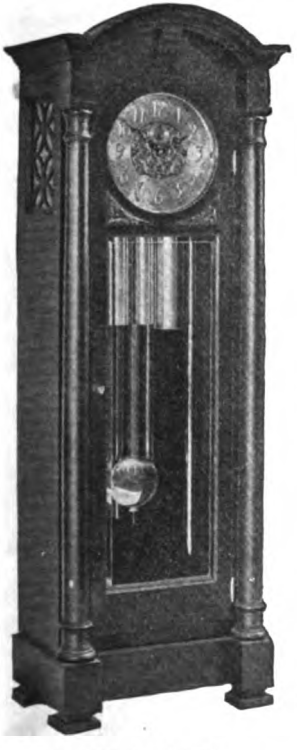
1220 Waltham Boudoir Clock
Antique Gold and Brown Case
Plain Dial $40
Radium Dial $45



1168 Waltham Mantel Clock
$55 to $260 according to the movement



1543 Waltham Willard Clock
$85 to $165
According to the movement



983 Waltham Bungalow Clock
$375 to $735 according to
movement and chimes

A Waltham Clock is a Lasting Christmas Gift

A DEPENDABLE clock is a perfect Christmas gift. Its usefulness never diminishes. It is an essential household possession. It is always appreciated.

Waltham Clocks are infinitely superior to ordinary clocks because they are built by watchmakers to watch-making standards.

Waltham skill that created the tiniest watch movement in America is applied to Waltham clock-making. Waltham Clocks are remarkable for their accuracy They are built like Waltham Watches.

Waltham Clocks can be purchased in every conceivable type and size. And at prices to suit every pocketbook. From the useful little Traveling Clock to the noble Hall Clock with its beautiful soft chimes.

Then, there are Mantel Clocks and lovely "Willard" reproductions. Also, exquisite Mirror and Boudoir Clocks which have set the fashion for exclusive furnishing. Gems of clock-making art at most reasonable prices.

A Waltham Clock is a lasting Christmas gift. It is dependable, accurate, beautiful.

If your jeweler does not happen to have the particular style of clock that you require, write the Waltham Watch Company, Waltham, Mass., and you will receive our illustrated catalog. Sent free upon request.

WALTHAM

THE WORLD'S WATCH OVER TIME

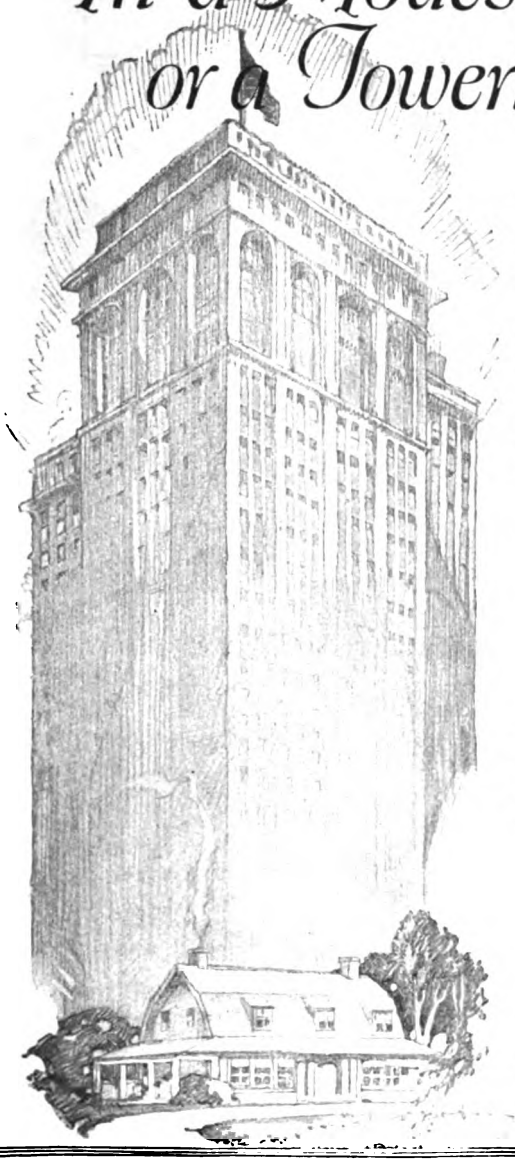
Where you see this sign they sell Waltham Watches

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

In a Modest Home or a Towering Skyscraper



you can have the protection of uniform quality throughout the complete plumbing, sanitation and heating systems by utilizing Crane Service.

Crane Service brings to the equipping of the skyscraper the resources and manufacturing experience necessary to meet all requirements of such installations, however extensive or unusual. And it assures for the homebuilder in turn the completeness and reliability which safeguard the investors in a mammoth business or industrial structure.

CRANE
Plumbing, Sanitation and Heating Equipment

can be selected in all its details at any of the Crane branches, exhibit rooms or offices. It permits of filling the complete specifications for such systems through one reliable source of supply, with the aid of large assortments and the most approved designs.

Visit the nearest Crane establishment with your architect and you will find it an easy matter to make full selections.



We are manufacturers of about 20,000 articles, including valves, pipe fittings and steam specialties, made of brass, iron, ferrosteel, cast steel and forged steel, in all sizes, for all pressures and all purposes, and are distributors through the trade of pipe, heating and plumbing materials.

*PORTLAND, ME. *LOWELL, MASS. BOSTON, MASS. *WORCESTER, MASS. SPRINGFIELD, MASS. *PROVIDENCE, R. I. HARTFORD, CONN. *NEW LONDON, CONN. *WATERBURY, CONN. *NEW HAVEN, CONN. BRIDGEPORT, CONN. BROOKLYN, N. Y. NEW YORK, N. Y. MANLIUS, N. Y. ALBANY, N. Y. *UTICA, N. Y. SYRACUSE, N. Y. *BINGHAMTON, N. Y. ROCHESTER, N. Y. BUFFALO, N. Y. *ERIE, PA. *WILKES-BARRE, PA. *PITTSBURGH, PA. READING, PA. PHILADELPHIA, PA. NEWARK, N. J. CAMDEN, N. J. ATLANTIC CITY, N. J. BALTIMORE, MD. WASHINGTON, D. C. *CHARLESTON, W. VA. *NORFOLK, VA. KNOXVILLE, TENN. *NASHVILLE, TENN. MEMPHIS, TENN. ATLANTA, GA. SAVANNAH, GA. *JACKSONVILLE, FLA. *MOBILE, ALA. BIRMINGHAM, ALA. *NEW ORLEANS, LA. *SHREVEPORT, LA. LITTLE ROCK, ARK. *EVANSVILLE, IND. TERRE HAUTE, IND. CINCINNATI, OHIO INDIANAPOLIS, IND. *FT. WAYNE, IND. *SOUTH BEND, IND. DETROIT, MICH. *SAGINAW, MICH. GRAND RAPIDS, MICH. ADRIAN, MICH. *MADISON, WIS. ROCKFORD, ILL. CHICAGO, ILL. *AURORA, ILL. GALESBURG, ILL. *SPRINGFIELD, ILL. ST. LOUIS, MO. KANSAS CITY, MO. *JOPLIN, MO. OKLAHOMA CITY, OKLA. GUTHRIE, OKLA. *TULSA, OKLA. *WICHITA, KAN. *TOPEKA, KAN. *ST. JOSEPH, MO. *LINCOLN, NEB. OMAHA, NEB. DES MOINES, IOWA DAVENPORT, IOWA *CEDAR RAPIDS, IOWA SIOUX CITY, IOWA WINONA, MINN. MANKATO, MINN. MINNEAPOLIS, MINN. ST. PAUL, MINN. DULUTH, MINN. FARGO, N. D. ABERDEEN, S. D. WATERTOWN, S. D. DENVER, COLO. SALT LAKE CITY, UTAH OGDEN, UTAH BUTTE, MONT. HELENA, MONT. BOISE, IDAHO PORTLAND, ORE. SEATTLE, WASH. TACOMA, WASH. *ABERDEEN, WASH. PORTLAND, ORE. RENO, NEV. SACRAMENTO, CAL. OAKLAND, CAL. SAN FRANCISCO, CAL *SAN JOSE, CAL. *FRESNO, CAL. *SANTA BARBARA, CAL LOS ANGELES, CAL. *PHOENIX, ARIZ.

THERE IS A NEARBY CRANE BRANCH OR OFFICE TO GIVE YOU CRANE SERVICE

CRANE CO.

836 S. MICHIGAN AVE., CHICAGO

VALVES - PIPE FITTINGS
SANITARY FIXTURES

CRANE EXHIBIT ROOMS
23 W. 44TH ST. AND 22 W. 45TH ST., NEW YORK
1105-1107 BOARDWALK, ATLANTIC CITY
To which the public is cordially invited
Works: CHICAGO; BRIDGEPORT; BIRMINGHAM

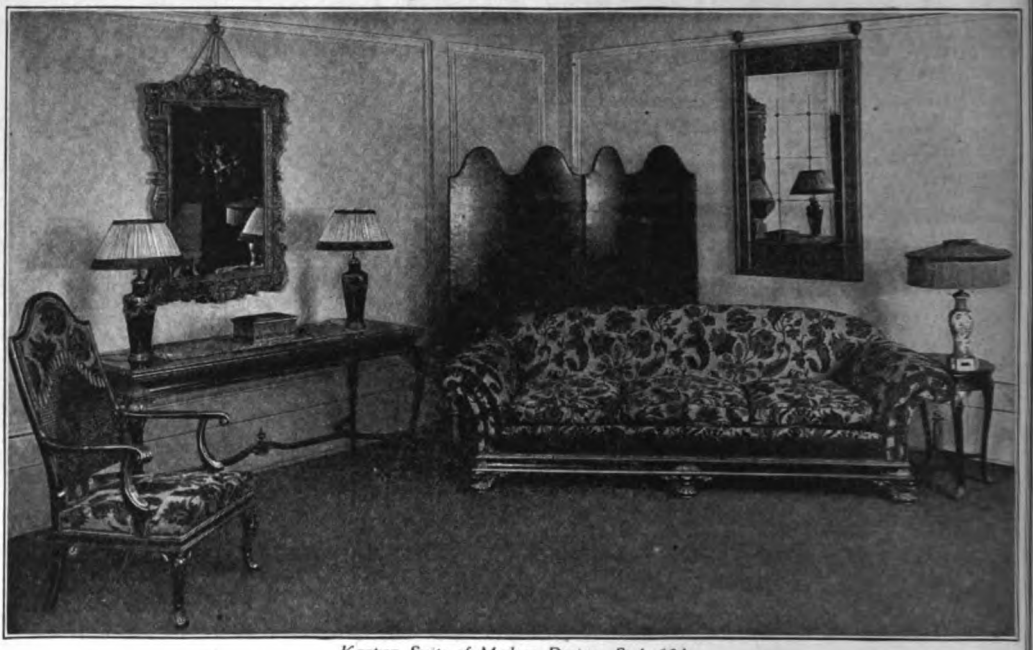
CRANE EXPORT CORPORATION.
10-00 WEST 44TH ST., NEW YORK
001 GRANDUM ST., SAN FRANCISCO, CAL.
00 AVE. DE L'OPERA, PARIS, FRANCE

CRANE LIMITED
MONTREAL (HEAD OFFICE AND WORKS), CALGARY, HALIFAX, OTTAWA, REGINA, TORONTO, VANCOUVER, WINNIPEG
*HAMILTON, *QUEBEC, *SHERBROOKE, *ST. JOHN, *VICTORIA, *SYDNEY, N. S. W.

CRANE-BENNETT, LTD.
40-01 LEMAN ST., LONDON, ENG.
*BIRMINGHAM, *MANCHESTER, ENG.
*LEEDS, ENG., *GLASGOW, SCOTLAND

*INDICATES OFFICES AS DISTINGUISHED FROM BRANCHES AND EXHIBIT ROOMS

Digitized by Google



Karpen Suite of Modern Design, Style 604

Karpen
Guaranteed
Upholstered
Furniture
CHICAGO - NEW YORK

On every piece
Make sure it is there

KARPEN FURNITURE

MORE than a superficial inspection is necessary if you would choose really good furniture. Beautiful furniture of unknown make, which to all outward appearances may seem of good quality and workmanship, very often fails to pass the test of time.

Karpen Furniture, beautiful and in excellent taste, possesses those inbuilt Karpen qualities which assure the owner of comfort and good appearance even after years of usage.

Wisely then, do discriminating people look for the small Karpen name-plate which is a symbol of unquestioned guarantee.

We shall be glad to send you upon request Book I of "Distinctive Designs" with name of nearest Karpen dealer.



Arm Chair and End Table Matching Suite Above

S. KARPEN & BROS.

Exhibition Rooms
801-811 S. Wabash Ave.
CHICAGO

Exhibition Rooms
37th St. and Broadway
NEW YORK

Also manufacturers of Karpen Fiber Rush and Reed Furniture and Dining, Office and Windsor Chairs

Digitized by Google

BEETHOVEN and Nature

Painted for the Steinway Collection by N. C. Wyeth



STEINWAY

THE INSTRUMENT OF THE IMMORTALS

ON the 26th of March, 1827, died Ludwig van Beethoven, of whom it has been said that he was the greatest of all musicians. A generation later was born the Steinway Piano, which is acknowledged to be the greatest of all pianofortes. What a pity it is that the greatest master could not himself have played upon the greatest instrument—that these two could not have been born together! De Pachmann once said: "If Beethoven could hear his compositions played upon a Steinway, he would not know such beauty for his own." Though the Steinway was denied Beethoven, it wa here in time for Liszt and Rubinstein, fo Wagner, Berlioz and Gounod. And today, still greater Steinway than these great me knew, responds to the touch of Paderewsk Rachmaninoff and Hofmann. Such, in fac are the fortunes of time, that today, this In strument of the Immortals, this piano mor perfect than any Beethoven ever dreamed o can be possessed and played and cherished nc only by the few who are the masters of music but by the many who are its lovers.

Steinway & Sons and their dealers have made it conveniently possible for music lovers to ow a Steinway. Prices $875 and up, plus freight at points distant from New York.

STEINWAY & SONS, Steinway Hall, 109 E. 14th St., New Yor

Digitized by Google

The best is none too good for him



A Shilling in London
A Quarter Here

THEY ARE GOOD TASTE

Digitized by Google



WHAT a feeling of satisfaction there is in wearing a pair of shoes which fit well, feel comfortable from the first, and which are always attractive.

Such shoes are Nettleton's. But that is not all; they are wonderfully economical because they keep their smart appearance long after cheaper shoes must be repaired or replaced—and they are *comfortable* always.

A booklet, "Five Thousand Mile Shoes," tells an interesting story of these Shoes of Worth. Write for a copy.

A. E. NETTLETON COMPANY *Makers of Gentlemen's Fine Shoes* SYRACUSE, N. Y., U. S. A.

Nettleton

Shoes of Worth

Digitized by Google



Make his dreams come true

TRAINS and boats stimulate a boy's imagination. They make him want to be something more than Bill Jones' boy of Barre Centre. Let him have a chance.

Ives Trains and Ives Boats are true copies. The locomotives, both spring and electrical, have complete railroad equipments, passenger cars, freight cars, oil cars, coal cars, bridges, tunnels, switches, stations, signal lights and crossing gates.

Ives Boats are made of steel, beautifully painted with long running spring mechanisms, rudders and propellers. There are ocean liners, diving submarines, tug boats, motor boats, destroyers, and U. S. Merchant Marine steamships.

A fleet of Ives Ships or an Ives Railroad System are just what every boy wants.

Send 10c. for Ives Booklet of Trains and Boats

THE IVES MANUFACTURING CORPORATION
214 Holland Avenue Bridgeport, Conn.



Ives Toys
Make Happy Boys

Digitized by Google

P.A.X

Typewriters and the P·A·X

YOU *could* do business without typewriters, but the absurdity of such a course is so obvious as to need no comment. Loss of time, increased expense, lack of prestige through being out of date, would be some of the results of attempting to do without so essential a part of modern office equipment.

Many organizations are operating without the Automatic Electric Services of the P. A. X. The resultant loss of time, efficiency and economy is no less real, though unrecognized. The thousand or more companies who daily avail themselves of P.A.X. service realize the magnitude of such losses by contrasting the old methods with the new.

Users of the P.A.X. are able to set a standard of service and economy for their customers, which is making the P.A.X. as necessary and as indispensible as the typewriter in the execution of modern business.

The P. A. X. services are adjusted to meet individual wants. A request from you and our field engineers will survey your needs and make recommendations. Write or telephone our nearest office.

AUTOMATIC ELECTRIC COMPANY
Home Office and Factory
CHICAGO, ILL.

BOSTON 445 Tremont Bldg.
PITTSBURGH 608 Fulton Bldg.
DETROIT 535 Ford Bldg.
NEW YORK 21 East 40th St.
CLEVELAND 415 Cuyahoga
WASHINGTON, 405 Munsey Bldg.
KANSAS CITY 1001 N. Y. Life Bldg.
ROCHESTER 612 Mercantile Bldg.
PHILADELPHIA The Bourse Bldg.
COLUMBUS 516 Ferris Bldg.
SAN FRANCISCO 320 Market St.



P.A.X
MEANS:

PRIVATE
AUTOMATIC
EXCHANGE

Combining

INTER-COMMUNICATION
CODE CALL SYSTEM
CONFERENCE WIRE
EMERGENCY ALARMS
WATCHMAN'S CALLS

and other related services.

The P. A. X. augments and completes but does not supplant local and long distance telephone service.

Digitized by Google

f
t
L
(

Edge of
York:
pp. 8

ONE n
Jungle by
wild riot
impenetra
and fight
and the fi
senses. Th
edge of it e
the sound o
Bamboo-sta
a 'terrific in
that 'mosai
he sees four
upon a leaf, a
with pocket l
with all his n
[his] powerful
cent mist of
mighty cosmo
tree-frog inhal
mittent reinca
inorganic and
the hours of d
hunched-up pe
find a leaf, he d
beneath him, ve
and slipped fro
kingdom.'

This is a frog, a
the 303 in *Edge o*
entist, but he wa
poet. Where is th
science and poetry
fact and reveling,
This is a new spec
entist gone jungl
motely like it in 7
passage in th ch
in which K g d
elephants da p
fury of M ebe'

As th ers a
zines, exoti
strang d just un
Perh w reviewe
el t a time:
y of But
Certainly,
dissolving ka
for more th
of c

Digitized by Google



Full Up and Fed Up

By WHITING WILLIAMS
Author of
"What's On The Worker's Mind"

TNT—"Tiredness 'n' Temper"—is one condition pointed out by Mr. Williams in this study of the worker's mind in crowded Britain. His impressions, gathered as a workman in Glasgow, Wales and elsewhere, have especial significance in view of Britain's severe industrial crisis. *Illustrated.* *$2.50*

Quentin Roosevelt

Edited by KERMIT ROOSEVELT

The personality and promise of the youngest Roosevelt son revealed by his early writings and his letters from France, where he was killed as an aviator. *Illustrated.* $2.50

History of the United States 1801-1817

By HENRY ADAMS

A new edition of Henry Adams' greatest achievement in historical writing, covering one of the most important periods of American history. *9 Volumes in Set.* $27.00

Additional Scribner Books are presented on page 44

My Brother Theodore Roosevelt

By CORINNE ROOSEVELT ROBINSON

An intimate picture of his childhood, boyhood, youth and manhood

"I marvel at the skill with which Mrs. Robinson has passed through all the history made in that crowded life without ever forgetting it or failing to use it as a background and yet never for a moment allowing it to distract attention from the man himself, whom she has painted and described with the vividness that only the deepest love and closest knowledge could give. It is beautifully done."—Senator Lodge. *Illustrated.* $3.00

Russia from the American Embassy

By DAVID R. FRANCIS

"The word authoritative can more surely be applied to Ambassador Francis' book on Russia than to any other so far published on the subject."—*New York Times.* *Illustrated.* $3.50

Essays on English

By BRANDER MATTHEWS

A cheering and stimulating glimpse of the English language in the process of growth on both sides of the Atlantic, presented in Professor Matthews' diverting manner. $2.00

The Man in the Street

By MEREDITH NICHOLSON

These papers express the humorous and yet fundamentally serious outlook which has made Meredith Nicholson one of the foremost essay writers. $2.00

Scholarship and Service

By NICHOLAS MURRAY BUTLER

An interpretation of the national university in a modern democracy in terms of its ideals, its problems, and its counsels. $2.50

Four Years in the Underbrush

By A NOVELIST OF NOTE

". . . I walked out of the National Arts Club into the underbrush of the greatest jungle of civilization. . . . During four eventful years I remained in the underbrush—the world of the unskilled working woman of New York." These are the first words of one of the most absorbing human documents of recent times. $2.50

The New World of Islam

By LOTHROP STODDARD

The author of "The Rising Tide of Color," which attracted wide attention, here reviews the steadily increasing ferment throughout the Mohammedan world—a condition of sharp portent for the white races, confronted by the intense dynamic force of the Islamic faith and peoples. *With map.* $3.00

Disarmament and the Pacific

The Mastery of the Far East

By ARTHUR JUDSON BROWN

A new and revised edition at a lower price. $4.50

China, Japan and Korea

By J. O. P. BLAND

An authoritative and informative work. $5.00

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK

Digitized by Google

and genuine. Mr. Untermeyer and Mrs. Wilkinson reveal themselves as discriminating interpreters and critics of their fellow poets. *Modern American Poetry*, as its title indicates, has the wider range, chronologically; *New Voices* is the richer for including English singers.

Mr. Untermeyer chooses 1830 as the birth-year of the modern American poet, with Emily Dickinson as the singer in the dawn; and there will surely be none to quarrel with his choice. The volume closes with the delicate little lyrics of Hilda Conkling, just the sort of rhythmical magic which Emily Dickinson might have made when she was nine years old; but neither she nor her family would have thought of printing it. Between these two, so close akin, streams a long trail of American poets and versifiers, each preceded by a biographical note and a paragraph of illuminating and careful critical estimate. Here are the brilliant, journalistic rhymesters, a characteristically American product, — as H. C. Bunner, Guy Wetmore Carryl, Bret Harte, T. A. Daly, — who touched the poet's level now and then. Here are those others, 'arriving' before 1910, who dwell on the heights of poetry — William Vaughn Moody, Anna Hempstead Branch, Sidney Lanier, Edwin Arlington Robinson. Here are the new, and the newest, with Robert Frost in the van. And it is among these newest that we feel most clearly the anthologist's restraint and sound judgment, along with the genuine distinction and inevitable music of the chosen verse.

Edna St. Vincent Millay's 'Renascence,' and Conrad Aiken's 'Morning Song from "Senlin,"' which appear also in Mrs. Wilkinson's collection, touch the high-water mark in this volume, but the whole body of the new verse selected for us by Mr. Untermeyer is impressive in dignity and in lyrical intensity. We may wonder why he should take the trouble to include some of the authors whom he scores rather frankly for their defects, as, for example, the one of whom he declares that 'his booklets are a jumble of platitude, passion, bad grammar and exaltation'; that he has 'absolutely no critical perceptions,' and 'little control over his music.' But when we read the poems appended to this critical onslaught, we recognize the acumen and taste with which Mr. Untermeyer has singled out verses representative of a crude young poet at his best.

Despite his inclusiveness, however, we miss certain American poets of reputation and true lyrical poignancy: Josephine Peabody Marks, Helen Gray Cone, whose noble poem on Lincoln would seem to deserve a place among the other Lincoln poems in the volume, Grace Fallow Norton, Fannie Stearns Gifford, Hermann Hagedorn, Katharine Lee Bates. Curiously enough, all these poets are represented in Mrs. Wilkinson's collection, where we should hardly expect to find them, as they are not new voices. But Mrs. Wilkinson has a fine ear for poets, and 'new' is not always a chronological concept with her.

In *New Voices*, Mrs. Wilkinson attempts, not merely an anthology, but a critique of the new verse. Her book is a series of essays, to which groups of poems are appended as illustrative material. Part I discusses the technique of contemporary poetry; Part II, its spirit. The analysis of organic rhythm, diction, pattern, images, and symbols, will be helpful to readers who know nothing of poets, past or present; but the author makes the mistake of writing down to her audience, and sometimes labors a point unnecessarily, pressing a simple explanation to the verge of the banal.

The inexperienced reader might infer also that only within the past ten years have poets sought the *mot juste*, and deliberately set themselves to write verse in the speech of everyday. In every century, of course, the true poet is he who discovers the exact, the inevitable word; and the theory that plain speech and everyday life are fit form and substance for poetry was set forth by Wordsworth, in the preface to *Lyrical Ballads*, as long ago as 1798. The value of the critical and interpretative essays in *New Voices* is marred by this tendency to belittle the earlier poets. In Part II, Wordsworth's attitude toward nature is misinterpreted almost perversely; and the fact that a certain type of twentieth-century poetry is in the direct tradition of the great poet-pantheists of the Victorian Age is apparently not recognized by the author (nor by the poets themselves, possibly). Where Mrs. Wilkinson excels is in choosing the poetry to illustrate her points. Here her taste never errs, and the two hundred or more poems which make up her anthology are themselves the best defense of the poetry of which she is so ardent an advocate.

FLORENCE CONVERSE.

William Lloyd Garrison, by John Jay Chapman. Second Edition. Revised and Enlarged. Boston: The Atlantic Monthly Press. 1921. 12mo, xii + 289 pp. $1.50.

MR. CHAPMAN, in his preface, says, 'In reprinting this little book, the thought crosses my mind that perhaps the shock and anguish of the Great War, which so humanized our nation, may have left us with a keener, more religious, and more dramatic understanding of our Anti-Slavery period than we possessed prior to 1914.' We may hope that this is so; but to one who lived in that period and became familiar with the views of the contestants, it seems as if those views remained unchanged. Doubtless the survivors of that struggle adhere to the opinions then formed, but among the men of younger generations better counsels may prevail, although the revival of the Ku Klux Klan, the unchecked prevalence of lynching, the mobs of Tulsa, Omaha, and Atlanta, do not encourage us.

But if Mr. Chapman is wrong, the republication of this memoir is all the more needed. Garrison's example should be an inspiration to every

Digitized by Google

ALFRED A. KNOPF BORZOI BOOKS 220 W. 42 St., New York

Marriage and the Moon-Calf

THE BRIARY-BUSH

by Floyd Dell

A BRILLIANT study of a modern marriage, in which the effect of new ideas upon an eager young generation is dramatically—and dispassionately—shown. $2.50 *net*

MY DIARIES

[1888–1914]

by Wilfred Scawen Blunt

With Foreword by Lady Gregory



IN these two crowded volumes Mr. Blunt gives the inside history of British imperialism. A brilliant biography—written by a poet and scholar. *First American edition limited to 1500 numbered sets. Two vols., boxed,* $12.00 *net*

*Do you belong to the Charmed Circle?**

THE AMERICAN LANGUAGE

by H. L. Mencken



A NEW, completely revised and much extended edition of Mr. Mencken's famous work, first issued as a "preliminary inquiry" in 1919. As it stands, the most comprehensive treatise on the American dialect ever attempted. $6.00 *net*

DREAMERS

by Knut Hamsun

"AN immensely good story in which Hamsun gives full run to his keen sense of humor."—*Edwin Bjorkman.* The scene is the North Coast and the characters, fishing folk. $1.75 *net*

P. S. *Other books by Hamsun:* GROWTH OF THE SOIL *(2 vols., boxed,* $5.00*);* HUNGER ($2.50); SHALLOW SOIL ($2.50); *and* PAN ($2.00).



WHERE THE PAVEMENT ENDS

by John Russell

TWELVE stories of the South Seas "which one reads with something of the thrill which came to many of us when we first opened Mr. Kipling's *Soldiers Three* and found a new writer of exceptional virility."—Clement Shorter in *The Sphere.* $2.50 *net*

LONDON RIVER

by H. M. Tomlinson *Author of "Old Junk"*

"A BOOK of prose, written with the pen of a poet . . . to be read slowly with delight."—*London Times.* $2.50 *net*

HUMAN NATURE IN POLITICS

by Graham Wallas

A NEW and slightly revised edition of Professor Wallas' famous work, which has been for some time out of print. $3.00 *net*

MEMOIRS OF WILLIAM HICKEY

A CLASSIC of biography, comparable to Fielding and Smollett. "The cheerful, imperturbable Hickey . . . with his alert capacity for enjoying himself in any situation . . . his charm of personality."—*London Times.*

2 vols., boxed. $10.00 *net*

IN DAYS TO COME

by Walter Rathenau

A FORWARD-LOOKING work of great importance to everyone who would understand the problems of world disarmament, nationalism, industrial unrest, etc. $5.00 *net*

PASTICHE AND PREJUDICE

by A. B. Walkley

"THE book of the week" in London, says Q. R. in *The Christian Science Monitor* of these papers by the famous dramatic critic of the *London Times*—"I mean the volume that is reviewed at length by all the important papers, immediately." $3.00 *net*

THE FOREST BEYOND THE WOODLANDS

by Mildred Kennedy

A CHARMING fairy story for children, with numerous charming silhouettes in black and white by Vianna Knowlton. $2.00 *net*

*THE CHARMED CIRCLE—*Edward Alden Jewell's *delightful new novel.*

Digitized by Google

generous youth, and it must be to many. No man ever waged a more gallant war against a wrong more strongly entrenched; no man ever encountered overwhelming odds with slighter resources than Garrison. His career is the most convincing evidence that 'one with God is a majority,' which our history affords; and there never was a time when the country was in greater need of men willing, like him, to devote their lives to the service of their fellow men, than now.

To-day prejudice against fellow citizens of different race, different religion, different color, threatens our peace at home; while national selfishness, — miscalled patriotism, —indifference to the rights and interests of other peoples, the greed of exploiters, the words of ignorant and reckless men who spread jealousy and suspicion of Mexico, of England, and of Japan, sow the seeds of foreign war. Garrison's teachings attack both evils. In opposing slavery, he upheld the right of every human being to freedom and equal opportunity; and for our foreign relations he proclaimed the true principle when he said, 'My country is the world. My countrymen are all mankind.' Would that the people of the United States could make these doctrines the cornerstones of our national policy! Upon such foundations only can any lasting edifice be reared. They are the essentials of civilization, which stands on quicksands while these principles are forgotten or ignored.

Mr. Chapman's work is well done. He makes us realize how inevitable the fall of slavery was, how the madness of its friends hastened its end. He realizes what Carlyle taught in his *French Revolution*, that dates and names are of slight importance. When the folly and wickedness of men have brought about intolerable conditions, irresistible forces are set at work to end them. When the situation is ripe, on some day some man strikes the match that kindles the conflagration. If not in July, then in August, the Bastille was sure to fall. If not Danton, some other man would have done his work. 'The hour and the man are baith come' is always true at every great crisis in history.

This does not diminish the glory of the man who dares. To all the youth of the country the same opportunity was presented. Garrison seized it, inspired and led the forces of freedom, which lay dormant, waiting for a leader; and the story of his life should be read by every young man as a part of his education. It will teach him what courage and patience can accomplish, and it will teach him also never to despair of his country or mankind, no matter how black the skies may seem. Youth can learn no better lessons.

MOORFIELD STOREY.

Three Soldiers, by John Dos Passos. New York: George H. Doran Co. 1921. 12mo, 433 pp. $2.00.

THREE young Americans, serving in France with the United States Army, go their various ways down-hill; and publisher and author will have us see in their tragedy 'the case of Young America, generous, open-minded, spiritually alive, courageous idealists, caught and crushed in the great stamping machine of war.'

Were the last word of this quotation changed from 'war' to 'army life,' or 'military discipline in the A.E.F.,' there would be a gain of accuracy; for Mr. Dos Passos gives us but a fugitive glimpse of war in its phase of death and violence, and seems to censure it less for its destructiveness than for the fact that it forces the individual to live under orders in barracks. The 'war' which he portrays is thus not the jovial, lunatic, murderous, picnic-in-hell adventure of the average front line on an average day, but the tedious, peevish, exiled, and bedeviled existence of a detachment living in stray-dog fashion 'somewhere in France.' It is well to keep this setting in mind when one goes on to consider the responsibility of the A.E.F. for the fates of Dan Fuselli, Chrisfield, and John Andrews.

Did the A.E.F. reduce the average individual to a debased and enslaved machine? or, worse yet, did the A.E.F. produce a like effect on the exceptional man? The answer lies, not in printing sentimental encomiums of life with the colors (there has been too much of this kind of reply), but in examining the three particular 'cases' with which Mr. Dos Passos sustains his point. Greatly to his credit, be it said, he attempts no 'whitewashing' of his characters, but paints them faults and all.

The first, Fuselli, evidently serves as a portrait of a casual conscript: commonplace, provincial, city-bred, he wanders in and out of the pages, for no apparent reason; and finally, after a hint or two of adventures and courts-martial, which the author leaves in the dark, vanishes as an actually contented permanent K.P. at some Parisian *caserne*.

The second, Chrisfield, a low-grade white from Indiana, talking Southern and Western cracker-negro dialect (he is handy with a knife), first tries to stab the sergeant who attempts to train him; and failing this, blows him up with a grenade, just as the poor fellow staggers, cruelly wounded, out of the inferno of a night attack. He crowns his career by deserting. Of a genuine spirit of fraternity, of that sense of comradeship which made wounded men again and again crawl miles 'to be with their bunch,' Chrisfield has not an iota. Again and again he is mean among his own. From first to last, his character undergoes no change.

It is with John Andrews, however, that the author rests his case. 'O God, what a slave they 've made of me!' is this man's *cri de cœur*, which, being interpreted, means simply that John Andrews, like other occasional possessors of the artistic temperament, is fundamentally lazy, and that the army made him work even when possessed by his two favorite obsessions, sex and sulks. The schoolboy who hated confinement

Digitized by Google



STOKES Books Recommended for Christmas Giving

AN ARGOSY OF FABLES

Edited by FREDERIC TABER COOPER Illustrated by PAUL BRANSOM

The unique and impressive beauty of the twenty-four full-page color plates by Paul Bransom would alone make this book remarkable. Combined with its value as *the only comprehensive collection of fable literature available*, they are part of a truly important achievement. *Cloth, boxed, $7.50*

Large-paper Autograph Edition, limited to 365 copies, numbered and signed by Mr. Bransom, each of the 24 illustrations mounted on gray antique paper, boxed, $25.00.

MR. PUNCH'S HISTORY OF MODERN ENGLAND

In 4 Volumes, Volumes I and II now ready; Volumes III and IV published Spring, 1922

The season's outstanding work—a history of Victorian England taken from the pages of the immortal *Punch*. "Cartoons and epigrams, satires in verse and prose which are historical documents of abiding value and constant illumination . . . A 'source book' which no historian can afford to neglect." —*Brander Matthews, N. Y. Times.* Order by set only. Volumes I and II will be sent you at once; Volumes III and IV next Spring. Remit for the entire set with order ($20) or for two volumes now ($10) and for two in the Spring ($10).

HILDA CONKLING

An *Autograph Edition* of little eight-year-old Hilda's remarkable POEMS BY A LITTLE GIRL is just ready, limited to three hundred and sixty-five copies, each numbered and signed by the author. The volume, containing a new and charming portrait of Hilda, is printed on all-rag paper, bound in half-cloth and Alexandra Japan paper sides, and has wide margins, *$6.00.*

GREENLAND ALONG THE POLAR SEA

By KNUD RASMUSSEN

The world-famous Danish explorer tells the fascinating story of the second Thule Expedition to Greenland. Not only an intensely interesting travel book but of great historical value. *With 80 pages of illustrations and 8 color plates, $13.00.*

THE DOGS OF CHINA AND JAPAN in Nature and In Art

By V. W. F. COLLIER

Lovers of art, particularly students and collectors of Oriental art, will covet this careful study of Far Eastern dogs in their relation to art. *Beautifully illustrated, $12.50.*

WESTMINSTER ABBEY

By MARY STURGEON

An account of the famous Abbey in its connection with English life. The author treats her subject broadly, pointing out the significance of what a visitor to the Abbey sees. *With etched frontispiece and 15 exquisite drawings by Louis Weirter, $7.50.*

Write for free 32-page booklet describing all our Holiday books

Specially Recommended for Young People and Children

DAYS OF THE DISCOVERERS

By L. LAMPREY

Events in the period of the great discoverers vitalized by the use of new material and put into story form woven about historical characters. *Fully illustrated. $2.50.*

THE CHINESE FAIRY BOOK

By FREDERICK H. MARTENS

The most comprehensive and varied collection of Oriental tales ever made available for American readers—seventy-three stories of fresh charm and beauty. *With 6 illustrations in color. $2.50.*

THE SWEDISH FAIRY BOOK

By FREDERICK H. MARTENS

Tales from the best original sources of Swedish folklore, in the simple, naïve manner which the traditional rendering demands. *With 8 illustrations in color. $2.50*

STOKES' CHILDREN'S ANNUAL

A play-book cram-full of the jolliest pictures—pictures in gay colors, and in black and white, little pictures, big pictures, funny pictures, and scores of stories, verses and plays by a host of well-known children's authors. *Profusely illustrated. $3.00.*

Write for complete list of our best children's books

443 Fourth Ave. **FREDERICK A. STOKES COMPANY** New York

Digitized by Google

and discipline and 'used to go from the station to school by the longest road, taking frantic account of every moment of liberty,' became, naturally enough, the lazy and unwilling soldier. Sent to school in Paris by the army, he abuses his freedom, and deserts; and the book closes with his recapture.

This 'Young America, generous, open-minded, spiritually alive'? Never! Young America was there, fighting hard, fighting loyally, friend standing by friend. 'Fight hard and finish it quickly,' was its order of the day.

It is a great pity that the propaganda and the pages of barrack pettinesses, which Mr. Dos Passos puts in to prove his case, should be allowed to make the book curiously top-heavy; for, judged apart from its thesis, *Three Soldiers* is a work of marked distinction. It is, æsthetically honest and quite fearless. Indeed, the chapter dealing with the retreat in the Paris slums, to which the deserters make their way, is as first-rate a bit of naturalistic description as one could find in any modern author. And it is genuine and American. Mistaken or not, Mr. Dos Passos deserves friendly interest and encouragement.

HENRY BESTON.

Mr. Punch's History of Modern England, by Charles L. Graves. New York: Frederick A. Stokes Company. 1921. Four vols. [Vol. I (1841–1857) and vol. II (1857–1874), now published; vols. III and IV to be published in the spring of 1922.] 8vo, x+314 and 349 pp. Illustrated. $10.00.

WHEN Mr. M. H. Spielmann, in 1895, published his excellent *History of 'Punch,'* he reproduced 'no more pictures from *Punch* than were rendered necessary by the topics under discussion,' preferring to 'send the reader, for *Punch's* pictures, to the ever-fresh pages of *Punch* itself.' For American readers, however, to whom *Punch* has always been a strangely serious magazine, read without the roars of laughter which seem to have greeted it in England, its 'ever-fresh pages' have badly needed an experienced critic and guide, competent to explain the sources and nature of its humor and allusions. Such a friend Mr. Graves really is; and his choice of pictures, verses, and skits is so good that there is scarcely one which is not in some way amusing or interesting.

Punch humor, to Americans who see only an occasional number, has often seemed heavy, forced, or over-loaded. We cannot see why a piece of excellent satire should so often be spoiled by explanatory additions of self-conscious comment. A picture, for example, shows a haughty dowager, seated regally in a landau, talking to a farmer and his wife, standing in the door of their poor cottage; and the following is subjoined:

GRATEFUL RECIPIENT. Bless you, my lady! May we meet in heaven!

HAUGHTY DONOR. Good gracious!! Drive on, Jarvis!!!

(*She had evidently read Dr. Johnson, who 'did n't want to meet certain people* anywhere.')

The comment explains the joke.

And yet, as a matter of fact, such gratuities are by no means common, and they can, moreover, be matched in American pictures of the same date. What is more important is that this cartoon, with numberless others, was directed against a vice of the age, and that *Punch's* championship of children, servants, governesses, chorus-girls, climbing boys, crossing-sweepers, seamstresses, and all victims of sweating, was so persistent that it leaves the reader with a glow of gratitude that condones all stupidities and all mistakes of policy, like his treatment of Peel and Lincoln. This book, by grouping the cartoons and skits in chapters under special headings, makes startlingly clear the essential seriousness that has always underlain his facetiousness.

Taken in conjunction with Spielmann's *History*, these volumes give the general reader about all he is likely to wish to have of the famous periodical. But Mr. Graves's book is much more than a reprint: it is a history of Victorian England, its politics, religious controversy, manners, fashions and fads, education, sports and pastimes, literature and art, all seen from the angle of satire, travesty, cartoon, caricature, and grotesque. 'The great value of *Punch*,' says the author, 'resides in the fact that he provides us with a history of the Victorians *written by themselves*'; and it is perhaps not fanciful to add that 'he' is a fortunate survival, in modern times, of a popular and largely anonymous art, like that of the Middle Ages, by means of which a whole people has recorded its daily life with a detail, accuracy, and humor such as the professional historian cannot compass. *Mr. Punch's History* would make a fine textbook of the Victorian era, if some teacher were brave enough to adopt it.

ROBERT M. GAY.

The Thirteen Travellers, by Hugh Walpole. New York: George H. Doran Co. 1921. 12mo, 279 pp. $2.00.

AFTER joining the Thirteen Travellers and sharing with them the chaotic conditions immediately following the World War, any reader of Mr. Walpole's latest book must feel that he has himself been an invisible lodger among the miscellaneous group assembled at 'Hortons' in Duke Street.

Very vividly and truthfully, more as a biographer than as a novelist, Mr. Walpole makes us know each one of the thirteen human units linked together by the external circumstance of being inhabitants of the same apartment house. Most of this unlucky number of flat-dwellers are definitely real people, who either gallantly overcame, or were ignominiously crushed by, the almost insuperable difficulties that beset the paths of bewildered travelers starting on the

(*Continued on page 90*)

Digitized by Google

A LIST WITH A PURPOSE

LONG ON BOOKS, SHORT ON DESCRIPTION, THIS IS ESSENTIALLY A SHOPPING LIST.

GREAT CARE HAS BEEN TAKEN IN ITS SELECTION, THAT IT MAY BE COMPREHENSIVE IN ITS APPEAL. IF YOU WILL TAKE THIS TO YOUR BOOKSTORE AND PERSONALLY EXAMINE THE VOLUMES, SURELY YOUR VARIED HOLIDAY WANTS WILL BE SATISFIED.

Unusual Books for Gifts

TOWNS OF NEW ENGLAND, OLD ENGLAND, IRELAND AND SCOTLAND
Of great historical interest, linking up towns of the New World with the Old.
2 Vols. Nearly 350 beautiful Illus. $12.50

A FORTNIGHT IN NAPLES — *ANDRE MAUREL*
The author of "Little Cities of Italy" conducts the reader through a fascinating and enchanted Naples.
120 Illus., 16 Maps, $3.00

THE ROMANCE OF RUSSIA — *ELIZABETH and FRERE CHAMPNEY*
The sometimes tragic, often magnificent, always romantic story of Russia, from the 9th Century to to-day. *8°. 57 Illus. $5.00*

THE CRUISE OF THE KAWA — *WALTER E. TRAPROCK*
A screaming burlesque on the books of the overworked South Seas. *17 Illus. from photographs. $2.00*

MIRRORS OF WASHINGTON
The fastest selling non-fiction book on the market, and deservedly so. *28 Illus. $2.50*

MIRRORS OF DOWNING STREET
The book on English Statesmen that made "The Gentleman with a Duster" famous. *12 Illus. $2.50*

THE GLASS OF FASHION
English society flayed, drawn and quartered by the same Gentleman. *8 Illus. $2.50*

EMINENT VICTORIANS — *LYTTON STRACHEY*
Biographical sketches of four great Victorians, by the author of "Queen Victoria." *6 Portraits. $3.50*

THREE PLAYS — Now Successes on the Stage which Read as Well as they Act

DULCY — *GEO. S. KAUFMAN and MARC CONNELLY*
A mirth-provoking comedy satire. Introduction by Booth Tarkington. *Illus. $1.75*

THE WHITE HEADED BOY — *LENNOX ROBINSON*
A brilliant comedy of Irish life—entertaining stage directions. *$1.75*

THE WANDERING JEW — *E. TEMPLE THURSTON*
Powerful and strikingly new treatment of the old legend. *Illus. $1.75*

THREE NOVELS — With Wide Appeal, and of Their Kind, Each a Leader

ERIK DORN — *BEN HECHT*
A sensational success. The critics call it "Eruptive," "volcanic," "disorderly," "dazzling," "brilliant," "opulent." *$2.00*

PRIVILEGE — *MICHAEL SADLEIR*
The brilliant story of the decadence of a great house, "told with thought, truth and beauty." *$2.00*

THE OBSTACLE RACE — *ETHEL M. DELL*
Ethel Dell, who *never* had a failure, breaks all records with her very best novel. *$2.00*

AT ALL BOOKSTORES

NEW YORK **G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS** LONDON

Digitized by Google

DM

FABRE'S BOOK OF INSECTS

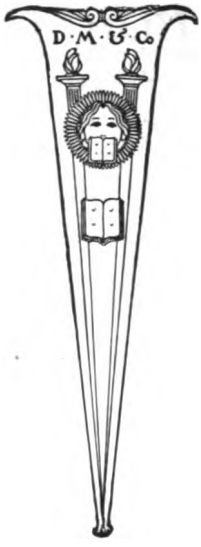
By J. Henri Fabre

Fabre's remarkable studies of insect life are well known. The BOOK OF INSECTS comprises selected material taken from his works and is illustrated in a truly wonderful manner by the artist best fitted to do it — E. J. Detmold. One of the most beautiful and fascinating of holiday books. *With 12 illustrations in full color.* *Boxed*, $5.00

THE OPERA-GOER'S COMPLETE GUIDE

By Leo Melitz

A new and completely revised edition with all the latest operas. In all, the stories of about 300 operas are given. Its convenient arrangement and its comprehensiveness make this a most desirable book. $2.50



THE ART OF HOME DECORATION

By Mary Harrod Northend

Author of "Colonial Homes and Their Furnishings," etc.

A beautiful and useful book by one long known as an authority on furniture and decoration, copiously illustrated from photographs in the author's collection, which comprises many hundreds of subjects. $3.50

JOHN MARTIN'S READ ALOUD BOOK

By the author of "The John Martin Annual," etc.

John Martin has put his best work (or rather *play*) into this delightful book. The stories are just long enough to please the little tots and short enough to consider Mother's time and strength. The book is adequately illustrated. *Size*, 8" x 10". $2.00

DAVID COPPERFIELD and JANE EYRE

Beautiful gift editions of these long popular favorites, each with sixteen striking illustrations in full color. The period of DAVID COPPERFIELD lends itself to the indulgence of a love of color which is one of the well-known characteristics of Gertrude Demain Hammond. The "dour" atmosphere of JANE EYRE appeals naturally to the genius of Monro Orr. He has not heightened the feeling of tragedy but has in his pictures drawn upon the higher scenes in the book.

DAVID COPPERFIELD, $3.50 JANE EYRE, $3.00

PAUL AND RHODA

By Fannie Kilbourne

An exceptional story that opens up a hitherto rather neglected field — high school life, with its fun and study, its frats and sororities, its sports and its dances, and all the problems and activities that make this period of life peculiarly interesting. *Illustrated*, $1.75

THE BOYS' BOOK OF RAILROADS

By Irving Crump

Editor of Boys' Life (the Boy Scout's Magazine)

A highly entertaining tale of the work of the engineers, conductors, firemen, the members of the train crews, the yardmasters, trackmen, and all the many men who take care of us when we travel. *Illustrated*, $1.65

THE JESSIE WILLCOX SMITH LITTLE MOTHER GOOSE

This is the most attractive moderate priced edition of the Mother Goose jingles obtainable. The print is large, and the book is durably bound in a convenient size for children to handle. It has 12 colored illustrations and many other drawings by Jessie Willcox Smith. $1.50

THE BOOK OF NATURE STORIES

By

H. Waddington Sears

Fascinating and instructive. *Illustrated in color.* $2.50

A PRINCETON BOY UNDER THE KING

By Paul G. Tomlinson

A story of student life at the College of New Jersey in the middle of the eighteenth century. Although historically correct, the main emphasis is on the story itself. *Illustrated*, $1.75

LEFT HALF HARMON

By

Ralph Henry Barbour

This is the seventh title in a series of up-to-the-minute football stories that will appeal to every live youngster. Life in a prep school is related with that relish and enthusiasm which may be expected from this popular author. *Illustrated*, $1.75

DODD, MEAD & COMPANY *Publishers since 1839* **NEW YORK**

DM

Digitized by Google

DM DM

IN THE EYES OF THE EAST

By Marjorie Barstow Greenbie

The book is a spirited narrative of adventures among men of all conditions and colors—pygmies, head-hunters, diplomats, missionaries, plutocrats, zenana ladies—through which runs the thread of lovely romance. It is especially rich in details about the lives of Oriental women which are, necessarily, inaccessible to men travelers.

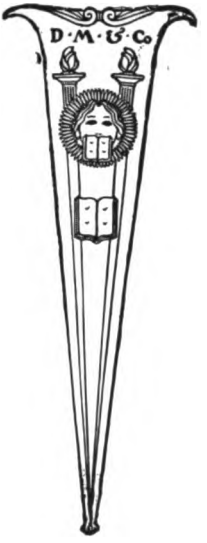
Profusely illustrated. $3.50

MY PHILOSOPHY AND MY RELIGION

By Ralph Waldo Trine

Author of "In Tune with the Infinite," etc.

A concrete statement of Mr. Trine's philosophy and his religion, whose predominating feature, which he has somehow managed to get into every page, is the element of use. Its quality of self-help gives it a very vital content. It will bring beauty and power to many lives. $1.50



DOWN THE COLUMBIA

By Lewis R. Freeman

Author of "In The Tracks of The Trades," etc.

Mr. Freeman tells of his adventures on his unique canoe journey down the Columbia from glacial sources to the sea. Full of thrills, humor and graphic descriptions of the grandeur of the great river.

Profusely illustrated. $3.50

THE FOLLY OF NATIONS

By Frederick Palmer

For thirty years Frederick Palmer has been on the spot in every war of note. And he hates war bitterly and unrelentingly. An inspiration came to him while watching the first meeting of the League of Nations, to write this epoch-making book which shows the utter folly of the whole idea of war. No one is better fitted than he to write such a book. $2.00

MANSLAUGHTER

By Alice Duer Miller

Author of "Come Out of the Kitchen," "The Charm School," etc.

A fascinating portrait of a young girl; and a remarkable character study. The story depicts a struggle between two strong-willed, imperious young persons, culminating in a stirring conflict between the Law on the one hand and privileged Society on the other. How did beautiful Lydia Thorne, taken on a serious charge, escape the final penalty? *Illustrated.* $2.00

QUILL'S WINDOW

By George Barr McCutcheon

George Barr McCutcheon has been a "best seller" for more than fifteen years. Nearly four million copies of his books have been sold. His popular new romance is a dramatic story of life to-day in an Indiana village. $2.00

THE ARRANT ROVER

By Berta Ruck

Author of "His Official Fiancée," etc.

There is something about Berta Ruck's stories that makes them universal favorites. They are always interesting, always pervaded with a wholesome good humor. She knows how to write a story, and she knows the hearts of youth. $2.00

NIGHTFALL

By Anthony Pryde

Author of "Jenny Essenden," "Marqueray's Duel," etc.

A story far above the average novel, and one which will establish more firmly than ever the growing fame of its talented author. Lawrence Hyde, wealthy, cultured, big and not too young, with a striking record for cool courage, pays a visit to a country house — and there begins a story which is told with the sincerity and genuine power which have won a deserved popularity for Anthony Pryde. $2.00

PETER BINNEY

By Archibald Marshall

Author of "The Squire's Daughter," etc.

The story of a middle-aged Englishman, who envies the college life which he is able to offer to his son. After some difficulty he enters Cambridge University, and finds himself a fellow student of his own son. The possibilities of this unusual situation Mr. Marshall develops to the utmost. $2.00

(*Send for our free booklet about Mr. Marshall and his work.*)

THE HIDDEN FORCE

By Louis Couperus

Author of "Small Souls," etc.

Couperus is firmly established as one of the greatest novelists of the present day. A native of Holland, much of his life has been spent in Java, and it is that far-off land which he takes as a setting for this new novel of his which has been acclaimed abroad as a work of great beauty and virility. $2.00

DODD, MEAD & COMPANY *Publishers since 1839* **NEW YORK**

DM DM

Digitized by Google

(*Continued from page 16*)

perilous journey into a new world on November 11, 1918.

The author shows us, with unexaggerated sincerity, how infinitely more revealing of character — whether for better or for worse — are the days of readjustment to a changed world than was the period of the actual war, when an abnormal crisis in human affairs demanded supernormal qualities in mankind. Many of the persons to whom he introduces us with his characteristic off-hand manner, which is at times a mannerism, as if he were talking rather than writing, are commonplace individuals of the usual sort, even as you and I; but he proves that an uninteresting type can become an appealing personality when vitalized by a sympathetic interpreter. Mr. Walpole has something of the large sanity and fundamental optimism of a wise physician, who, though surrounded by disease and distress, never forgets that health is the normal state of man. Although many of the 'cases' he dissects for us are trivial or contemptible, pathological or morbid, we feel that this wise student of human nature never loses hope in the eventual evolution of man into something less disheartening than the moral and nervous war-wreckage that has been cast up on the shores of our modern world.

Perhaps among the thirteen whom we come so intimately to know, Miss Morganhurst is the most strikingly analyzed. The terrible autopsy performed by Mr. Walpole on her subconscious mind reveals with ghastly truth the horrors that occur when incarnate selfishness seeks to ignore realities that cannot be shut out of one's inner consciousness. Mrs. Porter and Mrs. Allen remind us that Mr. Walpole is a great admirer of Henry James, though he turns the screw of the supernatural with a more material implement.

Various old friends out of Mr. Walpole's earlier books swim into the ken of the Hortonians, and the reader — the fourteenth traveler, who so poignantly feels himself to be the only shadow in a world of human substances — is moved to extend an ethereal hand, not only to welcome the newcomers introduced by Mr. Walpole, but to greet old acquaintances whose past fortunes he has already shared.

A. L. GRANT.

The American Novel, by Carl Van Doren. New York: The Macmillan Company. 1921. 8vo, ix+295 pp. $2.00.

THIS excellent survey, which the author describes in his Preface as 'a chapter in the history of the American imagination,' makes lamentably clear the paucity and thinness of America's contribution to the novelist's art. For when Mr. Van Doren has discussed the work of Cooper, Hawthorne, Melville, Howells, Mark Twain, Henry James, and Frank Norris, he has covered pretty completely all that is significant in American fiction — excluding the works of living novelists. (Poe, being a writer of short stories, does not figure in the history of the American novel.)

Mr. Van Doren's analysis of these outstanding authors is not merely the most interesting part of his book; it forms two thirds of his book. The chapters on early American fiction, on the half-baked romances of adventure and sentiment that preceded the Civil War, and even the one on the novels of the eighteen-eighties, — which he regards as the golden decade of the American novel, — present interesting brief characterizations of forgotten, or soon-to-be-forgotten works; they do not cause the reader to feel that any of the authors thus hastily glanced at has been unjustly slighted.

Mr. Van Doren brings to his task as historian an unbiased intelligence, a capacity for generous yet discriminating appreciation, and an exceptional gift of expression. Although his work is largely expository, it is touched throughout with imagination, and is almost always happy in phrasing. Indeed, he writes so well that it is a shock to find him using 'sanguinary' in the sense of 'sanguine'; and he is so scrupulously comprehensive in his mention of novels of a certain distinction, that his failure to give any place to Harold Frederic's *The Damnation of Theron Ware* is mystifying.

Of the protagonists of the American novel he is a most satisfying interpreter. Within the space that he has set for himself, it is hard to see how exposition of their aims or appraisal of their achievements could be more thorough or adequate. When he approaches the works of contemporary writers, he is less satisfactory. Inasmuch as his treatment of these works is for the most part restricted to mere mention of title and theme, it is not very valuable; when he does deliver an opinion, it is likely to be oracular. *The Virginian* receives much less than its due when it is styled 'an older dime novel somewhat glorified'; and the suggestion that other records of the phase that it treats have been 'racier and crisper' should not be permitted to remain vague. A reader may ask why Robert Grant's documentation of the age should be overlooked if Theodore Dreiser's cannot be; or why Upton Sinclair's earnestness and skill in controversy, which 'deserve the high praise that they recall Thomas Paine,' should deserve that praise in a volume on the American novel. But let us call attention to no more flaws in a work of unusual and, almost to the end, sustained excellence.

ARTHUR STANWOOD PIER.

In response to requests from many librarians, the reviews printed each month in this department of the magazine will be reprinted separately in pamphlet form. Copies may be had by any librarian, without charge, on application to the Atlantic Monthly, 8 Arlington St., Boston.

Digitized by Google

HARCOURT, BRACE AND COMPANY, 1 WEST 47TH STREET, NEW YORK

Lytton Strachey's *Queen Victoria* . . .	$5.00
Sinclair Lewis's *Main Street*	$2.00
Dorothy Canfield's *The Brimming Cup* .	$2.00
J. Wassermann's *The World's Illusion.* 2 vols.	$5.00

WILLIAM ROTHENSTEIN

has made portraits of every distinguished Englishman from Pater and Matthew Arnold to the outstanding figures of to-day.

Twenty-Four Portraits

With biographical sketches

"An exceptional book both in its pictures and in its text. Only an artist of Mr. Rothenstein's rank and determination could have risked juxtaposition with the brilliant writers who contribute the notes."—*Manchester Guardian.* $7.50

LOGAN PEARSALL SMITH

Author of "Trivia."

More Trivia

"Trivia," which Christopher Morley called "a gush of hilarious satirics," won a position of distinction with the discriminating. A warm welcome awaits this new book so full of human wisdom, compacted of grace and humor and whimsicality, and yet wholly in touch with life and all it holds. $1.60

HEYWOOD BROUN

sees everything in relation to the essentials of life, rather than some standard of criticism.

Seeing Things at Night

Reflections on "anything and everything"

Heywood Broun brings to all the happenings of modern living—a new book or play, a new fashion, the outburst of some speaker—fresh interest and enthusiasm. Some of the selections show his well-known wit; others are serious discussion; and some are as lovely and poetic as can be found. $1.75

CHRISTOPHER MORLEY

An American blend of Charles Lamb and E. V. Lucas.

Modern Essays

A collection of essays from the work of about thirty modern writers, including Kilmer, Don Marquis, McFee, Belloc, Santayana, Strunsky, Saintsbury, Sherman, Cabell and Heywood Broun. An introductory essay and the unconventional biographical notes are in Mr. Morley's best vein. $2.00

J. E. SPINGARN (Editor)

Author of "Creative Criticism," etc. With an introduction by

LORD HALDANE

Goethe's Literary Essays

Goethe was acclaimed "the greatest critic in the world" by Carlyle, Matthew Arnold, Sainte-Beuve, and other distinguished writers; yet there has not been available in English any adequate collection of his critical work. In this volume every phase of his critical activity is represented. $2.50

GEORGE P. BAKER (Editor)

Professor of Dramatic Literature, Harvard University.

Modern American Plays

With an introduction and biographical notes by Professor Baker

The complete text of: "The Return of Peter Grimm," *David Belasco;* "As a Man Thinks," *Augustus Thomas;* "Plots and Playwrights," *Edward Massey;* "Romance," *Edward Sheldon;* "The Unchastened Woman," *Louis Anspacher.* $2.50

Digitized by Google

HARCOURT, BRACE AND COMPANY, 1 WEST 47TH STREET, NEW YORK

GRANT OVERTON

Author of "Mermaid," etc.

Lytton Strachey's *Queen Victoria* . . .	$5.00
Sinclair Lewis's *Main Street*	$2.00
Dorothy Canfield's *The Brimming Cup* . .	$2.00
J. Wassermann's *The World's Illusion*. 2 vols.	$5.00

The Answerer

A novel from the life of

Walt Whitman

The story begins with Whitman's boyhood on Long Island, carries him through his vivid love life in New Orleans, and ends with his experiences during the Civil War. $2.00

MARGARET WIDDEMER

Author of "The Rose Garden Husband," "I've Married Marjorie," etc. A writer who weaves pure romance and realism into delightful stories.

The Year of Delight

It is one girl's answer to that perennially fascinating question, "What would you do if you had six million dollars?" This is a wistful, gay, fresh, young-love story.

"She has written nothing better." — *New York Times.* $1.75

CONSTANCE I. SMITH

A young British writer whose reputation will be made by this book.

Ten Hours

Introduced to the heroine as she starts her day's marketing, we follow her breathlessly until at six o'clock in the evening the most fateful decision of her life is made.

"An extraordinarily brilliant book."— Christopher Morley in the *New York Evening Post.* $1.75

VIRGINIA WOOLF

One of the brilliant younger creative writers of England.

Monday and Tuesday

Snapshots of crucial episode or inner experience.

"Imagination, insight and honesty. Her style is individual, and so exquisitely suited to its subject that her pictures do not seem made with words, but with the very stuff of our mental processes."— *London Observer.* $1.60

HEINRICH MANN

One of the great novelists of Central Europe.

The Patrioteer (Der Untertan)

Translated by Ernest Boyd. (European Library)

The hero is a typical product of one side of modern Germany. The book, completed in October, 1914, was withheld until after the Armistice; and its enormous success at home is the test of its effective satire and the measure of the revolt which it was intended to stimulate. As the title implies, it is a work of general as well as particular significance. $2.00

PIERRE HAMP

The French Gorky, who, like the Russian writer, has worked himself up from the humblest level to a commanding position in the intellectual life of France.

People (Gens)

Translated by James Whitall. With an introduction by Elizabeth Shepley Sergeant. (European Library)

"Here's hoping that the book will be widely read in America and that every American reader will get from it not only an extraordinarily interesting picture of French working-class life, but what seems to me to rise from it, strong and vital and enduring, the French reverence for the intelligent and faithful doing of good work."— Dorothy Canfield, in the *New York Evening Post.* $2.00

Digitized by Google

HARCOURT, BRACE AND COMPANY, 1 WEST 47TH STREET, NEW YORK

HELEN LOUISE COHEN
(Editor)
Of the Washington Irving High School, New York.

George Edward Woodberry's Collected Essays
1. *Heart of Man*
2. *Studies of a Literateur*
3. *Literary Memoirs of the Nineteenth Century*
4. *Appreciation of Literature: America in Literature*
5. *Literary Essays*
6. *The Torch*

Each $3.00

One-Act Plays by Modern Authors

The complete text of Rogers's "The Boy Will"; Tarkington's "Beauty and the Jacobin"; Dowson's "The Pierrot of the Minute"; Down's "The Maker of Dreams"; MacKaye's "Gettysburg"; Milne's "Wurzel-Flummery"; Brighouse's "Maid of France"; Gregory's "Spreading the News"; Marks's "Welsh Honeymoon"; Synge's "Riders to the Sea"; Dunsany's "A Night at an Inn"; Young's "The Twilight Saint"; Egerton's "The Masque of the Two Strangers"; Maeterlinck's "The Intruder"; Peabody's "Fortune and Men's Eyes"; Galsworthy's "The Little Man." $2.25

FRANCES TAYLOR PATTERSON
Instructor in Photoplay Composition, Columbia University.

Cinema Craftsmanship: A Book for Photoplaywrights

New Edition

A practical manual for the person who wishes to write a photoplay and a general guide for the cultivated motion picture enthusiast who wishes to understand motion pictures. $2.00

JOHN M. MANLY
Professor of English, University of Chicago and
EDITH RICKERT

Modern British Literature: Outlines and Bibliographies

Covers three hundred and sixty-two novelists, poets, dramatists, essayists, etc., alphabetically arranged. Brief biographies, suggestions for reading, a complete chronological bibliograph with annotations, and order of choice for reading. $1.25

W. A. NEILSON
President of Smith College and
H. R. PATCH
Associate Professor of English, Smith College.

Selections from Chaucer

Exhibits every side of his genius, and presents all the general reader or the college student requires, with a thoroughly adequate text and an introduction covering the whole field of Chaucer's life, historic milieu, language, and pronunciation. $2.50

FREDERICK WILLIAM ROE
Associate Professor of English, University of Wisconsin.

Social Philosophy of Carlyle and Ruskin

An interpretation of two great and related literary personalities, and a contribution to the history of social thought in England during a critical period. $3.00

BENJAMIN BRAWLEY
Formerly Professor of English and Dean of Morehouse College.

A Short History of the English Drama

The first brief history of the English drama in one volume, intended for the general reader as well as the student. $1.50

Digitized by Google

HARCOURT, BRACE AND COMPANY, 1 WEST 47TH STREET, NEW YORK

MARGARET WIDDEMER

Miss Widdemer's verse shows earnestness and a lovely singing quality.

T. A. Daly's Collected Poems
Carmina
Canzoni and Songs of Wedlock
Madrigali
McAroni Ballads *Each, $1.75*

Cross Currents

Miss Widdemer's first volume, "Factories," attracted instant attention; her "The Old Road to Paradise" shared the Pulitzer prize for the best volume of verse in 1918. This third book has a stronger, and at the same time a lovelier note. $1.60

ANNA WICKHAM

An English poet in whom the new woman has become articulate.

The Contemplative Quarry

"A poet of remarkable subtlety and intensity, and even more surety of phrase."— *New York Evening Post.* $1.75

ELINOR WYLIE

A new American poet.

Nets to Catch the Wind

These poems have a freshness and clarity always touched by fancy and a fancy always controlled by a fine restraint. $1.10

DEUTSCH and YARMOLINSKY

Babette Deutsch is the author of "Banners," and Mr. Yarmolinsky is head of the Slavonic Department of the New York Public Library.

Modern Russian Poetry: An Anthology

(European Library)

Lyrics ranging from the early nineteenth century down to date. All have been translated expressly for this volume, and most appear in English for the first time. The translator's interest, like the reader's, is centered upon the moderns. $1.75

CARL SANDBURG

The creative power of America,—of its prairies, cities, industries,—finds a voice in his poetry.

Smoke and Steel

"Holds the very spirit of American democracy."—*Chicago Daily News:* $2.00

LOUIS UNTERMEYER (Editor)

For years Mr. Untermeyer has been the energetic herald of the poetic renaissance in America.

Modern American Poetry

New Enlarged Edition

The revised edition which has grown from 170 to 410 pages, is the most comprehensive and inclusive collection of modern American verse available. $2.00

Modern British Poetry

A companion volume to "Modern American Poetry," covering the same period. $2.00

S. A. LEONARD (Editor)

English Department, University of Wisconsin.

Poems of the War and the Peace

This anthology of some ninety poems has been made primarily for the young people of to-day as a picture of the Great War and the spirit and ideals which animated it. $1.40

Digitized by Google

HARCOURT, BRACE AND COMPANY, 1 WEST 47TH STREET, NEW YORK

BENEDETTO CROCE

For the last fifteen years Croce has been the leader of Italian thought, and he is gradually winning the international position formerly occupied by Bergson as the foremost philosophic mind of our time.

Ready in January

J. M. Keynes' *After Two Years* (author of "*The Economic Consequences of the Peace*")

Frank A. Vanderlip's *European Possibilities* (author of "*What Happened to Europe*")

History: Its Theory and Practice

Translated by Douglas Ainslee (European Library)

Completes and sums up Croce's "Philosophy of the Spirit," and formulates a profoundly new theory of history, followed by an account of the chief historians from the days of Greece to our own. This book with its conception of the intimate relationship of history to philosophy, may well inaugurate a wholly new order of studies in the United States. $3.75 *net*

W. C. MITCHELL, F. R. MACAULAY, W. I. KING and O. W. KNAUTH

Under the auspices of the National Bureau of Economic Research.

The Income of the United States

A brief summary of an exhaustive statistical analysis of the income of the United States for each year 1910–1919, intended for the citizen, in determining the adequacy of the nation's production to meet the living needs of the population. $1.50

HAROLD J. LASKI

Author of "The Problem of Sovereignty," "Authority in the Modern State," etc.

The Foundations of Sovereignty and Other Essays

An attempt at the reconstruction of political theory in terms, not of decayed institutions and traditional ideas, but of the actual institutions and needs confronting us to-day. $3.50

ZECHARIAH CHAFEE, Jr.

Professor of Law in Harvard University.

Freedom of Speech

"This calm, scholarly, sane exposition of very recent history sounds like a clear bell in a moral fog."— John P. Gavit. in the *New York Evening Post.* $3.50

R. H. TAWNEY

Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford, late member of the British Coal Industries Commission.

The Acquisitive Society

A book on the moral basis of unrest.

"Destined to be regarded as a classic masterpiece upon its subject." — Dickinson S. Miller, in the *New Republic.* $1.50

E. SAPIR

Chief of the Anthropological Section, Geological Survey of Canada. One of the most brilliant students of primitive language in America.

Language: Its Nature and its Wider Relations

A book which will be basic in its subject, authoritative and popular enough in treatment to be of interest to the general reader who desires a clear understanding of language as the ever changing instrument of our emotions and mental activity. $1.75

Digitized by Google

HARCOURT, BRACE AND COMPANY, 1 WEST 47TH STREET, NEW YORK

THE INTERCHURCH WORLD MOVEMENT'S
Second Report

Ready in January
Civilization in the United States. An Inquiry by Thirty Americans. An adventure in intellectual coöperation. 540 pages. Probable price . . $5.00

Public Opinion and the Steel Strike of 1919

Until the publication (1920) of the Interchurch **Report on the Steel Strike** ($2.50), public opinion did not know that over 100,000 workers in the steel industry still rise in the dark, work twelve hours, go home in the dark, isolated in the steel plants from family and nation. This report is part of the basis for the first book. $2.50

LORD ASKWITH
Chief Industrial Commissioner and Chairman of the British Government Arbitration Committee.

Industrial Problems and Disputes

Deals with the conditions which have specially caused the unrest in industry in the last twenty years and makes practical suggestions for the amelioration of the struggle between capital and labor. Illustrated by anecdote and hitherto unpublished details. $5.00

WALTER RATHENAU
Chairman of the Board of Directors of the A. E. G. (German General Electrical Company). He is regarded as one of the most liberal and influential social thinkers as well as a man of action in Germany.

The New Society

(European Library)

Does not accept socialism, or democracy, or any other catchwords and generalizations. Dismissing all dreams of a social Utopia where everyone is happy and doing ennobling creative work, it formulates practical programs which will distribute the manual and intellectual labor of the world, and keep distinctions of class in a constant state of flux. $1.60

LEWIS EINSTEIN
Author of "The Italian Renaissance in England," etc.

Tudor Ideals

Traces the origin and growth of the political and social ideals of England in the sixteenth century.

"Mr. Einstein has achieved a masterpiece of historical re-creation." — *New York Tribune.* $3.50

O. W. HOLMES
Associate Justice of the Supreme Court. "One of the sincerest democrats that aristocracy has ever produced." — Boston Transcript.

Collected Legal Papers

"Brings the touch of romance to philosophy. Should have a tremendous appeal to the thoughtful reader, and is not entirely for lawyers." — *Boston Transcript.* $4.00

FREDERIC C. HOWE
Author of "European Cities at Work," etc., former Commissioner of Immigration, Port of New York.

Denmark: A Coöperative Commonwealth

An account of Denmark as a democratic commonwealth, governed largely by farmers, in which coöperation has been carried to a higher point of development than in any other modern state. $2.00

Digitized by Google

HARCOURT, BRACE AND COMPANY, 1 WEST 47TH STREET, NEW YORK

J. R. CAPABLANCA
Champion chess player of the world.

E. E. Slosson's *Easy Lessons in Einstein* . . $1.35
Barbara Low's *Outlines of Psychoanalysis* . $1.60
Edward Carpenter's *Pagan and Christian Creeds* $3.00

Chess Fundamentals

Gives, through eighteen illustrative games, the general principles of chess, so that, when grounded in these, the novice may cover the whole elementary science of the game. Probable price, $2.50

SAMUEL J. HOLMES
Author of "The Evolution of Animal Intelligence," Professor of Zoölogy, University of California.

The Trend of the Race

Makes available to the layman the latest results of scientific study in regard to the various forces which are at present modifying the direction of human evolution. $4.00

A. A. BRILL, M.D.
Freud's chief American disciple and translator. Lecturer in Psychoanalysis and Abnormal Psychology, New York University.

Fundamental Conceptions of Psychoanalysis

A new and authoritative statement of the Freudian doctrine, done in a lively and coherent fashion, and with unusual delicacy in the choice of illustrative material. $2.00

E. C. VIVIAN
Formerly editor of "Flying," and
W. L. MARCH
Secretary of the Royal Aeronautical Society.

A History of Aviation

Takes aviation from its legendary period right through to the facts and feats of to-day. The technical side of the subject also comes in for special treatment. Profusely illustrated, $5.00

W. E. B. DuBOIS
The intellectual leader of the Negroes of America.

Darkwater

A human document of extraordinary intensity and insight, dealing with the place of the darker races in the modern world. $2.25

JENNIE BUELL
Secretary and past lecturer of the Michigan State Grange.

The Grange Master and the Grange Lecturer

Primarily a manual offering Grange officials practical suggestions for carrying on Grange work, the book is full of suggestion to the Grange membership as a whole. $1.50

FREDERICK LITCHFIELD
Author of "Pottery and Porcelain," etc.

Antiques, Genuine and Spurious

With one hundred illustrations of representative specimens of Porcelain, Furniture, Enamels and Bronzes. "Exceedingly readable as well as a gold mine of information."—*Country Life.* $10.00

ROBERT C. WITT
Trustee of the National and Tate Galleries.

How to Look at Pictures

A new edition of a standard work, with a new chapter on "How to Hang Pictures." $2.50

Digitized by Google

HARCOURT, BRACE AND COMPANY, 1 WEST 47TH STREET, NEW YORK

For Young People

Parker Fillmore's Notable Collections

Czechoslovak Fairy Tales $2.25
The Shoemaker's Apron $2.50
The Laughing Prince $2.50

Vivid renditions of Czechoslovak and Jugoslav fairy and folk tales. Colored illustrations.

For Young People

ANNA COGSWELL TYLER

In charge of the Story Telling in the New York Public Library and its forty-four branches.

Twenty-four Unusual Stories

Stories chosen from those which have been of the greatest interest to the many children who have listened to Miss Tyler's story-telling hours. Most of them are not easily found elsewhere, and they have been drawn from many sources. Not only a book which children will enjoy reading, it will also help teachers and librarians in reading aloud. Decorations by *The Petershams*. $2.00

PAUL LELAND HAWORTH

Author of "America in Ferment," "On the Headwaters of Peace River," etc. Dr. Haworth is an historian and enthusiastic explorer.

Trailmakers of the Northwest

The story of the heroism and exploits which opened up our country, and of how the demand for fur led to great discoveries. Accounts of the exploration of Radisson, Mackenzie's journeys to the Arctic and the Pacific, the discovery of Hudson Bay and the Great Lakes, the discovery of the Northwest Passage are here; descriptions of the habits of beavers and buffalo and the other animals the explorers hunted, and the Indians with whom they live. Illustrated, $2.50

KATHARINE HAVILAND TAYLOR

Author of "Cecilia of the Pink Roses," "Barbara of Baltimore," etc.

Real Stuff

"Real Stuff" belongs to the "Little Women" group of stories. The give and take and fun of family life, the obstacles overcome, etc., make the story. Illustrated, $1.75

PHYLLIS DUGANNE

Inez Haynes Irwin's brilliant niece.

Ruthie

An almost realistic story of three modern girls at home, at school, and on their summer holidays. The heroine is an American girl of thirteen who has been brought up in China and who has to learn the ways of and make her friends among the girls of her own age in a modern American suburb. Illustrated, $1.75

AUSTIN BISHOP

Author of "Bob Thorpe, Sky Fighter in the Lafayette Flying Corps."

Tom of the Raiders

Based on an authentic episode of the Civil War. It is concerned with the adventures of two boys who penetrated far into the south and captured a locomotive on a Confederate railroad and ran away with it. Rare among stories of the period for the fairness with which it presents the point of view of both the North and the South. Illustrated, $1.75

FLAVIA CANFIELD

Author of "The Refugee Family," "The Kidnapped Campers," etc.

The Big Tent

Two orphaned children are brought to "Ma Brown," the circus "mother," to be brought up. Their fun and friendships, adventures and adversities make up the story, and show the working of that fascinating organization — a great circus. Illustrated, $1.50

Digitized by Google

© '16 by Int. Film Service



Woodrow Wilson is now an historical figure

A Remarkable Prediction

When Wilson was Governor of New Jersey and after he had begun to be discussed as a Presidential possibility, Tumulty one day broached the subject to his chief. Mr. Tumulty writes: "As we discussed the Presidential situation, he turned to me in the most solemn way, and putting his hand to his mouth as if to whisper something, said, 'I do not know, Tumulty, that I would care to be President during the next four years . . . for the next President will have a war on his hands.'"

THERE are more revelations about Woodrow Wilson in this book than in any other. Mr. Tumulty's factful account is straight from the shoulder and decidedly impartial. It contains for the most part matters of record. Therefore, it interests both friend and foe of Woodrow Wilson. The long silence which has been maintained in the face of the most astounding accusations ever directed at a man of international prominence is now broken with challenging answers.

Joseph P. Tumulty

brings out the human side of Woodrow Wilson the man, besides discussing his qualities and achievements as a statesman. His account is sparkling and compelling and deals with the greatest personalities of the most important decade since Lincoln.

WOODROW WILSON AS I KNOW HIM

$5.00 at every book store

Doubleday, Page & Co. Garden City, New York

—a few of the challenging facts:

HE TELLS what Wilson said to him about the sinking of the *Lusitania* at the time it occurred.

He gives the President's soliloquy when they were alone together in the Cabinet room after the President had delivered his great war message to the Congress.

He explains how secret preparations for war were made by the President's order in 1916.

He tells how the "amazing indiscretions" of the Irish-American delegates prevented Wilson from aiding Ireland at the Peace Conference.

He tells why Wilson made his ill-fated tour for the League after his return from Paris.

He tells why Col. Harvey became his enemy instead of his Ambassador.

He tells of his physical collapse and how Lansing during his illness tried to have him superseded by Marshall.

Digitized by Google

Can You Give Better Than a Book?



THE BOOK OF JACK LONDON

By CHARMIAN LONDON

ONE of the most extraordinary sensations of the season — a biography which is also almost an autobiography. Largely it is in the words of the man himself, reported by the one person who ever heard them — the one person to whom he ever gave up his last reserves of personality.

In two royal octavo volumes. Illustrated. Price $10.00

WORKING NORTH FROM PATAGONIA
By Harry A. Franck

The philosopher-vagabond reports the larger half of vast South America. ***Illustrated. $5.00***

VAGABONDING DOWN THE ANDES
By Harry A. Franck

Together with "Working North From Patagonia," it constitutes a complete picture of South America, political, social, and economic. ***Illustrated. $5.00***

ROAMING THROUGH THE WEST INDIES
By Harry A. Franck

A fascinating account of the author's wanderings through Cuba, Porto Rico, Virgin Islands, etc. ***Illustrated. $5.00***

THE PACIFIC TRIANGLE
By Sydney Greenbie

Deals with all the lands and peoples of the Pacific. An enchanting book of travels. ***Illustrated. $4.00***

THE LAND OF HAUNTED CASTLES
By Robert J. Casey

A beautiful book inside and out: reveals utterly charming little Luxemburg, a kingdom of yesterday living miraculously on into today. ***Richly printed and illustrated. $6.00***

MYSTERIOUS INDIA
By Robert Chauvelot

Seeing India through the keen, sophisticated eyes of a cultured Frenchman who was admitted to the innermost circles of exclusive Indian society. ***Illustrated. $3.50***

MYSTIC ISLES OF THE SOUTH SEAS
By Frederick O'Brien

Presenting the glamorous isle of Tahiti in the magic style that made the author's "White Shadows" famous. ***Illustrated. $5.00***

WHITE SHADOWS IN THE SOUTH SEAS
By Frederick O'Brien

The most sensationally successful travel book of the past ten years. Life in the Marquesas Isles. ***Illustrated. $5.00***

ADVENTURES IN SWAZILAND
By Owen Rowe O'Neil

Amazing experiences of the author among the stalwart Swazis of Southeast Africa. ***Illustrated. $4.00***

LOST SHIPS AND LONELY SEAS
By Ralph D. Paine

A book for all lovers of the sea. True stories of heroism and adventure. ***Profusely Illustrated. $4.00***

THE CENTURION, a 16-page illustrated monthly magazine containing extracts from books and news of authors and their work will be sent regularly and without charge to anyone upon request. Address

353 Fourth Avenue THE CENTURY CO. New York City

Digitized by Google

Can You Give Better Than a Book?

WHERE THE YOUNG CHILD WAS

By MARIE CONWAY OEMLER

Author of "Slippy McGee," etc.



HERE, between book covers, is the authentic Christmas spirit. The stories included all have to do with our most cheerful, generous and kindly holiday. Those who have read "Slippy McGee" and the author's other novels would expect her to write the most charming and whimsically delightful Christmas stories. Thousands of people should find a happy solution of the gift problem in "Where the Young Child Was." Mrs. Oemler has the extraordinary gift of appealing to the widest range of ages and tastes. The sort of reader who likes Dickens and Barrie and De Morgan usually likes her work also.

Illustrated. Price $1.90

MESSER MARCO POLO

By Donn Byrne

Surely this is sheer literary magic — the love story of young Marco Polo and the daughter of Kublai Khan; and its extraordinary welcome by the critics is entirely deserved. ***Illustrated. $1.25***

THE ISLAND

By Bertha Runkle

A love story of to-day in New York by the author of "The Helmet of Navarre." An achievement in a new manner by this author as delightful as it is distinguished. ***Frontispiece. $1.75***

THE CRYSTAL HEART

By Phyllis Bottome

A new novel by the author of "The Dark Tower" is always a literary event and "The Crystal Heart" is in many ways the finest thing she has ever done. ***Illustrated. $1.90***

THREADS

By Frank Stayton

An English novel with a refreshingly unusual plot and with a charming setting and atmosphere is here presented with spirit and appealing good humor. ***Frontispiece. $1.90***

GIBBETED GODS

By Lillian Barrett

A novel of smart society as brilliant and sophisticated as an Edith Wharton story. *The New York Tribune* says: "This is far and away the best thing the author has yet done. It is realistic romance of the highest order." ***Frontispiece. $1.90***

QUIN

By Alice Hegan Rice

A full-sized novel by the author of "Mrs. Wiggs of the Cabbage-Patch", presenting with great whimsical charm the love story of admirable and memorable Quinby Graham. ***20th Thousand. Frontispiece. $2.00***

THE CENTURION, a 16-page illustrated monthly magazine containing extracts from books and news of authors and their work will be sent regularly and without charge to anyone upon request. Address

353 Fourth Avenue **THE CENTURY CO.** New York City

Digitized by Google



GOOD BOOKS FOR GIFTS

Notable Biographies

HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY

THE SEER OF SLABSIDES

Dallas Lore Sharp

An illuminating estimate of John Burroughs. Frontispiece. 75 cents

THE LIFE OF METCHNIKOFF

Olga Metchnikoff

The authorized biography of the great bacteriologist. $5.00

A JOURNAL OF THE GREAT WAR

Charles G. Dawes

"A human document of rich and enduring value." —*N. Y. Times.* Illustrated. 2 volumes, $10.00

DANIEL H. BURNHAM

Charles Moore

The definitive biography of one of America's greatest architects and city planners. Illustrated. 2 volumes, $20.00

MY MEMOIRS

Prince Ludwig Windischgraetz

"The most honest book that has come out of the war." — *Chicago Tribune.* $5.00

HORATIO STEBBINS

Charles Murdock

The authorized biography of a famous Unitarian minister of San Francisco. $2.00

ROOSEVELT IN THE BAD LANDS

Hermann Hagedorn

It would be difficult to find in the most thrilling novels of the West, a more tense and absorbing story than this authoritative account of Roosevelt's experiences as a rancher in the most turbulent part of the old frontier. Illustrated. $5.00

FROM PRIVATE TO FIELD MARSHAL

Sir William Robertson

An autobiography of permanent importance for the full and frank story of a unique military career, but particularly because it is the most intimate view yet given of England's part in the War. Illustrated. $5.00

Letters and Journals of THOMAS WENTWORTH HIGGINSON

Colonel Higginson's letters and journals form a notable compendium of American literary, political and social life from 1846 to 1906. Illustrated. $4.00

THE LIFE OF JOHN MARSHALL

Albert J. Beveridge

This great work, one of the most successful and highly praised biographies of American literature, is invaluable for the home library and ideal as a Christmas gift. Tenth Printing. 4 vols. Illustrated. $20.00

THE BIG FOUR

And Others of the Peace Conference

Robert Lansing

Illuminating sketches of Clemenceau, Lloyd George, Wilson, Orlando, Venizelos, Emir Feisul, Gen. Botha and Paderewski. Illustrated. $2.50

Digitized by Google



GOOD BOOKS FOR GIFTS

Biography, History and Travel

HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY

UNDER THE MAPLES

John Burroughs

is posthumous volume one of the most enjoy- le of all the great natur- st's books.
Frontispiece. $2.00

BOSTON COMMON

Scenes from Four Centuries

M. A. De Wolfe Howe

picturesque history of e of the most famous ots in America. An al souvenir or gift.
Illustrated. $1.00

THE BASQUE COUNTRY

Romilly and Katharine Fedden

ot only beautiful but l of the romance of story." — *Philadelphia ger.*
ustrated in color. $6.00

PICTURE OF MODERN SPAIN

J. B. Trend

brilliant study illumin- ng Spanish art, litera- re, music and drama.
$4.50

VANESSA

and her correspondence with Jonathan Swift

Edited by A. Martin Freeman

f compelling and uni- rsal interest." — *N. Y. mes.* $2.50

WASHINGTON CLOSE-UPS

Edward G. Lowry

Keen, humorous and amazingly penetrating sketches of our public men, written from intimate first-hand knowledge, with a steady play of humor and with an uncanny gift for unveiling the true character of the men. Illustrated. $3.00

POLITICAL PROFILES

From British Public Life

H. Sidebotham

Brilliant and intimate sketches by the Parliamentary correspondent of the *London Times* of Lloyd George, Lord Grey, Lady Astor, and many others. Illustrated. $3.00

THE MARITIME HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS

S. E. Morison

From the "Columbia" through the Clipper Ship era. A stirring account of a picturesque, romantic phase of American history. Profusely illustrated with portraits of famous vessels and their masters; fishermen, whalers, China traders and old prints of outlandish seaports. $5.00

JAPAN AND THE UNITED STATES

Payson J. Treat

To follow intelligently the Washington conference every well-informed citizen needs the background knowledge of the questions at issue between Japan and America that only this new, lucid and unbiased book can give. $2.00

SEA POWER IN THE PACIFIC

Hector C. Bywater

"Thoroughly excellent, authoritative and impartial."—Rear Admiral Sims. "The most valuable exposition of world conditions to-day which has yet appeared in print." — *Boston Transcript.*

Digitized by Google



GOOD BOOKS FOR GIFTS

Poetry and Essays

HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY

LIFE'S MINOR COLLISIONS

Frances and Gertrude Warner

Sketches of family life by the author of "Endicott and I" and her sister. $1.50

THE ROMANCE OF BUSINESS

W. Cameron Forbes

Just the book to give the older girl or boy an understanding of the business world. Illustrated. $1.65

SUNDAYS IN COLLEGE CHAPELS

Since the War

Francis G. Peabody

A new collection of papers by the author of "Afternoons in a College Chapel," etc. $1.75

THE YOUNG MAN FROM JERUSALEM

William G. Ballantine

An inspiring presentation of the fundamentals of Christian living. $1.00

ROOSEVELT IN THE KANSAS CITY STAR

Ralph Stout

Editorials written by Roosevelt in 1917–18. $4.00

IMPRESSIONS AND COMMENTS

Havelock Ellis

Second Series $2.75

OLIVER CROMWELL

John Drinkwater

A prose play written with the same intuition, high simplicity and compelling sense of reality that made "Abraham Lincoln" the dramatic success of two continents. $1.50

FIR-FLOWER TABLETS

Poems translated from the Chinese

By Florence Ayscough

English Versions by Amy Lowell

The collaboration of a sinologue and a poet has made possible a translation in which the beauty as well as the exact sense and flavor of the original poems are preserved. $3.00

THE LIFTED CUP

Jessie B. Rittenhouse

A distinguished volume of poetry by the author of "The Door Dreams" and the compiler of "The Little Book of Modern Verse," etc. $1.00

LEGENDS

Amy Lowell

"I read 'Legends' last night, and again this morning. I like best 'Many Swans,' which I have read twice and which I feel really speaks inside my unexplained soul. I should not like to try to explain it, because of the deep fear and danger that is in it. But it isn't a myth of the sun, it is something else. All the better that we can't say off hand what. That means it is true. It rings a note in my soul."—*D. H. Lawrence.* $2.00

STAR-POINTS

Songs of Joy, Faith and Promise from the Present-Day Poets

Mrs. Waldo Richards

"Mrs. Richards has employed taste and a talent of selection. She has chosen nothing which is not worthy of inclusion in such a volume as this."—*New York Sun.*

$1.75. Leather, $2.50

Digitized by Google



GOOD BOOKS FOR GIFTS

New Novels

HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY

CARAMOUCHE
Rafael Sabatini

Scaramouche' has dash
l action. It is excel-
tly written and is sim-
alive with incident."—
e *Outlook*.
7th Printing. $2.00

ANGLED TRAILS
Wm. MacLeod Raine

thrilling mystery story
th all the sweep and
or of the West, by the
thor of "Gunsight
ss." $1.75

PARTNERS OF CHANCE
H. H. Knibbs

tale of Arizona, rich in
venture, by the author
"The Ridin' Kid from
wder River." $1.75

FIRST DOWN, KENTUCKY!
Ralph D. Paine

football romance of
ntre College. "Bo is
character that would
light any reader."—
ston *Post*. $1.75

THREE LOVING LADIES
Hon. Mrs. Dowdall

Irs Dowdall possesses an
mense joy in observing
e and a keen sense of
mor."—*Boston Tran-
ript*. $2.00

THE BLACK MOTH
Georgette Heyer

swiftly moving adven-
re romance of eight-
nth century England.
$1.90

FAR TO SEEK
Maud Diver

"One of the really fine novels of the year. Mrs. Diver tells her story so well and with such sympathy and understanding that her book stands out with distinction. It is all done with the literary charm that has given her so high a rank among the novelists of the day."—*Boston Herald*. $2.00

SUCCESS
Samuel Hopkins Adams

"A good and exciting book told with all of Mr. Adams's persuasive eloquence and sincerity. It is his best work. . . . If you never read a newspaper, don't buy the book; if you do read a paper, get 'Success.'"—*New York Tribune*. $2.00

THE WILLING HORSE
Ian Hay

"Ian Hay tells the tale with the same bonny, sonsy, fresh and wholesome spontaneity, enlivened by a blessed gift of humor, that he gave to the writing of such famous books as 'The First Hundred Thousand' and brought to his platform appearances all over America in war-time."—*Philadelphia Ledger*. $2.00

ROMANCE TO THE RESCUE
Denis Mackail

"I have not enjoyed a book for years as much as 'Romance to the Rescue.' The most delightful set of characters I have ever come across. A gripping story full of humor."—*P. G. Wodehouse*. $1.90

SISTER SUE
Eleanor H. Porter

"One of the best stories from the pen of the talented author of 'Pollyanna,' 'Just David,' etc. . . . Mrs. Porter has painted a character that will stand the test of time. . . . A novel of rare beauty."—*Boston Globe*. Illustrated. $2.00



GOOD BOOKS FOR GIFTS

Books of Permanent Interest

HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY

A STUDY OF POETRY

Bliss Perry

"No one can read this book without having a higher appreciation of verse." —*New York Review*. $3.25
Student's edition, $2.50

DRAMATIC TECHNIQUE

George P. Baker

"The best book yet published on the subject." —Heywood Broun in the *N. Y. Tribune*. $4.75
Student's edition, $3.75

DANTE'S DIVINE COMEDY

Translated by
Charles Eliot Norton

The classic translation complete, for the first time, in a single-volume form. $3.00

THE ODYSSEY

Translated by
George H. Palmer

The vigor and beauty of this great epic are splendidly preserved in this prose translation. $1.50

THE HISTORY OF EDUCATION

Ellwood P. Cubberley

An interesting study of the educational forces directing the growth of our Western civilization. $3.75

PLOETZ'S EPITOME

Every household needs this Manual of Universal History in which all essential facts are given in a way most convenient for reference. $3.75

CHIEF DRAMATISTS SERIES

PROFESSOR THOMAS H. DICKINSON'S Chief Contemporary Dramatists, First and Second Series, contain thirty-eight complete plays from the leading dramatists of the present day. 1st series, $4.00. 2nd series, $4.50

PROFESSOR W. A. NEILSONS' The Chief Elizabethan Dramatists presents typical examples of the work of the most important of Shakespeare's contemporaries, affording a view of the development of the English drama through its most brilliant period. $4.25

PROFESSOR BRANDER MATTHEW'S The Chief European Dramatists contains twenty-one complete plays from leading European dramatists from Aeschylus to Ibsen. $4.00

RECENT HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES

Frederic L. Paxson

A clear, readable account and lucid interpretation of our recent history showing every element of the complex political and industrial situation in its proper perspective.
Illustrated. $5.00. Student's edition, $3.75

MODERN AND CONTEMPORARY EUROPEAN HISTORY

J. Salwyn Schapiro

"No more lucid, readable and interesting history of the modern period has appeared." — *The Congregationalist*.
$5.00. Student's edition, $3.90

THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE UNITED STATES

From Colonies to a World Power

Max Farrand

"A delightful book to read, and a most illuminating and instructive book to study." —*The Outlook*. With maps, $2.00



GOOD BOOKS FOR GIFTS

America's Leading Nature Writers

HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY

DALLAS LORE SHARP

'If any person has a spark f the love of Nature in iis soul, the reading of hese books will fan it into flame. They are a breeze rom the woods and the ills."—John Burroughs. Ir. Sharp's published ritings include five vol- mes of outdoor sketches nd travels (each one 75c), biographical sketch of ohn Burroughs, "The eer of Slabsides" (75c) and n enticing volume of ature studies for children, The Whole Year Round" 3.50).

ENOS A. MILLS

Men of the type of Henry). Thoreau, John Bur- oughs, and John Muir are ecoming more and more are—men who love Na- ure and the great out- oors more than they love he comforts of civiliza- ion. But their mantle as fallen upon one who hough still a young man as already proved himself orthy—Enos A. Mills of ong's Peak, Estes Park, olorado."—*Country Life n America.* The eight olumes by Mr. Mills that e publish include five vol- mes of outdoor sketches nd studies of wild animal fe (each $2.25), two single ssays, "The Story of cotch" and "A Thousand ear Pine" (each $1.25) and Your National Parks" 3.00).

JOHN BURROUGHS

"We find in the writings of John Burroughs something which is of supreme value in literature; the simple, frank utterance of a strong, unaffected human soul in close and normal relations with Nature and life."—Hamilton Wright Mabie. Mr. Burroughs's complete works including his posthumous book, "Under the Maples," are published in twenty-two volumes at a price of $2.00 each. With these should be in every library the biography by Dr. Clara Barrus, "Our Friend, John Burroughs" ($3.50), and Dallas Lore Sharp's "The Seer of Slabsides" (75c).

HENRY D. THOREAU

"Thoreau had caught his English at its living source among the poets and prose writers of its best days. There are sentences of his as perfect as anything in the language, and thoughts as clearly crystalized; as we read him it seems as if all out-of-doors had kept a diary and become its own Montaigne."—James Russell Lowell. Thoreau's works are published in eleven volumes at $2.00 each in the Riverside Edition, or $2.50 in the Riverside Pocket Edition, Flexible Leather Binding. Important studies of Thoreau's life and writings have been written by Frank E. Sanborn ($5.00) and Mark Van Doran ($1.75), while a book of particular interest to admirers of this great Nature writer is Herbert W. Gleason's "Through the Year With Thoreau" ($3.00), a volume of remarkable photographs of Thoreau's country with descriptive text.

JOHN MUIR

"Muir was the patriarch of American lovers of mountains; one who had not only a passion for the splendors of Nature, but a wonderful power of interpreting her to man."—James Bryce. "On Nature's scenic stage, he did with the wild folk what Shakespeare did with man. His prose poems illuminate the forest, the storm, and all the fields of life. He has set Pan's melody to words."—Enos Mills. There are, at present, seven published volumes of Muir's works, each of which is $3.25, except "Our National Parks" which is $3.00. His last book, "Steep Trails," is an absorbing account of mountain experiences in the Sierras and elsewhere.

or further information and complete lists of volumes, write to Houghton Mifflin Co., 4 Park Street, Boston

Digitized by Google



Interesting and Entertaining Books that Will Make Gracious Christmas Presents

THE BEGINNING OF WISDOM

By STEPHEN VINCENT BENÉT



A brilliant first novel that combines imagination with realism.

Heywood Broun says: ***"The Beginning of Wisdom*** **marks the beginning of a new American novelist who brings a conspicuous beauty to the interpretation of our generation."**

The Bookman **says: "How well Benét understands the younger generation! —and he tells his gay story in an amazingly fresh and vivid manner!"**

The *Brooklyn Daily Eagle* says: "It is one of the most promising books we have ever seen, and there are parts of it which are absolutely splendid." $1.90

THE GANG

By JOSEPH ANTHONY

Mr. Anthony has done with the boys of New York's upper east-side what Booth Tarkington has done with the boys of the middle-west

Harold, a typical city-boy, has been trained to be an infant prodigy but burns to get into the Gang.

Of Mr. Anthony's *Rekindled Fires* ***The Bookman*** said: "The story has extraordinary power." $1.90

EDGE OF THE JUNGLE



By WILLIAM BEEBE

A work as fine as *Jungle Peace*, which Theodore Roosevelt considered "genuine literature." $2.50

DITTE, DAUGHTER OF MAN

By MARTEN A. NEXÖ

The second volume of the Danish master's beautiful analysis of the feminine soul.

Of *Ditte, Girl Alive* **Heywood Broun** said: "It has a fascinating fairy-tale atmosphere about it."

The ***New York Evening Post*** said: "Everybody who begins to read *Ditte* now will be impatient for further volumes of this moving story." $2.00

THE PEOPLE AGAINST NANCY PRESTON

By JOHN A. MOROSO

If a man has once been a criminal must he always be a criminal? Will society let him reform? This vital question dominates John A. Moroso's new novel written from his wide experience as a newspaperman in New York City.

The ***New York Herald*** says: "The book is an achievement." $1.75

OF ALL THINGS!

By ROBERT BENCHLEY



Highly amusing essays about many things of every-day life, written by the dramatic editor of ***Life*** and illustrated by Gluyas Williams, also of ***Life***.

Stephen Leacock says: "Bob Benchley's work seems to represent the most typical and the best American humour." $1.75

19 WEST 44th ST. HENRY HOLT & COMPANY NEW YORK CITY

Digitized by Google

Interesting and Entertaining Books that Will Make Gracious Christmas Presents



SINBAD AND HIS FRIENDS

By SIMEON STRUNSKY

Atlantic readers will rejoice that Mr. Strunsky has given us another book in the vein of social satire, in which he is our humorist of most point and excellence of style. The American scene is very amusing come upon by way of the far city of Bagdad. $1.75

MOLTKE

By

Lt. Col. F. E. WHITTON

Would there have been a World War if Moltke had never lived?

It was he who created Germany's Imperial Army. It was he who, with a few others, made the World War a political necessity.

This standard English biography of Germany's greatest soldier throws much light on the political background of the World War. *Makers of the Nineteenth Century Series.* $3.50

PRODUCING IN LITTLE THEATRES



By CLARENCE STRATTON

The most comprehensive book on the Little Theatre that has yet been published. It contains a valuable appendix of 200 plays and 70 varied illustrations. $2.90

VICTOR HUGO

By MARIE DUCLAUX

The curious story of Victor Hugo's private life has never before been so fully told in English—that tragic story growing out of Saint-Beuve's love for Mme. Hugo.

The book is a sympathetic study not only of Hugo's private life, but of his political and poetic life as well.

"Mme. Duclaux," as *The London Times* says, "writes with charm and distinction." *Makers of the Nineteenth Century Series.* $3.00

Poetry and Music

HYMEN By "H. D."

The first collection of H. D.'s poetry to be published in America. "H. D. is the most nearly perfect of the Imagists," says Louis Untermeyer. $1.75

THE VEIL and Other Poems
By Walter de la Mare

All who love true poetry will welcome this collection of some fifty poems fresh from Mr. de la Mare's pen. $2.00

MUSICAL JOURNEY TO THE COUNTRY OF THE PAST
By Romain Rolland

A sequel to *Musicians of Former Days.* M. Rolland here explores some delightful corners and byways of musical history. $2.00

Philosophy and Criticism

THE RATIONAL GOOD
By L. T. Hobhouse

Mr. Hobhouse in this new work treats the ethical problem from the standpoint of sociology, endeavoring to deduce the principles of a rational ethics. $2.00

THE POETRY OF DANTE
By Benedetto Croce

A masterly essay on Dante by "the foremost Italian thinker of our time"; a work that inspires real appreciation of the great poet. $2.00

HUMAN NATURE AND CONDUCT
By John Dewey

"An understanding of habit and of different kinds of habit is the key to social psychology" forms the thesis of Mr. Dewey's book. $2.25

19 West 44th St. HENRY HOLT & COMPANY New York City

Digitized by Google

Four Books that Will Delight Children



Girls of Highland Hall

By CARROL W. RANKIN

Miss Rankin's stories for girls are recognized as some of the finest now being written. So popular were the girls of *Dandelion Cottage* that the book has gone through over twenty printings, and the author has been constantly besieged with requests for further news of these buoyant youngsters. In this latest book she tells of their many lively experiences in boarding-school. ***Illustrated.*** **$1.75**



Many Trails

By H. MORTIMER BATTEN

Boys and girls as well as their parents will delight in these stories of wild animals and some domestic pets. Mr. Batten writes with a great sympathy for the outdoors, for he knows the trail and the ways of woodfolk, and understands the ever-changing drama in the life and habits of the denizens of forest and stream. Each animal character is a real personality.

With eleven beautiful illustrations. **$2.00**



When Lighthouses Are Dark

By ETHEL CLAIRE BRILL

A stirring tale of young folk thrown on their own resources among Northern woods and waters. Three boys and a girl, the sister of two of them, drift in a fog on to a Lake Superior island, where they are marooned for the winter. Their ingenuity, their adventures, and the makeshifts to which they are forced make absorbing reading. ***Illustrated.*** **$1.75**

HOW AND WHY STORIES

By J. C. BRANNER, *President Emeritus Leland Stanford*

"Why does the crawfish go backward, Daddy?" is not an easy question to answer. But you can give the child these imaginative, whimsical explanations taken from the South's treasure of negro folk-lore,—stories of why the owl stays up nights, how the cat came to have nine lives, etc. And there is one about the birds getting their colors from the first rainbow, that will surely become a children's classic. ***Illustrated.*** **$2.25**

19 WEST 44th ST. HENRY COMPANY NEW YORK CITY

Digitized by Google

The Only Baby In India!

You wouldn't think, in an Indian city swarming with people and knee-deep in babies, that one extra infant would count! Yet Taj and her husband, Fagal Alahi, thought that Heaven shone only for them when the American doctor at the hospital told them that they were going to have a child, after eighteen long years of waiting. The whole town was agog. When Taj's baby finally arrived she called it "The Gift of God."

In this Indian city where after nightfall the roofs are littered with sleeping babies — doorways filled with them — whitewashed rooms crowded with them — Fagal would keep his vigil all night beside this one extra youngster just "watching the baby breathe."

Here is an exquisite story, showing that no matter how many babies there are in the world, it is only your own that counts. Margaret Wilson, the author, lived in this very hospital in India where "The Gift of God" was born. In the December

ASIA

The American MAGAZINE on the Orient

More than 60 Illustrations—8 pages of Special Photographs

All the glorious countries of the East are brought to you vividly in the stories, articles and pictures published in this Magazine.

ARMS LIMITATION CONFERENCE

William Hard has gone to the root of possible trouble among Japan, the United States and the European Powers. It is the disorgan zation of finance in China.

And he has found a real solution. An American-Chinese bank has blazed the trail. Read William Hard's articles in ASIA.

A Christmas Gift That Will Distinguish Your Giving

When you are looking for a Christmas gift—new and unusual—that will give renewed pleasure, send a subscriptjon to ASIA. Special offer of fourteen months for the annual subscription price of $3.50.



Contents of December ASIA

THE RISE AND FALL OF YUAN SHIH-KAI *By Paul S. Reinsch*

The man who tried to be Emperor of China! Former Minister Reinsch continues his reminiscences of Chinese life and diplomacy as seen from the American Legation, in this article which gives a picture of the most remarkable Chinese of the last decade.

THE MELTING-POT IN JAVA *By John W. Prins*

Hollanders, Malays, Japanese, Chinese, Arabs and a sprinkling of Americans and Englishmen are reaping their fortunes in Java — the most beautiful island in the world. The Malays are the chauffeurs of Java and form a newly arisen class demanding utmost respect from their fellows. In his pride, a chauffeur often keeps a flunky, who rides along on the fender.

TRANSLATING CHINESE POETRY *By Witter Bynner*

Mr. Bynner, one of America's foremost poets, who has traveled and studied in China, gives us the very spirit of the old Chinese poets whom he has learned to love.

A BOY IN PERSIA *By Youel B. Mirza*

A story of Persian village life, as delicately woven as a Persian rug. The watchman, making his rounds, singing: "Everything is well, be not afraid." Grandfather Mirza — whose years were beyond computing. The Kurds who attacked the village. The blind singer who could sing for three consecutive days without repeating a single song. The Persian meadows, full of marigold!

SOMEBODY — NOTHING, *Translated by Michio Itow and Louis V. Ledoux*

Do you remember "The Lady or the Tiger"? If you are interested in baffling endings, you will be intrigued by this charming Japanese farce.

MY UNCLE TER-BARSEGH *By Armen Ohanian*

All Paris is talking of Armen Ohanian, the beautiful Armenian dancer who is making an artistic success this winter in the capitals of Europe. This Christmas story is a memory of her uncle, the patriarch of a little group of Christians in Zergueran, who tells his simple flock his naïve version of the story of Christ.

SPECIAL OFFER

Five Months for One Dollar

OPEN TO NEW READERS ONLY

ASIA is on sale at all news-stands at 35¢ per copy. If you do not know this magazine this is your opportunity to become friends. Send $1.00 with the coupon. We will mail you the next five issues for the special price of $1.00 — a small price for an exceptionally large dollar's worth. Mail the Coupon Now

ASIA PUBLISHING CO., 627 Lexington Ave., New York

Send the next five issues of ASIA, the American MAGAZINE on the Orient, beginning with the current number. I enclose $1.00

Name ..... Business or Profession .....

Address .....

Canada $1.20 Foreign $1.40

A.M. 12-21

Digitized by Google

Important DORAN BOOKS Publications

HERE, THERE AND EVERYWHERE
Lord Frederic Hamilton

More fascinating random recollections by that irresistible raconteur and polished gentleman of the world, author of "The Vanished Pomps of Yesterday" and "The Days Before Yesterday." "A charming gentleman to know. And know him you do after the first chapter," writes the New York *Times*. He turns from a many colored view of society in the gayest capitals of the world to a big-game hunt in India and tells it all with an exquisite appreciation of the ridiculous. **Octavo. $4.00**

CHIMNEYSMOKE — Christopher Morley

Lyrics for Households of Two or More. Fully illustrated in Color and Black and White by Thomas Fogarty. Here are all the prime favorites of his earlier books and numerous new poems that strike a deeper note of great beauty. The book makes an ideal gift for those who appreciate the meaning of "home." **$2.50**

MISCELLANIES: Literary and Historical — The Earl of Rosebery

Two volumes of high flavor to be read with leisurely gusto by those of discernment and appreciation; all lovers of good prose and the personalities behind the great names of the past. Two Volumes. Octavo. **$10.00**

MEXICO ON THE VERGE — E. J. Dillon

That the world should look toward Mexico to see the next step in the political development of states is the thesis of Dr. Dillon, expert in international affairs. **$3.00**

HERMAN MELVILLE: MARINER AND MYSTIC — Raymond M. Weaver

The biography of the most romantic figure in American literature, the author of "Moby Dick," "Typee," etc., whose work now stands among the classics. Illustrated. Octavo. **$3.50**

WHILE I REMEMBER: A Book of Reminiscences — Stephen McKenna

A review of the men, women and strange customs of that bygone age, 1890-1914, written by the brilliant young author of "Sonia," etc. Octavo. **$5.00**

A LOITERER IN PARIS
Helen W. Henderson

The author of "A Loiterer in New England" and "A Loiterer in New York" has that so rare ability to put into words the spirit of place. Illustrated. **$5.00**

THE SECRET OF THE SAHARA: KUFARA — Rosita Forbes

Introduction by Sir Harry Johnston. An extraordinary account of a remarkable modern exploring exploit, the penetration to the heart of the Libyan Desert by a woman. Photographs. **$5.00**

THE WANDERINGS OF A SPIRITUALIST — Sir Arthur Conan Doyle

Sir Arthur has just returned from a trip round the world during which he was enabled to sum up the spiritualistic experience of all and express his great hope for the future. Illustrated. **$2.50**

A PARODY OUTLINE OF HISTORY
Donald Ogden Stewart

H. G. Wells American Plan. The gentle art of parody is supremely developed by Mr. Stewart in these flashing take-offs on American authors. **$1.50**

MY OWN AFFAIRS
Princess Louise of Belgium

"Her book will be one of the literary sensations of the year."—Hayden Church. The princess has a fascinating personality and an inexhaustible fund of facts. Illustrated Octavo. **$4.00**

PEKING: A SOCIAL SURVEY
Sidney D. Gamble, M.A.

Life in the ancient capital of China in all its intricacy described from the social point of view; its Health, Education, Community Service, etc. By one of America's foremost philanthropists. Illustrated. **$6.00**

GEORGE H. DORAN COMPANY — *lishers* — New York

Digitized by Google

Important DORAN BOOKS Publications

TO HIM THAT HATH — Ralph Connor

A Novel of the West of Today

In a great sympathetic story Ralph Connor, author of "Black Rock," "The Sky Pilot," etc., presents his vision of the future of his people, that stalwart young nation in the Northwest, and prescribes a remedy for the aching and wounded heart of the world. A novel of strength, virile, true and constructive, but above all a throbbingly human story. $1.75

THE YOUNG ENCHANTED — Hugh Walpole

It is with a sigh of utter contentment that one steps into this story of enchantment, a romance of Youth in that strange year 1920 in that strange town London. Never before has the author of "Fortitude," "The Green Mirror," etc., so imprisoned Youth's clear-eyed gaze and joyous acceptance of the whole of life. A book to live in and remember. $2.00

COQUETTE — Frank Swinnerton

"The same force, thrill and passion which made 'Nocturne' a great achievement."—New York Times. Now in its Fifth Printing. $1.90

ANGELICA — Elisabeth Sanxay Holding

An unusual romance of New York and of Angelica, daughter of a janitress, who knew what she wanted from life and demanded it. $1.90

I HAVE ONLY MYSELF TO BLAME — Elizabeth Bibesco

Finely cut short stories transfixing the many strands of the emotions. By the daughter of Margot Asquith. $2.00

THE THIRTEEN TRAVELLERS — Hugh Walpole

"His sympathy with human nature is based on understanding; he touches your emotions at the same time that he interests your mind. He has warmth, quality, life."—New York *Times*. $2.00

THREE SOLDIERS — John Dos Passos

"The frankest, most outspoken book that has been written since Christopher Columbus left home."—Harry Hansen, Chicago *Daily News*. $2.00

THE PILGRIM OF A SMILE — Norman Davey

"It is so good humoredly ironic it reminds us of the best of the French. It would have been a credit to Boccaccio in his prime."—Chicago News. $2.00

MORE TISH — Mary Roberts Rinehart

The Further Adventures of Tish, Aggie and Lizzie. The three elderly spinsters who have become so well known for their humorous vicissitudes. $1.75

ROSE AND ROSE — E. V. Lucas

An entirely delightful mixture of worldly wisdom and whimsical naïveté, by one of the most charming of famous modern writers. $1.90

LOVERS AND FRIENDS — E. F. Benson

A book of witty dialogue which hides beneath its surface charm a penetrating study of the quality of the modern girl's live, by the author of "Dodo Wonders—," "Queen Lucia," etc. $1.90

THE HERITAGE — Viola Brothers Shore

Short stories with a new and attractive tang, America served up for Americans in a new way. $1.75

WEST BROADWAY — Nina Wilcox Putman

Miss La Tour, the famous movie actress, discovers these United States and a good many things about them. By the author of "It Pays to Smile." $1.75

THE WHITE RIBAND: Or a Young Female's Folly — F. Tennyson Jesse

An exquisitely simple pastoral, a ballet in words, of a little cottage girl, by the author of "The Happy Bride," "The Milky Way," etc. $1.50

GEORGE H. DORAN COMPANY *Publishers* New York

Digitized by Google

Edwin Austin Abbey, R.A.

The Record of His Life and Work

By E. V. LUCAS

A beautiful and adequate memorial to one of the greatest American artists. Apart from its biographical value, this book has great artistic importance. *With more than 160 illustrations. About* $25.00

My Life Here and There

By PRINCESS CANTACUZÈNE, *née* JULIA DENT GRANT

The personal reminiscences of General U. S. Grant of his only granddaughter; diplomatic life in Vienna, Washington and New York society during a brilliant period; marriage to Prince Cantacuzène and life in Russia—these are among the most important of contemporary memoirs. *Illustrated.* $3.00

Memories & Notes of Persons & Places

By SIR SIDNEY COLVIN

This is a book of reminiscences by Stevenson's close friend and editor that deals most intimately with R. L. S. and other personalities, among them George Meredith, Henry James, Swinburne, and Edward Fitzgerald. $3.50

The Sense of Humor

By MAX EASTMAN

An original and complete theory of the causes of laughter and the nature and function of humor, based on an analysis ranging from Aristophanes to Charlie Chaplin. $2.00

Variations

By JAMES HUNEKER

A posthumous gift to American literature from one who died at the very height of his career as a critic of the arts. These essays cover a wide range. $2.50

Westward Hoboes

By WINIFRED HAWKRIDGE DIXON

The true story of the wandering of two Boston girls in an automobile through more than ten thousand miles of thrills, mishaps, humor and adventure. A whimsical quality and the vivid coloring of its impressions place it in the front rank of American books of travel. You'll have to read it eventually—some nature-loving or fun-loving or motoring friend will insist. *With 64 of the finest Western photographs ever taken.* $4.00





TO LET

By JOHN GALSWORTHY

"Its level outlook on life, its poignant tragedy of youth and love, its bitterness of thwarted age, its flashes of beauty, and, above all, its great and sympathetic understanding of humanity mark the genius of its author and make it the outstanding novel of the year."—*London Times.* $2.00

Six Short Plays

By JOHN GALSWORTHY

Included in this volume are:
The First and the Last—The Little Man—Hall-Marked—Defeat—The Sun—Punch and Go. $1.25

Chance Encounters

By MAXWELL STRUTHERS BURT

Winner of the O. Henry Prize for the best short story of 1920

This collection of short stories includes the prize-winning story, "Each in His Generation," together with others hardly less notable. $1.75

Vignettes of Manhattan

Outlines in Local Color

By BRANDER MATTHEWS

The two volumes of short stories published by Mr. Matthews in the early nineties under the above title and subtitle respectively are here combined in one. These stories present a vivid picture of the metropolis of an older generation. *With the original illustrations.* $2.00

Gods

By SHAW DESMOND

This colorful love story affords a kaleidoscopic view of modern life, which reveals the conflict of the gods Power, Beauty, Love, etc. $2.00

The Flutter of the Gold Leaf and Other Plays

By OLIVE TILFORD DARGAN AND FREDERICK PETERSON

A notable poet and a leading psychiatrist here are associated in the authorship of four exceptional plays, each contributing one and collaborating in two others. $2.00

Where the Strange Trails Go Down

By E. ALEXANDER POWELL

"Adventuring after adventure" in the tropics, Mr. Powell found a new world of mystery and color in the remote regions of the islands of the Malay Archipelago. *Illustrated.* $2.50

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK

Digitized by Google

A book is one of the few gifts that can be selected at home. Spare yourself the wear of Christmas shopping by giving books, the gift that really counts.
Write for our Christmas circular.

BRENTANO BOOKS

To facilitate your selection of books for gifts we have prepared an illustrated folder describing the volumes best suited to the season's needs.
Write for our Christmas circular.

THE POISONER

By Gerald Cumberland

Author of "Set Down in Malice," "Tales of a Cruel Country."

Cursed with an insidious craving for drink, yet uplifted by his love for music and the trust of a good woman, Martin Stavart struggles mightily against temptation — and wins! $2.00



THE WISDOM of THE HINDUS WISDOM of THE CHINESE

By Brian Brown

The author has delved into the literature, the philosophy and the religion of the East and presents the teachings of the great sages and the essence of their famous books. Each, $2.50
Boxed complete, $5.00

NAPOLEON THE FIRST

An Intimate Biography

NAPOLEON THE THIRD

The Romance of an Emperor

By Walter Geer

Vivid and delightful biographies by an authority on the Napoleonic Era. Illustrated.
Each volume. $5.00

TEN ONE-ACT PLAYS

By Alice Gerstenberg $2.00

FOUR ONE-ACT PLAYS

By Lewis Beach $1.25

The perfect gift for anyone interested in the shorter drama.

GREAT SEA STORIES

Edited by J. L. French

An anthology of the vast and varied literature of the sea, including classic and popular tales from such men as Marryat, Charles Reade, Victor Hugo, Cooper, Herman Melville, Pierre Loti, Jack London and John Masefield. Cloth, $2.00

ROYAL ROMANCES AND TRAGEDIES

Adventures and Misadventures of Royalty

By Charles Kingston $4.50

BACK TO METHUSELAH

By Bernard Shaw

A mighty drama of creative evolution. $2.25

DUST

By Mr. and Mrs. Haldeman-Julius

One of the strongest chapters in the epic of the West that our younger writers are creating. $1.75

THE WISHING FAIRY'S ANIMAL FRIENDS



By Corinne Ingraham

Delightful fantasies of the animal world, sure to fascinate a child as well as the grown-up who is so fortunate as to be chosen Chief Reader and Turner of Pages. Eight beautiful full-color illustrations and many black-and-white drawings by Dugald Stuart Walker. Four volumes at $1.00 each and one large volume at $2.50.

A MENDER OF IMAGES

By Norma Lorimer

A charming romance of sunny Sicily by the author of "There Was a King in Egypt." $2.00

BAHAI

The Spirit of the Age

By Horace Holley

The tenets of Bahaism, "the long-awaited world religion" are here for the first time offered to the general reader. $2.50



AT ALL BOOKSTORES

Publishers **BRENTANO'S** **New York**

Digitized by Google

A Selection of

CHRISTMAS SUGGESTIONS

Mysterious Japan
By Julian Street

Let him poke his fun where he may, there is only one Japan and only one Julian Street to visit it. His Nippon impressions are just as delightfully written as were his impressions of his own land in "Abroad at Home," and this newest travel adventure of his has additionally the touch of strange, exotic beauty that the Flowery Kingdom inevitably must have brought to Mr. Street's chapters. It is not political, not "with a purpose," not too critical; it is just what Julian Street has to say about Japan. $4.00

Potomac Landings
By Paul Wilstach

The river whose north bank bears our national capital, has a fascinating story fittingly equal in romance and glamor to its high destiny. It was the home of some of the nation's greatest men, the seat of some of the finest American families, and the centre of a culture that made it known as "the Athens of America." $5.00

The Beggar's Opera
By John Gay

Illustrated by C. Lovat Fraser

A revival of "The Beggar's Opera" in London, by direction of Mr. C. Lovat Fraser, renewed attention in America to its sensitive mood of the satirical. Contains preface and color plates by Mr. Fraser; and "Musick to each Song."

De luxe edition, autographed by the artist $10.00

Regular edition, $3.50

The Cruise of the Dream Ship
By Ralph Stock

Ralph Stock bubbles with mirth all the way from Devon to the South Sea Islands, in his second-hand cutter, throughout an amazing voyage half way around the world. He, his sister "Peter," and his friend Steve, catch the spirit of quaint ports, ocean reaches, and exotic atmospheres; their cruise has been made memorable not only as an alluring sea voyage, but also as a literary event. This book is being recommended by literary critics everywhere as a bright jewel among the things that have been written on "hobo marine" adventures. Besides, it is a handsome book to own. $4.00

The Uncollected Poetry and Prose of Walt Whitman
Edited by

Emory Holloway

Although the "authorization" of this work by the late Thomas B. Harned, the last of Walt Whitman's literary executors, was neither sought nor desired, it is significant that the man who generously furnished to the editor much of the material for this work, and whose relations to the poet make him, perhaps, more competent than any other to estimate its value, wrote to the publishers shortly before his death: "The immensity and the importance of the work excite my admiration and enthusiastic endorsement."

2 volumes. $7.50



Doubleday,

GARDEN CITY,

Digitized by Google

Books for Gifts

FROM RECENT PUBLICATIONS

Fifty Years a Journalist

By Melville E. Stone

Mr. Stone, who formerly was manager of the Associated Press, has been in intimate contact with every great national event that has occurred since the Civil War. He was a correspondent in Washington when the great Civil War characters were still on the stage. In Paris during the making of the Treaty of Versailles, Mr. Stone was in constant touch with most of the dominant personalities.
$5.00

The Drama of the Forests

By Arthur Heming

For a score or more of years Mr. Heming has studied and lived in the Northwoods. What he saw, with the observant and watchful and beauty-fixing eye of the painter, he has put down with brush and pen in ways that gives us the forest in all its grandeur. Its life he brings to us, vividly with words, and in paintings now owned by the Royal Ontario Museum.
Fourteen color illustrations, $5.00

Comus

By John Milton

Mr. Rackham has illustrated many classics, including "Aesop's Fables," "Undine," "A Midsummer Night's Dream," etc. His pictures for "Comus" represent him at his best.
Limited and authographed edition, $15.00
Regular edition, $5.00

Silhouettes of My Contemporaries

By Lyman Abbott

Lyman Abbott believes that outstanding personalities — makers of history — have some salient characteristic that can be brought home to the reader just as effectively through a brief sketch as a long biography. The most striking and lasting impressions of his eighty years' association with great men are here given.
$3.00

Old Inns

Illustrated by Cecil Aldin

"Memories of the road, of long, low, homely-looking inns — all bustle and excitement as the coach pulled up — of cheery coachmen and musical guards, of buxom landladies, and the welcome of the inn itself." The book is replete with Cecil Aldin's drawings in color and in black and white.
Limited and autographed edition, $15.00
Regular edition, $7.50

The Dauphin

(King Louis XVII)

By G. Lenôtre

One of the greatest mysteries of history is the disappearance of the little dauphin son of the ill-fated Louis XVI and Marie Antoinette. George Lenôtre, the greatest living authority on the revolutionary period, has prepared an eloquent treatment of it.
$3.00

Page & Co.

NEW YORK

THESE GIFT BOOKS MAY BE BOUGHT AT ANY BOOKSHOP, OR DIRECT FROM THE PUBLISHERS

Digitized by Google



LITTLE, BROWN & COMPANY'S
Leading Fall Publications



IF WINTER COMES

By A. S. M. HUTCHINSON

"'If Winter Comes' is not only a thrilling tale, it is an important work of art. . . . I do not know when I have had more continuous enjoyment in reading a new book. . . . 'If Winter Comes' is one of the best books of our times." — *William Lyon Phelps* in *The New York Times.*

"'If Winter Comes' is more than a mere novel, it is an epic poem of very great beauty. It will last long after most other literary products of this age have gone to an obscure and unlamented grave." — *Robert E. Sherwood* in *Life, New York.*

[Mr. Hutchinson has taken his title from Shelley's line "O Wind, if Winter comes, can Spring be far behind?" written 102 years ago.]

"'If Winter Comes' is a novel which may well live as long as the poem has lived. It is an artist's book — its structure as close and exquisite as a flower, its humor pervasive, its character studies keen and varied, its personal note spicy and fresh, and, best of all, its dealing with the great fundamentals of life and death, of God and the soul, courageous, poignant, intuitive and nobly Christian." — *Heloise E. Hersey* in the *Atlantic Monthly, Boston.*

Twelve printings in twelve weeks — 122nd thousand. $2.00

THE WASTED GENERATION — *By OWEN JOHNSON*

"'The Wasted Generation' is decidedly Mr. Johnson's best novel. It has the unusual merit that it is a book that will attract men without losing the interest of women. 'The Wasted Generation' takes a very high rank among the novels of the year." — *Maurice Francis Egan* in *The New York Tribune.*

"Because Owen Johnson has written 'The Wasted Generation' we have become more confident than ever that American novelists are striking out into paths that will lead to a great National literature. . . . We bespeak for 'The Wasted Generation' a wide audience."—*Harry Hansen* in *The Chicago Daily News.*

Second large printing. $2.00

MARTIN CONISBY'S VENGEANCE — *By JEFFERY FARNOL*

A romance of the high seas in the pirate days of the Spanish Main, in which some of the characters in "Black Bartlemy's Treasure" reappear. If the latter book found a place in your heart, you will revel in "Martin Conisby's Vengeance." $2.00

THE FOG — *By WILLIAM DUDLEY PELLEY*

This story of Nathan Forge and other real people, good and bad, in a small town in New England has romance, laughter, pathos and tragedy. *The New York Herald* says: "The story swings along with all the smoothness and movement of actual biography." Second printing. $2.00

TROUBLE-THE-HOUSE — *By KATE JORDAN*

The entertaining exploits of Susy Gilvarry, a girl "Penrod," who keeps her family on the *qui vive.* Susy is a constant surprise and delight. $1.90

ROOSEVELT: THE HAPPY WARRIOR — *By BRADLEY GILMAN*

This biography, by a Harvard classmate of Roosevelt, is full of illuminating, fascinating anecdotes and memories and will be welcomed by the hosts of admirers of our nation's great leader. $3.50

REPRESENTATIVE ONE-ACT PLAYS BY BRITISH AND IRISH AUTHORS — *Selected, with Biographical Notes, by BARRETT H. CLARK*

Twenty one-act plays which represent the work of leading British and Irish dramatists of recent years. Among these authors are Arthur Pinero, Henry Arthur Jones, Oscar Wilde, Alfred Sutro, Arnold Bennett, Granville Barker, Yeats, Lady Gregory, and Lord Dunsany. $3.00

THE FOUNDATIONS OF PERSONALITY

By ABRAHAM MYERSON, M.D.

Dr. Myerson analyzes the fundamentals of character, — what comprise it; what are the relationships between mind and character, and brain and body; how character is influenced and how it expresses itself in work and play, in sex and religion. $2.25

Send for Our Complete Fall Announcement

LITTLE, BROWN & COMPANY · Publishers · BOSTON

Digitized by Google

New Crowell Books

Masterful Personality
By ORISON SWETT MARDEN
How one can cultivate a dominant personality of the right type.
Net $2.00

The Rubaiyat Complete Edition
All of the versions of Fitzgerald, with variants in special type. Four illustrations in color.
Cloth, Net $2.50
Inlay style, Net $2.50
Leather, Net $5.00

Opera Synopses
By J. WALKER MCSPADDEN
The plots of over 140 operas. With 16 illustrations and index.
Cloth, Net $3.00
Leather, Net $5.00

The Tree of Light
By JAMES A. B. SCHERER
The early British tale of the Christmas tree. Illustrations by Craig.
Net $1.35

New Crowell Juveniles

Work-A-Day Heroes
By CHELSEA C. FRASER
Full of thrillers that are true. With 8 illustrations.
Net $1.60

Stories of American Inventions
By INEZ N. MCFEE
A book that will cause a patriotic thrill. With 8 illustrations.
Net $1.60

Tiss, A Little Alpine Waif
By JOHANNA SPYRI
A story of child life in the Alps. Frontispiece in color.
Net 90c

Secrets of the Earth
By CHELSEA C. FRASER
A popular story of the wonders of geology. With 8 illustrations.
Net $1.60

Famous Dogs in Fiction
Edited by J. WALKER MCSPADDEN
A unique collection of famous tales. With 7 illustrations.
Net $1.60

Welsh Fairy Tales
By WILLIAM E. GRIFFIS
A brand new book of stories. With 4 illustrations in color.
Net $1.60

Order from your bookseller. Postage extra on mail orders

THOMAS Y. CROWELL CO. · ***Publishers*** · NEW YORK

Digitized by Google

Sumptuous Books of Travel

By GEORGE WHARTON EDWARDS

About forty full-page illustrations by the author in color, monotone, and pen and ink. Boxed, price each $7.50 net

These five remarkable books by Mr. Edwards are not only important as historical records, but will be highly prized by all travelers, art lovers, and collectors. Each volume is printed on paper made especially for it, is richly bound, and enclosed in a handsome box. The size of the volumes is eight by eleven inches.



ALSACE-LORRAINE

Mr. Edwards shows distinctly, that in spite of nearly fifty years of German dominion, Alsace-Lorraine is still French. The fruitful land in sunshine and shadow, its vineyards and harvests, its courts and châteaux, and the mossy ruins of its ancient castles are all subjects of delightful drawings.

BELGIUM OLD AND NEW

An original post-war story of the Martyr Kingdom, of its people, history, art, industry, customs, and characteristics. The description of political differences is clear and free from restraint. Many of Belgium's oldest buildings are beautifully pictured. Mr. Edwards lived in Belgium a number of years, and because of that experience is able to show us Belgian life from the Belgian point of view.

HOLLAND OF TODAY

An interesting description of the sturdy little kingdom of The Netherlands by one who knows the country socially and politically. One of its interesting features is a description of "The Johanniters," a secret order which is responsible for the refuge given to William Hohenzollern. One of the interesting color illustrations in the book is that of Amerongen Castle.

VANISHED HALLS AND CATHEDRALS OF FRANCE

A vivid description of Picardy and other parts of Northern France before the German invasion. The great thirteenth-century tower of Senlis, old St. Pierre of Noyon, Gèrbéviller's historic hall, the mighty round keep of Coucy-le-Château, the sculptured splendor of Rheims — all these have been consumed, but all are pictured here.

VANISHED TOWERS AND CHIMES OF FLANDERS

A book which will serve to recall those ancient sights of Flanders which are now mere heaps of stone. Unhappy Louvain, Ypres — ground to a bitterly contested dust-heap — Arras, Commines, and many another old Belgian town appear in the pages. The color picture of The Cloth Hall at Ypres is remarkable in its conception.

AT ALL BOOKSTORES

THE PENN PUBLISHING COMPANY

926 FILBERT STREET · PHILADELPHIA

The Delightful Books of Robert Shackleton



BOOKS OF THE CITIES

Illustrated from photographs by the author and with pen-and-ink sketches

Mr. Shackleton, in his Books of the Cities, shows us each one; its history, characteristics, industries, literary traditions, landmarks, and its people. Nothing is too small for him to chronicle; their habits of speech, their eating, their ancestor worship. In each city he manages to discover many odd corners not found by the usual sight-seer. His is a charmingly intimate description, with a sympathetic, clear-eyed, often humorous interpretation of the city in each case.

THE BOOK OF CHICAGO — **THE BOOK OF BOSTON**
THE BOOK OF NEW YORK — **THE BOOK OF PHILADELPHIA**

Cloth, each $3.50 net. Half-Morocco, each $10.00 net

BOOKS OF TRAVEL

TOURING GREAT BRITAIN

Rarely have England and Scotland been seen as Mr. Shackleton saw them. He finds interesting things off the beaten track — Lloyd George's birthplace; Benjamin Franklin's house in Twyford, and Shrewsbury's pulpit in a coal yard, are only the beginning of them. The book is invaluable for any traveler in Great Britain, but its delights are for anyone who opens it.

UNVISITED PLACES OF OLD EUROPE

The old Europe is passing. No one knows what may be the ultimate result of the Great War. Attention has been focused upon many a corner yesterday almost unknown. Out of the way corners of Old Europe — Luxembourg, Forest of Arden, little Neutral Moresnet, Brenta, and many other unique places are described.

Cloth, each $4.00 net. Half-Morocco, each $12.00 net



BOOKS OF THE ANTIQUE

By Robert and Elizabeth Shackleton

These volumes are full of the charm to be found in the pursuit of the antique. There is always the zest of the hunter, as with them one follows the trail of the desired Chippendale chair or period piece, or runs down some rare old claw-foot secretary or sideboard, or gathers from shadowy garrets their treasure of copper lustre.

THE QUEST OF THE COLONIAL

This book tells what to buy, where to buy it, and how to restore infirm pieces to strength and a state of usefulness. Every seeker after the Colonial should read this book and keep it as an infallible guide. Profusely illustrated from photographs.

THE CHARM OF THE ANTIQUE

One need not visit Europe for old things to admire. That the pursuit of the antique near home may be made fascinating, is clearly set forth in this beautiful volume of Mr. and Mrs. Shackleton's. The volume gives many practical hints to the collector and pictures scores of interesting and valuable pieces. Richly illustrated with photographs.

Cloth, each $4.00 net. Half-Morocco, each $12.00 net

AT ALL BOOKSTORES

THE PENN PUBLISHING COMPANY

926 *FILBERT STREET · PHILADELPHIA*

Digitized by Google

Give Art Books for Christmas



Fireplace by Rossellano

INTERIORS and FURNITURE
OF THE
ITALIAN RENAISSANCE

By
Frieda Schottmuller

This exquisite volume, so entirely suited to gift purposes with its 588 beautiful half-tone illustrations, delightfully portrays the interiors and furniture of the Italian Renaissance. A book sure to be permanently prized by artist, interior decorator, collector, and all who are seeking to achieve atmosphere in the home or who merely love beauty for beauty's sake. A unique book, unsurpassed in its class. Quarto. $10.00

DOCUMENTS OF ART

This series of superlatively beautiful volumes accurately reproduces the priceless treasures of the Louvre Museum of Industrial Art. The volumes now on hand are:

French Furniture, Louis XIV and XV	*$6.75*
French Furniture, Louis XVI	*$6.75*
Chairs by the Jacobs Brothers (Directory and Consulate Periods)	*$6.75*
Beauvais Tapestries	*$10.50*
Alhambra of Granada (Outside the Series)	*$6.00*



Louis XVI Writing Desk

Any one of these volumes will make a gift sure to be retained for years as a prized addition to even the most complete and well-appointed library.

At all bookstores. If ordering by mail from the publishers please add 5% for postage

CLASSICS IN ART

New editions of this justly famous series with many additional illustrations.

The volumes contain from 200 to 500 illustrations from the work of the artist in question. Incomparable in beauty and worth.

Correggio	$5.00
Donatello	6.00
Fra Angelico	6.00
Murillo	6.00
Raffael	6.00
Titian	6.00
Holbein	6.00
Velasquez	6.00
Durer	9.00
Rembrandt	10.00
Michelangelo	5.00
Rubens	10.00

THE ARCHITECTURE AND INDUSTRIAL ARTS OF SPAIN

By August L. Mayer

A complete discussion accompanied by 310 most unusual illustrations. There is explanatory text with each picture besides the scholarly foreword and introduction by the author. $7.50

Publishers **BRENTANO'S** **New York**

Digitized by Google

Give Harper Books for Christmas

Lost Valley

By Katharine Fullerton Gerould

This first novel by the writer of the most powerful short stories of our generation, *Vain Oblations*, *The Great Tradition*, etc. is Mrs. Gerould's highwater mark in brilliant writing. $2.00

Ursula Trent

By W. L. George

If you heard this noted feminist lecture or have read his novels you know how well equipped he is to write this intimate and much discussed story of the modern woman. $2.00

Cobweb

By George Agnew Chamberlain

The Brooklyn *Eagle:* "A hauntingly beautiful love story."

The N. Y. *Tribune:* "A work of fine purpose, richly mingled wit and wisdom, general excellence both of conception and craftsmanship." $2.00

Rich Relatives

By Compton Mackenzie

This story of how Jasmine Grant, eighteen and an orphan, was "given a home" by four families of rich relatives gives full play to the subtle satire and rare humor of the author of *Poor Relations*. $2.00

The Empty Sack

By Basil King

The new powerful novel by the author of *The Inner Shrine* is the story of how a man's unshakable faith brings a woman safely through a great crisis to a profound love. Illustrated. $2.00

Broken to the Plow

By Charles Caldwell Dobie

How an under-dog becomes top-dog through the courage born of the demand of a supreme moment. N. Y. *Times:* "Establishes beyond question his ability to write a gripping narrative." $2.00

Mrs. Farrell

By William Dean Howells

The Howells novel just published. The Chicago *Tribune:* "In no sense does it 'date' — any more than does Jane Austen 'date.' . . . The old master, then young, never did anything more delicate, more dazzling." $2.00

More that Must Be Told

By Philip Gibbs

Not a "war book." The same kind of revealing account of present day conditions in Europe that Sir Philip Gibbs gave of the War in his famous *Now It Can Be Told.* $2.50

The Mind in the Making

By James Harvey Robinson

In this book the well-known historian offers you a "measuring stick" with which you can find out for yourself whether your ideas are ahead of the times or centuries behind them. $2.00

Faery Lands of the South Seas

By James Norman Hall and Charles Bernard Nordhoff

For two years the authors lived the native life, meeting natives and exotic white men in all sorts of amazing experiences. Theirs is probably the most penetrating and delightful South Sea book. Illustrated. $4.00

Oh, Shoot!

By Rex Beach

This humorist's account of his hunting trip with Fred Stone. N. Y. *Herald:* "An absorbing, humorous chronicle, as full of thrilling incident as the most virile and restless could wish." 63 illustrations. $3.00

In One Man's Life

By Albert Bigelow Paine

The "great American biographer's" account of Theodore N. Vail who, from the infant telephone, developed the stupendous telephone system as it operates to-day. Illustrated. $3.00

The Car that Went Abroad

By Albert Bigelow Paine

The Boston *Herald:* "A travel book of quite a different sort."

The N. Y. *Tribune:* "Wondrous scenes through eyes as discerning and appreciative as any can hope to be." Eight illustrations in tint. $3.00

History of Art

By Elie Faure

Vol. 1 Ancient Art (*Now ready*). *Translated from the French.*

One of the ten books recommended to America by the Comité France-Amérique. About 200 illustrations, selected by the author. $6.00

HARPER & BROTHERS *Established 1817* **Franklin Square, New York**

Digitized by Google

PRINCETON UNIVERSITY PRESS

The Religion of Plato

By **Paul Elmer More** $2.50

Greek literature contains a realization of an immaterial life, which was felt by the Greek soul and wrought into the texture of the Greek language. This "Greek Tradition" lies behind all our western philosophy and religion. Without it, Mr. More believes, we should have remained barbarians; *losing* it, we are in peril of sinking back into barbarism.

The need of the modern world becomes daily more urgent to make a return to the purer source of our spiritual life. This means a return to early Christianity and back of Christianity, the "Greek Tradition" in thought, literature, and religion, embodied in purest form in the philosophy of Plato.

The Defective, Delinquent and Insane:

The Relation of Focal Infections to their Causation, Treatment and Prevention

By **Dr. Henry A. Cotton,** *Medical Director, New Jersey State Hospital at Trenton. Foreword by* **Dr. Adolf Meyer.** *Illustrated.* $3.00

The evaluation of focal infections is the outstanding contribution of the twentieth century to medicine. Dr. Cotton is among the foremost of those who are applying the knowledge of these insidious dangers to the treatment and prevention of insanity. In this volume he has stated the case so that layman and physician alike can read with understanding and profit. Records of actual cases treated add much to the interest of the book.

The First Crusade

Translated from the accounts of eyewitnesses by **August Charles Krey,** *Professor of History in the University of Minnesota.*

Maps and Notes. $3.00

More than eight hundred years have passed since Christian Europe first roused itself to arms to wrest the Holy Land from the grip of the Infidel. The story of the First Crusade — the most successful of all — as related by those who witnessed it and participated in it, is now made available for the English reader for the first time.



The Palatine Miniature

Pots and Pans:

Studies in Still-Life Painting

By **Arthur Edwin Bye**

93 Illustrations. $6.00

While countless volumes have been published dealing with art, none is known which discusses still-life painting either historically or aesthetically. Dr. Bye's aim has been to remedy this lack. In this volume he writes with rare simplicity and charm of the artistic possibilities of pots and pans, fruit, flowers, game, and the use made of them by painters old and modern.

The Princeton Monographs in Art and Archaeology

Benedetto and Santi Buglioni

By **Allan Marquand,** *Professor of Art and Archaeology in Princeton University. Illustrated.* $8.00

The works of Benedetto and Santi Buglioni in glazed terra-cotta are frequently confused with those of the Della Robbias. In this volume Professor Marquand presents, by the aid of documents and photographic reproductions, a full picture of the life and works of these two sculptors.

The Portraits of Dante

By **Frank Jewett Mather, Jr.,** *Professor of Art and Archaeology in Princeton University. Illustrated.* $3.50

Professor Mather, by the scrupulous use of the measurements of Dante's skull and their graphic application to the problem of the portraits seems to have put beyond dispute the fact that the Palatine Miniature is the most authentic likeness.

Write for Our Complete Catalogue

PRINCETON UNIVERSITY PRESS

PRINCETON, N. J.

Digitized by Google

The Best Christmas Books

THE PLAYS OF EDMOND ROSTAND

Translated by Henderson Daingerfield Norman
With eight full-page illustrations by Ivan Glidden

Exquisite translations of Rostand's famous plays by one who has preserved the shimmer and vivacity of the French. Two beautiful volumes which will delight all who love good drama. 2 vols., $10.50

FOUR PLAYS FOR DANCERS

By William Butler Yeats

Four haunting Celtic dramas designed for presentation with masks and music. Illustrated by Edmond Dulac, music by Edmond Dulac and Walter Morse Rummel. $2.00

COLLECTED POEMS

By Edwin Arlington Robinson

All who respond to the depth, the fine edge and polish of Mr. Robinson's poetry will welcome this complete collection of his poems. $3.50

KING COLE *By* John Masefield

Illustrated by his daughter, Judith Masefield

A beautiful drama of old England in which King Cole personifies humanity's undying quest for the ideal. Illustrated. $1.50

REYNARD THE FOX

By John Masefield

A charming new edition, illustrated with 12 full-page plates in black and white, and 4 color plates by G. D. Armour. Also numerous illustrations by Carton Moorepark. $5.00

THE OPEN SEA *By* Edgar Lee Masters

Gripping new poems in Masters' pungent, rugged verse, on themes of current and historical interest. $3.50

OUR HAWAII: ISLANDS AND ISLANDERS *By* Charmian K. London

New edition with new material by Jack London

A fascinating picture of present-day Hawaii, a book of enchantment both for the tourist and the shut-in. Illustrated. $3.00

THE FRIENDLY ARCTIC

By Vilhjalmur Stefansson

A magnificent book by one who can say the last word on Arctic exploration, who by his daring experiments has familiarized us with the Arctic circle and robbed it of its terrors. A thrilling tale of the "lost expedition" and the way in which unheard-of difficulties were surmounted. Profusely illustrated. $6.00

Holiday Fiction

May Sinclair's New Novel

MR. WADDINGTON OF WYCK

"A delightful bit of work. It is a smooth, quick, amicable style with comedy rippling under it. It is witty and intelligent. Such a comedy deserves a wide public."— Francis Hackett in the *New Republic*. $2.00

BEGGARS' GOLD *By* Ernest Poole

The story of two idealistic young people who dream of China, and their discovery of the warm riches of humanity to supersede their dreams. $2.00

"ONE" *By* Sarah McConnell

Youthful married life in New York City, a modern social setting, and the clash and counter-clash of two brilliant young people. $2.00

THE MARRIOTTS AND THE POWELLS *By* Isabella Holt

The zest of American family life, its spice, its exhilaration are exemplified in this group of hot-headed young cousins. $2.00

THE TOWER OF OBLIVION

By Oliver Onions

A man who grows young instead of old, a man with an amazing love-history, whose story startles and mystifies to the last astounding chapter. $2.00

EUDOCIA *By* Eden Phillpotts

A romance of Byzantium centering around the Empress Eudocia, with all the color, warmth, and beauty of that ancient civilization. $2.00

ROADS GOING SOUTH

By Robert L. Duffus

"The stlye is indeed excellent. There is a richness about it remindful of Edith Wharton. High praise for a young writer!" — *Philadelphia Public Ledger*. $2.00

A DAUGHTER OF THE MIDDLE BORDER

By Hamlin Garland

This new book is a continuation of that intimate social history of Midland America which Hamlin Garland started in A Son of the Middle Border. The cosmopolitan life of the author, his home in West Salem, his literary experiences in Chicago, Washington and London, his love-story, all make up an autobiographic record of deep social significance. Illustrated. $2.00

A Matchless Gift

THE OUTLINE OF HISTORY

In One Volume

By H. G. Wells

Here in one splendid, compact volume we have the whole gorgeous and terrible history of our kind from the first quiver of life in the primal slime to the complicated maze of present-day civilization. Truly a great, influential, civilizing book! "The sort of history every man should have as a possession in his mind." $5.00 net. Also in 2 volumes, $10.50 per set

At all bookstores or from

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY, 64-66 Fifth Avenue, New York

Digitized by Google

OXFORD BOOKS

Serene Friends on your Bookshelf

BOOKS GENTLE AND QUIETING, *books noble and inspiring, books which help us to forget the idle chatter going on everywhere about us. They do as Gissing said, "leave a perfume in the memory." Among Oxford books are many such.*

THE EVOLUTION OF WORLD PEACE
By F. S. MARVIN — *Net* $4.75
A dozen essays of the greatest interest by such authors as C. R. Beazley, G. P. Gooch, H. G. Wells and others.

LATER ESSAYS, 1917-1920
By AUSTIN DOBSON — *Net* $3.25
Seven deftly stippled miniatures of 18th century characters, precise in their scholarship but never pedantic.

TO DAY AND YESTERDAY: Sonnets and other Verses
By WILLIAM DUDLEY FOULKE — $2.70
Mr. Foulke has the artist's touch for smoothness of rhythm and the scholar's appreciation of variations in phrasing.

THE NORSE DISCOVERERS OF AMERICA
By G. M. GATHORNE-HARDY — $4.75
A translation and study of the story the Wineland Sagas tell of the early Norse voyages to America.

THE MORAL AND SOCIAL SIGNIFICANCE OF THE CONCEPTION OF PERSONALITY
By ARTHUR GEORGE HEATH — *Net* $3.75
A book of real philosophical importance.

DANTE
By HÉLOISE DURANT ROSE — *Net* $2.00
"As an introduction to the study of Dante I would urgently suggest a perusal of Mrs. Rose's dramatic poem. It gives me more of the atmosphere of Florence than any academic introduction with which I am acquainted."—*Walter Littlefield.*

THE THIRTEEN PRINCIPAL UPANISHADS
By ROBERT ERNEST HUME — $6.75
A new and notable translation of these ancient texts which are to the Brahman what the New Testament is to the Christian.

THE AGAMEMNON OF AESCHYLUS
Translated by GILBERT MURRAY — $1.25
None has been more successful in translating the great Greek tragedies than Professor Murray, and readers may look forward to the same pleasure in the *Agamemnon* that they found in his versions of Euripides.

THE WORLD OF TO-DAY
Edited by VICTOR GOLLANCZ
Each volume, net $1.00
Up-to-date information, presented in a concise and simple form, which will enable the reader to understand the problems and events which are the subject matter of current discussion.

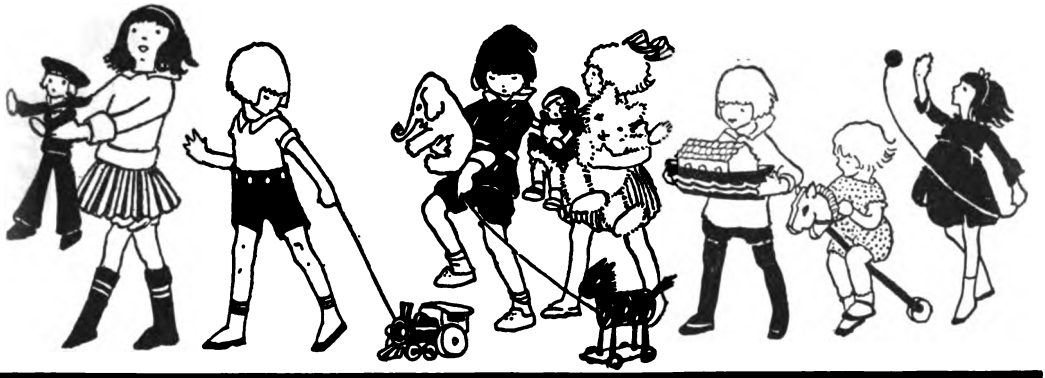
Now Ready

BACKWARD PEOPLES
By Sir Harry Johnston
MODERN FINANCE
By Emil Burns
A CAPITAL LEVY AND A LEVY ON WAR WEALTH
By A. C. Pigou
INDUSTRIAL IDEALS
By Victor Gollancz
WHY PRICES RISE AND FALL
By F. W. P. Lawrence
AN EDUCATED NATION
By B. A. Yeaxlee
DOMINION HOME RULE IN PRACTICE
By A. B. Keith
FOREIGN EXCHANGE
By T. E. Gregory
INCREASED PRODUCTION
By E. Lipson
WORKING OUT THE FISHER ACT
By B. A. Yeaxlee
OFFICIAL STATISTICS
By A. L. Bowley
THE TREATY SETTLEMENT OF EUROPE
By H. J. Fleure

At all booksellers or from the publishers.

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS AMERICAN BRANCH
35 WEST 32ND STREET, NEW YORK

Digitized by Google



Where Will These Toys Be A Month After Christmas?

BROKEN, LOST, DISCARDED, FORGOTTEN!

Why not give something that will last, that multiplies the Christmas joy by FOURTEEN?

JOHN MARTIN'S BOOK

The CHILD'S MAGAZINE
For Children from Three to Ten

means to a great host of children all the happiness, guidance, fun, and comradeship of their *real friend*, John Martin, for his heart goes into the book he makes for them. DON'T COUNT THE COST OF HAPPINESS THAT MAKES EARNEST, LOYAL, AND LOVING LITTLE MEN AND WOMEN.

THE FOLLOWING BRIEF PARAGRAPH IS A SUMMARIZED STATEMENT OF HUNDREDS OF MOTHERS AND TEACHERS

"NO child's happiness and development is properly planned for that lacks the influence of JOHN MARTIN'S BOOK in daily life. It is an essential to childhood and is an unfailing resource to wise and thoughtful mothers."

This book is as *necessary* to your children as food, for it is soul food. It is as *important* as clothes, for it is a mental garment of joy, clean thinking, and high ideals. JOHN MARTIN'S BOOK is an institution and not a *commercial* enterprise. It is devoted first and always to the sincere purpose of making happier, finer, and nobler *LITTLE AMERICANS*. John Martin has had and will have the encouragement and support of right thinking *AMERICAN PARENTS*.

WHAT IS JOHN MARTIN'S BOOK?

IT IS A LIFETIME INVESTMENT in happiness, good taste, moral sense, and ideal thought. It is a book all children need, but have never before been given until John Martin developed his book. It is more *book* than magazine. It is full of pictures and charming surprises.

It is a friend who gives the children songs, games, things to do, poetry, fairy-tales, history, nature stories, Bible tales. It brims over with FUN and merry nonsense. It holds the very *heart* of normal and happy childhood.

(*The regular price per year is $4.00*)

AN *IDEAL GIFT* THAT LASTS FOURTEEN MONTHS AND LIVES A LIFETIME

SPECIAL OFFER TO THOSE USING THIS COUPON

● **JOHN MARTIN'S BOOK ROOM FOR *YOUR* CHILDREN** ●

is a charming spot where the BEST BOOKS, not *all* books, are beautifully displayed, courteously presented and intelligently selected. It is—

A NATIONAL CENTER

for advice to earnest parents about truly formative literature for children of all ages.

RECORD YOUR NAME

to receive without cost, "John Martin's Blue Book of Best Reading for Children."

33 West 49th St., NEW YORK

● *"At the fifth little tree."* ●

FOURTEEN MONTHS for $4.00

JOHN MARTIN
33 West 49th St., New York

This offer expires December 31st, 1921, and is for new subscribers only

I am interested in your SPECIAL OFFER. Attached you will find $4.00 (Canada $4.50) for *Fourteen Months'* Subscription to John Martin's Book (The Child's Magazine) which please send to

Child's Name .....

Address .....
[*Street, City, State*]

Donor's Name ..... A

Address ..... Dec. 21

Digitized by Google

Appropriate Harvard Books for Christmas

A History of European and American Sculpture

By CHANDLER RATHFON POST $15.00

With unusual catholicity of taste and sympathy, the author traces the history of sculpture from early Christian times through the Middle Ages, the Renaissance, and the Baroque, Rococo, Neoclassic, and modern periods. Handsomely printed in two quarto volumes, with 205 full-page illustrations, it will be found an ideal Christmas gift for every lover of the Fine Arts.

Giotto and Some of His Followers

By OSVALD SIRÉN $15.00

Considering Giotto's art as far as possible in relation to that which preceded, surrounded, and followed the great master Dr. Siren has given a broader presentation of his school than has hitherto been made. The work is in two quarto volumes, the first containing the text and the second devoted to a series of 220 plates which reproduce over three hundred masterpieces.

The Ladies of Dante's Lyrics

By CHARLES HALL GRANDGENT $1.50

Readers whose interest in Dante has been renewed this year, will appreciate this charming volume in which the author limns five more or less shadowy ladies celebrated by Dante in his minor poems. The essays, which are interspersed with masterly translations of the lyrics, have all the wistful charm of half-forgotten days in the thirteenth century.

Three Philosophical Poets

By GEORGE SANTAYANA $2.50

"His writings are embellished by a highly polished literary style and a graceful felicity in expression and illustration. . . . The best single book of his is the *Three Philosophical Poets*. The three essays, on Lucretius, Dante and Goethe, are recognized as among the best critical interpretative essays on the subjects in any language."—*Detroit News*.

Chivalry in English Literature

By WILLIAM HENRY SCHOFIELD $2.50

Studies of the English gentleman as seen in the work of Chaucer, Malory, Spenser, and Shakespere; Georg Brandes has recently said of it, "It is no accident that a personality so gracious in all its manifestations and so perfectly chivalrous as that of Schofield should have chosen to study the spirit of chivalry and the forms which this spirit assumed in the Anglo-Saxon countries."

English Pageantry

By ROBERT WITHINGTON

Vol. I, $4.00; Vol. II, $6.00

Two handsomely illustrated quarto volumes chronicling the history of the pageant from its beginnings in folk custom down to our own day, with full consideration of American pageantry. "He has taken up a subject upon which no one had worked consistently and thoroughly, and he has treated it with learning, clarity, and an engaging spice of humour."—*London Times*.

A Hundred Voices and Other Poems

By KOSTES PALAMAS $2.50

"This book is a thesaurus of passionate beauty and hymns by a man who is a Pantheist, one who utters the 'Everlasting Yea' of Nietzsche to Nature and all her works. In the original Greek his poems ought to be a priceless and immortal treasure. The translation of Mr. Phoutrides is as perfect a thing as can be done."—Benjamin de Casseres in *New York Herald*.

The Old Farmer and His Almanack

By GEORGE LYMAN KITTREDGE $3.00

All the "unconsidered trifles" of our Colonial history seem to be gathered in this fascinating volume based upon one or another item in the famous old New England annual to wit, Astrology, The Toad and the Spider, Sugar and Salt, Indian Summer and the Comet, The Great Moon Hoax, Barberries and Wheat, Indian Talk, and a dozen other homely topics.

Old and New

By CHARLES HALL GRANDGENT $1.50

"The shortest and best way in which to notice this book is to advise everybody to read it. . . . The book is made up of eight essays, all of them both admirable and charming. *Nor Yet the New, Modern Language Teaching*, and *The Dark Ages*, seem, in the light of to-day's crudeness, to be almost necessary to salvation."—*Sewanee Review*.

Learning and Living

By EPHRAIM EMERTON $3.00

Nine essays in which the author stores the mellowed wisdom on questions of life and education that he has gained during his fifty years' experience in American universities: a book that will appeal to parents, teachers, and college students both for its eminently sane point of view and for its noble statement of the fundamental ideals of our Republic.

Send for our Christmas Catalogue

HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS

6 Randall Hall, Cambridge 38, Mass. **15 West 44th Street, New York City**

Digitized by Google



Queen Alexandra

A Great Biography of a Great Personage

QUEEN ALEXANDRA

A Study of Royalty

By W. R. H. Trowbridge

A book that ranks with the most brilliant biographies of the year. The fascinating, personal and intimate life story of Queen Alexandra from childhood to the present day. A glowing, colorful picture of her marriage to the Prince of Wales; her recreations and accomplishments; her graciousness and deep understanding of the hearts of the people; details of her dealings with affairs of state; a keen analysis of the Victorian era, the death of Queen Victoria and the coronation of Edward VII and Alexandra. A volume that sheds new light on the tremendous events that signalized the reign of Queen Victoria — and after. *Illustrated.* $5.00

THE LIFE OF CHRIST

By The Rev. R. J. Campbell, D.D.

Vicar of Christ Church, Westminster

A work the whole Christian world has long eagerly awaited. A new Life of Christ which clearly and temperately presents the complete modern view — shows the results of modern study. A picture of the life and character of Jesus that is of the greatest beauty and significance. A volume that embodies the result of years of study of original sources and the critical writings of thinkers and scholars, reinforced by this famous preacher's own personal force and keenness of understanding. $3.00

Ernest Renan

By Lewis Freeman Mott

The first complete and accurate account of Renan's career to review all of his multifarious activities, show his intimate relation with his epoch, present the important phases of his thought, and indicate its bearing on our own problems. *Portrait frontispiece.* $4.00

Noah an' Jonah an' Cap'n John Smith

By Don Marquis

The year's best book of humorous verse. Joyous fooling in rhyme by a great American genius. Just the book for a gift for young or old because Marquis's appeal is universal. Sketches by Tony Sarg. $1.75

Across Mongolian Plains

By Roy Chapman Andrews

A thrilling and fascinating account of a great explorer's plunge into the very heart of Asia, and of the habits and customs of the natives in a land where the Arabian Nights are just beginning to rub shoulders with the rest of the world. Illustrated from photographs by Yvette Borup Andrews. $5.00

Miss Lulu Bett—*A Play*

By Zona Gale

The dramatic version of the famous novel. Awarded the Pulitzer prize as the best play of the year. With two endings — the one the critics praised and the one theatre-goers preferred. $1.75

Brilliant Fiction

By Famous Writers

The Council of Seven

By J. C. Snaith

A realistic after-the-war novel of international mystery and intrigue. The story of John Endor, young political leader, and Helen Sholto, his American bride, fighting against the corrupting influence of a vast newspaper syndicate. $2.00

Mother

By Maxim Gorky

Introduction by Charles Edward Russell

In this novel by Russia's greatest living writer, the Russia of the age-long struggle against the Tzar's autocracy stands forth in a flood of light. $2.00



March On

By George Madden Martin

The beautiful and tender love story of Lucy Wing and Stephen Janvier, both of the bluest blood of Kentucky. A novel that pictures the southern woman of to-day marching on to claim and hold her new-found freedom. $2.00

In Blessed Cyrus

By Laura E. Richards

How a colorful actress causes an amazingly humorous upheaval in hearts and fortunes when she comes to a quaint old New England village. Delightfully human. $2.00

Pamela Pounce

By Agnes and Egerton Castle

A sprightly romance of the days of George III, in which reappears Sweet Kitty Bellairs as the protector and patron of her little milliner, Pamela Pounce, heroine of this most engaging of all Castle novels. $2.00

Wild Justice

By Lloyd Osbourne

Vivid, fascinating and unusual stories of the South Seas, by the stepson of Robert Louis Stevenson. Romance and adventure, drama, tragedy and humor in these tales set in the exotic atmosphere of the glamorous islands. $2.50

Helen of the Old House

By Harold Bell Wright

The best book ever written by the most popular novelist in the world. "A story remarkable for its insight into present-day American life; filled with beautiful character drawing and stirring incidents." — *Boston Globe.* $2.00

Galusha the Magnificent

By Joseph C. Lincoln

The novel that has set a new record in sales of Lincoln books. "Contains just as many and just as hearty laughs as any novel Mr. Lincoln has yet produced." — *Boston Globe.* $2.00

At All Booksellers

D. APPLETON & COMPANY, Publishers, New York

Digitized by Google

Some Leaders of Thomas Seltzer's Fall Books

Read the works of this great genius of our age

D. H. LAWRENCE



SEA AND SARDINIA

The outstanding travel and gift book of the season. Beautiful to read and beautiful to look at. With reproductions in full color of striking paintings made especially to illustrate this book by one of the most original and promising young artists, Jan Juta; and with a whimsical map of Sardinia by D. H. Lawrence.

An account of a trip Lawrence took with his wife in Sardinia. It is chatty, intimate, full of keen and unusual observations, written in a clear, limpid, conversational style, yet with the poetic beauty characteristic of the writings of D. H. Lawrence. A book that should be in the homes of all. The text by Lawrence and the beautiful pictures by Jan Juta make a rare combination. $5.00

TORTOISES

The life-history of the tortoise told in verse. An interesting story and beautiful poetry.
With cover design in color, $1.25

THE LOST GIRL

A gripping novel, centering around a strikingly original heroine and her escape from spinsterhood. $2.00

WOMEN IN LOVE

(*Limited subscription edition*) $15.00

PSYCHOANALYSIS AND THE UNCONSCIOUS

Sherwood Anderson says: "Each one of these books — WOMEN IN LOVE, THE LOST GIRL, PSYCHOANALYSIS AND THE UNCONSCIOUS — is an achievement that would make the reputation of an American in a lifetime." $1.50

YOU

By MAGDELEINE MARX

Author of "Woman"

Can the modern woman live by love alone? And what is the place of romantic love in a modern woman's life? This is the problem of YOU, a novel which has proved an even greater sensation in France than WOMAN, and which the French critics have received with an even more enthusiastic welcome. $1.90

THE GLORIOUS HOPE

By JANE BURR

Author of "The Passionate Spectator"

A novel of the life of artists, sculptors, actors and writers in our New York Bohemia.

Floyd Dell, author of "Moon-Calf," says: "THE GLORIOUS HOPE is not only quite a new thing in the world of stories, but — like all human relations deeply realized and candidly set forth — it startles us by casting a light into the mysterious darkness of our own troubled thoughts." $2.00

JULIA TAKES HER CHANCE

By CONCORDIA MERREL

A striking novel that holds you breathless. As perfect in its way as a Gilbert and Sullivan opera and as entertaining. Breezy, up-to-date, and real, too. Sometimes reality is pleasant. It is in this novel. $2.00

INVISIBLE TIDES

By BEATRICE KEAN SEYMOUR

The story of a great and inevitable passion

The best English novel of 1920 and best seller. So the entire English press said. Now the American press is equally enthusiastic.
Boston Transcript: "INVISIBLE TIDES is a distinct literary event."
W. L. George: "I read Mrs. Seymour's novel, INVISIBLE TIDES, with the greatest interest; she is a brilliant writer." $2.00

ROMAIN ROLLAND:
The Man and His Work

By STEFAN ZWEIG

The great biography of the season. The first book in English on Rolland. *With portraits and illustrations,* $4.00

A YOUNG GIRL'S DIARY

Preface by SIGMUND FREUD

A remarkable autobiography written by a girl between the ages of 11 and 14

"This diary," writes Freud, "is a gem. Never before, I believe, has anything been written enabling us to see so clearly into the soul of a young girl during the years of puberal development." $5.00

PLAYS OF OLD JAPAN

Translated by Leo Duran

A gift book that will surprise and please

These are plays that have been acted on the Japanese stage for centuries and continue to be acted to-day. They are Homeric in simplicity, interest and naturalness. Primitive and elemental.
With ornamental board covers and frontispiece in color, $2.50

THOMAS SELTZER, *Publisher,* 5 West 50th Street, New York City

Digitized by Google

The Gift Book for Every Fiction Reader



In the United States, Great Britain, and many foreign countries, the power, humanity and truth of the book have been generally recognized, and the majority of critics everywhere have said that it places Hall Caine as a world-novelist in the same rank with Dickens, Hugo, Zola, and Tolstoy.

HALL CAINE'S
THE MASTER OF MAN

The Chicago Tribune says: " 'The Master of Man' will make the year of its publication memorable. Hall Caine, the greatest in his metier, after his illustrious exemplars (Dickens, Hugo, and Tolstoy), has written a book that stands head and shoulders above all the other novels of the year. His Stowell will stand little below Jean Valjean when the second reading of his contemporaries shall have merged into the first readings of posterity." *Price*, $1.75

THE WHISTLER JOURNAL

By ELIZABETH R. PENNELL *and* JOSEPH PENNELL

This companion work to the famous "Life" is full of the most intimate revelations of the artist, his friends, and the "times." The many excellent illustrations are a feature that will be prized by collectors. *352 pages; photogravure frontispiece; 162 illustrations; crown octavo uniform with the Pennells' "Life of Whistler."* *Price*, $8.50

THE SONG OF SONGS

Being a Collection of Love Lyrics of Ancient Palestine

By MORRIS JASTROW, JR., PH.D., LL.D.

As in "A Gentle Cynic," and "The Book of Job," Professor Jastrow has again produced a work of surpassing dignity and great beauty. This completes the trio of Biblical Books which were selected for popular presentation because of their superior literary qualities and human appeal. *Doubletone frontispiece by Alexander Bida. 260 pages.* *Price*, $3.00

SEEING THE SUNNY SOUTH

By JOHN T. FARIS

In his latest addition to his very popular series of travel books begun in 1919 with "Seeing Pennsylvania," and followed in 1920 by "Seeing the Far West," the author not only gives a vivid portrayal of everything worth seeing in the country through which he passes, but adds a historic background as well. *115 Halftones from original photographs. Frontispiece in color. 316 pages.* $6.00

HISTORIC HOUSES OF SOUTH CAROLINA

By MRS. HARRIETTE KERSHAW LEIDING

This is the only book covering the field of old and interesting houses and churches in South Carolina. It is filled with many anecdotes, delightful descriptions and sketches, and has been added to the Lippincott's "Limited Edition Series," all of which are now out of print and selling at a high premium. *100 Illustrations and frontispiece in photogravure with 312 pages. Handsome octavo. In a box.* $10.00

STORIES ALL CHILDREN LOVE SERIES

Nineteen classic fairy stories for children, the latest being MAZLI, by Johanna Spyri. In the same series are HEIDI, PINOCCHIO, CORNELLI, etc. *Beautifully illustrated in color with lining papers, handsome binding.* *Price*, $1.50 *each*

A TALE OF A WALLED TOWN And Other Verses

By B 8266—PENITENTIARY

A human document from one who has known the heights and depths of life that may well be placed among the great poetic productions of the age. *Introduction by William Stanley Braithwaite.* $2.00

THE THING FROM THE LAKE

By ELEANOR M. INGRAM

"A tale from the borderland of dread." It will bring a new thrill to the lover of the occult and mysterious. $1.90

PTOMAINE STREET

By CAROLYN WELLS

A rollicking parody on Main Street. $1.25

APRILLY

By JANE ABBOTT

Mrs. Abbott in her latest story will again charm her host of youthful readers. The book is filled with that joyous spirit of youth and spring that the title suggests. *4 Illustrations.* $1.75

AMERICAN BOYS' BOOK OF WILD ANIMALS

By DAN. BEARD

This latest addition to the Woodcraft Series will hold an unfailing appeal for any healthy boy. There is something new on every page. *Profusely illustrated.* $3.00

CHILDREN'S CLASSICS SERIES

Seventeen famous stories for little tots, printed in large, clear type with color illustrations; the latest titles are: THE KING OF THE GOLDEN RIVER, by John Ruskin, and ALL TIME TALES, Selected. Little children love every story in this series. Ask to see them. 75c *each*

Write for illustrated circulars of Special Editions, Gift Books, and Books for Boys and Girls.

J. B. LIPPINCOTT COMPANY, PHILADELPHIA

Digitized by Google



THE TONY SARG MARIONETTE BOOK

This is a jolly illustrated book — the first to tell children how to make marionettes and how to put on marionette shows at home. The mysteries of Mr. Sarg's own marionettes are explained; there are two plays written by Anne Stoddard for home-made marionettes; a chapter about the oldest toys in the world, and clever drawings by Tony Sarg on almost every page. Just think of the fun children can have with a book like this, Christmas or any other time! Look between its charming colored covers when you're in the bookstore. The price will attract you, too: $1.00

You will agree with Anatole France after you read

A BOOK OF MARIONETTES

By HELEN HAIMAN JOSEPH

Grown-ups, who still keep young in spirit, will find in this delightful book by Mrs. Joseph much the same sort of enjoyment that children will find in *The Tony Sarg Marionette Book*. It surveys the whole marionette world from the earliest time to the present. Anatole France had access to many scholarly works in French but until the publication of this important volume, there was not a single work on the subject in the English language. With 40 pages of unusual illustrations, and bound in green, black and gold, this small quarto is indeed what Heywood Broun called it: "The handsomest book which has come our way this season." $5.00

Sherwood Anderson's new book

THE TRIUMPH OF THE EGG

A book of stories for everyone who doubts the strength and vision of contemporary American literature; an undeniably original picture of our country presented by an artist who, to quote the New York *Times*, "depicts life in the Middle West as Dostoievsky pictured the many-colored life of Russia, with almost as wonderful a touch of genius, with a more concentrated and daring skill." With photographs of striking character interpretations done in clay by Tennessee Mitchell. $2.00

If you are disappointed with American fiction, read Anderson's

Poor White

"He has achieved in this novel what literature achieves at its best: a breadth of interpretation and a fine integrity to fact."—New York *Evening Post*. $2.00

Winesburg, Ohio

"These stories are examples of what American fiction can be when an artist with vision deals with the material of American life."—Boston *Transcript*. $1.60

Hugo Stinnes

By DR. HERMANN BRINCKMEYER

Though Stinnes is to-day the most talked-of captain of industry in Europe, few people know the facts of his life or the methods by which he has risen. This first book in English tells the career of the man who is a controlling factor in almost every German industry, and who is reaching out with new enterprises in every part of the world. Dr. Brinckmeyer gives a detailed analysis of his methods of organization, and of the companies which he directs or controls. Every man of affairs or student who wants to understand the economic forces at work in Germany to-day and the effect of Stinnes' vast consolidations on the business structure of Europe, will find this authoritative book full of valuable information. $1.50

Russia's literary giants: Chekhov, Tolstoy, Gorky

The Note-Book of Anton Chekhov

The years covered by the *Note-Book* are from 1892 to Chekhov's death in 1904. It ranges from random jottings for plays and novels to profound and beautiful passages of meditation on life and death. Sinister and humorous, ironic and *macabre*, the book is a fascinating miscellany of striking proverbs and sayings, themes, motifs, comparable, in its way, to the note-book left by Beethoven. A mind is unveiled, a great artist's creative methods are revealed. $1.50

Reminiscences of Chekhov

By M. GORKY, A. KUPRIN, and I. BUNIN

A beautiful tribute to the memory of Chekhov, the man and the artist, from three distinguished Russian writers. $1.50

Reminiscences of Tolstoy *By* MAXIM GORKY

Gorky fixes for all time in these intimate pages the already semi-mythical figure of Leo Tolstoy. The daily life of Tolstoy, his thoughts on a wide variety of subjects, his mannerisms, his appearance—all go to form a portrait which no biographers have equalled. $1.50

B. W. HUEBSCH, INC. Publisher, New York City

Send for new [illegible] that constitute an asset to every American library

Digitized by Google

THE BOOK NEWS OF THE WORLD

—brought weekly to your door



EVERY WEEK *The Literary Review* brings to your library table or den the book news of the whole world. For thousands of people it is a weekly clearing house of authoritative criticism and lively gossip about books and authors.

The Literary Review puts you in touch with travel, adventure, exploration, poetry, essays, drama, music, humor, and all the stimulating thoughts that circulate in the world of letters. Never before in America has it been possible to keep up with books so surely, so easily, and so delightfully, as in *The Literary Review.*

Three Boston women, so we hear, meet every Monday to read it. A book club in Virginia has reviews from its pages read at its monthly meetings. A lawyer in Indiana lends his *Literary Review* to an average of twelve men each week. A Far Western library has its copy "read to pieces." A New England library has its number frequently filched by literary poachers. A friend reports that "although there are only about ten subscribers in this town, I believe that fully two hundred read *The Literary Review* with some regularity."

Just here a hint: Do not depend upon your neighbor (who is sure to clip the best things), but buy your own copy. Filling in the coupon takes but a minute. Let the fountain pen do its duty.

The Literary Review

OF THE

New York Evening Post

EDITED BY HENRY SEIDEL CANBY

A few bouquets from Literary Review Readers

"The special articles and the book reviews by authorities have placed *The Literary Review* at the top in its field."

". . . the best literary review issued by any paper or magazine."

". . . An indispensable factor in the world of books."

". . . *The Literary Review* is one of the bright spots of the week for me."

"In addition to its comprehensiveness, its penetration, clarity, balance and pleasantness make it most significant and valuable."

"I'm almost sorry that you are making *The Literary Review* so interesting, because I find that I *must* subscribe for it."

"Our copy is in ribbons ere it is laid aside."

". . . by far the best thing of its kind in this country."

A Weekly Magazine for Book-lovers

The Literary Review, 20 Vesey Street, New York City

Please send me *The Literary Review* for one year for $2.50.

(Check below method of payment)

I enclose $2.50 Bill me for $2.50

Name..... Address.....

(If you desire a five months' subscription send $1.00) AM-12-21

Digitized by Google

YALE BOOKS

LUX ET VERITAS

SONGS FOR PARENTS



By JOHN FARRAR

Little verses about little people
by the editor of *The Bookman.* $1.25

TALES FROM THE SECRET KINGDOM

By ETHEL M. GATE

Author of "The Broom Fairies and Other Stories"

"Fairy stories of the very highest type."—*Washington Times.* $2.00

HINTS TO PILGRIMS

By CHARLES S. BROOKS
Illustrations by Florence Minard

"Mr. Brooks' essays offer a rare refreshment, peculiarly welcome in these days when books too often reflect the pessimism and unrest shadowing the world."—*Boston Transcript.* $2.50

THE FIFTH BOOK OF HORACE

By RUDYARD KIPLING and CHARLES L. GRAVES

Comments on current affairs in the idiom of Horace. The English appears beside the original — highly original! — Latin. $1.00

THE CAPTIVE LION AND OTHER POEMS

By WILLIAM H. DAVIES

"This Davies is one of the few contemporary classics whom we can be sure about."—*The Nation.* $1.50

LIFE OF MARCUS AURELIUS

By HENRY DWIGHT SEDGWICK

A biography told largely by the letters of Marcus and his tutor Fronto. $2.75

THE REIGN OF RELATIVITY

By VISCOUNT HALDANE

"There is no doubt that Einstein's theory is very disturbing. . . . Lord Haldane's volume gives us fresh hope. He is not a mathematician; he is a philosopher, and as a philosopher he undertakes to explain to us the theory of relativity."—*The London Times.* $5.00



WHEN BUFFALO RAN

By GEORGE BIRD GRINNELL

Author of "The Fighting Cheyennes," "Blackfoot Lodge Tales," etc.

The story of the Indian boy Wikis told as an autobiography. Illustrated. $2.00

YALE UNIVERSITY PRESS

143 Elm Street
New Haven, Connecticut

15 West 44th Street
New York City

Give

MY UNKNOWN CHUM

to those you love—and to yourself

CLEAN literature and clean womanhood are the keystones of civilization, and "MY UNKNOWN CHUM is the cleanest and best all-around Book in the English language." It is the Chum of thousands; once read it will be your Chum all through life—at home and abroad.

When your Daughter, your Son, are old enough to think, travel and fall in love, insistently commend MY UNKNOWN CHUM to them. They will be grateful for your thoughtfulness.

—you will agree

With the NEW YORK SUN that "They don't write such English nowadays. The book is charming."

EX-MAYOR JAMES LOGAN, Worcester, Mass., Vice-Chairman Y.M.C.A.: "A friend gave me a copy of *My Unknown Chum*, and since then I have given away about ten or twelve copies. I recently made a trip to San Francisco and took *My Unknown Chum* with me for a second reading from cover to cover, a thing I have not done for thirty years, *i. e.*, read a book the second time. It is wonderfully interesting."

With SIR PHILIP GIBBS that "*My Unknown Chum* is delightful."

SIR CHARLES FITZPATRICK, Chief Justice of Canada: "*My Unknown Chum* is a wonderful book. I can repeat some of the pages almost by heart. I buy it to give to those I love and to friends who can appreciate a good book."

SIR THOMAS WHITE, Canadian Minister of Finance: "I have read *My Unknown Chum* many times over with great pleasure. What a beautiful, simple, clear style, deep human sympathy and insight it exhibits. It is indeed well named, for it is truly a chum to those who love literature."

U. S. SENATOR DAVID I. WALSH—The only book he has ever endorsed and commended: "It is all that is claimed for it—even more. It is not only a companion, but a friend."

THE BAKER & TAYLOR CO., largest wholesale booksellers: "*My Unknown Chum* is a wonderful book—appeals to the cultivated classes. Has a remarkable sale. We sell more copies than we do of many 'best selling' novels."

"Life is too short for reading inferior books."—Bryce.

MY UNKNOWN CHUM

["Aguecheek"] Foreword by Henry Garrity

$1.90—$2.00 Postpaid. Bookstores or

THE DEVIN-ADAIR COMPANY, Publishers, 437 Fifth Ave., N.Y.

Digitized by Google

"The ablest and most influential religious paper in America" says the London *Westminster Gazette*.

The Mind of Jesus and the Modern Mind

Is modern scientific and philosophic thought an approach to or a departure from the mind of Christ?
Is the prevailing public mood of our time congenial to or a relapse from Christ's principles and spirit?

A STARTLING and illuminating article on the above subject by Edward Scribner Ames, professor of philosophy in the University of Chicago, will appear in an early issue of The Christian Century. The implications of such a theme are profound and challenging. Upon its interpretation our theological, ethical and social controversies hang. And personal religious faith is vitally involved. The article by Dr. Ames is but a single illustration of the service The Christian Century is rendering in bringing the mind of Christ into the closest contact with the living problems of our day. This journal of religion discusses the great issues of the social order, of industry and business, of states and communities, of Christian unity, of theology and ethics, of the personal spiritual life—and all with a candor unrestricted by denominational interests and horizons.

The CHRISTIAN CENTURY
A Journal of Religion
CHARLES CLAYTON MORRISON and HERBERT L. WILLETT, Editors
FOUR DOLLARS A YEAR

SOME AUTHORITATIVE WRITERS OF CURRENT ARTICLES

JOHN M. COULTER, "Is Evolution Anti-Christian?"
CHARLES E. JEFFERSON, "Are the Churches Christian?"
HERBERT CROLY, "Religious Education."
WILLIAM ADAMS BROWN, "Can Society Be Made Christian?"
SHAILER MATHEWS, "Is Christian Theology Christian?"
JOHN SPARGO, "Is Preaching Futile?"
VIDA D. SCUDDER, "Can Public Opinion Be Christianized?"
HARRY F. WARD, "Jesus and the Competitive System."
RUFUS M. JONES, "War and the Mind of Jesus."
ROBERT E. PARK, "The Black Man, the White Man and Christ."
JANE ADDAMS, "The War on War."
PETER AINSLIE, "A Revaluation of Sunday."
RICHARD L. SWAIN, "Can Christ Rule Modern Business?"
ROBERT E. SPEER, "Christ and Our Social Customs."
ALBERT PARKER FITCH, "Do the Churches Still Believe in Jesus?"
H. D. C. MACLACHLAN, "A Bourgeois Church in a Proletarian World."

OTHER DISTINGUISHED WRITERS FOR THIS YEAR

ROGER W. BABSON, Author "Religion and Business."
JOHN R. MOTT, International Secretary, Y.M.C.A.
WILLIAM E. BARTON, Moderator Congregational National Council.
BISHOP WILLIAM F. MACDOWELL, Methodist Episcopal Church (Washington, D.C.).
LYNN HAROLD HOUGH, Ex-President Northwestern University.
CHARLES A. ELLWOOD, The University of Missouri.
JOHN KELMAN, Fifth Avenue Presbyterian Church, New York.
BISHOP FRANCIS J. MCCONNELL, Methodist Episcopal Church (Pittsburgh).

A GREAT SERIES ON GREAT PREACHERS

DR. JOSEPH FORT NEWTON, recently of City Temple, London, now of the Church of the Divine Paternity, New York, contributing editor of The Christian Century, is presenting this year an outstanding series of studies of some great preachers of to-day: Dr. George A. Gordon, Dean Inge, Rev. W. E. Orchard, Rev. S. Parkes Cadman, Rev. Charles E. Jefferson, Rev. E. L. Powell, Rev. John A. Hutton, Bishop Quayle, Rev. T. R. Glover, Rev. Harry Emerson Fosdick, Rev. Frederick F. Shannon, Rev. R. J. Campbell, Bishop Williams and others. This is the most luminous and instructive set of characterizations of living preachers published in many a year.

The Christian Century is the New Voice for the New Time!

Fill out one of these coupons and mail to-day. Addresses outside U. S. must provide for extra postage.

THE CHRISTIAN CENTURY, 508 S. Dearborn St., Chicago

Dear Sirs: Please enter my name (a new subscriber) for a year's subscription to THE CHRISTIAN CENTURY at your regular rate of $4.00 (ministers $3.00). I will remit upon receipt of bill and you will please send me without extra charge a copy of ☐ "The Next War," by Will Irwin, or ☐ "What and Where is God?" by Swain, or ☐ "What Christianity Means to Me," by Lyman Abbott, or ☐ "The Master of Man," by Hall Caine, or ☐ "The Proposal of Jesus," by John Hutton.

Name .....

Address .....

(*Use title "Rev." if a minister.*)

ATLANTIC 12-21

THE CHRISTIAN CENTURY,
508 S. Dearborn St., Chicago

Dear Sirs: Enclosed please find $1.00 for a twelve weeks' acquaintance subscription to THE CHRISTIAN CENTURY.

Name .....

Address .....

(*Use title "Rev." if a minister.*)

ATLANTIC 12-21

COTSWOLD CHARACTERS

by John Drinkwater

Author of "Abraham Lincoln"

"The fortunate people, the truly fortunate, are not so much those who succeed in life as those who succeed in living."

THIS group of quaint studies of rural England, is a new departure for this famous British dramatist. It is one of the recent successes of ***The Yale Review,*** and has been reprinted with woodcuts by the Nash brothers, in an attractive volume, which will be one of the unusual books for the holidays.

EVERY number of ***The Yale Review*** has something in it of as fine quality as this, by such writers as Galsworthy, Wells, Robert Frost, Mrs. Wharton, Sir Harry Johnston, John Masefield, Archibald Marshall, and by authorities in the field of public affairs. In the January number (***out December 10***) Hilaire Belloc answers H. G. Wells from the Catholic point of view, and there will be Unpublished Letters by James Fenimore Cooper, articles on Disarmament, etc.

AS an ***Atlantic*** reader you know how much your reading contributes to your "success in living." You want only the best. That is what ***The Yale Review*** brings to you each quarter.

SPECIAL OFFER

The Yale Review **($4.00 a year) and Mr. Drinkwater's "Cotswold Characters" ($1.40) for the combined price of $4.50. Both make Christmas gifts of quality.**

THE YALE REVIEW

Published quarterly at $4.00 a year; January, April, July and October

THE YALE REVIEW, 120 High St., New Haven, Conn. A.M.12-21

For the enclosed cheque for $4.50 please send me *The Yale Review* for one year beginning January, 1922, and a copy of "Cotswold Characters," by John Drinkwater, according to your offer to *Atlantic* readers.

Name..... *Street*.....

City..... *State*.....

Digitized by Google

GOOD BOOKS MAKE BETTER HOMES

Bradley Quality Books for Children
THE MARK OF A GOOD BOOK



THE influence of Good Books in the home cannot be over estimated. They entertain, instruct, develop character, create inspiration. Good books make home-lovers.

Children live in storyland. They are keen judges of what constitutes an interesting story. It is often difficult to decide what they will like and what they should read. Bradley Quality Books solve this perplexity. Children understand Bradley Quality Books, the authors understand children. That is why youngsters are ever interested in

Bradley Quality Books *for* Children

The Adventures of Twinkly Eyes . . . By Allen Chaffee
Illustrated by Peter Da Ru. Price $1.50

Twinkly Eyes is one of the most delightful little characters ever created in animal literature. The habits of the bear and other animals introduced in this book are faithfully portrayed.

Trail and Tree Top . By Allen Chaffee. *Illustrated by Peter Da Ru.* Price $1.50

Here, in true to nature form, are some of the comic, daring or pathetic exploits of Mammy Cottontail, Jimmy Crow and brave grumpy old Fatty Chuck for whom Frisky Fox and others kept things busy.

Lost River . By Allen Chaffee. *Illustrated by Peter Da Ru.* Price $1.50

A Boy Scout and a backwoods boy get lost in the wild lands of Maine. They find their way through one hundred miles of untracked forest. A most entertaining book for any boy.

Adventures of Fleet Foot and Her Fawns . . By Allen Chaffee
Illustrated. Price $1.00

A true to nature story of a mother deer and her little ones. Every child will read this book with real delight and in doing so will learn much about deer and other familiar animals of forest and field.

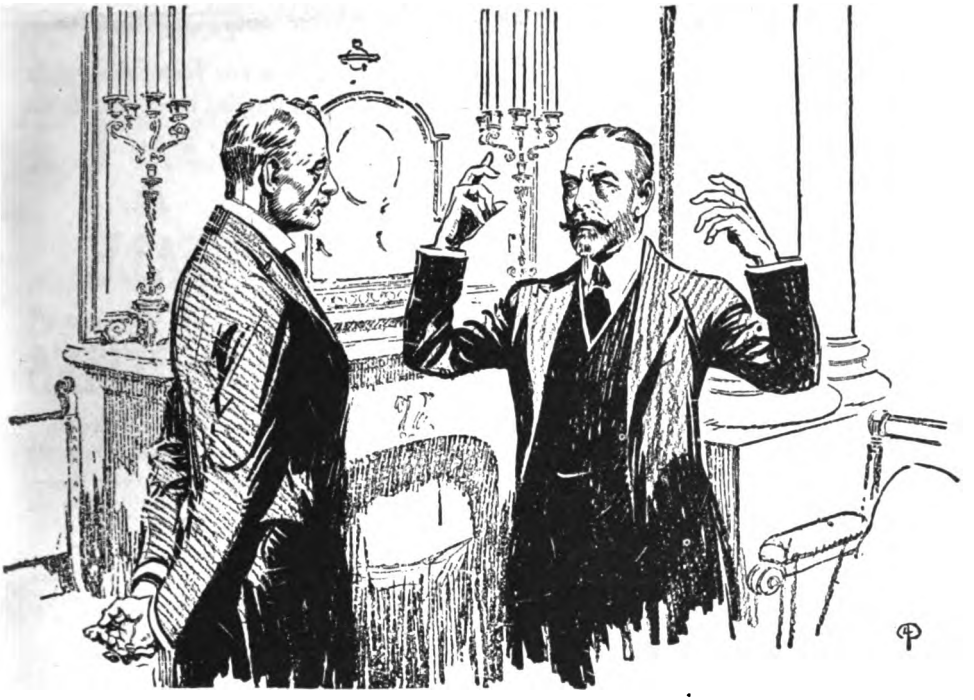
The Travel of a Honk-a-Tonk . . . . . By Allen Chaffee
Illustrated by Peter Da Ru. Price $1.00

The book takes its name from the leading story of the travels of a mother goose and her goslings. It contains many other tales of the smaller folk of the animal kingdom.

Ask your bookseller for Bradley Quality Books

MILTON BRADLEY COMPANY
Springfield, Mass.

Digitized by Google



'My God, Mr. Page, what else could we do?"

HROUGHOUT the war, Walter H. Page, American Ambassador to Great Britain, lived and moved in the most timate contact with its greatest actors. ith passing skill he aided the United ates in walking the neutrality tightrope ring the trying days when anglophobes re crying "war" on England. But he d amazing experiences in doing so.

the December ***World's Work*** are per- nal letters to President Wilson, Colonel ouse, and his own son, written just as gland settled down to the business of r. They are tremendously interesting d illuminating.

om the instant hostilities began, Mr. ge's mind seized the full significance of all. It is this clarity of vision that kes these master letters so vitally in- esting to-day, when the greatest world oblems in history are waiting solution. e war-time letters of Mr. Page will con- ue in several numbers of ***The World's ork.***

You cannot afford to miss a single number of ***The World's Work***—America's foremost magazine of thought and achievement. Always a step in advance of the times, it reveals the future in the light of current history.

Special Subscription Offer

Four Months for $1.00

Get your copy of ***The World's Work*** to-day; price 35c at the newsstands; or, clip this coupon and get the next four issues (including December) for $1.00. (Regular price $4.00 a year.)

THE WORLD'S WORK

Garden City New York

THE WORLD'S WORK, Garden City, New York.

Send me the next four issues of ***The World's Work,*** including December. I enclose $1.00.

Name_____

Address_____

A.M.12-21

Digitized by Google

Wonderfully Illustrated in Brilliant Colors

The Handsomest Edition Ever Printed of one of the Greatest Historical Novels Ever Written



From Mr. Dunn's title page for "A Tale of Two Cities."

A TALE OF TWO CITIES

By Charles Dickens

with full-color illustrations by HARVEY DUNN

In his set of 13 vivid paintings, Harvey Dunn, the noted American color-artist, has fairly brought to life the breathless scenes of Dickens' great masterpiece.

This handsome new edition stands out as a rare treat for any lover of good books, and the most instructive and entertaining gift imaginable for children.

In large size, with gold top. Price $3.50

This Edition Now Available Wherever Good Books Are On Sale. Price $3.50

Cosmopolitan Book Corporation

119 West 40th Street, New York

Also ask to see the fine N. C. Wyeth Edition of Robinson Crusoe Price $3.50

MARSHALL JONES BOOKS

Furniture of the Pilgrim Century

Including Colonial Utensils and Hardware

By WALLACE NUTTING

Illustrated with one thousand photographs by the author, hitherto unpublished.

Price $15.00

The Dartmouth Alumni Lectureships

THE SPIRIT OF THE COMMON LAW
By ROSCOE POUND. *Ready.* $2.50

TOWARDS THE GREAT PEACE
By RALPH ADAMS CRAM. *February.* $2.50

"The Amherst Books"

THE LIBERAL COLLEGE
By ALEXANDER MEIKLEJOHN. $2.50

THE LIFE INDEED
By JOHN FRANKLIN GENUNG. $3.00

ESSAYS IN BIBLICAL INTERPRETATION
By HENRY PRESERVED SMITH. $2.50

A Day in a Colonial Home

By DELLA R. PRESCOTT
Edited by JOHN COTTON DANA

Based on an educational exhibit at the Newark Public Library. A little book carrying the message of loyalty to the home and to the homely virtues. *Price* $1.25

The Crooked and Narrow Streets of Boston

By ANNIE HAVEN THWING

An account of streets, places and people: the result of thirty years of investigation. *Illustrated. Price* $5.00

The Story of Jesus

Compiled and arranged by
ETHEL NATHALIE DANA

Illustrated with forty reproductions of paintings by Fra Angelico, Duccio, Giotto, Barna da Siena and Ghirlandaio, printed in four colors and gold. *Price* $16.50

Sample pages and descriptive circulars of separate books and a full descriptive catalogue will be sent on request

MARSHALL JONES COMPANY, *Publishers*, 212 Summer St., Boston

Digitized by Google

Practical Psychology

The Simple Method of Performing Miracles — Miracles of Health, of Prosperity, of Love, of Happiness.

YOU can be anything you want to be. You can have anything you desire. You can accomplish anything you wish to accomplish. You can be well. You can be happy. You can make your life a supreme success.

Do these statements seem to you to be extravagant? Doubtless. But they are made in all seriousness.

Do you know the process by which your body repairs a wound? Or how the kidneys separate poisons from the blood? Or how the digestive juices are compounded? These and many other even more delicate processes are constantly going on in your body, even while you sleep, and they are directed by a widsom and power so infinite that your reasoning mind cannot even comprehend them.



JUDGE DANIEL A. SIMMONS
Jurist, Author, Psychologist, Lecturer

The wisdom and power which built and still sustain and repair your body abide in that part of your mind called the subconscious; but it is nevertheless *your* mind, *your* wisdom, and *your* power. And your subconscious mind knows vastly more and else than how to build, operate and repair your body. It is abundantly able and willing to give you every desire of your heart.

SO long as the subconscious mind is undirected, the individual shares the common lot of indifferent health, partial success, and a mingling of joy and sorrow, realization and disappointment; whereas conscious direction of the subconscious mind breaks the fetters of limitation and makes him the master of his own destiny.

Practical Psychology teaches the individual to know and to direct his subconscious mind, thereby enabling him to draw, without stint and without limit, upon its infinite wisdom and power.

Judge Daniel A. Simmons, the well-known jurist, author, psychologist and lecturer, has written a book entitled "Practical Psychology" which tells all about this miracle-working method of thought and life and gives clear, simple and explicit directions for achieving health, success, love and happiness. It is written in clear and simple language that even a school-child can understand.

We publish "Practical Psychology." Its thousands of readers have overwhelmed us with letters of commendation and gratitude. We will be glad to send you a few extracts from these letters if you care to see them. But we suggest that you let us send you the book itself.

Send No Money

If you will fill out or copy the coupon at the bottom of this page and mail it to us, we will mail you the book at our risk, all charges prepaid. Keep it five days. Read it. Apply its teachings. Let your own intelligence be the sole judge of its merits. If you find it is what we say it is, send us the purchase price; otherwise, send it back and the transaction will be closed. Is that fair enough? You have nothing to lose. You take no risk.

We sincerely believe that we are opening before you the door to more abundant life and happiness. You may have some doubts about it; but we think you will agree with us that you cannot afford to let a doubt and a 2-cent stamp bar your way to further investigation of the matter.

Use the coupon below.

BOLTON PUBLISHING COMPANY

JACKSONVILLE, FLORIDA

BOLTON PUBLISHING COMPANY,
Jacksonville, Fla. A.M. 12-21

You may send me Judge Simmons' book, entitled "Practical Psychology," at your risk. I agree either to remit $3 or remail the book to you within five days after its receipt.

Name.....

Street Address.....

City..... *State*.....

Digitized by Google

BOOKS WITH PURPOSE

"Everyday Life" Books, *Over 800,000 copies sold*

DR. HARRY EMERSON FOSDICK'S three "Everyday Life" books, ***"Meaning of Faith," "Meaning of Prayer," "Meaning of Service,"*** were written expressly to meet a great human need. This need, in all its variety of expression, he has felt and seen with rare understanding of human lives. Dr. Fosdick writes in clear, brief and understandable language and is an inspiring reality in the lives of hundreds of thousands. A specially bound set of these three books make a worthwhile gift for all occasions—cloth, with morocco ridge, gold stamped, gilt top, with silk marker, encased in an attractive carton for $5.00, postage paid. Or they may be bought singly, bound in art leather cloth, in compact, pocket edition volumes, printed on thin paper, at the following prices:

Meaning of Faith, $1.35 ***Meaning of Prayer, $1.15*** ***Meaning of Service, $1.25***

Write to us for our complete list of other "EVERYDAY LIFE" BOOKS priced at $1.15, each one based on an important theme.

At your bookstore or from us

ASSOCIATION PRESS

347 Madison Avenue New York

BOOKS WITH PURPOSE AP

The mark of a book written to meet a need

STEWART KIDD PUBLISHERS CINCINNATI

The Year's Four Best Collections of Short Plays

"FIFTY CONTEMPORARY ONE-ACT PLAYS"

Edited by FRANK SHAY and PIERRE LOVING. Second large edition

The New York *Tribune:* A complete repertoire for the little theatre is contained in this excellent collection of One-Act Plays. The work is a pioneer in its field. No other volume shows so clearly what has been done in this field. *Net* $5.00

"THE BEST SHORT PLAYS 1920-1921" (American)

Edited by FRANK SHAY

This volume represents a careful and intelligent selection of the best One-Act Plays produced by the Little Theatres in America during the season 1920-21. In the preface the editor traces the development of the art theatre and estimates its present importance. *Net* $2.50

"THE PROVINCETOWN PLAYS"

Edited by GEORGE CRAM COOK and FRANK SHAY. Foreword by HUTCHINS HAPGOOD

Containing the ten best plays produced by the Provincetown Players.

Dallas News: Uniform and excellence of workmanship varied in subject matter. The volume is a distinct contribution to American dramatic art. *Net* $2.50

"PORTMANTEAU ADAPTATIONS"

By STUART WALKER with introduction by EDWARD HALE BIERSTADT

The third volume of this series includes "Gramer Gurton's Needle," "The Birthday of Infanta," "Sir David Wears a Crown," a sequel to "Six Who Pass While The Lentils Boil," and "Nelli Jumbo." *Elaborately Illustrated. Net* $2.50

WRITE FOR COMPLETE DRAMATIC CATALOG

THE POETRY SOCIETY OF SOUTH CAROLINA

Incorporated 1920

Charleston, South Carolina

THE Poetry Society of South Carolina announces *The Blindman Prize*, a cash prize of two hundred and fifty dollars, to be offered annually by W. van R. Whitall, Esq., through The Poetry Society of South Carolina.

This competition is open to any native-born citizen of the United States, or any British subject speaking English as his or her native language. All poems must be original, and unpublished at the time of submission; and the Society reserves the right to publish the prize and honorable mention poems in such form as it may deem fitting.

All poems entered in this competition must be in the hands of the Secretary of the Society not later than January 1, 1922. Poems may be submitted at once, or, should further information be desired by any contestant, the same will be furnished upon request to DuBose Heyward, Secretary, 76 Church Street, Charleston, S. C.

Digitized by Google



Now As Never Before
You Need
THE ENCYCLOPÆDIA BRITANNICA

The ending of the great war brought a tremendous stimulus into every field of human thought
l activity. In science—medicine, engineering, chemistry, physics, agriculture and aviation
re have been epoch-making discoveries and inventions. Art—painting, sculpture, music, lit-
ture and the drama have received their share of this new, vigorous interest. There has
n a marked renaissance of reading. The industries have felt the stimulus in the demand for
ater production. As a direct result of the participation of the United States in world
irs, there has been aroused a great incentive to the study of history and of foreign countries,
r peoples, government, products, resources, customs and commerce. The necessity for authoritative, comprehensive unprejudiced information has never been so great. The Encyclopaedia Britannica, known for one hundred and years as the standard authority and the greatest guide to accurate information among English speaking les, furnishes the foundation of knowledge most needed by the business man, the worker in the industries, the tist, exporter, importer, student of world affairs and teacher.

How shall America readjust her industrial conditions? Is the present League of Nations likely to succeed? Is the fall of the Bolshevist regime in Russia imminent? Will Germany fulfill its peace treaty obligations?

means of the extraordinary articles in the Encyclopaedia nnica on economics, industries, government, labor and capital ill be able to obtain a clear insight into the problems of today.

A Treasure Chest of Knowledge.

e Britannica is a complete library of knowledge on every ct. It discusses in a way that you can understand every branch ence, industry, literature, art, religion, inventions and engineer- istory and race development; architecture, astronomy, chem- sociology, education, steam, electricity, geology and geography, phy, law and physics. You and your family will find in the nnica a liberal education. In answer to the hundred questions every day come to your mind and to your wife's and chil- minds, it will tell you more about everything than you can om any other source.

The Britannica in Women's Affairs.

The Encyclopaedia Britannica gives to the woman fundamental information on politics, on economics, child welfare, domestic science, on foods and their relative values, on hygiene, home decorations, furniture, rugs and furnishings. As an educational influence the Encyclopaedia Britannica is supreme. As an aid to children in school it is indispensable to supplement, interpret and broaden their knowledge on the subjects which they are studying.

Printed on the Famous India Paper.

These sets are printed on the genuine India paper—the beautiful, light, strong, thin but opaque sheet, which has proved an ideal medium on which to print the Encyclopaedia Britannica, because it makes the great work more compact, much more convenient to handle and more inviting to read.

Mail Coupon Today.

Fill out and mail to us today the attached coupon and we will send you, without charge and postpaid, our 128-page illustrated booklet, which will give you full information about the Britannica and what it will mean to have such a great work in your home; also how we are able to sell it to you at so low a price on such liberal terms of payment. Orders accepted from any point within the United States.

00
DOWN

29 Volumes
44,000,000 Words
30,000 Pages
500,000 References
Complete Latest Edition
Balance in small monthly payments

EARS, ROEBUCK AND CO.
CHICAGO

Sears, Roebuck and Co., Chicago, Ill. SW

Gentlemen:—Please send me, postpaid, your illustrated book, giving full information about the Encyclopaedia Britannica. Also tell me what I will have to pay for a set of the Handy Volume issue of the Britannica printed on genuine India paper.

Name .....

Postoffice .....

R. F. D. No..... Box No..... State.....

Street and No.....

Digitized by Google

Atlantic Book Bulletin

"Sure to be a Favorite Christmas Present"

A MAGNIFICENT FARCE

and Other Diversions of a Book-Collector

By A. Edward Newton

Author of "The Amenities of Book-Collecting"



Opens New Vistas of Reading

"When Mr. Newton published his book, THE AMENITIES OF BOOK-COLLECTING, it was read with very great pleasure by thousands of people. It was a new kind of book written in a friendly, easy manner that appealed to one; it told of interesting characters in an interesting way. People who previously had only read fiction read the 'Amenities' and it opened up vistas of reading for them previously known little about.

"And now Mr. Newton delights us with a new book, equally, if not more interesting than his first. It comprises twelve essays, all of which are delightful reading.

"The first essay, from which the book takes its name, is a description of The Trial of Warren Hastings; and the best of these essays is 'A Sane View of William Blake.' Here Mr. Newton gives us many interesting side lights on the private life of the artist-poet and tells of his work in his own inimitable way, which will undoubtedly make many new collectors for William Blake's work.

"Mr. Newton writes in a manner all his own, and could make the dullest of characters interesting. A MAGNIFICENT FARCE will undoubtedly rank as one of the best books of the season."—From *The Publishers' Weekly.*

Profusely illustrated from the author's remarkable collection, ***$4.00***

Atlantic books ordered for gifts will be sent direct, with Christmas card bearing the name of donor, on request

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.

8 Arlington Street **Boston (17), Mass.**

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC. A.M. 12-21
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

Gentlemen: Enclosed find $..... for A MAGNIFICENT FARCE

Name..... *City*.....

Street..... *State*.....

Atlantic Book Bulletin



Christmas Gift Suggestions



Life and Letters of Henry Lee Higginson

By Bliss Perry

(Editor of the *Atlantic Monthly* from 1899 to 1909)

Major Henry Lee Higginson, "founder and sustainer" of the Boston Symphony Orchestra, was one of the notable figures of his generation. In this vitally human record of his friend's life, Professor Perry has drawn freely upon Major Higginson's diaries and letters, from his early days as a student of music in Europe, through the Civil War, and all the years that followed. A great citizen, a great patron of music and education, is seen, by no means least in the upheavals of the recent war, as he truly and inspiringly led his life of human service. A book of peculiar appeal to lovers of their country, of music, of education, of friendship, and of the best citizenship. *"One of the most human documents of a decade."—Boston Herald.*

TRADE EDITION, one volume, illustrated, $4.00. LIMITED EDITION of 220 sets, two volumes, on special paper, containing illustrations, portraits, and facsimile letters not appearing in the one-volume edition, $15.50.

The Letters of William James

Edited by his son, Henry James

"The book is the record in his own words of a great man's personality."—*Oxford (England) Magazine.* "His Letters are at once faithful and touching proof of his remarkable activities, his genius and his gentle humanity."—*Cleveland Plain Dealer.* "They are the sort of letters that one hopes men of genius write, but the sort which are rarely published."—*Chicago Sunday Tribune.*

TRADE EDITION, two volumes, illustrated, $10.00. LIMITED EDITION (of which but a few sets remain), two volumes, especially bound and illustrated $20.00.

The Founding of New England

By James Truslow Adams

"This work, admirably contrived for popular consumption, presents in an eminently readable fashion, and with praiseworthy regard for the proportions of the subject—the best treatise on the history of New England in the seventeenth century that has been written at any time for scholar and general reader alike. The author presents his subject with vivacity and skill, and discloses on every page the conscientious thoroughness and accuracy of the modern historian, combined with the lively imagination of the successful littérateur." —Professor C. M. Andrews, of Yale, in the *New York Evening Post.*

Illustrated with facsimile documents and maps, $4.00

☛ *These books may be secured through your bookseller—or, in case you prefer to order direct, an order form will be found on the last page of this Bulletin. Atlantic books ordered for gifts will be sent direct, with Christmas card bearing the name of donor, on request.*

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.

8 Arlington Street Boston (17), Mass.

Atlantic Book Bulletin



Christmas Gift Suggestions



The Great Quest

By Charles Boardman Hawes

"Another Splendid Romance of the Seas by the Author of 'The Mutineers'"

"It would be a great quest indeed, a long and difficult quest, if one were to set out in search of an author writing better tales of the old-time seas than Mr. Hawes is giving us. Following 'The Mutineers' comes this romance, filled with the thrills that lovers of adventure yarns get, for example, from reading 'Treasure Island' and—well, the list is distressingly short and has had few additions in recent years. . . . An altogether engrossing adventure story, told in delightful fashion." — *The Boston Herald.* ***$2.00***

Strikingly illustrated by George Varian.

The Mutineers

By Charles Boardman Hawes

"A real sea yarn set back a century or more. It is a book written with a swing and go, windy of the high seas, full of the wild doings of those early days. The Island Princess sails from Salem to Canton, and hardly a leg of the long trip but has its own measure of excitement, danger and fun." — *New York Times.* ***Illustrated, $2.00***

Wild Brother

Strangest of True Stories from the North Woods

By William Lyman Underwood

"Kipling in his 'Jungle Book' has immortalized Mowgli, the man's cub, who fled from the wrath of Shere Khan, the tiger, and took shelter in the den of a wolf, and was brought up with her young. Many such stories have come down to us out of the past, but has anyone ever heard of the reverse of these stories? Does history record an instance where a woman, to save the life of a helpless starving animal, has taken it into her family and brought it up with her baby? I think not. Such a story was told to me one evening in midwinter, by the station agent in a little village in northern Maine." (page 2)

Engagingly written and fully illustrated, this extraordinary story of human kindness is certain to take a distinctive place in the chronicles of animal lore. ***$2.00***

Everyday Adventures

By Samuel Scoville, Jr.

"By all means, read this book if you love birds, flowers, or the woods. The chill of winter and the heat of summer are in it. The joy of sitting at home and coming unexpectedly upon a woodland treasure is a joy not lightly to be foregone, and a joy that comes to you over and over in these pages." — *Chicago Evening Post.*

Profusely illustrated, $3.00

☛ ***These books may be secured through your bookseller—or, in case you prefer to order direct, an order form will be found on the last page of this Bulletin. Atlantic books ordered for gifts will be sent direct, with Christmas card bearing the name of donor, on request.***

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.

8 Arlington Street **Boston (17), Mass.**

Atlantic Book Bulletin

Delightful Christmas Books for Children

Many Children

By Mrs. Schuyler Van Rensselaer

Illustrated by Mrs. Florence Wyman Ivins



I WONDER!

I wonder if the stars are fire,
Or if the stars are gold,
And if a little one should drop,
'T would burn my hand to hold?

Seldom is the elusive spirit of childhood so clearly portrayed as between the covers of this little volume. It is a book for the connoisseur, both of childhood and of art, and will delight both young and old. $1.50

Zodiac Town

By Nancy Byrd Turner

Illustrated by Miss Winifred Bromhall

JANUARY

They went to the January house,
A house made all of snow,
With windows of ice, and chandeliers
Of icicles all in a row.
The trim young master was dressed in fur
And did n't seem cold at all —
A red-cheeked, rollicking, frollicking chap,
Who offered each caller an ermine wrap,
And let them skate in his hall.

(From Chapter I.)

Amos and Anne, with the Journeying Man, visit the house of each month of the year, and their adventures are told in this book which children will love, both for the verses and for the prose that binds them together. Profusely illustra ed in black and white. $1.50

The Firelight Fairy Book

By Henry B. Beston

"Delightful fairy incidents and the doings of the Queen of Lantern Land are recorded in this book, with the most beautiful pictures in color by Maurice Day. The Seller of Dreams and the Bird Boy are other engaging characters in these tales, which old and young alike will find entrancing." — *Bookseller and Stationer.* $3.00

Jane, Joseph, and John

By Ralph Bergengren

It is possible only to suggest the charm of this book, for the fine co'or work and attractive border decorations, and most of all, the rare appreciation of child nature displayed in the verses make it a book which must be seen and handled and read aloud to be fully appreciated. There are full-page pictures in color by Maurice Day. $3.00

Uncle Zeb and His Friends

By Edward W. Frentz

Out-of-door tales, containing bits of natural history, childhood adventure, fellowship with animals, and information about a multitude of interesting matters. Twenty-two black-and-white illustrations. $1.50

Little Gateways to Science

By Edith M. Patch

I. Hexapod Stories, $1.25. II. Bird Stories, $1.25

"True stories that read like fairy tales." As interesting as fiction, yet holding a wealth of nature-study information, these are ideal volumes for young readers.

These books may be secured through your bookseller — or, in case you prefer to order direct, an order form will be found on the last page of this Bulletin. Atlantic books ordered for gifts will be sent direct, with Christmas card bearing the name of donor, on request.

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.

8 Arlington Street **Boston (17), Mass.**

Atlantic Book Bulletin



Christmas Gift Suggestions



The Seven Ages of Man
By Ralph Bergengren

The author of the highly popular COMFORTS OF HOME and THE PERFECT GENTLEMAN has written a new book of essays containing the same shrewd and humorous philosophy that has made his work so popular. Attractively bound. $1.25

THE COMFORTS OF HOME.....$1.00
THE PERFECT GENTLEMAN.....$1.00

Pilgrim Trails
By Frances Lester Warner

In text and picture it breathes the very spirit of the Pilgrim country. Illustrated by C. Scott White. $1.75

Atlantic Classics

A collection, in two volumes, of thirty-three of the finest essays contributed to the *Atlantic Monthly* in recent years. Leather edition with half-binding in dark maroon calf; gilt top and lettering. Boxed, $6.00
In cloth binding, boxed, two volumes, $3.00

Collector's Luck
By Alice Van Leer Carrick

The author tells many interesting experiences and reveals novel ideas for the antique collector. Charmingly bound, profusely illustrated. $2.50

Inside the House Beautiful
Edited by Henrietta C. Peabody

Of timely interest to all who are building or re-furnishing their homes, this companion volume to "What Makes the House Beautiful" presents many skilful designs for interior decorations. $3.00

An American Idyll: The Life of Carleton H. Parker
By Cornelia Stratton Parker

"A life story of love and achievement." Seventh large impression. $1.75

A Christmas Carol

A facsimile of Dickens's Christmas Classic as it first appeared in the book published by Chapman and Hall of London in 1843. $2.00

The Little Garden
By Mrs. Francis King

A book that all garden lovers will find helpful. With suggestive pictures, plans, and tables, Mrs. King tells, out of her own wide experience, how the little garden on which so much depends, can be made in almost any surroundings. $1.75

The Atlantic Book of Modern Plays
Edited by Sterling A. Leonard

The best of modern drama is represented in this carefully selected volume. Library Edition. $2.00

Adventures in Indigence
By Laura Spencer Portor

The pleasantry of these essays is infectious and the selection remarkably fine. $1.50

The Story of a Fortunate Youth
Chapters from the Biography of an Elderly Gentleman
By Jean Kenyon Mackenzie

"A book for every girl to give her father." $1.25

☛ ***These books may be secured through your bookseller—or, in case you prefer to order direct, an order form will be found on the last page of this Bulletin. Atlantic books ordered for gifts will be sent direct, with Christmas card bearing the name of donor, on request.***

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.

8 Arlington Street Boston (17), Mass.

Atlantic Book Bulletin



Atlantic Gift Prints



Merry Christmas from Boston

By Frances Lester Warner

Christmas was celebrated in Boston long before the special candles were lit on Beacon Hill. Miss Warner pictures in charming words, and Mr. Maurice Day in drawings that match them, the Boston Christmas of earlier days. A keepsake of uncommon flavor. 35 cents

A Visit from St. Nicholas

Designed by Mr. Bruce Rogers and illustrated by Mrs. Florence Wyman Ivins

The American Christmas classic is here presented in a form which makes it a holiday keepsake of unusual beauty. $1.00

My Little Sisters, The Birds:

The Sermon of St. Francis of Assisi

St. Francis's beautiful sermon to the birds is here reprinted in a four-page booklet, with attractive decorations in color. 35 cents

"I'm from Boston"

A Boston keepsake in the form of a pamphlet of drawings with descriptive text upon picturesque and significant objects in the New England city. 60 cents

The Ascension

An exquisitely colored reproduction of an Ascension of Fra Angelico, together with two stanzas from Henry Vaughan's "Ascension Hymn." 35 cents

Christmas Eve on Beacon Hill

By Richard B. Kimball
With decorations by Maurice E. Day

An attractive brochure, telling the story of the quaint Christmas Eves on Beacon Hill, from which the old-time custom of candle-lighting and Christmas singing has spread from coast to coast. 35 cents

The Best Wishes of the Season

A charming bit of philosophy for the Christmas season, with greetings to All Friends, this is one of the rare greetings that "applies" wherever it is sent. The Merrymount Press is responsible for its unusual lettering and format. 35 cents

The Stork: A Christmas Ballad

An unfamiliar Christmas legend, in English verse of the Sixteenth Century. Illustrated. 35 cents

The Seven Joys of Mary

This favorite old English carol of seven stages in the life of Christ is illustrated with two designs by Albrecht Dürer. A four-page French fold booklet, printed on deckle edge antique paper. 35 cents

Two Greeting Cards, suitable for any season of the year, contain lines of Shakespeare printed on reproductions of decorative panels by the seventeenth-century Italian engraver, Stefano Della Bella. Each 20 cents

☛ ***These prints may be secured through your bookseller—or, in case you prefer to order direct, the attached order form is made out for your convenience. Atlantic books ordered for gifts will be sent direct, with Christmas card bearing the name of donor, on request.***

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC. ATL. 12-21
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

Gentlemen:— Enclosed find $.....for books listed.

....

....

....

....

Name..... *Street*.....

City..... *State*.....

Google

Atlantic Textbook Bulletin



For High Schools and Colleges



"A sound mind in a sound body" was an ancient doctrine emphasized by the Greeks. Good literature in attractive binding—"Textbooks in Library Form"—is a modern doctrine emphasized by the Atlantic Monthly Press.

While students are consciously absorbing the intellectual message which authorship conveys, is it not worth while to provide books that unconsciously convey an æsthetic message? College professors and teachers of English, everywhere, commend Atlantic textbooks, not only on account of their superior literary material, but also for the good work of our printers and bookbinders.

Good Texts to use after the Christmas Holidays

Story, Essay, and Verse

Teachers of high school English who prepare students for the college entrance examinations will here find in convenient form selections adequate for the suggested study of the Short Story and the Essay: also for college classes where a wide variety of material is desired, either in the study of literature or composition. Price $1.50

Youth and the New World

For college courses in English composition and the study of literature. The purpose of this book is to acquaint young men and women with some of the problems that concern America. Price $1.50

The Voice of Science in Nineteenth-Century Literature

A collection from the works of Victorian Poets, Critics and Scientists for college courses in English and History. Price $2.00

The Atlantic Book of Modern Plays

A collection of truly worth while modern plays for senior high school and college use. The introduction, the notes, and the annotated bibliography supply complete and practical working directions. $1.50

Gay's Writing Through Reading

For advanced courses in English composition. Price 90 cents.

Tanner's Essays and Essay-Writing

For freshman courses in essay and composition. Price $1.25

Bleyer's The Profession of Journalism

For courses in journalism. Price $1.25

Atlantic Classics

First and Second Series

For courses in American literature. Price $1.50 each

Atlantic Narratives

First and Second Series

For the study of the short story and for courses in contemporary literature. Price $1.25 each

Atlantic Prose and Poetry

For junior high school and upper grammar grade literature. School Edition $1.00

Liberal discount on all orders for school use.

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.

8 Arlington Street Boston (17), Mass.

Atlantic School Book Bulletin



For Elementary Schools



THE CHARM

A delightful little play for Better English, designed for presentation in elementary schools

By Catherine T. Bryce

Professor of Elementary Education, Yale University

Price 25 cents

Every elementary teacher who is interested in "better speech" will wish to present THE CHARM in her schoolroom. Every little girl will wish to be The Queen, or one of the Sweet Speech Sisters, or a Flower Fairy. Even the small boys will not object to taking the part of that Human Child Tom, or of Puck, who slyly teases the fairies as he passes on his way. And all who listen will be apt to remember the closing song of the Speech Sisters,

"Now as you've promised, you must obey,
You must give heed to all you say,
Use Fair Speech in work and play,
And we'll be bonny and glad and gay."

THE LIGHT

An Educational Pageant

By Catherine T. Bryce

Professor of Elementary Education, Yale University

Price 65 cents

The Light is eminently fitted for presentation at school commencements or at teachers' conventions. It is a message of civic idealism. "Education is the bearer of the light. By the gleam I shall reach the goal—the democratic education of every soul in America. Only by thus following the gleam may I make certain that 'government of the people, by the people, and for the people, shall not perish from the earth.'"

Liberal discount on all orders for presentation purposes.

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.

8 Arlington Street **Boston (17), Mass.**

1921 New Thoughts for Old Ones 1922

WHEN Paul the Apostle preached on Mars Hill, it was not the first time that the people flocked to hear or to see some new thing. Nor is it the last. The demand for novelty springs from a deep place in human nature. In a very real sense, new things, new experiences, new ideas make up life itself. Many people, as we know, find existence but a squirrel cage,— eternal movement and eternal sameness,—but only the unthinking. For any one with new thoughts, or, rather, with new vision of old thoughts, life is one adventure after another; and, as the editor has long thought, a magazine's business is to give freshness and a new significance to the ideas that make everybody's life worth while.

In planning for the Atlantic's new year, it is steadily in the editor's mind to keep the magazine (a young veteran of sixty-five) looking at the world, its doings, and its motives with undimmed eyes. If you peer sharply at life, you will see it is never quite the same. Take, for instance, the year 1920, through which we have just passed. Do you realize that for the first time in our history more than half the population of the United States began to live in cities and towns? A dangerous tendency, this: what brought it about? The answer is, the automatic machine. It is a paradox, but a true one, that the machinery intended to eliminate men has wrought more congestion than our cities had ever known. But it has done more than this. It has revolutionized our American life almost as completely as steam did a century ago. The genie is out of the bottle. The automatic tool is no slave, but a master, beckoning girls from the farms, rushing boys to maturity before their time, paying them fabulous wages, and

Digitized by Google

then, having taught them to live riotously, withholding, skimping, starving their development. Here indeed is a vital new aspect of a problem old as mankind. The Atlantic will treat it in intensely interesting articles entitled THE IRON MAN, by a new writer of knowledge and intuition, ARTHUR POUND.

Another series in prospect, promising in peculiar degree this same quality of illuminating the basic factors of our lives, is a group of papers by VERNON KELLOGG on The New Biology. Every Atlantic reader recalls his famous Headquarters Nights and his more recent Problems of Life and Death. Here again Professor Kellogg not only interprets the facts, but has the sympathetic trick of unlimbering the reader's imagination and enlarging his world.

One of our New York contemporaries challenges competition by promising articles which will "send the red blood spurting through every vein." We should dislike to subject our readers to so trying an experience, but we do believe that no one will read unmoved the new discussion of our prison system which opens in the November Atlantic. FRANK TANNENBAUM, whose papers last year roused so intense an interest, has made a tour of investigation covering every important penal institution in the country. The results of his inspection, though temperately stated, haunt the mind.

Ever since certain plain-spoken papers on THE NEGRO appeared in the Atlantic, we have thought it a matter of public importance that this discussion should be enlarged, so that Americans can see the problem steadily and whole. To write the new series, we have chosen a Southerner, a man of broad and sober vision, with many years of intensive experience.

Digitized by Google



1921 New Thoughts for Old Ones 1922

Following the Peace of Versailles and the failure of the treaty, a kind of desperate torpor settled on the hopes of mankind. Now the pall gradually lifts, and in the general renewal of effort, it will be the Atlantic's part to light its own little lanterns along the dark road ahead. Supplementing the reports of the Conference at Washington, we shall cover the greater OBSTACLES TO PEACE in a series which promises to be one of the most luminous and helpful in the Atlantic's history. Nothing in these discussions will go nearer to the heart of the question than the searching and luminous survey of the part each individual among us must play in these matters of public policy, written for the Atlantic, by ARTHUR CLUTTON-BROCK. It is a literal and awful truth that upon you and me rests the ultimate responsibility.

A moment ago we were speaking of new light on ancient things. There is no better illustration of this in the new volume than PROFESSOR CHAUNCEY B. TINKER'S engaging series on Young Boswell, based on what we confess seems to us a miraculous discovery of manuscript letters written, by the Boswell not yet known to fame, to Rousseau, Ollie Goldsmith, John Wilkes, and many of the celebrities and notorieties of the day. There never was a letter-writer just like Bozzy. PROFESSOR TINKER'S series will be not only popular, but famous.

There is a certain accent on the new also, whether the Atlantic publishes new stories by old writers or by new ones. Tales such as the very modern idyll, Sunset, by VICENTE BLASCO IBÁÑEZ, in the November issue, take their place, not by virtue of the

Digitized by Google

author's name, but by his individual talent. Then there are new writers like EMMA LAWRENCE, JAMES BOYD, and FRANCES NORVILLE CHAPMAN. Indeed, nothing is more characteristic of the Atlantic than half a dozen brand-new names a month.

It is futile to speak of the new volume without those names round which Atlantic associations cluster most thickly. DR. CROTHERS and MISS REPPLIER, — to take the names at random, — MRS. GEROULD and A. EDWARD NEWTON, DALLAS LORE SHARP, WILLIAM BEEBE, GAMALIEL BRADFORD, MRS. DARGAN and JEAN KENYON MACKENZIE; and the newcomers making tradition fast, such as L. ADAMS BECK, EDWARD YEOMANS, and E. BARRINGTON. But to a grateful editor this subject hath no end.

One word more. Those who have grown intimate with the Atlantic through the years know that, when they seek the deep human comfort of those things of the spirit which the world, singularly careless of other personal matters, still thinks too personal to discuss, they can often find in the Atlantic's pages much that they seek. Such a paper as DR. J. EDGAR PARK'S Is There Anything in Prayer? suggests what we mean. Throughout the year contributors who have sought and found *an answer* will pass it on to the forlorn, the lonely, and the stricken. In the Christmas Atlantic we shall print as the first of many poignant messages of comfort and, we hope, of help, CONSOLATION, a paper which is, in a very true sense, a distillation of that healing which brings surcease of sorrow.

Digitized by Google

TO BE WELL INFORMED you must be in contact with the best minds of today. The daily paper will give you the background of events, but the mature judgment of events can only come from the best minds who have time to consider them carefully. It has been for a generation the aim of SCRIBNER'S MAGAZINE to put its readers in contact with the leaders of thought and literature. Statesmen, scientists, philosophers, men of action, men of adventure, practical men of business, all write for SCRIBNER'S MAGAZINE. It has things told, not through interviewers, but at first-hand by the men who do them.

Scribner's Magazine *for the year* 1922

Senator Depew's Recollections

These papers are the intimate talk of Senator Depew about the great men and events of his long and distinguished career—the unique record of a career which began to be important more than sixty years ago. Senator Depew has known every President of the United States from Lincoln to Harding.

What Am I? What Shall I Believe?

Two remarkable studies in the interpretation of personality by Edward G. Spaulding, Professor of Philosophy at Princeton, and well known elsewhere by his lectures at the Brooklyn Institute, the Harvard Summer School, and by his writing. These articles are for the layman, and have a direct personal application to life and conduct.

Michael Pupin's Own Story

This is the absorbing story of a Serb who had read about America, the land of opportunity and freedom, and who ran away from home at the age of fifteen with a fellow student. He is now Professor Pupin of Columbia, the inventor of the Pupin coil, which put telephone wires underground and which made long-distance telephoning possible. He will tell his own story in SCRIBNER'S MAGAZINE.

The Fiction Is a Feature of Scribner's

Among established Scribner favorites whose stories will appear this year are Henry van Dyke, Katharine Holland Brown, Mary Synon, Mary Raymond Shipman Andrews, Louis Dodge, Edward C. Venable, Abbie Carter Goodloe, Charles Belmont Davis. Stories by a group of new writers will appear, among them James Boyd, Alexander Hull, Dorothy Livingston, Walter Gilkyson, W. Edson Smith, Arthur Tuckerman, Camilla Kenyon, Rebecca Hooper Eastman, Rebecca N. Porter, and John Biggs, Jr.

Europe at Work *by* Whiting Williams

Mr. Williams has been at work all summer in the factories and coal-mines of France, Belgium, and Germany. He will write several articles regarding his adventures and his conclusions gained therefrom under the general head of "Europe at Work." Few observers, if any, have paid such a price in sweat or other discomforts for getting their opinions over so wide a field.

The World and the Stars

Doctor Hale, of the Mt. Wilson Observatory, will continue his remarkable articles which have been showing how the constitution of matter is revealed by the laboratory of the stars.

The Financial Situation
The Point of View, The Field of Art

[THREE DEPARTMENTS IN EACH NUMBER]

Alexander Dana Noyes, Financial Editor of the New York *Times*, has made his Financial Department in SCRIBNER'S MAGAZINE known all over the United States. A sane, unsensational exposition each month of the financial and economic changes. All important bankers, business men, and investors read it and appreciate it.

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS, SCRIBNER'S MAGAZINE, 597-599 Fifth Avenue, New York

Please send Scribner's Magazine for one year. Signed

Name .....

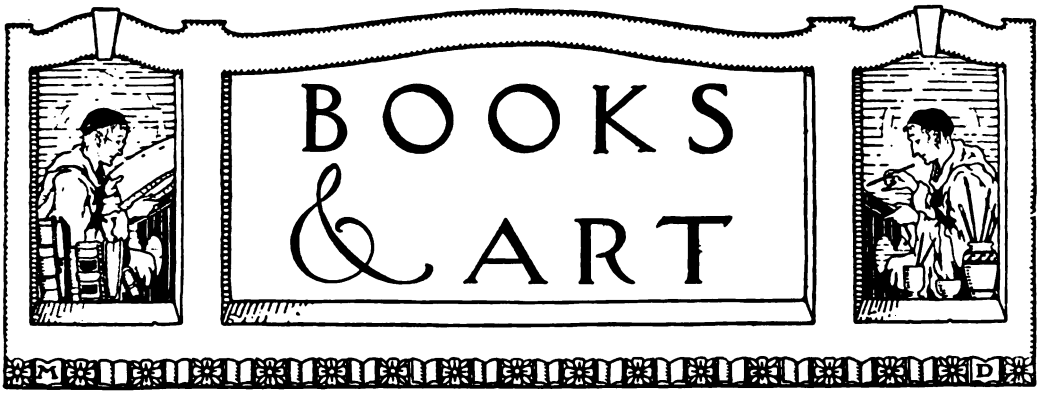
Address .....

On receipt of your memo I will remit $4.00. Check may be sent with order

WITHOUT COST TO YOU

Sign the coupon and we will include without cost a copy of the current issue of SCRIBNER'S MAGAZINE

Digitized by Google



YOU ARE A WRITER. Don't you ever need help in marketing your work?

I am a literary adviser. For years I read for Macmillan, then for Doran, and then I became consulting specialist to them and to Holt, Stokes, Lippincott, Harcourt and others, for most of whom I have also done expert editing, helping authors to make their work salable.

Let me help YOU. I am closely in touch with the market for books, short stories, articles, and verses, and I have a special department for plays and scenarios.

Send for my circular.

THE WRITERS' WORKSHOP
549 LEXINGTON AVENUE
NEW YORK CITY

Mathilde Weil

The Art of the Short Story

PROFESSOR WALTER B. PITKIN will accept a limited number of advanced writers for instruction by mail in short-story writing. The teaching is adapted to individual needs. Manuscripts will be prepared for the magazines and current markets studied. Writers of serious purpose wishing more professional instruction than academic courses provide are invited to write for particulars.

PROFESSOR WALTER B. PITKIN
SUB-STATION 84 NEW YORK

FRENCH BOOKS *and* BOOK CLUB

Our catalogue and monthly list sent on request. Books in all languages.

SCHOENHOF BOOK COMPANY, 15 Beacon St., Boston, Mass.

PICTURES IN FULL COLOR FOR YOUR HOME

Send twenty-five cents (stamps) for illustrated catalogue of

The Medici Prints

Exact facsimiles of more than two hundred
GREAT PAINTINGS BY GREAT MASTERS
in the world's art galleries and private collections.

Ask your dealer to show you the Medici Prints.
They are favorite Christmas and wedding presents.

THE MEDICI SOCIETY, Publishers, 753 Boylston Street, Boston
Publishers for the United States of The Burlington Magazine for Connoisseurs

GENEALOGIST

LAWRENCE BRAINERD

9 Ashburton Place BOSTON, MASS.

Research for Authoritative records of all American families. TERMS MODERATE.

BOOKPLATES FOR BEGINNERS

BOOKPLATES FOR BEGINNERS is a comprehensive survey of the whole subject of bookplates, or *ex-libris*. It deals with their origin; with their early use in America; with the modern phases of the art, and with bookplate collecting. The book is fully illustrated; large quarto in size, and is substantially bound. Complete description on request.

ALFRED FOWLER, 17 Board of Trade, Kansas City, Missouri

WASHINGTON'S DIARIES, 1791-99

Now accessible to readers. Transcribed and published from

Washington's Original Note Books

by JOS. A. HOSKINS, Summerfield, N.C. Price $1.50

ALEXANDER VAN RENSSELAER

Authors' Representative and Manuscript Broker

450 Fourth Avenue, New York City

Write to-day for rates and full particulars

COATS-OF-ARMS AND CRESTS

Searched and painted in Water-Colors for framing. Stationery Embossing dies cut. Authority guaranteed. $6.00 up. *Established 1908.*

GEORGE A. TODD, 57 Cornell Ave., Yonkers, N.Y.

YOUR HOROSCOPE

Intelligently analyzed, offers constructive advice toward the development of personality, talents and success.

MARION MEYER DREW Beacon, New York

BRONZE
HONOR ROLLS
AND
HISTORICAL TABLETS
REED & BARTON, TAUNTON, MASS.



The Roycrofters' Memorial to Elbert Hubbard

Following Hubbard's tragic death on the "Lusitania" in 1915, announcement was made from East Aurora that the Philistine Magazine would be discontinued. Hubbard had gone on a long journey and might need his "Philistine." Besides, who was to take up his pen? It was also a beautiful tribute to the father from the son.

The same spirit of devotion has prompted the Roycrofters to issue their memorial edition of "Little Journeys to the Homes of the Great." In no other way could they so fittingly perpetuate the memory of the founder of their institution as to liberate the influence that was such an important factor in moulding the career of his genius.

LITTLE JOURNEYS TO THE HOMES OF THE GREAT

FOURTEEN YEARS were consumed in the writing of the work that ranks to-day as Elbert Hubbard's masterpiece. In 1894 the series of "Little Journeys to the Homes of the Great" was begun, and once a month for fourteen years, without a break, one of these little pilgrimages was given to the world.

These little gems have been accepted as classics and will live. In all there are one hundred and eighty-two "Little Journeys" that take us to the homes of the men and women who transformed the thought of their time, changed the course of empire and marked the destiny of civilization. Through him, the ideas, the deeds, the achievements of these immortals have been given to the living present and will be sent echoing down the centuries.

As a writer Elbert Hubbard stands in the front rank of the Immortals. One of the ablest writers in America, Ed Howe, called him "the brightest man in the writing game."

Few businessmen have left institutions that reflect as much credit upon their founder, and yet the Roycroft Shops were launched primarily to demonstrate his philosophy that "Art is merely the expression of a man's joy in his work."

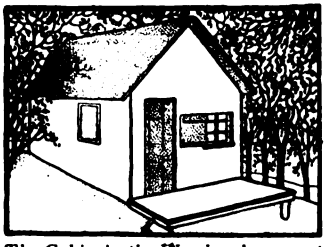
No public speaker who gave the platform his whole time appeared before as many audiences in the course of a year as this businessman and writer.

Where did Elbert Hubbard find the inspiration for carrying on his great work? It is no secret at East Aurora. It was derived from his own little pilgrimages to the haunts of the Great.

The Memorial Edition of LITTLE JOURNEYS TO THE HOMES OF THE GREAT is complete in 14 volumes, printed on specially made deckle-edge paper containing the Roycroft water-mark, semi-flexible binding, each volume handsomely embossed and modeled in colors.

Mail Coupon For Very Special Quotation and Free Little Journey Booklet

A limited number of the Memorial sets will be distributed at a very special price, so low in fact, that we cannot publish th price broadcast. To do so might possibly interfere with the future sale of the edition. Therefore we will name this introductory price only by letter direct to those sending in the following coupon.



The Cabin in the Woods where most of the Little Journeys were written

THE ROYCROFTERS, East Aurora, N.Y.

Please send me the Little Journey Booklet Free, also Full Particulars of the Memorial Edition and your easy payment plan.

Name .....

Address .....

Town ..... State .....

A.M. 12-21

Digitized by Google

TEACHERS PREPARING STUDENTS

for college entrance examinations should see that all such students own a copy of

WRITING THROUGH READING

The compilers of the Entrance Board Examinations in English are recognizing more and more the value of the Abstract and the Paraphrase as tests of the student's ability to comprehend what he reads.

Writing Through Reading is the only book on the market which fully deals with these aids to thinking, as well as with Transcription, Writing from Dictation, Translation and Imitation.

Price 90 cents, postpaid



ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.
8 Arlington Street Boston (17), Mass.

...ip
...rite,
...Develop
...der the
...n. Make
...liable.
...to dollars.
...tory Writ-
...Journalism,
...Photoplay
...ght person-
...g Esenwein,
...Magazine, and
...ive criticism.
...real teaching
...tories and articles
...work," he calls it.
...before completing
...wife and mother, is
...today writing alone.
...y doing so much for
...recognize this, for over
...culties of higher institu-
...partment. The editors
...commending our courses.
...booklet free. We also publish
...y workers; sample copy 20c, annual
...offer a manuscript criticism service.
...atalogue free.
...dence School
...ield, Mass.
...ORPORATED 1904

EDUCATION
...s in English, Spanish, Mathe-
... Chemistry, Drawing, Educa-
...siness and in 35 other subjects are
...by correspondence. Begin any time.
...rsity of Chicago
Division 34, Chicago, Ill.

...tic Readings
Number 16
...IRTY-FIVE YEARS
... of '85 to a Freshman of To-day
...ERICK J. E. WOODBRIDGE
Columbia University
...th student, class of 1922, has ...this essay "The top liner on ...an."
Price 15 cents
...NTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.
Boston (17), Mass.

Digitized by Google

Indiana

"STAMMERING
Its Cause and Cure"

You can be quickly cured if you stammer. Send 10 cents, coin or stamps, for 288 page cloth bound book on Stammering and Stuttering. It tells how I cured myself after Stammering and Stuttering for 20 years. BENJAMIN N. BOGUE
4518 Bogue Building, 1147 N. Ill. St. Indianapolis

Maryland

TOME SCHOOL
NATIONAL BOARDING SCHOOL FOR BOYS
Rates, $1000. New 75-foot Swimming Pool.
MURRAY PEABODY BRUSH, Ph.D., Director.
Maryland, Port Deposit

Massachusetts

ABBOT ACADEMY
A School for Girls. ANDOVER, MASS. Founded 1828.
23 miles from Boston. College preparation. Strong course for High School graduates. Outdoor sports.
Address MISS BERTHA BAILEY, Principal.

MISS McCLINTOCK'S SCHOOL FOR GIRLS
MISS MARY LAW MCCLINTOCK, Principal,
4 Arlington Street,
Boston, Mass.

SCHOOL OF APPLIED ARTS
296 BOYLSTON ST., BOSTON, MASS.
Under Management of Tide Over League
Vocational training. Thorough personal instruction. Elementary and Advanced Courses in Weaving, Leather Work, Basketry, Design, Rug Making, Woodwork. Strong courses in Occupational Therapy. Winter and summer sessions. Students admitted at any time when there is a vacancy. (*Eighth year.*)
Director, MISS MARY IRVING HUSTED, B.S.

MASSACHUSETTS, Boston. 555 Boylston St. (Copley Sq.)
CHAUNCY HALL SCHOOL
Established 1828. Prepares boys exclusively for MASSACHUSETTS INSTITUTE OF TECHNOLOGY and other scientific schools. Every teacher a specialist.
FRANKLIN T. KURT, Principal.

THE CHAMBERLAYNE SCHOOL
General, special and college preparatory courses.
Household arts. Music. Languages—native teachers.
Out-of-door sports. 261 Clarendon St.
Corner of Commonwealth Ave., BOSTON, MASS.

STAMMERERS
FOR 54 YEARS we have successfully corrected stammering by our simple and natural method. Individual instruction only. SAMUEL R. ROBBINS, Director
Boston Stammerers' Institute
246 Huntington Avenue Boston 17, Mass.

THE ERSKINE SCHOOL
...tical, Business and Vocational Training for Women.
... EUPHEMIA E. MCCLINTOCK, M.A., *Principal.*
4 Chestnut Street, Boston, Mass.

MASSACHUSETTS—(*Continued*)

Bradford Academy



Founded 1803. Three-year course for college preparation. Two-year course for High School graduates. Twenty-five acre campus, splendid equipment.
MISS MARION COATS, A.M., Principal
Box 168, Bradford, Mass.

JUNIOR BRADFORD
A Preparatory School for Bradford Academy
Directed study and play. Arts and crafts. All advantages of Bradford Academy equipment. For Booklets address THE REGISTRAR, 139 Main Street, Bradford, Mass.

Sea Pines School of Personality for Girls
REV. THOMAS BICKFORD, A.M., *Founder*. For grammar and high school students. Three terms, fall, spring and summer. Mid-winter vacation. Pine groves. Seashore. Happy outdoor life for training in self-discovery and self-development. MISS FAITH BICKFORD, MISS ADDIE BICKFORD, *Directors*, Box N, Brewster, Mass.

CHOATE SCHOOL
1600 Beacon Street, Brookline, Massachusetts.
Home and day school for girls.
AUGUSTA CHOATE, Vassar, A.B., A.M., *Principal.*

THE BROWNE AND NICHOLS SCHOOL
List for 1922-23 Now Open.
GEORGE H. BROWNE, A.M., WILLARD REED, A.M.
Telephone 57170 CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS

WILLISTON A SCHOOL FOR BOYS
Preparatory for college or scientific school. Directed work and play. Junior school for boys from 10 to 14. A distinct school in its own building. Separate faculty. Address
ARCHIBALD V. GALBRAITH, Principal, Box C, Easthampton, Mass.

ROGERS HALL SCHOOL FOR GIRLS
Lowell, Massachusetts. 26 Minutes from Boston.
Country Sports. *Gymnasium and swimming pool.*
For catalogue and views, address
Miss OLIVE SEWALL PARSONS, B. A., Prin.

WALNUT HILL SCHOOL
17 Highland Street, Natick, Mass.
A College Preparatory School for Girls. 17 miles from Boston, 40 Acres. Skating Pond. Athletic Fields. 6 Buildings. Gymnasium.
Miss Conant, Miss Bigelow, Principals.

MASSACHUSETTS — (Continued)

THE BURNHAM SCHOOL FOR GIRLS
NORTHAMPTON, MASSACHUSETTS
Founded by Mary A. Burnham in 1877
Opposite Smith College Campus
MISS HELEN E. THOMPSON, Headmistress

Miss Hall's School
Pittsfield, Massachusetts

THE MISSES ALLEN SCHOOL
Life in the open. Athletics. Household Arts. College and general courses.
Each girl's personality observed and developed. Write for booklet. Telephone W. N. 131. West Newton, Mass.

Wilbraham Academy
Serious work, wholesome play. Ideal location and environment. Prepares for college and scientific schools. 250 acres. 5 brick buildings. Athletic fields. Modern equipment. Limited enrollment. Moderate rate.
GAYLORD W. DOUGLASS, Headmaster.
Wilbraham, Mass.

250 Boys **WORCESTER ACADEMY** 22 Teachers
Strictly preparatory for college or engineering school. Junior School for young boys. For catalog, address *The Registrar*, G. D. Church, M.A., Samuel F. Holmes, M.A., *Principal*, Worcester, Mass.

Missouri

Missouri, Kirkwood, St. Louis Co., Box 1000.
LENOX HALL "The real Eastern School in the Heart of the Middle West." Suburban location, 30 minutes from St. Louis. Six-acre campus, magnificently landscaped. College Preparatory and Special Courses. Athletics. Limited enrollment. Tuition, $1,000. Catalogue. Address Mrs. M. Louise Thomas, Principal.

New Hampshire

KIMBALL UNION ACADEMY
A high grade preparatory school with a moderate tuition. 109th year began Sept. 14th. High elevation. Eight buildings. 100 acres. Farm. Separate dormitories for girls and boys. New gymnasium. Playing fields. Outing club for winter sports.
Address Charles Alden Tracy, *Headmaster*, Meriden, N.H.

New Jersey

CENTENARY COLLEGIATE INSTITUTE
A girls' school in beautiful country near New York. 48th year. 5 modern buildings; 50 acres; $600,000 equipment; athletics, swimming pool, etc. Sensible regulation and dress. College preparatory certificates. General and special courses. Catalog on request.
[illegible], Pres. Box 71, Hackettstown, N.J.

NEW JERSEY — (Continued)

New Jersey, Orange.
Miss Beard's School for Girls
A country school, 13 miles from New York. College preparatory, special courses. Music, Art, Domestic Arts and Science. Supervised physical work in gymnasium and field. Catalog on request.
Address Miss Lucie C. Beard.

KENT PLACE SUMMIT, N.J. 20 miles from New York.
A COUNTRY SCHOOL FOR GIRLS.
College Preparatory and Academic Courses.
Mrs. Sarah Woodman Paul, Miss Anna S. Woodman } *Principals.*

New York

THE KNOX SCHOOL FOR GIRLS
Formerly at Tarrytown-on-Hudson, now on Otsego Lake, Cooperstown, New York. For catalog and views, address
Mrs. Russell Houghton, Box 20, Cooperstown, N.Y.

AMERICAN ACADEMY OF DRAMATIC ARTS
Founded in 1884
FRANKLIN H. SARGENT, President
The leading institution for Dramatic and Expressional Training in America.
Connected with Charles Frohman's Empire Theatre and Companies.
For information apply to
SECRETARY
255 Carnegie Hall, New York, N.Y.

THE COMMONWEALTH SCHOOL
A School that prepares young women for Home Making and for taking an intelligent part in the life of the community.
Spring Term Opens January 30th.
Regular course one year. Special short courses.
136 East 55th Street, New York City.

Institute of Musical Art Frank Damrosch Director
An endowed school. Provides a thorough and comprehensive musical education in all branches, and is equipped to give highest advantages to most exceptional talents. Address Secretary
120 Claremont Ave., New York City

David Mannes Music School
157 East 74th St., New York City

Miss C. E. Mason's Suburban School for Girls
"The Castle," Tarrytown-on-Hudson, New York
Only 40 minutes from N. Y. City. Upper School for girls 13 to 25; Lower School for girls 7 to 13. All departments. Vocational training emphasized in Summer School. Preparation for leading colleges. For circular address Miss C. E. Mason, LL.M., Lock Box 866.

Pennsylvania

Gardening, Farming and Poultry Husbandry
The New Profession for Women

SCHOOL OF HORTICULTURE

AMBLER, PENNSYLVANIA. Situated in beautiful open country, 18 miles from Philadelphia. Two-year Diploma Course, entrance Sept. 13th, 1921, and Jan. 17th, 1922. Thorough training in theory and practice. Unusual positions obtainable upon graduation. Circulars.
ELIZABETH LEIGHTON LEE, *Director.*

THE BALDWIN SCHOOL
Bryn Mawr, Pennsylvania.
A Country School for Girls.
ELIZABETH FORREST JOHNSON, A.B., Head of School.

HARCUM SCHOOL FOR GIRLS BRYN MAWR, PA.
Thorough college preparation; or special study. Music, art. New buildings, large grounds. Athletics, riding. 10 miles from Philadelphia. Write for illustrated catalog.
MRS. EDITH HATCHER HARCUM, B.L., Head of School
MRS. L. MAY WILLIS, B.P., Head of Academic Dept.

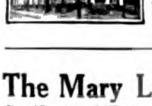
PENNSYLVANIA, Bryn Mawr.
THE SHIPLEY SCHOOL Preparatory to Bryn Mawr College. Situation opposite Bryn Mawr College gives special educational and social advantages. College Preparatory and Academic Courses. Supervised athletics. Well-equipped gymnasium. Address "Box N."
THE PRINCIPALS, ALICE G. HOWLAND, ELEANOR O. BROWNELL

HIGHLAND HALL Founded 1867. In old residential Hollidaysburg located in the most beautiful and healthful section of the Allegheny mountains. College preparatory, general and post-graduate courses.
MISS ELLEN C. KEATES, A.B., *Principal*, Hollidaysburg, Pa.

THE SANATORIUM SCHOOL, Lansdowne, Pa. A Select School and Sanatorium combined for the treatment and instruction of children who through illness have fallen behind others of their age in development and studies. Speech defects corrected. Cerebral hemorrhage treated. Ages 2 to 14 years. No feeble-minded. *Booklet.* CLAUDIA MINOR REDD.

Mercersburg Academy Offers a thorough physical, mental and moral training for college or business. Under Christian masters from the great universities. Located in the Cumberland Valley, one of the most picturesque spots of America. New gymnasium. Equipment modern. Write for catalog. Address Box 164.
William Mann Irvine, LL.D., Headmaster, Mercersburg, Pa.

OGONTZ SCHOOL
Founded 1850. A school for girls occupying an estate on the summit of Rydal Hills, 25 minutes from Phila. Illustrated booklet describing new building mailed on request. Rydal, Junior Department. Miss ABBY A. SUTHERLAND, *Principal*, Pennsylvania, Montgomery County.

BYRON W. KING'S SCHOOL OF ORATORY

Courses for Teachers
ELOCUTION and SPEECH ARTS. Lyceum and Chautauqua Work. Speech defects, loss of Voice positively cured. Largest School of Speech Arts in America. Send for prospectus.
Mt. Oliver Pittsburgh, Pa.

The Mary Lyon School A Country School in a College Town. College Preparatory. Certificate privileges. General and Finishing Courses. Opportunity for advanced study. Open-air classrooms. *SEVEN GABLES, our Junior School for Girls 6 to 14.* H. M. Crist, A.B., Frances L. Crist, A.B., Principals, Box 1536, Swarthmore, Pa.

Rhode Island

The Mary C. Wheeler School
PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND
A Town and Country School. College preparatory and General Course. Advanced studio classes. Music. Secretarial Course. Farm home for girls 10 to 14 years.

Virginia

HOLLINS COLLEGE FOR WOMEN
Founded 1842. Standard College Courses for Bachelor of Arts and Bachelor of Music degrees. 290 students. Healthful location in the Virginia mountains. MATTY L. COCKE, President, Box 360, Hollins, Va.

WARRENTON COUNTRY SCHOOL
For young girls: In foothills of Virginia, near Washington. Preparatory and Special courses. French the language of the house. Inculcates habits of order and economy.
MLLE. LEA M. BOULIGNY, Box 41, Warrenton, Va.

West Virginia

ST. HILDA'S HALL, Charles Town, W. Va.
The Chevron School for Girls. Episcopal. In the Shenandoah Valley. College Preparatory. Elective courses. Music and Art. Athletics. Open air classes. Individual instruction. $600. Catalog.
MARIAN PENDLETON DUVAL, Principal. (Former Principal Stuart Hall)

Camps

SARGENT CAMPS Peterboro, N. H.
The Athletic Camps for Girls.
Expert direction in all athletic and outdoor sports combined with camp life. Homecraft for little girls in Junior Camp.
Address: *Secretary*, Everett Street, Cambridge, Mass.

ALOHA CAMPS Fairlee, Vermont. For Girls. 17th season.
3 camps—ages 7 to 30. Fun, Frolic, Friendships. Vigilance for health and safety. Booklet.
Mrs. E. L. Gulick, 280 Addington Rd., Brookline, Mass.

Teachers' Agencies

The Pratt Teachers' Agency
70 Fifth Avenue, New York
Recommends teachers to colleges, public and private schools in all parts of the country.
Advises parents about schools. WM. O. PRATT, Mgr.

Willard W. Andrews, *Pres.* F. Wayland Bailey, *Sec.*
Albany Teachers' Agency, Inc.
Has good positions for good teachers at good salaries. Calls coming every day. Now is the time to register. Send for circulars.
81 Chapel Street, Albany, New York

The Fisk Teachers' Agencies 2a Park Street BOSTON
156 Fifth Ave., N.Y.; 28 East Jackson Blvd., Chicago; Pittsburg; Birmingham; Memphis; Denver; Portland; Berkeley; Los Angeles; Manual free. EVERETT O. FISK & Co.

Digitized by Google

TEACHERS' AGENCIES — (Continued)

School Information FREE

Catalogs of all Boys' or Girls' private schools in U. S. Expert advice and relative standing free. State kind fully. 15th year. Maintained by American Schools' Association No fees.
Write 1101 Times Bldg., New York, or 1515 Masonic Temple, Chicago

Correspondence Schools

Training for Authorship



How to write, what to write, and where to sell.

Cultivate your mind. Develop your literary gifts. Master the art of self-expression. Make your spare time profitable. Turn your ideas into dollars.

Courses in Short-Story Writing, Versification, Journalism, Play Writing, Photoplay Writing, etc., taught personally by Dr. J. Berg Esenwein, for many years editor of Lippincott's Magazine, and a staff of literary experts. Constructive criticism. Frank, honest, helpful advice. *Real teaching*

Dr. Esenwein

One pupil has received over $5,000 for stories and articles written mostly in spare time—"play work," he calls it. Another pupil received over $1,000 before completing her first course. Another, a busy wife and mother, is averaging over $75 a week from photoplay writing alone.

There is no other institution or agency doing so much for writers, young or old. The universities recognize this, for over one hundred members of the English faculties of higher institutions are studying in our Literary Department. The editors recognize it, for they are constantly recommending our courses.

We publish *The Writer's Library*; 13 volumes; descriptive booklet free. We also publish *The Writer's Monthly*, the leading magazine for literary workers; sample copy 20c, annual subscription $2.00. Besides our teaching service, we offer a manuscript criticism service.

150-page illustrated catalogue free.

Please address—

The Home Correspondence School
Dept. 126, Springfield, Mass.
ESTABLISHED 1897 INCORPORATED 1904

Higher Education

HOME STUDY

Courses in English, Spanish, Mathematics, Chemistry, Drawing, Education, Business and in 35 other subjects are given by correspondence. Begin any time.

The University of Chicago
39th Year Division 34, Chicago, Ill.

Atlantic Readings

Number 16

AFTER THIRTY-FIVE YEARS

A Freshman of '85 to a Freshman of To-day

By FREDERICK J. E. WOODBRIDGE
of Columbia University

A Dartmouth student, class of 1922, has pronounced this essay "The top liner on the college man."

Price 15 cents

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.
8 Arlington Street Boston (17), Mass.

TEACHERS PREPARING STUDENTS

for college entrance examinations should see that all such students own a copy of

WRITING THROUGH READING

The compilers of the Entrance Board Examinations in English are recognizing more and more the value of the Abstract and the Paraphrase as tests of the student's ability to comprehend what he reads.

Writing Through Reading is the only book on the market which fully deals with these aids to thinking, as well as with Transcription, Writing from Dictation, Translation and Imitation.

Price 90 cents, postpaid



ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.
8 Arlington Street Boston (17), Mass.

Digitized by Google

TIFFANY & CO.

JEWELRY OF QUALITY

MAIL INQUIRIES GIVEN PROMPT ATTENTION

FIFTH AVENUE & 37TH STREET
NEW YORK

Digitized by Google

My little belle, you rightly spell
The happiness you wish us—
The truest word we've ever heard
For soup that's just delicious!





A masterpiece!

That is what you will pronounce Campbell's Vegetable Soup at the first delicious spoonful. The Campbell's zeal for Quality, the Campbell's nicety in preparation and blending, through more than half a century, tell in the delightful savor and invigorating richness of this famous soup.

Campbell's Vegetable Soup

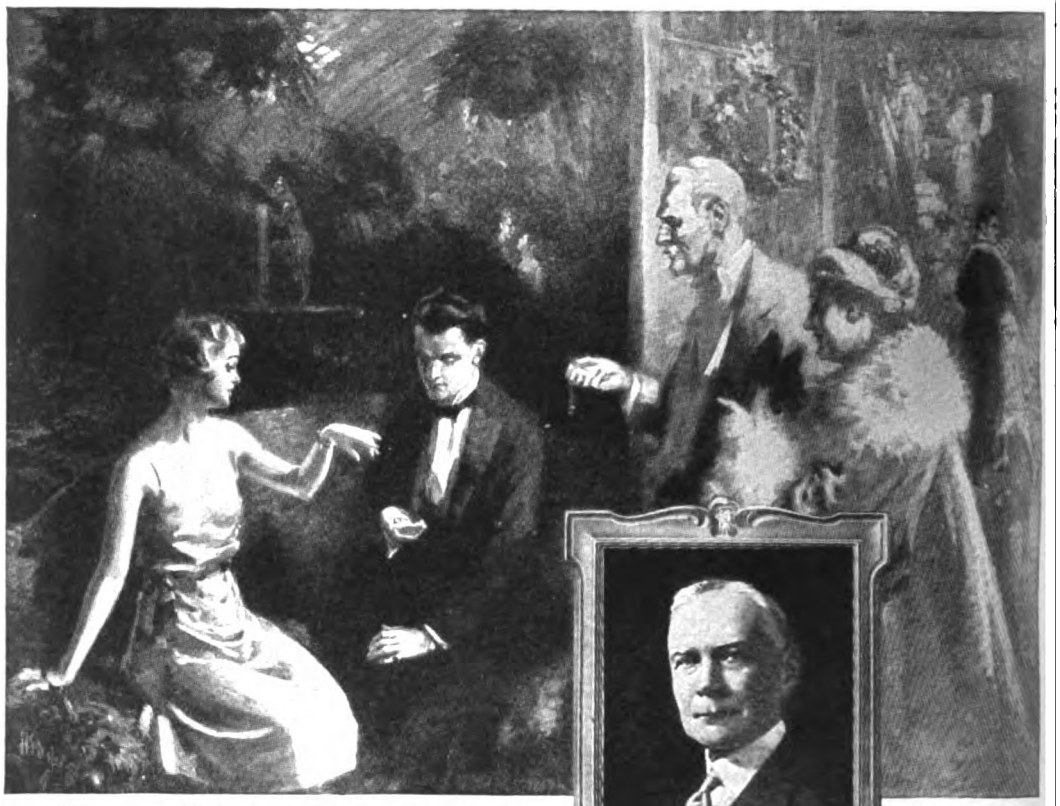
offers all the varied flavors and well-balanced food values of luscious red-ripe tomatoes, succulent Dutch cabbage, Chantenay carrots, choicest white and sweet potatoes, golden turnips, Country Gentleman corn, baby limas and dainty peas. Selected cereals, rich beef stock, herbs and spices —thirty-two distinct ingredients—complete this tempting soup.

21 kinds **12c a can**

Campbell's Soups

LOOK FOR THE RED AND WHITE LABEL

Digitized by Google



The Elgin of Today

"Time goes, you say? Ah, no.
Alas, Time stays: we go!"

Charles Henry Hulburd, Elgin's third President, who has headed this great organization for nearly a quarter-century



*The $250 Corsican * Material, construction, adjustments and service fully covered by Elgin Guarantee **

NEVER in the world's history has *the value of Time* been so widely recognized as today.

"A man is known by the Elgin he carries"—business and social leaders are known by the value they put on their Time. The more precious a commodity, the finer the safeguards for its measurement and control.

In the great Elgin factory of today, the original Elgin working principle is steadfastly maintained—"*all parts interchangeable.*" The standardized parts of the modern Elgin are instantly available at the repair bench of the nearest Jeweler.

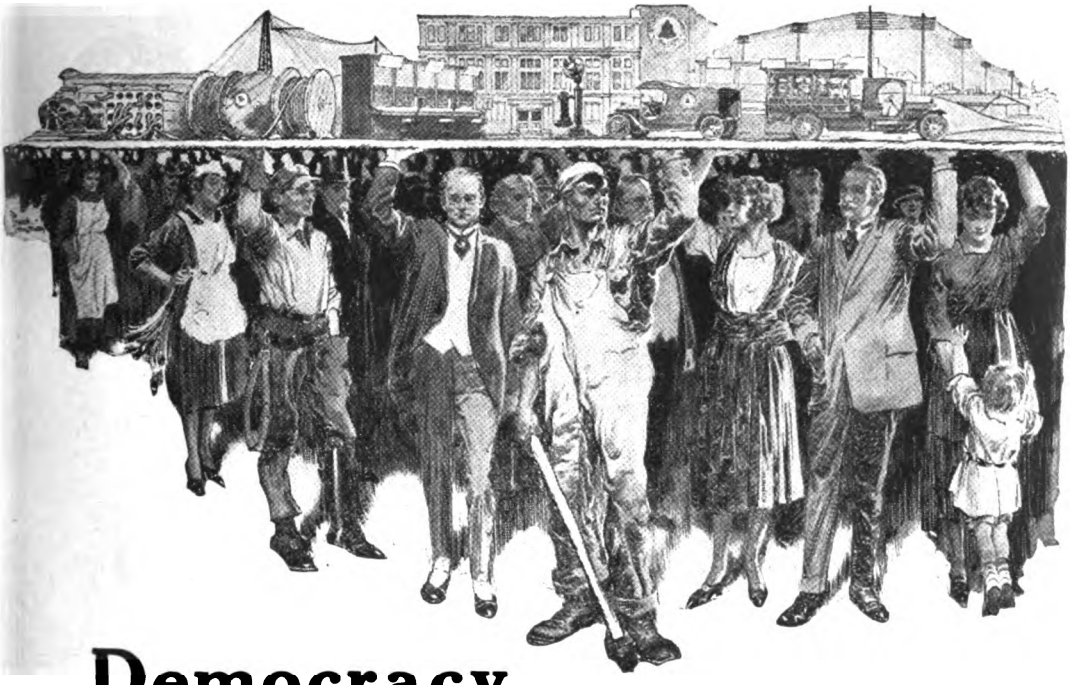
Thus guesswork has been replaced by precision—the Sun Dial of ancient Babylon by those timekeeping marvels of today—

Elgin Watches

MADE IN ELGIN, U. S. A.



Digitized by Google



Democracy

"—of the people, by the people, for the people"

People of every walk of life, in every state in the Union, are represented in the ownership of the Bell Telephone System. People from every class of telephone users, members of every trade, profession and business, as well as thousands of trust funds, are partners in this greatest investment democracy which is made up of the more than 175,000 stockholders of the American Telephone and Telegraph Company.

If this great body of people clasped hands they would form a line more than 150 miles long. Marching by your door, it would take more than 48 hours of ceaseless tramping for the line to pass.

This democracy of Bell telephone owners is greater in number than the entire population of one of our states; and more than half of its owners are women.

There is one Bell telephone shareholder for every 34 telephone subscribers. No other great industry has so democratic a distribution of its shares; no other industry is so completely owned by the people it serves. In the truest sense, the Bell System is an organization "of the people, by the people, for the people."

It is, therefore, not surprising that the Bell System gives the best and cheapest telephone service to be found anywhere in the world.

"BELL SYSTEM"

AMERICAN TELEPHONE AND TELEGRAPH COMPANY

AND ASSOCIATED COMPANIES

One Policy, One System, Universal Service, and all directed toward Better Service

Digitized by Google



Notable Comments

ON



The Founding of New England

¶ New England occupies such an important and dramatic place in our history that any contribution to what we already know about those days of the Colonies is of vivid interest. But with all that has been recorded, much of it in a painstaking and careful manner, some of it with genuine scholarship for its guide, it would seem as though the ground had been fully covered. And yet it has remained for James Truslow Adams to discover what might be designated as a new viewpoint in our contemplation of what the New England colonies went through, before they became duly organized and united in a common cause. —*Chicago Journal of Commerce.*

¶ A book decidedly to shake customary opinion. The distinctive character of the different New England colonies has never been better shown. — *New York Times.*

¶ James Truslow Adams, who is not a New Englander, has in THE FOUNDING OF NEW ENGLAND, done his best to tell the true story of what happened. He has done it so well that no reader who once starts this volume will lay it down willingly. — *Philadelphia Public Ledger.*

¶ No other history of New England of equal compass is now any longer worth reading, and all the larger histories must be corrected by this one. — *The Nation.*

¶ This book is a notable achievement. It deserves to have a place among the first-class histories of this country. — *Baltimore News.*

Illustrated with facsimile documents and maps,
blue silk cloth binding, gold stamping,
482 pages, $4.00

At All Bookstores, or

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC., 8 Arlington St., Boston (17), Mass.

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC. A.M. 12-21
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

Gentlemen: Enclosed find.....and mail postpaid **THE FOUNDING OF NEW ENGLAND**

Name.....*Street*.....

City.....*State*.....

Digitized by Google



Not up to it—yet how can he get the vigor that puts work through?

Overfatigue—headaches—upset by trifles

Now traced to one common underlying cause

JUST a bit of headache occasionally, or loss of sleep, or susceptibility to minor ailments—do these impair your efficiency, keep you from getting ahead as you ought?

Scientists now tell us that the common cause of these various ailments is often lack of one single element—vitamine—in food. Unless this cause is removed our future health is undermined and our life shortened.

Yearly thousands of men and women still under forty die from old-age diseases. It is now known and acknowledged that faulty eating has lowered their vitality so that they easily get infections which prove fatal—that they get diseases normally coming only with old age. Yet science now knows how this shocking condition can be corrected.

Today thousands of men and women are getting this essential food factor by eating Fleischmann's Yeast. Fleischmann's Yeast richly supplies this needed factor, for yeast is its richest known source.

Because of its freshness, Fleischmann's Yeast helps the intestines in their elimination of poisonous waste matter. You get it fresh every day.

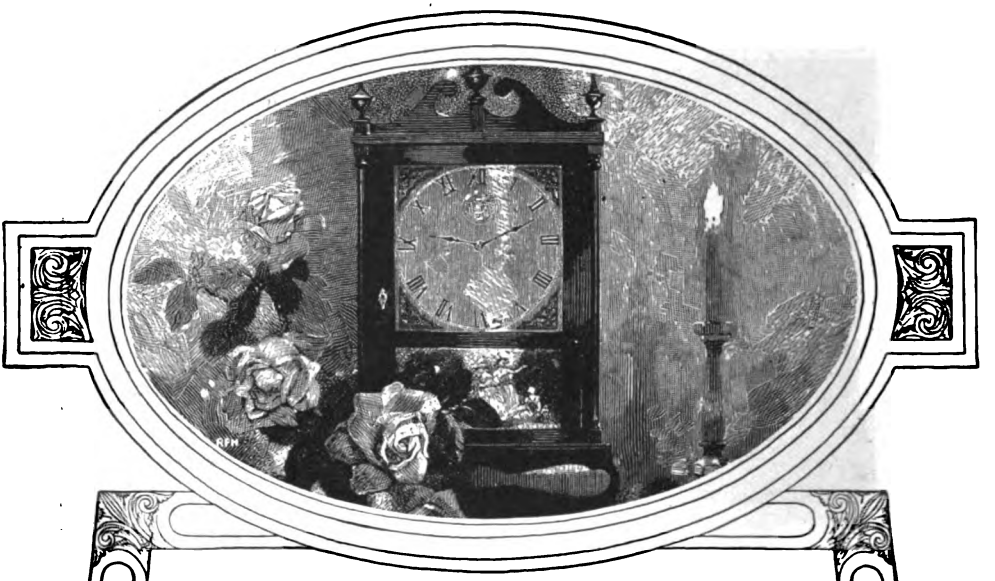
A noted professor and doctor of medicine says that fresh, compressed yeast is more or less of a stomach and intestinal antiseptic, that it increases the action of the intestines and stimulates the production of white corpuscles.

Eat 2 to 3 cakes of Fleischmann's Yeast daily, before or between meals. Have it on the table at home. Have it at your office and eat it at your desk. Ask for it at noontime at your lunch place. *You will like its fresh, distinctive flavor, and the clean wholesome taste it leaves in your mouth.* Only one precaution: if troubled with gas, dissolve the yeast first in very hot water. This does not affect the efficacy of the yeast.

Fresh Yeast has received general attention from the public since recent scientific tests have proved that fresh yeast stimulates digestion, builds up the body tissues and keeps the body more resistant to disease. These original tests were all made with Fleischmann's Yeast. *Beware of untested yeast-vitamine preparations that contain drugs or other mixtures.* Fleischmann's Yeast (fresh) is a pure food, rich in vitamine, in which it measures up to the high standards set by laboratories and hospitals. *The familiar tin-foil package with the yellow label is the only form in which Fleischmann's Yeast for Health is sold.*

Send 4c in stamps for the valuable booklet, "The New Importance of Yeast in Diet." Address THE FLEISCHMANN COMPANY, Dept. JJ-31, 701 Washington St., New York.

Digitized by Google



How many clock ticks are yours?

Time is the most expensive commodity in the world today. As a means of conserving the hours, packing the utmost into speeding seconds, the Mimeograph is probably unmatched in all mechanical invention. Five thousand well printed duplicates of a letter, or other typewritten sheet, it delivers hourly—forty and more thousand a day. No slow type to set. The stencil, clicked off on the typewriter, is immediately ready to print—the least expensive and quickest form of printing. Good workmanship depends upon care rather than skill. The work may be done privately and under intimate supervision. Now saving unnumbered thousands of dollars for industrial and educational institutions throughout the world. Let us show you how it will save both expense and time for you. Send for booklet "Q-11"—today. A. B. Dick Company, Chicago—and New York.

MIMEOGRAPH

Digitized by Google



The Estey Residence Organ

THIS COMPANY is the oldest firm of organ builders in this country. It has built organs of all kinds for every purpose. When it turned its attention to pipe organs for homes, it had a rich and varied experience to draw on. This experience is available to any home owner or home builder who is interested in this noble instrument, or to any architect who desires to suggest an organ for the house he is building. Each organ is designed for a particular house, and it may be played by music rolls or by an organist.

THE ESTEY ORGAN COMPANY, *Brattleboro, Vermont*

Digitized by Google

The JOY of GIVING

ON one day in the year all Christendom pauses in the pursuit of gain and dedicates itself to the idea that giving is better than getting.

Since the tide of time first broke, in ripples now too faint to be heard, experience has proved that to receive one must serve and Service is the giving of one's self.



FOR one hundred and eight years Seth Thomas Clocks, with faces wreathed in smiles and holly, have watched the spark of the Christmas spirit as it has lit candle after candle in the homes and hearts of America's millions.

Ticking the midnight hour, they watched our great grandmothers slip silver buckles and snuff boxes into our great grandfathers' hose. Their muffled voices said, "Good, good" when grandfather smuggled a cashmere shawl into grandmother's fireside chair.

And, as regularly as Christmas has come, innumerable Seth Thomases have beamed at the smiling faces that have peered into theirs answering the exclamation, "Oh! A Seth Thomas for me. How beautiful! How wonderful!" with the friendly greeting—"I'm glad to be here. Start my pendulum and let's make this a regular home.

The business of making Seth Thomas Clocks has survived the years, not because they represent so much fine mahogany, so many wheels of brass, such beautifully chaste dials—but because they are the sum and substance of millions of moments of the lives of men and women who have given all of themselves to their tasks.

SETH THOMAS CLOCK COMPANY

Digitized by Google



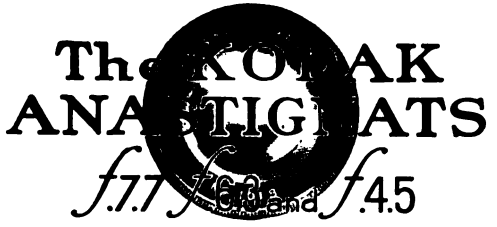
Books that are never finished

Bulky volumes of mathematical calculation that represent almost a decade of untiring research, cram the safe at the Kodak Lens Plant.

It is on these pages—a record of lens achievement—that the Kodak Anastigmat, subjected, of course, to relentless laboratory tests at each stage of its development, was born and perfected.

And still the work goes on. No book is marked "Finis" because true genius that created the Kodak Anastigmat is never satisfied.

"About Lenses" is a little booklet whose primary purpose is to give you information you ought to have in order to get better pictures. We should like to send you a copy — free.



Eastman Kodak Company
Rochester, N. Y.

Digitized by Google



Books for the Home Lover

Christmas Gift Suggestions



Inside the House Beautiful

By HENRIETTA C. PEABODY

Miss Peabody is editor of two popular books derived from THE HOUSE BEAUTIFUL, *Homemakers' Questions and Answers* and *What Makes the House Beautiful*. Her new volume contains many skillful designs for interior furnishings presented in most attractive form.

Among the chapter subjects are The Hospitable Hall, Making the Living-Room Livable, Curtains and Hangings, Books and Their Placing, Pictures and Wall Hangings, and many others. $3.00

What Makes the House Beautiful

***Edited by* HENRIETTA C. PEABODY**

This book has a very practical as well as an æsthetic value to those who are building or remodeling. It is a collection of excellent illustrations and carefully made measured drawings of architectural details, accompanied by explanatory text. $3.00

Homemakers' Questions and Answers

By HENRIETTA C. PEABODY

This new volume is an enlarged and revised edition of the little handbook which has proved such an excellent and practical aid for all homemakers. The early problems of financing, selection of site and design, construction problems, practical guidance in heating, lighting, plumbing and ventilating — all these are discussed from an experience based upon thousands of everyday building and decoration problems which have come to the Readers' Service Department of THE HOUSE BEAUTIFUL. $1.00

Collector's Luck

By ALICE VAN LEER CARRICK

There have been many books written about furniture collecting, and there are excellent guides in this direction. So, too, of china and glass, and the other things that are dear to the heart of the lovers of the antique. But this is a different sort of book. It gives many useful hints for the amateur and it is sound to the core in advice. But it is largely a recital of personal experiences, told in a chatty and colloquial style that carries the reader along breathless from one collecting adventure to another.

"It is slight wonder that such a book has passed into a second edition, for every reader of the first issue at once became anxious to tell his friends what a mine of richness lies between these marbled covers of old-fashioned design. To the amateur collector we can recommend it as a guide, counsellor and friend." — *Boston Transcript*.

Illustrated, $2.50

The Little Garden

By MRS. FRANCIS KING

This attractive and practical handbook for amateur gardeners is written by the President of the Women's National Farm and Garden Association. Equipped with instructive tables and illustrated with photographs of flowers, it should prove useful to all who own gardens and an inspiration to would-be gardeners. $1.75

The Every-Year Calendar for the Vegetable Garden

By FLORENCE TAFT EATON

Mrs. Eaton is an enthusiastic and skillful amateur gardener, who has turned her first-hand knowledge of practical gardening to good account for readers of THE HOUSE BEAUTIFUL and similar magazines, and now has condensed a great deal of experience in the raising of vegetables into the limits of twelve monthly calendar sheets of liberal size. $1.00

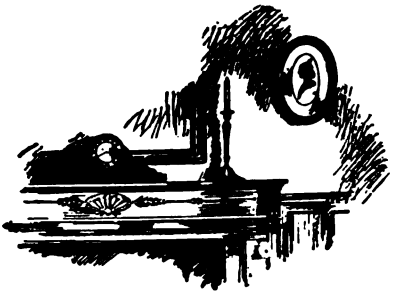
THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, Inc., A.M. 12-21
8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

Gentlemen: Enclosed find.....and mail, postpaid, books checked above.

Name..... *Street*.....

City..... *State*.....

Digitized by Google



When you give Genuine Mahogany you give heirlooms

YOU have seen quaint Mahogany tea-tables and writing desks at which Beaux in small-clothes and Belles in brocade have played their parts. The polished surface of the Mahogany has reflected powdered hair and patches. The legs, maybe, are scratched by the spurs of men who rode their last thoroughbred two hundred years ago. And have you ever thought that the children of your children's children may, sometime, reflect that you, too, enjoyed the beauty of the Genuine Mahogany furniture you are buying today? * * * *

The pleasure of owning Genuine Mahogany furniture is not yours alone. Like sterling silver and old lace, its presence bespeaks refinement and good taste and it is admired by your friends. But, after it has served *your* purposes, future generations will still admire its beauty. That is the wonder of Genuine Mahogany. It improves with age. It indicates that good taste is a precious jewel, good at any time or place.



No other wood possesses the individuality of Genuine Mahogany. It is the aristocrat of all woods. Styles may come and go, fashions may change, but Genuine Mahogany furniture is always in fashion and never out of style. But, just as an imitation diamond is inferior to the real gem, so is imitation Mahogany. It may resemble the Genuine for a time but the deep mellowness, characteristic of Genuine Mahogany, will never appear; neither can inferior furniture withstand atmospheric changes or the hard usage that the most carefully kept furniture must undergo.

It is for the purpose of enabling you to buy Genuine Mahogany furniture that the Mahogany Association has been formed. The Association will co-operate with furniture manufacturers and dealers to insure the purchaser of furniture getting a square deal. Good furniture can be made of other woods but—when you ask for Genuine Mahogany and pay for Genuine Mahogany, you should get Genuine Mahogany.

Ask your dealer to guarantee that the article you purchase is made of Genuine Mahogany.

After all—there's nothing like

MAHOGANY

MAHOGANY ASSOCIATION, 347 Madison Avenue, NEW YORK

Digitized by Google

A FINANCIAL MEETING PLACE

¶ In the pages immediately following, THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY groups the announcements of banks and bankers, with particular reference to those which offer a service in Commercial and Investment Banking. We believe it is to the interest of our readers to present such advertisements in this manner and, on our part, we undertake to accept, for this Department, only such announcements as, in our judgment, are submitted by firms and institutions which, through their character and experience, are worthy of the confidence of our readers.

"I have a Friend who . . ."

WHY otherwise intelligent people will accept anonymous say-sos on investments is difficult to explain.

In considering investment purchases, clear-cut information is the essential need — a need that can readily be met by any of our 50 offices.

Our information is based on a national view-point and years of experience.

We invite you to make yourself and your investment needs known at our nearest office.

A current list of high-grade securities, suitable to a wide range of investment needs, will be mailed on request for A. 172.



The National City Company

National City Bank Building, New York

Offices in more than 50 leading cities throughout the World

BONDS : SHORT TERM NOTES : ACCEPTANCES

Digitized by Google



When your hands are idle—*plant a tree*

SO counselled a wise old Scot who had witnessed many saplings reach the fullness of mature beauty. Living, a tree adds to the richness of life. Fallen, it is privileged to enter into the building of a home, a fine book, an admirably designed table, or serve as an humble carrier of goods.

"Only God can make a tree" — but any man may plant one. More power to the reforestation movement, which will make available an increasing supply of wood, sorely needed for this and succeeding generations.

The manufacturers who convert lumber into paper, building material, furniture, ships, boxes and ten thousand other useful forms recognize The National Shawmut Bank as an old established institution which heartily welcomes opportunity to be of assistance.

Many great shipments of lumber from the forests of Maine and Canada, as well as mahogany, teak, ebony and other imported hard woods, are financed, through this bank. Where great distances separate the shipper from the receiver, Shawmut's world wide representation insures that all financial transactions will be under our constant supervision to insure accuracy and speedy transmission.



Shippers and buyers of lumber, also interested banks, are invited to use Shawmut's facilities

The NATIONAL SHAWMUT BANK *of* Boston
Capital, surplus and undivided profits $22,000,000

Digitized by Google

The First National Bank of Boston

Transacts commercial banking business of every nature. Make it your New England Bank

Capital, Surplus and Profits $37,500,000

Send for this Book!



This book "Building with Bonds" will be sent to you free of charge upon request. If you are interested in learning more about bonds send for this beautifully illustrated book.

"Building with Bonds" tells about many classes of securities and thoroughly describes the Safety Bonds we offer for sale.

Ask for Edition Q-112

AMERICAN BOND & MORTGAGE COMPANY

American Bond & Mortgage Building
127 North Dearborn Street Chicago
562 Fifth Ave., New York City
Columbus, Ohio Davenport, Iowa
Grand Rapids, Mich. Rockford, Illinois

Every Person with Dependents

Should secure and read a copy of "Safeguarding Your Family's Future," which may be obtained at a local Trust Company, or by addressing the

TRUST COMPANY DIVISION
American Bankers Association
Five Nassau Street New York

Shackled Youth

By EDWARD YEOMANS
of Chicago

¶ An uncommonly worth-while book for everybody having anything to do with the education of children. For school people—teachers, principals and superintendents—it has a message of untold value.
144 *pages, cloth, gilt top and stamping.* ***Price*** $1.60

Published by
THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, BOSTON

Digitized by Google

A Country-Wide Investment Service

NEW YORK
140 Broadway
Fifth Ave. & 44th St.
Madison Ave. & 60th St.
268 Grand St.
ALBANY, N. Y.
ATLANTA, GA.
BALTIMORE, MD.
BOSTON, MASS.
BUFFALO, N. Y.
CHICAGO, ILL.
CINCINNATI, O.
CLEVELAND, O.
ERIE, PA.
HARRISBURG, PA.
HARTFORD, CONN.
JAMESTOWN, N. Y.
JOHNSTOWN, PA.
LOS ANGELES, CAL.
MINNEAPOLIS, MINN.
PHILADELPHIA, PA.
PITTSBURGH, PA.
PORTLAND, MAINE
PROVIDENCE, R. I.
READING, PA.
ROCHESTER, N. Y.
ST. LOUIS, MO.
SAN FRANCISCO, CAL.
SCRANTON, PA.
WASHINGTON, D. C.
WILKES-BARRE, PA.

Our nearest Office will serve you promptly



Investment

IN the Middle Ages money was hoarded in strong-boxes, where it was kept idle and unproductive.

In modern times money is actively employed through Investment. And among the various forms of investment the Bond stands pre-eminent.

Bonds, at present price levels, afford an unusual opportunity to obtain a liberal income during future years.

In selecting suitable issues the experienced service of this Company is available to you. We shall be pleased to give you detailed information regarding your present holdings and contemplated purchases.

Guaranty Company of New York

Digitized by Google



Handy Interest Table Free to Investors

6% — 6½% — 7%

Figuring interest is a very simple matter with this handy, vest-pocket size celluloid table. It shows at a glance exactly what you can earn on $1,000 in a day or any number of days, at 6%, 6½% or 7% interest.

One hundred per cent safety, combined with substantial interest return, has been offered by Greenebaum First Mortgage Real Estate Bonds for over two-thirds of a century. You can safely earn up to $70 per $1,000 invested in these sound securities. Detailed information regarding these most satisfactory investments will be sent you.

Send for this convenient article today. It's free to you, without obligation, upon request. Just sign and mail the coupon.

Greenebaum Sons Investment Company

66 Years' Proven Safety

Correspondents in Many Cities

Stockholders of this Company are identical with stockholders of Greenebaum Sons Bank and Trust Company

Oldest Banking House in Chicago

FOUNDED 1855

Use this Coupon

Greenebaum Sons Investment Company
La Salle and Madison Streets, Chicago
Please send me
☐ Handy Interest Table
☐ Information on "Greenebaum Investments"

NAME.....

STREET.....

CITY.....STATE.....412



Buying Bonds BY MAIL

PEOPLE today find it safe to buy anything they want by mail from well-known reliable houses. Such institutions cannot afford to disappoint; their business is based upon confidence.

The same is true of investments. It is even more satisfactory to buy bonds by mail than merchandise. You do not need to see a bond before buying; you can find out all about it in advance. The terms and conditions of a bond are easily appraised; a description of them, from a competent source, is sufficient.

Halsey, Stuart & Co. has perfected a system for selling bonds by mail which is safe, prompt and simple. The buyer runs no risks about delivery. Bonds are sent by registered mail at our risk and at our expense direct to purchaser, or they may be delivered through his bank.

Bonds may be purchased from us by mail on a cash or monthly payment basis. Full details will be sent upon request — write for circular A.M.10

HALSEY, STUART & CO.
INCORPORATED

CHICAGO 209 S. La Salle St. | NEW YORK 49 Wall Street | BOSTON 10 Post Office Sq
PHILADELPHIA Land Title Building | DETROIT Ford Building | ST. LOUIS Security Building
MILWAUKEE First Wis. Nat'l Bank Bldg. | MINNEAPOLIS Metropolitan Bank Building

Digitized by Google

The Measure of Greatness

Institutions which attain national importance are almost without exception performing a great work.

A business grows because it is needed. It is usually successful in proportion to its effort to serve.

Service is the bedrock of business principle.

The National Bank of Commerce in New York is a great bank because it is a useful bank. Large industrial and commercial institutions are its customers because it renders to them a comprehensive, world-wide banking service essential to the conduct of their affairs.

In the better times of the future, service will continue to be the guiding motive. We not only shall serve but shall understand and appreciate the service of others. We shall grasp the idea that railroads, public utilities and powerful industries are, after all, merely the machinery employed by society to serve itself. We shall accept usefulness as the measure of greatness.

The National Bank of Commerce in New York has one fundamental purpose —to extend and broaden its usefulness to commerce and industry—to serve.



National Bank of Commerce in New York

Capital, Surplus and Undivided Profits Over Fifty-five Million Dollars

Digitized by Google

World Wide Foreign Exchange Facilities

Are at Your Service

SINCE 1852 Knauth, Nachod & Kuhne has specialized in foreign exchange and has developed an organization with connections throughout the world specially qualified to handle the foreign transactions of American banks, bankers, business men and travelers.

For banks and bankers who draw foreign drafts under our protection our Service includes daily foreign exchange quotations by mail or telegraph, as desired. Our telegraph code quotes ten currencies in a ten word message.

Investment Securities

OUR Investment Department will give you impartial advice as to how your investment needs can best be met. We execute orders for the purchase and sale of all listed securities.

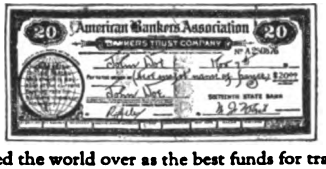
Inquire of our Service Department for information

"Seventy Years in Serving the Public"

Knauth, Nachod & Kuhne

120 Broadway NEW YORK

Trustworthy Friends for Travelers



Accepted the world over as the best funds for travelers.

"A·B·A" American Bankers Association Cheques

For particulars, write to

Bankers Trust Company, New York City

Cape Breton Tales

By HARRY JAMES SMITH

Author of "The Tailor-Made Man," "Mrs. Bumpstead Leigh," etc.

TO read these strangely moving tales is to adventure widely on the French shore of Cape Breton—to penetrate deeply into the character and genius of the place and its inhabitants Only one who knows how to go softly and understandingly among the inhabitants—in a sense, indeed, to become the inhabitants—could have written convincingly these transcripts of a simple, pastoral people. — *New York Herald.*

The book is bound in boards with Italian Fabriano paper 5¼" x 7½". Price $2.00.

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, Inc.
8 Arlington Street Boston (17), Mass.

STATEMENT OF THE OWNERSHIP, MANAGEMENT, ETC., OF THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY

Required by the Act of August 24, 1912

Published monthly at Concord, N.H.

NAME OF—	POST-OFFICE ADDRESS
Editor, ELLERY SEDGWICK	8 Arlington St., Boston, Mass.
Business Manager MACGREGOR JENKINS	8 Arlington St., Boston, Mass.
Publisher MACGREGOR JENKINS	8 Arlington St., Boston, Mass.
Owners: ELLERY SEDGWICK	8 Arlington St., Boston, Mass.
MACGREGOR JENKINS	8 Arlington St., Boston, Mass.
ESTATE OF GEORGE H. MIFFLIN	4 Park St., Boston, Mass.
M. A. DEWOLFE HOWE	8 Arlington St., Boston, Mass.
MABEL C. SEDGWICK	14 Walnut St., Boston, Mass.
ALICE D. JENKINS	Dover, Mass.
REGINALD WASHBURN	254 Salisbury St., Worcester, Mass.

Known bondholders, mortgagees, and other security holders, holding 1 per cent or more of the total amount of bonds, mortgages or other securities: E. Sohier Welch, Boston Five Cents Savings Bank.

Signed MACGREGOR JENKINS, *Treas.*

Sworn to and subscribed before me this 13th day of Oct., 1927.
[SEAL] MARY A. LYONS, *Notary Public.*
(My commission expires March 3, 1927.)

When you are in New York



THERE are many ways that we can serve you. We can help you transact your business; we can make your stay more pleasant.

If you are going abroad, we will furnish you with our Dollar Letter of Credit, and after you reach Paris, the Travel Service Bureau of our Paris Office will help you arrange your itinerary, assist you in passport matters, purchase railroad and steamship tickets, obtain hotel accommodations, arrange motor, airplane and sightseeing trips, relieving you of all details.

Perhaps you never thought of making a personal call on a big New York bank. If you will come to see us on your next visit to New York, we believe you will begin a friendship that will be as valuable as it will be pleasant. Our Uptown Office, Madison Avenue at 45th Street, is very convenient to your hotel.

THE EQUITABLE TRUST COMPANY
OF NEW YORK

37 WALL STREET

UPTOWN OFFICE: *Madison Ave. at 45th St.*
COLONIAL OFFICE: *222 Broadway*

London—3 King William St., E.C.4
Paris—23 Rue de la Paix



Digitized by Google

What's Coming This Winter?

Money rates—up or down?
How about bonds—tax exempts and industrials?
What's ahead in the stock market?

Babson's Reports

Barometer Letter—"The Winter Outlook," answers these questions and outlines coming developments in the investment world.

With this information you can see what's ahead and govern yourself accordingly.

REPORT ON REQUEST

This Barometer Letter and booklet—"*Getting the Most from Your Money*," will be sent to interested investors without charge. Clip out the Memo—*now*—and hand it to your secretary when you dictate the morning's mail.

Merely ask for Bulletin No. M-22

Roger W. Babson's Statistical Organization
Wellesley Hills, 82, Mass.
(Suburb of Boston)

The Largest Organization of Its Character in the World

CUT OFF HERE

MEMO for your secretary

Write Roger W. Babson, founder of the Babson Statistical Organization, Wellesley Hills, 82, Mass., as follows: Please send me Bulletin M-22 and booklet, "*Getting the Most from Your Money*"—gratis.



Safety of Principal

is assured by investing in conservative

8%

FIRST MORTGAGE NOTES

ON

Miami Hotels, Apartments and Business Properties

Send for circular giving full details

Bond and Mortgage Dept.

FIRST NATIONAL COMPANY

First Trust & Savings Bank Bldg.
MIAMI, FLORIDA

RONALD Publications on Business

JUST PUBLISHED

New and Revised Edition of This Standard Manual

AUDITING

Theory and Practice

By R. H. Montgomery

Certified Public Accountant; Ex-President, American Ass'n of Public Accountants; Attorney-at-law; member of firm of Lybrand, Ross Brothers & Montgomery.

Many thousands of business executives, as well as auditors and accountants, have found this work, in its previous editions, to be an indispensable manual of constructive business analysis and financial and accounting policy.

This new edition—revised, enlarged, and entirely rewritten—is made necessary by the developments during the past few years in accounting and financial procedure previously considered fixed.

A Reliable Guide to Sound Business, Financial, and Accounting Policy

Montgomery's "Auditing" is the standard American authority in accounting firms, corporations, wherever important accounts are kept. It thoroughly explains how to find out and report the exact financial conditions in a business. Every accountant and financial officer can make constant use of its advice and information. It explains clearly all essential features of both balance sheet and detailed audits and is packed with experience-tested facts that make it possible for you to get in this work the answer to almost any question of policy or procedure.

Get This Work for Examination

The important additions incorporated in this new work have made necessary a two-volume edition—Volume I, covering all the general principles and practice of auditing, is now ready. Volume II, containing the procedure in special audits, will be published January 1st. Get your copy of Volume I (about 800 pages, cloth binding, $6.00) now, and, if you wish, place at the same time an advance order for Volume II (about 500 pages, cloth binding, $4.00). Use the coupon below.

The Ronald Press Company

At Bookstores *Or By Mail*

The Ronald Press Company
20 Vesey Street, New York

Send me, postage prepaid, Volume I of Montgomery's "Auditing." Send me also Volume II immediately upon publication (January 1st). (If only one volume is desired, cross out the other title.)

Within five days of the receipt of each volume, I will either return it to you or remit the full price. (Volume I, $6.00; Volume II, $4.00). (*Orders from outside the territorial limits of the United States must be accompanied by remittance which will be refunded if books are returned*).

Name .....
Address .....
..... (441)
Firm and Position .....

For catalog of publications, check here. ☐

Digitized by Google

THE BOND DEPARTMENT OF

The CONTINENTAL *and* COMMERCIAL BANKS

CHICAGO

(Invested Capital over $55,000,000)

affords to *investors* the same assurance of satisfactory dealings, sound advice and competent service that is given to *depositors, customers* and *clients* in the

COMMERCIAL BANKING
SAVINGS
FOREIGN TRADE AND
TRUST DEPARTMENTS

You are cordially invited to consult our Bond Department officers in person or by mail regarding investments.

CONTINENTAL *and* COMMERCIAL

TRUST AND SAVINGS BANK

CHICAGO

Digitized by Google

Safety Tested and Proven

THE best test of the safety of a class of investments is their record — a record long enough in time, large enough in volume, to afford real standards of judgment. Apply this test to *Straus Bonds.*

THE TEST—

The varying conditions, favorable and unfavorable, during 39 years, including two wars and four financial crises.

THE PROOF—

39 years of prompt payment of hundreds of millions of dollars of principal and interest, without loss to any investor.

We submit that this record is ample evidence of the soundness of the bonds we offer and ample basis for the confidence of the investing public. Investigate these bonds and the reason for this record. Write today for our current investment guide and specify

BOOKLET L-1128

S.W. STRAUS & CO.

Established 1882 Incorporated

NEW YORK - Straus Building
CHICAGO - Straus Building

Offices in Fifteen Principal Cities

39 years without loss to any investor

Copyright 1921 by S. W. Straus & Co.

Investors' Library

THE search for information on the part of individual investors is one of the encouraging signs of the times.

The *Atlantic Monthly*, in connection with its Financial Advertising Department, wishes to encourage this by the publication of the following list of booklets, which, it is believed, should prove useful to those readers who are concerned over the problems of the investment of their surplus funds.

It is recommended that readers write directly to the Investment Houses, making request for such booklets as seem most likely to be useful, or for such information as the booklets may suggest. Our banker friends will be glad to be of service to *Atlantic Monthly* readers.

"Investment Securities"; Kidder, Peabody & Co., 17 Wall St., New York, or 115 Devonshire St., Boston, Mass.

"Let's Choose Executors and Talk of Wills," a booklet on the fiduciary activities of a large bank; Bankers' Trust Co., 16 Wall St., New York.

"Shawmut Service," an interesting booklet setting forth the many-sided service rendered by a present-day big-city bank. Of much interest to business men. Offered by the National Shawmut Bank, Boston, Mass.

"Common Sense in Investing Money and Safety and 6%," well-prepared booklets explaining the investment of money in improved real estate, as developed by S. W. Straus & Co., specialists in 6% real estate mortgage bonds, Straus Buildings, New York and Chicago.

"Equipment Trust Securities," a form of securities arising out of the financing of railroads' locomotives and cars. This booklet gives individual investors an opportunity of learning how the securities are created and why they are desirable as investments. Offered by Cassatt & Co., Commercial Trust Building, Philadelphia, Pa.

"Getting the Most from Your Money." Investment involves method. Some follow one plan, some another. This booklet sets forth plans and suggestions useful to men and women who take more than ordinary interest in their investment problems. Offered by Babson's Statistical Organization, Wellesley Hills, Mass.

"A Booklet Describing Equitable Service"; Equitable Trust Company, 37 Wall Street, New York City.

"Trust Service for Corporations," a brief presentation of the services rendered to corporations as transfer agent, registrar, disbursing agent, trustee, agent under financial adjustments, and custodian of securities. Offered by Guaranty Trust Company of New York, 140 Broadway, New York City.

"Investment Recommendations," a monthly list and description of securities offered to meet the various requirements of investors, together with a mortgage map of one of the leading railroad systems of the country. Offered by Guaranty Company of New York, 140 Broadway, New York City.

"Choosing Your Investment Banker," a worth-while booklet for investors, giving them an idea of what to look for in their investment banker. Offered by Halsey, Stuart & Co., 209 So. La Salle St., Chicago, Ill.

"Systematic Savings Plan," a pamphlet which discusses the partial payment method of buying real estate mortgages. Offered by Greenebaum Sons Bank & Trust Company, La Salle and Madison Streets, Chicago, Ill.

"Concerning Trusts and Wills," a booklet outlining the advantages of a trust company over an individual in fiduciary capacities. Offered by the Old Colony Trust Company, Boston, Mass.

"Northern Pacific-Great Northern," a study of two great railroad systems in connection with the issue of $230,000,000 bonds popularly known as "Burlington Joints." Offered by Brown Brothers & Co., 59 Wall Street, New York City.

"Safeguarding Your Family's Future," a booklet of interest to men and women in the careful making of their wills and particularly to present the idea of a corporate executor as compared to the individual acting as executor. Offered by American Bankers' Association, Trust Company Division, 5 Nassau Street, New York City.

"Men and Bonds," an illustrated booklet describing in detail the work of a modern investment house in terms of the National City Company's scope and service. Of much interest to investors. Offered by National City Company, 55 Wall Street, New York City.

"Hides and Skins and the Manufacture of Leather," a booklet giving information of interest to investors in connection with one of our great industries. Offered by the First National Bank, Boston, Mass.

CALIFORNIA REDWOOD



The mantel, panels and ceiling beams of this living room are Redwood, finished in the natural color of the wood.

Firelight on Redwood—Ask your Architect

A Redwood living room is at its best in the evening, with the light from a wood fire making flickering patterns on the softly glowing walls.

Among architects and decorators there is a growing realization that Redwood, with its rich variety of grain and texture and tone, offers a marvellous palette to the artist in interior design. Hence a growing proportion of the Redwood cut is going into beautiful and distinguished living rooms.

But Redwood's uses are extremely varied. Being free from pitch and resin it is particularly adapted to paint and enamel work of all kinds. Its unequalled resistance to rot is well known—hence its extensive employment for exterior trim, siding, shingles, etc., for tanks and silos on the farm, and for numerous special industrial uses.

To get accurate and disinterested information about Redwood, go to your architect, building contractor, or lumber dealer, and say, *"What about Redwood?"*

Redwood is unequalled for the special uses to which it is best adapted, and for these uses the available supply is adequate for generations. Meanwhile, according to U. S. Forest Service Bulletin 38, merchantable second-growth Redwood is produced in less than 60 years by natural growth from the stump.

Digitized by Google



51,623 "Tel-U-Where" Inquiries in Boston Alone

Akron	Houston	Richmond
Albany	Indianapolis	Rochester
Altoona	Jacksonville	*Sacramento
Atlanta	Jersey City	Saginaw
Atlantic City	Kansas City	*Salt Lake City
*Baltimore	Knoxville	San Antonio
Binghampton	*Lawrence	*San Francisco
Birmingham	Little Rock	*San Diego
*Boston	*Los Angeles	Savannah
*Bridgeport	Louisville	Schenectady
*Buffalo	*Lowell	Scranton
*Butte	*Lynn	*Seattle
Canton	*Manchester	South Bend
*Chicago	Memphis	*Spokane
*Cincinnati	*Milwaukee	*Springfield, Mass.
*Cleveland	*Minneapolis	St. Joseph
Columbus	Nashville	*St. Louis
Dallas	Newark	St. Paul
Davenport	*New Bedford	Syracuse
Dayton	*New Haven	*Tacoma
*Denver	*New Orleans	Tampa
Des Moines	*New York	Terre Haute
*Detroit	Norfolk, Va.	Toledo
Duluth	*Oakland, Cal.	Trenton
*El Paso	Oklahoma City	Troy
Elizabeth	Omaha	Utica
Erie	Passaic	*Washington
Evansville	Patterson	Wichita
*Fall River	Peoria	Wilkes Barre
Flint	*Philadelphia	Wilmington
Fort Wayne	*Pittsburgh	*Worcester
Fort Worth	*Portland, Me.	Yonkers
Grand Rapids	*Portland, Ore.	York
Harrisburg	*Providence	Youngstown
*Hartford	Reading	

TEL-U-WHERE Bureaus are now ready in the cities marked * (consult your 'phone book). By January first the full list of bureaus will be ready to serve you.

Fifty-one thousand six hundred twenty-three persons served, thousands of shopping hours and millions of steps saved!

— because Tel-U-Where directed each of these inquirers straight away to the stores that did carry in stock the advertised goods sought.

This Boston Tel-U-Where Bureau, (our first *test* unit) opened but a few months ago, has pyramided a following of careful-buying men and women who find shopping with Tel-U-Where a real convenience.

By the same token, Tel-U-Where will shortly become a nation-wide convenience, because the service is so easy to use, and so much a service.

No red tape, no charge, just 'phone, give the name of the advertised product you wish to find, your name and address, and Tel-U-Where will mail you at once a list of the stores which carry the goods, with booklets and other information about them. There are many attractive things advertised in this magazine — shop for them — with Tel-U-Where.

If you ask for a product not listed with Tel-U-Where, *that is to say, when the manufacturer is not yet a subscriber to the service,* Tel-U-Where *will get the information for you, but there will be a few days' delay.*

Tel-U-Where Service will help you find any advertised product

Digitized by Google

A Christmas Gift



that may sway the future of your Boy or Girl

The eager, sensitive minds of young folks are like photographic plates, constantly recording the thoughts and suggestions they meet in their play and reading.

Continuous association with high ideals, with stimulating and inspiring influences, naturally bends their instincts and energies toward substantial things.

No gift can be of greater value to those in their formative years than a twelve-month subscription to St. Nicholas magazine.

Four dollars will bring twelve numbers packed full of magnetic stories by authors who know boys and girls, know how to lead them and teach them through suggestion, and influence, and example.

Each issue also contains well-selected and authoritative articles on travel, nature, science, sports, camping, topics of the day. Besides these there are riddles and hobbies, prizes for writings, drawings, photographs, etc.—all especially edited to appeal to, and develop young minds.

As a Special Christmas Offer—all for $5.00—we will send

ST NICHOLAS

and any one of the following splendid books:

The Lost Prince, *by Frances Hodgson Burnett*

This story is a classic of youth. It is the fascinating tale of the adventures of a boy prince who, visiting London with his father, becomes lost and sees many sides of real life. A beautifully-bound book. Regular price, $2.

Stories of The Great West, *Theodore Roosevelt*

Thrilling tales of frontier life, related with the appreciation which this great President had for the early pioneers and their struggles against the Indians. A book every American boy and girl should read. Regular price, $2.

OR Hero Tales from American History—by Theodore Roosevelt and Henry Cabot Lodge—$1.90.
OR The Crimson Sweater—by Ralph Henry Barbour—$1.75.
OR The Brownies and Prince Florimel—by Palmer Cox—$1.75.
OR St. Nicholas Christmas Book of Selected Stories—$2.00.
OR Boy Scouts in the Wilderness—by Samuel Scoville—$1.75.

Subscribe for St. Nicholas this Christmas and let its influence sway the future of your boy or your girl toward the bigger, better, finer things of life. Use the coupon opposite.

By taking advantage of our special Christmas offer you add a delightful gift book to the Christmas presents.

Send your subscription NOW. By so doing you afford plenty of time for us to mail the first issue of St. Nicholas, the book selected and a handsome Gift Card to reach the boy or girl before Christmas Eve.

— — — — — — COUPON — — — — — —

St. Nicholas Magazine, Subscription Dept. K-11
353 Fourth Avenue, New York

For the enclosed $5 please send St. Nicholas Magazine and the book mentioned below.

Name.....

Address.....

Send (Book selected).....and Gift Card to

Name.....

Address.....

(If subscription alone is wanted, enclose only $4)



WHERE-TO-GO

HOTEL-RESORT and TRAVEL-DEPARTMENT



1907 1921

appears every month in the United States exclusively in
THE QUALITY GROUP MAGAZINES
ATLANTIC MONTHLY-CENTURY-HARPER'S-REVIEW of REVIEWS
SCRIBNER'S and WORLD'S WORK, In THE CANADIAN MAGAZINE in Canada
Send postage for advice where and how to go. The right hotel etc
For space and rates in our departments write to
THE WHERE-TO-GO BUREAU, Inc 8 Beacon St, Boston, Mass, U.S.A.

CALIFORNIA

All the year 'round

YOSEMITE

National Park

in California

MAKE the most of your California trip this winter by saving a few days for Yosemite, the leader of the Nation's parks in number of visitors.
Half-Dome, El Capitan, Mirror Lake, and the mighty Sierra peaks are never more wonderful than in Winter, and you will equally enjoy the sunny days and moderate temperatures of Yosemite Valley.
Railroad stopover at Merced, California, is free Side trip fare into Yosemite Valley and return, $13.50

Write today for "Yosemite, A Winter Resort," free on request

YOSEMITE NATIONAL PARK CO.
Dept. "A"
637 Pacific Building, San Francisco, Cal.

Los Angeles HOTEL STOWELL
416 S. Spring
275 rooms, all baths. Running ice water. Fireproof. Strictly first class. $2.50 up. Ask for folder and auto map of California.

GEARY AT TAYLOR Hotel Bellevue
SAN FRANCISCO
Convenient to shopping, amusement, and business districts. All rooms with bath

FLORIDA

NAPLES ON THE GULF
FISHING, HUNTING, GOLF
Modern Hotel open November 1st
Special rates till January 1st
Let Us Send You a Booklet
E. W. CRAYTON, Mgr., Naples on the Gulf, Florida

FLORIDA

Five bulletins. Invaluable for prospectors. Finding Florida employment — Hunting — Fishing — Right locating—Opportunities—Touring south. 22c. each. Five for a dollar. Geo. Andrews, West Palm Beach.

GALVESTON TEXAS



TOURS | TOURS

Travel-in-Comfort
Tours

MEDITERRANEAN
visiting
Riviera, Italy, Egypt, Holy Land, Morocco, Algiers, Tunis, Spain, France, Switzerland, England
Frequent departures—Jan. Feb. Mch.

JAPAN-CHINA
including
Philippines, Manchuria, Korea
Leaving Pacific Coast Jan. and Feb.

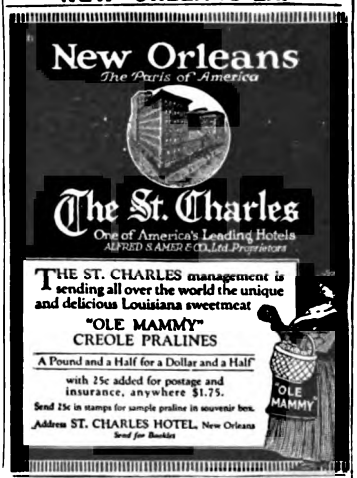
SOUTH AMERICA
including
East and West Coast, Panama Canal, Andes Mountains
Frequent departures from New York December to March

CRUISES
To Bermuda, West Indies, etc.

No Rushing — No Crowding — Everything First-Class
Small DeLuxe groups, each limited to 12 members. Best steamers and hotels, liberal sightseeing and time for resting. Early reservation necessary. Send for booklet desired, with complete information.

FRANK TOURIST CO. [Established 1875]
489 Fifth Ave., New York 219 So. 15th St., Philadelphia

NEW ORLEANS LA.



MISSISSIPPI

COME TO THE
MISSISSIPPI GULF COAST
for WINTER GOLF

RECOMMENDED HOTELS
The Miramar, Pass Christian
The Great Southern, Gulfport
Annistion, Gulfport The Belmar, Biloxi
The Biloxi, Biloxi The Riviera, Biloxi

MEDITERRANEAN TOUR
sails January 7, S. S. Adriatic
EGYPT, NILE CRUISE, PALESTINE, GREECE, SICILY, and ITALY
Briefer tour sails February 18
Write for details
Bureau of University Travel
4 Boyd Street Newton, Mass.

EGYPT, PALESTINE
Sail Jan. 10, Feb. 18 and March 4. Madeira, Gibraltar, Algiers, Monaco, Naples, Cairo, The Nile, Jerusalem, Constantinople, Athens.

EUROPE 1922
Italy, Switzerland, France, Belgium, Holland, England. The Passion Play.
Limited parties enrolling now.
Temple Tours 65 B Franklin Street Boston, Mass.

NEW YORK CITY

109-113 W. 45th St. Hotel St. James Times Sq. N. Y. City
Midway between Fifth Avenue and Broadway. An hotel of quiet dignity, having the atmosphere and appointments of a well-conditioned home. Much favored by women traveling without escort. 2 minutes' walk to 60 theatres and all best shops. Rates and booklet on application. W. Jennings Demorest.

HOTEL HARGRAVE
West 72d Street, N. Y. 300 rooms, each with bath. Absolutely fireproof. One block to 72d St. entrance of Central Park. Comfort and refinement combined with moderate rates. Send for illustrated booklet.

When writing to these advertisers will you please mention The Where-to-go Bureau.

te to Where to-go Bureau, 8 Beacon Street, on, for space & rates in our departments.

WHERE-TO-GO

HOTEL-RESORT-&-TRAVEL-DEPARTMENT

CONCLUDED

HAWAII

HAWAII

THE YEAR 'ROUND PLAYGROUND



For Your Next Vacation

enjoy America's mid-Pacific Paradise. Continuous outdoor recreation. Gorgeous scenery, tropical climate, fruits, flowers; living volcano. Ask your nearest railway, travel, tourist or steamship agency for the new Hawaii Booklet just out. Or write direct to

Hawaii Tourist Bureau

Honolulu, Territory of Hawaii, U. S. A.

This Department visits more than three-quarters of a million homes monthly, comprising the 650,000 persons in North America with incomes of $5,000 a year and over. Precisely the people able to pay best rates.

CHICAGO ILL.

The DRAKE

CHICAGO

Stands pre-eminent among the great hotels of America. Fronting Lake Michigan and on the famous Boulevard Link. Five minutes from the theatrical and shopping districts. Table d'Hote Meals at Popular Prices Rooms for two, $3.00 each person, & up. Single rooms, $5.00 and up. All rooms have bath. *Write for booklet.*

Chicago's "City Beautiful" Hotel

Lake Shore Drive

BLACKSTONE MANAGEMENT

GEORGIA

HOTEL SAVANNAH City Beautiful Savannah, Ga.

300 new beautifully furnished rooms, fireproof. Rate $2. to $6. European. Booklet.

PINEHURST N. C.

Pinehurst

NORTH CAROLINA

CAROLINA HOTEL NOW OPEN

Holly Inn and Berkshire open January

Rates Substantially Reduced

GOLF—RIDING—MOTORING—TENNIS DRIVING—SHOOTING—RACING

For Reservations or Information address

General Office, Pinehurst, North Carolina

SUMMERVILLE S. C.

GOLF superb 18 hole course | A Great Winter Resort **Pine Forest Inn** | **GAME** A Hunter's Paradise

Write to W. E. Senna, Mgr.

Everything modern. Historic surroundings. First-class livery, driving and riding horses. Booklet

WHERE-TO-GO for JAN. closes DEC. 1

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY AND ITS MAKERS

By **M. A. DeWolfe Howe**

This little book, rich in biography and pleasing anecdote, is one which every *Atlantic* reader will delight. Illustrated with portraits and wood cuts. $1.00

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, 8 Arlington St., Boston (17), Mass.

1922 OFFERS YOU England, Louvain, Tyrol, Switzerland, Wales, Verdun, Venice, France, Zeebrugge, Ober-Ammergau, Italian Lakes, Paris. One of our Congenial Groups will please you.

WORTH WHILE TOURS ELEVENTH SEASON

521 Centre Street, Boston (30), Mass.



"I have frequently used it (Buffalo Mineral Springs Water) with good results in certain types of Rheumatism and Gout."—Dr. THOS. H. BUCKLER, of Paris, formerly of Baltimore.

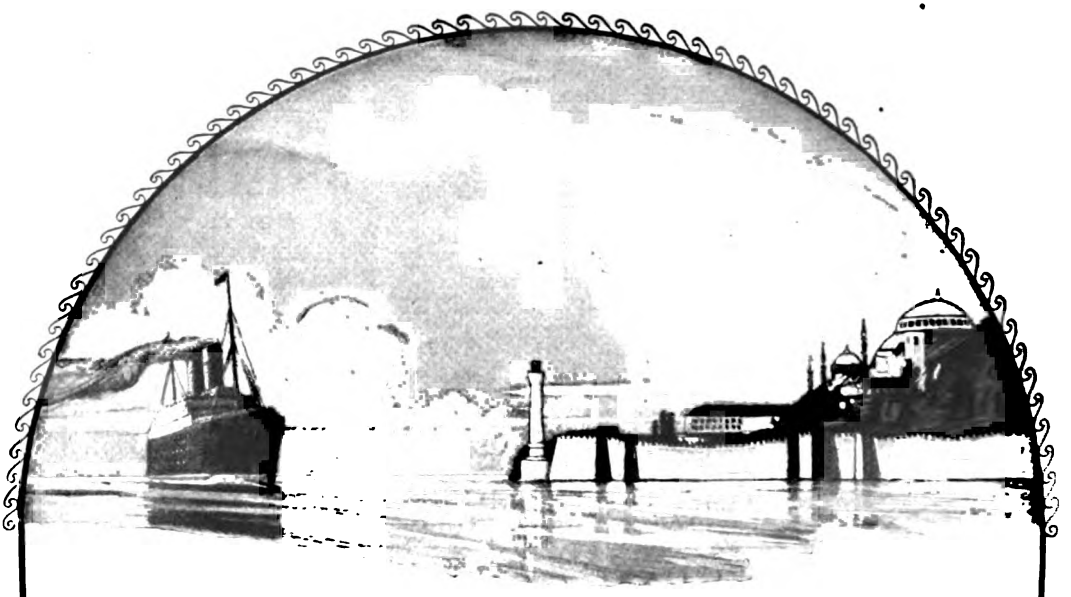
FOR URIC ACID AND GOUT

Buffalo Mineral Springs Water is helpful in the treatment of Bladder and Kidney Stones, Bladder Inflammation, Rheumatism, Gravel, Gout, Neuritis, Bright's Disease, Diabetes, Acidosis, Dyspepsia and Nausea from any cause. It is an active antacid Diuretic.

Physicians and other interested persons are invited to write to the Springs for "Fifty Years of Medical Opinions," a little book about Buffalo Mineral Springs Water written by many prominent physicians in all parts of the country. At all Druggists.

BUFFALO LITHIA SPRINGS VIRGINIA





Two Months

Under Sunny Skies—Along Romantic Shores

Away from winter, across the seas to the Pillars of Hercules and beyond.

Luxurious Mediterranean Cruise

Sails February 11th, 1922, on Cunard Liner "CARMANIA," under the exclusive management of the American Express Company, visiting Madeira, Cadiz, Gibraltar, Algiers, The Riviera, Naples, Pompeii, Rome, Fiume, Venice, Athens, Constantinople, Palestine and Egypt.

Each land, each shrine has its fascination and wonder story. For the Mediterranean means world history, romance and love, fable and myth. Cruise membership limited to 450 on a giant liner carrying normally nearly 800 passengers. The relaxation of travel under ideal conditions—an inspiration for a lifetime.

Additional American Express Winter Tours and Cruises include Europe, Around the World, China, Japan, West Indies, Florida, Bermuda, California, Honolulu.

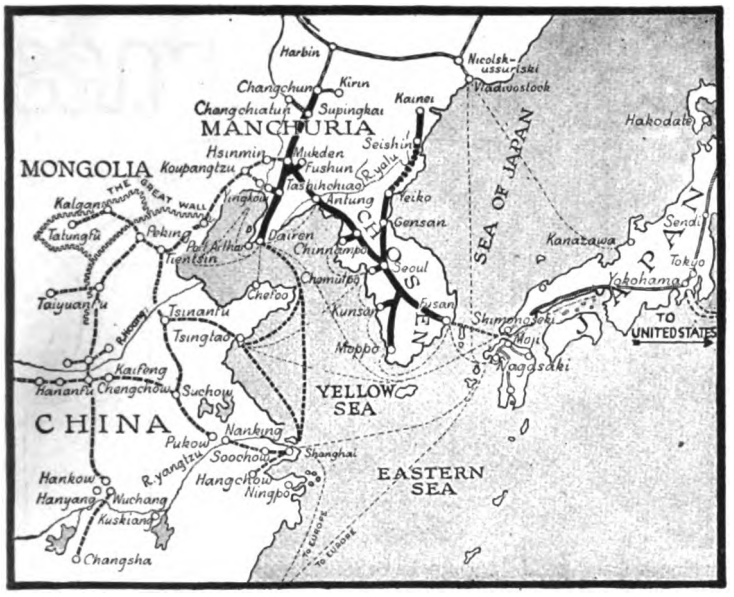
Third Cruise-Tour via S. S. EBRO to South America sails February 11th, 1922.

Write now for full information.

AMERICAN EXPRESS COMPANY, 65 Broadway, New York

Wherever you go carry those spendable everywhere—
American Express Travelers Cheques

Digitized by Google



South Manchuria Railway (heavy black line) through Manchuria and Chosen, connecting with Chinese and Japanese rail and coastwise lines, and ocean routes to Europe and the United States.



Manchuria—
A Land of Opportunities

Write to Mr. Yozo Tamura, South Manchuria Railway Company, 111 Broadway, New York, for the descriptive folder illustrated above, and other information.

Manchuria constitutes the northeast provinces of China. Mines and forests enrich it. The soil is one of the most fertile in the world, and its great agricultural areas give it the name of "The Garden of China."

Four distinct groups of Americans can find outlets for their activities in this ancient and yet newest part of China.

Capitalists: Mines; light, power and water works; banks; agriculture; manufacturing and building—these are some of the opportunities offered to capital.

Exporters: Here, indeed, lies a rich field for the exporter. Almost everything from locomotives to talking machines and tooth paste are sought by the progressive inhabitants of Manchuria.

Importers: American importers find it to their advantage to use Manchuria as a source of such supplies as soya bean products; hemp, bristles, furs, hides, tussah silk —not to mention the innumerable articles of Oriental manufacture always in demand in America.

Travelers: Scarcely any other country of the Orient points with so alluring a finger toward its ancient and fascinating places of history, interest and beauty.

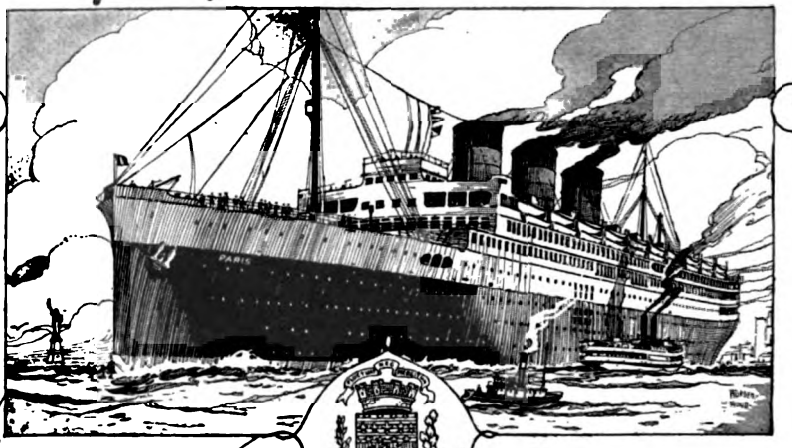
The South Manchuria Railway traverses an interesting and delightful country; connects with superb harbors, and offers rich opportunities.

Your Host and Guide

SOUTH MANCHURIA RAILWAY

Digitized by Google

Voyages Modernes





PARIS—*nom glorieux*—synonomous with beauty, charm and *l'élégance*—the city of a thousand wonders is truly typified by the giant French liner, the S. S. "Paris." Its *salons magnifiques*, its commodious cabins, broad stairways and tasteful decorations combine to make it a Parisian palace afloat. The traveler will particularly enjoy its *cuisine renommé*, as well as the manifold forms of entertainment including the celebrated orchestra and the *guignol*—the unique Punch and Judy show.

Write for our interesting booklet A also descriptive literature regarding fascinating French Line auto tours in Morocco and Algeria.

French Line

COMPAGNIE GÉNÉRALE TRANSATLANTIQUE
19 STATE ST. NEW YORK



On the Desk Flowers make a Brighter Business Day

"Say it with Flowers"

Sentiment and business go hand in hand linked by the subtle message of flowers.

Patronize your local florist. You can "Say it with Flowers" anytime, anywhere—through the Florists' Telegraph Delivery Association

Digitized by Google

HARTMANN
WARDROBE TRUNKS



The Christmas Gift for Two

The Hartmann Wardrobe Trunk is a gift that brings joyful anticipation to the recipient. It conjures up visions of charmingly interesting places of the South land for winter sojourning. It is associated with all the pleasure, the romance of travel.

It is really a gift for two, for both man and woman will find in this combination Hartmann, a trunk that ideally suits the requirements of both. And Christmas is a most timely occasion for such a gift—the boy or girl home from school or college will appreciate returning with a trunk that gives him or her distinction among school and college chums.

There is a Hartmann Wardrobe Trunk for every taste and purse. The price ranges from $30 to $200, and every Hartmann is real quality both in material and workmanship.

Every Hartmann from the newest creation, the all steel frame Castle-Grande without a nail in it, entirely riveted, or the most elaborate reinforced round edge Gibraltarized Panama, or the dependable Hartmann Rite-Hite gives a clothes care and protection not to be found in any other wardrobe at any price. So for Christmas giving or for your own use choose a Hartmann Wardrobe Trunk this year.

HARTMANN TRUNK COMPANY, *Racine, Wisconsin*

BE SURE THE HARTMANN RED ✕ IS ON THE TRUNK YOU BUY

Digitized by Google

AN UNPARALLELED OPPORTUNITY

THE CARONIA
WONDER CRUISE
TO THE
MEDITERRANEAN
Limited
to 350 Guests
Jan. 28 to March 30, 1922.



Visiting MADEIRA, SPAIN (Cadiz-Seville — Granada), GIBRALTAR (Tangiers), ALGIERS, MONACO (Nice and Monte Carlo), NAPLES (and environs), ALEXANDRIA (Cairo and Nile), PALESTINE (Jerusalem, Bethlehem, etc.), CONSTANTINOPLE, ATHENS, ITALY (Naples and Rome). Stop-over privileges in Europe.

EXCLUSIVE MANAGEMENT

THOS. COOK & SON
245 Broadway, New York
Chicago Philadelphia Boston San Francisco
Los Angeles Montreal Toronto Vancouver
150 Offices Throughout the World

SOUTH AMERICA



Rio de Janeiro
Montevideo
Buenos Aires

By fast and luxuriously appointed steamers of 21,000 tons displacement affording every modern comfort and convenience en voyage. Connections for all parts of South America.

S. S. Vasari
December 10

S. S. Vauban
December 31

For full particulars, sailing dates, ports of call, rates of passage, etc., apply Company's office, 42 Broadway, New York City, or any local steamship agent.

LAMPORT & HOLT LINE



Keep this Door to Health Open

Christmas Seals are helping to save over 75,000 lives annually in the United States alone.

Through their sale the doors of over 1,100 tuberculosis associations are kept open to the victims of this plague.

Help to keep them opened.

your
Christmas Seals Christmas Mail

The National, State and Local Tuberculosis Association of the United States

Digitized by Google



When Evangeline came to Louisiana

THE beautiful Bayou Teche country near New Orleans, with its live oaks, hanging moss and picturesque plantations, is as fragrant and charming today as when Longfellow's beautiful heroine sighed for her lover under the moss draped oak that bears her name.

Stop over in New Orleans on your Sunset Way to California and revel in the ways and byways of this fascinating Southern City. You can visit the old French quarter—see relics of the Spanish regime—dine at quaint restaurants—visit the Duelling Oak and enjoy a hundred delightful experiences.

New Orleans San Antonio **SUNSET LIMITED** Los Angeles San Francisco

A mild, sunny route all the way with Observation Car, Through Dining Car and other comforts of modern travel. Daily Through Tourist Sleeping Car Service between Washington, D. C. and San Francisco. Tri-weekly Sleeping Car Service to Globe, Arizona, for the side trip to ROOSEVELT DAM on the APACHE TRAIL.

Take the Sunset Route to California

SOUTHERN PACIFIC LINES

Every mile a scene worth while

For Information and Literature address

SOUTHERN PACIFIC LINES

New York 165 Broadway | New Orleans Pan-American Bank Bldg. | Houston Southern Pacific Bldg. | Tucson, Arizona Score Building | San Francisco Southern Pacific Bldg.

Digitized by Google

4 MONTHS' RESULTS



(One of thousands of authentic "Ground Gripper" cases)

The promptness with which feet once tortured in narrow-toed shoes always respond to the "Nature's own" corrective principle of these ORIGINAL muscle-developing, beauty-restoring Health Shoes, has led to extensive imitation. *But—*

GROUND GRIPPER
WALKING SHOES

cannot be duplicated either in construction or the results they give

They were first to teach Men, Women and Children that perfect comfort, health and vigor can only be insured by wearing *"straight-inside-line"* shoes that flex naturally in every part at every step. They are *still pre-eminently first* in the successful prevention and treatment of foot ailments. Imitations are necessarily inferior.

If there isn't a "Ground Gripper" store in your locality, let us have the name of your regular dealer, and we will see that you get these shoes. Refuse substitutes!

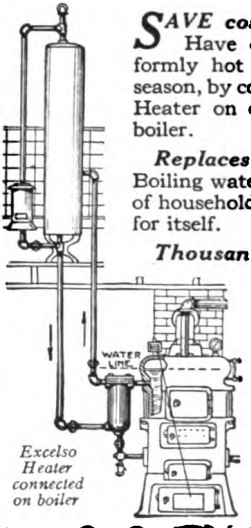
Ground Gripper Shoe Company, Inc.
Grippertown (East Lynn), Mass.

Exclusive Stores in Principal Cities
2000 *Agents Everywhere*



SEND FOR OUR MEDICAL BOOKLET ON FEET FREE!

HOT WATER
NEW, INEXPENSIVE WAY



Excelso Heater connected on boiler

SAVE cost of gas or other fuel! Have ***constant supply*** of uniformly hot water, all during heating season, by connecting an Excelso Water Heater on outside of steam or vapor boiler.

Replaces inefficient fire-pot coil. Boiling water from boiler heats supply of household water. Heater soon pays for itself.

Thousands in use. Requires no attention. Endorsed and sold by ***all*** boiler manufacturers. If plumber can't supply, write for details and Folder No. 162.

Guaranteed satisfactory or money back

EXCELSO SPECIALTY WORKS
162 Clinton Street, Buffalo, N.Y.

EXCELSO

Vapo Cresolene

The Vapor Treatment for Coughs and Colds

The time for Vapo-Cresolene is at the first indication of a cold or sore throat, which are so often the warnings of dangerous complications.

It is simple to use, as you just light the little lamp that vaporizes the Cresolene and place it near the bed at night.

The soothing antiseptic vapor is breathed all night, **making breathing easy**, relieving the cough and easing the sore throat and congested chest.

Cresolene is recommended for **Whooping Cough, Spasmodic Croup, Influenza, Bronchitis, Coughs and Nasal Catarrh.** Its germicidal qualities make it a reliable protection when these diseases are epidemic.

It gives great relief in **Asthma.**

Cresolene has been recommended and used for the past forty-two years. The benefit derived from it is unquestionable.

Sold by Druggists. Send for descriptive booklet 45

Try Cresolene Antiseptic Throat Tablets for the irritated Throat, composed of slippery elm bark, licorice, sugar and Cresolene. They can't harm you. Of your druggist or from us. 10c in stamps.

THE VAPO-CRESOLENE CO.
62 Cortlandt St., New York
or Leeming-Miles Bldg., Montreal, Canada



Through the sparkling Mediterranean at its most delightful season.

The Raymond-Whitcomb Mediterranean Cruise

A Winter Voyage in Summer Seas

Sailing February 14, 1922
on the S. S "George Washington"

Cadiz, Algiers and Naples, Athens and Constantinople, Jerusalem and Cairo, are among the ports of call. Equally engrossing, and rarely visited, are Corfu, loveliest of the Isles of Greece, Cattaro on the towering Dalmatian Coast and Corsica, famous as the birthplace of Napoleon.

The Cruise Ship, the "George Washington", is the largest ever chartered for such a cruise. Luxurious in all her appointments her accommodations range from single rooms to three- and four-room suites.

The Cruise sails from New York February 14, 1922 and is due back on April 26. Rates $625 and upward.

Send for our Mediterranean Booklet.

West Indies-Panama-Hawaii Cruise

An exceptional two-ocean cruise visiting Cuba, Jamaica, Porto Rico and St. Thomas in the West Indies—passing through the Panama Canal and up the coast of Mexico and California to San Francisco—and then westward across the Pacific to fascinating Hawaii.

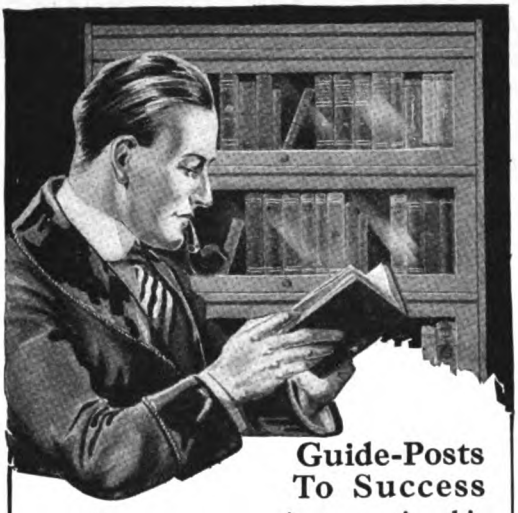
Sailing February 11, 1922

Other winter tours to California and Hawaii, to Florida, Europe, South America, Arabian Nights Africa, Egypt and the Holy Land, Japan-China and Round the World.

Raymond & Whitcomb Co.

Raymond Building
Beacon and Park Streets, Boston

New York Philadelphia Chicago San Francisco Los Angeles



Guide-Posts To Success

To the young man just starting his business struggles, books offer the safest guide-posts toward the better things of life. To the older man, they furnish the earned happiness and recreation that make more fruitful his declining years.

Beautiful books deserve the careful preservation that Globe-Wernicke Sectional Bookcases afford.

GLOBE-WERNICKE SECTIONAL BOOKCASES

Conveniently and attractively preserve your favorite volumes from dust, dirt and the inroads of time. Artistically designed, expertly constructed, Globe-Wernicke Bookcases are guaranteed against warping, shrinking or splitting. Buy just enough units to meet your present needs. As your library grows, more sections may be easily added. Give a Globe-Wernicke Bookcase this Christmas.

Agencies in all cities Send for FREE Catalogue

The Globe-Wernicke Co.

DEPT. 131, CINCINNATI

Detroit, St. Louis, New York, Philadelphia, Chicago, Boston, Cleveland, Washington, New Orleans

Globe-Wernicke

BUILT TO ENDURE



CONVENIENT, refined and of permanent value, the DIM-A-LITE Portable will bring into any home the rich, mellow Christmas glow that warms the hearts of recipient and giver.

Attach it to bed, dresser, chair—anywhere. Pull the chain to regulate the intensity of light.

Sold by dealers everywhere—$5.00

WIRT COMPANY, Philadelphia, Pa.

Next time you see an Electric Shop think of

DIM-A-LITE

For Sale Everywhere



Little Gateways to Science

BIRD STORIES

By

EDITH M. PATCH

Entomologist, University of Maine

DEDICATED "To Junior Audubon classes and all other boys and girls throughout the land who are friendly to birds." Every child who reads this book will become a bird conservationist. It is written with scientific accuracy and is provided with a bibliography for older children who wish to extend their bird studies.

HEXAPOD STORIES—Miss Patch's first book in this series was published a year ago, and won prompt and wide popularity. The book is invaluable to educators in revealing to children something of the wonders of Nature.

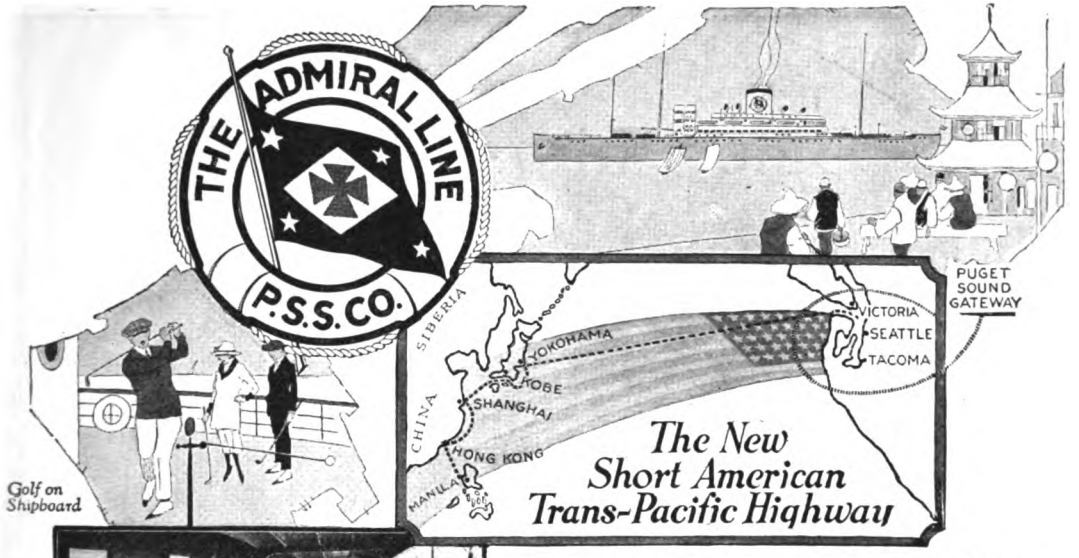
HEXAPOD STORIES, School Edition, $ .90
For first, second and third grades.

BIRD STORIES, School Edition. 1.00
For third, fourth and fifth grades.

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC.

8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass.

Digitized by Google





Veranda Opening Aft

In Planning Your Oriental Trip—

you will naturally consider the three paramount factors—**speed, accommodations, service**—which make for the complete enjoyment of an ocean voyage. Nowhere are these combined to a greater degree of satisfaction than in the new Trans-Pacific service of the Admiral Line.

Speed Five modern U.S.S.B. steamships (speed 17½ knots) operated over the new Short American Trans-Pacific Highway provide an exceptionally fast service—12 days to Yokohama; 14 days to Kobe; 18 days to Shanghai; 22 days to Hong Kong; 26 days to Manila.

Accommodations Aboard these magnificent passenger liners you find every comfort and convenience known to modern ocean travel.

Service The Admiral Line, your American Host, provides luxuries, cuisine and personal service comparable with your favorite Hotel or Club. Its experience, gained thru two decades of successful operation on the Pacific, makes the enjoyment of your trip a certainty.



The Palatial Social Salon Delightfully Appointed



SAILINGS FROM PUGET SOUND

Seattle-Tacoma, Wash., Victoria, B. C.
SS. "PINE TREE STATE" Dec. 10
A STEAMSHIP December 24
SS. "BAY STATE" January 7

For detailed information and descriptive literature, USE THE COUPON BELOW, or apply to

NEW YORK CITY, 17 State Street
CHICAGO, 142 South Clark Street

All principal cities of the Pacific Coast and the Orient.

E. G. McMICKEN, *P. T. M.*
L. C. Smith Building, Seattle, U. S. A.

I am planning a trip to the Orient about .....

Please send me detailed information and descriptive literature on your New American Service.

NAME .....

ADDRESS .....

CITY ..... STATE .....

ANYWHERE ON THE PACIFIC

The ADMIRAL LINE

H. F. ALEXANDER, PRESIDENT

PACIFIC STEAMSHIP COMPANY

Digitized by Google

The Philosophy of Brother Ostrich

THERE'S something almost human about the ostrich. Rather than face the unusual, he buries his head in the sand — thus exposing himself, rather recklessly, to the whims of happenstance.

Is n't that just like the chap who ducks under the sheets the minute the furniture creaks?

Lots of folks shut their eyes when they need them most. In the matter of buying something, for instance — the important business of spending hard earned dollars.

Who gets the most for his money? The man who buys blindly — or the fellow who reads advertising and discovers the things he really wants and needs?

Who is the most economical housekeeper? The woman who buys haphazard, or the one who reads advertising and puts her household purchasing on a business basis?

There's no denying the great value of advertising to those who read it. It protects you against fraud and inferiority. It tells you what is new and good, making you a wise buyer. It saves you money by pointing out for your consideration only the best products.

Don't be an ostrich.

Read the advertisements

Digitized by Google

~ the Santa Fe Way to California

leads through the Southwest enchanted land, ~a region of romantic history and scenic surprises ~

~ choice of four daily trains

THE CALIFORNIA LIMITED. Very best for best travelers. You will like the FRED HARVEY dining-car service, and the through Pullman via GRAND CANYON. You will like the Petrified Forest and Indian pueblos.

The Missionary also has Pullman for the Canyon. The Navajo, Scout and Missionary carry tourist as well as standard sleepers. They provide Fred Harvey dining-room service at artistic station hotels.

ASK FOR ILLUSTRATED FOLDERS
"To California the Santa Fe Way," "California Picture Book," "Grand Canyon Outings" and "Off the Beaten Path."

W. J. BLACK 1124 Railway Exchange, CHICAGO
Pass. Traffic Mgr., A., T. & S. F. Ry. System



Digitized by Google



You will love this picture

You will, for its fine subject, rare color, charm of drawing, masterly handling. It is Carel Eugene Mulertt at his best. It is called "The First Lesson." Framed and hung, you could not tell print from original, side by side. Every movement of brush on canvas is repeated—soft as the sunshine peeping in at the window.

The realism of this piece astounds even artists. So truly is the subject reproduced that the paint seems to be still fresh, and seen in high relief. It is one of a collection of rare pictures by eminent American artists—good size, 21 x 26, and more than worthy a place in any home, school, club.

These truly wonderful prints are sold by good art dealers. If not found at yours, send us his name and address and we will see that your wants are promptly supplied. Superla Colortypes are guaranteed for quality. They are for those who know and appreciate the artistry of the fine plate-maker and color-printer at their best.

THE UNITED STATES PRINTING AND LITHOGRAPH COMPANY
Fine Arts Division
No. 6 E. 39TH ST. NEW YORK





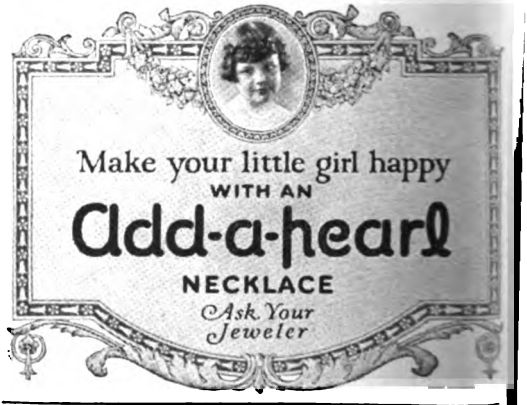
STEGER

The most valuable piano in the world

THE gift supreme is the Steger Grand Piano. Its beautiful tone is an abiding inspiration of happiness in the home. The velvet touch, responsive action and artistic design evidence that integrity of construction which for more than forty years has made the Steger name a symbol of pre-eminent achievement in the art of piano-building.

Write for the Steger Piano and Player-Piano Style Brochure and convenient terms. Steger dealers everywhere.

STEGER & SONS PIANO MANUFACTURING COMPANY
Founded by John V. Steger, 1879
Factories, Steger, Illinois Steger Building, Chicago



TEXT, TYPE, AND STYLE

A Compendium of Atlantic Usage
By GEORGE B. IVES

A practical guide to the best usage in matters of punctuation, spelling, syllabification, and other technical points in the making of magazines and books.

An editor, who was an early purchaser of the book, writes:

"It is just the book I have been looking for, as it contains a store of valuable information which must be of use to any person engaged in writing or editorial work."

$2.00

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, Inc.
8 Arlington Street Boston (17), Mass.

Digitized by Google





The Wellington

Give him a South Bend Watch this Christmas.

For father, son or close friend this "purple-ribboned" watch aristocrat makes the ideal gift. ¶ No other watch combines such distinctive beauty with such satisfying accuracy at so reasonable a price. ¶ Your jeweler will show you the late models. Write us for new catalog.

SOUTH BEND WATCH CO.
112 Studebaker St. South Bend, Ind.

For Years Makers of Standard Railroad Watches

South Bend

The Watch with the Purple Ribbon

Digitized by Google

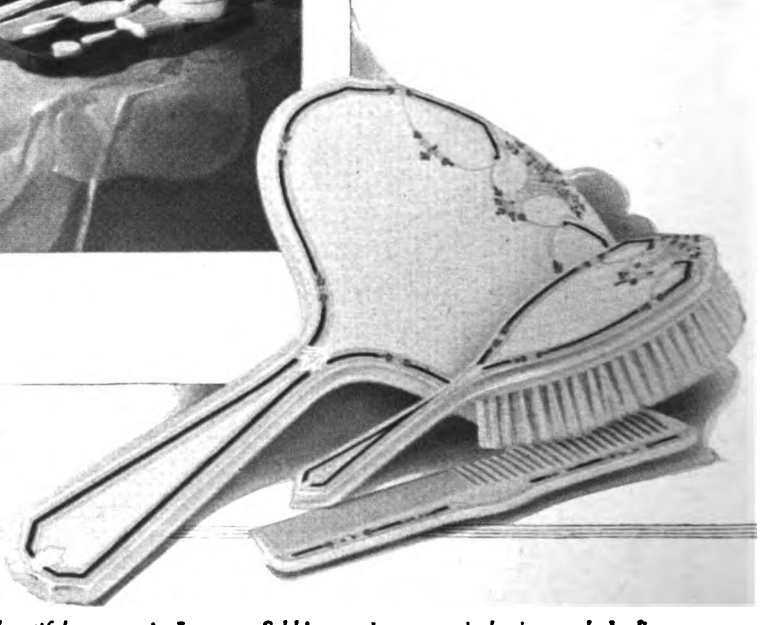


Ivory Pyralin

A GIFT as beautiful as the thought which prompts it. Ivory Pyralin has that simple charm which seems to embody the spirit of Christmas. With intimate daily use, as the years pass, a woman finds her Pyralin a constant and a pleasant reminder of its giver.

E. I. DU PONT DE NEMOURS & CO., Inc.
Sales Department: Pyralin Division
Wilmington, Delaware

DU PONT



The purchaser is protected by the name-stamp which appears on every piece of genuine Pyralin.

THERE are many beautiful patterns in Ivory Pyralin, Shell Pyralin and Amber Pyralin, Decorated DuBarry Ivory Pyralin is illustrated.

Sold in complete sets or single pieces at the leading stores. As all patterns and designs are standard, articles may be matched at any time, the country over.

Digitized by Google

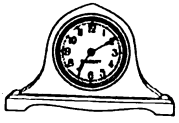


Christmas Time—

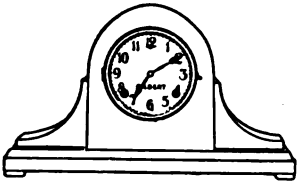
Illustrated
Hand-rubbed mahogany finish case, with eight day movement and Normandy chimes. Height 9½ inches and width 20 inches.



New thin model; thirty hour continuous alarm, symmetrical design. Height 6¾ inches, with artistic radium hands and dial.



Hand-rubbed mahogany finish clock for desk or dresser. Dependable thirty hour movement. Height 5 inches and width 8 inches.



Rich mahogany hand-rubbed finish clock, with eight day pendulum type of movement and Cathedral gong. Height 11 inches and width 18 inches.

THE mellow notes of a Gilbert Chime Clock will greet the whole family with a pleasant awakening on Christmas morning. Each hour and half-hour it will fill the house with the soft music of distant bells. Year in and year out it will faithfully and truly chime the hours. No gift will give more instant pleasure, or more lasting satisfaction.

Since 1807 this Company has been making clocks at Winsted—clocks both silent and with voices. There are many Gilbert Clocks to choose from—clocks with plain or radium dials, Cathedral gongs, Normandy chimes, and businesslike alarm clocks. All are worthy products of a group of people who have been clock makers for generations.

William L. Gilbert Clock Co.
Winsted, Conn.

"Makers of good clocks since 1807"

Gilbert Clocks

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google



Is a Woman as Old as She Looks?

Those tiny lines about the eyes, the flaccid throat, the drooping lips, the little hollows in the cheeks! Not always may they be translated into years gone by.

Often, they are signals of *wear*, not years—the outward signs of a body prematurely aged by Pyorrhea.

Pyorrhea is a disease of the gums which affects four out of five people over forty, and many under thirty, also. It begins with tender and bleeding gums, then the gums recede, the teeth decay and loosen, or must be extracted to rid the system of the Pyorrhea germs which breed in little pockets about them.

It is to these infecting germs that medical science has traced the untimely ills of thousands of men and women who should be in the prime of life today. Their weakened vital organs, their low resistance to disease, their many aches and pains, are the result of Pyorrhea—not Age.

Keep *your* beauty and your health. Do not let Pyorrhea get established in your mouth. Visit your dentist regularly for tooth and gum inspection, and start using Forhan's For the Gums today.

Forhan's For the Gums will prevent Pyorrhea—or check its progress—if used in time and used consistently. Ordinary dentifrices will not do this. Forhan's keeps the gums firm and healthy, the teeth white and clean.

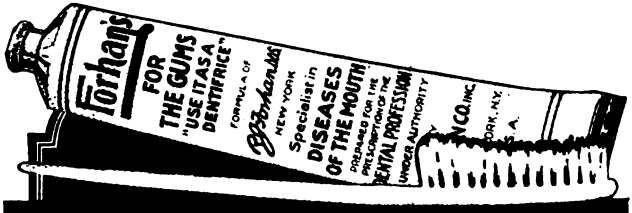
How to Use Forhan's

Use it twice daily, year in and year out. Wet your brush in cold water, place a half-inch of the refreshing, healing paste on it, then brush your teeth *up and down*. Use a rolling motion to clean the crevices. Brush the grinding and back surfaces of the teeth. Massage your gums with your Forhan-coated brush—gently at first until the gums harden, then more vigorously. If the gums are very tender, massage with the finger, instead of the brush. If gum-shrinkage has already set in, use Forhan's according to directions, and consult a dentist immediately for special treatment.

35c and 60c tubes in the United States and Canada. At all druggists.

Formula of R. J. Forhan, D. D. S.

Forhan Company, New York
Forhan's, Limited, Montreal



Forhan's
FOR THE GUMS
Checks Pyorrhea

Digitized by Google

This is Herbert Hoover's House in California



We think everyone in America will want to see the pictures of the house where Mr. Hoover lives! And we know half the people of Europe would like to, too. There will be other views of this house in the

January HOUSE BEAUTIFUL

January will be the California number, and we have tried to make it everything that the state suggests — big, generous, sunny, and beautiful from cover to cover.

Among other articles in the January number, will be:

The Influence of Spain on the Architecture of California
Old Spanish Gates in New Surroundings
The House of Herbert Hoover
The Home of George Washington Smith, Architect
A Group of Houses and Gardens
The Setting of the House: Interrelation of House and Planting
The House in Good Taste: A Portfolio of Interiors
A Page of Old Clocks
Three Articles on Gardens
Our Fifth Avenue Looking Glass
Choosing the Woodwork

SPECIAL CHRISTMAS OFFER A.M. 12-21

THE HOUSE BEAUTIFUL PUBLISHING CO., INC., 10 Depot St., Concord, N.H.; or
8 Arlington St., Boston (17), Mass.

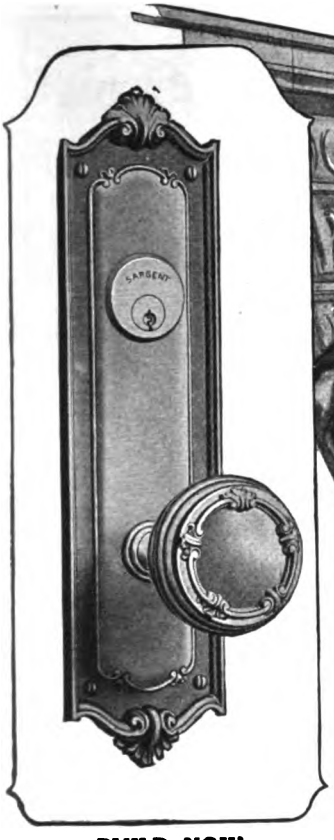
Gentlemen: Enclosed find $3.00, which entitles me to a 15-months' subscription — Or: $1.00, which entitles me to a 5-months' subscription.

Name..... *Town*.....

Street..... *State*.....

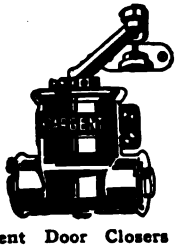
Foreign Postage, $1.00 extra per year; Canadian 50c.

Digitized by Google



BUILD NOW

And let Sargent Hardware add the final touch of beauty and security to your home.



Sargent Door Closers keep the doors closed that should be closed, surely but silently. There are heavy models for outside doors and a light model for inside doors.



Consider the hardware when planning your home

A CAREFUL selection of Sargent Hardware will add unusual distinction to your home—**now, and in the years to come. The choosing will be a pleasure, for there are Sargent designs to harmonize with every architectural or decorative scheme. Your hardware dealer will be pleased to show you samples.**

Give this hardware question the attention it merits. Even if you are not building until later, take this opportunity of familiarizing yourself with an important building subject.

The Sargent Book of Designs will give you much practical information on the subject of hardware. It contains 75 pages of interest to every builder or prospective builder and illustrates many attractive patterns in which Sargent Hardware may be obtained. You may have a copy upon request, without charge.

SARGENT & COMPANY

Hardware Manufacturers

34 Water Street **New Haven, Conn.**

SARGENT



CHRISTMAS GIFTS
for
LOVERS OF FINE BOOKS



For Christmas do you wish to present to a particular friend a gift of rare interest, which will constantly gain in value as the years go on? For the lover of literature and life it would be hard to find a more beautiful gift than may be obtained in these three notable publications. Having taken in hand three books of a character that qualified them for preservation in forms of distinctive dignity and beauty, we have issued them in ***limited editions*** with special bindings, paper, and illustrations, which make them objects of desire to collectors, and worthy of a place among the more beautiful books in public and private libraries.

Life and Letters of Henry Lee Higginson

By Bliss Perry, Editor of the *Atlantic Monthly* from 1899 to 1909

Major Henry Lee Higginson, "founder and sustainer" of the Boston Symphony Orchestra, was one of the notable figures of his generation. The *New York Evening Post* says: "It will be a great pity if this book is not read widely by others than those with whom Major Higginson lived in intimacy. For where can one find a finer man to be made known to all Americans? Who reads this book can learn."

"One of the most human documents of a decade." — *Boston Herald.*

Limited Edition, 220 numbered sets, two volumes, boxed, printed on special Stratford paper, gray Roma paper boards binding, gilt top. Autographed frontispiece portrait and special illustrations. $15.50

The Letters of William James

Edited by his son, Henry James

Professor Dickinson S. Miller writes: "Here is presented a remarkable union of charm and delicious fun, graciousness, and affection, rich vocabulary and portrait-painting touch, penetrating and free-spoken comment on men, places and nations."

"We recommend these volumes to the business man because they will give him real delight."—*Rotarian.*

Limited Edition, two volumes, printed on Stratford paper, French Ingres paper boards binding, gilt top, especially illustrated. $2.00

A Scholar's Letters to a Young Lady

Passages from the Later Correspondence of Francis James Child

Mr. Gamaliel Bradford has written:—

"These are the most adorable letters of Child, the most delightful. I am rather an epicure in letters, having made a business as well as a pleasure of them for a great many years, and I do not know of any American letters that are superior to these, if any equal. Do you realize how sweet they are, how human, how full of profound meaning and significance in their careless grace?"

In a Limited Edition of only 585 numbered copies, $6.00

THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY PRESS, INC., 8 Arlington Street, Boston (17), Mass. A.M. 12-21

Gentlemen: Enclosed find.....for

LIFE AND LETTERS OF HENRY LEE HIGGINSON, Limited Edition
THE LETTERS OF WILLIAM JAMES, Limited Edition
A SCHOLAR'S LETTERS TO A YOUNG LADY

Name.....*Street*.....

City.....*State*.....

GILBERT TOYS





Erector

The World Famous Construction Toy

IS YOUR boy one of the hundreds of thousands of boys who play with Erector, the wonderful engineering toy? It is a genuine toy, mechanically true that makes his play an education. Boys can build bridges, skyscrapers, battleships, machines with Erector. The big manual that comes with each set tells how to build hundreds of models. In addition to these, thousands of other models can be built from his own designs.

Gilbert Toys are Toys that *are Genuine*

THERE are complete sets of engineering toys each with full equipment and a big book of instructions to perform marvelous experiments in Chemistry, Engineering, Hydraulics, Magnetism, Light and Sound.

The wonderful Gilbert outdoor wheel toy enables a boy to make coasters, wagons, geared speedsters, wheel barrows, baggage trucks with only a wrench and a screw driver.

Every Gilbert Toy boy is given a free membership in the Gilbert Engineering Institute for Boys. He has a chance to win Degrees, Honors and Handsome Diplomas, and to have the best fun in the world while winning them.

Gilbert Boy Engineering Book for 1922, 10c.

A Book your boy should have

JUST read this list of features. "How to High Jump," "World Famous Engineering Feats and Men who Accomplish Them," "Men and Events that Made Sports History," "Theory of Wireless," "Experiments in Magic and How to Perform Them," "Chemistry Experiments and How to Perform Them," and a number of other intensely interesting articles all in one book, including a complete catalog of Gilbert Toys. This 96-page book sent postpaid for ten cents in stamps or coin. Send the coupon today.

Coupon

Do This for Your Boy

Mail this coupon and ten cents to **The A. C. Gilbert Co., 449 Blatchley Ave., New Haven, Conn.,** for copy of the Gilbert Boy Engineering Book for 1922, and copy of Gilbert Toy Tips.

Name _____

Street _____

City _____ *State* _____

Digitized by Google



A Charming Winter Wardrobe

—a triumph of your own needle

PERHAPS you have made simple Summer frocks but have never attempted a Winter dress. Winter materials are so expensive that you dread the thought of making a costly mistake.

Yet this Winter you can plan to make your Winter wardrobe as confidently as you would proceed with Summer dressmaking. You can make each frock successfully of less material than such a frock ever required before. You can cut into rich duvetyn with as much assurance as you would run your scissors through a length of gingham. You can select even the most intricate styles—and interpret them as would the cleverest modiste of Paris!

Yet these wonderful clothes will actually cost *less* than any you have ever possessed—not only because you can make them yourself, but because of an *additional saving*—a saving made possible by the same marvelous invention that brings Paris to your needlepoint—the Deltor!

THE DELTOR

Now with Butterick Patterns

The DELTOR
saves you 50c to $10 in materials alone

IN THREE simple steps, the Deltor guides you to economy, turns hours of sewing into minutes and brings you the charm of Paris itself!

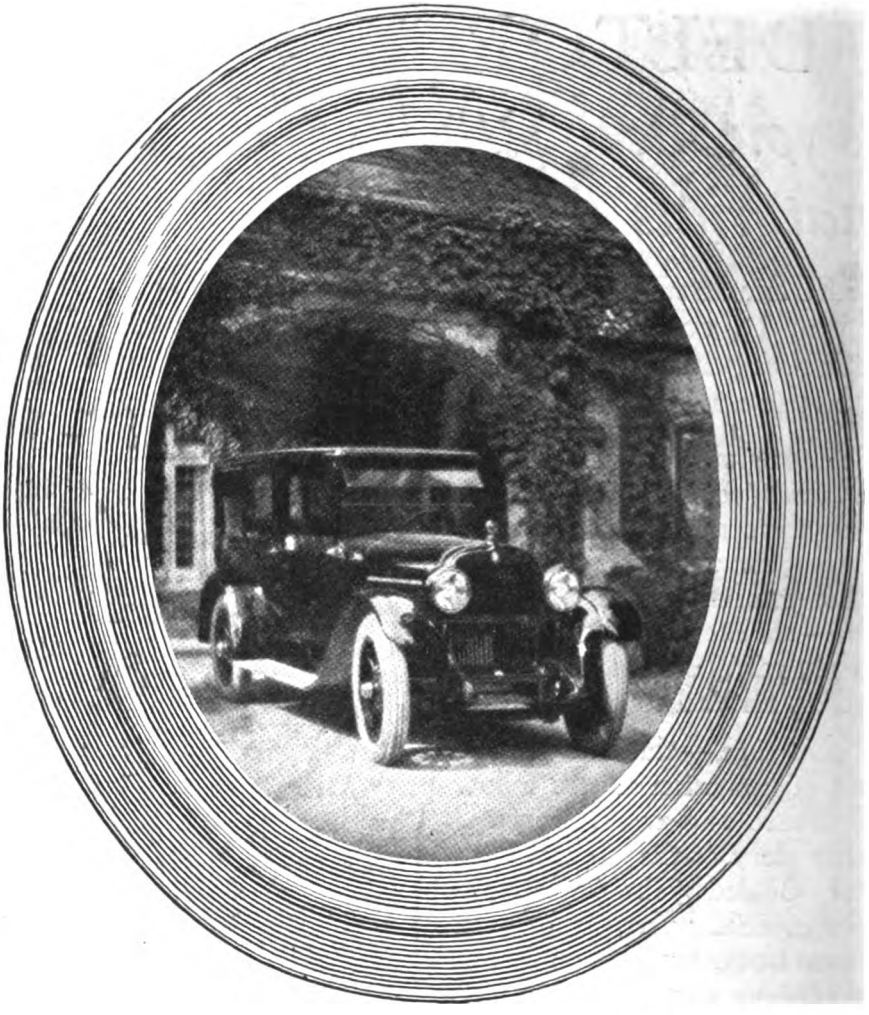
1 The Deltor gives you an individual layout chart (yes, *individual* chart—not just a general chart, but one for your *exact* size and for *each* suitable width of material). You lay out your pattern—the *expert's* way. You buy ¼ to 1⅜ yard *less*, a saving of 50c to $10 on material for every frock!

2 You save time—there's never an instant of hesitation as you follow the picture-and-word putting-together story of the original Paris creator. Guided by the simple explanations especially planned for your very own frock, you almost unknowingly achieve the perfection, the sophisticated simplicity that stamps a real creation of Paris!

3 And finally, those all-important touches of finish! You embody in your frock every piquant detail, every exclusive little idea of a Parisian modiste. Your finished frock in every stitch—in every line—in every detail—is Paris itself!



BUTTERICK
Style Leaders of the World



If we could but convey to you the high enthusiasm for the LaFayette which prevails everywhere among its owners we would gladly rest our case there.

For every mail that comes to Mars Hill brings to us new words of praise for LaFayette deportment — frank letters of approval from those who love fine things.

Open Cars, $4850 at Indianapolis

LAFAYETTE MOTORS COMPANY at Mars Hill INDIANAPOLIS

LAFAYETTE

Digitized by Google



Shelltex Shur-on rimmed glasses are smart for business or shopping.



Shur-on rimless eye-glasses are to be preferred for formal dress or evening.



For sports Shelltex Shur-on rimmed spectacles are correct.

Not extra glasses but different glasses

Those comfortable Shelltex Shur-on rimmed glasses you use for reading were never made to wear at functions. The neat Shur-on rimless eye-glasses that are so becoming to you with evening dress would never do for golf or tennis.

There are different styles of Shur-ons for different occasions. You should let your optical specialist fit you with the different styles you need.

SHUR-ON OPTICAL CO., INC., *Rochester, N. Y.*
ESTABLISHED 1864

Shur-on Glasses

THE RUMFORD PRESS
CONCORD

Digitized by Google

BROWN BROTHERS & CO.

Established 1818

4th & Chestnut Sts.
Philadelphia

59 Wall St., NEW YORK

60 State St.
Boston

Exchange of Securities

THE constant change in economic conditions the world over provides frequent opportunity for an advantageous readjustment of investments. Once a year and preferably at this season the investor should examine his list of securities and dispose of those which do not pass the required tests as to safety of principal and interest. The exchange of such bonds and stocks for others of greater potential value will prove of material advantage. We offer our services in analyzing your holdings and in suggesting exchanges.

A Century of Service

BROWN, SHIPLEY & COMPANY

Established 1810

Founders Court, Lothbury
LONDON, E. C.

Office for Travelers
123 Pall Mall, LONDON, S. W.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

To avoid fine, this book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below.

LWO JUL 6 1981

Digitized by Google



STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
CECIL H. GREEN LIBRARY
STANFORD, CALIFORNIA 94305-6004
(415) 723-1493

All books may be recalled after 7 days

DATE DUE

MAY 06 1996

MAY 06 1996

Digitized by Google